THE HISTORY OF THE WORLD:

THE SECOND PART:

BY

ALEXANDER ROSS.

BY

ALEXANDER POPE.

THE SECOND PART.

MORAL:

OR THE

HISTORY

OF THE

EPICURE.

THE HISTORY OF THE WORLD: The Second Part,

IN

SIX BOOKS:

Being a CONTINUATION of the famous HISTORY of Sir *WALTER RALEIGH*, Knight:

Beginning where he left; *Viz.* at the End of the MACEDONIAN *Kingdom*, and deduced to these *Later-Times*: That is, from the Year of the WORLD 3806. Or, 160 Years before CHRIST, till the end of the Year 1640. after CHRIST:

BY

ALEXANDER ROSS.

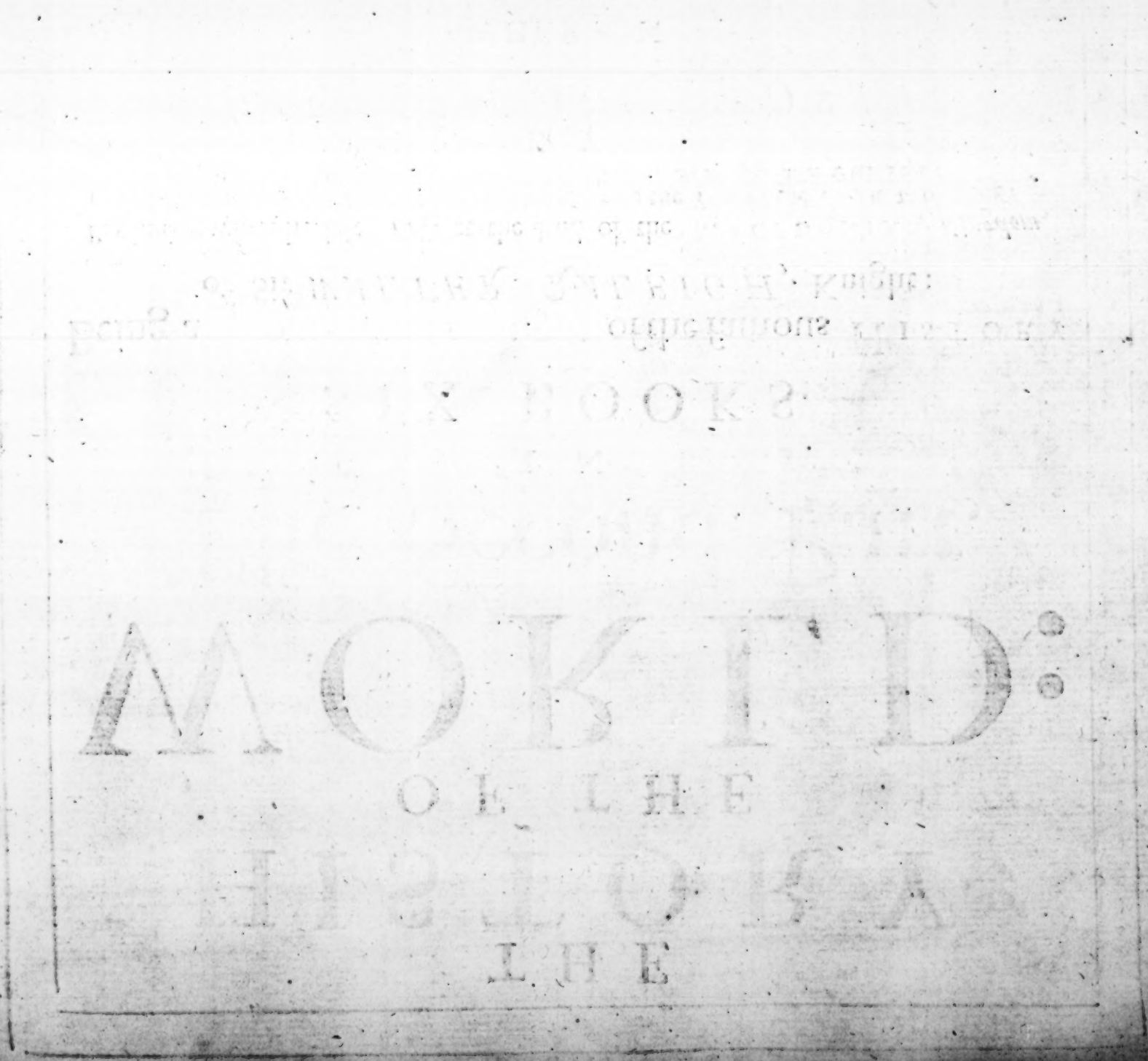
WHEREIN

The most Remarkable Passages of those TIMES, (both *Ecclesiasticall* and *Civill*) in the greatest *States*, *Empires*, and *Kingdomes*, are Represented:

Together with a *CHRONOLOGIE* of those TIMES, *&c.* and an *Alphabeticall-Table* by the AUTHOR.

In Historia hoc præcipuè salubre ac frugiferum, omnis te exempli documenta in illustri posita intueri: ut inde tibi tuæque Reipub. quod imitere capias; inde fœdum inceptu, fœdum exitu, quod vites. Liv. lib. 1.

LONDON, Printed for *John Saywell*, and are to be sold at his Shop at the sign of the *Greyhound* in *little-Britain* without *Aldersgate*, M: DC. LII.


LOCKED
SHELF
LIST

TO THE

RIGHT HONORABLE

HENRY

EARL OF

ARUNDEL & SURREY

Primier Earl, and Earl Marſhal of *ENGLAND*,
Baron *HOWARD*, Mowbray, Segrave, Brewes
of Gower, Fitz-Allan, Clun, Oſwaldſtry, Matravers and Grayſtock, &c.

MY LORD:

Antiquity did wittily adumbrate and repreſent unto us a Wiſe man, by the Fiction of double faced Janus, *with a Serpent by him, biting his tail; intimating, that hereby wiſe men take notice, and make uſe both of things preſent and paſt; and withall are not unmindeful of their End, expreſſed by the Serpent biting his tail. Now that which makes a man truly wiſe, and double faced with* Janus, *is Hiſtory of things paſt; without the knowledge of which, a man hath but one face, and looks onely upon things before him; and ſuch are Children, ſaith* Tully, *though they be aged; whereas Hiſtory makes men ripe and aged in Knowledge, though they be children in Years. God*

hath appointed two Guides and Conductors of Mans life, while we are Pilgrims here in this Valley of Tears; namely, Precept *and* Example : *The Law furniſheth us with* Precepts, *Hiſtory with* Examples ; *which make our way more ſhort and eaſie then the other, as* Seneca *tells us :* (Longum iter per præcepta, breve & efficax per exempla) *Theſe two Guides are like the two Pillars that conducted the* Iſraelites *through the Deſart; and indeed, they are both ſo needful, that without them, we ſhall never attain to the Land of Promiſe, the* Canaan *of our Happineſs. And as Hiſtory is neceſſary to all, ſo chiefly to thoſe who are ſet upon the Pinacle of Honour, whoſe actions are obvious to all eyes, and obnoxious to all mens cenſures ; who being placed upon Watch-Towers, had need of better eyes, and a longer perſpective then thoſe who live below ; Now Hiſtory is the Perſpective that lets them ſee the danger a far off: Had it not been for the knowledg of Hiſtory,* Lucullus *the* Roman *had never ſubdued* Mithridates the *King of* Pontus ; *nor had* Xanthippus *the* Lacedemonian *overthrown the* Romans ; *whereas before this, the* Carthaginian *Commanders, for want of Hiſtorical Knowledge, were ſtill worſted by the* Roman *Armies. In Hiſtories great Men will find what uncertainty and vanity there is in outward ſplendor ; what it is that makes true and genuine Nobility, and diſcriminates it from that which is ſuppoſititious and adulterate; and it will ſhew them that there is no confidence to be given to humane ſtrength, Policy, nor Actions.*

Edocet humanis quæ ſit fiducia rebus.

They that ſit at the Helm of Government, had need of the Hiſtorical Compaſs to ſteer by. Among other emoluments which accrew to Princes by Hiſtory, they will finde them to be their trueſt friends, and wiſeſt Councellors, both in admoniſhing and reproving them : For this cauſe

Deme-

Demetrius Phalerius *advised King* Ptolemy *to read Histories, that from them he might learn truth, For Friends, either out of fear or shame, will not tell Princes of those faults, which History blusheth not to demonstrate. Besides, great Men receive this benefit by Historie, That they are incited to vertuous actions, by the examples of those brave men who went before them. So was* Alexander *by reading the Storie of* Achilles; *and* Cæsar *by reading the Stories of* Alexander; *and the* Turk *by reading the actions of* Cæsar. *Thus* Æneas *animates his Son.*

Tu facito mox quum matura adoleverit ætas
Sis memor, & te animo repetentem exempla tuorum,
Et pater *Ænæas*, & avunculus excitet *Hector*.

And as they are incouraged to vertuous Atchievements by Historie; so for the same Atchievements they shall be made glorious by Historie to all Posterity; which will be of longer continuance then Brazen or Marble Statues: Therfore Theseus *was more beholding to* Connidas *the Historian who wrote his life; then to* Silamon *that painted, or* Pharrhasius *that ingraved him to the life: And for this cause the Historian was more honored by the* Athenians, *then the other two; for Statues express the Lineaments of the body onely; but Histories demonstrate the Endowments of the minde: Statues are for a time; Histories for perpetuitie; which had* Pericles *known, he would rather have entertained the Historian to register his actions, then* Phidia *the Painter to Delineat his Picture fighting with the* Amazon *upon* Minerva's *Target; which is long since lost; but the History remains. In a word, I may call Historie with* Polybius, *and* Aristotle, Ἀληθινωτάτην παιδείαν, καὶ Χρησίμην γυμνασίαν *the trueſt kinde of Learning, and uſefulleſt exerciſe in the world.*

Now my Lord; conſidering with my ſelf, that what I

have spoken here, is the object both of your knowledge and practice; And duely weighing your noble extraction, your Learning, and love to learned men; your goodness, wisdom, and affability, with those other eminent parts in you, wherin you are nothing inferior to any of your honorable Progenitors; I was ambitious to send abroad this Piece under the shelter of your Honors Patronage, knowing it will receive the better acceptation, if it be graced in the Frontispiece with your Noble Titles. The chief end of this Dedication, is to shew to the world the dutifull respect and zeal I bear to the Ancient, and Honorable Family of the HOWARDS; *and withall to your own Eminent Parts, by which you shine among others,* (Velut inter stellas Luna minores.)

Your Honors most humble Servant,

ALEXANDER ROSSE.

THE PREFACE TO THE READER.

I Had ſcarce caſt Anchor in the *Harbour*, and finiſhed my Navigation in the Sea of Sir *Walter Rawleighs* Hiſtory, which I bounded within the narrow Streights of an *Epitome*, when I was ſollicited by ſome of my Friends, to hoiſe Sail again, and to lanch into the Ocean of the *Generall Hiſtory* of the *World*, that I might finiſh what he had begun, and begin where he had finiſhed; deſcending from the times where he brake off abruptly, into theſe later Yeares, that ſo there might be a compleat *Abridgement* of all *Memorable Paſſages* from the beginning of the *World* till theſe preſent times. The Task I found ſomewhat difficult, being forced to be both *Shipmaſter*, *Pilot*, and *Mariner* my ſelf alone, as not having any *Amanuenſis*; but was fain to read, digeſt, contract, and write all my ſelf. Yet conſidering I was now at leiſure, and naturally hated *Idleneſſe*, the *Mother* of miſchiefe, and the *Devils Cuſhion*, as the *Fathers* call it; and that I was not born for my ſelfe, but ſent hither to doe ſervice in this great *Houſe* of the World; to imploy the *Talent* committed to me, and not to wrap it up in a *Napkin*; to impart the light of my *Candle* to the *Family*, and

not

not to hide it under a *Buſhell*; to work in the *Vineyard*, and not to ſtand idle in the *Market-place* all the day long; to labour whilſt it is *Day*, before the *Night* come wherein no man can work; and to be ſo imployed, that when my *Maſter* cometh, he may ſay, *Euge ſerve bone*; conſidering alſo how pretious time is, how quickly gone; how long a Leſſon, and how ſhort a Life (as *Theophraſtus* complained) *Nature* hath given us; how great the account is we are to make up, of ſo many *Hours*, *Dayes* and *Yeares* ſpent, either *idlely*, or *wickedly*, or *impertinently*; and how uncomfortable muſt the end of thoſe be, who ſpend their dayes like *Sardanapalus*, or *Hogges* rather, in *eating*, *drinking*, *ſleeping* and *playing*, having no remorſe with *Titus* for ſo many days and years which they have loſt, wherein they have done no good, but like fruitleſs *Fig-trees* cumber the ground: When I conſidered, I ſay, theſe things, I adventured rather to undertake this *Task*, then with *Solomons* Sluggard to fold my armes, to *ſleep* and *ſlumber* away the ſhort remainder of my *Dayes* in *Idleneſſe*, or vain and ſinfull *Pleaſures*; There are above three parts already of the *Glaſſe* of my *Life* run out, being now almoſt 62 years of age, I deſire that the fourth part may not be worſe, for that were (*deſinere in Piſcem*) to look like a *Syren* or *Mermaid*, to begin in the *Spirit*, and end in the *Fleſh*, with the fooliſh *Galatians*; I ſhall be loath to degenerate with *Hercules*, of whom the Poet ſpeaks:

Seneca.

Ovid. (*Cæpiſti melius quam deſinis ultima primis*
Cedunt diſſimules hic vir, & illa puer.)

I have been hitherto a *careſull diſpenſer* of my time, and a *Niggard* of my dayes, having imployed as few of them as I could in *Idleneſſe*, and even from my youth I have been more converſant among the *dead* then the *living*, though I have ſeemed to ſome of *Epicurus* his ſwiniſh *Schollars*, no better then one of thoſe *mad men* in the *Goſpell*, who dwelt among the *Graves*; yet I have found more true content among theſe *Dead men* then ever I could enjoy among the *living*. But why ſhould I call thoſe *dead*, who are now *more alive* in their *Works*, then when they were *alive* in their *Bodies*, having attained to that life commended by the Orator (*De quis nulla unquam conticeſcet ætas, quæ memoria vigebit ſæculorum omnium, quam ipſe æternitas ſemper innebitur*) I have been content hitherto, rather to converſe in the *Stoicall* School of *Zeno*, then in the *voluptuous Garden* of *Epicurus*; and with *Cæſar* (*Equitare per Britannos Saeticos pati pruinas*) then with *Florus*, *curſitare per tenebras*,

Cicero.

pulices

pulices pati rotundos) But let men ſpend their days as they liſt, or as their good and bad *Genius* induceth them, I am ſure, that they who have imployed their time in doing good according to their Calling, ſhall finde true content and comfort on their death-beds, when they are departing hence, to him that ſent them hither; and who will exact a ſtrict account of their time ſpent. Whereas the others muſt needs at their departure be accompanied with grief and horrour, remembring the pretious houres and years they have miſ-ſpent, ſaying with old *Evander*,

(*O mihi præteritos referat ſi Jupiter annos!*) *Virgil.*

Which the Poets did elegantly and wittily expreſs unto us, by ſhewing that none went over the River *Styx* into the *Elyſian* Fields, but ſuch as had *Charon* for their Pilot; that is, The comfort and joy of a good conſcience, which will never prove the guide or companion of pleaſure and ſin.

Some tell me, that it is now time for Me to give off writing, being old, and having the burthen of 62 years on my back. To whom I anſwer, That my age as yet (bleſſed be God) is to me no burthen; as it is to ſome who finde it heavier then *Ætna* was to *Enceladus*. I cannot accuſe my age, as he ſaid: (*Nihil habeo quod accuſem Senectutem meam.*) *Cicero.* But I may ſay with the old Italians in the Poet ——*Nec tarda ſenectus*

(*Debilitat vires animi, mutátve vigorem*) *Virgil.*

and to whom God hath given, *crudam viridemq; ſenectam*, a vivid and vegit old age, he expects of them more fruit in that age; who is ſo apt to write or ſpeak as he who hath experience with maturity of Judgement, Wiſdome and learning? which cannot be in young men; (*Temeritas florentis ætatis, prudentia, Senectutis*) *Cicero.* young men may be fit in the great Ship of a Commonwealth, to hale the Ropes, to hoiſe the Sailes, to draw the Pump, to weigh the Anchor, and to clamber up the Maſts; but old men are fitteſt to ſit at the Stern, to Steer the Ship, and to keep her from falling on the rocks and quick-ſands. Wine is ever beſt when it's old, and Fruits are ſweeteſt when ripeſt. Young men are for action, Old men for direction; young men may ſee farther, but old men can judge better; the one may have a quicker Corporal, but the other hath a nimbler Mentall ſight: Τῆς διανοίας ὄψις ἄρχεται ὀξὺ βλέπειν. *Plato.* Therefore *Iſocrates*, *Plato*, *Homer*, *Heſiod*, *Sophocles*, *Ambroſe*, *Auguſtin*, and many more, wrote moſt of their excellent Works in their old age. So I will with *Solon* be content, Γηράσκειν ἀεὶ πολλὰ διδασκόμενος,

both

both to grow Old with Teaching, and Learned with Age

It were weakneſs in me to claw the Reader with flattering tearms for his approbation or favourable cenſure of theſe my pains, and to beg his good word for my good will in compiling this *Epitome*; for he that is Learned, Judicious, and Ingenuous, cannot ſpeak ill of what is meant well, nor diſcommend his pains that are undertaken for a Publick benefit; as for the carping *Mome* who hath a ſting with the Waſp, but no honey with the Bee, who can be content to take his eaſe, and carp at other mens pains, which every Dunce can doe, being farre more eaſie to play the *Mome* then the *Mime*, to reprehend, then to imitate; as for ſuch, I ſay, they can no more refrain their tongues from carping and reproving even thoſe things they know not, then Rats and Mice can forbear gnawing of Books and Papers they underſtand not; which doth argue want, both of judgment, learning, and ingenuity; for the inſeperable companions of *Momus*, are Pride and Envy: Laſineſs and Ignorance his Parents, which the Poets wittily expreſſed, by making him the Son of Night and Slumber.

I will not here digreſs into the commendation of Hiſtory, which *Tully* cals the Light of Truth, the Witneſs of times, the Miſtreſs of Life, the Meſſenger of Antiquity, and the Remembrancer of Life. It is indeed one of the moſt delightfull and profitable imployments of a mans life, to read Hiſtories, which ſtirs up men to vertue, and deterrs from vice, whilſt they read how the one is rewarded, and the other puniſhed; it makes a man ſerviceable, both to the Church and State; it is a Study fit for *Divines* to illuſtrate and confirm their Doctrins, whilſt they exhort to Vertue, and dehort from Vice; it ſhews them alſo the increaſe and decreaſe of Religion, with the divers concomitants thereof; it's fit for the *Lawyer*, to ſhew him the original, diverſities, and changes of Laws and Governments; for the ſame cauſe it is a fit ſtudie for all *Princes*, *Magiſtrates*, and *Politicians*, without which their Government will be but lame: and no leſs neceſſary is it to *Soldiers*, eſpecially to *Commanders* and *Captains*, where they may ſee the divers cauſes, events, attendants, and Stratagems of War. *Phyſitians* alſo, *Philoſophers*, and *Poets* may reap no ſmall benefit by reading of Hiſtories. *Alexander* made himſelf ſo expert a Warrier as he was, by reading the Life and Actions of *Achilles*. *Selymus* the *Turk* cauſed the Actions of *Julius Cæſar* to be tranſlated (whereas his predeceſſors ſlighted all Hiſtories as fabulous) and by reading of theſe,

Cicero.

theſe, he became ſo expert a Soldier, that in a ſhort time he overrun a great part of *Aſrica* and *Aſia*. So *Cæſar* was animated by reading the Life of *Alexander*, to undertake his great exploits. *Plutarch* tels us that *Paul Æmilius*, who ſubdued *Perſes* the *Macedonian* King, ſpent all his idle time in reading of Hiſtories, which made him ſo good a Soldier. *Charls* the Great was ſo affected with Hiſtories, that uſually as he ſat at dinner and ſupper he cauſed them to be read to him. And *Alexander Severus* never undertook any great Action, till firſt he had conſulted with Hiſtorians. And becauſe of the great benefit which redounds to a Kingdome or State by Hiſtory, we read how antiently Hiſtories have been honored. *Polybius* that wrote the *Roman* Hiſtory, and their Wars with the *Carthaginians*, was honored at *Megalopolis* with a Statue on a high Pillar: The Hiſtory of *Tacitus* is commanded by *Tacitus* the Emperor to be placed in all Libraries, and leſt it ſhould periſh, he cauſed it every year to be written ten times over. *Pompey* the great honored *Theophanes* the Hiſtorian with the Priviledges of the City of *Rome*. *Titus Veſpaſian* beſtowed great wealth and honors on *Joſephus* the *Jewiſh* Hiſtorian, whoſe Statue was erected at *Rome*: And ſo did *Julian* the Apoſtate upon *Aurelius Victor*, the *Roman* Hiſtoriographer. The *Ægyptians* who were carefull to preſerve their Hiſtories and antient Monuments, ſlighted the *Grecians* for their neglect herein, accounting them no better then children. And we read of *Alphonſus* King of *Arragon*, that he doated upon *Livies* Hiſtory. But how needfull Hiſtory is for Governors and Princes, let *Claudian* ſpeak in his own Language to *Honorius* the Emperor.

Plutarch:

Lampridius.

Pauſanias:

Cicero

Joſeph.

Sigonius.

Claudius.

Interea, Muſis animus dum mollior juſtes,
Et quæ mox imitere legas: nec deſinat unquam
Tecum Graia loqui, tecum Romana vetuſtas.
Antiquos evolve duces, aſſjuſce futuræ
Militiæ; Latium retro te confer in ævum.
Libertas quæſita placet? mirabere Brutum:
Perfidiam damnas? Metii ſatiabere pœnis.
Triſte rigor nimius? Torquate deſpue mores.
Mors impenſa bonum? Decios venerare ruentes.
Vel ſolus quid fortis aget, te ponte ſoluto
Oppoſitus Cocles, Mutii te flamma docebit.
Quid morâ perficiat; Fabius: quid rebus in arctis
Dux gerat, oſtendet Gallorum ſtrage Camillus.
Diſcitur hinc nullos meritis obſiſtere caſus.
Prorogat æternam feritas tibi Punica famam

Regule; fuccessus superant adversa Catonis:
Disputatur hinc quantum paupertas sobria possit:
Pauper erat Curius, reges cum vinceret armis
Pauper Fabritius, Pyrrhi cum sperneret aurum.
Sordida Serranus flexit dictator aratra.
Lustratæ Lictore casæ, fasces q; saligni
Postibus affixi, collectæ Consule messes,
Et sulcata diu Trabeato rura colono.

Which are thus Englished by an ingenuous Gentleman.

THy mind to Books (whilst yet 'tis plyant) bend,
And what thou soon should'st imitate, intend;
Often conferre, and set before thine eies
The *Roman*, and the *Greek* Antiquities:
Peruse those antient Captains, and prepare
For all the hardships of thy future Warre:
Reflect upon *Rome's* elder Annals, there
If purchas'd Freedom any pleasure beare,
Brutus thy wonder and applause will be:
Art thou an enemy to treachery?
Metius thy spleen in's death shall satisfie;
Is too much rigour cruelty? despise,
Torquatus fatherless severities.
Is death sustain'd, an honest bravery?
Then reverence the falling Deity:
What single valour may perform alone,
Number-prest *Cocles* with his bridg broke down,
And *Scevolas* burning hand will let thee know;
What wise delay may compass, *Fabius* shew;
How Captains should in worst extremity
Deport themselves, *Camillus* Victory
Over the *Gaules* will teach; And hence we finde
No Chance can master the deserving minde,
Thee, *Regulus*, the Punick cruelty
Hath purchas'd an eternall Elogy:
Cato's misfortunes triumph o're success.
What an excesse fortune may express
We hence may learn, *Curius* even then was poor
When he subdu'd proud Kings by armed power:
*Who *Pyrrhus* gold despis'd was poor enough;
Serranus the Dictator held the plough;

* *Fabritius.*

The

The *Lictor* then the Cottage walk'd around,
The faſces ty'd to willow poſts were found,
The Conſul hous'd the Corn, the Country than
Was till'd by a Senatoricall Husbandman.

Hiſtory is alſo uſefull to Oratorie, as *Tully* often ſheweth; without which an Orator either in perſwading or diſſwading, will prove defective. It is alſo neceſſary for School-Maſters; therefore *Quintilian* will have *Pœdagogues* to read Hiſtory to their Schollars, whereby they may have matter for their Exerciſes and Orations: To be brief, Hiſtory hath this prehemiNence above Oratory and Poetry, that Oratory hath been rejected by the *Lacedemonians*; Poetry by *Plato*, *Tertullian* and others, as two pernicious inſtruments in a Commonwealth, to pervert mens minds; but Hiſtory was never yet rejected by any; and how can it, abounding with ſo much profit and pleaſure; for what can be more profitable then to learn Wiſdom by other mens follies, to get experience by other mens coſt and labours, and to be ſafe by other mens dangers (*Fœlix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum.*) Hiſtory is like a watch-Tower on which we may ſee dangers a farre off, and ſo avoid them; and what can be more pleaſant then to ſee a Tragedie acted to the life; which onely is to be ſeen in Hiſtory; for here we ſhall ſee the whole world, but as a Stage on which men of all ſorts have acted their parts; Princes, Prelats, Peſants of all ages acting the ſame things, on the ſame Stage; who after they have laid aſide their diſcriminating Vizards, and perſonating garments, they are all alike, as they were before they put them on: For Kings and beggers have the ſame way of coming in, and the ſame way of going out: *Mors Sceptra ligonibus æquat*: *Diogines* cannot diſtinguiſh King *Philips* skull from the reſt; nor is there any difference in *Carons* Boat, between the greateſt and the meaneſt; all muſt Row there alike.

This Hiſtory which I have compiled out of many Writers, contains all the moſt memorable paſſages and events which have been Recorded ſince the ſecond *Macedonian* War, in which that Kingdom ended about the year of the World 3790. and the 155 Olympiad after the building of the City, *Anno.*593. about 250 years before Chriſts Nativity; where Sir *Walter* concludes his Hiſtory; ſo that from that time till this are about 1900 years; in all which ſpace you ſhall ſee upon the ſame Theater of the World, the ſame Tragedies of Wars, Plagues, Famins, Oppreſſions, Tyrannies, Thefts, Murthers, Fires, Earth-quakes, Inundations, Maſſacres, Ruines of Caſtles,

Temples, Palaces, Deſolation of Countreys, Kingdoms and Commonwealths, Devaſtation of Towns and Cities, Alteration of Laws and Governments, Tranſportation of Colonies of men, women, and children, from one place to another; I ſay you ſhall ſee the ſame Tragedies (with ſome variation of Circumſtances) reiterated by different Actors, ſucceeding each other in their Generations: If you ask me to what purpoſe have all theſe ſtirs continually bin, and yet are ſtil in the World; I anſwer, to no other purpoſe, but that inſatiable, covetous, and ambitious Mindes may have more of this earthly Turf to crawl and dominier upon (as if they wanted elbow-room) and ſome more clods of earth, whereof a little will content them, when their vaſt and ambitious thoughts are laid as low as their carcaſſes; then ſhall a ſhort and narrow Coffin contain thoſe, whom one, or more Kingdoms will not content: Within how little room was that *Pellæan* Youth ſhut up, whom one World could not ſatisfie: *Ecce vix totam Hercules implevit Urnam*, the huge body of *Hercules* did ſcarce fill an Urn, when he was burned to aſhes. What madneſs is it then to turn the World upſide-down, to cheat, oppreſſe, and murther one another, for more room, whereas a little wil ſerve a contented mind; one world can contain many Elephants; many woods, fields, medows, hils and dales cannot ſuffice one covetous and ambitious mind; *tantus amor nummi, & dominandi inſana cupido*; but if we wil truly conſider the ſhortneſſe of our life, the eternitie that comes after, the vanity, uncertainty and meanneſſe of the things we ſtruggle for; we ſhall finde on our death-bed, that we have been ſtriving all this while for Goats wool, an Aſſes ſhadow, Moon-ſhine in the water, for butterflies, nutſhels, toies, and babies of clouts, with children, ſaving that *Majora ludimus, & grandioribus pilis*, we ſport our ſelves, and trifle away our time with greater bables then they do; ſo that we do little better then gather peble ſtones with *Caligula* and his Army, and hunt all our days after flies with *Domitian*: and when we have toiled our ſelves in vain, we may ſay with *Peter*, That we have laboured all night, but have got nothing. In *Lucian* when *Mercury* lifted up *Charon* to the top of *Parnaſſus*, which they placed upon *Oſſa*, *Pelyon*, and other high hills, he ſaw from thence ποικίλην τινὰ τυρβὴν καὶ μεσὸν ταραχῆς τὸν βίον, &c. a various and confuſed multitude, whoſe life was full of troubles, ſome ſailing, ſome fighting, others pleading, ſome ploughing, ſome hoarding up their moneys, and others begging: the houſes looked like mole hills, and the men like Emmets, the Cities ſeem'd to him like bee-hives, wherein

Lucian.

wherein each Bee had a ſting, wherewith they did nothing but ſting one another; ſome domineering like Hornets, carrying and pulling the weaker; ſome like Waſps, others as Drones; round about them did flie, hopes, fears, madneſs, covetouſneſs, anger, hatred, beſides multitudes of diſeaſes, as Fevers, Conſumptions, Inflammations, Swords, Theeves, Judges, Tyrants, and ſo forth, διὰ ἐξ ἀρχῆς ἐγένοντο: If (ſaith he) *Men* would *in time* acknowledge themſelves to be *Mortall*, and that after they had finiſhed their *ſhort* pilgrimage here, they muſt forſake all *terrene* things; and awake out of their *ſleep*, having been in a *Dream*, and would live more prudently and circumſpectly, they would be leſs troubled in the hour of death, and not depart howling and weeping to *Charon*, as they uſe to do: but the Poet *Buchanan* tels us, in few words, mens vanity in this point.

Percipias rerum ſit quantula portio, verbis
Quam nos magnificis in regna ſuperba ſecamus.
Partimur ferro, mercamur ſanguine fuſo,
Ducimus exiguæ glebæ de parte triumphos! &c.
O pudor! O ſtolidi, præceps veſania voti!
Quantula pars rerum eſt in qua ſe gloria tollit?
Ira fremit, metus exanimat, dolor urit, egeſtas
Cogit opes ferro, inſidiis, flammâ atq; veneno.
Scilicet & trepido fervent humana tumultu.

Which may be thus Engliſhed:

Behold how ſmall the meaſure is of things,
Which proudly parted is by earthly Kings.
We ſhare with ſwords, and with our blood we buy,
Small Turfs on which we ride triumphantly, &c.
O ſhame! O madneſs of our raſh deſires!
What is't at which vain glory thus aſpires?
We fret, fear, grieve, we wants with wealth ſupply
Got by fire, ſword, poyſon and treachery,
We're full of tumults, fears and vanity.

Why then ſhall we ſet our affections, and doat upon this *Earth*, which compared to *Heaven*, is but a *Point*; how inconſiderable and ſmal then are the pieces of this point we ſtrive for: we cheat, lie, ſteal, ſwagger, fight, ſwear, and forſwear; we cut the throat, and ſqueeſe the blood of each others heart; yea, we ſell our *Souls* to the *Devill*, and hazard the loſs of eternal happineſs, for the uncertain, vexatious, fugitive vanities of this world; we lay out our *Money* for that which is *not Bread*, ſaith the Prophet; and we *dig* for, or *make* to our ſelves *Ciſterns* that will

Perſius. hold no water; *quantum eſt in rebus inane*: O the vanity, emptineſs, and madneſs of men, that conſider not how their life is but a ſpan in length; their body like glaſſe or earthen pitchers for britleneſſe; the things they ſo much covet, are but ſmoak, or that vain Emperors painted Banquet, which did awhile pleaſe the eie, but no ways ſatisfie the ſtomach. And how the things we neglect are truely ſatisfactory and eternall, whilſt we with *Æſops* Frog and Mouſe, fight eagerly for nothing; Death, that great *Kite*, which is ſtill hovering over our heads, comes and carries us all away in his talons. Why ſhould we dream of long continuance here, when we ſee the great Empires, Monarchies, *Ovid.* States, Cities, and Magnificent Buildings of former times, all fallen into duſt and nothing. *Nunc ſegetes ubi Troja fuit*, *Troy* is a cornfield; *Jeruſalem* a heap of ſtones, *In æternos collapſa cineres*, ſaith *Hierom*, *fallen into perpetuall aſhes*; and *Rome* is ruine *Hierom.* according to the old Propheſie, Ρωμὴ μὲν ῥώμη ἔσεσθαί. of which *Bellay* the French Poet ſings, as he is tranſlated by *Spencer*.

"Thou ſtranger which for *Rome* in *Rome* here ſeek'ſt,
And nought of *Rome* in *Rome* perceiv'ſt at all;
Theſe ſame old Walls, old Arches, which thou ſeeſt,
Old Palaces, is that which *Rome* men call.
Behold what wrack, what ruine, and what waſt,
And how that ſhe which with her mighty power,
Tam'd all the world, hath tam'd her Self at laſt;
The prey of *Time*, which all things doth devour.
Rome, now of *Rome* is th' only funerall,
And only *Rome* of *Rome* hath victory;
Ne ought ſave *Tyber* haſt'ning to his fall,
Remains of all: O worlds inconſtancie!
That which is *firm* doth flit and fall away,
And that is *flitting* doth abide and ſtay.

So then that once glorious City and Queen of the world, is but now, as *Buchanan* cals her, *Tantum veteris cadaver Urbis*, a *carcaſs* only, or bare *ſceleton* of that ancient City. When *Sulpitius* ſailed by the ruins of *Corinth*, and other ancient Cities, he writes to *Cicero* (who was much grieved for the loſs of his daughter *Tullia*) ſhewing he had no reaſon to be diſcontented at the death of a mortall Woman; whereas the carcaſſes of ſo many Cities in one place lay flat with the ground: (*Nos homunculi indignamur ſi quis noſtrum interiit*, *cum uno in loco tot oppidorum cadavera projecta jaceant*) the uncertainty therefore, and vanity of *humane affairs*, even in their greateſt glory, have induced many brave

brave men to quit their Dignities and high places, and to betake themſelves to *privacie*; thus *Diocleſian* and *Maximilian* were contented to lay down their Imperiall Ornaments and Power, and to deſcend to a mean, yet a more ſecure condition of life; ſo that *Diocleſian* preferred his *Garden of Potherbs* to all the *Roman honors*. *Amadeus* Duke of *Savoy* found more content and happineſſe in his *Monaſtery* then in his *Dutchie*: And of late years, *Charls* the fifth, *Emperor*, after ſo many Triumphs and glorious Atchievements, was pleaſed to exchange all his dominions and *Imperiall Robes*, for a *Monks Habit*, and a place in the Monaſtery of St. *Laurence* in the *Eſcuriel*, five miles from *Madrid*: And it's no wonder that Princes and great Men many times are out of love with their own greatneſſe, if we conſider the perpetuall anxieties, feares, cares, jealouſies, diſcontents and dangers they are ſubject to; ſo that King *Antigonus* truly told his ſon, If he knew with what cares and troubles his *Crown* was *ſtuffed*, he would not *take* it *up* if he found it on the *ground*: therefore it is ſaid of *Pythagoras*, whoſe Soule had lodged in ſo many Bodies, That he lived happier when he was a *Frog*, then when he was a *King*; the high Hills, not the low vallies, are moſt weather-beaten, as the Poet tells us.

Sæpius ventis agitatur ingens *Horatius.*
Pinus: & celſæ graviore caſu
Decidunt turres, feriuntq; ſummos
Fulmina montes.

The bluſtring Windes more often farre
'Gainſt lofty Pines doe threaten Warre:
Brave Towers with greater ruine fall,
And thunders higheſt hills enthrall.

I will conclude this Digreſſion with that ſaying of *Petronius* concerning the Citie *Croton*: *Omnes hic aut captantur aut captant, aut cadavera quæ lacerantur, aut corvi qui lacerant.* In this world all men either *deceive* or are *deceived*, they are either *Ravens* to teare others, or *carcaſſes* to be torn in pieces by others. This world is a *Sea* full of *great* and *ſmall* fiſhes; if *great*, they are devourers; if *ſmall*, they are devoured. *Petronius.*

Now as for this *Piece* which I have extracted out of divers *Hiſtorians*, and contracted into a *briefe Epitome*, I have endeavoured to ſet down in it all *remarkable Paſſages* in as *little room* as I could. If any ſay that I have been too briefe and ſuccinct in ſome things, he muſt know I write not a *large Hiſtory*, but an *Epitome*,

Epitome, in which if I had bin more prolix, the book would have ſwelled into too great a bulk. For this cauſe, and that the *ſeries* of the Hiſtories might not be interrupted, I have not inſerted any *Theologicall*, *Politicall*, or *Chronologicall* Diſcourſes or Digreſſions, as Sir *WALTER RALEIGH* hath done in his *Hiſtory*, whereby his book is ſo voluminous; for what I have written here, is meerly Hiſtoricall; and I hold it fitteſt to reſerve ſuch obſervations to a book by themſelves apart, which perhaps hereafter I may publiſh, if it ſhall pleaſe God to afford me ſo much *time*, *health* and *opportunity*. As for any encouragement, I expect none in this *illiterate Age*, wherein *Ignorance* is honored & *Knowledge* ſlighted, by our unlearned *Lacedemonians*; but the beſt is, *Learning* and *Wiſdom* are juſtified of their own children, and *Vertue* is a reward to her ſelfe.

Horace.

Virtus repulſæ neſcia ſordidæ,
Intaminatis fulget honoribus:
Nec ſumit aut ponit ſecures
Arbitrio popularis auræ:
Virtus recludens immeritis mori
Cœlum negata tentat Iter via,
Cœtuſq; vulgares & udam
Spernit humum fugiente penna.

Vertue that ne're repulſe admits,
In taintleſſe honours glorious ſits,
Nor takes or leaveth dignities,
Rais'd with the voyce of vulgar cries.
Vertue (to worth heav'n op'ning wide)
Dauntleſſe breaks thorow wayes deny'd,
And (taught) the rabble to deſpiſe,
Forſaking Earth, to Heaven flies.

The compendiouſneſſe of this *Chronologicall Hiſtory*, or *Hiſtoricall Chronologie* (call it which you wil, for it containes both) wil be uſeful and acceptable to moſt ſorts of men: 1. To thoſe who have no time nor *Leiſure* by reaſon of their other ſtudies or employments in the world, to read over the *many Volumes* of Hiſtories which have been written: In reading of this, they ſhal not need ſpend much time, which is but ſhort, and every wiſe man wil be willing to husband it as well as he can. 2. To thoſe who have no *Patience* to dwell too long upon prolix and tedious *Hyſtories*, from reading of which many are deterred, as growing weary before they be half way, deſpairing ever to attain

tain the end of their journey. And indeed it's no wonder when we conſider that *Ars longa, vita brevis*, that our life is a ſhort Winters day, in which wee are to goe a great and tedious journey, and therefore had need to make the more haſte; a man ſhall arrive ſooner into the Harbour in a ſmal Pinnace, then in a great Ship. It's better and healthier to riſe with an appetite from a ſhort dinner, then with a ſurfeiting or faſtidious ſtomach from a tedious Feaſt. 3. To them who have already read the Hiſtories at large, who commonly loath to read them over again, to them I ſay, this Book will be as a Table, Index, or Remembrancer, to put them in mind of the chief things they had heretofore read; ſo that here they may have a ſhort Collation after a long Feaſt. 4. To thoſe alſo (*Quibus res angusta domi*) who either cannot becauſe of their narrow *Means*; or will not becauſe of their narrow *Minds*, part with too much money on Books; in this, they that cannot reach to the price of a long Gown, may buy a ſhort Cloak. Laſtly, This benefit will accrew to all men who read this Hiſtory, that they ſhall buy at a far cheaper rate the Experiences of others Recorded here, then they can buy their own; for they that live long and travel far, pay ſoundly for their experience; but they who read Hiſtories enjoy the experience of all that lived before, which is far greater and much cheaper.

I have for the greater eaſe of the Reader, ſubjoyned a *Chronologie* to this Hiſtorie, wherein as in a ſmall *Map* may be ſeen the chief memorable Paſſages that have fallen out in the World, ſince the Overthrow of the *Macedonian Kingdom*, till theſe preſent Times. *Hiſtory*, indeed, is the Body, but *Chronologie* the Soul of *Hiſtorical Knowledge*; for Hiſtory without Chronologie, or a Relation of things paſt, without mentioning the Times in which they were Acted, is like a Lump or *Embryo* without *articulation*, or a Carcaſs without Life. I have not digeſted this Chronologie as others do, according to each particular year, but have reduced the whole time into ſo many *Decads* or Tens, ſo that we ſee at one view what hath fallen out every ten years; which way is more ready to be found, and more eaſie to the Readers memory. Beſides, I finde much difference among *Chronologers*, and much incertainty in their Computation of years; it is not yet agreed what year of the World Chriſt was born in, there being four or five years difference in the Computation; nor can *Chronologers* yet agree when the World began: It is ordinarily Recorded that *Julius Cæſar* Reigned five years; whereas in truth his Reigne laſted not above three years and 8 months; ſo that there are wanting of five years, almoſt 16 months;

monchs; for the first year of his Reigne contained but 6 months and a few days; and his fifth year but 2 months 15 days; for he was murthered the 15 of *March*: so that *Emergent* years, wherein Computations take beginning from some memorable *Emergent* Accident, fall out some times in the middle, sometimes near the end of the *Tropicall* year, so that a part is used for the whole year; Besides, there is no certaintie when the *Olympicks* and the Citie of *Rome* had their true beginning, and yet our Computation dependeth upon them. The *Julian* year also which we use, is longer then the *Tropical* or *Cælestial* by eleven *Horary* Scruples, whereof each Hour containeth 60. the *Æra* of *Nabonassar* in the space of 1460 *Julian* years, gaineth one whole year; so that 1460 *Julian*, make 1461 *Nabonassarian* years, because these years consist of 365 days, without Intercalation of the remaining 6 hours, which every fourth year makes a day; and as there be divers Computations of years, so they have divers *initiations*, the *Olympiads* take their beginning from the *New Moon* next the *Summer Solstice*, the year of *Iphitus* contained 10 *Olympiads*, or 40 of our years: the threefold *Seleucidan* Computation, hath different beginnings; for that which is called the *Judaicall*, begins the 13 of *March*, the *Alexandrean* or *Antiochian*, takes beginning in *Autumn*; the *Chaldean* in the subsequent *Spring*; so that the *Antiochian* Year begins in the middle way between the *Judaical* and *Chaldaical*. The *Dionysian Ægyptian* Computation begins the 25 of *March*, the *Macchabæan* the 24 of *November*; the *Spanish* begins the 1 of *January*, but 6 years later then the *Julian*, because it was brought into *Spain* 6 years later then into other places: The Computation from the *Consulship* of *Augustus*, begins the 22 of *September*; the *Actiac Æra* is twofold, one begins the 2 of *September*, when *Augustus* at *Actium* defeated *Antony*; the other begins the 29 of *August* of the next following year; *to wit*, from the taking of *Alexandria*, and the death of *Cleopatra*: the *Augustan* Computation begins the 14 of *February*, when *Octavius* was stiled *Augustus* by the *Senat.* *Diocletian Æra* begins the 29 of *August*, which is yet in use among the *Ethiopian Christians*; the *Hegira* or *Arabic* and *Turkish* Computation begins the 16 of *July*, in the year of Christ 622 and consists of *Lunary* years; the *Jezdagrid* or *Persian Æra* begins the 16 of *June*, *Anno Christi* 632. These and many more differences may be seen in *Scaliger*, *Calvisius*, *Helvicus*, *Petavius*, *Genebrard*, and other *Chronologers.* I have in this *Chronologie* set down the years of *Popes* and *Princes Reignes*, but have omitted the odd months and days for brevity sake, as being

a thing of ſmall concernment: I have likewiſe in every *Decad*, diſtinguiſhed the *Church Affairs* from the *States* to avoid confuſion; and I have ſet down the number of *Synods* in each *Decad*, but not the *Circumſtances* of the Place, Acts, and occaſion of their calling (except of ſome that are more famous) to avoid *prolixitie*, and that the Book might not ſwel too big: There are alſo ſome Paſſages touched in the *Chronology*, which were omitted in the *Hiſtory*; and what is either wanting or brief in the *Chronologie*, will be found more fully in the *Hiſtory*, that there might be no defect in both together, though the one may ſeem to be lame without the other.

Laſtly, I have in this *Work* performed the part of an *Hiſtorian*, not of an *Orator*, or *Tragædian*. Two things are commendable in an *Hiſtorian*, to wit, *brevity* and *ſimplicity*; *brevity* to diſtinguiſh *Hiſtory* from *Oratory*; *ſimplicity* of *words* and *phraſes*, to diſcriminate it from *Tragedies*, in which high and lofty *Expreſſions* are uſed to move the Affections. In *Hiſtory* nothing is aimed at but a bare *narration* of things *acted*, or words *ſpoken*, which ought to be delivered without the painting of *Tropes* and lacivious *dreſſings* of luxuriant *phraſes*, which oftentime *adulterate* the *Truth*; whereas *ſhe* ſhould be *naked* without any gordious *attire*, or gawdy *trappings*, for ſuch are for a *wanton courteſan*; not for a *modeſt matron*. Therefore *Alcibiades* confeſſeth that he could never give *credit* to the *Poliſhed* and *painted ſpeeches* of *Pericles*; and could never but give credit to the ſimple and naked *Expreſſions* of *Socrates*. *Hiſtory* then is to be ſought for, not in the delightful *Cave* or *Grove* of the *Muſes*, but in that deep and horrid *well* where *truth* lay hid ſo long; yet I denie not but an *honeſt woman* may be comly *attired*, and *Hiſtoricall* narrations may be ſweetned with ſome *Oratoreall Flowres*; but *Ne quid nimis*: in this the *Hiſtorian* who writes at large, muſt be very ſparing, much more he who writes an *Epitome*. Perhaps ſome will object to me, that S. *Hierom* commends *Livie* for his *Milkie Rivers of Eloquence*, *the Flowres of Nectar*, *the Marrow of Honey*, *and the Attic junkets* that are in him. To whom I anſwer, That S. *Hierom* in this Commendation looked upon the *Orations* and *Speeches* ſet down in that *Hiſtory*, rather then on the *Hiſtoricall* Narrations themſelves; Now in theſe ſpeeches *Scaliger* obſerves, that *Livie* playes the Poet rather then the Hiſtorian, in faſtning ſuch Eloquent ſpeeches on thoſe who were never guilty of them.

To conclude all, I wiſh that Gentlemen who read Hiſtories, may receive the ſame benefit in the cure of their ſpiritual malaдies

dies by which the Soul is infected, that *Alphonsus* King of *Spain*, and *Ferdinand*, King of *Sicily*, obtained in the cure of their bo-
Badin. dily *Diseases*; for that *Health* which neither of them could have from the *Physitian*, they had from the *Historian*; for the one by reading of *Livie*, the other by reading of *Curtius*, recovered their health again. Now this *spiritual* benefit they shall obtain in reading *Histories*, if they will but diligently observe how God hath shewed his *Presence* to the World in all Ages, by guiding this *Universe* in *Justice* and *Wisdom*; by *Punishing* wicked men in his *Anger*, and *Rewarding* good men in his *Mercy*; if they will look upon the various *Examples* of *Vertue* and *Vice*; of Humane *Imbecilities*, of various *Changes* in *Kingdoms*, *States*, and all *Governments*, of the *Mutabilitie* that is in mens minds, of the *Inconstancy* in their affections, of the *Cunning* and *Falshood* that are in Promises and Covenants, and the *Vanity* that is in all Humane Felicitie: They will truely finde that there is no such *Antidote* against the Infection and Poyson of Sin, as the reading of *Historie*: And so I bid thee farwell.

A. Rosse.

A SUMMARIE
OF THE
SECOND PART
OF THE
HISTORY OF THE
WORLD.

The First Book:

Intreating

OF the Times from the end of the Macedonian *Kingdome, till the Reign of* Nerva *the Roman Emperour; containing 273 yeares.*

The Second Book:

Intreating

OF the Times from Nerva *the Roman Emperour, till the Reign of* Constantine *alone; containing 233 yeares.*

The Third Book:

Intreating

OF the Times from Constantine *the Great, till* Charls *the Great; containing 476 yeares.*

The Fourth Book:

Intreating

OF *the Times from* Charles *the Great, till* Philip *the Emperour in the West, & the French Empire in the East; containing* 400 *yeares.*

The Fifth Book:

Intreating

OF *the Times from* Philip *Emperour in the West, and the French Empire in the East, till* Wenceslaus *the German Emperour; containing the History of* 200 *yeares.*

The Sixth Book:

Intreating

OF *the Histories of the World, from the yeare* 1400.

THE

THE CONTENTS
Of the Chapters in the First Book of the Second Part of the HISTORY OF THE WORLD.

CHAP. I.

OF Antiochus, Epiphanes, *and the* Jewes *under the* Macchabees. 2. *Of the affairs of* Egypt *and* Syria, *under* Ptolemy, Philometor, Demetrius, Alexander, *and others.* 3. *Of* Cappadocia, Pontus, Bithynia, *and* Asia minor, *under* Ariarathes, Attalus, &c. 4. *The last* Carthaginian *War under* Scipio, &c.

CHAP. II.

Corinth *is taken.* 2. *The affairs of* Egypt. 3. *The affairs of* Judæa *under* Simon *and* Hircanus. 4. *The affairs of* Syria *under* Tryphon, Demetrius, Alexander, &c. 5. *The* Roman *Wars at home,* in Sicily, *in* Spain, *and in* Asia.

CHAP. III.

The Jewish *affairs, under* Hircanus, Aristobulus, *and* Alexander. 2. *The* Egyptian *affaires under* Cleopatra, Philometor, *and* Alexander. 3. *The* Syrian *affairs under* Seleucus, Eusebes, Philip, Demetrius, &c. 4. *The* Roman *Wars with* Jugurtha, *the* Cimbri, *the* Thracians, *and* Sicilian *Slaves.*

CHAP. IV.

The Civil Wars of Rome, *under* Marius, Sylla, Cinna. 2. *The* Roman *War with* Mithridates.

CHAP. V.

The affaires of Syria, *under* Tigranes. 2. *Of* Judæa, *under* Alexandra. 3. *Of* Egypt, *under* Ptolemy Auletes, &c. 4. *The* Sertorian, Spartick, *and* Mithridatick *War, with* Cataline's *Conspiracie.* 5. Pompey's *actions, and some* Roman *passages about* Cicero *and* Clodius.

CHAP. VI.

Cæsars *exploits in* Gallia, Germany, *and* Britain. 2. *The affairs of* Rome, *under* Pompey, Crassus, *and* Marcellus. 3. Crassus *his miscarriage in* Asia. 4. *Some passages of* Judæa *and* Egypt. 5. *Of* Cicero *and* Cato.

CHAP. VII.

The fatal Civil war between Cæsar *and* Pompey. 2. Cæsars *divers Victories in* Thessalia, Egypt, Africk, Pontus, *and* Spain. 3. Pompey's *death, and* Cæsar's.

CHAP. VIII.

The affairs of Judæa *under* Antigonus *and* Antipater. 2. *The actions of* Octavius *in his younger years.* 3. *The actions & death of* Cassius *&* Brutus. 4. *The actions & end of* Sextus Pompeius. 5. *The actions of* Antonius *&* Lepidus.

CHAP. IX.

The affairs of the Jews *under* Antigonus, Hyrcanus, Herod, *and* Archelaus. 2. *The affairs of* Rome *and* Egypt, *under* Antonius *&* Augustus. 3. *The Birth of CHRIST; the life and death of* Augustus; *and the Insurrections in* Judæa.

CHAP. X.

The life and death of Tiberius *and* Sejanus, *with their Cruelties.* 2. *The Baptisme, life and death, resurrection and ascension of CHRIST.* 3. *How the Gospel began to spread.*

CHAP. XI.

The life and death of Caligula; *and of the* Roman *and* Jewish *affairs under him.* 2. *The life and death of* Claudius; *and of all the memorable accidents in* Rome, Parthia, Judæa, *and elsewhere under him.* 3. *Of* Agrippa *and* Antipas.

CHAP. XII.

The wicked life and death of Nero. 2. *The affairs of* Germany, Britain, Parthia, *and* Armenia *at that time.* 3. *The miserable condition of* Judæa, Galilee, &c.

CHAP. XIII.

The affairs of Rome *under* Galba, Otho, Vitellius, Vespasian, Titus *and* Domitian. 2. *The utter destruction of* Jerusalem, *and slavery imposed on the obstinate Jews.* 3. *Some passages of* Parthia, Armenia, *and other parts.*

The Contents of the Chapters in the *Second Book.*

CHAP. I.

OF *the* Roman *affairs under* Nerva, Trajan, & Adrian. 2. *Of the affairs of* Jews *and* Christians *during that time.*

CHAP. II.

The Roman *affairs under* Antonius Junius, Antonius Philosophus, *and* Commodus. 2. *The affairs of the* Christians, *and of foreign Nations at that time.*

CHAP. III.

The affairs of Rome *under* Pertinax, Didius, *and* Severus. 2. Severus *his actions in the East, and in* Britain. 3. *The Christian affairs during that time.*

CHAP. IV.

The Roman *affairs under* Caracalla, Macrinus, Heliogabalus *and* Alexander. 2. *The affairs of* Christians, Persians *and others during that time.*

CHAP. V.

The Roman *affairs under* Maximinus, Philip, Decius, Gallus, Valerian, Galienus *and others.* 2. *The Christian, and forreign affairs of those times.*

CHAP. VI.

The Roman *affairs under* Claudius, Aurelianus, Tacitus, Probus, Proculus, Bonosus, Carus, Numerianus & Carinus. 2. *Of* Zenobia, *and of the Christian and foreign affairs.*

CHAP. VII.

The Roman *affairs under* Diocletian, Maximianus, Galerius, Constantius, *and* Maxentius. 2. *The horrible persecution of Christians under them.* 3. *Of the* Persian *and forreign affairs of those times.*

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Roman *affairs under* Constantine, Maxentius Maximinus & Licinius. 2. *Of the Christian persecutions, and foreign affairs during that time.*

The Contents of the Chapters in the *Third Book.*

CHAP. I.

THE *life, actions and death of* Constantine *the Great.* 2. *The history of his foursons.* 3. *The Church affairs under these Emperours.*

CHAP. II.

Of Julian, Jovinian, Valentinian, & Valens. 2. *Of the Church, & foreign affairs.*

CHAP. III.

Of Gratianus, Theodosius, Arcadius, Honorius, & Theodosius *the younger.* 2 *Of the* Goths, Vandals, *and other barbarous Nations.* 3. *The Church affairs of those times.*

CHAP. IV.

Divers alterations in the Empire under Theodosius, Martinus, Leo *and* Zeno. 2. *The Western Empire ruined by the* Goths, Vandals, Huns *and* Heruli. 3. *Divers foreign passages of those times, & of the Church affairs.*

CHAP. V.

The Roman *affairs under* Anastasius, Justinus *and* Justinian. 2. *Of the* Persians, Goths, *and other barbarous Nations of those times.* 3. *The affairs of the Church.*

CHAP. VI.

Of Justin, Tiberius, *and* Mauritius. 2. *Of the* Persians, Goths, Longobards, Suevi, Avares, *and others of these times.* 3. *The affairs of the Church then.*

CHAP. VII.

The affairs of the Empire under Phocas Heraclius. 2. *Of* Mahomet *and the* Sarazens. 3. *Of the Church, and divers forreign passages of these times.*

CHAP. VIII.

The affairs of the Empire under Constans *the* 2. Constantine 4. Justinian 2. Philippus Bardanes. Anastasius 2. & Theodosius 3. 2. *The affairs of the* Sarazens, Longobards, Spaniards, French *and others.* 3. *The affairs of the Church in that time.*

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The Roman *affairs under* Leo *the third, and* Conſtantine *the fifth.* 2. *Of* Pipinus, *and foreign affairs.* 3. *The Church-affairs of theſe times.*

CHAP. X.

The affairs of the Empire under Leo, Irene *and* Conſtantine. 2. *Of foreign affairs under* Charles *the Great.* 3. *Of the Church-affairs in thoſe times.*

The Contents of the Chapters in the *Fourth Book.*

CHAP. I.

THE *affairs of both the Empires, under* Charls *in the Weſt, under* Nicephorus, Michael, *and* Leo *in the Eaſt.* 2. *Of the Nations ſubdued by* Charles.

CHAP. II.

The affairs of the Empire under Ludovic *and* Lotharius *in the Weſt, under* Michael Balbus, Theodoſius, Theodora, Michael *the ſecond in the Eaſt.* 2. *Forreign affairs of thoſe times, and of the Church.*

CHAP. III.

The affairs of the Empire under Ludovic *the ſecond,* Carolus Calvus, Ludovic *the third, and* Carolus Craſſus *in the Weſt, and of* Baſilius *in the Eaſt.* 2. *Of foreign affairs of theſe times.*

CHAP. IV.

Of Carolus Craſſus *and* Ludovic *the fourth in the Weſt.* 2. *Of* Leo *and his ſon* Conſtantine *in the Eaſt.* 3. *Of the affairs of* Italy, Germany, Spain, Scotland, *and other paſſages of thoſe times.*

CHAP. V.

The affairs of Italy, Germany, France, *and other neighbouring Countries under* Henricus Auceps, *and* Otho *the Great.* 2. *The Eaſtern affairs under* Conſtantine *and his ſon* Romanus. 3. *The affairs of the Church.*

CHAP. VI.

The Eaſtern affairs under Nicephorus, Phocas, Zimiſces, Baſilius, *and* Conſtantine. 2. *Of the Weſtern, under* Otho *the ſecond.* 3. *Of the* Turks, *and ſome other paſſages of thoſe times.*

CHAP. VII.

The affairs of the Weſtern Empire under Otho *the third,* Henry *the ſecond, and* Conradus *the ſecond.* 2. *Divers paſſages of* England, Scotland, Italy, France, *and other parts of* Europe. 3. *Of ſome Popes.*

CHAP. VIII.

The affairs of the Eaſtern Empire under Argyropolus, Michael, Calaphates, Zoe, Theodora, *and* Monomachus. 2. *Of the* Turks *and* Popes *of thoſe times.* 3. *Of the* Polonian, Hungarian, Engliſh, Scottiſh, *and other affairs.*

CHAP. IX.

The troubleſome affairs of the Weſt under Henry *the third, and* Henry *the fourth.* 2. *The affairs of* Italy, Spain, Portugal, Sicily. 3. *The Popes of thoſe times.*

CHAP. X.

The Eaſtern affairs under Stratioticus, Ducas, Diogenes, Michael, Botoniates *and* Alexius. 2. *The* Holy-War, *and Kings of* Jeruſalem, *and new Orders of Knighthood.* 3. *The affairs of* Cyprus, Portugal, England, Scotland, *and the Popes of this time.*

CHAP. XI.

The Weſtern affairs under Henry *the fifth, and* Lotharius *Duke of* Saxony. 2. *The Eaſtern under* Calo-joannes. 3. *The affairs of* France, Spain, England, Denmark, &c. *with the Popes of thoſe times.*

CHAP. XII.

A brief Hiſtory of Egypt *from* Auguſtus *till the* Turkiſh *conqueſt.* 2. *The Weſtern affairs under* Frederick Barbaroſſa. 3. *Divers paſſages of* Italy, Germany, Denmark, *and the other* Holy-war. 4. *Divers Occurrences, and the Popes of thoſe times, with ſome paſſages of* Tartaria.

CHAP. XIII.

The Eaſtern affairs under Manuel Comnenus, Andronicus, Alexius, Iſaacius *and* Alexius Angeli. 2. *The affairs of* France, Spain, Denmark, Conſtantinople, Rome, England *and* Scotland *in theſe times, with divers other paſſages.* 3. Henry *the* 6. *Emperour.*

The Contents of the Chapters in the *Fifth Book.*

CHAP. I.

THe *troubles of* Europe *under* Philip, Otto *the fourth, and* Frederick *the ſecond, Emperors of the Weſt.* 2. *The affairs of the* Holy-Land. 3. *of the* Daniſh *and other Europian affairs.*

CHAP. II.

The true eſtate of the Eaſtern Empire. 2. *The affairs of* France, Tartary, Denmark, Poland, England, Scotland, Spain, *and other places.* 3. *The Popes of theſe times.*

CHAP. III.

Fredericks *poſterity.* 2. *The affaires of the Weſtern Empire under* Rodulphus, *and others.* 3. *Of* France, England, Scotland, *and other places.* 4. *Of the Popes of theſe times, and other memorable things.*

CHAP. IV.

The Eaſtern affaires, under Michael Palæologus, Andronicus *the elder and younger.* 2. *The* Turkiſh *and* Tartarian *affairs.* 3. *The affairs of* Hungary, Poland, Denmark, *the* Low-Countries, *chiefly* Holland, *and the* Switzers.

CHAP. V.

The affaires of Germany *under* Adolphus, Albertus, Henry *the* 7. *and* Ludovic *of* Bavaria. 2. *The affairs of* Sicily, Naples, Florence, Rome, Millain, *and other parts of* Italy, *with the adjacent Countries, from the year* 1298. *till* 1347.

CHAP. VI.

The Eaſtern affaires, under the Palæologi. 2. *A brief Hiſtory of the* Turks, *till the year* 1412. 3. *The brief Hiſtory of* Sweden, Denmark *and* Norway, *till the ſame year* 1412.

CHAP. VII.

The affaires of Italy, Germany, Bohemia, *the* Netherlands, *under* Charles *the* 4. *and* Wenceſlaus *Emperours.* 2. *The wars between* Venice *and* Genua *for the Iſle of* Tenedos, *from the year* 1349. *till* 1400.

CHAP. VIII.

The lives of the Popes, from the yeare 1305. *till* 1389. 2. *The Hiſtory of* Holland *and the next Provinces, from the year* 1298. *till* 1404. 3. *The Hiſtory of* Savoy, *from the beginning till the year* 1397.

CHAP. IX.

The French *ſtory from the year* 1313. *till* 1380. *interwoven with divers paſſages of* England, Flanders, Spain, Germany, Italy, &c.

CHAP. X.

A proſecution of the French *Hiſtory from the year* 1380. *till* 1407. *In which are interlaced divers paſſages of* Italy, Flanders, Navar, Africk, Britany, England, Scotland, Spain *and* Hungary.

CHAP. XI.

The Hiſtory of England, *interwoven with ſome paſſages of* France *and* Scotland, *from the yeare* 1301. *till* 1350.

CHAP. XII.

A proſecution of the Engliſh *ſtory, from the year* 1350. *till the year* 1399.

CHAP. XIII.

The Hiſtory of Scotland *from the year* 1306. *till the year* 1377.

CHAP. XIV.

A proſecution of the Scottiſh *Hiſtory, from the year* 1377. *till the year* 1400.

The

The Contents of the Chapters in the *Sixth and laſt Book.*

CHAP. I.

THE *affairs of* Italy, Germany, Hungary & Bohemia, *under* Wenceſlaus, Rupert, Sigiſmund, *Emperours.* 2. *The Councel of* Conſtance *and* Baſil, *with ſome other paſſages from the year* 1400. *till the year* 1439.

CHAP. II.

The Hiſtory of Swethland *and* Denmark, *from the year* 1412. *till the year* 1587. *Of* Denmark *and of* Swethland, *till* 1590.

CHAP. III.

The Hiſtory of Holland, *and the neighbouring places, from the year* 1404. *till* 1514. *with ſome paſſages of* Utricht, *till* 1580.

CHAP. IV.

The Hiſtory of Savoy, *and the neighbouring parts, from the year* 1397. *till the year* 1452.

CHAP. V.

A proſecution of the Savoyan *Hiſtory, from the year* 1452. *till the year* 1503.

CHAP. VI.

The Helvetian *Hiſtory, from the beginning till the year* 1481.

CHAP. VII.

A proſecution of the Helvetian *Hiſtory, till the year* 1521.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Helvetian *Confederates, till the year* 1602.

CHAP. IX.

The Swediſh *Hiſtory, from the year* 1590. *till the year* 1631.

CHAP. X.

The proſecution of the Swediſh *Hiſtory under* Guſtavus, *from* 1631. *till the midſt of* 1633.

CHAP. XI.

The Savoyan *Hiſtory from the year* 1504. *till the year* 1580.

CHAP. XII.

The Hiſtory of Hungary, *from the beginning till the year* 1532.

CHAP. XIII.

A proſecution of the Hungarian *Hiſtory, from the year* 1532, *till* 1629.

CHAP. XIV.

The affaires of Germany, Hungary, Poland, Turky, Bohemia, Auſtria, Millan, Naples, Cyprus, *and* Boruſſia, *under* Albert *and* Frederick, *Emperours, from the year* 1438. *till the year* 1480.

CHAP. XV.

The proſecution of the affairs of Germany, Italy, France, Spain, *and the other neighbouring places, under* Maximilian *the Emperour, with the Coronation of* Charls *the fifth, from the year* 1486. *till* 1520.

CHAP. XVI.

The affairs of Italy, Germany, Netherlands, *with the actions of the Popes of thoſe times, and the Councel of* Trent, *&c. under* Charls *the fifth,* Ferdinand *and* Maximilian, *from the year* 1520, *till* 1576.

CHAP. XVII.

The affairs of Portugal, Africk, Germany, *the* Netherlands, Spain, Poland, Hungary, Tranſilvania, Bohemia,

mia, Ruſsia, Venice, &c. *under* Rodulphus 2. *Emperour, from the yeare* 1576. *till* 1612.

CHAP. XVIII.

The affairs of Germany, Denmark, Swedeland, Holland, Ruſsia, Italy, Hungary, Bohemia, Tranſilvania, Poland, Griſons, France, Switzers, *&c. under* Matthias *&* Ferdinand 2. *Emperours, from the year* 1612. *till* 1626.

CHAP. XIX.

A continuation of the History of Germany, Denmark, Swedeland, Holland, Poland, Italy, *&c. under* Ferdinand 1. *from the year* 1626. *till the end of* 1630.

CHAP. XX.

A continuation of the affairs of Turky, Perſia, Egypt, Greece, Armenia *and other adjacent parts, under* Mahomet 1 Amurath 2. Mahomet 2. Bajazet *and* Selymus, *from the year* 1412. *till* 1520.

CHAP. XXI.

The Turkiſh *History under* Solyman, Selymus, Amurath 3. Mahomet 3. Achmat, Muſtapha, Oſman, *and* Amurath 4. *from the year* 1520. *till the end of* 1636.

CHAP. XXII.

The affairs of France, *under* Charls 6. Charls 7. *and* Lewis 11. *from the year* 1407, *till the year* 1483. *interwoven with the History of* Burgundy, *and other bordering places.*

CHAP. XXIII.

The proſecution of the French *History under* Charls 8. Lewis 11. Francis 1. Henry 2. Francis 2. Charls 8. Henry 3. Henry 4. Lewis 13. *from the year* 1483. *till* 1633. *wherein the lives of the Popes, the affairs of* Italy, Spain, *and other bordering Countries are touched.*

CHAP. XXIV.

A proſecution of the Engliſh *History, under the reigns of* Henry 4. Henry 5. *and* Henry 6. *from the year* 1399. *till the year* 1460. *containing divers paſſages of the* French *and* Scots *affairs.*

CHAP. XXV.

A proſecution of the Scottiſh *History under* Robert *Duke of* Albany *and* Mardo *Earl of* Fife *Governours; alſo under* James 1. James 2. *Kings, from the year* 1400. *till the year* 1460.

CHAP. XXVI.

The Engliſh *History under King* Edward 4. Edward 5. *&* Richard 3. *from the year* 1460. *till the year* 1485.

CHAP. XXVII.

The Engliſh *History under the reigns of King* Henry 7. *and* Henry 8. *from the year* 1485. *till the year* 1548.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The affairs of Scotland *under king* James 3. *and* James 4. *from the year* 1460. *till the year* 1513.

CHAP. XXIX.

The Scottiſh *History, under king* James 5. *and his young daughter queen* Mary, *from the year* 1513. *till* 1544.

CHAP. XXX.

A continuation of the Scottiſh *History under the two Regents,* Hamilton *&* the *Queen Mother, from* 1544. *till* 1560.

CHAP. XXXI.

The continuation of the Engliſh *History under king* Edward 6. *and Queen* Mary, *from the year* 1546. *till* 1558.

CHAP. XXXII.

The Engliſh *History, interwoven with the History of* Spain, France, Ireland, *and* Netherlands, *under Queen* Elizabeth, *from* 1558. *till* 1602.

CHAP. XXXIII.

The History of Scotland *under Queen* Mary, *from the year* 1560. *till the year* 1567.

CHAP. XXXIV.

A continuation of the Scots *History under King* James 6. *from* 1567. *till* 1602.

CHAP. XXXV.

The history of England *and* Scotland *together, from the comming in of King* James *to be ſole Monarch of the whole Iſland, from the year* 1602. *till* 1625.

CHAP. XXXVI.

A continuation of the history of Great-Britain, *under King* Charls, *from the year* 1625. *till the year* 1641.

A CATALOGUE
Of ſuch Hiſtorians and Chronologers, which are made uſe of in the compiling of the enſuing HISTORIE.

Ammianus Marcellinus.

Venerable Bede, a Saxon-Presbyter, wrote many learned books, among the reſt five books of the Hiſtory of his own Nation: He lived about the year 731.

Flavius Blondus, an Italian; He was Secretary to Pope *Eugenius* 4. He wrote the Roman Hiſtory from the year 407. till the yeare 1400. He lived about the yeare 1440.

Hector Boethius a Scotiſh-man, lived about 1500. in the Univerſity of *Aberden*, and wrote 17 Books of the *Scots* Hiſtory, with a Deſcription of *Scotland* and its Kings.

C. Julius Cæſar wrote 7 Books of the *Gallic* war, the 8. was written by *Hircius*. Of the Civil war with *Pompey* 3 Books. Theſe were printed at *Venice* and *Baſil*, *an.* 1521.

Georgius Cedrenus a Greek Hiſtorian, wrote a compendious Hiſtory from the Creation till the year of Chriſt 1057. He lived about the year 1070.

Marcus Antonius Coccius Sabellicus, lived about the year 1500. His works are printed in 4 Tomes: in the firſt is his Hiſtory from the Creation, divided into 5 Enneads or Nines, that is 45 Books; in the ſecond is the Continuation of the Hiſtory by ſixe Enneads, the laſt of which hath but 2 Books, ſo that there are but 47 Books, there is alſo in this Tome the Venetian Hiſtory; in the third are 29 Books, and in the fourth 10 Books of Examples: he wrote alſo divers other Tractates.

Paulus Diaconus of *Aquileia*, was Secretary to *Deſiderius* King of the *Longobards*, at what time he was taken by *Charles* the Great, who overthrew his Kingdom, about the year of Chriſt 774. He wrote 6 Books of the affairs of the *Longobards*, and ſome think he wrote thoſe Books of the Roman Hiſtory, which are annexed to the Hiſtory of *Eutropius*.

Evagrius Scholaſticus, wrote the Eccleſiaſtique Hiſtory in 6 Books; begining where *Sozomen* ended, till the 12. year of *Mauritius* the Emperour, about the year of Chriſt 597.

Euſebius Pamphili Biſhop of *Cæſaria*; He lived in the time of *Conſtantine* the Great, whoſe life he wrote in 4 Books; he wrote alſo 10 Books of the Church-Hiſtory, beſides a Chronicle, and ſome other works.

Eutropius Presbyter, wrote 1 Book of Chronologie, and 10 Books of the Roman Hiſtory, printed by *Aldus* at *Venice*.

L. Annæus Florus lived in the time of *Hadrian* and *Trajan*. He wrote 4 Books of the Roman Hiſtory: Some think he was the Abreviator of *Livy*, which is unlikely, becauſe he recedes from him in divers paſſages; He is by ſome called *Seneca*, and ſome think that *Seneca* the Philoſopher wrote this Story; but the diverſitie of ſtile, times and other circumſtances ſhew the contrary.

Herodian lived in the time of *M. Antoninus* Emperour; he wrote the lives of 13 Emperours, in 8 Books.

Rogerus de Hoveden, wrote two Books of Engliſh Annals, ending at King *John*, who reigned about the year 1199. *Roger* lived about the year 1190.

Flavius Joſephus a Prieſt at *Ieruſalem*, comming to *Rome*, wrote 7 Books of the Jewiſh wars, & 20 Books of their Antiquities, from the Creation till the 14. year of *Domitian*, and 2 Books againſt *Appion* the Grammarian. Theſe books of the Jewiſh wars, Antiquities, and againſt *Appion*, were firſt printed in Latine at *Venice*, *an.* 1499. and in Greek at *Baſil*, *an.* 1544.

Iſidor Biſhop of *Sivil*, who died about the year 636. He wrote many books, among the reſt, an Univerſal Chronicle, a Chronicle of the *Goths*, the Hiſtory of the *Vandals*, the Hiſtory of the *Suevi*, of the Eccleſiaſtique writers, &c.

Titus Livius Patavinus, wrote 3 Decads of the Roman Hiſtory, beſides other Peeces: his works were printed in 2 Tomes in *fol. an.* 1578.

William of *Malmesbury* an Engliſh Monk, who lived about the year 1130. Contemporary with S. *Bernard*, *Peter* Abbot of *Cluny*, *Hugo de Sancto Victore*, & *Richardus de Sancto Victore*. He wrote 5 Books of the Engliſh Kings till *Henry* the firſt, and 5 Books of the Engliſh Biſhops, with ſome other Hiſtorical Tractates.

John Maior a Scotiſh-man, lived about 1500. and beſides other books, he wrote the Hiſtory of *Great-Britain*.

Marianus Scotus lived about the year 1083. He was a Monk, and wrote a Chronicle from the Creation till the year 1083.

Martinus called from his Country *Polonus*, Bishop of *Consentinum*, and the Popes Confessor, to wit, *Innocent* 4. He wrote a Chronicle printed at *Basil*, with a Chronicle of *Marianus Scotus*, in the year 1559. in folio; He writes the lives of the Popes and Emperours till his time, to wit *ann.* 1285.

Matthew Palmerius a Florentine, lived *ann.* 1440. at the time of the Councel of Florence: He wrote a Chronicle beginning at the year 449. till the year 1449.

Matthew Palmerius of *Pisa* lived at the same time, and continued *Matthews* Chronicle, from the year 1450. till the year. 1481.

Matthew Paris, a Monk of St. *Albans*, in the time of King *Henry* the 3. He wrote the English History from *William* the Conquerour, till the 35 year of *Henry* the 3. that is, from the year of Christ, 1067. till the year 1250.

Matthew Westminster a Monk, wrote three Books of the Flowers of History; He lived about the year 1377.

Johannes Nauclerus lived about 1500. He wrote a Chronicle of memorable things from the Creation till the year 1500.

Nicephorus Callistus a Greek Historian, lived in the time of *Andronicus* the elder; to whom he Dedicated his History, about the year of Christ 1300. He begins his History from Christs Nativity, and ends in the year 625. It contains 18 Books.

Nicephorus Bishop of *Constantinople*, lived in the time of Pope *Leo* 3. *ann.* 811. He wrote a Chronicle extant in *Bibliotheca Patrum.*

Paulus Orosius a Spanish Presbyter, and a disciple of St. *Augustine*, he wrote 7 Books of Histories from the Creation.

C. Vellejus Paterculus wrote two Books of the Roman History, printed at *Basil*, *Lions*, *Geneva*, and *Venice*, *ann.* 1571.

Baptista Platina, born at *Cremona*, he flourished about the year of Christ 1451. besides other Books, he wrote the lives of the Popes.

Plutarchus Chæroneus born in *Boætia*, he flourished in the time of *Trajan*; He wrote many Books, among the rest, the Lives or Parallels of the famous Greeks & Romans, this Book was first printed by *Aldus* at *Venice*, *an.* 1519.

Prosper Aquitanicus a holy and learned Bishop, besides many Theological peeces, he wrote a Chronicle, beginning where *Eusebius* and St. *Hierom* left; he lived about the year 460.

C. Crispus Salustius, wrote the conspiracy of *Cataline*, the war of *Jugurtha*, with other things, whose fragments are onely exstant: these were printed at *Lipsic*, *ann.* 1539.

Sigebertus a Monk, lived in the time of Pope *Gregory* the 7 *ann.* 1101. He wrote a Chronology from the year of Christ 381. till the year 1111.

Socrates and *Sozomen*, wrote the Church History, beginning where *Eusebius* ended, till the time of *Theodosius* the younger.

C. Suetonius Tranquillus, wrote the lives of the first twelve *Cæsars*, printed at *Lions ann.* 1539. He wrote also divers other books.

Sulpitius Severus Presbyter, a learned and wise man, as St. *Austin* cals him in his 205 Epistle; he lived in the time of *Hierom* and *Ruffinus*, and was born in *Aquitania*; He wrote (besides a Dialogue, divers Epistles, and the life of St. *Martin* Bishop of *Turon*) two Books of the *sacred Story.*

Æneas Sylvius born in *Sena* of *Tuscany*, who was afterward Pope *Pius* 2. besides many other Books which he wrote: He set forth the History of *Bohemia* from the original of that Nation, till *George* that succeeded *Ladislaus*; this work was first printed at *Basil*, *ann.* 1532. His *Fasciculus Rerum Expetendarum*, at *Colen*, *ann.* 1535.

Cornelius Tacitus was born in the time of *Claudius* the Emperour, and was in great account with *Vespatian* and *Titus*. He wrote 16 Books of *Annals*, 5 Books of Histories, one Book of the *German manners*, and one Book of the life of *Julius Agricola.*

Johannes Zonaras a Greek Monk, wrote three Books of *Annals*, containing the Universal History from the Creation, till the death of *Alexius Comnenus*, who died about the year 1118.

Of later and modern Writers, these have been perused.

Bogislai Philippi à Chemnitz, Belli Sueco-Germanici, Vol. 1°. *Stetini.* 1648.

Cæsar Baronius, first a Priest, then a Cardinal, compiled the Ecclesiastique History from Christs Nativity till the year 1200. in 12 Tomes. He died *ann.* 1607.

Olaus Magnus Archbishop of *Upsale*, wrote the History of the *Sueves.*

Adolphus Brachelius his History of these latter times from the year 1618. till the year 1650.

Busbequius who was Ambassador at *Constantinople* for *Ferdinand* and *Maxmilian* Emperours, about eight years together, wrote four Epistles containing all the memorable passages in the *Turkish* Dominions at that time.

Camdeni Anglica-Normannica, &c.

Carion, set out a briefe Chronicle which is explained and enlarged by *Philip Melanthon* and *Caspar Peucerus.*

Johannis Cluverii Epitome.

Bartholomæus Facius of *Genua*, wrote ten Books of the actions of *Alphonsus* first king of *Naples*; He wrote also a Book of the *Venetian* wars with *Genua*; and divers other Tractates.

Genealogia Austriaca, cum figuris.

Francis Guicciardin a Patritian of *Florence*, wrote

wrote the History of his time in 20 Books in *Italian*; which *Cælius ſecundus Curio* tranſlated into Latine, Printed at *Baſil* in folio, *an.* 1566.

Hiſtoria Normannorum.

Paulus Jovius wrot the History of his time in 45 Books; beſides the History of the *Turks* from *Ottoman*, and ends with *Solyman.*

Opus Chronographicum { *Opmeeri & Beyerlink.*

Parei Medulla Hiſtoriarum.

Petavii rationarium temporum.

Pezelii Mellificium Hiſtoricum.

Polydor Virgil wrote the History of *England* till *Henry* the eight.

Reſpublicæ variis voluminibus, 12°, 16. & 24. *Impreſ. Amſt. Lugd. Bat. &c.*

Saxo Grammaticus, wrote 16 Books of the *Danes* & *Norwegians* to the time of *Canutus*; this *Saxo* was Provoſt of *Roſcheld.*

Martinus Cramerus wrote the History of the *Polanders.*

Joſeph Scaliger, ſon to the learned *Julius*, who beſides his Notes and Obſervations upon *Varro*, *Feſtus*, *Virgils Epigrams*, *Catullus*, *Tibullus*, *Propertius*, *Manilius*, *Auſonius*, and others; he wrote that uſefull work *De Emendatione Temporum*, and *Theſaurus Temporum*, or Chronology upon *Euſebius*; he lived and died at *Leiden*, *ann.* 1609.

Carolus Sigonius Profeſſor of the Latine tongue at *Bononia*; wrote the History of *Italy*, and divers other Books, as *De antiquo jure Romanorum*, *De repub. Judæorum*, *De repub. Athenienſium*, *De Imperio occidentis*, *&c.*

J. Joſias Simlerus, a Divine in *Zurich*, wrote many Books, among the reſt, two Books of the League and Common-wealth of the *Switzers*: He died at *Zurich* or *Tigurum*, *ann.* 1576.

John Sleidan wrote the History of the Church and State under *Charles* 5. in 26 Books; and withall an Epitome of the four Empires of the World.

Famianus Strada de Bello Belgico.

Jac. Aug. Thuanus, ſecond Preſident of *Paris*, wrote a large hiſtory from the year 1543 till 1608. and was continued till 1618.

Antonii Thyſii Compendium Hiſtoriæ Batavicæ.

Turſelini Epitome.

Raphael Volateranus wrote 38 Books of Hiſtorical Commentaries, beſides divers other works; He lived about the year of our Lord 1503.

Engliſh Chronicles and Hiſtories.

Lord *Bacon*'s, King *Henry* 7.

Baker's Chronicle.

Camden's *Elizabeth.*

Daniel and *Truſſel*'s Chronicle.

Godwyn's Annals.

Lord *Herbert*'s King *Henry* 8.

Martin's Chronicle.

Speed's Hiſtory.

Stow's and *Munday*'s Chronicle.

Hiſtories of Scotland.

Buchanan.

Johnſton.

Knox his Hiſtory of the *Scots Reformation.*

Leſley.

Udal's Queen Mary *of* Scotland.

A Manuſcript of the Battel by the River *Avinum* in *Scotland*, fought between the Earles of *Huntly* and *Errol* againſt the Earle of *Argile*, in the year 1594. written by Mr. *Alexander Machoz*, an Eye-witneſſe thereof.

French Hiſtories.

Paulus Æmilius.

D' Avila's Hiſtory of the Civil wars of *France.*

Beſſe-Foreſt.

Hiſtoire du Monde, f. 3 vol.

Hiſtoire du Cheſne.

Dupleix.

Froiſſard.

De Serres.

Lumieres pour l'Hiſtoire de France.

Le Mercurie Francois.

Philippe de Commines of the actions of *Ludovic* 11. and *Charles* 8.

Thivet.

Hiſtories in generall made uſe of.

Ayſcue's Hiſtory of *England* and *Scotland.*

Civil-wars of *England.*

Councel of *Trent.*

Dutch-Hiſtory.

Sir *Clement Edmunds* upon *Cæſar*'s *Commentaries.*

Eſtates and *Empires.*

Fuller's Hiſtory of the *Holy-war.*

Godwyn's Roman and Jewiſh Antiquities,

and

Rous his Greek Antiquities.

Heylin's Geographie.

Hiſtory of *Portugal.*

Hungarian-Hiſtory.

Imperial-Hiſtory.

Intereſt of Princes, by the *D. of Rohan.*

Machiavel's Florentine Hiſtory.

Powel's Hiſtory of *Wales.*

Spaniſh-Hiſtory.

Swediſh-Intelligencer, with the later Occurrences, printed by Mr. *Bourn* and *Butter.*

Turkiſh-Hiſtory.

Venetian-Hiſtory, *fol.*

Howel's Survay of *Venice.*

Wars of Chriſtendome, till 1640. by the Count *Galliazzo Priorato.*

For the Chronologie, *these have been chiefly consulted with.*

Bellarmini Chronologia.
Calvisii Chronologia.
Davidis Chytræi Chronologia.

Gilbertus Genebrardus, the Kings Professor of Divinity and the Hebrew tongue at *Paris*, wrote four Books of Chronographie, with divers other peeces.
Iac. Gordonii Lesmorei Chronologia.
Helvici Chronologia.
Isaacson's Chronologie.
With some others.

Octob. 22. 1651.

IMPRIMATVR,

NA: BRENT.

THE

The Second Part OF THE VNIVERSALL HISTORY OF THE WORLD.

THE FIRST BOOKE, INTREATING

Of the times from the end of the *MACEDONIAN* KINGDOME, till the Reigne of *NERVA* the ROMAN EMPEROUR, containing 273. years.

CHAP. I.

Of Antiochus Epiphanes, *and the Iewes under the* Macchabees. 2. *Of the affaires of* Egypt *and* Syria, *under* Ptol. Philometor, Demetrius, Alexander, *and others.* 3. *Of* Cappadocia, Pontus, Bithynia, *and* Asia minor, *under* Ariarathes, Attalus, *&c.* 4. *The last* Carthaginian *War under* Scipio, &c.

An. Mundi.

ANtiochus *Epiphanes* (as we shewed in the end of the first part of this Universall History) having submitted himselfe to the *Romans* and left *Egypt*, he returns into *Asia*, where hee shewed himselfe to be *Epiphanes*, or illustrious in nothing but in wickednesse, and indeed *Epimanes* a madde man; for he gave himselfe to all kinde of scurrility, riot, gormandizing, cruelty, oppression, sacriledge, hee robbed the Temple of *Ierusalem*, beat down the walls of the City, made the *Iews* to offer Sacrifice to the Heathen Gods, dedicated the Lords Altar to *Iupiter Olympius*; burned the Holy Scriptures, tortured *Eleazer* the Scribe being 90 years old, and his Brethren, and perpetrated many horrid acts, murthering and captivating incredible multitudes of *Iews*. This monster of men, notwithstanding, the *Samaritans* in hatred of the *Iews* honoured with divine titles; which caused *Matthias* the Priest, and one of the *Assamonean* family, to bestirre himselfe, who having killed a *Iew* for polluting himselfe with idolatry, assembled a multitude of his kindred and alliance, and all such as loved God and their Countrey, who brake downe the profane Altars, circumcised children, and by degrees setled the true Religion, but *Matthias* growing aged and unfit for action, gave the charge of the Army to *Iudas Maccabeus* his son, and appointed *Simon* to look to the State. 3806.

Apollonius the Kings favourite having invaded *Iudea*, was by *Iudas* overthrown and slain: so was *Seron* the Governor of *Syria*, to whom succeeded *Lysias*, who sends an army of 40000. foot & 7000 horse against *Iudea* under the conduct of *Ptolemy*, 3807.

A. M. *Gorgias*, and *Nicanor*; *Iudas* with 3000 fals ſuddenly on *Gorgias* his campe, (himſelfe being then abſent) which he burnes and ſpoils, ſo that *Gorgias* was forced ro forſake *Iudea*, *Lyſias* ſends a new Army of 60000 horſe and foot, which *Iudas* with 10000 overthrew, killed 5000 of the enemies, and obtained a great booty; then he began to purge the Temple which was left deſo-
3809. late three years. He repairs the Lords Altar, appoints prieſts, keeps the feaſt of Dedication, and gards the Temple with ſouldiers, that the prieſts might not be hindred in their functions: but hearing of great preparations againſt him, by the *Edomites*, *Sidonians*, *Syrians*, *Ammonites*, and *Arabians*; reſolves to hinder their combination. Therefore he firſt fals upon the *Edomites* and ſubdues them: then he invades the *Ammonites*, and *Arabians*, and ſends *Simon* againſt the *Phenicians*; in the interim leaves *Ioſephus*, and *Azarias* to governe *Iudea*, with a charge not to hazzard their army upon a battell; but they being more forward then wiſe, would needs beſiege *Iamnia*, where *Gorgias* brake out ſuddenly upon them, and routed them with the loſſe of 2000. *Antiochus* being diſgracefully repulſed by his owne ſubjects, as he was going to plunder the Temple of *Diana Elymais*, and hearing of the great loſſes his armies had received in *Iudea*, fals deſperately ſick, and dieth, having reigned 12. years, to whom ſucceeded his ſon *Eupator*, a childe.

Lyſias who took upon him the government of the young King, invades *Iudea* with an army of 100. thouſand Foot, 20000. Horſe, and 32. Elephants, he takes in *Bethzura*, then beſiegeth *Ieruſalem*; but hearing that *Philip* (whom *Epiphanes* on his death-bed had appointed governour) was now ſeiſed in *Antioch*, and meant to rule the kingdome, cauſeth the young King to make peace with the *Iewes*, which was performed, and *Iudas* proclaimed Preſident, who put to death *Menelaus* the prieſt, the chief plotter and cauſe of theſe laſt warres; to whom ſucceeded *Alcimus* in the prieſthood: but two years after the death of *Epiphanes*, *Eupator* and *Lyſias* were both ſlain by their owne ſervants, after that their army had revolted to *Demetrius*, the ſon of *Seleucus*, who being an hoſtage at *Rome*, came ſuddenly into *Syria*, and ſeiſed upon *Tripolis*, and claimed the kingdome in the right of his Father *Seleucus*, who came by the elder ſon of *Antiochus* the great. In the mean while *Alcimus* accuſed *Iudas* of rebellion, and cauſed *Demetrius* to ſend an army under his conduct and *Nicanors* againſt *Iudas*; this army *Iudas* overthrew, and ſo was made high prieſt by the people, and then enters into league with the *Romans*, but the next year he was overthrowne in a battell by *Bacchides* and ſlain; whoſe death was the occaſion of much miſery
3813. and oppreſſion in *Iudea*. His people for whom he had done ſo much, treacherouſly forſook and left him to be ſacrificed by his enemies, and ſo multitudes flocked to *Bacchides*, who by him being put into offices, uſed all the cruelty they could upon the friends and followers of *Iudas*.

Ionathas is then made Governour by the people, who in a battell upon the ſabbath day was ſet upon by *Bacchides*, the fight was fierce, *Bacchides* loſt a 1000 men. *Ionathas* with his army eſcaped to the other ſide of *Iordan*, in the mean while *Bacchides* fortifies *Bethell*, *Gaza*, and *Iericho*, with other townes, *Ionathas* plundered the *Amorites* for killing his brother *John*. *Alcimus* the prieſt, as he was going to pull down a wall within the Temple, was ſuddenly ſtruck with a palſie and dyed. *Bacchides* returnes to King *Demetrius* and *Jonathas* lived quietly for two years; in which time a plot againſt him was detected, and 50 of the plotters were put to death. Upon this his enemies invite *Bacchides* again into *Judea*, upon hopes of an eaſie victory, but he found ſuch ſtrong oppoſition and harſh entertainment by *Jonathas* and *Simon*, that in a rage he fell upon thoſe that ſent for him, and put many of them to death; and then makes peace with *Jonathas*, who for four years lived quietly and governed *Judea*.

3816. About this time *Ptolomie Philometor*, who had been driven out of his kingdome by his younger brother, is reſtored againe; and an agreement concluded, that one of the brothers ſhould reign in *Egypt*, the other in *Cyrene*, in the mean while *Ariarathes* King of *Cappadocia* dieth, he had one ſon *Mithridates*, who died

ed young, but his two ſuppoſititious ſons *Ariarathes* and *Olofernes* who contended for the kingdome, *Demetrius* aſſiſted *Olofernes* and made him King. But the *Romans* took part with *Ariarathes*, and eſtabliſhed him in his kingdome in ſpite of *Demetrius*. About which time *C. Marius* the Conſul ſubdued the *Dalmatians*, for moleſting the *Illyrians*, confederates of the *Romans*; and they were at laſt totally conquered by *Cor. Naſica* the Conſul. About this time *Spain* rebelled againſt the *Romans*, and *Antioch* againſt *Demetrius* for his tyranny, inviting *Alexander* who called himſelf the ſon of *Antiochus*, and claimed in right of his father the kingdome of *Syria*. He was aſſiſted by Ptolemy King of *Egypt*, *Ariarathes* King of *Cappadocia*, and *Attalus* King of *Aſia* who ſucceeded his brother *Eumenes*, that had reigned almoſt 50. years. *Alexander* having all this ſtrength, and the aſſiſtance alſo of *Jonathas*, whom he declared high prieſt; two great battels were fought, in the firſt *Alexander* was worſted, but in the ſecond he obtained the victory; in which *Demetrius Soter* or *Saviour*, ſo called for the juſtice he did upon *Heraclides* and *Timarchus*, (the two great oppreſſours of *Babylon*) loſt both his life and kingdome, *Alexander* marryed the daughter of *Ptolemy Philometor*. A. M. 3822.

Demetrius Soter had two ſons, the eldeſt called alſo *Demetrius* was invited by *Apollonius* governour of *Cæloſyria*, to take up armes againſt *Alexander*, who gave himſelfe to all kind of luxury. This *Demetrius* having the aſſiſtance of the *Cretans*, comes ſuddenly into *Syria*, but was overcome by *Ionathas*, and loſt 8000 of his men; *Jonathas* takes in *Aſcalon* and *Joppa*, burnes *Azotus* to the ground, and overthrowes the Idol *Dagon*: for which good ſervices he is highly rewarded by *Alexander*. Shortly after this, *Pruſias* King of *Bithynia* (who fawning upon the *Romans* kiſſed the threſhold of their Senat, calling the Fathers his Gods) was for his wicked life ſlain by his owne ſon *Nicomedes*, being aſſiſted by *Attalus* King of *Pergamus*. *Pruſias* indeed had intended to have ſlain *Nicomedes*, and to have ſet up his other the *Romans* had ſent three Embaſſadors to reconcile the father with his ſon. Theſe were the three which *Cato* ſaid, had neither head, feet, nor heart, becauſe the one had many ſcarres in his head, the other was gowty, and the third was none of the wiſeſt. 3828.

Ptolemy was much incenſed againſt *Alexander* his ſon in law for his tyrannie and diſſolute life. Wherefore he comes into *Syria* with a great army, pretending he meant to defend *Alexander* againſt his enemies, the gates of the cities are opened to him, ſo that all the ſea coaſt even to *Seleucia* is delivered up to him, then having taken his daughter *Cleopatra*, and beſtowed her upon *Demetrius*, he entred *Antioch* and put both the Crownes of *Syria* and *Egypt* on his head. *Alexander* brings an army out of *Cilicia*, but is overcome and flyeth to *Arabia*; all his ſouldiers revolting to *Demetrius*, *Zabdiel* or *Diocles* a prince of that countrey, cut off his head, and ſent it to *Ptolemy*, who not long after dyed, whileſt the Chirurgians were curing of the wound he had received in his head. Hee reigned thirty five years, to whom ſucceeded his younger brother King of *Cyrene*.

The third and laſt *Carthaginian* warre was occaſioned by the difference between *Maſaniſſa* and *Carthage* about ſome lands. The *Romans* would have reconciled the difference, and *Maſaniſſa* was willing for peace ſake to yeeld up his right. But ſuch was the pride of *Carthage*, that they would hearken to no reaſon: beſides, againſt the articles of peace, they had prepared an army and fleet. *Giſco*, *Amilcars* ſon, was a great ſtickler, and cauſe of this war, and ſo incenſed the people againſt *Rome*, that the *Roman* Ambaſſadors were fain to flye, for fear of affronts. The *Roman* Senat was much exaſperated againſt *Carthage*, yet by the perſwaſion of *P. Cor. Naſica*, ten Ambaſſadours are ſent thither to try, if they would hearken to reaſon; the wars in *Spain* at this time, made the *Romans* the leſſe willing to quarrell with *Carthage*. The Ambaſſadors returning to *Rome* acquainted the Senat with the preparations of *Carthage* both by land and ſea; wherefore war is denounced againſt *Carthage*; and it was debated in the Senat, whether that city ſhould be utterly deſtroyed or not. *Naſica* would have it reſerved, ſhewing it ſuited 3823.

A.M. not with policy to destroy that place, which exercised the *Roman* forces, and kept their armes from rusting; nor was it consonant to the clemency of *Rome*, to destroy and undoe such multitudes of people. But *Cato* told the Senat, that so long as *Carthage* stood, *Rome* could never be secure and quiet; this opinion prevailed. As soon as the war was proclaimed, *Vtica* submitted presently, and so did *Carthage*, delivering up their ships and townes, which *L. Martius*, and *M. Manlius* Consuls, burned in the sight of *Carthage*. Then command was given that all the chief citizens should depart from *Carthage*, and build them a city 10 miles off from the sea. This command was rejected, and so they all resolved to defend themselves and city; upon this the Consuls set down before it, and on all sides so besiege it, that no provision of corne could be brought into it, many skirmishes, assaults, and eruptions there were, in which the *Romans* were sometimes worsted; sometimes the *Carthaginians*: this war was managed chiefly by *P. Scipio Æmilianus*, the son of *Æmilius*, but adopted by *Scipio* the son of that *Scipio* who overthrew *Hannibal*. This P. *Scipio Æmilius* had done good service in *Spain*; where he obtained a murall or wall crowne, and being Tribune of the souldiers, advanced the Roman cause much in Africa. He was chosen Consul younger then was usuall. After the Carthaginians both men and women had fought stoutly in their owne defence, at last they yeelded. The women had shewed such courage that they cut off their hair, and made ropes thereof for the warlike engines.

This city had stood 700 years, it was 24 miles in compasse: the castle called Byrsa, held out some time after the city was taken. This last Carthaginian war fell out in the 604 year of Rome, the 52 year after the second Punick war, and lasted 4. years: they procured their own destruction by sending an army against their articles of peace of 58000 men in *Masanissa's* country, which army was destroyed by famine, and the forces of that old King, for he was 94 years old when he dyed, at 86 he had a son, and used to goe bare-headed in all weathers. Before the city was taken *Scipio* gave way to all that would to be gone: 50 thousand departed. *Asdrubal* submitted himselfe to the Consuls mercy, but his wife with her two children flung themselves into the fire, which burned for 17. dayes together, before it could be quenched. When *Scipio* saw Carthage on fire, he wept, repeating that verse, *Illa dies veniet cum fato Troia peribit*; and presaging that the like calamity might befall Rome it self; as it did under *Totila* the Goth, 700 years after. *Masanissa's* kingdome was parted between his three sons *Mycipsa*, *Gulussa*, and *Manastabelis*, by the advise of *Scipio*, who by the old King was chosen arbitrator for that purpose.

CHAP. II.

1. *Corinth is taken.* 2. *The affaires of Egypt.* 3. *The affaires of Iudea under* Simon *and* Hyrcanus. 4. *The affaires of Syria under* Tryphon, Demetrius, Alexander, *&c.* 5. *The Roman wars at home, in Sicily, in Spain, and in Asia.*

THe same year proved fatall as well to Corinth, as it did to Carthage. The Achæans and Boetians 50. years after Greece was made free by *Tit. Flaminius*, rebelled against the Romans, to whom the Spartans had complained of the wrongs done them by the Achæans: Ambassadors are sent from Rome to Greece, to dissolve the confederacy of the Achæans, and to restore every towne to its liberty; which so madded the Achæans that they fell upon the Spartan agents, plundred them, and being fled into the Roman Ambassadors lodgings for sanctuary, were thence violently drawn out & beat, so that the Ambassadors themselves were in some danger. *Critolaus* the Achean pretor gathers great forces together, which *Metellus* who then had the charge of Macedonia quickly dispersed and slew, the Pretor himself in his flight was drowned in the fords. *Diæus* the next Pretor

tor undertook the war, againſt whom *L. Mummius* the Conſul marcheth with 23000 foot, 3000 and 500 horſe: the Achæans had not about 14000 foot, and 600 horſe, who were quickly cut off by the Romans in the preſence of their wives and children. *Diæus* having firſt killed his owne wife, poiſoned himſelfe. *Metellus* had taken in Thebes and Megara, and was now laying ſiege to Corinth: but *Mummius* ſends him into Macedon, and ſits down before Corinth, which at laſt he took by ſtorme and burned: all were put to the ſword except women and children, which were openly ſold in the market. The chiefe ornaments and monuments of this rich city, were tranſported to Rome, ſuch abundance of gold, ſilver, and braſſe ſtatues were melted in that conflagration, that meeting all together made up a mixt mettle called the Corinthian braſſe, and of greater eſteem at Rome then gold. All the other cities were by the Conſul diſarmed and unwalled. And ſo now ended the liberty of Greece, which became a province, and had a Pretor ſent from Rome, being called the Pretor of Achaia, not of Greece, becauſe Achaia had the principality when Greece was ſubdued. This fell out the 160. Olympiad. 952. years after the building of Corinth by *Hales* ſon of *Hippoïes*. A. M. 3828. Corinth taken.

After theſe great victories over Carthage and Achaia, the Romans by degrees falling from their maſculine vertues, gave themſelves over to eaſe, luxury and magnificent buildings. In Aſia, Egypt, and Syria, both princes and people became extreme diſſolute and profane. In Egypt after the death of *Philometor*, *Phyſcon*, ſo called from φύσκη the great gut (becauſe he had ſo great a belly that he could not ſtand or walk without a ſtaffe) ſucceeded King, and called himſelf *Ptolomie Euergetes*, but by the Alexandrians he was named and that deſervedly κακεργέτης for his wicked life: he had a good ſchoole-maſter, to wit, *Ariſtarchus* the Samothracian, a famous Grammarian; and he wrote ſome books himſelfe. But became ſuch a tyrant, that his ſubjects weary of his cruelties fell upon his houſe, and burned it to the ground: he fled away in the dark to Cyprus. *Cleopatra* his wife and ſiſter is proclaimed Queen of Egypt; upon this *Phyſcon* divorceth her, and marries with his owne daughter; he murthers his ſon which he had by her, and ſends his head, hands and feet, for a preſent to the mother whom he reſolves to perſecute with open war: here we may ſee what difference there was between this monſter, and his brother *Philometor*, who kindly entertained *Onias* the high prieſts ſon, and gave him leave to erect in Heliopolis a Temple, no leſſe magnificent then that of Jeruſalem, and puniſhed the Samaritans for building a Temple at Garizim contrary to the Law of *Moſes*.

Demetrius Nicanor the ſon of *Demetrius*, having recovered his fathers kingdome of Syria, he cauſed *Jonathas* the prieſt and captain of the Jewes, to give off the ſiege of Sion; and permitted to him the government of Samaria, Galilee, and Joppe: but he became inſolent with too much proſperity; he disbanded his old native ſouldiers, and retained the Mercenaries, which give offence to *Diodotus* his Generall, who perceiving how divers cities weary of the Kings cruelty began to fall off from him, cauſed *Antiochus* the ſon of *Alexander*, who was the ſon of *Epiphanes*, to be ſent for out of Arabia, and ſets him up, having in a battell overthrown *Demetrius*, and driven him into Cilicia. He imployes the help of the two brothers *Jonathas*, and *Simon*, who had done good ſervice for *Demetrius* at Antioch, and by their aſſiſtance he drives out of Gaza, Bethzura, and all Galilee, *Demetrius* his commanders. In the mean while *Jonathas* fortifies Judea, and renewes the Covenant with the Romans and Spartans. But *Diodotus* otherways called *Tryphon*, deſirous to be King himſelf, reſolves to make away with young *Antiochus*, and fearing the greatneſſe of *Jonathas*, whoſe affection was true to the young King, perſwades him to disband his forces, and come to Ptolemais; whither when he came, he was ſeiſed upon, clapt up in priſon, and his guard being a 1000 ſouldiers were all ſlain. At laſt having treacherouſly murthered both *Jonathas*, and young *Antiochus*, made himſelfe King of Syria: he cauſed the young King to be cut of the ſtone, pretending he died under the cure. 3830.

A.M. 3832. *Simon* in the government of Judea succeeds to *Jonathas*: he obtaines the favour of *Demetrius*, takes in the tower and garrison of Sion, overcomes Gaza, and made his son *Hircanus* Generall of his forces, and so advanced the Jewish affaires, that after *Demetrius* they never admitted any Macedonian to reign over them. In the mean time *Demetrius* suffering *Tryphon* for a while to reign in Syria, made war against the Parthians, who under *Mithridates* their King, had subdued the Bactrians, Medes, and Elimæans, extending their Monarchy from the hill Caucasus to Euphrates. Therefore *Demetrius* by the help of the Persians, Greeks, Elimæans, and Bactrians, did in divers battels overcome the Parthians: but at length under pretence of peace he was taken and carried in the sight of those cities which had revolted from him, to be laughed at: then he was sent to Hyrcania where he was well used.

Tryphons luxurious life and government began to be wearisome to his souldiers; therefore they fell off from him to *Cleopatra* the wife of *Demetrius*; she was then at Seleucia with her sons, and imployed *Antiochus* the brother of her captive husband, to pursue *Tryphon* with an army; which he did in hope to get both the kingdome and the Queen to boot. He overthrowes *Tryphon*, drives him out of upper Syria, and shuts him up within the Castle Dora. But escaping thence to Apamea he was slain, having reigned 3 years in Syria. *Antiochus* forgetfull of the assistance he had from *Simon* the Jew, against his enemy, sent *Cendebeus* to subdue Judea, but *Simon* overthrew him, having sent against him an army of 20000 men under the conduct of his two sons *Judas*, and *John*, so that *Cendebeus* was forced to flie into the Castle Cedro: but *Simon* was treacherously murthered at a feast, by his
3838. son in law *Ptolomie* whom he had made governour of Jericho. *Simons* wife and two sons were also put in chains; *Hircanus* or *John* the third son escaped by times, who succeeded to his father and drove the parricide out of Judea. Upon the death of *Simon*, *Antiochus* *Soter*, (so called from preserving of Syria, and *Sedetes* from his country) besieged Jerusalem, and in it *Hyrcanus*, so that there was great famine in the city, being the 7th. year wherein the land rested from tillage. And the feast of Tabernacles being come, *Hyrcanus* obtained truce for seven dayes of *Antiochus*, who sent thither also to the feast buls with guilt hornes, gold and silver goblets full of spices: and made a great feast for the souldiers, wherefore he was call *Pius*. *Hyrcanus* in retaliation of so great favours, payeth tribute to *Antiochus*: He takes out of *Davids* sepulchre 3000 talents: with five hundred of these he buyeth his peace, with the rest he hireth souldiers, which he imployes for the Kings service against the Parthians, and there having overcome the *Hyrcanians*, he obtained the name of *Hyrcanus*.

Demetrius Nicanor being weary of his private life, though he lived plentifully and like a prince, having marryed the daughter of *Arsaces*, King of Parthia: yet as soon as his father in law was dead, he endeavoured to flye into Syria, but *Phraates* the successor of *Arsaces*, sent a troop of horse who overtook him in his journey and brought him back to his wife; a stronger guard then was set over him, yet he escaped again, and was retaken; and reproved: and to let him see his childish levity, the King presents him with some golden dice, or huckle bones to play withall. In this interim, *Antiochus* with an army of 800000 men expert souldiers, besides cooks, bakers, skullions a multitude, invades the Parthian, and having fought three battles, obtains a great victory, and takes in Babylon. Divers of the eastern Princes being weary of the Parthian government, submitted themselves to him, so that the Parthians were confined within their ancient bounds. In the mean time *Phraates* sends *Demetrius* with some Parthian forces in Syria, purposely to draw *Antiochus* into his owne countrey, which was now in danger. *Antiochus* had quartered his army in divers cities; which being offended with the burthen of free quarter, and the souldiers insolencies, revolted from him to the Parthians, and falling on the dispersed souldiers, killed them. *Antiochus* hearing of this, marcheth with such forces as he could at that time raise, and encountreth with the Parthian King: but being forsaken by his souldiers he was slain. *Phraates* bestowed on the dead body princely obsequies, and married

ried with the daughter of *Demetrius*, whom *Antiochus* had brought along with him. *Phraates* repenting that he had sent away *Demetrius*, would have recalled him again, but it was too late: for the troops of horse he sent to apprehend him, found him in his kingdome. *Phraates* employed his captive souldiers against the Scythians, and was killed by the Grecians. A. M.

Demetrius having regained the kingdome of Syria, was sollicited by *Cleopatra* Queen of Egypt his mother in law, to raise an Army against *Ptolomy* her husband and brother too, who had devorced her. *Demetrius* set presently upon *Ptolomy*, but withall lost his owne Kingdome of Syria; for first the Antiochians, then the Apamenians, and at last all the other Cities wearied with *Demetrius* his Parthian insolencies fell away from him. *Ptolemy* understanding, that his Sister *Cleopatra* had fled with the chief wealth of Egypt to *Demetrius* her son in law into *Syria*; sends one *Zebina* a young man home to *Protarchus* a Merchant, with an Army to conquer Syria, pretending that he was the adopted son of King *Antiochus*: the Syrians were glad to accept of any King, rather then endure the cruelties of *Demetrius*, admitted this *Zebina*, calling him by the name of *Alexander*; in the mean while the Parthian King sent the corps of *Antiochus* in a silver coffin to be interred by *Alexander*, who expressing much sorrow (as if it had been true) obtained the love of the people. *Demetrius* being overcome by *Alexander*, was at last forsaken by his own Wife, and sons, so that he was forced to flee to Tyrus for Sanctuary, but as hee was comming out of the ship, hee was slaine by the Governours command: own of his sonnes *Seleucus* was killed by his mothers appointment, for crowning himselfe without her consent; the other sonne *Grypho*, so called from his big nose, was crowned by his mother; so that hee carried the title of King, but the whole Government of the Kingdome was given her; but *Alexander* having got Syria, insolently began to slight *Ptolomy* by whose help he obtained that Kingdome; therefore *Ptolemy* being reconciled to his sister, resolved to destroy the new upstart King *Alexander*, wherefore he sends to *Gryphus* a great Army, and bestowes his daughter *Tryphena* on him in marriage, by which means the Cities fell off againe from *Alexander*, who being overcome in a battaile, fled to *Antioch*, where wanting money to pay the souldiers, he commands them to seise upon the golden Image of Victorie in *Iupiters* Temple, scoffingly saying that *Iupiter* had lent him Victorie for a while; shortly after commanding *Iupiters* own golden statue to be taken down, hee was set upon by the people, and forced to fly; at last his souldiers being overthrown in a storm he was forsaken, and taken by some robbers, by whom he was brought to *Gryphus*, and slain. 3843.

About this time, the Jews injoyed their liberties under *Iohannes Hyrcanus*, who having renewed the League with Rome, repealed all the Acts of *Antiochus Sedetes*, hee subdued Idumea, and forced it to receive Circumcision, hee pulled down the Temple of Samaria, which had stood 200 years, and was built under *Alexander*. He made *Antiochus Gryphus* leave the siege of Jerusalem which hee had begun, this *Gryphus* was like to be poysoned by his mother *Cleopatra* out of a desire to reign alone; which desire made her betray her husband *Demetrius*, and murther her eldest son. *Gryphus* had secret information of the poison prepared for him, which when it was presented by his mother to him, he caused her to drink it up her self, and so shee perished by her owne device. After this *Antiochus Gryphus* reigned 8 yeares peaceably, till he attempted to poison his Brother *Antiochus Cyzicenus* of the same mother, but begot of his Uncle *Antiochus Sedetes*, these two brothers quarrelled so long about the kingdome of Syria till they were both slaine, *Gryphus* by *Herodian*, *Cyzicenus* by *Seleucus*, the sonne of *Gryphus*. In the meane while *Ptolemy* King of Egypt dyeth having reigned 29 yeares; the government of Egypt was left to his wife, and to one of his sonnes. 3848.

The Romans about this time had their Armes exercised at home by the *Gracchi* in Sicily by the slaves in Spain by *Viriatus*, in Asia by *Aristonicus*. *Tiberius Gracchus* 3839.

chus Tribune of the people was petitioned by the poore ſouldiers to have the Laws called *Agraria*, put in execution: by theſe Lawes none of the ſouldiers could enjoy above 500 acres of land; neither muſt the richer ſort buy the poorer out of their eſtates: *Gracchus* urged the execution of theſe Lawes, as alſo that the treaſure left by King *Attalus* might be diſtributed among the poor. In theſe things hee was oppoſed by the rich men chiefly by *C. Antonius* the Conſul, and *Octavius* the Tribune, from whom *Gracchus* in an unuſual way tooke away the Tribunate, hee alſo ſtrove to continue in his Government againſt the Law: upon this *Scipio Naſica* the chief Pontifice calls up the Senat to the Capitoll, who being accompanied thither with a great multitude; made *Gracchus* his friends forſake him, who ſtriving to eſcape was ſlaine by his colleague *Satureius*, and 300 Citizens with him, whoſe bodies were flung into Tibris, the body of *Tiberius* lay unburied; this fell out *an. urbis* 6 0. About 4 yeares after *Carbo* the Tribune of the people, made a motion in the Senat, that the ſame man might be choſen Tribun as often as he pleaſed; this was ſeconded by *C. Gracchus*, *Tiberius* his brother, but mainly oppoſed by *Scipio Emilianus*, who the next morning was found dead in his bed, not without ſuſpicion of poyſon by *Sempronia* his wife, and ſiſter of *Gracchus* the 56 year of his life. *Carbo* killed himſelf. *C. Gracchus* and *Fulvius* having ſeiſed upon the hill Aventin with an armed multitude were ſlaine by *Opimius* the Conſul: beſides, 3000 citizens were killed in that ſedition. *Opimius* after this was condemned of treaſon.

The Servill warre in Sicily began by means of one *Eunus* a Syrian, who encouraged the ſlaves (complaining of their hard uſage) to rebell, this *Eunus* made them beleeve he was a Prophet, ſent to foretell their proſperous ſucceſſe; for confirmation of this he uſed to breath flames out of his mouth, having had within a nutſhell fire and ſulphur; the ſlaves choſe him for their King, the priſons were broke open, and a great army of ſlaves were quickly raiſed. Another ſlave one *Cleon* of Cilicia gathered together 70000 runnegadoes; theſe overthrew the Roman Pretors, the charge of this warre was committed to *C. Fulvius* the Conſul; after him to *Piſo*, then to *Rupilius*, who after divers events overthrew the ſlaves; by famine he cauſed the cities Tauromenium and Euna to yeeld. *Cleon* was ſlaine in the fight: *Eunus* was taken in a cave, where he hid himſelf, and died in priſon being eat up with lice. Theſe troubles were preſaged by the birth of an Hermophrodite in Rome, by the growing of corn upon trees in the fields of Bononia and by the eruption of fire out of Etna in Sicily.

Viriatus a Portugall of a robber in the high wayes, became a terrour to Rome; for he overthrew the two armies of *C. Vetelius* the Pretor, and of *Plautius Claudius*, erecting the Roman Enſignes for Trophees on his Mountains; about that time 300 Luſitanians encountred with a 1000 Romans, and killed 320 of them having loſt themſelves 70 men. *Appius Claudius* the Conſul, was beat by the *Salaſſii*, but in the next battail he got the victory; for which he demanded a triumph, having killed 5000 men: but becauſe of his former overthrow, it was denyed him, wherefore he triumphed on his own charges. *Q. Fabius* Conſul drove away *Viriatus* from the ſiege of Vacceia, and took the City with many forts and caſtles, he cut off the hands of 500 Princes, who upon his invitation had yeelded themſelves to him. *Pompejus* the next years Conſul was beaten in Numantia having loſt the greateſt part of his army, and many men of quality, at laſt *Viriatus* after 14 yeares war, being betrayed to *Servilius Cepio*, was ſlain by him, but the traitors received not any reward or thanks from Romans. *Cepio*'s army was rewarded by *Iun. Brutus* Conſul the with lands, and a City called by them Valentia.

About this time the Plague was ſo hot at Rome, that ſcarce were there found men enough alive to bury the dead; this calamity was preſaged by the birth of a hermophrodite at Rome, which by the *Haruſpices* was drowned, *S. Cecilius*, *Metellus*, and *C. Fab. Max. Servilianus* Conſuls; another was burned alive about the beginning of the Marſian warre. Much about this time *T. Manlius Torquatus* cauſed his ſonne *Iunius Silanus* Pretor of Macedon to be put to death,

death, for oppreſſing the Macedonians with unjuſt taxes, then alſo was *C. Matienus* accuſed for deſerting his army in Spain, for which he was whipped under the *furca* or gallows, being a long pole laid upon two erected forkes, and was ſold for a ſlave.

Mancinus the Conſul at Numantia had ſuch ill ſucceſſe in his warres, that he was forced to make a diſhonourable peace, which the Senat would not ratifie; for 30000 Romans were overthrowne by 4000 *Numantians*. *Mancinus* was made to ſtand naked with his hands bound behinde him, at the gates of *Numantia* till night, being forſaken by all his friends, and expoſed as a ſpectacle of miſery to his enemies. But *Iun. Brutus* in the inward parts of Spaine overthrew 60000 Gallecians, who came to aide the Luſitanians, in that battaile 50000 were ſlaine, 6000 taken, the reſt fled; but in the hither Spain *Lepidus* the Proconſul was beaten by the *Vaccei*, and that deſervedly; for they would have ſubmitted to him, the Senat interceded for them, as being a harmleſſe people, yet he would needs provoke them to fight, in which skirmiſh hee loſt 6000 Romans, the reſt fled. Rome to vindicate the loſſes and affronts ſuſtained by the Numantians to *C. Fulvius* joined *P. Scipio*, who was choſen Conſul by all the Tribunes before his time; for none could by the Law be Conſul twice, till after the expiration of ten yeares. *Scipio* therefore beſiegeth Numantia, which was ſeated on a hill, having walls 3 miles in compaſſe. This towne had received and entertained the Roman fugitives, and had much afflicted the armies of *Pompey*, *Popilius*, and *Mancinus*; *Scipio* did not ſodainly fall upon them, but firſt trained and exerciſed his ſouldiers, reducing them by degrees from their idleneſſe and looſe behaviour, to the old military ſeverity; he was a man both fortunate, courageous and magnificent, for he gave a liſt of the rich preſents ſent him from *Antiochus Sedetes*, that the Senat might diſtribute them to the beſt deſerving ſouldiers, whereas other Generalls uſed to conceal their preſents ſent them from Princes. The Numantians would have ſubmitted upon tolerable conditions, which when they could not obtain, having drunk largely (not wine, which that countrey did not afford) but a liquor made of wheat, prepared as we doe our malt of barly; made a ſally out upon the Romans, but ſeeing they could doe little good that way, reſolved to fly; which their wives hindered by cutting the horſes girths and bridles, at laſt they ſet the towne on fire, and ſo conſumed themſelves and all their wealth, leaving nothing for the Romans to triumph over.

Ariſtonicus in Aſia made work for the Roman armes, hee was the baſtard ſon of *Eumenes*, King of Pergamus. *Attalus Philometor* being now dead, and having left his vaſt eſtate to the Romans; *Ariſtonicus* made haſt to take poſſeſſion of his brothers Kingdome, he draws many to ſide with him; he took by ſtorm Myndus, Samos, and Colophon, which townes held for the Romans, againſt him was ſent *Licinius Craſſus* Conſul and High Prieſt with a good army aſſiſted by *Nicomedes* King of Bithynia, *Mithridates* King of Pontus, (againſt whom the Romans afterward made war) *Ariarathes* King of Cappadocia, *Pylemenes*, King of Paphlagonia a great battaile was fought, and great ſlaughter on both ſides; but *Craſſus* loſt the day and his life too; for being almoſt taken priſoner by a Thracian, he ſtruck him in the eye with his rod, which ſo exaſperated the Barbarian that hee runne *Craſſus* through with his ſword, and ſo he eſcaped by his death his ſhame and captivity; upon the news of this overthrow, *Perpenna* the Conſul haſteneth to Aſia, falls ſodainly on *Ariſtonicus* being ſecure, forceth him to fly to Stratonice the towne, which being beſieged, and almoſt famiſhed, yeelded; *Ariſtonicus* is ſent to Rome, and all the wealth of *Attalus*. *Perpenna* fell ſick at Pergamus and died. *Aquilius* put an end to the Aſiatick warre, who by poyſoning the Wells and ſprings cauſed divers Cities to yeeld. *Ariſtonicus* was ſtrangled in Priſon at Rome; which now enjoyed both the vices and wealth of Aſia. *An. Vrbis.* 622.

Whileſt *Plautius*, *Hypſeus*, and *Fulvius* were Conſuls Africk was ſo infeſted with Locuſts, that after they had deſtroyed all the fruits, corn and graſſe, they were

A. M. were carryed headlong into the Sea by a ſtrong winde, and drowned; but with tides they were driven on the ſhoare, and there left upon the ebbing of the Sea, whoſe putrefied bodies ſo infected the air, that thereby all living creatures were poyſoned, ſo that there died in Numidia 800000 ſoules upon the coaſt of Carthage and Utica above 20000, and in Utica it ſelfe there died 3000, ſo that in one day there were carried out of the gates of the City 1500 dead bodies; about this time the Gaules marching in a great Army to aid the the *Allobroges*, were overthrowne by Q. *Fab. Max.* the Nephew of *Æmilius* in the flight 120000 were killed and drowned in the Roan whileſt their bridge of boats broak under them. *Bituitus* the King and his ſon were impriſoned in Alba.

CHAP. III.

1. *The Iewiſh affaires under* Hyrcanus, Ariſtobulus *and* Alexander, *the Egyptian affaires under* Cleopatra, Philometor, *and* Alexander. *The* Syrian *affaires under* Seleucus, Euſebes, Philip, Demetrius, *&c. The Roman Wars with* Jugurtha, *the Cimbri, the Thracians and Sicilian ſlaves.*

THe Jews under *Hyrcanus*, by the favour of the Romans enjoied peace abroad, but were diſtracted with Sects at home, the Phariſees ſo called from ſeparation from all other people, or from their expoſition of the Prophets, placed merits in externall ceremonies and traditions, and looked for a Meſſias, that ſhould be a temporall Prince, who ſhould make the Jews Princes over the Gentiles: the Sadduces or Juſticiaries were againſt traditions, they rejected all the Prophets, ſave *Moſes*, they denyed Angels and Spirits, the Immortality of Soules, and the Reſurrection: the Eſſeans, that is, labourers from Aſa, to conſider and contemplate; (for they gave themſelves to ſpirituall and corporall exerciſes) living
3870. a ſtrict life, ſpending their time in reading, praying, ſtudying of Phyſick) doing good workes, chiefly of charity to the poor; who had all things in common, and lived apart by themſelves. *Hyrcanus* favoured the Sadduces, and rejected the Phariſees traditions, he beſieged Samaria, & laid it even with the ground. *Antiochus* entred Judea, thinking to raiſe the ſiege, but was driven out againe by *Antigonus* and *Ariſtobulus*, the ſons of *Hyrcanus* then returning with new Forces from *Ptolemy* King of Egypt; began to waſt and ſpoil the country, but having loſt the greater part of thoſe 6000 men he brought with him, was forced to give off. Shortly after this, *Hyrcanus* dyeth having ruled Paleſtine 31 yeers, his ſonne *Ariſtobulus* changed the pincipality of Judea into a Kingdome, and was the firſt that wore the Diadem ſince the Captivity: hee reigned not above one year; having murthered his brother *Antigonus* with his owne hand, fearing that hee aimed at the Kingdome; he killed his Mother alſo, and then being tormented in conſcience, and vomiting out his bloudy ſoule, dyed. He enlarged Judea by the addition of *Iturea*, to him ſucceeded his youngeſt brother *Alexander Ianneus*.

This *Alexander* began his reign with the murther of one of his Brothers, the other he permitted to live a private life in his reigne. *Ptolemy Lamyrus* killed 30000 Jews, feeding the captives with the fleſh of their ſlaine countrymen, after this hee took *Gadara*, *Amathus*, and *Gaza*; hee had divers encounters with *Demetrius*, and was oftentimes troubled with the factions, and conſpiraces of the Jews againſt him, 800 of the rebels he cauſed to be crucified whileſt hee was feaſting with his Concubines; and baniſhed 8000 of them. He ſubdued many places in Syria, Idumea & Phenicia, then having fallen into a quartane ague of three years continuance, got by his intemperate drinking, he dyed in the campe, leaving his wife;
3898. *Alexandra* ſucceſſour; whom he adviſed to continue the ſiege of the caſtle Ragabe beyond Jordan, and to keep good correſpondence with the Phariſees, who were

were then the prevailing faction and to deliver his body to them to be uſed at their pleaſure; which was done accordingly, and interred honorably, having reigned 27 years and lived 49. *A. M.*

The kingdome of Egypt was left by *Ptol. Phyſcon* to his Queen *Cleopatra*, and to that ſonne whom ſhe ſhould chuſe; ſhee affected *Alexander* the younger, but was forced by the people to chuſe the elder; who was ſurnamed *Lathurus*, becauſe he obtained the kingdome as it were ſecretly and by ſtealth; for the hatred of his mother he was nicknamed *Philometor*. His mother made him repudiate his dear wife, and ſiſter *Cleopatra*, and marry with the younger ſiſter *Selene*. *Cleopatra* being devorced married in Syria with *Antiochus Cyzicenus*, who ſhortly after by the help of the Cyprians waged war with his brother *Gryphus*, but loſt the battail, and was forced to fly to *Antioch*. *Gryphus* beſieged the Town and took it; he would have preſerved *Cleopatra*, as being ſiſter to his wife *Triphena*, but this cruell woman ſent ſouldiers to murther her, after ſhee had taken Sanctuary; but ſhortly after in another battaile *Cyzicenus* had the better of his brother, who tooke *Gryphus* his wife, whom he cauſed to be killed for murthering of her ſiſter. 3856.

Cleopatra Ptolemies mother cauſed the people to riſe againſt him, ſhee baniſhed his wife *Selene* after ſhee had borne him two ſons, ſhee made *Alexander* the younger ſon King, and perſues with open warre her eldeſt ſonne into *Cyprus*, who eſcaped from thence, ſhee being enraged at the Generall of her Army, for ſuffering her ſonne to eſcape, cauſed him to be ſlaine. Shee had in great eſteeme *Chelcias* and *Ananias* the ſonnes of *Onias*, who built the Temple in Heliopolis, for theſe two were faithfull to her. Whileſt *Gryphus* and *Cyzicenus* were ſtriving for Syria, *Alexander* beſiegeth *Ptolemy* and waſtes the countries of the Gazeans and Dorenſes; theſe expecting no ſuccour from the Kings of Syria call in *Lathurus Alexanders* brother, out of Cyprus, who perceiving that his brother *Alexander* meant to betray him, falls with fire and ſword upon Judea, and overthrows *Alexander* in a battail neer Jordan, he killed 30000 Jews, takes Ptolemais with divers Caſtles which he throwes down, and was in ſome poſſibility to recover Egypt from his mother; but ſhee comes into Syria with a great Army under the command of *Chelcias* and *Ananias* the Jews, ſhee recovers Ptolemais, and frees the Jews from the feare of *Lathurus*, but *Alexander* fearing his mothers cruelty betooke himſelfe to a private life. *Cleopatra* fearing leſt *Cyzicenus* ſhould aſſiſt her eldeſt ſonne to recover Egypt, ſends great Forces to *Gryphus*, and calls back her ſonne *Alexander* to his kingdome; but intending to murther him, which hee knew well, therefore having got her into his power, hee ſlew her: the people underſtanding this paricide, drove him out of his Kingdome, and re-eſtabliſhed *Ptolemy* again in his Throne.

Antiochus Gryphus being ſlaine the 29. yeare of his reigne, his ſonne *Seleucus* ſucceeded, who made warre upon his Uncle *Cyzicenus*, at laſt took him, and killed him not long after, his ſonne *Antiochus Euſebes* revenged his fathers death, by driving the murtherer quite out of Syria, who flying into Cilicia, for his exaction, was burned in the Palace with his friends, his brother *Antiochus* was alſo overthrowne by *Euſebes* and loſt both his Army and life. After him *Philip Gryphus* his third ſonne reigned in a part of Syria. *Demetrius Euſerus* the fourth ſonne was by *Ptolemy Luthurus* or *Lamyrus* as *Plutarch* calls him, ſent for out of Chidus and made King of Damaſcus. *Antiochus Euſebes* ſtoutly oppoſed theſe two brothers, but yet ſhortly after was ſlaine, as hee was fighting againſt the Parthians in defence of the Queen of the *Galadens*. So *Philip* and his brother *Demetrius* injoyed the Kingdome of Syria, this *Demetrius* was called in by the Jews againſt their owne King *Alexander* who in their civill wars had killed above 60000 Jewes, hee drove *Alexander* to the Mountaines after he had ſlaine all his Mercenary ſouldiers, but upon a ſupply of 6000 Jews *Alexander* made him to retire back; this *Demetrius*

A.M. *trius* would have driven his brother out of Syria; who for his owne defence cals in the Arabians and Parthians, these forced *Demetrius* to yeeld, and sent him prisoner to *Mithridates* the Parthian King; shortly after he sickned and died. Then did *Philip* enjoy Syria alone, but not long, for *Antiochus Dionysius* having seised upon Damascus, endeavoured to get the kingdome of Coelosyria from his brother *Philip*, but whilest he was making warre upon *Aretas* King of Arabia, *Philip* invaded Damascus, and thought to carry it by treason, but was disappointed, in the interim, *Antiochus* fighting against the Arabians was killed. *Aretas* challengeth Coelosyria, and overcomes *Alexander* King of the Jewes near Adid. About this time *Appion* brother of *Lathurus* by a concubine died, and left by his last will to the Romans the kingdome of Cyrene, so that part of Lybia was made a province.

3861. About the time that *Hyrcanus* besieged Samaria, the Romans overthrew *Iugurtha* and seised upon Numidia. This *Iugurtha* was *Masanissa*'s Grandchilde, but adopted by *Mycipsa*. He made warre upon his brother *Hyempsales* and killed him: the like fact he intended against the other brother *Adherbales*, but he fled to Rome; wherefore *Iugurtha* sends thither by his Legats a great sum of money to draw the Senat to consent, that the kingdome between him and *Adherbales* might be divided. Legats with M. *Scaurus* are sent. But the Romans perceiving *Iugurtha*'s cunning and bribery, in corrupting their legats, denounce war against him as a Paricide. *Calphurnius Bestia* the Consul is sent into Numidia, but the crafty King bought his peace, and seemingly submitted himselfe. He is sent for by the Senat, and upon the publick faith repaires thither; in the interim he causeth *Massiva* competitor of the kingdome, being the nephew of *Massinissa*, to be murthered; wherefore *Sp. Albinus* is sent over with an army, which the King corrupts with his gold, hereupon the army makes a voluntary flight, and gives him the victory. *Metellus* to revenge this dishonour, fals upon the King in earnest, being no wayes moved either with bribes, threats or prayers, wasts and plunders all his countrey, seiseth upon his capitall townes, and drives him quite out of his Kingdome, pursuing him through *Mauritania* and *Getulia*. At last *Marius* is sent, who being an upstart himself raised an army of the meaner sort, and with incredible valour took Capsa a city environed with sands and serpents. He took also *Molucha* built upon a rocky hil, and inaccessible. Shortly after he overthrowes not only *Iugurtha*, but also *Bocchus*, king of Mauritania, who laid claim to Numidia as being next in bloud: this *Bocchus* had in his army 60000 horse; the fight continued three dayes: at last by the help of a great storme of raine, which so moistned the African targets and weapons that they were made unserviceable, the Romans prevailed. This battell was fought near Cirtha the ancient towne and court of *Masanissa*. *Bocchus* to ingratiate himself with the Romans, catched *Iugurtha* by a train and delivered him by *Sylla* the Legat to *Marius*. At last this crafty King, who wont to say, that it were an easie thing to sell Rome if there were a buyer, was carryed chained in Triumph with his two sons before *Marius* his Chariot, and presently after, was strangled in prison. *Marius* was the first that ever entred the Senat in a triumphant garment: he was continued divers years in his office because of the Cimbrick war.

3859. The Cimbrians having much of their country overflowed by the sea, were forced to seek out new plantations. They first fall upon Illyria where they overthrew *Papyrius Carbo* the Consul: then they send a Petition to *Silanus* that they might have leave to plant themselves some where; their request being denyed, they resolve to plant themselves by force of armes: therefore they fall furiously first upon *Silanus*, then upon *Manlius*, then upon *Capio*, and overthrew all their three armies. Then the *Tigurius* overcame *L. Cassius* the Consul upon the borders of the Allobroges or Savoyens. *Aurelius Scaurus* also was beat with his army by the Cimbrians, and himself killed by King *Belus* for disswading him to passe the Alpes, saying the Romans were invincible. At the river Rhodanus C. *Manlius*,

A.U. 642.

lius, and *Q. Servilius Cæpio*, were defeated by the Cimbrians, 80000 Romans were slain, besides 40000 pages, and drudges who carried wood and water for the army. *Cæpio* is condemned at Rome for his temerity to be strangled, and flung over the *Scalæ Gemoniæ*, and his whole estate confiscated; his daughters died all miserably after they had been abused; this judgement fell on *Cæpio* for his sacriledge upon the Temple of Tolosa. The Cimbrians having wasted all about Rhodanus, and the Pyrenæans entred Spain, but were driven out by the Celtiberians: Then returning into France, they joyned their forces with the Teutones, and having divided their army into three parts, haste to crosse the Alpes; *Marius* being now Consul the third time, sets upon the Teutones at the foot of the Alpes. His army being pinched with thirst, complained to him, who told them if they were men, they would fight for the river, which was now in the possession of the enemy; upon this they fell furiously on the Teutones, beat them, and got the river, drinking almost as much bloud as water. Of the Teutones and Ambrones were slain 200000 besides 90000 taken; scarse 3000 escaped. *Teutobodus*, their Generall was slain: the women petitioned for their lives, which being refused, they first dash out their childrens brains, then they hang themselves. A. M.

The Cimbrians having beaten *Q. Catulus* the proconsull from the Alpes, enter Italy: against whom *Marius* being now the fift time created Consul is sent. He taking his opportunity with the advantage of the sun and winde, being assisted by *Catulus* his forces, falls upon them unawares, and routs them; 140000 of them were slain, 60000 taken. *Marius* by this victory was honoured with the Consulship the sixt time; thus the Cimbrians invincible elsewhere, were easily conquered in Italy, being softned by the delights thereof. The Cimbrian women despairing of mercy, killed one another. *Marius* his triumph was accompanied with a sad dysaster; for *Publicius Malleolus* murthred his mother; for which wickednesse he was the first that was sowed in a sack and flung into the sea: this Cimbrick war continued 8. years. *Strabo* thinks these Cimbri to be from the Cimmerii, and others, that both are from *Gomer* the sonne of *Japhet*: the Teutones were Westphalians as *Melanchthon* gathers out of *Tacitus* and *Ptolemie*. The Ambrones dwelt neare the Rhene. 3871.

About this time the Thracians sometimes the Macedonian tributaries rebelled, wasting Thessalie, and Dalmatia, even to the Adriatic sea. The Scordisci a people most fierce in Thracia, saith *Florus*, (but *Stadius* will have them a people in Gallia upon Ister) totally routed the army of *Portius Cato*. *Didius* beat them home again into Thracia. *Drusius* confined them within Danubius. *Minutius* wasted them along the river Hebrus, in which many of them were drowned, the yce deceiving them. *Piso* went as far as Caucasus and Rhodope. *Curio* entred Dacia on the North side of Danubius. *Lucullus* marched to Tanais, and the lake Mæotis. These Barbarians were destroyed with fire and sword; many of the captives were left alive in misery and pain, having their hands and feet cut off.

Licinius Narva Prætor of Sicily, about this time, gave occasion to the slaves to break out again into an open warre. He was commanded to set all the *Ingenui* at liberty, because of the Cimbrian wars, which he refused to doe; whereupon 30 slaves began the rebellion, and grew quickly into a great body, against whom *Titinius* a captain of the high way men was sent; whom the slaves slew: and being increased to 6000 made one *Salvius* a Soothsayer their King: then they lay siege to Morgantina, and beat off *Licinius* as he was comming to raise the siege. *Salvius*, seeing the Romans run away, made proclamation, that none should be killed who flung down his armes, whereupon he was supplyed with sufficient armes. *Athenio* a Cilician Astrologer, and captain of the whole legion, joynes himselfe to *Salvius* who cals himselfe now *Tryphon*, and makes his regall seat at *Tricala*, which he fortifieth with wals and trenches, having the command of 40000 men: against him *Licinius Lucullus* is sent from Rome with 18000. who fals upon the slaves,

kils 10000 of them, in this conflict *Athenio* was wounded, the reſt fly to Tricala which they held out againſt *Lucullus*; in the interim, *Tryphon* dieth. *Athenio* ſucceeds him; againſt him M. *Aquilius* collegue to *Marius* in his fift Conſulſhip is ſent, he kils *Athenio* fighting ſtoutly, and was wounded himſelf in the head, he overthrowes the 10000 that were left, and the laſt 1000 being taken priſoners, were condemned to be thrown to the beaſts, which they prevented by killing one another.

Chap. IIII.

1. *The civill wars of Rome under* Marius, Sylla, Cinna. 2. *The Roman wars with* Mithridates.

C. Marius hitherto the pillar, now the caterpillar of his country, ſheathes the conquering ſword of Rome into her own bowels, which he had unſheathed againſt her enemies: Having got himſelf to be made Conſull the ſixt time by bribery and *Apulcius Saturninus* Tribune, he endeavoured to renew the Agrarian lawes, purpoſely to bring down the nobility, which were a ſore in his eye that was an upſtart, or new man. He cauſed *A. Nonius* the competitor of *Saturninus* to be murthered, and *Metellus Numidicus* to be baniſhed, to the great grief of all the nobility: and becauſe he was afraid that *Memmius* would be choſen Conſull, *Saturninus* by his procurement, cauſed him to be murthered. *Glaucia*, who aimed at the Conſulſhip, was a main man for *Saturninus*; the Senat and people inraged at theſe murthers, made ſuch a tumult in the *forum*, that they fell to skirmiſhing, *Marius* ſided with the ſtrongeſt party, which was the Senat, and drove *Saturninus* into the Capitoll where he was beſieged, and the Conduit pipes which conveyed water thither cut off; *Saturninus* openly profeſſed, that *Marius* was the cauſe of all the trouble. Upon his ſubmiſſion he with his complices were received into the *Curia*: but the people breaking in furiouſly fell upon *Saturninus*, and tore him in pieces with *Saufeius* and *Tabienus*. *Glaucia* was drawn out of *Claudius* his houſe, and ſlain. *Cn. Dolobella* with *L. Geganius* as they thought to eſcape through the hearb market, were killed alſo. Theſe incendiaries being ſlain and their eſtates confiſcated, *Cato* and *Pompey* motioned that *Metellus* ſhould be recalled home, but they were oppoſed by *Marius*, and *Furius* the Tribune, and honeſt *Rutilius* was baniſhed into Smyrna, where he ſpent his time in ſtudy.

Metellus being brought back into the city with great honour, ſo diſcontented *Marius*, that he went to *Mithridates* king of Pontus, to incenſe him againſt the Romans. This was the ſonne of that *Mithridates*, who for his ſervice againſt *Ariſtonius*, was rewarded by the Roman Senat with Phrygia the greater. When he was young he uſed ſo many Antidotes fearing the treachery of his governours, that when he was old, he could, not poyſon himſelfe. He ſpent 7. years together in hunting, never all that time entring into any houſe; ſo fearfull he was to be murthered: but when he came to reign, he enlarged his Dominion by ſubduing the Scythians, and driving *Ariobarzanes* the Romans friend out of Cappadocia, whom *Sylla* reſtored again: he ſpake 22 languages.

A. V. 659. *Livius Druſus* Tribune of the people ſtirred up the Italians againſt Rome, they being denyed the priviledges of the city, and underſtanding *Druſus* their patron was privately murthered, fell upon *C. Servilius* the pretor, who was ſent as a Legat to the Picentes, Samnites and others, and ſlew him with divers other Romans. Hereupon *Cn. Pompeius* the Pretor was ſent againſt the Picentes, with an army which was beat by them. So was *Jul. Ceſar* by the Samnites. *Rutilius* the Conſul was ſlain with 8000 Romans by the *Marſi*; which ſlaughter

Mari-

Marius repayed with the overthrow of 8000. Marſians. *Capio* with his army was overthrown by the Veſtini, but *Ceſar* having renewed his forces ſubdued the Samnites and Lucanians: upon newes of this victory the Senat put off their Souldiers caſſock which they had put on in the beginning of this war, and was their habit of mourning, and betook themſelves again to the gowne. After this *Marius* puts 6000 Marſians to the ſword, and diſarmes 7000. *Sylla* raiſeth the ſiege from Aeſerina where the Romans were ſhut up. *Pompey* overthrew the Picentes. Theſe good ſucceſſes made the Senat put on their *Laticlavia* or white coates imbroidered with ſtuds of purple reſembling broad nail-heads. *Cato* overcame the Etruſci, *Plotius* the Vmbri. *Pompey* took the rich city Aſculus, killed 18000 Marſians, took 3000 priſoners, and drove 4000 to the mountains where they died in the ſnow and yce. The Picentes were utterly defeated, whoſe Generall *Judacilius* poyſoned himſelf.

Poſthumius Albinus Sylla's Legat was in a tumult murthered by the ſouldiers which occaſioned the death of 18000 Samnites. *Cato* for extolling his owne actions above thoſe of *Marius*, was knocked down by *Marius* his ſon. C. *Gabinius* is killed. The Veſtini and Marrucini are plundred, *Pompedius* and *Obſidius* Italian Commanders with their whole army are overthrown by *Pompeys* Legat *Sulpicius* at Aſculus. *Pompey* cauſed all the commanders to be whipped and beheaded, and the ſervants to be ſold. At Rome the Senat and Roman Knights fell out about the Agrarian lawes. *Livius* the Tribune threated *Capio* with death for reſiſting him, and beat *Philip* the Conſul. But ſhortly after was ſo wounded in a tumult, that he was carryed home half dead. *Validus* was ſtabbed with a knife; *Philip* and *Capio* were ſuſpected for this murther. *A. V.* 661.

Mithridates upon theſe troubles in Italy, takes occaſion to invade Paphlagonia, Galatia, and Cappadocia; threatens alſo Bithynia, and ſtirres up all the Eaſt againſt the Romans. *Sylla* then beſieging Nola, is choſen to goe againſt *Mithridates*, but he reſolved to take Nola firſt; whereupon *Marius* being now 70 years old, by the help of *Sulpitius* the Tribune, obtained the charge of this *Mithridatick* war, and got the act for *Sylla* to be repealed. The Tribune not content with this, kils *Sylla*'s ſon in law, and ſends to *Sylla* to deliver up his Commiſſion and the army: *Sylla* in a rage haſtneth to Rome, skirmiſheth with the faction of *Marius* and *Sulpitius*, and drives them out of the city. *Marius* both father and ſon with 10 more are by the Senat denounced enemies to the State; *Sulpitius* was betrayed by his ſervant, and killed; the ſervant demanding his reward, was made free; but for his treachery to his maſter was flung downe from the Tarpeian rock. *Marius* the ſon goeth over to Africk. Old *Marius* hiding himſelf in ſome Mariſhes, was by the Minturnians condemned to die, but the executioner being deterred by the majeſty of the man, returnes without doing him any hurt. So he ſailes over to his ſon into Africa. *Sylla* reignes at Rome; his Colleague *Q. Pompeius* Conſul is ſlain by *Cn. Pompeius* the Proconſul, for demanding the army from him.

Mithridates in the mean time ſubdueth Phrygia and Aſia, and cauſeth all the Romans that were found in Aſia to be ſlain in one day. The city *Rhodus* held out for the Romans, and beat *Mithridates* by ſea. He ſends *Archelaus* into Greece with an army of 120000 men, who ſubdue *Achaia* and *Athens*. But whileſt *Sylla* was about to raiſe the ſiege from *Athens*, the fire of diſcord breaks out again at Rome under *Corn. Cinna* and *Cn. Octavius* Conſuls. *Cinna* would have *Marius*, and the others baniſhed by *Sylla* to be recalled; herein *Octavius* reſiſts him, and drives him out of the city. *Marius* in the interim returnes from Africa. The army at Nola under *Appius Claudius* joyned with *Cinna*; the Italians whoſe cauſe *Cinna* much favoured, unite themſelves in a great body to him. So that the army conſiſted of 30 legions. *Cn. Pompeius* the father of great *Pompey*, after much wavering encounters with *Sylla* under the city wals, where a great battell was fought. In it were two brothers, the one having killed the other ignorantly, who as he was ſtripping his dead corps,

A.M. perceived it to be his brother; and with grief ſtabbed himſelfe over his brothers body, ſo both were burned together in the ſame pile. *Cinna* and *Marius* divide their army into four parts, two whereof were committed to *Sertorius* and *Carbo*: after many skirmiſhes and much ſlaughter, *Cinna* is received into the city, and after him *Marius*. *Pompey* is ſtruck dead with a thunderclap, his army deſtroyed by the plague. *Octavius* is murthered, and his head expoſed to the publick view before the *Roſtra* or pleading place, which was a great building within the *forum Romanum*, and in it a pulpit called *Roſtra* beſet with the ſterns of ſhips taken from the enemies. The head of *Cn. Antonius* was preſented upon *Marius* his table; C. *Ceſar*, and *Fimbria* were murthered in their owne cloſets at home. *Craſſus* both the father and ſonne were ſlain in the ſight of each other. *Bebius* and *Numitor* were dragged by the hangmen through
3884. the *Forum*. *Catulus* killed himſelfe. *Merula*, who was made *Jupiters* prieſt, beſprinkled his Idoll with his owne bloud: no rich man at that time could eſcape. *Cinna* and *Marius* create each other Conſul, without calling the *Comitia* or Parliament. But ſhortly after *Marius* dieth, being diſtracted in minde. In theſe troubles many of the nobility fled to *Sylla* in Achaia and Aſia; who had recovered Athens from *Mithridates*, and had killed above 20000 of his men, and had taken near as many priſoners.

L. Flaccus ſucceeds *Sylla*, he was hated of the army for his covetouſneſſe, and ſlain by C. *Fimbria* who ſucceeded him. This had good ſucceſſe againſt *Mithridates*, took Pergamus, and almoſt had taken the King in it. He overthew Ilion the towne; and recovered a great part of Aſia from *Mithridates*. *Sylla* in the interim overthrew the Thracians waſting Macedonia. *Cinna* and *Papirius Carbo* made themſelves Conſuls for two years: *L. Valerius Flaccus*, and other peaceable men, ſent to *Sylla* to have peace eſtabliſhed; but *Cinna* raiſed an army: and as he was forcing the ſouldiers to goe on ſhip-board at Ancona was
3888. ſtoned to death: then *Carbo* was Conſul alone. *Sylla* took Aſia, Bithynia, and Cappadocia from *Mithridates*. *Fimbria* being forſaken by his army which went to *Sylla*, made his owne ſervant to kill him. *Sylla* returnes this anſwer by the Legats to the Senat, that he would ſubmit, conditionally the citizens baniſhed by *Cinna* might be reſtored. This was reſiſted by factious *Carbo* and his crew. *Sylla*'s Legats who were ſent with articles of peace, were abuſed by the Conſuls *Narbonus* and *Corn. Scipio Aſiaticus*, both whom *Sylla* overcame near Capua, and let *Scipio* goe without any hurt. So moderate was he both in his victories over his country men, and carefull rather to ſubdue the common enemy, then to revenge particular wrongs; *Pompey* the ſon of him who took *Aſculus*, having raiſed an army of Volunteirs, joyned him ſelfe with *Sylla*, and ſo did all the Nobility.

Young *Marius* and *Carbo*, Conſuls, to be revenged on the Senat ſiding now with *Sylla*, beſet the Curia with ſouldiers under *Damaſippus* the Pretor; and killed every one as he came out, and murthers were committed every where in the city. *Pontius Teleſinus* Generall of the Samnites, with an army of 40000 fought ſo with *Sylla* at the port Collina, that the city was in danger to have been deſtroyed utterly; for he ſaid that Italy ſhould never want wolves to devour their liberties, untill the wood that ſheltred them were cut down. The fight continued till it was paſt midnight, at laſt the Samnites retreated, and *Teleſinus* the next morning was found gaſping for life; whoſe head *Sylla* cauſed to be carryed about Prænеſte where *Marius* was; who now deſpairing tryed to eſcape, but was prevented and ſlain. Then *Sylla* obtained the title of *Happy*, if there be happineſſe in ſhedding of bloud, for he ſlew above 70000 in his wars againſt *Marius* and *Teleſinus*, by *Metellus*, *Lucullus* and the *Servilii* he overthrew the armies of *Carbo*. He killed 8000 of thoſe that yeelded to him, 2000 of thoſe that were *Proſcripti* (whoſe goods were confiſcated, and the perſons themſelves to be baniſhed) ſuffred death. *Marius* his brother was murthered by degrees, firſt having his hands and feet cut off, then his eyes put out; he killed

led all the Prenestinians, he killed *Carbo* in Sicilie and many other cruell acts hee did, then he was made *Dictator*, none having had this honour till now, since *Hannibals* departure out of Italy, which was 120 yeares space: he had 24 *fasces* or bundles of rods with axes carried before him, hee weakened the Tribuniciall power, by debarring them from making Lawes and publick speeches. Hee filled up the Senat with Knights; and killed his friend *Lucretius Asella* for offering without his consent to demand the Consulship: he encreased the Colledges of Priests and Augures to 15. hee sold the goods of the banished and debarred their children of all honours; hee tooke Nola, and divided the lands of the Samnites, among 47. Regions. By *Cn. Pompejus* he overcame and slew *Domitius* that was banished; and *Iarbas* king of Numidia; hee was severe against the banished and those that received them, that *Bastia* the wife of *Metellus* refused to let him in though disguised, wherefore he slew himselfe, besprinkling his unthankfull gate with his owne bloud, at last being slighted by the people and Senat having laid downe his Dictatorship 2 yeares after he dyed at Cume of the lowsie disease, and his body was burned honourably in the *campus Martius*. *M. Lepidus* would have repealed all his acts; but by *Catulus* his fellow Consul hee was banished Italy, and dyed in Sardinia. About this time the Roman Capitol, and the Delphic Temple were burned. These Civill broiles at Rome were presaged by fire from Heaven, by unusuall haile and stormes, by the running of Sheep and Oxen out of their stables and folds to the hils and woods, by bloud gushing out of bread, and by the unusuall howling of dogs, and great Earthquakes. A. M.

CHAP. V.

1. *The affaires of Syria under* Tigranes. 2. *Of Iudea under* Alexandra. 3. *Of Egypt under* Ptolemy Auletes, *&c.* 4. *The* Sertorian, Spartic, *and Mithridatic war; with* Catilius *conspiracy.* 5. Pompis *actions and some Roman passages, about* Cicero *and* Clodius.

SYria being now torne in peeces by Civill wars, *Aretas* reigning in one part, and *Antiochus* in another, *Tygranes* King of Armenia is sent for, *Mithridates* not being able to assist them, because of his warres with the Romans, and *Ptolemy* King of Egypt they durst not trust, as aiming at Syria himselfe. Therefore having subdued the Gordyeans, Atropatenians, and Mesopotamians, crosseth Euphrates and seiseth upon Syria and *Phenicia*; hee besiegeth Ptolemais with 50000 men, at last hee tooke it, and in it *Cleopatra Selene*, being banished out of Syria, whom hee slew. *Antiochus* was driven to a corner of Cilicia, and *Tigranes* possessed the greater part of Syria for 18 yeares together, in whose time there perished by Earth-quakes there 17000 men, and many towns, a presage of the great change that was at hand, for the whole kingdome of the *Selencida*, was seised upon by the Romans. 3891.

Alexandra Alexanders widow now reigned in *Palestine* under whom the Pharisees were so powerfull, that they ruled all and put many good men to death, who did not favour their faction. Alexanders eldest son *Hyrcanus* was then High Priest. *Aristobulus* the younger had no command, the Queen sent rich presents to *Tigranes* whilest he lay before Ptolemais, by which means shee kept her countrey in quietnesse 9 yeares, but whilest she lay sick, *Aristobulus* seiseth upon divers Towns and Forts, and so makes himselfe King, causing *Hyrcanus* to content himselfe with the Priest-hood.

In Egyt *Lathyrus* being dead, another *Ptolemy* succeeds. He was accounted the son of *Lathyrus* by a Concubine. *Ptolemy* the son of Alexander was with *Sylla*, whom he made King of Alexandria, but the Citizens not induring his insolency

A. M. lency killed him the 19 day of his reigne; his brother ſucceeds, and him they baniſhed; at laſt *Araletes* who called himſelfe *Bacchus* ſucceeded, famous in nothing but in luxury, and piping, for which he was called *Auletes*.

The valianteſt of all thoſe whom *Sylla* proſcribed was *Q. Sertorius*, whoſe valour was known both in Africk, the Baleares and the Fortunate Iſlands, at laſt Spaine under him rebelled; hee overthrew *L. Manlius* Proconſulof Gallia, and *M. Antonie* Legat, by *Hirtuleius* the Queſtor; hee took in many townes, and threatned Italy it ſelfe. But *Q. Metellus Pius* overthrew *Hirtuleius* his Army in Betica now called Granata or Granada; and *Pompey* (who being as yet but Queſtor, was honoured with Conſular authority, a thing not uſuall) recovered Gallia; ſhortly after *Sertorius* overcame both *Metellus* and *Perpenna*, who within a while lay ſiege to the Towne Calagurium; which made *Sertorius* jealous of his friends, many of whom hee put to the ſword upon ſuſpicion of treaſon. *Mithridates* upon this enters into league with *Sertorius* by whoſe helpe hee overthrew M. *Aurelius Cotta* the Conſul neer Chalcedon, 12000 Romans were loſt in the Sea fight, 5000 in the land skirmiſh. *Metellus* and *Pompey* were fain to give over the ſiege of Calagurium: at laſt *Sertorius* being betrayed by ſome of *Antonies* and *Perpenna's* fugitives was ſlaine at a feaſt, this *Perpenna* and *Marius* were afterward deſtroyed with their Armies by *Pompey*, who recovered Spain after 10 years war by the Roman Commanders ſtriving for maſtery. Calagurium was ſtarved and at laſt burned.

A. V. 679. The Spartick war followes immediately upon the Sertorian, one *Spartacus* a Thracian ſouldier, then a highway-man, at laſt a Gladiator or Fencer, with 74 more Fencers being ſhut up in Capua by *Lentulus*, broke looſe, and betake themſelves to the hill Veſuvius, then *Claudius Pulcher* beſets them round, but they ſuddenly fell upon *Claudius* his campe and ſurpriſed it; the like they did to P. *Vorenus* Pretor, or chiefe Juſtice; then they overrun Campania plundering all, even Nola and Nuceria; Thurus and Metapontum, their Army increaſed dayly, malecontents from all places flocking to them, for want of better arms they made themſelves Targets of twigs covered with beaſts skinnes and ſwords, and darts of the priſoners iron fetters, they quickly alſo horſed themſelves, their Captaine *Spartacus* had the Faſces carried before him, which were taken from the Pretors. Theſe Rebels overcame both *Lentulus* and *Caſſius*, and intended to fall upon Rome; but M. *Licinius Craſſus* firſt overthrew 30000 of the Gaules and Germans, who aſſiſted *Spartacus*, then he fell upon *Spartacus* his owne Army and killed 60000 fugitives; took 6000 priſoners, the reſt that thought to eſcape to Sicily for want of ſhipping, were ſeiſed upon, and killed with *Spartacus* their Captain.

The war was ſcarce ended, when the Romans were forced to ſend an Army to ſuppreſſe the Dardanians and Scordiſci (a people of Pannonia, ſome ſay of Thracia) who overrun Macedonia; theſe Scordiſci uſed to drinke out of dead mens skuls, againſt theſe *Ap. Claudius* was ſent, and *Curio Scribonius*: ſhips are alſo rigged out to ſuppreſſe the Cilician Pyrates who much infeſted the Sea. *P. Servilius* ſubdued Cilicia and Pamphilia, took the chief Towns of Lycia, and overcame the Iſauri, whence he was called *Iſauricus*; theſe Iſauri are at the foot of Mount Taurus; the firſt Roman that paſſed this Mountain was this *Servilius*. *Cononius* the Proconſul conquered Dalmatia and after 2 years ſiege tooke Solone a great City.

Mithridates having broke the league he made with Sylla, invaded Cappadocia by *Tygranes* his ſon in law: againſt him the two Conſuls *Licinius Lucullus* and *Aurelius Cotta* are ſent. *Cotta* was worſted and driven into Chalcedon. *Mithridates* removes thence and ſits downe before Cyzicum a rich and popular City in an Iſland of the ſame name within the Propontis, ſo called from the King *Cyzicus* whom *Vlyſſes* killed; this place was an inlet to Aſia, but *Lucullus* comes and raiſeth the ſiege, and drives him into Byzantium. *Mithridates* loſt then alſo his fleet of 100 ſhips, with all his proviſion and furniture; and it's thought, that hee loſt by Sea and land in the ſiege of Cyzicum above 300000 men

men, amongſt whom *Varus* dyed, with divers others proſcribed by *Sylla*. Yet *Mithridates* though thus weakened will not yeeld but ſtirs up the Armenians, Iberians, Caſpians and Albanians againſt *Lucullus*, who had now ſent to the Senat his Laureat Letters in token of victory; for ſo Conquerors uſe to doe. Rich *Lucullus*, *Craſſus*, and *Cn. Pompejus* were now Conſuls: they reſtored the Tribunitian power againe, which *Sylla* had weakned. *Cotta* a little before had advanced the order of Knighthood; at that time *M. Tul. Cicero* being Queſtor drove *Verres* Pretor of Sicily out of his place by his eloquence, accuſing him of oppreſſion: And ſuch corruption was at Rome, that *L. Gellius* and *C. Lentulus* Cenſors, removed 64 Senators from their places. *Lucullus* in the interim recovers Paphlagonia and Bithynia: invades Pontus, takes the two chief Cities thereof, kills 30000 of *Mithridates* his Army, and purſues him to Comana: the crafty King to hinder the Romans from purſuing him, cauſed money and rich things to be ſtrawed in the way, and ſo with 2000 horſe he eſcaped to Tigranes, who did not admit him into his preſence, but gave order hee ſhould bee uſed like a King. A. M.

Mithridates now deſpairing of himſelf, ſent *Bocchus* his Evneuch to his Palace, to kill all his wives ſiſters, and Concubines, which being done, the Governours of almoſt all the Garriſons fell off from him to *Lucullus*, to whom *Lachares Mithridates* his ſonne ſent a crowne of gold: hee tooke divers Sea towns, hee purſues *Tygranes* and defeats his army for refuſing to deliver up *Mithridates* and overthrowes 300000 men being invited by the Grecians, he beſiegeth and taketh Tygranocerta lately built: he makes *Antiochus* the ſonne of *Cizycenus* King of Syria. *Mithridates* flies to Pontus; *Tygranes* into the remoteſt parts of Armenia; whom *Lucullus* could not purſue becauſe of the winter, but upon a mutiny in *Lucullus* his Army for want of pay, the ſouldiers refuſed to march. Which gave opportunity for *Tygranes* and *Mithridates* to renew their Forces. *Mithridates* ſlew *C. Triarius*, *Lucullus* his Legat, and overthrew his Army, among the dead bodies were found 150 Centurions and 24 Tribunes ſlaine: the Sea even to *Hercules* pillars, were ſo filled with Pyrats by *Mithridates* and the the Cretans, that all proviſion and commerce with Rome was intercepted, till Creet was ſubdued by Q. *Metellus* called therefore *Creticus*, and the Sea ſcowred of Pirates by *Pompey*, which was done in 40 dayes ſpace, ſuch of the Pirats as eſcaped had lands aſſigned them in Cilicia, far from the Sea, that in ſtead of piracy, they might be exerciſed in husbandry.

Cn. Manilius the Tribune, being aſſiſted by *Cicero* and *Ceſar* got an act to paſſe that *Pompey* ſhould have the charge of the *Mithridatick* warre; this cauſed great emulation between *Pompy* and *Lucullus*. *Pompey* accuſed *Lucullus* of avarice and profuſion, calling him the gowned *Xerxes*, and he againe accuſed *Pompey* of pride and ambition; yet notwithſtanding full power is committed to *Pompey* over all the Roman Armies without Italy, with an ample Commiſſion to declare friends or foes whom he pleaſed: never had any before him the like power; hee was alſo the firſt Roman Generall that ventured over *Euphrates*: who having made a bridge of Boates, falls upon *Mithridates* ſuddenly, and routs him in one battell, then purſues him to Colchi; but *Ororzes* king of Albania and *Artecus* King of Heberia with 70000 in ambuſh thought to intrap him; but he underſtanding the plot beſet the wood, where they were, and ſet it on fire, that the enemy was forced to ſubmit and give hoſtages: in the meane while M. *Lucullus* Governour of Macedonia overthrowes the Beſſi a people in Thracia neer Pontus about hill Æmus, and made all their country tributary whileſt the other *L. Lucullus* was taking in Niſibis upon Tigris.

Pompy being now ſure of *Mithridates*, marcheth againſt *Tigranes* his aſſociate who having overthrown the *Seleucidæ* called himſelfe King of Kings, hee had three ſonnes by *Mithridates* his daughter, one of them he ſlew for rebelling, the other he killed in hunting, for not helping up his Father when hee fell from his horſe, but ſuppoſing him dead with the fall, took the Crowne from his head, and 3906.

ſet

A. M. ſet it on his own: the third ſon *Tigranes*, rebelled againſt his father, and being overthrown fled to *Phraates* King of Parthia, and from him, humbly to *Pompy*: ſo did old *Tigranes*, who preſented him with 6000 talents; and the ſouldiers with 500 drachms: whereupon he obtained pardon, and the Government of the greater Armenia, conditionally that he did ſurrender all his late conquered countries. He ſurrendred all Syria, from Euphrates to the Sea, which he had taken from *Antiochus Euſebes*. Young *Tigranes* obtained the leſſer Armenia which he did not long enjoy; for whileſt he was conſpiring with the Parthians againſt his Father, hee was apprehended by the Romans, led in triumph, and dyed in priſon. *Pompey* having built Nicopolis in the leſſer Armenia, he beſtowes the Kingdome of Cappadocia upon *AribarZanes* with the Provinces of Sophena and Gordena, and makes Syria a Province, which he refuſed to confer upon *Antiochus Comagenus*, the ſon of *Euſebes*, though he petitioned for it.

3909. Shortly after this *Catalin* with *Lentulus*, *Cethegus*, and many other diſcontented Gentlemen conſpire againſt the State. *Cicero* that year was made Conſul, who by his induſtry detected the plot, and by his eloquence overthrew it. *Lentulus* with ſome noble men are apprehended, impriſoned, and executed by the Conſuls command, and *Cato's* perſwaſion, though *Cæſar* ſpoke againſt it. *Catilin* being driven out of the City, raiſed an army in Italy, which was deſtroyed, and he fighting ſtoutly was killed. In this interim *Mithridates* was betrayed by his ſonne *Pharnaces*, who had got the Armies good will; he fearing to be delivered up by his ſon to the Romans, attempted to poyſon himſelfe, but could not, being his body was ſo uſed to antidotes. Which is no wonder, for we read of ſome who have fed altogether on poyſon, and could not eat any other food. *Galen* ſpeaks of an old woman at Athens who lived altogether on Hemlock; and *Albertus Magnus* knew a maid whoſe ordinary dyet were Spiders. But *Mithridates* did by the ſword, which he could not by poyſon: he was 69 years old when he killed himſelfe, he reigned 57. *Pharnaces* by ſending his fathers corps to the enemy, obtained the Kingdome of Boſphorus.

Antipater the Idumean about this time fomenting the diſcord between *Hyrcanus* and his brother *Ariſtobulus* about the kingdome of Judea, had drawn thither 50000 men under *Aretas* King of Arabia *Nabathea*, he overthrows *Ariſtobulus* in a battell and ſhuts him up within Jeruſalem, during the ſiege, *Onias* that holy man was ſtoned to death by the beſiegers, becauſe he would not pray for their ſucceſſe: therefore God puniſhed them with famine. *Ariſtobulus* procured *M. Scaurus* for 400 talents to raiſe the ſiege: he purſues them in the flight and kills 7000 of them, among the reſt *Antipaters* brother who had raiſed the warre. *Pompey* was now at Damaſcus taken lately from Areats by *Metellus* and *Lollius* Legats or Lievetenants Generall to *Pompey*. *Ariſtobulus* preſents *Pompey* with the golden Vine worth 500 talents: the Romans thought that the Jewes in honour of *Bacchus* kept this Vine. *Pompey* having heard both the brothers plead diſmiſſed them with a promiſe that he would ſhortly viſit them; as ſoone as he had ſetled the Nabathean affaires; but *Ariſtobulus* ſeiſeth on the Caſtles, and to ſhelter himſelf from *Pompey*, whoſe anger by this meanes he had procured, haſtened to Jeruſalem, but fearing leſt *Pompey* who was now marching after him through the woods of Jericho, ſhould overtake him, ſubmitted himſelfe, and obtained pardon, *Gabinius* is ſent to Jeruſalem to receive the moneys, but is kept out by the ſouldiers, wherefore *Ariſtobulus* is ſecured, and Jeruſalem beſieged. *Piſo* *Pompey's* Legat is received into the City and Palace, but is kept out of the Temple by the Garriſon of Mount Sion. Which hee beſiegeth, and the third month takes it, on the day of expiation 12000 of them were ſlain; *Pompey* entered into the Holy of Holyes, but medled not with the Treaſures: Hee reſtores *Hyrcanus* to his Prieſthood, but not to the Crowne: hee reſtores Samaria, Azotus, Pella with other Townes overthrowne by the Jews, to their ancient Inhabitants: hee carryed with him to Rome in chaines *Ariſtobulus* with his two ſonnes, one of which namely *Alexander* made an

Olymp. 179. *Cicer. & Anton. Coſſ.*

eſcape

escape by that way and raised new troubles in Judea, against whom *Gabinius* is sent, to him *Alexander* submits and delivers up the Castles hee had taken, all which *Gabinius* demolished, *Alexanders* mother being gratious with *Gabinius* obtained his pardon, and procured 5 Courts of Justice to be erected through Judea in 5 Cities, to wit, in Jerusalem, Gadara, Amathus, Jericho, and Saphora. A. M.

Pompey having cleared the Sea of Pyrats, overthrown *Mithridates*, subdued Armenia, and all the neighbour Nations to Egypt, bestowed Gallogrecia or Gallatia on *Dejotarus*, Paphlagonia on *Attalus*, Colch on *Aristarchus*, and 16000 talents on the Armies: returns to Rome, where with great solemnity and gratulations, he obtains the name of *Pompey* the great, he enters into a League with *Cesar*, who having conquered *Lusitania* in his Pretorship was now Consul, and with *M. Crassus*; these three divided the Senat into factions, onely *Cato* with a few others preferred the publick good to their owne private interests. *Cæsar* promotes the Agrarian Lawes, by which the Publick Lands are assigned to the common people, and 20000 men are sent to plant. *Cicero* is banished, his goods plundered, and his house pulled downe by the means of *P. Clodius* a rich, but a wicked man, who was found in womens apparell in the solemnities of *Bona Dea*. He by bribery having got himselfe to bee made Tribune, never rested till *Cicero* was banished, who with *Cæsar* accused him for murthering *Lentulus* and *Cethegus*, when he was Consul; thus *Cicero* was forced in the night time to depart the City, and returned not in 16 moneths, after which time he returned, and was received with great joy. 3891. 3913.

About this time *Clodius* the Tribune got an Act to passe against *Cyprus*, that the wealth thereof should be brought into the publick treasure: this he did to be revenged on the King of Cyprus, who refused to ransome *Clodius* when heretofore he was taken prisoner by the Pyrats: the King hearing of this Act poysoned himselfe. *Cato* is imployed in this businesse, who brings with him to Rome all the wealth of Cyprus. *Ptolemy* had nothing left him now but Egypt, his brother being dead, and Cyprus lost; therefore labours earnestly, to make the Romans his friends: but his power was so small at home that he could not save one Roman, who had ignorantly killed a Cat (a sacred creature among the Egyptians) from punishment: at last for his exactions hee was driven out of his Kingdome by the Alexandrians, who crowned *Berenice* his eldest daughter, though he had sons, because shee only was legitimate, this Queen shortly after her marriage strangles *Cybiosactes* her husband for his sordid baseneſſe; and marries with *Archelaus*, who called himself the son of *Mithridates*, whereas he was indeed the son of that *Archelaus* who warred with *Sylla* in Greece.

Chap. VI.

1. Cæsars *exploits in Gallia, Germany, and Britain.* 2. *The affaires of Rome under* Pompy, Crassus *and* Marcellus. 3. Crassus *his miscarriage in Asia.* 4. *Some passages of Iudea and Egypt.* 5. *Of* Cicero *and* Cato.

C. Iul. Cæsar having got 6000 talents from *Auletes* King of Egypt, to re-inthrone him, undertakes the Government of Gallia and Illyricum with 4 Legions for 5 years, and to strengthen himselfe the better, bestowes his daughter *Iulia* upon *Pompey*. He overthrew 47000 Helvetians, who not content with their owne habitations, burnt downe their owne walls, and strive to obtain new Plantations. After this *Cæsar* overthrowes *Arioviſtus* King of the Germans, who refused to come to him being sent for, saying he was a better man then *Cæsar*, and refused to depart out of Gallia, shewing that *Cæsar* had no more power to meddle with his affaires, then hee had to meddle with *Cæsars*: this stout 3915.

answer

A. M. anſwer of the Kings ſo diſmayed the ſouldiers, that even the chiefeſt and ſtouteſt of the maine body began to make their laſt wills: but *Cæſar* bravely rouſed their drooping ſpirits by his eloquence: *Arioviſtus* did ſo beſet his army round with wagons and carts, that no hope there was of flight, multitudes of women were imployed, with their cries and ſtretched out armes to diſſwade the ſouldiers from cowardiſe, the Germans came in ſo faſt upon the Romans that they had no uſe of their darts, but fell to their ſwords hand to hand: the Germans defended their heads with their Targets, but the Romans fell ſo furiouſly on, that they plucked their Targets out of their hands, which cauſed the Germans to flye; in which flight multitudes were killed; *Arioviſtus* eſcaped over the river Rhene, but one of his daughters was taken.

The *Belgæ* fearing the loſſe of their liberty, raiſed an Army of 272000 men, with whom *Cæſar* would not encounter but broke them with delays, and weakened them with often skirmiſhes; in which he had alwayes the better: he ſubdued the Soiſſons in the Province of Rhemes: with the Bellovaci or people of Beauvais and the Ambiani alſo, or people of Amiens in Picardie. Theſe gave *Cæſar* hoſtages for their fidelity: but the Nervii or thoſe about Tornay, with the Aduatici about Beaumont were not ſo eaſily maſtered; their liberty was not loſt, without the loſſe of much bloud, both of the Romans and of their own: the Veragri and Seduni inhabiting the Alpes did much trouble *Servius Galba* his Winter quarters; after *Cæſar* was gone into Italy, *Galba* was left there for to ſecure the paſſages for Merchants that travelled that way. He by a ſudden irruption put the enemy to flight: *Cæſar* ſuppoſing *Gallia* had been quiet, marcheth into Illyricum; the countrey being commanded to victuall his Army, raiſed great Forces againſt him, and were aſſiſted by the Oſiſini, Lexobii, Morini, and others inhabiting the Sea coaſt of Britaine and Normandie; they alſo ſend for aid out of great Britaine over againſt them: it behoved therefore *Cæſar* to provide ſhipping, which he did; and though hee was much croſſed both with the tides and windes, and unſerviceableneſſe of his ſhips, yet partly by the Roman valour, partly by the ſtratagem of ſharp hookes faſtned to long poles laid athwart, by which the ropes of the croſſe maſts was cut, ſo that the ſailes fell down, and could doe no ſervice to the enemy, *Cæſar* got the victory. About the ſame time *Q. Titurius Sabinus* ſubdued the Eburones, or the people of *Eureux*, and *P. Craſſus* maſtered Gaſconia not without much expence of bloud.

The yeare following *Pompey* and *Craſſus* being Conſuls again, the Germans paſſed over with a great Army, the Rhene, but were ſo defeated, that there periſhed of them partly by the ſword, partly by ſubmerſion in the river 430000; 3917. then did *Cæſar* make a bridge over the Rhene, and drove the Suevi into their woods and bogges, in this interim *Cato* being angry that *Vatinius* obtained the Pretorſhip which he ſued for, endeavoured to hinder the paſſing of that Act by which *Pompey* was made Governour of Spain, *Cæſar* of Gallia and Germany, and *Craſſus* of Syria for 5 years: but the Act paſſed, *Cato* was laid in chains, and this Triumvirat ruled all in Rome. *Gabinius* is ſent againſt the Parthians, with order to reſtore *Ptolemy* to his kingdome, and put out *Archelaus* whom the Egyptians had choſen for their King. *Ptolemy* remunerates *Gabinius* with the wealth of Egypt, puts *Berenice* to death, with the wealthieſt men of his kingdome.

Cæſar paſſed over the Sea into great Britain, whoſe ſudden arrivall ſo affrighted the Inhabitants, that they preſently delivered up to him their armes and hoſtages; hee did not march far at this time into the Iſland, becauſe a great part of his Fleet was caſt away in a ſtorm, but the ſecond time he came over, hee increaſed both his Fleet and Army, and drove the Britains all the way before him even into the Calydonian woods in Scotland: he laid in chaines *Cingatoriges* one of their Kings and ſo returned with a great booty; in the mean while *Ariſtobulus* eſcaped out of priſon, and makes new work for *Gabinius* by ſeiſing upon a Fort

which

which he could not hold above two dayes. Wherefore he was apprehended and sent back again to Rome with his sonne *Antigonus*: but *Alexander* the sonne of *Aristobulus* raised suddenly an Army in Judea and encountred with *Gabinius*, but hee lost the day, and withall 10000 Jewes. *Gabinius* having setled Judea, went against the Nabatheans, and defeated them. But hee was accused at Rome for letting goe *Mithridates* and *Orsanes* the sonnes of *Phrames*, who being banished by their brother *Orodes*, fled to the Romans for protection, but he was bribed, and so gave out that these two had made a private escape; he was also accused by *Cicero* lately returned from his banishment, that hee had oppressed Syria with covetous exactions, and had re-established *Ptolemy* without command from the People, contrary to *Sibylla*'s oracles. *Pompey* and *Cæsar* tooke *Gabinius* his part, and made *Cicero* to defend him, whom he had before accused, so that he got the name of *Transfuga*, or turne-coat. *Gabinius* notwithstanding was condemned by the people, and *M. Licinius Crassus* put in his place.

Crassus more covetous then his Predecessor, robbed the Temple of Jerusalem of 10000 talents, and a golden beam weighing 300 *minæ*. Every *mina* weighs 12 ounces and a half, which was more then the Roman pound, by 4. drachmes; Hee invaded the Parthians, having no Commission from Rome, and plundered Mesopotamia. *Orodes* sent to know why hee broke the peace, hee answered, that *Seleucia* his chiefe City should know the reason. Hereupon *Orodes* sends to keep *Artabazes* the sonne of *Tygranes* from aiding *Crassus*, who passing over Euphrates being warned to the contrary was circumvented by the Parthians who laid an ambush for him, there was killed the sonne of *Crassus* a gallant young man, with many Senators and Consular men; at last *Crassus* was taken by *Surenas* the Parthian Generall and killed; they powred melted gold into his motuh, to shew his covetousnesse; for he was wont to say, he was a poor man that could not maintaine an Army in the field: some of the Romans escaped to Carræ a City in Mesopotamia beyond Edessa, where *Caracalla* also died. *Cassius Longinus* having recollected the dispersed Forces quelled the insurrections of Syria and Judea upon this overthrow, he defeated *Antiochus Comagenus* and beat the Parthian Army from Antiochia, having slaine their two chiefe Commanders, *Osaces* and *Pacorus*. *Cicero* had now an Army in Cilicia, his own Province, where he tooke in the City Pindevissus, shewing that he deserved to bee called *Pindevissinus*, as *Scipio* to be called *Africanus*, how ever, he was called *Imperator* or Lord Generall. *Epist. fam. l. 2. epist 10.*

Whilest the state of things went thus in the east, *Cæsar* in the west was much vexed by the Gaules; *Ambiorix* their Generall had circumvented *Cotta* and *Sabinus Cæsars* Legats and by the helpe of the Eburones, and *Advatici*, overthrew the whole Roman Legion, then joining themselves to the Nervii, set upon Q. *Cicero*'s winter quarters, and besieged him: he presently by a letter tyed to a Javelin implores *Cæsars* help, who returns him an answer in Greek fastned to the loope or string of the dart, which the bearer sling within the Fort. The Gaules being 60 thousand strong, left the siege, when they heard of *Cæsars* coming and march directly against him, hee by a counterfeit flight drawes them to a place of disadvantage, where he killed multitudes of them, and disarmed the rest. *Labienus* overcame the Treviri and slew *Induciomarus* their Leader, *Cæsar* fearing the revolt of the Gaules procured from *Pompey*, being then at Rome, 3. new Legions, then hee passeth over the Rhene to chastise the Germans, for sending supply to the Treviri; but understanding that the Suevi in the entry of the Forrest *Hircynia* waited for the Roman Army; hee cut downe a part of the bridge, and erected a Tower, and put a Garrison in it, on the banks, for he feared the want of Corn, seeing the Germans were not then addicted to husbandry, and so he pursues *Ambiorix*, who sheltred himselfe in the Forrest of Arden or Arduena, and so he lost his labour.

About this time *T. Annius Milo* killed *P. Clodius* his Competitor for the Consulship A.U. 700.

A. V. fulship *in via Appia* which was a ſtreet paved by *Appius Claudius* the Conſul reaching from Rome to Brunduſium; this murther was done at Bovillæ a Town in Latium not farre from Rome, the body of *Clodius* being brought into the *Curia Hoſtilia*, or Councell-houſe, built by King *Tullus Hoſtilius*, was by the incenſed multitude burnt with the whole building together, the City honours were taken violently by thoſe that were ſtrongeſt, for there were no Magiſtrates lawfully called, ſo that they were forced to make *Pompey* Conſul the third time, who began to ſuſpect *Cæſars* power, and *Cæſar* envyed *Pompey*'s honours, for the death of *Iulia Cæſars* daughter, diſſolved the amity that was between theſe two great Commanders, *Pompey* to take off the envy of his greatneſſe, choſe *Q. Scipio* for his colleague. *Cicero* pleaded for *Milo*, but not ſo reſolutely as he was wont, becauſe *Pompey* had filled the room with armed men. *Milo* was baniſhed and retired himſelfe to *Marſeiles*.

Cæſar was forced to be abſent from the City, becauſe of the Gaules rebellions and conſpiracies, therefore *Pompey* paſt an Act, that *Cæſar* ſhould not be prejudiced in his Conſulſhip, though in this he was thwarted by *M. Cato*: yet *Pompey* made *Marcellus* Conſul; and *Curio* Tribune, *Cæſars* greateſt enemies: the Gaules thinking that *Cæſars* imployments at home would keep him from coming to the Army, began againe to ſtruggle for their liberty, the Carnutes now called Chartres, fell firſt upon the Roman Factours, killed them; and ſeiſed on their Eſtates. This murder being committed at Genabum, which ſome think to be Orleans, others Gian about Sun-riſing, the report of it came by Poſt that Evening to *Averni* now called *Auvergne*, which is 140. miles diſtant, *Vercingitorix Celtillus* his ſon, whoſe Father ruled over all the Gaules, raiſed a mighty Army out of divers countreys, preſſing all ſorts of men to take up Armes under paine of death. *Cæſar* hearing of this preparation, reſolves with all ſpeed to prevent the uniting of the enemies Forces. Hee placeth ſtrong Garriſons in all parts bordering upon the enemy; through ſnowie Mountaines he marcheth into the bounds of Auvergne, and had got all his Legions together, before the enemie knew of his coming, he took in three great townes at one clap.

At that time *Avaricum* now called Chaſteau neuſt or Bourges en Berrie was a ſtrong city and chief of the Bituriges; *Cæſars* ſouldiers being inraged, that the Gauls had burnt down 19 towns round about, purpoſely to ſtarve the Romans, laid ſiege to that city, took it by ſtorm; and put all to the ſword, men, women, and children of 40000 ſcarce 800 eſcaped, who went to *Vercingitorix*. After this *Cæſar* divided his Army, foure Legions hee ſent againſt the Pariſians and Senones, whoſe fore-fathers under *Brennus* their leader, burnt Rome, and beſieged the Capitol, ſix legions he conducteth himſelfe againſt the Auverni, or Auvergne, and ſits downe before Gergobia now Clermont in Auvergne, within this ſtrong city were 80000 men. Here *Cæſar* loſt 46 Centurions, by the temerity of his ſouldiers venturing too haſtily upon the enemy. The Hedui whoſe countrey now is poſſeſſed by the Burgundions, fell off from the Romans, who for their fidelity were wont to call them brethren. Whereupon *Cæſar* ſends into Germany beyond the Rhene for a ſupply of Horſe and Foot, by whoſe helpe hee overcame *Vercingtorix*, who aſſiſted the Hedui, then he beſiegeth Alexia, a city, now a Village in the Dutchie of Burgundie called Aliſe, and by famine forced them to ſurrender. There were now flockt together of Gaules 240000 Foot and 8000 Horſe, which vaſt Army after many dayes fight was overthrown by *Cæſar*. *Vereingetorix*, beholding from the Towne: this great defeat of his Army, ſurrenders all, and ſo the Hedui return again to the Roman obedience.

The ſiege of Alexia.

Labienus had now ſubdued the Pariſians. *Cæſar* in the interim marcheth againſt the Bellovaci, a people that lived about Bayeux, and ſubdues them. Others being weary of warre ſubmit now themſelves to the Romans. Uxellodunum called Cadenac in Quercy held out againſt *Cæſar* till thirſt forced them to yeeld, for there was but one ſpring of water that ſerved the Town, which *Cæſar* cut off.

off. He ſpared their lives, but cut off their hands to witneſſe their rebellion. After this he placeth Garriſons every where, ſo that partly with fear, partly with fair words he brought all *Gallia* in ſubjection. About this time died *Ptolemy Auletes* King of Egypt in the 29 year of his reign, to whom ſucceeded *Ptolemy Dionyſius* the laſt King of Egypt, he was now 13 years old, and married his ſiſter *Cleopatra*, who afterward marryed with *M. Antony*. *A. M.*

CHAP. VII.

1. *The fatall civill warre between* Cæſar *and* Pompey. 2. Cæſars *Divers victories, in Theſſalia, Egypt, Afric, Pontus and Spaine.* 3. Pompey's *death and* Cæſars.

GAllia being now quieted by the loſſe of 400000 men beſides many more priſoners, *Cæſar* returnes into Italy where he is received with Sacrifices, joy, and triumphs by all the cities through which he went: an Act paſſed in the Senat, that *Cæſar* ſhould part with two of his Legions for the Parthian war, which he condeſcended to; but underſtanding by *Curio* the Tribune, (whom *Cæſar* by paying his debts, of an enemy had made his friend) that *M. Marcellus* the Conſul had appointed them for *Pompey*, and ſo were retained in Italy, and withall that it was motioned in the Senat that *Cæſar* ſhould lay down his Commiſſion, and deliver up the Army; hee perceived that his enemies went about to ruine him; wherefore hee refuſed to part with his Army, except *Pompey* might doe the ſame. This was held reaſonable by *Curio*, but *Pompey's* friends would not aſſent; wherefore *Cæſar* is commanded to repair to Rome, as a private man, and to petition for what hee deſired, and if he did not by a certain day deliver up his Army, he ſhould be proclaimed enemy to the State. *Cæſar* knowing that *Pompey* ruled the Senat, and that *Marcellus*, *Lentulus*, and *Cato* his mortall enemies meant to bring all his actions in queſtion if he ſhould come to Rome as a private man, refuſeth to lay down his Commiſſion: therefore is by *Marcellus* and *Lentulus* Conſuls, denounced enemy to the State, and commanded not to paſſe the river Rubicon now called Rugum, which divided Italy from Gallia of old. 3924.

Now begins this fatall War, which was preſaged by an eclipſe of the Sunne, and cauſed by the ambition of *Pompey*, who retained his Armies in Spain all the three years ſpace that he ruled in Rome, and yet could not endure that *Cæſar* ſhould enjoy the like priviledge; he was favoured by the Senat, *Cæſar* by the Army, both preſumed on the juſtice of their cauſe, but neither of them had any goodneſſe or juſtice, who did ſacrifice their countreys ſafety to their private quarrels. *Cæſar* paſſeth over Rubicon, and comes to Ariminum, where he acquaints the 5 Cohorts he had with him to be his Guard, of his wrongs, and that he meant to reſtore the Tribunes that were baniſhed, theſe five Cohortes were half a Legion, which conſiſted of ten Cohortes, every Cohors of three Maniples, and each Maniple of two Centuries or 200. ſo his guard conſiſted now of 3000 men.

The firſt Towne *Cæſar* tooke was Auximum or Oſimum: which ſo terrified Rome, that *Marcellus* and *Lentulus* the Conſuls with the reſt of the Magiſtrates forſooke the city. In the interim *Cæſar* takes 7 Cohortes which were at Sulmo from *Lucretius*, and procured the 3 Legions which with *L. Domitius* were at Corfinium, to join with him. *Pompey* who a little before bragged that if he did but knock the Italian ground with his foot, he ſhould have armed men enough, hearing of *Cæſars* ſtrength and preparations, intends with moſt of the Senat to leave Italy, therefore they betake themſelves to Brunduſium a Sea Port in Calabria upon the Hadriatic Sea, from whence was the ordinary paſſage into

A. M. Greece. *Cesar* dispatcheth letters to severall places of Italy, complaining of *Pompey*, and desiring he might be brought to answer *Cesars* accusations, hee desired the quarrell might be ended without bloud-shedding; for that end, hee attempted to surprise *Pompey* in Brundusium, but though he set guards upon the harbour, yet *Pompey* escaped by night; therefore *Cesar* repaires to Rome, being now secure, enters the Senat, shews how he is forced to take up Armes in his owne defence. Then hee seiseth upon the Treasury, which *Pompey* in his sudden flight neglected; and having broken open the doores he taketh 4135 *l.* weight of Gold, and almost 900000 *l.* weight of silver: thence he goeth to his Legions at Ariminum, and from thence over the Alpes to Massylia, which shut the gates against him. Hee gives charge to *Trebonius* with three Legions to take in that city, then he hastes to Spain, which was now subject to *L. Afranius*, *M.Petrejus*, and *M. Varro*, *Pompey*'s three Generalls. These in divers battells he overcame *Afranius* Petrejus. and M. *Varro* in the further Spaine yeelded, and delivered up his Legions to *Cesar*. *Cato* was driven out of Sicilia by *Curio*, *Cotta* out of Sardinia by *Valerius*; *Tubero* out of Africa by *Varrus*. Massylia also submitteth, which is plundered of all, except life and liberty.

Pompey was now Master of the Sea; and gave a check to *Cesars* victories, for *Octavius* & *Libo Pompey*'s Legats did circumvent *Dolobella* and *Antonius* that were for *Cesar*, and who were appointed by him to guard the mouth of the Hadriatick Sea. *C. Antonius* held the Curicttic or Corcyrean shoare, but submitted, and yeelded up 15 Cohortes to *Octavius* his Fleet. *Libo* drove *Dolobella* from Illyricum or Dalmaria: the Ships also that *Basilus* sent to help *Antonius* were catched by the Pompejan Cilicians, with a new trick of ropes made like gins hid under the water. *Curio* also *Cesars* Legat, after he had overthrown *Varrus* in Africa, lost both himselfe and *Cesars* Army, in a rash battell with *Iuba* King of Mauritania. *Pompey* chose *Epirus*, now Albania, a countrey famous for good horses; to be the seat of the war: and *Cesar* having made all the Provinces sure behinde him, makes all the speed hee can to encounter with *Pompey*, therefore ventures in a small Pinnace to crosse the Sea in the midst of Winter, and in a storm; wherein he shewed more courage then the fearfull Shipmaster, whom he checks for his timidity: Fear not (saith he) thou carryest *Cesar*. When he came on shoar; and had gathered his Forces together, being impatient of delayes, used all means possible by plundering of Towns, and taking in Forts, to draw *Pompey* to a battle, which he warily avoided, hoping by tergiversation to break the courage of *Cesars* Army, but *Pompey*'s souldiers did interpret his procrastination, cowardise: so that *Cesar* said truly when hee went to Spaine, that he went against an Army without a Captain: but when he came into Epirus, that he went against a Captaine without an Army, for his souldiers were young gallants, and raw in military affaires. Some skirmishes there were between the two Armies. *Cesar* fell upon *Torquatus* and his Legion, being in Garrison, *Pompey* came with his whole body to rescue him. Whereupon *Cesar* left the siege to encounter with *Pompey*, *Torquatus* follows him from his Garrison in the reare, but *Cesars* Souldiers perceiving their danger, betooke themselves to their heels; so that *Cesar* could by no meanes hinder their flight: and if *Pompey* had not recalled his army from the pursuit, hee had got the day, and the quarrell had been ended, which made *Cesar* say, that *Pompey* knew not how to conquer. Many Roman Knights were knights were killed, with 30 Centurions, and 4000 common souldiers.

3924. Upon this defeat, *Cesar* makes hast through Epirus into Thessalia in Greece, famous for the Gyants warre against *Iupiter*; and there chooseth the Pharsalian fields called also *Philippici* from the town *Philippi* close by) for his campania. *Pompey* follows after, whose Army consisted of 40000 Foot; in the left wing were 7000 horse; in the right 5000. besides the Auxiliary Forces of the East, with the Nobility, Senators, Pretorian and Consular men. *Cesar* had not above 30000 Foot, and 1000 horse, but stout souldiers all. The battell continued

tinued doubtfull for a while, till the German cohortes fell so furiously upon *A. M.*
Pompey's Horse, that they were forced to give ground, and at last betooke themselves to a disordered flight, the Cesarians pursue them with a command from *Cesar* that they should aim at the Pompejans faces, and withall to spare their fellow citizens. Of the Pompejans were slaine 15000. and 33 Centurions, *Pompey* himselfe escaped with the two *Lentuli*, *Favonius* the Pretorian and his sonne *Sextus*. Some perswaded him to goe to Parthia, others to his friend King *Iuba* of Africa, but he chose rather Egypt for his retreat, hoping to be kindly used by young *Ptolemy*, for old courtesies bestowed by *Pompey* on him, and his Father; therefore he came first to Larissa, then by Sea to Mitylene; thence he sailed with his wife *Cornelia* into Egypt, the base King sends to receive *Pompey* into his own Ship, and a warrant there to kill him, being perswaded thereto by *Pothinus* the Eunuch, and his Tutor, by *Theodotus* also, and *Achillas* his Generall; for they feared that *Pompeys* intertainment would draw all the Roman Forces thither, therefore *Achillas* and *Septimius* now a Colonell but heretofore a Captaine in *Pompey*'s his Army, first murthers this brave Commander, and then cuts off his head in the sight of his wife and children; he was 58 years old.

Pompey's Generalship was profered to *Cicero*, which he refused, and betook himselfe privately to Brundusium. *Cesar* not made insolent with his victory, gives a generall pardon to all his enemies. At Rome hee was created Dictator though absent, in three dayes he comes to Egypt, where *Theodotus* presents him *Pompeys* head and ring, at sight of which he weeped, and checkt the murtherers, then he went to *Alexandria*, and demanded contribution, the Kings Governours pretend poverty, *Achillas* is commanded to dismisse his Army of 20000 men; but hee marcheth with him against *Cesar*, a battell is fought in which the Kings Fleet is set on fire, the flame whereof consumes a part of the city, and in it, *Ptolemies* famous librarie of 400000 volumes: in the Isle *Pharus* was a great fight in which *Cesar* lost many men, and *Pompeys* murtherers slain, *Cesar* himselfe hardly escaped into a cockboat, which with the weight of the passengers sunk, but he saved himself by swimming with one hand, for the other in which he held his papers, he was forced to hold above the water; so having swimmed 200 pases hee came safely to his Ship: then hee renewes his Forces, and in a battell overthrowes the Egyptians, in which 20000 are slaine, 12000 with 70 long Ships taken, and the King himselfe was drowned in a boat overset with passengers. So *Alexandria* being forced to yeeld, *Cesar* bestowes Egypt on *Cleopatra*, the Kings body was found in the mudde.

Pharnaces the sonne of *Mithridates* tooke occasion by this Roman dis- 3925.
cord to rebell against him. *Cesar* marcheth, and at the first encounter overthrowes him, so that hee truly said, *I came*, *I saw*, *I overcame*, *Pharnaces* having fled to Bosphorus Cimmerius in the mouth of the lake Meotis, distant from Bosphorus Thracius 500 miles. Here *Pharnaces* who would have betrayed his Father *Mithridates*, is betrayed by his friend *Asander* and murthered.

Pompeys faction inraged against *Cesar*, breakes out in two places; in Africa 3926.
under King *Iuba*, *Scipio* *Pompeys* Father in law, and *Cato* Governour of Utica; in Spain, under *Cn. Pompejus* great *Pompeys* eldest sonne. At Rome also they began to stir, but *Antonius* Generall of the Horse to *Cesar*, appeased the tumult with the murder of 800 citizens: in Afrcia, *Scipio*, *Iuba* and *Afranius* are defeated by *Cesar*, 10000 men were slaine, and 60 Elephants taken. *Cato* at Utica killed himselfe, having first read *Plato*'s Book of the immortality of the soule. *Iuba* hired *Petreius* to cut his throat, which he did, and then killed himselfe with the same sword. *Scipio* being kept back by contrary windes from Spain, murthered himselfe on Ship-board. *Torquatus* also was killed. *Cesar* commanded *Pompeys* daughter and his Nephews to bee slaine,

A. M. but *Cato*'s sonne, and others that begged for mercy, were pardoned.

Cesar upon his returne to Rome, was honoured with four triumphs, answering his four conquests of Gallia, Egypt, Pontus, and Africa, he made a sumptuous feast, and exhibited magnificent shews, he pardoned *M. Marcellus* upon the Senats intreaty, and called him home from his banishment, for which Act of clemency he is highly commended by *Cicero* in his incomparable oration for *M. Marcellus*; but before he could returne he was murthered by *Magius* his client at Athens. After the war was ended a list was taken of the citizens, and there were not found above 150000 whereas four years before, about the beginning of the war, there were reckoned above 400000 citizens. *Cesar* was now made Consul the fourth time. He prepares for Spain against *Pompey*'s two sonnes, *Cn.* and *Sextus*, but both their Fleets were spoiled at Sea, after divers townes were taken by both sides, a great battell was fought near the city Munda, wherein *Cesar* at first was defeated, but upon a fresh encounter he got the day. *Cn. Pompejus* fled into Munda, but *Cesar* making a rampire of dead bodies, took the town, *Pompey* fled, but was overtaken and killed by *Ceronius*, the younger brother escaped. *T. Labienus* that had done so much good service in Gallia for *Cesar*, but now adhering to *Pompey*'s faction, was slain.

The civill war being every where composed, and *Cesar* returning from Spain was honoured with the fifth triumph, the title of *pater patriæ*, and of *perpetuall Dictator*, and that he should be ἱερὸς καὶ ἄσυλος, that is, *Holy* or *inviolable*, but he continued not long in honour; for he returned from Spain to Rome in October, and about the *Ides* or midst of the next March he was slaine, this was not above five months. His great honours, felicity, and pride had procured him envy: for when the Fathers before the Temple of *Venus* came to confer these honours on him, he sate still in his chair of state, and did not stand up, as hee ought: and though he refused to wear the crown which *M. Antonie* put on his head, in the Lupercall solemnities, but sent it to *Jupiter* in the Capitol: yet when one had placed a crown on the head of his Image, hee was content it should remaine there, wherefore he thrust the two Tribunes out of their office, for questioning the man that crowned his image. A plot being then contrived by *M. Brutus*, *C. Tribonius*, *C. Cassius*, *D. Brutus* his favourite, and some others, he was murthered in the Curia of *Pompey*, having received 23. wounds, whereof the second was only mortall which he had in his brest, his murtherers fled to the Capitoll, resolved to make an act of Oblivion, to fling *Cesars* body into the Tibris, and to seise upon his estate, but they feared the greatnesse of *Antonius* and *Lepidus*. Such was the tragicall Catastrophre of this brave Commander; who had fought fifty pitched battels with the common enemies of Rome, besides his many victories in the civill war. He made many wholesome Laws, he reformed the Roman Calender by the help of *Sosigenes* the Mathematician of *Alexandria*, he not onely conquered his enemies, but his passions also, in advancing his greatest adversaries to honours and places of trust. When he took *Pompey*'s cabinet at Pharsalia, and *Scipio*'s at Thapsus, he burned all their Letters without looking into any one of them. Hee who was carried so often in triumphant Chariots, and whom no forraigne force could subdue, is now conquered by a few traitors at home, and carried by three of his meanest servants. So horrid was this murther, that the Sun is said to hide his face from it, by an eclipse: and so far was his death the cause of peace, as his enemies thought, that it presently occasioned more civill wars; and so little were his enemies secured by his murther, that none of all these traitors outlived him above three years, but all perished miserably, yet deservedly, even some of them with the same sword that wounded him; he was 56 years old when he died.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII. *A. M.*

1. *The affaires of Iudea under* Antigonus, *and* Antipater. 2. *The actions of* Octavius *in his younger yeares.* 3. *The actions and death of* Cassius *and* Brutus. 4. *The actions and end of* Sextus Pompejus. 5. *The actions of* Antonius *and* Lepidus.

Aristobulus being sent back in chains to Rome, *Cesar* in hatred to *Pompey* sets him free, and gives him the command of two Legions, but being in the way seised upon, by the Pompejans he was poisoned, and lest his sonne *Alexander* should make any trouble in Iudea, his head is cut off by *Scipio* Pompey's Father in law at *Antioch*: but after the death of *Pompey*, *Hyrcanus* and *Antipater* did good service for *Cesar* in Egypt, in helping to subdue *Ptolemy*. Wherefore *Hyrcanus* is established in the Pontificat, and *Antipater* is made Governour of Palestina, whose sonne *Phaselus* is set over Ierusalem; and *Herod* the other sonne over Galilee. This *Herod* caused *Ezechias* the high way man, with many others to be slaine, which so offended the 70 Elders, that they sent out their warrants to bring him to justice for medling with their authority, hee by the counselll of his Father *Antipater*, gets him a strong guard of Souldiers, to awe the great Councell of the 70. which made old *Simeon* (called the just,) rise up and tell the Councell that *Herod* deserved death, for this his presumption. Which so incensed *Herod* against them, that hee never was at quiet, till hee had quite overthrowne that Councell, which hee did, as soone as hee was made King, and killed all the 70 except old *Simeon*, who escaped, being preserved by God, to receive Christ in his armes, and to propheſie of his Salvation.

At Rome *C. Octavius Cesars* nephew by his sisters Daughter *Atia*, or *Accia*, being adopted by his Uncles last will, and constituted heir to 9 parts of his estate, 3929. which was called *Hæres ex dodrante*, resolves to revenge his Uncles death, hee was now about 19 yeares old, and of such parts and hopes, that *Cesar* meant to have made him his Colleague in the Getic and Parthian warre: the souldiers begin to flock to him amaine, from all parts, both because of their affection to *Cesar*, and that they saw the brave disposition of *Octavius*, and because *Antonies* impotent Government was distastfull to them; as likewise to the Senat and people, who had been also exasperated against *Antonie* by *Cicero's* invectives. *M. Antonie* likewise being madde that *Octavius* a youth, was preferred to him, in *Cesars* will, resolves to crush him betimes; but the people having large legacies left them by *Cesar*, adhere to *Octavius*, whom they call *Cesar* from his Uncles, but now his Fathers name. *D. Brutus* being designed Consul, joines his Army with *Octavius* his Forces; the Senat also sends him the Consular Ornaments, gives him power to make war against *Antonie*: and honours him with the title of Imperator or L. Generall. *Hirtius* also, and *Pansa* the Consuls conjoyne their Armies with *Octavius*. M. *Brutus* seiseth upon *Vatinius* his Army in Greece, and on the Province too for the use of *Octavius*; and in Epirus wrests the Legions from *C. Antenius*, *Maroks* brother.

Octavius began his Government upon the death of *Iulius Cesar*, which was 282 yeares after the death of *Alexander*; before the birth of Christ 42. and about the 711 yeare of the city: shortly after this *C. Trebonius* one of *Cesars* murtherers was killed in Asia by *Dolobella* that succeeded him, this *Dolobella* was killed by *C. Cassius* at Laodicea, *D. Brutus* being besieged by M. *Antonie* in Mutina now Modina a Town in Lombardie or *Galllia Cisalpina* he is assisted by *Octavius*, *Pansa*, and *Hirtius*, the siege raised, and *Antonie* forced to flie into France; in this fight *Pansa* and *Hirtius* lost their lives, but honored with a publick Sepulture. A triumph is appointed for *Brutus*, but no notice taken of *Octavius*, for the Pompejan faction began again to bare sway at Rome; he perceiving how hee was

A. M. ſlighted, and that in ſcorn he was called childe, ſent *Cornelius* a Centurion with 400 ſouldiers to the Senat, to demand the Conſulſhip for *Octavius* in the name of the whole Army: the Senat ſeeming averſe was threatned by *Cornelius*, who drew his ſword, and told them, that if they would not yeeld to *Octavius* his requeſt, the ſword ſhould force them; the meſſengers returning to *Octavius* without ſatisfaction, hee by Letters invites *Antonius* and *Lepidus* into Italy with their Forces, who being united into a body, ſit downe before Rome, whereupon *Octavius* is preſently made Conſul, who baniſheth all that had any hand in *Ceſars* death, and accuſeth *Caſſius* with the two *Bruti* of his murther. *Plancus Brutus* his Colleague, and *Aſinius Pollio* a great *Anti-pompejan* deliver up both their Armies to *Antonius*. *D. Brutus* is forſaken by *Plancus* and his ſouldiers, and is killed by *Antonius*.

Lepidus and *Antonius* being both proclaimed enemies by the Senat, and *Octavius* ſlighted as was ſaid, they had no other way to ſave themſelves but by uniting their Forces, therefore *Octavius* imbraceth the occaſion, and cloſeth with *Antony*, who otherways was reſolved to join his Forces with *Brutus* and *Caſſius* who had the command of 17 Legions, but *Octavius* unworthily baniſheth *Cicero* the eloquent mouth of that glorious City, leaving him as a prey to *Antonius* his ſworne enemy, who ſent ſome of his troopers to murther him, which they did; and placed his head and right hand on the Roſtra, to the great grief of the city; *Fulvia Antonies* wife, abuſed the head with all kinde of indignities. In that proſciption of theſe Triumviri were baniſhed beſides knights 130. Senators, and not onely *Cicero*, but all his family alſo: but *Cicero*'s ſonne was recalled.

3930. *Caſſius* in the meane time poſſeſſeth Syria, and vexes Judea with taxes. *Malichus* who had poyſoned *Antipater*, is by his ſonne *Herod* ſlaine, *Hyrcanus* not daring to revenge this death of his friend *Malichus*, then *Caſſius* takes *Rhodes*, and *Brutus* ſubdues the Lycii, then they paſſe over with their army to Macedonia where neer *Philippy Octavius* and *Antony* fight with them, this ſecond battell was fought with various ſucceſſe, in that fatall field; the wing in which *Brutus* was, had the better of *Octavius*, then ſick and not in the camp, but *Caſſius* his wing was defeated, who fearing *Brutus* had been in the like condition, forced his own ſervant to kill him, the ſouldier whom *Caſſius* had ſent to bring tidings to *Brutus*, return ng too late, found his Generall dead on the ground, wherefore accuſing his ſlowneſſe to be the cauſe of *Caſſius* his death, fell upon his own ſword. *Brutus* a few dayes after fought againe; but as his death and overthrow were foretold by his evill Genius the night before, ſo it came to paſſe. For ſeeing his Army defeated, he thruſt *Stratos* ſword through his left ſide, and ſo died immediately. Here died the ſons of *Cato*, *Hortenſius*, *Lucullus*, *Druſus*, *Livius*, *Quintilius*, *Varius*, and many more brave men.

Sextus the ſon of great *Pompey* at this time returning from Spain, firſt ſeiſed upon Meſſana, then upon all Sicily, to whom there was great concourſe both from Italy, and from the Brutian Army. The Senat had reſtored him to his Fathers eſtate, and made him Admirall of the Seas, when the Pompejan faction prevailed, now hee receives all fugitives and ſlaves, and with Piracies infeſts the Sea, which his Father had cleared, *Antonius* ſtayes to ſettle the Tranſmarine Provinces, *Octavius* returnes to Italy, which he findes full of tumults. For *Fulvia Antonies* wife ſtirred up the old ſouldiers againſt him; and *L. Antonius* the Conſul, *Markes* brother accuſed alſo *Ceſar* to the ſouldiers of his unjuſt dealing with them, and having raiſed an Army, marcheth to Peruſia, at this day Perut a city in Hetruria: in which *Ceſar* heſiegeth him, who being forced by famine yeeldeth: and obtains his life, ſo did *Fulvia*, and *Plancus*, and all the ſouldiers upon ſubmiſſion obtaine pardon, only the town was thrown down; & ſo this war ended without bloudſhed.

Embaſſadors from all parts repair to *M. Antony* in Bithynia; among the reſt were the prime men of the Jews, with an accuſation againſt *Phaſelus* and *Herod*: for incroaching upon *Hyrcanus* his Government, and for baniſhing unjuſtly *Antigonus* the ſon of *Ariſtobulus*: but *Herod* prevented them by bribing *Antonius*,

and

and by the marrying of *Hyrcanus* his Neece, and so he obtained the title of Tetrarch: at Tyrus the Jews are some put to death, some imprisoned by *Antony*, for accusing *Herod* again: but the next year *Antigonus* taking occasion of *Antonies* dallying with *Cleopatra* Queen of Egypt, calls into Syria *Pacorus* the sonne of *Orodes* King of Parthia, who with force and fraud seised upon *Hyrcanus*, and *Phaselus*. *Herod* prevented the plot laid against him: the Parthians took and plundered Jerusalem, and then delivered it over to *Antigonus*, who cut off *Hyrcanus* his eares, that he might be incapable of the priesthood. *Phaselus* dashed out his own braines, to prevent the tortures intended by his enemie. *Herod* being weary of following *Antonius*, takes sail for Rhodes, and from thence to Rome: there *Antony* to make his peace with *Cesar*, marries his sister *Octavia*, having first put away his wife *Fulvia*, and betrayes his friend *Q. Ruffus* to *Augustus*, against whom he was plotting mischiefe: Therefore *Cesar* to gratifie *Antony*, makes *Herod* King of Judea, and *Antigonus* for joining with the Parthians, is denounced Traitor. *Ventidius* and *Silon Antonies* Legats are commanded to establish *Herod* in his Kingdome, but they being bribed by *Antigonus* in three yeares space did nothing.

A. M. 3931. 2393. *Olymp.* 184

Sextus Pompejus had now got all Sicil, and hindred provision from coming to Rome, therefore upon the desire of the people, *Cesar* and *Antony* conclude a peace with him; and permitted him the Government of Sicilia and Achaja, and withall recalled divers of the Nobility from banishment: but this peace held not long, for *Pompey* contrary to the Articles of peace entertained fugitives, and *Cesar* received *Mena* who revolted from *Pompey* with 60 Ships. Him *Octavius* made Admirall of the same Fleet against *Pompey*, who had filled the Sea with Pyrats: a great battell was fought at Sea; but after *Cesar* had got the better, hee lost many of his Ships by a storm on Sylacæum upon the coast of Calabria, a place infamous for Shipwracks: *Cesar* had also a second losse neer Tauromenium a Towne in Sicily; he lost also divers Ships, some whereof where burned by *Mena* who revolted to *Pompey*, the same runnigado revolted again to *Cesar* with 306 Triremes who gave him his life, but never imployed him any more: in the last Sea fight against *Pompey*, *Agrippa Cesars* Admirall took and sunk 103 Ships, of *Pompeys*, who hardly escaped to Asia with 17. where by command from *M. Antony*, *Titius* slew him.

Naufragum Scylaceum. *Virg. Æn. 3.*

Cesar had called *Lepidus* out of Africa with some Legions to aid him; but the vain man bragged that he and not *Cesar* had defeated *Pompey*; therefore hee challengeth Sicily to himselfe, and permits his souldiers to plunder Messana; at which insolencies *Cesar* being offended, comes into *Lepidus* his Campe, to expostulate with him, *Lepidus* commands his guard to knock him down, but hee wrapping his upper garment about his arm, received the blowes without hurt, and having laid hold on the Eagle, puts spur to his horse, and carries it to his owne camp, upon this his Army falls upon *Lepidus* his quarters, whose Souldiers after some small skirmishes revolts to *Cesar*; *Lepidus* being forsaken puts off his Generalls habit called *Paludamentum* or *Chlamys*, and in mourning submits himself to *Cesar*, who gave him his life and goods, but degraded him from his honor and charge, and then banished him. *Cesar* now having 44 Legions under his command, which began to mutiny about their pay, he discharged 20000 of them, restored 30000 slaves to their masters, and crucified 6000 who were masterlesse: then hee returnes to Rome, where he is honoured with the lesser triumph or *ovatio*, so called from *ovis* the Sheepe, sacrificed then by the Conquerour.

In the East *Ventidius Antonies* Legat defeated the *Parthians* in a great battell, slew *Pacorus*, and carried about his head on a pole, that the revolted cities might see it: but *Antony* desirous to inlarge his Dominions, would needs with 16 Legions march through Media and Armenia against the Parthians, where hee lost two Legions, and was like to have lost all; had he not hearkned to the counsell of a Roman captive, who being taken in the Crassian overthrow, came by night

3933.

A. M. night into the Roman campe, and wished them not to march any further, but to returne with all haſt through the woods and hills; which they did accordingly, yet were ſo beſet with Parthian Archers, that had they not kneeled, and kept off the the ſtorm of arrowes from their heads, by holding up their Targets they had been all loſt; then *Antony* returning into Armenia, ſeiſeth upon *Artavaſdes*, the King, puts him in golden chains, and beſtows that Kingdome on his ſon, which he had by his wife, or Concubine rather *Cleopatra*; but afterward *Artaxias* recovered his Fathers Kingdome.

CHAP. IX.

The affaires of the Iewes under Antigonus, Hyrcanus, Herod, *and* Archelaus. 2. *The affaires of Rome and Egypt under* Antonius *and* Auguſtus. 3. *The birth of Chriſt, the life and death of* Auguſtus, *andt he inſu rrections in Iudea.*

IUdea, Galilee and Samaria, were now in a combuſtion, becauſe *Herod* an Idumean had got the Kingdome. *Herod* finding ſmall aid in *Antonies* Legats, makes a journey to *Antony* himſelfe, who at that time beſieged Samoſata, a town upon Euphrates, and aſſiſteth him to take it, whereupon he obtaines two Legions under the command of *Soſius*, to ſubdue Jeruſalem. With theſe he revengeth the death of his brother *Ioſeph*, and of his ſix Cohortes who were overthrowne by *Machera*; which gave occaſion to the Galileans to drown all they found of *Herods* faction in the Sea of Tyberias, and becauſe *Pappus* had killed his brother *Ioſeph*, and *Antigonus* cut off his head: Therefore *Herod* having overcome the Galileans cuts off the head of *Pappus*, and ſends it to *Pharoras* his younger brother:
3935. After this he beſiegeth Jeruſalem with 11 Legions and 6000 horſe; beſides the Syrian Auxiliaries: the Jews ſtifly held out againſt the beſiegers, and would not be adviſed by *Sameas* a prime man in the Sanhedrin to ſubmit to *Herod*, till firſt the lower city and outward Court of the Temple were taken, and at laſt the reſt of the City and Temple was ſtormed, upon the Faſt day the inraged ſouldiers ſpared neither man, woman, nor childe, ſo that *Herod* was forced to hire them to give off, asking them whether they meant to make him a King of bare walls: *Herod* had uſed all the meanes he could to make that ſtiffe-necked people accept him for their King, hee beſieged them in three Sabbaticall years, when they could receive no fruites of the earth for their releife; he married with *Mariamne* the daughter of *Alexander Antigonus* his brother, he profeſſed the Jewiſh Religion, he promiſed them all the happineſſe they could deſire under any King; but all this could not move them: ſo at laſt hee obtained by force which hee could not by intreaty that kingdome, which at firſt after the captivity was ruled by *Zorobabel*, *Nehemias*, and other Princes, after them by Prieſts, and the 70 Elders, and at laſt by the Aſſamoneans 126 years.

Antony by the perſwaſions and bribes of *Herod*, firſt crucified *Antigonus* and then beheaded him; and becauſe he knew there would be ſmall ſecurity for him, ſo long as any were left alive, that might claime title to the Kingdome, hee invited *Hyrcanus* home from Babylon; *Herod* made great ſhew of love to him, in proffering a ſhare of the Government, in calling him Father, and uſing him with all civility, till he had ſet himſelfe faſt in the ſaddle, and then deſtroyes him; he highly eſteemed *Pollio* the Phariſee, and *Samias* his Diſciple, two prime men of the councell, becauſe they counſelled the Jews to ſubmit to *Herod*, hee beſtowes upon *Hananelus* the Pontificat; but upon the intreatie of *Alexandra*; (whom notwithſtanding he ſtill ſuſpected and perſecuted) he took it from him, and conferred it on *Ariſtobulus Mariamnes* brother; but being jealous of him alſo, in the ſecond year of his Pontificat he drowned him, for whileſt hee was

ſwim-

swimming, *Herod* caused two that were swimming with him, as it were in sport, to hold his head under the water, till he was stifled; of this *Alexandra* complained, and so did *Cleopatra* who desired a part of the kingdome of Judea; but *Herod* with his bribes pacified *Antony*, and frustrated *Cleopatra*, whom he would have killed, had hee not been disswaded by his friends. *A. M.*

M. Antony having wholly devoted himselfe to *Cleopatra*, and to all licentiousnesse, and puft up with pride, wealth, and flattery, begins to despise *Octavius*, he puts away *Octavia* his sister, he refuseth to part with his triumvirat though the time was expired, hee calls himselfe Father *Liber*, he desires that Egypt and all the Provinces even to Euphrates may be conferred on his two sonnes by *Cleopatra*. *Cesar* understanding of this after his returning into the City, upon the conqueſt of Dalmatia, and Pannonia, perswades the people to make war against *Antony* and *Cleopatra*, which was easily assented to; therefore he was made Consul the third time, his Colleague was *Messala Corvinus*. *Antony* having subdued *Artabanes* King of Armenia, and having forced him to deliver up his treasure, which was very great, was now full of money, yet *Cesar* exceeded him in number of Ships, of good Commanders and souldiers. *Plancus*, *Dolobella* and *Domitius* revolted to *Cesar*. *M. Agrippa* in the sight of *Antonies* Fleet took Leucas a town in Leucadia, Patræ a City in Achaja (famous for the Martyrdome of St. *Andrew*) and Corinth also. The two Fleets fought at Actium a promontorie in Epirus, where *Augustus* after this built a town and called it Nicopolis from his victory; the fight lasted doubtfull two houres, at last *Cleopatra* takes her flight with 60 sail. *Antony* follows after; the soudiers seeing this, submitted to *Octavius*, who pardoned them. The same succesſe he had by land against *Antony* the next yeer. *Cesar* persued *Antony* and *Cleopatra* into Alexandria, the war is renewed, but *Antonies* Fleet revolting; his foot Forces being beaten, and at last all his horse defeated, he fled into the Palace, and run him selfe through with his own sword, and then fell into the armes of *Cleopatra*, whom he thought had been killed, and in her bosome breathed out his spirit: the Queen courted *Augustus* with presents, and thinking to gain his love, betrayed to him *Pelusium* neer *Arabia Petrea*; but fearing that *Cesar* would carry her in triumph; seeing *Alexandria* and all was lost, shee poysoned her self by applying an Aspe to her Breast; thus ended the Civill War.

Herod in this meane time being incensed against the Arabians, for killing his Embassadours, raiseth a great Army, and in two battels utterly defeats them: then hearing of *Antonies* death and overthrow, he was much perplexed: fearing lest *Cesar* would unthrone him, for assisting of *Antony*; therefore he resolves to repair to him; and to make his peace if possible; but doubting lest *Hyrcanus* might step into the throne in his absence, he puts him to death upon suspition that he held secret intelligence with *Malichas* King of Arabia: whereas indeed he wrote him a letter upon the importunity of his daughter *Alexandra*, only that he would permit him being now 80 years old, to end his dayes quietly in his countrey, seeing he could not in his owne by reason of *Herods* jealousie over him: so *Herod* having secured all at home, repaires to *Cesar* at Rhodes, to whom submitting himselfe, and promising him the same measure of service and love he shewed to *Antony*, and presenting him with 800 talents, he was received into favour, and the kingdome confirmed on him. 3942.

Cesar returning into the City obtained 3 triumphs, the Illyrian, Naval, and Egyptian. *M. Lepidus* the Triumvirs sonne for offering to raise a new warre is put to death; so all things in the Roman Empire being now composed, which now was the twentieth year after the Civill war of *Cesar* and *Pompey*; *Octavius* is honoured with the name of *Augustus*; and the month *Sextilis* is name August from him, as *Quintilis* was called July from *Julius*. Dalmatia which held out in rebellion 220 yeares, the Alpes inhabited by barbarous people, Spaine which had been vexed with 200 years war, and all other places submitted to *Augustus*: the Parthians also sent back to him the Roman Ensignes, which were taken by *Orodes* from *Crassus*, and by *Phraates* from *Antonius*: the 3943. *V. C.* 725. 3945.

Temple

A. M. 3946. Temple of *Ianus* which had ſtood open 200 yeares, was now ſhut by *Auguſtus* being 36 yeares older, it was now ſhut a ſecond time in his reign, after the ſubduing of the Cantabrians and Aſtures in Spain, and of the Salaſſans in Inſubria, that part of Italy where Millan now ſtands, Egypt which had ſtood almoſt 300 years under the *Ptolemies* or *Lagidæ*, ſo called from *Lagus* father of the firſt *Ptolemey*, yeelded her neck to the Roman yoake; this generall peace gave way for the birth of the prince of peace now at hand; who came in the fulneſſe of time to deſtroy idolatry, which was now at the hight; for at Rome the Pantheon or Temple was built for all Gods. At Epheſus, Nicea, Nicomedia, & Pergamus. Temples were dedicated to *Iulius* and *Auguſtus*, at Epheſus, the city of Rome is made a goddeſſe, and ſacrifices offered to her; a theater was erected at Jeruſalem, and the holy city polluted with the vanities and profaneneſſe of the Gentiles, as ſword-playing and ſtage-playing. *Herod* upon ſuſpition murthers his vertuous wife *Mariamne*, and his mother in law *Alexandra*, with the Sanhedrin of the 72 Senators, and ſets up the golden eagle over the porch of the Temple.

Auguſtus took order for furniſhing the city yeerly with corn, from Egypt he ſent honeſt and able Proconſuls into all the Provinces, he reformed the Senat, and reduced the number of Senators to 600. Hee gave order to the Prieſts to tranſcribe the genuine Bookes of the Sibyls, and to burne the ſuppoſititious: he overthrew the houſe of *Vedius Pollio*, for feeding his lampreys with mens fleſh: hee maintained a ſtrong guard over himſelfe, to prevent the miſchievous plots of male-contents, who deſired to build themſelves upon the ruines of the State; for ſo many conſpiracies were intended againſt him, that he ſometimes reſolved to betake himſelf to a private life. Yet of his guard he maintained but three cohortes within the city. He gave liberty to the Jews every where in Aſia and Cyrene, to uſe their own religion. He was ſo grieved for the loſſe of *Varus* with his three legions in Germany; that ſometimes he would beat his head againſt the wall, crying out O *Varus*, reſtore the Legions. He would not be called *Dominus*, or Lord by any.

Herod rebuilt Samaria and called it Sebaſte from *Auguſtus*, he beautified *Turris Straonia* and called it *Ceſaria*; he erected many Towers, and placed Garriſons in them to keep the Jews from rebelling, he furniſhed the country with corn from Egypt, in time of famine, he marries the daughter of *Simon Boethus*, and beſtowes on him the Prieſthood; He builds a Temple to *Ceſar* near Panea, by the ſprings of Jordan, and to keep the Jews from ſtirring at this Idolatry, he remits to them
3953. the third part of their tribute, and to make ſome ſhew of pity in the midſt of his impieties, in the 18 year of his reign, he inlargeth the Temple with a magnificent build ng called the Court of the Gentiles, becauſe they might enter thither, it was 100 cubits long, and 120 high with large porches, and marble pillars, the outward work was 8 years in building, a year and 5 months more were ſpent in the inward ornaments; it was finiſhed the 28 year of his reign, 9 yeares before Chriſt aſſumed the Temple of his body in the Virgines womb: he had 9 wives and many children; he murthered his two ſons *Ariſtobulus* and *Alexander* being falſly accuſed by *Salome* his ſiſter, and *Antipater* their brother by the fathers ſide, which *Antipater* was afterward alſo put to death by *Herod*: thus was he the butcher of *Hyrcanus* his father in law, of *Alexandra* his mother in law, of *Mariamne* his wife,
3969. and of his own 3 ſons, ſo that as *Auguſtus* ſaid, it had beene better to be *Herods* ſwine, then his ſon.

3971. Whileſt *Herod* is thus raging againſt his own bowels, our bleſſed Redeemer Jeſus Chriſt is born of a pure Virgine; the report of whoſe birth did ſo trouble *Herod*, that he cauſed all the Bethlemitiſh children under two years old to be murthered; and before the expiration of the ſame year he died, being tortured ſo long with his rotten body, crawling with wormes before his death, that he would have killed himſelfe, had he not been prevented by his friends, he dyed the 70 yeare of his age, and the 34 of his reign; having 5 dayes before murthered his wicked ſon *Antipater*, he left the kingdome to *Archelaus* and the Tetrarchie to *Herod Antipas*, but *Auguſtus* divided the kingdome into two parts, to *Archelaus* he gave one part,

to

to *Antipas* and *Philip* the other, *Archelaus* in the 10 yeare of his reign was accu- *A. M.*
sed before *Augustus* for his cruelty and tyranny, the Jews in a tumult demanded
justice of those that had incensed *Herod* against *Iudas* and *Mathias* two famous
Lawyers; *Archelaus* sent a Tribune to suppresse the tumult, whom they hurt with
stones; whereupon he sent his army against them, who at their Paschall solemnity
killed 3000 of them. 8000 Jews repair to Rome with a complaint against *Arche-* 3982.
laus, whom they accused for conferring the Pontificat upon unworthy men, and *A. C.* 11.
such as he pleased; therefore he is banished to Vienna about the twelfth year of
Christ, his goods confiscated, and Judea annexed to the Province of Syria, this was
done the eleventh year of his raign.

Agrippa Augustus his son in law by the help of *Tiberius Nero*, and *Drusus Germanicus* brought under the Germans, Pannonians, Dalmatians, and Rhetians. *Agrippa* being dead, *Tiberius* is made fellow Tribune with *Augustus*, but being offended at the shining vertues of *Cajus* and *Lucius*, having asked leave of *Cæsar*, went to Rhodes, where he remained 8 years: these two *Cajus* and *Lucius* were *Augustus* his nephews. *Drusus* & *Tiberius* were his sons in law. *Drusus* dyed in the 30 year of his life: *Tiberius* undertook his charge in Germany, which he made a stipendiary province. *Cajus Cæsar Augustus* his nephew by *Livia* being wounded in Armenia, where he spent most of his time, returned in his old age to Italy, where he dyed at Lycia or Limyra, his brother *Lucius* in his journey to Spain dyed at Massylia. *Tiberius*, therefore with his brother *Agrippa* are adopted by *Augustus*: but *Agrippa* was afterward rejected, so in *Tiberius* alone remained the hope of succession, he subdued utterly the Dalmatians, Marcomans, Pannonians, and other barbarous nations: but *Quintilius Varus* being too secure was defeated by the Germans, under *Arminius* their Captain, which overthrow so troubled *Augustus*, that he appointed watch and ward over all the city, and out of sorrow suffered his hairs and beard to overgrow, yet this *Arminius* was quelled by *Tiberius*, who beyond the Rhene destroyed all with fire and sword.

Augustus sends his nephew *Germanicus* the son of *Drusus* into Germany, and appoints *Tiberius* for Illyricum; but at Nola falling sick he recals *Tiberius* now in his journey, with whom he had secret conference a long time. He desired his friends to give him a *Plaudite*, if he had acted his part wel on the stage of Mortality; so having bid farewell to *Livia* his wife, who (as it's thought) poysoned him with figs, he departed the 76 year of his life, the 57 year of his Empire, & 44 years after the A- 3985.
ctian war. He was a moderate wise, and fortunate Prince; he added to the Empire *V. C.* 766.
Egypt, Pannonia, Aquitania, Rhetia, the Vindelici neighbours of Rhetia, with all *A. C.* 14.
the Sea ports of Pontus: he subdued the Germans, the Daci: he recovered Armenia from the Parthians; he was honoured with gifts from Scythia and Judia: he made Galatia a Province; he made Rome marble, which before was brick; he erected a stately porch and Bibliothec in his Palatine house; he appointed watchmen, who all night went about, to keep the city from firing: he went into all the Provinces himself except Africa and Sardinia: he despised the title of Lord, and slighted all Libels cast out against him. He was mercifull to his enemies, for hee made *Cornelius* Consul, though he plotted to murther him. He loved *Mecænas* deerly, even when he called him *carnifex* or Butcher, and upon that word from him rose up, and would not pronounce the sentence of condemnation against some traitors. He was modest in apparell, wearing no other, but what his wife, sister, daughters and neeces made. He was temperate in his dyet, sparing in wine, an honouter and lover of learning, he was a good scholar himself, and wrote divers tractats, he left a breviary of the whole Empire, a list of all the souldiers in pay, of the money in the treasury, and of the sums that were due. He erected an Altar in the Capitoll (to God the first begotten) sending to the Pythian oracle to know of his successour; he was answered, that an Hebrew child stopped his mouth, and commanded him to return again to hell. Whereupon the Gentile oracles ceased, darknesse giving place to light. In the 42 year, or as others say in the 41 year of his reign Christ was born, *Quirinus*, or as the Evangelist saith, *Cyrenius* being President of Syria, who was afterward sent to confiscate *Archelaus* his goods that

reigned

A. M. reigned in Judea, Idumea, and Samaria; as his brother *Herod Antipas* in Galilee and Peræa; their mother was *Marthace* a Samaritan. *Philip* was Tetrarch of Trachonitis and Batanæa.

The inſurrection of the Jews againſt *Archelaus*, gave occaſion to *Iudas*, *Simon* and other ambitious ſpirits, under pretence of liberty to ſet up a King of their own, but they were quickly ſuppreſſed by *Quintilius Varus* who afterward was killed in Germany; he with three legions, and Arabians Auxiliaries appeaſed them, and crucified about 2000 of the rebels. Much about this time Chriſt being 12. yeares of
3982. age diſputed with the Doctors in the Temple. *Iudas* a Galilean becauſe of the Ro-
A. C. 11. man taxes perſwaded the Jews to deny the payment thereof, teaching that they were a free people, and that no mortall ſhould call himſelf Prince or Lord. Hence began the Sect of the Zelotes, which maintained this doctrine with their lives, forcing men by the ſword to embrace it, in maintaining of which they were ſo ſtiffe, that no torments could force them nor their children to recant.

Chap. X.

The life and death of Tiberius *and* Sejanus, *with their cruelties.* 2. *The baptiſm, life, and death, reſurrection and aſcenſion of Chriſt.* 3. *How the Goſpell began to ſpread.*

3985. *Tiberius* the ſon of *Livia*, and ſon in law to *Auguſtus* married with *Iulia* the
A. C. 14. daughter of *Auguſtus* whom afterward he ſtarved with hunger: his former wife which he divorced was *Agrippina* daughter to that *Atticus*, to whom *Cicero* wrote his book of Epiſtles; he had 2 years before *Auguſtus* his death, adopted *Germanicus* his brother *Druſus* ſon, he concealed the death of *Auguſtus*, till he had made away with young *Agrippa* his onely nephew left, who might have hindred his ſucceſſion: he made ſhew of unwillingneſſe to accept the Empire, ſhewing truly yet diſſemblingly, what a dangerous beaſt it was, but this was onely to ſound the Senators affections towards him, that ſo he might ruine them; and indeed he caught many ſimple meaning men, with his bait of diſſimulation, therefore not without cauſe did his Tutor perceiving his ſanguinary diſpoſition, whileſt he was young call him *clay tempered with bloud*; and becauſe of his intemperate drinking he was nick named *Caldius Biberius Mero*, for *Claudius Tiberius Nero*: and *Auguſtus* did foreſee his nature, when he ſaid, *the Romans ſhould live miſerably under ſuch thin laws*; he was learned, but cruell and covetous, of a diſſembling nature, frowning on thoſe whom he loved, and fawning on thoſe whom he hated: he was better at extemporary, then premeditate counſels. Out of his pretended modeſty, he would not at firſt be called Emperor, nor *Pater Patriæ*, and becauſe he knew that the armies would have had *Germanicus* to be Emperor, which he modeſtly refuſed, he ſubmitted himſelf to the Senates election; he paſſed by injurious language, ſaying that *in a free State tongues ſhould be free*. In all things he ſubmitted himſelfe to the Senate, and ſpeaking againſt heavy taxes, he ſaid: *that good ſhepheards uſe to ſhaer, not to flay their ſheep*. He was ſevere againſt adultery and robbery, and inſurrections, and either ſuppreſſed or reſtrained the abuſe of Sanctuaries.

At a certain Funerall one cryed out aloud, deſiring the dead corps to tell *Auguſtus* that his legacies which he left to the people were not paid, by *Tiberius*, who preſently apprehends the party, and having paid him his ſhare commands him to be ſlain, and then to report the truth to his father *Auguſtus*. He reduced the kingdome of Cappadocia after the death of old *Archelaus* into the form of a Province.
A. C. 17. The fourth year of *Tiberius*, *Germanicus* triumphed over divers German nations,
3988. between the Rhene and Albis now called Elbe or Elve; *Druſus Cæſars* ſon is ſent to Germany to be trained up in the wars, and to appeaſe the Germans, now at civil wars amongſt themſelves. At this time 12 cities of Aſia were overthrown with earthquakes; of theſe he repaired Philadelphia, Magneſia, and Apollonia. *Germani-*

manicus in the East endeavoured to re-enthrone *Vonon* the Parthian, thrust out by *Artabanus*, but could not prevail. He made *Zeno* King *Polemons* son of *Pontus* Governour of Armenia, shortly after he is poisoned at Antioch by *Piso*, being secretly incouraged to commit this wickednesse by *Livia Augusta*. *Germanicus* was much lamented being a Prince, milde to his enemies, and curteous to his friends; but *Piso* murthered himself at Rome. *An. Mundi* 3990. *A. C.* 19.

About the 21 year of Christ the image of *Ianus* fell down at Rome, *Tiberius* destroyed the spurious books of the Sibyls, he drove out of the city the wanton solemnities of the Egyptian Isis, as also the Jewish religion, because the wife of *Saturninus* had intercepted great sums of mony, conveyed to Jerusalem; the Jewes were some banished, some killed, he would not yeeld that *Arminius* the Roman enemy should be poysoned, shewing that *the Romans used not to suppresse their enemies by treachery, but by valour*. Yet this *Arminius* was shortly after slaine, by the treachery of his friends. *Cæsar* now being rid of *Germanicus*, began openly to shew his truculent nature, he maintained *Valerius Gratus* President of Palestina in his covetousnesse; who had changed four High Priests in a short time, to wit, *Annas*, *Ismael*, *Eleazer*, and *Simon*, and had now set up *Caiphas*, no lesse cruell then *Tiberius*.

Ælius Sejanus heretofore the catamite of *Apicius* the glutton, who wrote a book of glutony, and having found upon the casting up of his accompts but 100000 Sestertia left for his kitchin, hanged himself; I say this Catamite but now stale and out of date, is by *Tiberius* advanced to great honours, and power, purposely to circumvent and ruine all good men. He used to suborne false witnesses, to entrap honest men, and especially if they were wealthy; so that no good man could live in Rome at that time with any security: the Senat was brought into such a servil condition, that they durst not contradict or deny any thing, though never so unjust, that *Cæsar* or *Sejanus* would have done. *Drusus Tiberius* his only son is poysoned by *Sejanus* his means; because upon a quarrell between them, *Drusus* strook him on the Face, who never left till he had made *Livia* with whom *Sejanus* committed adultery, poyson her husband, upon promises that he would marry her, and that she should have a share in the government: this murther was concealed 8. years together. *Sejanus* seeing this murder succeeds so well, resolves to make away with *Germanicus* sons, who were to succeed next into the Empire: he could not worke any thing upon *Agrippinas* chastity, therefore he goes about to accuse her and her 3 sons of treason: he also falsly accused and condemned *Silius* their friend, as if he intended to poyson the Emperour; but he prevented his tortures by his voluntary death, and self-murther. *Dolobella* desired and deserved the honour of a triumph, for suppressing *Tacfaronas*, who by the help of the King of the Garamantes, committed great outrages in Africa; but *Sejanus* denyed him this honour, and conferred it on *Iunius Blesus*, his uncle, who had not defeated and killed the enemy as *Dolobella* did: he countenanceth and rewardeth informers, he animates the son to accuse the father. *Q. Vibius Cerenus* was falsly accused by his own son, that he meant to raise war in Gallia, and to destroy the Prince. *Cecilius Cornutus*, once Pretor, being also falsly accused of sending many to raise a rebellion, killed himself. *Cremutius Cordus* was accused for praysing *M. Brutus* in his *Annales* which he published, and for saying that *Cassius* was the last of the Romans, who after he had cleered him self, went out of the Senate and ended his life by abstinence. Order was given by the Senate that the Aediles should burn his books, which notwithstanding were preserved. centies HS. 3994. *A. C.* 23.

About this time *Poppæus Sabinus* subdued the High-land Thracians for refusing to muster their best souldiers for the service of the Romans. *Sejanus* petitioneth *Cæsar* that he might marry with *Livia*, which being denyed him, he perswadeth him to remove himself from the City tumults, and to solace himselfe with a private and quiet life in some pleasant place far from Rome. By this means he knew that his own power should be the greater; that no accesse could be had to the Emperour, nor no letters sent but by the souldiers, which were at his devotion: hee made shew of friendship to *Agrippina*, and told her that she should beware of eating

An. Mund. or drinking with her father in law, who meant to poyson her, but she not knowing how to dissemble, could not be perswaded at table, either to eat or drink; or be cheerful. *Tiberius* commending the goodnesse of the Apples that were set down before him, gave one of them to his daughter in law, which she would not taste, but delivered it to one of the waiters.

Cæsar pretending to dedicate a Temple to *Jupiter* at Capua, and another to *Augustus* at Nola, removed to Campania, purposely to be far from the City, that so the suspition of his cruelties and oppression might be concealed, in respect of place, though not of deeds: that he might make his majesty more terrible by that great distance; and to avoid his mothers company, whom he had made his colleague in his government: therefore he shut him self up in the Isle of Capreæ; where hee stayed not long, being recalled by the people thence, upon the fal of an Amphitheater at Fidenæ, where 50000 men were slain. He having shewed himselfe to the people, returned again to the Island, where he remained 11. years; in all which time there were no Presidents of the Provinces, nor Tribunes of the souldiers changed. Spain and Syria were some years without Cousular Legats, or Leivetenant Deputies, he suffered *Artabanus* the Parthian to possesse Armenia, the Dacians and Sarmatians to wast Mesia and the Germans to spoil Gallia, to the great dishonour and danger of the Empire.

The beginning of the year was polluted by the shameleſse murther of *Titius Sabinus* an honorable Gentleman, for his affection to *Germanicus*, and his family, he was entrapped by *Latiaris* and others to speake some words in commendation of *Germanicus*, the afflictions of whose family he bewayled; as also the misgovernment of *Sejanus*. Vpon this he is presently accused, condemned, and haled to Tiberis with his garment turned over his head, where he was drowned, though his dog in the water strove to keep his masters body from sinking, but in vain, this was done on the Calends of January: not long after died *Iulia Augusta*, or *Livia Tiberius* his mother; who neither did visit her in her sickneſse, nor with his presence honour her funerall, on which he would suffer no cost to be bestowed as the Senat had intended; she being gone who held in the exorbitances of *Tiberius* and *Sejanus*; now a gate is opened for all wickedneſse and oppression. Men durst not visit or confer with their neighbours and friends, for fear of suspition. *Agrippina* is accused of plotting with the Army, wherefore she is banished, her eye beat out by a Centurion, and at last famished to death. *Nero* and *Drusus* her sons are also accused as enemies, and both starved with hunger, *Nero* in Pontia an Island in the Tyrrhen Sea, and *Drusus* in the Palace.

3999. *A. C.* 28. Whilest the world groanes under the tyranny of *Tiberius*, *Iohn Baptist* the son of *Zacharias* the High Priest preacheth repentance to the Jewes, and baptizeth them, shewing that the Lambe of God was comming to take away the sinnes of the world, & who should baptize them with water and with the Holy Ghost. Then he

4000. *A. C.* 29. baptizeth Christ in Jordan, who being declared by the voice of God from heaven, and by the sitting of the Holy Ghost upon him in the form of a dove, was carried into the wilderneſse to be tempted by Satan, whom having foiled he goeth to Galilee, and chooseth his Disciples, with whom he goeth to Cana, and there at a marriage turneth water into wine: thence to Jerusalem, and at the Feast of Easter

4001. *A. C.* 30. purgeth the Temple of buyers and sellers: from thence he goeth again into Galilee, when he understood that *Iohn* was cast into prison by *Herod Antipas*, for reproving his incest with his brother *Philips* wife, taxing the ingratitude of his country, he goeth to Capernaum, where he heals a Rulers son, *Peters* mother in law, with many others, thence going about into other cities, he preacheth the Gospell, and worketh miracles.

4002. *A. C.* 31. The next year he went up to the Feast of Easter: then he cured him that lay at the pool of Bethesda 38 years. He vindicates his Disciples from breaking the Sabbath. He sends abroad his Apostles to preach and cure diseases. He heals the Centurions servant, and restores the widows son at Naim to life: so he did the daughter of *Iairus*, he casteth out divels, and rebuketh the windes. In the mean time *Herod* at the intreaty of *Herodias*, beheadeth *Iohn Baptist*, for which cruelty he was justly punished

punished with the terrour of an evill conscience, thinking Christ had been then risen again from the dead, and with the losse of his Army, defeated by *Aretas* king of Arabia. *Easter* drawing neer Christ retires to the Desart, where he fed 5000 men, besides women and children, with five barly loaves and two fishes; having left twelve baskets full of crums; upon this they would have made him king; shortly after he fed 4000 men with seven loaves. He foretels his Disciples of their persecutions and deaths. Then he transfigured himself on mount Thabor; and after that he informes his Apostles of the nature of his kingdome, and that they should not lord it over others, as worldly kings doe over their subjects. *An. Mundi* 4003. *A. C.* 32.

About the end of his third year, Christ went up to Jerusalem to the Feast of Tabernacles; then he sendeth abroad 70 other Disciples to preach and work miracles: he sharply reproveth the corrupt manners of the Jews. Then he raiseth *Lazarus* being 4 days dead: Whereupon multitudes follow him riding to Jerusalem, with olive branches and palms in their hands. Then he whipt the buyers and sellers out of the Temple. *Caiphas* and his father in law *Annas*, hired *Iudas* to betray his Master; which he did for 30 peeces of silver, in the night time whilest Christ was at his devotion: who with his word made the souldiers that came to apprehend him, fall back to the ground. Then being carried to the High Priest, he was accused by him, and the Elders of sedition; *Pilat* would have absolved him, but durst not; fearing the displeasure of *Tiberius*; therefore he condemned him to be crucified, for saying he was a king. But the miracles at his death, and his glorious Resurrection the 3. day, his 40 days conversation with his Disciples, and his ascension to heaven, shew; that he was a king indeed; but not of this world. Therefore the better to advance his spirituall kingdome, eleven days after his ascension, on the day of Pentecost, he sends downe on his Apostles assembled in an upper roome, the Holy Ghost in form of cloven firy tongues, so that they all began to speak divers languages, preaching Christ; so that at *Peters* first Sermon 3000. afterward 5000 were converted, the Priests and Elders storming at this, imprisoned and whipt the Apostles, and stoned *Steven*; but to no purpose: for the Gospell still increased, and *Saul* the great persecutor is converted, and becomes a fervent preacher; so in 7 yeers space was confirmed the covenant made to *Abraham* & his posterity: which now *Peter*, *Paul*, *Iohn*, *Philip*, and *Barnabas*, began to communicate to the Gentiles: and so according to *Daniels* Prophecy the 70 weeks are finished the dayly sacrifice ended, sin is abolished, and everlasting righteousnesse established. 4004. *A. C.* 33. 4005. *A. C.* 34.

At Rome such cruelties were exercised by *Sejanus*, that many brave men killed themselves: his flatterers sacrificed to him, as well as to *Tiberius*, and swore by his Genius. So great was his power, that *Tiberius* grew jealous of him; therefore he sent letters privately to the Senat, to imprison *Sejanus*, which was done accordingly, by *Regulus* the Consul, and *Laco* captain of the watch. His Images are broken down and melted. He was flung down from the top of the Gemonian ladders, and his body dragged up and down the streets by the people 3 days together: his children were condemned to die. His daughter which was promised to *Claudius* his son, is first defloured by the hangman, then strangled; for it was not lawfull to put a virgin to death. All his friends were either slain, or banished, or disgraced; and his body flung at last into Tibris. After his death *Tiberius* was more cruell then before, by which it appeared that *Sejanus* was but the instrument of his cruelty. The Statue of liberty notwithstanding is erected in the Forum; a presage that Rome should be ere long freed from *Tiberius* his tyranny; who being desired by *Gallus Asinius* whom he had condemned to dy, that he would hasten his death he answered: *I am not yet friends with you.*

The reasons that moved *Tiberius* to destroy his favorite were many. *viz.* dangerous words from *Sejanus* against the Prince: his causing of him to retire to Capreæ: his great power: his marriage with *Livia Drusus* widow: his ruining of the house of *Germanicus*: his great train of servants: his desire to be Tribune; and for that he held *Drusus* prisoner, and *C. Cæsar* at his mercy: and yet *Tiberius* suspected and hated *Cajus*: at last he dyed, the 78 year of his age, having reigned 23. Some thinke he was poysoned by *Cajus*; others, that he was stifled by *Macro* Colonell of the

An. Mundi. Guards and *Cajus* his creature. Which *Tiberius* perceived when he told *Macro*, that he did *well to look towards the Sun rising*. *Tiberius* was a wicked Prince, hated and feared of his people; and so fearfull himselfe by reason of his guilty conscience, that he trembled still when it thundred; so that then usually he wore a bay garland, he was wont to call King *Priamus happy, for surviving all his children*. His body was carryed by the Souldiers to Rome, and there solemnly burned: The people cursing him, and wishing the *Manes* or Gods of the dead, not to admit his soule in the company of the just.

CHAP. XI.

1. *The life and death of* Caligula, *and of the Roman and Jewish affaires under him.* 2. *The life and death of* Claudius, *and of all the memorable accidents in Rome, Parthia, Judea, and elsewhere under him.* 3. *Of* Agrippa *and* Antipas.

4008. C. *Cæsar Caligula* so called from the buskin or shoe he wore in the campe, where he was born, was begot of *Germanicus* the son of *Drusus*; his mother was *Agrippina Augustus* his Neece; the daughter of *Agrippa*. His succession was joyfull to Rome, wearied with the insolencies of *Tiberius*: & because of the great love the City bore to *Germanicus* poysoned by *Piso*, whose death was much lamented by the Romans. His parents and brothers were murthered by *Tiberius*. It was said of *Caligula*, that he was a good servant, but a bad master; for he was very obsequious to *Tiberius*. At first he shewed some tokens of goodnesse by calling home the banished and condemned Citizens, and freely pardoning them. By giving full power to the Senat to determine all matters without appeal to him. He slighted the information of a plot intended against him, saying, he feared no plots, having never wronged any man hitherto. He banished *Antipas* to Lions with his concubin *Herodias*, being accused of oppression by *Agrippa*.

But he was an enemy to Christ, in persecuting him in his members, whom *Tiberius* would have honoured as a God, when he desired the Senat to admit him among their Gods. *Cajus* also commanded his own image, with those of the heathen Gods to be erected in the Temple of Jerusalem. He persecuted the Jews, & rejected
4010. their Petition, and *Philo* their agent: he bestowed on *Herod Agrippa* golden fetters in lieu of his iron ones, because he wished the sudden death of *Tiberius* who imprisoned him, and the succession of *Caligula*; then made him king over *Philips* and *Lysinias* tetrarchy: he erects a temple to himself, and in it his own image, which he clothed dayly in the same habit he went in himself; he would make shew of conference with *Jupiter*, as if he had been his equall. He appointed Priests and solemne sacrifices for himself. He commanded *Petronius* President of Judæa to dedicate the Temple of Jerusalem to his deity: which upon the Jews importunity *Petronius* refused to doe; wherefore he is condemned to dye by *Cajus*. But before he heard of this sentence *Cajus* was slain. He threatned destruction to the Jews of *Alexandria* being accused by *Appion* the Grammarian; but *Philo* pleaded for their innocency, and comforted them with the assurance of Gods assistance when mans help is furthest off; which fell out to be true upon the death of this monster, who
4011. spared not his own brother *Tiberius*, whom he murthers treacherously by a Tri-
A. C. 40. bune. He caused *M. Silanus* his father in law to cut his own throat: he deflowred his three sisters: he banished *Agrippina* and *Livilla*, he murthered *Macro* and his wife *Ennia*: Having condemned at one time some Gauls, and some Greeks, he bragged that he had subdued Gallogræcia.

This tyrants whole pleasure was in shedding of bloud, and tormenting of men with lingring deaths, commanding them so to be slain that they might feele themselves dye. His wish was, that all the Romans had but one neck that he might strike it off at one blow. Whose common phrase was, Let *them hate me so they fear me*. He complained that in his time there were no publick calamities, as fire, pestilence, famine, earthquakes. All kind of carnall pollution he exercised publikely in his palace.

lace. He ſpent above a 100 and 20000 Seſtertia in one yeer idly; that being ſpent he raiſeth intolerable taxes, and perſecutes all rich men for their wealth & fils the city with bawdy houſes for gain. He threatens Germany & Britanny with war: he made a bridge of ſhips over the Bay of *Baiæ* almoſt four miles long. He threatned Gallia with a war, but imployed his ſouldiers to gather and fill their helmets with ſhels and pible ſtones, returning in triumph to Rome for plundering Neptune. He bragged that he turned Sea into Land, and day into night, when he built his bridge and beſet it on both ſides with torches in the dark. He intended to have murthered all his chief Senators and Knights, and then to remove to *Alexandria* or *Antium*; for in his cloſet were found two ſcroles containing the names of the chief Senators and Knights, the one he called the ſword, the other, the dagger; he had alſo a great cheſt full of all ſort of poyſons, which being caſt into the Sea poiſoned the fiſh. But he was ſuddenly cut off himſelf by *Chærea Caſſius*, and *Corn. Sabinus* Tribunes, who gave him 30 wounds; ſtabbed his wife *Cæſonia*, and beat out the braines of his young daughter. He lived 29 yeares, and reigned or raged rather 3 years and 10 moneths. *An. Mundi.* 4012. *A. C.* 41.

In the mean while the Goſpell ſpreads. *Paul* confuteth the Jews in their Synagogues: he is commanded the 3 year of his Apoſtleſhip to preach to the Gentiles; and ſo is carryed by *Barnabas* to Cilicia; & *Peter* is ſent to *Cornelius* whom he converts with his whole family. But Satan beſtirs himſelfe to hinder the worke of Chriſt, and cauſeth the Dragon with 7 heads and 10 horns to oppoſe the woman. About this time *Pilat* being thruſt out of his office by *Vitellius* the Governour of Judea, murthers himſelf. And *Caiphas* was forced to reſign the Prieſthood to *Ionathan* the ſon of *Annas*. *Antipas* and *Herodias* dyed miſerably, and in want; he was baniſhed for keeping correſpondency with the Parthian, his Tetrarchy is given to *Agrippa* his accuſer; ſo that now he hath Judea, Samaria and Cæſarea ſubject to him.

So hatefull was the miſgovernment of *Tiberius*, that the Senat met in the Capitol, to aboliſh the Cæſarean family, and to aſſert their former liberty. But the ſouldiers made *Claudius* the ſon of *Druſus* and Uncle to *Caligula* Emperor, as he was hiding of himſelf. For which favour he promiſed to each ſouldier 40 Seſtertia, which may be about 350 crownes. He was but a ſimple and fooliſh man, otherwayes he had not eſcaped the cruelty of his Vncle *Tiberius*, nor the fury of his brothers ſon *Caligula*: and this benefit his folly afforded to the State; that he being of a timerous and flexible nature, ſuffered himſelf to be ruled by wiſe men. Who cauſed him for example ſake put *Chærea*, (who was alſo called *Caſſius*,) to death. *Sabinus* the other Tribune killed himſelf. He repealed all the Acts of *Cajus*: he reſtored the Senat to their authority: he mitigated the rigour of ſome laws: he cauſed thoſe ſlaves to be made free, who in their ſickneſſe were neglected or expoſed by their Maſters; and he took away the power of life and death which they had over the ſlaves: he puniſhed the ingratitude of manumiſſed ſervants with the loſſe of their liberty. He was a lover of learning, and learned him ſelfe both in Greek and Latin hiſtories. He was not ſuch a monſter as *Caligula*, who would have aboliſhed *Homer* and *Virgil*. He confined the Roman bounds, Eaſtward with Euphrates, Northward with the Rhene, and Danubius, and Southward, with the Mauritanians: He went in perſon, and ſubdued the Britains, and added the Orcades to the Roman Empire. 4012. *A. C.* 41.

Agrippa uſed all means to make the Jews faithfull to him, at Jeruſalem he was a ſtrict obſerver of the Jewiſh Religion: he removed firſt *Theophilus*, then *Simon* from the Prieſthood, and conferred it upon *Matthias* the brother of *Ionathan*: he hung up in the Temple of Jeruſalem the golden fetters ſent him by *Cajus*. And to pleaſe the Jews he beheaded *Iames* the brother of *Iohn*, and impriſoned *Peter*, intending to murther him at Eaſter; but an angel delivered him. The 3 yeare of *Claudius* at Antioch Chriſts followers were called Chriſtians. *Agrippa* in the midſt of his glory at Cæſarea, whileſt the people in flattery called him God, was ſo ſtruck with a loathſome diſeaſe, that in 5 days he died, being conſumed with lice and vermin, the 44. year of Chriſt, to whom ſucceeded *Cuſpius Fadus* in Judæa. For *Agrip-* 4013. 4014. *A. C.* 43.

An. Mundi pa's ſon was not yet fit for government. The famine foretold by *Agabus*, about this time was great, every where, but *Helena* queen of Adiabene a country in Aſſyria helped the Chriſtians with money to buy corn: Then it was that *Theudas* a falſe Meſſias, raiſed 400 Jews againſt the Romans, but the tumult was quickly appeaſed, the rout routed, and he killed: Then *Matthew* wrote his Goſpell. *Paul* and *Barnabas* converted *Sergius Paulus* the Roman Pro-conſul in Cyprus to the Faith. And ſtruck *Elymas* the Sorcerer with blindneſſe. Then was *Paul* caught into the third Heaven, and ſhortly after he with *Barnabas* preach the Goſpell through all Aſia. So doe *Iudas* and *Sylvanus*.

At Rome *Claudius* is in danger of his life by the tumultuous people, for want of corn, ſo that he incouraged the Merchants, and provided ſhips for importation of proviſion. He repaired Oſtia the port town to Rome, built by *Ancus Martius*. Hee made the great *Aquæducts* called from him *Aquæ Claudiæ*, furniſhing the City with water, whoſe ſprings were 40 miles off. But he was unhappy in his wife *Meſſalina*, an inſatiable beaſt, committing uncleanneſſe without ſhame or moderation with people of both ſexes: which occaſioned *Claudius* to give himſelf alſo to unlawfull pleaſures and luſts: and whileſt he was at Oſtia with his Concubines, ſhe at Rome publickly marryed with *C. Silius*: for which cauſe hee put her to death: and withall aboliſhed all ſtrange religions in Italy, and ſuppreſſed the Druides, and advanced the ancient Aruſpices.

In Parthia were great civill wars. *Gotharzes* intending to kill his brother *Artabanus* invaded the kingdome. The Parthians fearing his cruelty ſet up his other brother *Bardanes*; who having raiſed an army meant to march as ſoon as he had taken Seleucia, which he was then beſieging: But in the mean while *Gotharzes* ſtrengthened himſelfe, and *Meherdates* King of Aſſyria did ſeiſe upon Armenia. But ſhortly after common danger made the brothers friends. *Bardanes* is hindred by *Vibius Marſus* Legat of Syria, from Armenia: he was afterward killed by his own followers, as he was hunting. *Gotharzes* for his riotouſneſſe is hated of the Parthians, who weary of his tyranny, ſend private petitions to *Claudius*, beſeeching him to eſtabliſh *Meherdates* the ſon of *Phraates*, in his Fathers dignity.

4018. *A. C.* 47. Whereas the ſecular ſolemnities were wont to be acted but once in 100 years, which is the age of a man; yet *Claudius* cauſed them to be proclaimed ſixty eight, others ſay ſixty three years after they had been acted by *Auguſtus*. About this time *Claudius* placeth a King over the Cheruſci, a people in Germany, who was deſcended of *Arminius*, but bred in Italy. He ſends *Corbulo* to ſuppreſſe the rebelling Friſians. The *Hedui* in Gallia (now the ſeat of the Burgundians) had the priviledge of Senators in Rome. The army being purged and muſtered, which was called in Rome *condere luſtrum*; and was performed every fift year, there were found at this time 69 hundred, and 44 thouſand Citizens. *Meſſalina* being dead, *Claudius* his free men ruled there; chiefly *Poſidio* his Eunuch; *Polybius*, whom he ſet between the Conſuls; *Pallas*, whom he honoured with Pretorian robes, and *Narciſſus* his Secretary. When he complained of the poverty of his Exchequer, it was anſwered, that he ſhould be rich enough, if his *Liberti* or Free-men would admit him into their company. Theſe tyranniſed over the people, and cauſed the old man to fall in love with his brothers daughter *Iulia Agrippina*. *Pallas* the maker of this inceſtuous match having had the uſe of her body, cauſed *Claudius* to adopt her ſon by *Domitius Aenobarbus*; he was called *Nero*, & became both ſon and ſon in law to *Claudius*, to the overthrow of *Germanicus*, whom he begot of *Meſſalina*. This *Agrippina* ſent a Colonie to that City of the *Vbii*, which from her was called *Colonia Agrippina*. Upon a ſecond tumult of the people for want of corn, *Claudius* hardly eſcaped with his life. In his reign, ſaith *Pliny*, was ſeen the *Phœnix* in Egypt; but *Tacitus* will have it in the reign of *Tiberius*, which was the 34 year of Chriſt, ſhortly after his reſurrection, who is the true Phoenix. But I have elſewhere proved that the Phœnix is no fabulous bird.

4021. *A. C.* 51.

Exercit. in Gene.

Fado being Governour of Judæa of a Jew became a Gentile, under his ſucceſſor *Ventidius*; an impudent ſouldier, ſhewing his naked genitals in deriſion to the

Jews

Jews, raiſed ſuch a ſedition at the feaſt of unleavened beard, that in it 20000 Jews were ſlain. *Meherdates* hoping by the help of *Cajus Caſſius* to obtain Parthia, and failing of that aid which was promiſed by the *Adiabeni* and *Edeſſens*, fell into the hands of *Gotarzes*; who cut off his ears, after *Gotarzes* ſucceeded *Vonones* who lived obſcurely; his ſon *Vologeſes* ſucceeded. The Jews and Samaritans inveterate enemies, were animated by their Governours, *Cumanus* preſident of Judæa, and *Felix* of Samaria, to moleſt each other by inroades, which they did, ſometimes ſpoiling and killing each other in ambuſhes, ſometimes in open battell. But *Quadratus* the Governour of Syria ſet the Province at quietneſſe, and revenged the death of the Roman ſouldiers, then being authorifed by *Claudius* to puniſh the Procurators if guilty. He condemned *Cumanus*, but advanced *Felix* into the Tribunall among the Judges, though both were equally guilty. *Cumanus* is ſent to Rome with *Ananias* the High Prieſt, and *Ananus* the Captain. *Claudius* the 12 year of his reign beſtowed Iurea and Trachonitis on *Agrippa* the younger. *Felix* preſuming on his brother *Palla's* greatneſſe intiſed *Druſilla* from her husbands bed, and marryed her. *Aziri* king of *Emeſa* was her husband. *An. Mundi.*

About this time *Claudius* baniſheth the Jews out of the City, for raiſing tumults againſt the Christians. With them *Aquila* and *Priſcilla* of Jewes now made Christians, are forced to fly to Corinth; where *Paul* met them, having preached in Macedonia to the Philippians and Theſſalonians. At Athens *Paul* converted or at leaſt confirmed *Dionyſius* the Areopagite, in the Faith by his doctrine and miracles. From thence he wrote to the Theſſalonians, at Corinth he found *Silas* and *Timothy* returned from Macedonia, and being much oppoſed he preached the Goſpell to the Greeks. In the 13. year of *Claudius* a Sow brought forth a Pig, having the ſharpe talons of an hawke. Which portended *Nero* that ſhortly ſucceeded, for he was a rapacious tyrant, and the ſonne of a Strumpet. *Agrippina* being affrighted at a ſpeech let fall from *Claudius* in his drink, which was, that it was fatall for him to bear with his wives lewdneſſe, and then puniſh them, ſhee infuſed poyſon into a Muſhrome, in which he delighted much, and becauſe he had then a looſeneſſe, which might hinder the operation of the poyſon, ſhe procured *Xenophon* the Phyſitian to thruſt a feather down his throat dipt in ſtrong poiſon; pretending it would make him vomit: ſo he dyed in the 64 year of his age, having reigned 13 years and 9 moneths. Shee concealed his death, till *Nero* his ſon in law had ſtrengthened himſelf in the Empire. 4020. 4020. *A. C.* 50. 4025. *A. C.* 55.

In his time *Helena* Queen of Adiabene was converted: ſo was *Izates* the King, and *Abbas* king of Edeſſa. *Philip* the Apoſtle was crucified at Hierapolis in Aſia for preaching Chriſt, and then was ſtoned to death. *Simon Magus* was honoured with a Statue, and the title of *Holy God*. And yet the Mathematicians were driven out of the City, for their juggling tricks; and who a greater juggler then *Simon Magus*? *Paul* eſcaped ſtoning at Lyſtra. *Peter* reſtores dead *Tabitha* to life. In the Ægean Sea there ſtarted up an Iſland of 30 Stades. *Claudius* cauſed the lake Fucinus now called *Lago do Marſo* to be drawn dry, by the dayly toile of 30000 workmen, but to no purpoſe. In his time alſo departed the Virgin *Mary*, being 59 years old. *Peters* wife was martyred; and the Synod of the Apoſtles held the 16. year after Chriſts reſurrection, and the 8. year of *Claudius* his reigne.

CHAP. XII.

1. *The wicked life and death of* Nero. 2. *The affairs of Germany, Britain, Parthia, and Armenia at that time.* 3. *The miſerable condition of Judæa, Galilee, &c.*

NERO the laſt and worſt of all the *Cæſars* (for he outrun *Caligula* his Vncle in all kinde of wickedneſſe) began his reign the 55 year of Chriſt, he being 4025. *A. C.* 55. then

An. Mundi. then 17 years of age he commits the government of all things to his mother. He ſolemniſed the Funerals of *Claudius*. He made great ſhew of a vertuous Prince for 5 years, promiſing he would be another *Auguſtus*. He either remitted or mitigated heavy taxes. When being deſired to ſubſcribe to the condemnation of one, who was to ſuffer; his anſwer was: *I wiſh I could not write.* *Burrhus* was his tutor for military affaires, *Seneca* for Philoſophy and Oratory: In his childhood he learned all the liberall Arts. But his Mother kept him back from the ſtudy of Philoſophy, affirming (but fooliſhly, and like her ſelfe) that it was repugnant to princely Government: and that *Seneca* might make his own Oratory the more admired by *Nero*, he hindred him from reading the ancient Orators; therefore he applyed himſelf to painting, graving, ſinging, and verſifying.

Under *Nero* Pontus was made a Province, he began to ſhake off his mother for reproving his doating upon *Acte* the freed woman. He removed *Pallas* her favorite, and match maker with *Claudius*, from all Government; and being jealous of *Britannicus* the true ſon of *Claudius*, who was now 14 years old, and of a towardly diſpoſition, and whom *Agrippina* threatned to eſtabliſh in the Empire, *Nero* by the help of *Locuſta* a naughty woman, poyſoned him; who falling down dead at the drinking thereof, made all at the table amazed: but *Nero*, as if he knew nothing, gave out that he was ſubject to the Falling ſickneſſe. But the ſame night he cauſed his body to be burned, and to be buried in *Campus Martius*; at which time there were ſuch ſtorms and ſhowres, that the people took this for an evill preſage: he rewarded *Locuſta*. Then he went about in ſervill apparell, among the bawdy houſes, where he received many a knock, which he bore patiently, becauſe he would not diſcover himſelf. He allowed to *Valerius Maſſala*, and other decayed gentlemen yearly ſtipends. Wars between the Romans and the Parthians increaſed dayly, under *Domitius Corbulus* about Armenia, which had been conquered by *Lucullus* and *Pompey*, but now fallen off. At laſt *Tiridates* King thereof was by the help of *Antiochus Comagenus*, and *Pharaſmenus* forced to yeeld to *Corbulo* after he had taken Artaxata the chiefe City, and evened it with the ground.

4033. *A. C.* 63. After this *Nero* being taken with the love of *Poppæa* firſt made her his Concubine (her husband *Salvius Otho* conſenting to it) then he marryed her, having firſt murthered his own wife *Octavia* the daughter of *Claudius*. About this time the Friſian Embaſſadours at Rome, perceiving that in *Pompeys* Amphitheater the Embaſſadours of thoſe Nations who were faithfull to Rome, ſat among the Senators; they alſo ſat down, ſaying that no nation was more faithfull to Rome then the German, which was taken well by the ſpectators. About the ſame time alſo the Hermunduri quarrelling with the Catti, both being German people about Salt pits, the Catti were overthrown. *Poppæa* often ſolicited *Nero* to make away his mother, as if ſhe intended his death. Therefore he put her in a ſhip that could eaſily fall a ſunder in the Sea; but having eſcaped that danger, he cauſed *Anicetus* his freed man to murther her. At which horrid act the Sunne ſodainly was darkened, and at Rome a woman was brought to bed of a Snake, and *Nero* himſelf tortured with an evill conſcience, and with the ghaſtly ſights of his mothers ghoſt, perſuing him with whips and firebrands; he gave himſelfe after this to all uncleanneſſe, and cruelty: For he cauſed himſelf to be marryed in the manner and apparrell of a Virgin. Upon the ſight of a Comet, he cauſed many of the Nobility to be murthered, ſaying, that Comets uſually portend Mortality. He uſed to fiſh with golden nets, and to waſh himſelf in pretious ointments. He uſed to ſing to the harp, and to be ſtill exerciſed in the race of chariots. But in the midſt of his jollity, whileſt *Paulinus* was taking in of Mona or Angleſey, the Britains invade the Roman Colony at Camalodunum or Maldon in Eſſex, where 70000 Romans and their aſſociates were killed, but *Paulinus* returning with an army of 10000 killed 80000 Britains. His ſucceſſour *Turpilianus* lived idly without acting any thing.

At Rome 400 ſlaves are killed, becauſe *Pedianus* the town Præfect was murthered by a ſlave. *Burrhus* is poyſoned by *Nero*, by which *Seneca's* power was much

much weakened. *Pallas* also is poysoned; *Octavia*'s head is brought into the city by *Anicetus* who killed *Agrippina*, and great solemnity is used in the Temples; the base and degenerated Senat in the interim applauding and flattering *Nero* in all his actions. *Cæsennius Paetus* who basely yeelded Armenia to *Vologeses* the Parthian, was pardoned by *Nero*. But *Corbulus* forced *Tiridates* to lay down his regal diadem at the feet of *Nero*'s image, and to receive it from *Cæsars* hand. *Nero* also was the first that persecuted the Christians openly in the 10 year of his reign. *Paul* is accused by the Jews before the Deputy of *Achaja*, and is by him absolved. From thence he went to Ephesus, then to Jerusalem, and then at Antioch he told *Peter*, that none should be compelled to Judaism who had submitted themselves to Christ: having confirmed the Disciples through Galatia and Phrygia, he returneth to Ephesus where he layeth his hands on the 12 men whom *Apollos* had baptized; and they spake with firy tongues. Then he disputed in the school of *Tyrannus*, and by handkerchers and aprons he wrought miracles confirming the Gospell in Asia. So that the books of Exorcists were burned, and the worship of *Diana* at Ephesus overthrowne; at which *Demetrius* the Silver-smith stormed, and raised a tumult, out of which *Paul* escaped, and went to Macedonia, leaving there *Timothy*, to whom he wrote an Epistle, and another to *Titus* Bishop of Crete. After this he wrote to the Corinthians from Philippi, 4024.
he thought to have returned to Ephesus, but being in danger of the Jews, goeth again to Macedonia. Thence by *Titus* and *Luke* he writes again to the Corinthians, and from thence to the Romans. In his journey at Troas he restores *Eutychus* to life, then at Jerusalem he was set upon by the Jews, but was rescued by *Claudus Lysias*: and comforted by Christ himselfe. Hee pleads before *Claudius*, *Felix* and *Drusilla*. But *Felix* is afrighted at the last judgement; being guilty of the murther of *Ionathan* the High Priest, and of his own incontinent life.

Felix having set up *Ismael* a tyrant in *Ionathans* Pontificall chair, and having 4026.
delivered over *Paul* bound to his successour *Portius Festus*, to please the Jewes whom he had offended; he is called home to Rome, where he had justly suffered for his misgovernment, but that his brother *Pallas* by his greatnesse protected him. *Festus* sends *Paul* to Rome, as himself desired, whither he arrived the next year after his shipwrack, and is committed to the charge of *Afranius Burrhus*. He lived two years in his own house with his keeper: in which time he converted some Jews. From thence he wrote to the Galatians and Ephesians. He 4028.
sends abroad divers Disciples; cals *Timothy* and *Mark* out of Asia: He wrote to the Philippians by *Epaphroditus*, to the Colossians, and to *Philemon* by *Tychicus*, shewing that he hoped to be set free by *Nero*, who troubled not himself with any religion, but with that of the goddesse *Syria*. By *Timothy* also *Paul* wrote to the Hebrews: being delivered out of the mouth of the Lion, and dismissed after two years confinement by *Nero*. He goeth to Asia with *Luke*, who then wrote the Acts of the Apostles: he taught also in Macedonia, Italy, Spain, and other places. *Peter* was at this time in Rome, who came thither the second year of *Claudius*. Here he wrote his two Epistles. *Paul* returns again to Rome, and is beheaded by *Nero*. He had familiarity with *Seneca*. *Peter* with his prayers overcame *Simon* 4038.
Magus, who offering to fly in the air by his Magick, fell down and broke his neck. *A. C.* 68.
Peter is crucified, and many Christians killed upon suspicion that they had set the City on fire, which was done by *Nero* himself. Who whilest the City was on flames sung the *Iliades* of Troy. Many Christians were covered with wild Beasts skins, and cast to dogs to be torn by them; some were burned; *Lucan* the Poet, 4036.
and *Seneca* the Philosopher were slain with many other worthy and innocent men, as if they had been conscious of *Piso*'s conspiracy. *Petronius Arbiter* was killed also. This tyrant banished *Rufus Musonius* the Philosopher with many other brave men; and killed his own wife *Poppæa* being great with child, with a kick of his foot. There did die also in one Autumn 30000 of the Plague.

After this he crowned *Tiridates*, and killed *Corbulo* that conquered him; he went to Greece where he acted the Stage-player, and then attempted to cut the

Isthmus

An. Mundi Isthmus of Peloponnesus. So having wasted the treasure, he fals to exactions and rapine, permitting no rich man to enjoy his own. He spoiled all trading: hee destroyed all his kindred; but the world being weary of 14 years slavery under such a monster, began to cast off the yoak. Wherefore the Gaules under *Iulius Vindex*, and Spain under *Galba* revolted: the news of which being brought to him at Naples, he swounded. He had heard of *Vindex* his revolt the same day he killed his mother. But when he heard that the other armies were fallen off, that *Galba* was marching against him, that he was proclaimed Traitor by the Senat, that he was condemned to have his head set in a fork, and whipt to death; about midnight he stole out of the city, with *Sporus* his Eunuch (to whom he marryed himself, after the death of *Poppæa*) and a few more, hee being also affrighted with an earthquake, and the gastly apparitions of those he murthered, cries out, *have*
4039. *I neither friend nor foe left?* and so fals on his sword, and *Epaphroditus* dispatch-
A. C. 69. eth him the 33 year of his life and the 9 month; the 13 year of his reign and 8 month.

In Judea *Ananias* the son of *Annas* the High Priest put to death with many others, *Iames* the son of *Alphæus* and brother of our Lord, after he had been Bishop of Jerusalem 30 years. *Ananias* being deposed for his lewdnesse, *Agrippa* sets up *Iesus* the son of *Damnæus*, and shortly after another *Jesus* sonne of *Gamaliel*, which caused civill quarrels. *Albinus* governed Iudea a while tyrannically, to whom succeeded *Gessius Florus*, as great an oppressour as the former; who laughed at the Iews Petition which they preferred to *Gallus* Deputy of Syria, against him. *Florus* exasperated the Iews by his sacriledge, and they him by railing and upbraiding speeches, denying to deliver up the chief authors as was demanded, wherefore the souldiers plundered the city and killed divers. The Iewes finding no redresse of their oppressions, about the 12 year of *Nero*, fell upon the castle *Massada*,
4038. and killed all the Romans in it. *Eleazer* Nephew of *Anna* the High Priest who mocked Christ, perswaded the Priests not to sacrifice any more for *Cæsar*. *Agrippa*'s garrison of horse is driven out of the city, and the Roman Garrison contrary to faith and promise murthered. *Ananias* the Priest, with divers others are killed for perswading them to moderation. Upon the sabbath day 20000 Iews are slain at Cesarea. At Alexandria 50000 Iews were destroyed; the Greeks and the Syrians that dwelt among the Jews went to wrack. Thus began the war that utterly ruined the Jewish nation, presaged some yeers before by the Sword comet hanging over the city a whole year; by a sudden light that shined in the Temple for half an hower at Easter; by the brazen east gate of the Temple, which flew open of it self, and a voice was heard, saying: *Depart hence*. Armed men were seen in the air. One *Jesus*
4033. the son of *Ananus* for divers years cryed out *woe to Ierusalem*, and with this woe in his mouth he dyed.

Gallus Governour of Syria, came afore Jerusalem with an Army, but was repulsed with the losse of 5000 foot, and 1000 horse. The Jews encouraged with this successe, leavy new Forces, choose new Commanders, and commit the care of both Galilees to *Ananus* the Priest, and *Iosephus* the son of *Matthias*. But the Christians got out of Judea by times, fearing the sudden ruine of that countrey. *Vespasian* famous for his successe in Britanny and Germany, is sent by *Nero* into Syria. His son *Titus* was his Legat or Deputy. *Sepphoris* the chiefe city of Galilee, opened their gates to *Vespasian*: there quickly he got an army of 60000 out of Ægypt, Syria, and the neighbouring places. *Iosephs* Forces being too weake to make resistance, Gadara is taken, then Japha where 15000 Galileans are slain, the Samaritans on Mount Garizim are defeated by *Sextus Cerealis*, where they lost 11000 and 600. Jotapata after a long siege under *Iosephus*, was taken by *Vespasian* with the losse of 40000 Jews the 13 year of *Nero*. *Iosephus* yeelds himself to *Vespasian*, and is by him kindly used. *Ioppe*, *Tiberias*, *Tarichea* are taken. So great was the slaughter of Galileans, that the whole Lake of Gennasereth was infected with the dead bodies. Above 30000 were sold, 6000 are sent to *Nero*, to dig the Isthmus. *Titus* his horse was slain under him, but having backt an other, he killed his enemy.

Galilee being subdued *Vespasian* intends to fall upon Judea, but resolves to de-

fer

fer the siege of Jeruſalem, becauſe he underſtood by ſome fugitives, that they were *An. Mundi* like to deſtroy one another within the city, which now was the neſt of all unclean birds, and the ſink of theeves and rogues, which had no fear of God before them. The rich went to wrack, the High Prieſt *Ananus* was thruſt out, and one *Phanneas* an ignorant clown put in his place. The people are incenſed againſt the Zelotes, who ſeemed to be moſt eager for their law. Now the Temple is become a den of theeves, and receptacle of all the ſeditious rout. The Zelotes are beſieged, who in the night let in 20000 Idumeans, they fall to skirmiſhing ſo fiercely that 8000 were found dead the next morning. *Ananus* the High Prieſt, and moſt of the prime citizens are killed, beſides 12000 of the meanner ſort. *Veſpaſian* in the mean time ſubdues Peræa driving the Inhabitants before him to Iordan. Whom *Placidus* the Tribune deſtroyed. 15000 were ſlaine by the ſword, beſides unknown multitudes which were drowned in Iordan, and in the dead Sea. But as *Veſpaſian* was preparing to ſet downe before Ieruſalem, newes are brought of *Nero*'s death, which ſomewhat retarded the war.

CHAP. XIII.

1. *The affairs of Rome under* Galba, Otho, Vitellius, Veſpaſian, Titus *and* Domitian. 2. *The utter deſtruction of Jeruſalem, and ſlavery impoſed on the obſtinate Jews.* 3. *Some paſſages of* Parthia, *Armenia, and other parts.*

SErgius *Galba* in Spain was choſen Emperor by the ſouldiers, and confirmed by the Senat. He had been Commander over the German and Spaniſh Forces, but ſo ſevere, that when he came into the campe, they uſed to ſay: *Souldiers learn to fight, this is Galba, not Getulicus.* He was infamous for ſodomy, gluttony and coveтouſneſſe. When the ſouldiers demanded of him a donative, he anſwered that, *Hee uſed to chooſe, not to buy ſouldiers.* Which ſpeech was very diſtaſtfull, for the ſouldiers uſed to receive from their Generalls donatives or military rewards, which was either *Adorea* a meaſure of corn, or a chain, or a bracelet, or horſe-trappings, or *haſta pura*, a ſpear without an iron point; or elſe garlands. Therefore as *Galba* was never too well loved by the ſouldiers, ſo now hee is extreamly hated; and ſo much the more, becauſe he was now altogether ruled by *Cornelius Laco*, *Ti. Vinius*, and *Icelus*, all three infamous; the firſt for pride, the ſecond for covetouſneſſe, and the third for ſluggiſhneſſe. Theſe three in ſcorn were called *Galba*'s pedagogues or tutors. He was ſlain by the ſouldiers in the Forum, as hee came to appeaſe the tumult of *Otho*'s Legions, who would have him to be Emperour, His head was cut off by a private ſouldier, and carryed about on a pole, that *Otho* might ſee it; but he deſired rather to ſee the head of *Licinius Piſo* whom *Galba* had adopted, and thought to have made him his ſucceſſour in the Empire. This head alſo was brought to *Otho*; and *Galba*'s three tutors were killed. Thus ended *Galba* being 73 years old, and having reigned 7 months: the Senat would have erected a ſtatue for him, but *Veſpaſian* hindered it, becauſe he had heard that *Galba* had employed ſome ſouldiers to murther him in Iudæa.

Otho ſucceeded, but reigned not above three months, he perceiving that *Galba* preferred *Piſo* to him; partly by bribes, partly by fair words, induced the ſouldiers being angry with *Galba*, to murther him, and then to confer the Empire on himſelf. But ſhortly after hearing that *Vitellius* was made Emperor in Germany by his ſouldiers; he reſolved to end the controverſie in a battell. Three battels were fought, in which *Otho* had the better: But in the fourth he was defeated; and then out of impatience, he ſlew himſelf, the 38 year of his age, to the great grief of the people, who had great hopes of his good government. He was ſo well beloved of his ſouldiers, that divers of them, looking on his dead body killed themſelves: in his younger years (its thought) he was *Nero*'s Catamit, & rival for *Poppæa*.

Aulus Vitellius returning victor to Rome, was ſaluted Emperor by the Senat. In his younger dayes *Tiberius* made uſe of him for his body, *Cajus* for his skill in charioting

4038. *A. C.* 71. *V. C.* 824.

An. Mundi charrioting, *Claudius* and *Nero* for his cunning in dicing. He was so poor, when he was sent to *Galba* to Germany, that he was fain to let out his house and to shut up his wife and children in a hired chamber: he was so kinde to the souldiers, that they chose him Emperour, but when he was viewing the dead bodies in the camp where *Otho*'s army was defeated, he let fall an unsavoury word more unpleasing to the ear, then the dead carcasses were to the eye: *A slain enemy smels well, but a citizen better.* He made himself perpetuall Consul: he was a notorious glutton. His brother *Vitellius* bestowed a supper on him, at which besides other cheer there were 7000 birds and 2000 fishes. He barborously murthered *Sabinus Vespasians* brother, with all the Flavians in the Temple of the Capitoll, by setting it on fire whilest they were in it; wherefore the Syrian, and Pannonian, and Mæsian souldiers fel off from him to *Vespasian.* As the Spanish had done before to *Galba*, the Prætorian to *Otho*, and and the German to *Vitellius*; who had used all meanes possible to keep the souldiers fast to him, but in vain; wherefore seeing himself circumvented by his enemies, and forsaken by his friends, he hid himself, in the palace, but being drawn out thence, was carried about naked, with his hands bound behinde him, and with the point of a sword his chin held up, that all might see his impu-
4040. dent face, which the people defaced with dung and dirt, and so is dragged to the Gemonian ladders, and there is beat to death with innumerable blowes. Having lived 57 years, and reigned 8 moneths, he with his son and brother are drowned in Tiber.

In this civill war Cremona was burnt and sackt after it had stood 286 years, no thing was left untouched, but the Temple of Mephitis or goddesse of stink, which stood without the wall. In the ciry were killed 50000. In Iudæa fire and sword raged every where, chiefly at Ierusalem. One *Johannes* sonne of *Livius*, and one *Simon*, two seditious ring-leaders filled the Temple with bloud and dead bodies. *Vespasian* understanding the good successe his Army had in Italy against the Vitellians, made hast homeward, and leaves his son *Titus*, with some choice Regiments to subdue Ierusalem; almost subdued by intestine wars.

The short but furious storm of civill war being overblown, there succeeds a sudden serenity under *Flavius Vespasianus*, who had been Deputy in Germany under *Claudius:* and had fought 30 battels with the Britains. One time being in *Nero*'s company he was like to have been killed by him, becausе he gave no better eat to his musick whilest he was singing: as he was concealing of himself from *Nero*'s fury, the government of Iudæa, with an army is conferred on him. Whilest *Otho* and *Vitellius* were tearing the Roman State in peeces, he was incouraged by his friends to undertake the Empire, which he refused, till *Tiberius Alexander* president of Egypt, had revolted to him with his Legions; whose example others followed: and so at last being perswaded by *Mucianus* promising him the aid of his Army, he resolved to venture: the armies of Egypt, Iudæa, Syria, swear allegiance to him. *Sohemus*, *Antiochus*, *Agrippa*, all powerfull Princes and Commanders; Queen *Berenice* also with all the Provinces of Asia and Achaia proffer their assistance; besides he is animated by the priests, Aruspices, and divers prodigies, chiefly of a cypresse tree which fell down, and the next day rose up again of it self in his ground, more green and fragrant then before. *Antonius primus* also a stout Commander under *Galba*, having the command of the 7. Legion, submits to *Vespasian*, with many other Legions. *Julius Sabinus* who had named himself *Cæsar*, lay hid 9 years together under ground in a cave with his wife, by whom he had two sons, this vain man with an army of male-contents, set upon the Sequanians, and is beat by them; in his flight he set the village on fire, where he hid him self a while, so that it was thought he had burnt himself, till now that he was found, and put to death for his folly.

Ierusalem in the mean time is torn with three factions, to wit, of *Simons* and
4401. *Johns* who had the wals and city, and of *Eleazars* in the Temple. Which *John* got possession of, by cutting off *Eleazars* Forces. *Titus* sat down before the wals; the besiegers made divers sallies, but were still beat back with losse: the famine within

within was great; for being the time of unleavened bread, multitudes of people had flocked thither. So great was the famine, that from the midst of Aprill to the first of July, there dyed within the wals above 700000: some were glad to eat their own excrements, some their own children. Many fled out of the city, of which number 2000 in one night had their bellyes ript by the souldiers, thinking they had hid their gold there. At last the city being intrenched round about was taken the 8. of August. And two dayes after the Temple (which *Titus* would have saved but could not) was burned with multitudes of people in it. In one porch there were burned 6000. there dyed in all 11 hundred 1000. Of Captives there were taken 97000, as *Josephus* who was present, witnesseth. *Titus* levelled all with the ground, except a few towers, which hee let stand to witnesse to posterity, the strength of that place. He burned and destroyed by wild beasts 2500 captives. *Ax. Mundi*

Titus returning to Rome had the honour of a Triumph bestowed on his father and him: in this triumph was carryed the golden table, & golden candlestick and the Law, which was laid up afterward in the palace. The two chief actors in the rebellion, *Simon* and *John*, were both beheaded in the Forum. *Cæcilius Bassus* took the two castles Herodion and Machærus, partly by storm, partly by surrender. He slew 3000 that fled into the woods: all the land of Judæa was sold by *Cæsar*, except Emaus, which was bestowed upon 800 souldiers for their habitation. The didrachma or 15 *l.* of our money, which by the law was payable to the Temple by every Jew above 20 years old, is commanded to be brought every year into the Capitoll: the castle Massada which held out last, under Eleazar nephew of *Judas Galilæus*, who had 1000 souldiers in it, was set on fire by *Flavius Sylva*; the garrison within being desperate killed one another, except some children, and two women that hid themselves. So likewise divers Jews having fled to Egypt, suffered all kind of tortures rather then they would acknowledge *Cæsar* for their Lord, who were notwithstanding slaves to their own wills and wickednesse. This obstinacy made *Vespasian* destroy the Jewish Temple at Heliopolis, which had stood 333 years, since it was built by *Onias*. The Jews of Cyrene being seduced by one *Jonathas* an impostor incurred the displeasure of *Catullus* the Governour, who slew 3000 of them; and accused as many more of rebellion both at Rome and Alexandria amongst whom was *Josephus* the historian, but this tyrant miserably died shortly after.

The Alani, a people originally Scythian, about this time breaking through the Caspian straights, which are narrow passages eight miles in length through rocks, but scarse the breadth of a cart, fall upon Media and Armenia with fire and sword, so that *Tiridates* king of Armenia hardly escaped. *Vespasian* denyed to aid the Parthians in this case, being they were not under the protection of Rome. King *Vologeses* in his letter to *Vespasian* cals himselfe king of kings. Which vain title *Vespasian* reproves not, but returns it modestly to him in his answer. Now was *Achaja*, *Lycia*, *Rhodus*, *Byzantium*, *Samos*, *Thracia*, *Cilicia*, *Comagene* made Provinces. In his time divers Cities were overthrown with earthquakes, which he restored. Not long before his death appeared a Comet, which he merrily said portended not his death, but rather the Parthian Kings, who wore long hair.

Vespasian was a wise and moderate Prince. He set all things aright which were amisse. In his time the Temple of *Janus* is shut, which is now the sixt time, since the beginning of Rome. In 120 triumphs, never was it known that the Father and son triumphed in the same chariot till now. Neither since the beginning of the Empire, had any Emperor a son which succeeded him, till *Vespasian*. He passed by many wrongs, he never delighted in any mans death, but sometimes wept, when the sentence of death was pronounced. He loved learned men, and appointed yeerly stipends out of the Exchequer for Rhetoricians of both languages. He placed many Garrisons in Cappadocia to keep out the incursions of barbarous nations: by day he suffered the gates of his Palace to stand open without any guard. He was not moved with the scoffs of *Demetrius Cynicus*, but slighted them, saying; *I use not to kill barking dogs*. Only he was taxed for using so many wayes to raise

An. Mundi money; which he excuſed, by ſhewing how the Treaſures had been exhauſted by the looſneſſe of his predeceſſors: which made him ſell pardons ſometimes, and uſe his officers like ſpunges. When *Titus* reproved him for laying a tax upon urine, holding the money to his noſe, he told him that the money did not ſmell, though the urine did. In his time *Linus* Biſhop of Rome was martyred. He dyed of a flux, but would dye ſtanding, *as it became an Emperor*, he was 69 years old.

4050. *A. C.* 80. *V.C.* 830. *Titus* called alſo *Veſpaſian*, the delight of mankinde, from his goodneſſe ſo named, was excellent both in literature and armes; in all vertues he exceeded his father. In his younger years he was riotouſly and wantonly given, ſpending much time idlely with Queen *Berenice*, that many were afraid he would have proved another *Nero*; but on a ſudden he ſo reformed himſelf and his Court, that he put away *Berenice*, and all about him that were lewdly affected. He never took any thing by oppreſſion, and yet no Prince more munificent. He never ſuffered any Petitioner to depart without hope, ſaying: *No man ought to depart out of the Princes preſence with a ſad countenance.* He confirmed all favours granted by his ſuperiors to any, by one Edict. Whereas the former Emperors gave new Patents for every particular favour, as if they had been the firſt doners. One night at ſupper calling to mind that he had not granted any favour that day, to any man, he cryes out: *Alas friends we have loſt a day.* He was ſo mild that not only did he pardon two prime men, that conſpired againſt him; but at a publick ſhew he made them ſit down by him, and calling for a ſword, to try the edge of it, delivers it firſt to the one, then to the other; ſaying: *Powers are given by fate, and in vaine doe men attempt any great action, out of fear to loſe, or hope to obtain.* When he underſtood that his brother *Domitian* intended treaſon againſt him, he told him weeping, *that he needed not ſeek to obtain that by treachery, which he was to have of him willingly*; and the rather becauſe he had already made him his colleague in the Empire. He baniſhed all informers; and relieved thoſe that were oppreſſed, chiefly thoſe of Herculanum and Pompeii, which two townes were overthrown with an Earthquake and the eruption of the hill Veſuvius, which in *Titus* his time flamed out 3 dayes and nights together. Where the older *Pliny* loſt his life in venturing too nere to ſearch the cauſe. The aſhes of this burning darkened the Sun, and were carryed as far as Rome, Africa, Syria, and Egypt. *Titus* to the great grief of all good men dyed ſhortly after, the Provinces grieving as if they had loſt a Father. It was thought that *Domitian* poyſoned him, he lived 39 years, 5 months and 25 dayes.

4052. *A.C.* 82. *Flavius Domitianus* making more haſt then good ſpeed to be Emperor, cauſed his brother to be ſtretched out for dead, before the breath was out of his body. In the beginning of his Government, he gave himſelf to catching and killing of gnats and flies, as if he had wanted imployment: ſo that one asking if *Ceſar* had any company with him, it was anſwered by *Vibius Criſpus, not ſo much as a flye.* He repudiated his wife, and then received her again. There was in him a ſtrange medly of vice and vertue; till at laſt his vices prevailed. He forbad the gelding of boys; he ſuppreſſed private ſtage-playes and Libels, puniſhing the Libellers. He thruſt *Cæcilius Ruſinus* out of the Senat becauſe he delighted in dancing. He ſuffered not whores to inherit: he puniſhed informers, ſaying; *that not to puniſh ſuch, were to incourage them.* He was at firſt liberall and abhorred baſeneſſe: he was ſo skilfull in arching, that he could ſhoot his arrowes between ones fingers ſtretched out, and not hurt them. He was carefull in repairing of decayed Liberaries, and ſupplying of them with coppies from Alexandria and elſewhere. But he was of a cruell and fierce nature, given to luſt alſo and wantonneſſe, which he ſhewed in his younger years, whileſt his father and brother were abſent in Judæa, for then he uſed to commit adultery with noble mens wives.

Aſtrologers had foretold *Domitian*, that he ſhould be murthered; which made him fierce, and ſuſpitious of almoſt every man. He never loved any man but in ſhew, and his pride was ſuch, that with *Caligula* he aſſumed the title of *Lord* and *God*. His hatred to the Jews, made him rage alſo againſt Chriſtians, for under him was the ſecond perſecution, in which *John* the Evangeliſt was baniſhed to the Iſle

Pathmos

Pathmos where he wrote his Revelation: understanding that one of the seed of *David* should be universall King, he caused all of that seed to be sought out and killed. He either banished, or disgraced, or murthered the prime men of the Senat. He slew his neereſt kinsmen, upon pretence that they favoured Christianity. Under him *Clemens* lost his life; immediately followed thundering for 8 months, so often, that he cryed out, *Let it now strike, whom it will.* The Capitoll with the tops of some other buildings, and his own chamber were thunder-struck. His treasury being exhausted, he gave himself to rapine and extortion. He intended once to have disbanded divers regiments and garrisons, to lessen his charges, but fearing the incursion of barbarous nations, he changed his minde, resolving to maintain them with the spoil of his people. He so affrighted the Senators, that he got from them a great sum of money; for he invited them to a funerall supper, at which all the waiters and servants were so disguised with visard; that in their gastly looks they represented Hobgoblins and Ghosts; which so affrighted the Senators that they looked for present death. He committed inceſt with his brother *Titus* his daughter *Julia*. *L. Antonius* who had the charge of High Germany, being provoked by his wicked life, and some distastfull language, revolted; but *Domitian* having overthrown him by *Norbanus Appius*, and *L. Maximus*, grew more insolent and cruell then ever. It's thought that he poysoned that excellent man *Julius Agricola*, father in law to *Tacitus* the historian; though he seemed to be sorry for his death. This *Agricola* subdued the Britains, and by his fleet was the first that discovered it to be an Island. He also subdued the Orcades: for which good services he was highly extolled by the people, and *Domitius* his false conquests, and reall triumph were cryed down; for though his armies were beat in Mæsia, Dacia, Germany, and Pannonia, yet he bragged that he had subdued his enemies, and hired divers multitudes, which gave out they were his captives, to the end he might obtain a triumph: this love of the people hastned *Agricola*'s death.

Domitian being hated of all men, was murthered by *Parthenius* his chamberlain, *Stephen* his Steward, and *Domitia* his wife, who loved *Paris* the Stage-player better then her husband: these hired some freed men, who with many wounds killed him. *Domitia* found in his closet a list of divers whom *Domitian* meant to murther, among which she found her own name; but before he was killed, *Nerva*'s friends had got his consent to accept of the Empire, lest the souldiers should mutiny: he reigned 15 years, and lived 45. The Senat ordered that his body should not be carryed in a bed or hearse, but in a common beer, and that his name should be every where razed. His death was foretold by *Proculus* in Germany: and the same houre that *Domitian* was killed at Rome, *Apollonius* (at Ephesus) got up on a high stone, and cryed out, saying; *Well done Stephen, kill the murtherer.* Not long before his death, a Crow upon the Capitoll spoke in Greek; *all shall be well.* In *Domitian*'s time, the Picts out of Scythia setled themselves in Scotland. *Dionysius* the Areopagite preached the Gospell to the Parisians. Then did the Ebionites or Pythagorian Christians, (commanding abstinence from all flesh, and confounding Law with Gospell,) begin to broach their heresies, as also the Nicolaitans urging community of wives. These *Tertullian* cals the Patriarchs of hereticks.

An. Mundi. 4067.

An. Mundi

The Second Book OF THE SECOND PART,

INTREATING
Of the times from *NERVA* the ROMAN EMPEROR, till the Reign of *CONSTANTINE* alone, containing 233 Yeares.

CHAP. I.

1. *Of the Roman affaires under* Nerva, Trajan *and* Adrian. 2. *Of the affaires of Jews, and Christians during that time.*

4067. A.C. 100. *Occejus Nerva* a good but a ſhort-lived Prince, whoſe juſtice was ſuch in publick, that he was not afraid to ſpend his life in private: he repealed the unjuſt acts of *Domitian* calling home the exiled, and reſtoring every man to his own again. Some think he was born in Narnia a City of Umbria; ſome in Crete. The firſt Emperor of a ſtranger. He was ſaluted Emperor both by the Senat and Army, yet was doubtfull to accept it, till he was aſſured by *Parthenius* that *Domitian* was dead. He melted all the golden and ſilver Images of *Domitian*, and converted them to money. He ſuffered no man to be accuſed or troubled for religion. In *Domitians* time it was lawfull for any man to accuſe another; which made *Fronto* ſay, *that it was ill living under that Prince where nothing was lawful, but worſe under him where all things were lawfull.* By vertue of *Nerva*'s edict. *John* the Evangeliſt returns to his Epiſcopall charge at Epheſus. Where he publiſheth his Revelation and Goſpell againſt Cerinthus who denyed Chriſts Divinity: and his three Epiſtles alſo, though ſome have queſtioned the two laſt, but injuriouſly. In his Epiſtles, by the Antichriſts that were come, he means *Simon Magus* and *Menander*, (being Samaritans and affectors of Divine honor) with the Nicolaitans, Cerinthians, and Ebionites. *Nerva* alſo took off many publick fines, he provided carefully for the poor, that there might be no beggers in Italy, he was ſo loath to burthen his people with taxes, that he would rather make uſe of his own revenews. Though *Calphurnius Craſſus* for his treaſon in labouring to draw the armies from *Cæſar* deſerved death, yet he only baniſhed him to Tarentum.

The ſouldiers (but againſt *Nerva*'s will) killed *Petronius*, *Steven* and *Parthenius* the murtherers of *Domitian*; they firſt cut off *Petronius* his genitals, and flung them in his face, *Caſperius Ælianus* bought his own pardon for a great ſum, and out of his inſolency cauſed *Nerva* to thank the ſouldiers publickly, for killing the three traitors, perceiving how needfull a ſtout, and ſtrong bodyed man was to rule; he neglecting his own kindred publickly adopted *Trajan* a Spaniard to be his heir and ſucceſſour, preferring vertue to kindred or country: therefore *Trajan* is firſt made *Cæſar*, then Emperour, with him he lived 3 months. He dyed of a Feaver the 65 year of his life, having reigned one year and 4 moneths. His death was accom-

accompanyed with an Eclipſe of the Sun. *Cor. Tacitus* commended him in a Fune- *An. Mundi.*
rall oration.

M. Vlpius Trajanus being at Colen received the Enſignes of the Empire ſent 4069.
him from Rome. He was a man endowed with piety, wiſdom, valour, and all other princely vertues; and a great lover of learned men. He delivered his ſword to the Captain of the Guard, willing him *to uſe it for him, if he did well, but againſt him if otherwiſe.* He told the Senat one day that he had a command ſent him from *Jupiter* to maintain the ancient religions of Rome, which were now weakned by the increaſing of Chriſtianity, for many of their Temples lay deſolate, and few ſacrifices were offered. Therefore now began a new perſecution againſt Chriſtians. *Simeon* the ſon of *Cleophas* our Saviours kinſman, and Biſhop of Jeruſalem, was there crucified being 120 years old. *Ignatius* Biſhop of Antioch, at Rome 4079.
was flung to the wild Beaſts. *Clemens* Biſhop of Rome, whom *Paul* mentions in his Epiſtle to the Philippians, was beheaded; though ſome think he ſuffered before this time. *Trajan* did not directly perſecute the Chriſtians for their Religion, but becauſe they were accuſed for Magicians in that they wrought ſo many miracles. 2. Becauſe they had their meetings and conventicles, againſt which ſevere laws were made. 3. Becauſe they had ſo many jars and contentions amongſt themſelves, by which they might occaſion commotions in the City; and indeed theſe jars were cauſed by the heretiques. Yet *Pliny* the younger Proconſul then of Bithynia in his Epiſtle to *Trajan*, writes that he found no fault in Chriſtians, but only that they met to ſing hymnes to Chriſt before day, whom they worſhipped for their God. And that they bound themſelves by Sacraments not to ſteal, or commit adultery, or any ſuch wickedneſſe. Therefore *Trajan* wrote back, that ſuch as were accuſed ſhould be ſpared if they would worſhip the Roman Gods. By which the heat of perſecution was abated. About this time dyed *John* the Apoſtle being nigh 100 years of age.

Trajan had 5 years war with *Decibalus* King of Dacia, which now is Tranſylvania and Nalachia. This war began in *Domitians* time, at laſt *Trajan* ſubdued the Daci, but with great loſſe, for there wanted linnen to bind up the wounds of thoſe that were hurt; ſo that *Trajan* was fain to tear his own robes. *Decibalus* being killed, the countrey beyond the Rhene was made a Province. In his time *Arabia Petræa* was taken. At Rome *Trajan* exhibited ſports or ſpectacles, wherein 10000 wild beaſts were ſlain, and as many *gladiators* did fight. He made war upon Armenia and Parthia, becauſe the Armenian held his crown of the Parthian, and not of him. He recovered Armenia, and killed *Pharnaces* their King. Divers kings did homage to him. He ſubdued a great part of Perſia, with Babylon, Seleucia, Edeſſa and Cteſiphon. He made Aſſyria, Armenia, and Meſopotamia Provinces. He built a Fleet in the red Sea, to goe for Judæa; therefore 4081.
the Senat gave him the title of *Optimus*: and appointed him as many triumphs as he pleaſed: but *Trajan* was puniſhed at Antioch with an Earthquake, for murthering of *Ignatius* biſhop thereof, multitudes of people were deſtroyed there. The city being then full, becauſe of the Emperors aboad there. *Trajan* having eſcaped out of a window, was ſo affrighted, that for a great while, he durſt not lye within doores.

The next ſpring *Trajan* renews the Parthian war, and that he might incourage his ſouldiers, he went on foot before them. But as he was preparing for his voyage many places fell off from him; divers of his Garriſons deſtroyed. Againſt theſe rebels *Lucius Quietus*, and *Maximus*, are ſent. *Maximus* is killed. *Lucius* recovers Niſibis and Edeſſa. *Seleucia* is taken by his Deputies, and burned. He ſet a King over the Parthians. But as he was fighting againſt the *Agarens* his Army was forced to give off, being beaten with thunder, lightning, and whirlewindes. He was infeſted with ſwarmes of flies, that he could not keep them off from his meat and drink. Shortly after this he fell ſick, being poyſoned, and dy- 4088.
ed in Cilicia the 64 year of his age, having reigned 19 years 6 months and 15 days. After whoſe death, the Parthians returned to their own Government. He erected many ſtately buildings at Rome, ſetting his name every where, for which cauſe he was in ſcoffe called *Wall-flower.*

An. Mundi About the 18 year of *Trajan*, the Jews began again to rebell: in Cyrene they murther Greeks and Romans promiſcuouſly: the like they did in Egypt and Alexandria. In Cyprus they ſlew about 240000. they cut many by the middle, and many they flung to wilde beaſts, and ſuch was their madneſſe, that they eat mans fleſh. But they were ſhortly after ſubdued by *Lucius* and *Turban*: and it was made death for a Jew to enter Cyprus. So barbarous were theſe Jews, that they girded themſelves with the guts yet bleeding of thoſe they ſlew, and clothed themſelves with their skins. The aſhes of *Trajans* body were tranſlated from that town of Cilicia where he dyed, called Silinus, and from him Trajanopolis; and brought to Rome with great ſolemnity, where he was buried alone, being againſt the laws of the 12 Tables for any to be buried in the City. His aſhes were buried under that magnificent pillar which he cauſed to be erected the 15 year of his reign, with his ſtatue on the top thereof. This pillar is yet extant, and in ſtead of *Trajan* now ſtands S. *Peter* in braſſe richly gilt, by *Sixtus Quintus* then biſhop of Rome. *Trajan* after his death was defiled; and called *Dacicus* from his victories over the Daci, which were engraven on his pillar. The Senat uſed to ſalute every Emperor newly made with theſe words: *Happier then* Auguſtus, *better then* Trajan.

4088. *P. Ælius Adrianus*, the ſon of *Adrian* the Senator, who was couſin german to
A. C. 118. *Trajan*, was by him adopted, or at leaſt given out ſo by *Plotina Trajans* wife, and was now Governour of Syria, who for his own worth and neerneſſe to *Trajan*, was ſaluted Emperor: that he might not be kept back from Rome, he quitted all beyond Euphrates, contenting himſelf with the ancient bounds of the Empire. He ſent for *Julius Severus* out of Britain into Syria to chaſtiſe the turbulent Jews, whoſe Captain *Bencochad*, that is, the ſon of the Star (alluding to that Propheſie, A Star ſhall ariſe out of *Jacob*) called himſelf the *Meſſias*, to make his power the greater. He held in Judæa for ſome years 50 caſtles, 980 Villages, and fortified the town Bethoron, whence he ſallied out divers times upon the Romans. But *Adrian* returning into Syria beſiged Bethoron 3 years and a half: at laſt took it by ſtorm, and in it Captain *Bencochab*, but indeed *Bencozba* the ſon of a *Lye*, as the deluded Jews now called him. The number of them that dyed by the plague, famine and ſword, was 500000 men. This fellow was a peſtilent enemy of the Chriſtians, murthering them, where ever he found them. But *Hadrian* rebuilt Hieruſalem, and called it *Ælia* by his name, in which he permitted Chriſtians to dwell, but not the Jews; yea he made it death for any Jew, either to goe neer it, or to look on it: only ſuch as paid a great ſum of money, were permitted to goe thither and bewaile it. The Temple of *Jupiter Capitolinus* was now built, where *Salomons* Temple ſtood. Therefore the town was now called Æliaa Capitolina. The Jews alſo were forbid to circumciſe themſelves: all their ſtrong Forts were oaerthrown.

Adrian being confirmed in the Empire, he made away thoſe whoſe greatneſſe he ſuſpected, chiefly *Celſus*, *Nigrinus*, *Palme*, and *Lucius*, being four eminent Conſular men. Having quieted all in the Eaſt, returns to Rome, and remits many debts due to the Exchequer, and withall the ſum of money which was uſed to be preſented to the Victor called *aurum coronarium*, in lieu of the golden coronets, which of old they wont to give him. *Pſamatoſſeris* whom *Trajan* had made king of Parthia was ſlighted by them, and ſo by *Hadrian* was made king of the next bordering countries. He was very courteous, affable, and familiar with his friends, chiefly when they were ſick. He ſtill kept the ſouldiers in exerciſe, ever in time of peace, and uſed to feed with them on cheeſe, lard, and *puſca*; which was a drink made of vinegar and water. In this he imitated *Scipio Æmilianus*, *Metellus*, and *Trajan*. Being more deſirous of peace then war, and finding the Britains ſtill moleſted by the Scots and Picts, he built a wall 80 miles long, to keep them out. He killed his crabbed wife, for ſaying *ſhee had taken a courſe, that hee ſhould never have any children to the deſtruction of mankinde.* He killed alſo *Apollodorus* an Architect for finding fault with his errours in building. He was of a various yetcunning and diſſembling nature. He ſeldome kept his promiſe. He

was

was ſtill inquiſitive of mens ſecrets, he was alſo laſciviouſly given, but quick witted, and ready at anſwers. He had skill almoſt in all Arts; and had a rare memory, and a ſtrong body; for he uſed to goe about the Provinces on foot, and to outwalk his followers. He reduced all Manufactures into Companies or Corporations. He could not indure that any ſhould profeſſe an Art, wherein he was not exquiſite, and therefore would hire ſome for money to give off their profeſſion. He would goe bare headed in the coldeſt weather. He loved his horſe *Boryſthenes* ſo well, that he erected a monument for him, with an Epitaph. He was affable to the meaneſt. He was carefull of the poor, and would not ſuffer Maſters either to kill, or ſell their ſlaves to Fencers nor Panders. He advanced what he could the Romiſh ſuperſtition, but perſecuted the Chriſtian religion. Which *Ariſtides* the Philoſopher, and *Quadratus* the Biſhop, both Athenians, defended by their apologies: whereby his rigour was ſomewhat tempered. He had adopted *Ælius* whom he called *Cæſar* before he was Emperor, but he died; therefore he made *Aurelius Antonius* his ſucceſſor, called afterward *Pius* for reſcuing divers Senators from the fury of *Adrian*, who killed *Servianus* his ſiſters husband, and his nephew *Fuſcus* for finding fault with his adopting of *Antonius*: When *Servianus* was to dye, he prayed that *Adrian* might wiſh for death, and not obtaine it; which fell out to be ſo, for he was tortured with a lingring diſeaſe, that he wiſhed his friends to kill him, and offered divers times to kill himſelf, had he not been hindred; at laſt, he deſtroyed himſelf with abſtinence; diſputing and doubting whither his ſoul ſhould goe; he cryed out againſt Phyſitians, ſaying, *Many Phyſitians had killed the King*: His bones were laid up in that great building erected by him, and called *Moles Adriani*, now the caſtle of S. *Angelo*. He lived 72 years, and reigned 21 and 11 months. *Similis* the captain of his guard, having got leave to ſpend the remainder of his life privately in the country, lived there 7 yeares, after he had reſigned his place; and cauſed this Epitaph to be engraven on his tombe: *Here lyeth Similis who ſpent many yeares but lived only ſeven.*

An. Mundi 4104.

In *Adrians* time lived the heretick *Carpocrates*, author of the Adamites and Gnoſticks, ſo called from their ſuppoſed knowledge above others. Under him alſo was *Euſtachium* called *Placidus* before his baptiſm, martyred; he had done good ſervice under *Veſpaſian* againſt the Jews, and under *Trajan* againſt the Daci. He was firſt caſt to the Lions, but they ſpared him, at laſt he was burned in a hot braſen Bull. In his time was Nicomedia overthrown with an Earthquake, ſo were Nicopolis, Nicæa, and Cæſarea. He called the city Uſcuduma in Myſia, from his owne name Adrianopolis. To vex the Jews he ſet over one of the gates of Ælia the picture of a Hog; a creature hated by them, and by which he would repreſent their hoggiſh qualities; then it was as ſome think that the candidates of the Empire, began to be called *Cæſars*; though ſome were called ſo before. And about this time *Aquila* of Pontus was converted to Chriſtianity; but being reproved for ſpending too much time in Aſtrology: he circumciſed himſelfe, and became a Jew, and tranſlated the Bible in Greeke, but corruptly.

CHAP. II.

1. *The Roman affairs under* Antoninus Pius, Antoninus Philoſophus, *and* Commodus. 2. *The affairs of the Chriſtians, and of forraign Nations at that time.*

Antonius was ſurnamed *Pius* by the Senat, for his acts of piety in building of Temples, advancing of Prieſts, honoring of learning, aſſigning large Salaries throughout the Provinces to Philoſophers and Rhetoricians, in ſparing and pardoning all criminals in the beginning of his reign, ſaying; that he ought not to begin his reign with bloud; in preſerving *Adrian* from killing of himſelfe, and in maintaining the Empire in peace and plenty all his life. He was a juſt, mild and learned

An. Mundi 4109. *A.C.* 139.

An. Mundi learned Prince, who as he advanced men of parts, so he hated idle drones, and discountenanced needlesse Artists by abridging them of their maintenance. He was indeed another *Numa Pompilius*: Only out of the common error of these times, he did not much favour the Christians. Yet he was content to tolerate them, being pacified by the apologies of *Justin Martyr* and others. He honoured the Senate, and they him. He would not give way that all the Acts of *Adrian* should be repealed: there was but one Senator in all his time banished, namely *Atilius Trajanus* who for affecting to be King was proscribed by the Senat. He forbad burying of the dead within cities. His aboad was most in the city, for the greater ease of Embassadors: he seldom made progresses, shewing how chargeable and troublesome the Princes removall was to the country though his attendants were but few.

Antoninus his father *Aurelius* was a Transalpin Gaul. *Arrius Antoninus* his Grandfather by the mother had been twice Consul. He was comely in his personage, but more in his conditions. So great was his authority that the Indians, Bactrians, and Hircanians made him Judge of their differences. He appeased all seditions, not with cruelty but gravity: he quieted the Jewes, Britains, Mores, Daci and Germans. He placed a King over the Lazi a people in Scythia. He kept off by his bare letters the Parthian King from Armenia. In no Princes time was there lesse bloud shed then in his, whose saying was the same with that of *Scipio's*: *I had rather save one subject, then kill* 10000 *enemies*. In times of dearth he relived the poor out of his own store. When he came to see *Omulus* his house, he inquired whence he had his marble pillars. *Omulus* answered, that in another mans house he should be both deaf and dumb; with which answer he was well pleased. He rebuilt divers towns overthrown with Earthquakes.

In his time Pope *Sixtus* suffered Martyrdome, not by any edict from the Prince, but by the malice of the Senat against Christianity. Then sprung up *Valentinus* the heretick, with his spawn of Canites, Sethites, and Ophites, or Snake-worshippers. As also *Cerdon* and his scholar *Marcion* whom *Polycarpus* called *the divels first begotten sonne:* and *Apelles* who gave Christ a sideriall or aeriall body. Pope *Telesphorus* with some others were martyred. So was his successor Pope *Higinius*. *Antoninus* dyed the 70 year of his life, and 23 of his Empire. In his time was seen in Arabia a mained Serpent, which eat up his own tail; 4 Lions so tame that they suffered themselves to bee taken; and barly grew upon some trees.

Marcus Antoninus Philosophus being adopted by *Pius* & approved by the Senat, succeeded Emperor, to whom he joins his brother *Lucius Verus* as his Colleague; so now two Emperors reign together. *Marcus* was every way an excellent Prince, both for armes, and learning; who used to frequent the Philosophy Schooles, after he was Emperor: but *Lucius* was given to delights and luxury; which *Marcus* by his goodnesse covered as much as he could; and lest his vices should be too much observed, living in Rome in the eye of the world; he got him to undertake the Parthian war against *Vologesus*, who had defeated the Roman Army, and molested Syria; but *Lucius* at Antioch and Daphne, gave him self over wholely to his pleasures, and committed the care of the war to his Deputies, among which *Avidius Cassius* defeated *Vologesus*, took *Seleucia* upon Hydaspes with 400000 men, and burned the town: he took also Ctesiphon, and demolished *Vologesus* his houses.

The Parthian war being ended, and Armenia setled, *Lucius* after 5 years returnes to Rome, where with his brother he was carryed in triumph. He brought from Parthia not only Mimicks, Stage-players, Fidlers, and Jugglers great store; but the Plague too; which at Babylon brake out of a golden chest: which a souldier took out of *Apollo*'s Temple, when the chest was opened such a pestiferous vapour burst forth, as multitudes were infected by it. At Rome they died so fast, that the dead were carryed out by cart-loades. After this *Marcus* and *Lucius* goe against the Germans; who had all conspired against the Roman Empire; but when they came to Aquileja, Embassadors met them from all parts petitioning;

that

that they might be pardoned for their defection. *Lucius* would have gone back, *An. Mund.*
but *Marcus* would not, fearing that this repentance of the Barbarians was coun-
terfeit, only to keep off the Roman Armies from their countreys: ſo having paſ- 4140.
ſed the Alpes, and fortified Italy, they quieted *Pannonia*. *Lucius* longing to be at *A.C.* 170.
Rome again returnes, but in the way being taken with an Apoplexy ſpeechleſſe,
dyed the third day, having reigned with *Marcus* 11. years, ſome think he was poy-
ſoned by *Fauſtina*, the wife of *Marcus*.

Marcus undertakes alone the war againſt the Marcomanni or Moravians with their confederates, and becauſe the plague had deſtroyed many, therefore as in the Punic war, ſo now uſe is made of ſlaves, gladiators, and robbers; and that hee might not oppreſſe the Provinces with taxes, he ſold or pawned all the Jewels, plate, and rich utinſels of the Court, to make money; which he redeemed againe (when the war was ended) of thoſe that were willing to part with their bargain. In two years he quite overthrew the Marcoman faction with the Jaziges or Tranſilvanians. He alſo miraculouſly overcame the Quadi, that is, the Suevians and Polonians. For the Roman army being like to periſh for want of water in a dry and barren ground, by reaſon they were beſet round about by the enemy, the captain of the Guard told the Prince that there was in the army a legion of Chriſtians, who uſed to obtain any thing they asked of their God; immediately they were deſired to pray, and no ſooner had they prayed, but a great ſhower of rain refreſhed the Roman army, and the Barbarians were overthrown with thundering and lightning, ſo that they who remained alive, did either yeeld or flye; after which victory the Chriſtians were favoured by the Emperor, divers of them advanced, and their accuſers puniſhed. So that the fourth great perſecution is now ended, partly by the conſtancy of *Polycarpus*, *Pius*, and *Anicetus*, and divers other martyrs, partly by the ſecond apology of *Juſtin*, partly by plagues, famine, earthquakes, rebellion, and conſpirations, and partly by this ſtrange defeat of the Barbarians, at the prayers of the Chriſtian Legion, which ever after was called The thundering Legion.

Whileſt *Marcus* was making Provinces of Marcomannia and Sarmatia, *Avidius Caſſius* giving out that *Marcus Antoninus* was dead, rebelled in the Eaſt, drawing all within Mount Taurus to his faction: Wherefore the Emperor makes an expedition into the Eaſt, the ſouldiers finding he was alive, fell upon *Caſſius* and his ſon, and killed them both, his head was brought to *Antoninus*, but he no ways rejoycing at the ſight, commanded it to be buried. He pardoned *Antioch*, and the other cities that adhered to him: he was highly beloved of all the Eaſt parts. Egypt did honour him for his Philoſophy. His wife *Fauſtina* infamous for adultery, dyed ſuddenly neer the hill Taurus, whom the Emperor commended and concealed her faults, for by her means he got the Empire; therefore being wiſhed by ſome to put her away for her adulteries, anſwered: *If I devorce my wife, I ſhould reſtore her dowry*. At Athens he gave annuall ſtipends to profeſſours of all ſciences, at Rome he gave gowns to the ſouldiers, ſaying thoſe cities flouriſhed moſt where Philoſophers were rulers, or rulers Philoſophers. He was much addicted to Stoicall Philoſophy, he was very moderate both in rewards and puniſhments. He was never without good Lawyers about him; he deſired to hear what the people ſaid of him, that he might amend what was amiſſe. He hated cruelty, therefore would not ſuffer the gladiators to fight with ſharp ſwords. He thought it more reaſonable that he ſhould follow the advice of his friends being many, then that they ſhould follow his being but one. He ſuffered not men and women to bath together, nor did he permit riding or coaching within cities, he was ſtill preſent at their Parliaments, and never departed till the fathers gave him leave.

The Sarmatians, Marcomans and their neighbours rebelled again; ſo that *Marcus* was fain to be there in perſon. After three years war he ſubdued them, ſhortly 4151.
after he fell ſick, and dyed the 19 year of his Empire, of his life the 58. to the *A.C.* 181.
great grief of all good men, a happy Emperor, had he been childleſſe, for his ſon *Commodus* was a wicked Prince. When *Marcus* was asked to whom he would recommend his ſon, anſwered: if he be good to God and you. He was offended when

An. Mundi when his friends weeped for him in his sickneſſe, wiſhing them rather to weep for the publick calamities. In his time *Lucius* king of the Britains was converted to Chriſtianity, by thoſe whom Pope *Eleutherius* ſent thither to preach. *Lucian* the great enemy of Chriſtianity, was then torn by dogs. Then *Montanus* the heretique with his *Maximilla* and *Priſcilla*, began to divulge their falſe propheſies, theſe were the authors of the Cataphrygian heretiques, which lived about Phrygia. *Montanus* called himſelf the Paraclet that was promiſed. *Tatianus* then liv'd; he was father of the Encratites, that is *continent*, for they abhorred marriage and wine, hence they are called *Aquarii* and *Hydro-paraſtatæ*, with divers other heretiques. Then was Pope *Anicetus* martyred and *Soter* his ſucceſſor, with many other Chriſtians.

4151. *A. C.* 181. *Commodus* ſucceeded, who by reaſon of his wicked conditions and his mothers looſeneſſe, was thought to be the ſonne of a Sword-player, rather then of *Verus*, ſuch an excellent Father, and this ſuſpicion grew the rather, becauſe he delighted much in ſword-playing, even openly upon the Theater, and in the Amphitheaters he uſed to fight with wild Beaſts. He murthered many of the Senators, and ſuch as excelled in vertue and nobility; he ſhewed his cruelty at 12 years of age in cauſing the man that was waſhing him in the warm-bath to be flung into the fiery furnace, becauſe the water in which he waſhed was hotter then ordinarily. He gave himſelfe to all kind of luxury and uncleanneſſe. He ſet none but the worſt men over the Provinces. He became ſo hatefull, that his own ſiſter *Lucilla* conſpired his death, with *Quadratus*, and *Tarentenus* captain of the guard; *Claudius Pompejanus* who was imployed to kill him, comming into his chamber drew his ſword, ſaying, this ſword the Senat ſends you. But before he could doe any thing, hee with the reſt of the conſpirators were laid hold on and killed. *Lucilla* was firſt baniſhed, then executed. So was *Criſpina Auguſta*, and the whole family of the Quintilians with many more.

After this *Commodus* was wary into what company he came, he would ſuffer none to ſpeak to him, but by *Perennius* captain of the Guard, who knowing the length of his Maſters foot, counſelled him to take his pleaſures, and hee would look to the managing of affaires. In his time *Vulpius Marcellus* overthrew thoſe Britains that came over *Adrians* wall. The plague was ſo hot at Rome that there dyed oftentimes 2000 a day. *Commodus* in the interim with 300 Concubins, and 300 Sodomites in the Palace gave himſelf to feaſting and riotouſneſſe. But *Perennius* having got the power into his hands, made his ſonnes Generals over the Illyrian armies, and got them with bribes to alienate the ſouldiers from the Emperor, whom he meant himſelf to murther. This plot was detected by one in the habit of a Philoſopher; who with a ſtaffe in his hand, and a powch hanging from his ſhoulder, being half naked, runs to *Commodus* as he was ſitting in the Theater, and tels him it was not a fit time for him to ſolace himſelf with publick ſhewes, when *Perennius* his naked ſword was hanging over him. *Perennius* preſently cauſed the man to be apprehended, and burned for a mad dangerous fellow, but afterward mony was brought to *Commodus* having the image of *Perennius*. Hereupon command was privately given to cut off *Perennius* and his ſon, which was done accordingly. But *Cleander* a worſe favourite ſucceeded. He of a ſervant became the Captain of the Guard, and High Chamberlain to *Commodus*, who did what he could to alenate both the ſouldiers and people from the Emperor, he expoſed all places of honor and truſt to ſale. He both called home the baniſhed, and preferred them to great places. He killed *Byrrus* who had marryed *Commodus* his ſiſter, becauſe he complained to his brother that *Cleander* affected the Empire. He murthered alſo many others, that diſliked his ways. *Commodus* in the mean while gave himſelfe to his pleaſures taking no notice of his favourites oppreſſions.

One time whileſt *Commodus* in the Suburbs was ſporting and delighting himſelf, the people in a tumultuous way came with a petition againſt *Cleander*, for buying up all the corne, which occaſioned both the plague and famine at Rome, *Cleander* commanded the guard to fall upon them, who killed and wounded many of the unarmed multitude driving them within

the

the city gates, the people within fall on the ſouldiers, and what with ſtones from the tops of the houſes, what by other means, multitudes of them were killed, the city being all in an uproar, *Fadilla* the Emperors eldeſt ſiſter came weeping, and tearing her hair and garments to the Emperor, telling him that he and his Empire would be ſuddenly ruined if *Cleander* and his complices were not puniſhed; the Emperor having underſtood the truth of things, which had been concealed from him till now, ſent preſently for *Cleander*, whoſe head being cut off, he cauſed to be ſet on a high pole, and ſhewed to the people, at ſight of which they were appeaſed, and the ſouldiers that fought for him, affrighted. Such was the peoples hatred againſt *Cleander*, that they murthered all his friends and children with their mothers, and having dragged their bodies through the ſtreets, flung them into privies. It's ſaid that *Cleander* begot thoſe children of *Commodus* his concubins. Then the Emperor though fearfull of plots returns to the city.

In his time many monſters were born, the Temple of Peace into which many rich men had ſent their wealth for ſecurity, was burned to the ground; this was held a ſad preſage of wars and miſeries, which fell out true; for many ſtately edifices in the city were conſumed with fire; ſo was the Temple of Veſta, the Palladium that was brought from Troy and kept hid all this while, was now ſeene whileſt the Veſtall Nuns did reſcue it from the flames, and carryed it publickly to the Emperors Court. He no wayes troubled with theſe diſaſters runs on in his vain courſes, and would in ſtead of *Commodus* be called *Hercules Amazonius Exſuperans*, and preſented himſelf to the people in the Lions skin, and carrying *Hercules* his club. He changed the names of the months, & called them by his own names and titles. He cauſed his ſtatues to be ſet up, which after his death the people overthrew, and ſet up the ſtatue of liberty. He fought openly in the Amphitheaters with wild Beaſts, which he cauſed to be brought thither from all parts: he killed 100 lions, ſo skilfull he was in arching that he never miſſed. He ſhewed himſelf one time naked among the gladiators, ſometimes he would ſhew himſelfe in womens apparell; he cauſed all the criples about the City to be aſſembled in one place, and cloathing them like Gyants repreſenting ſerpents feet, he played the part of *Jupiter*, ſhooting at them his arrows. He had ſet downe in a booke the names of thoſe he meant to murther, among which was *Marcia* his concubine, for giving of him good counſell; *Lætus* Captain of the Guard, with many other rich men, whoſe wealth he meant to beſtow upon his ſouldiers and gladiators, but the book being found *Marcia* poyſons him, and leſt it might fail, *Narciſſus* ſtrangled him; the Senat upon the report of his death, proclaims him an enemy to God and men, razeth his name, and throws down his Statues.

The Capitoll in his time was ſet on fire by thunder, in which the Bibloethec with the records, and other writings were burned. Then it was that *Pantenny* preached Chriſt to the Indians, and there found S. *Matthews* Goſpell brought thither by *Bartholomew* the Apoſtle. *Victor* Biſhop of Rome excommunicates the Eaſtern Churches for obſerving Eaſter with *Polycarpus* on the 14 day of the Moon; which raſhneſſe is reproved by *Irenæus* Biſhop of Lions. *Theodotion* ſets out a new Greek tranſlation of the Bible, which is the third. The Chriſtians lived quietly all his time, for *Martia* whom he ſo loved did much favour them. He reigned 12 years and 9 months, he lived 31 years and 4 months. In his time, they found out a trick at Rome, to kill men, by ſhooting at them poyſoned needles out of ſecret places.

CHAP

CHAP. III.

The affaires of Rome under Pertinax, Didius, *and* Severus. 2. Severus *his actions in the East, and in* Britain. 3. *The Christian affaires during that time.*

4164. A. C. 194. *Commodus* being dead, it was divulged abroad by *Martia*, *Lætus*, and *Electus* who was High Chamberlain, that the Prince dyed of an Apoplexy, to which he was subject in his drunkenesse. And they resolve to fix the Empire on *Publius Helvius Pertinax* who had been Consul and Governour of Mœsia, Dacia, and Syria. He was an Italian born, a brave Commander, and one of those to whom *Marcus* committed the care of his son *Commodus*. In the night time *Lætus*, *Electus*, and some others brought news to *Pertinax*, being in his bed, of the death of *Commodus*, and that he was fittest in respect of his age, valor and good services to the State; he at first feared they came to mock, and then to murther him; but finding their sincerity, accepts their counsell and advice, *Lætus* and *Electus* prepare the Army to receive *Pertinax*, who no sooner came; but he was with joyfull acclamations saluted Emperor and *Augustus* by the people first, then by the souldiers: and so having taken the Oath of allegiance, they follow the Emperor to his Palace with bayes on their heads. The next morning *Pertinax* went to the Senat; but would not have the fire or other ensignes of Principality carryed before him, till he obtained the Senats approbation, which he doubted, being of mean parentage in comparison of the former Emperors: but the whole Senat unanimously salutes him Emperor, which honour he desired to avoid, beseeching the Fathers that they would confer it on *Glabrio* the noblest of all the Patricii. But *Glabrio* refused it, so that *Pertinax* was forced to sit down in the chair of state, who having made a speech, and offered sacrifice went home.

At the bruit of *Pertinax* his being Emperor, all good men rejoyced, the barbarous Nations sent Embassadours to congratulate. The people found that he would prove a Father more then an Emperor. For he bound up the hands of the souldiers from plundering and robbing; he bestowed all the wast ground in Italy on those that would take paines to improve them. He sold the goods of *Commodus* with his boys and Concubines, and the money he raised by the sale (which was great) he bestowed on the souldiers for a donative. He lessened the Emperors charges, cutting off superfluous expenses. He shewed himself mild and affable to all; he would not have the Senat call his son *Cæsar* till he deserved it. But he was not so bountifull as affable. The souldiers repine at his strictnesse, being accustomed to rapine, oppression, and lust. Wherefore they resolve to make him away; and choose another: Therefore they suddenly rush into the Pallace; the good old Emperor was wished by his friends to fly and hide himself, till the people were in condition to rescue him, which he thought did not consist with his honour, but confiding in his owne worth and innocency, presented himself to the souldiers, whom by his grave speech and presence he so moved, that they were turning back, till one more bloudy then the rest, thrust his spear into his brest, who praying to *Jupiter* the revenger, and covering his face with his robe fell downe dead, having received many wounds. Some thinke that *Lætus* who made him Emperor gave him his deaths wound. He lived 67 yeares, and reigned almost 3 months: the Senat deified him; and buried him honourably.

Didius Julianus nobly born, and very rich, but ambitious, bought the Empire which the souldiers profered to sell to him that gave most. *Flavius Sulpitianus* Father in law to *Pertinax* offered a large sum for it, which they refused, because of his affinity with *Pertinax*. Therefore *Julian* by them is chosen, who promiseth to set up again all the statues of *Commodus* which were cast down, and to give them the same priviledges they had under him: wherefore they gave him the name of *Commodus*, they conveyed him to his Court, through the streets, but covered their heads with their targets, because of the stones flung on them from the tops of the houses;

the

the people, in ſtead of acclamations, ſaluted him and them with imprecations, for buying and ſelling the Empire. *Didus* gave himſelf wholly to his pleaſures and riotouſneſſe; hee failed alſo in his promiſes to the ſouldiers, for he could not pay the promiſed ſum, out of the treaſure which was exhauſted by *Commodus*, nor out of his own Eſtate, which came ſhort of what he bragged; therefore the ſouldiers began to diſlike him: the people did continually rail at him; and ſends to *Niger* then Conſul and Governour of Syria, that he would accept the Empire. He being in good hope to obtain what was proferred (ſeeing that *Didus* was hated both by the people and ſouldiers) aſſembles the Syrian Army, which loved him well, becauſe his government was gentle and pleaſant, in that he gave way to ſhews and plays, wherein the Syrians delighted: he askes their advice; they all with one voice ſalute him *Auguſtus*, puts on his Emperiall robes, and carrying the fire before, they convey him to the Temple at Antioch. Embaſſadourr from all the Eaſte rn parts repair thither to congratulate, proffering their aſſiſtance; but *Niger* thinking himſelf ſecure, gave himſelf to his delights, and neglected the opportunity of reparing to Rome, wherefore *Severus* an African, a ſtout and crafty man, being Governour of Pannonia, and perceiving in what condition the Empire was in, and being incouraged by his dream, wherein he thought that the horſe which carryed *Pertinax* through the *via ſacra*, flung him down, and ſub mitted his back to *Severus*; he I ſay by faire promiſes and bribes, obtains the good will of the Northern Armies, aſſuring them, that he intended to revenge he death of *Pertinax*, by whoſe name he would be called, and exhorts them to make haſt with him to Rome, the Imperiall Seat, that they may firſt ſeiſe on it.

An. Mundi 4164. *A.C.* 184.

The armies having ſaluted *Severus* Emperor; he loſeth no time, but with all ſpeed, enters Italy, before any there knew his intention. All the Cities living in long peace, and being affrighted at the greatneſſe of his armies, opened their gates, and proclaimed him Emperor, *Julian* hearing of *Severus* his approach, raiſeth mony for the ſouldiers, which they took from him as a debt, not as a gift: and ſeeing that he was hated by the people, ſlighted by the ſouldiers, and deſpiſed by the Senat, he wrote letters to *Severus*, proffering to make him his Colleague in the Empite. But when he ſaw that all forſooke him, deſired the Senat to take the Government from him, and beſtow it on *Severus*, which they did, and withall gave charge to a Tribune to put him to death, which he had bought with ſo much money. *Didus* being ſlain, *Severus* ſends for the Pretorian Guard which murthered *Pertinax*, wiſhing them to leave their Arms behind, and to come only with bayes in a triumphing manner to rejoyce with him; they did accordingly, ſuſpecting nothing; but upon the Emperors command, they were incompaſſed round by the Army, ſtript naked, and chekt for their murthering of *Pertinax*, and baniſhed 100 miles from the City. He might have killed them all, but would not begin his reign with bloud.

Didus lived 60 years, and reigned 66 days.

Severus coming to Rome was received by the Senat and people, with joyfull acclamations. He diſtributes large gifts among the people and ſouldiers, makes larges promiſes of his good Government, but ſome of the old Senators ſuſpected the Fox. Who having ſtayed a while in the City, prepares to march into the Eaſt againſt *Niger*, who was ſporting himſelfe at Antioch. Great preparations are made both by Sea and Land. But fearing leſt *Albinus* then Governour of the Britains, who was a Patrician and Commander of warlike Nations not far from Italy, might in his abſence invade the Empire, thought it his beſt way to invite him by his letters, to ſhare with him in the Government, and to commit the care of the City to him; which *Albinus* willingly accepts. Thus *Severus* having made all ſure behinde him, marcheth againſt *Niger*, with whom he had divers battels, in the Helleſpont, at Cizycus an Iſland in Propontis at Nicomedia in Bythinia upon Pontus over againſt Thracia, and in Cilicia, at laſt he quite defeated him; and cauſed his head to be carryed about the Camp on a pole. He baniſhed his wife and children, and at laſt murthered them. So he did kill thoſe Senators and men of note that adhered to *Niger*. He beat down the wals of Byzantium, and turned it to a village, he puniſhed Antioch, Paleſtina, Arabia, the Parthians, and all the other

An. Mundi places which sided with *Niger*. After this, returning to Rome, he made warre upon *Albinus*, who in the first conflict got the better of *Severus*: who having recruited, his Forces being now 50000 strong, at Lions encounters again with *Albinus*; whom after a long and doubtfull skirmish, he at last defeated: but he was fain to tear his robes, and run furiously upon his souldiers with his naked sword, as they were flying away, or else he had lost the day. *Albinus* is brought to him sorely wounded, whose head he caused to be cut off, and sent to Rome with letters, expostulating with the Senat for their affection to his enemy: many of his favourers both in Spain and France he put to death, and inriched his coffers with their confiscated estates. He murthered without any inditement 43 of the Nobility: he cast *Narcissus* to the Lyons for strangling of *Commodus*, whom in hatred of the Senat, he stiled *God*: he calls himself the son of *Marcus*, and brother of *Commodus*, and called his son *Bassianus* by the name of *Antoninus*. He extinguished *Albinus* his whole race.

Whilest *Severus* was busie in these civill wars, the Parthians seised upon Mesopotamia, against them he sends a great Army, takes Seleucia and Babylon; and Ctesiphon also, where the Parthian Kings used to winter, and in it 100000 men, but for want of provision he was fain to quit this place again. He laid siege also to Atra a strong and well walled City in Mesopotamia standing on a high hill; but by reason the place was so strong, the Inhabitants so resolute, the air so intemperate, and the sickness in the Army so great, he was forced to raise the siege. In this expedition he kils *Lætus* for being too well beloved of the souldiers, as also *Julius Crispus* for reciting some verses in *Virgil*, which he thought reflected on him: Many other brave men he put to death on frivolous pretences. *Plautianus* was his great favorite, without whom he acted not any thing; this man being raised from nothing to that greatness, that he ruled all, even the Emperor himself; made it death for any man to look on him whilest he passed through the streets. People were commanded to swear by his fortune. *Severus* honoured his daughter *Plautilla* with the marriage of his own son *Antoninus*; more wealth was bestowed on the Bride, then might suffice 50 queens: his ambition was such, that he aimed to be Emperor, therefore imployes one *Saturninus* a Tribune, to murther him and his son *Antoninus* in their chambers; but *Saturninus* discovered the Plot to *Severus*. *Plautianus* is sent for, hoping the Princes had been dispatched, but found them both alive, who having accused and reproved him, caused him instantly to be slain. *Plautilla* is banished with her child, and afterward both killed by *Antoninus*, who with his brother *Geta*, began already to tyrannise over the people.

Severus his Government was so rigid and cruell, that he was truly called *Severus*, and *Pertinax*. He was a great punisher of theeves and robbers; he flung to the wild Beasts one *Bulas* a Captain of the High-way-men. His last expedition he makes into Britain, where he lost, partly by the unwholesomenesse of the waters, and partly by the Caledonii about 50000 men. But he at last forced them to lay down arms: his son riding behind him, had almost killed him, if he had not lookt back, and with his stern looks affrighted him, whom he only at that time reproved. The Britans rebelled, & the souldiers mutined, who would have made his son Emperor, against whom *Severus* is carryed in his Litter, being then ill of the Gout; whose presence made all submit; he caused all the Authors of that seditiOn to be put to death, except his son; and sitting in his chair of State bid the souldiers take notice, *that the head commanded, not the feet*. He repaired or enlarged *Hadrians* wall, which before was 80. now is 130 miles long. He dyed at York being 66 years old, in the 18 year of his reign; his two sonnes being reconciled, carried his ashes in an alablaster urn to Rome. Thus dyed he, whose cruelty made Rome wish he had not been born, and whose unworthy successours made them wish he had not dyed.

Buchanan. l. 4 makes this wall 80 miles distant from Hadrians.

4184. *A.C.* 212.

In his time lived *Theodotus* a Tanner at Constantinople, who denyed Christs Divinity, he rejected the Gospell and Revelation of St. *John*, wherefore he with his Disciples were called *Alogi*, that is, without the Word or reason: there was another *Theodotus* about that time, affirming Christ to be inferiour to *Melchisedec*; then sprung up the Melchisedecian hereticks, affirming *Melchisedec* to be an angell. Then lived the Praxeani or Patropassiani, so called from *Praxeas* the

Author

Author, who affirmed the Father to have ſuffered on the Croſſe. The Chriſtians were falſly accuſed for worſhipping an Aſſes head; and for being enemies to Monarchy. Hence *Victor* was martyred with divers others: the Patrician hereticks affirmed that Satan was the Author of mans Body. *Lenides* Father of *Origen* then ſuffered; young *Origen* could ſcarſe be kept back from ſuffering with his Father, whom by his letters he exhorts to conſtancy. This is that *Origen* who gelded himſelf and wrote the *Hexaplon* or Six-fold Expoſition of the Bible diſtinguiſhed into ſix columnes. The 1. Hebrew in Hebrew letters. The 2. Hebrew in Greek letters, the 3. the Septuagints Interpretation, 4. that of *Aquila*, 5. of *Symmachus*, 6. of *Theodotion*. Then alſo ſuffered for Chriſt, *Philip* Governour of Egypt, *Irenæus* Biſhop of Lions, and many more which made up the fift, or as ſome ſay, the 6 perſecution. Then was *Narciſſus* B. of Jeruſalem falſly accuſed of adultery, and his 3 accuſers ſtrangely by God puniſhed, the one by fire, the other by a loathſome diſeaſe, the third with blindneſſe. *An. Mundi*

CHAP. IV.

The Roman affaires under Caracalla, Macrinus, Heliogabalus, *and* Alexander, *2. The affaires of Chriſtians, Perſians, and others during that time.*

THe aſhes of *Severus* being brought into the City by his two ſons in great pompe, and interred in great ſolemnity, he was deified by the Senat, to whom ſucceeded his two ſons Co-Emperors; but *Caracalla* his eldeſt ſon by *Martia*, began his reign with the bloud of his brother *Geta*, the ſon of *Julia*, whom he murthered in his Mothers arms; after the murther he runs into the camp, perſwading the ſouldiers to protect him, for he had eſcaped a great danger, his brother having an intent to kill him; which was falſe. He likewiſe ſlew his fathers Phyſitians, for preſerving him ſo long alive: he was called *Caracalla* from the barbarian garment he wore. He marryed his mother in law *Julia*, ſhe animating him thereto, and ſhewing him that he might lawfully doe it, being Emperor; who *was to give laws, not to receive any*. He cauſed to be put to death all that favoured his brother *Geta*, 20000 at leaſt, beſides *Papinianus* captain of the Guard, for ſaying, that *it was eaſier to commit paricide, then to excuſe it*. Becauſe the Alexandrians called him *Oedipus*, and his wife *Focaſte*, he gave the city to the plundering of the ſouldiers, who murthered there multitudes of all ſorts. He burned *Ariſtotles* books, becauſe he thought that he had a hand in poyſoning his ſcholar *Alexander*. He regarded none but the ſouldiers, feeding them ſtill with money. When *Julia* told him, that he was too prodigall; he laid his hand on his ſword, ſaying: *I ſhall never lack money, ſo long as this is with me*. He delighted much in Necromancy and conjuring; one time calling up the Ghoſt of *Commodus*, he heard a voice, ſaying: *Goe to thy puniſhment*. Under pretence of making a league with *Abgarus* King of the Oſroeni a people between Syria and Meſopotamia, he caſt him into priſon, and ſeiſed on his countrey. The Armenians fell from him. He would doe any ſervill work with the ſouldiers, he ſlighted the Senat: he coyned falſe mony, and offered the ſword that killed his brother to *Serapis* the Ægyptian God, which ſword afterward was melted with lightning. He took great pleaſure in fencing, and killing of wild beaſts. In France he cauſed many officers to be put to death. In Germany he killed many thouſands, and then called himſelf *Germanicus*. In Aſia he fell upon the Parthians, pretending that *Artabanus* had denyed to marry his daughter to him according to promiſe, and took the city Arbela in Perſia; and overthrew the Parthian Kings Sepulchers, caſting away their bones. At laſt amongſt his own ſouldiers, whom he ſo much truſted, as hee was eaſing of him ſelfe, betweene Carre and Edeſſa, he is ſlaine by *Macrinus* whom he had made captain of the Guard. 4184. *A. C.* 212.

The Emperor having received letters from Rome, as he was at his ſports, gave them to *Macrinus* to read, among theſe he found one, written by ſome ſoothſayers to the Prince, wiſhing him to beware of *Macrinus*, for he aimed at the Em-

An. Mundi Empire. *Macrinus* knowing in what danger he was, if *Bassianus* should know of this letter; hires one *Martialis* to kill him; which he did; the souldiers pursued this *Martialis* on horse back as he was flying; and with their arrows shot
4188. *A.C.* 218. him dead. *Macrinus* hearing that the Emperor was slain, came weeping over the dead corps, as if he had known nothing. *Serapion* of Alexandria foretold that *Macrinus* should succeed to *Bassianus*; this *Serapion Antoninus* killed after the lions had spared him. He lived 29 years, and reigned 6 years two moneths.

In *Caracalla*'s time the Tertullianists sprung up who taught the traduction of soules, and that after death they were converted into divels. *Origen* (called *Adamantinus* for his indefatigable pains,) writes divers books, and visits the See of Rome. The Christians enjoy rest from persecution, for *Antoninus* had sucked the breasts of a Christian, who in his youth promised much goodnesse, and was so tender hearted, that he wept, when he heard of any that were to be flung to wild beasts; but when he was Emperor, God made him a scourge to the Romans who had shed the innocent bloud of many Christians.

4188. *A.C.* 218. *Opilius Macrinus* an African, as untoward in conditions, as he was in countenance, was made Emperor by the Syrian Armies, and confirmed by the Senat, not out of any affection to him, but out of hatred to *Bassianus*, being guilty, both of paricide, incest, and all kind of wickednesse. He made war with the Parthians, but being worsted was fain to buy his peace; that he might give himself over to his pleasures at Antioch, whence he banished *Julia Augusta* for some harsh words she had let fall against him, and afterward procured her death: as he did of all others who repined at his birth and Government. For his cruelty he was called *Macellinus* from *macellum* a shambles, for his house was little better. Therefore for his cruelty, voluptuousnesse, and parcimony toward the souldiers, he was hated by them. He used to burn adulterers alive, binding fast their bodies together. He inclosed two souldiers into two oxen, their heads sticking out, that they might speak and breath, & so there they remained till they dyed: for a rape committed on their hostesse: He called *Diadumenus* his son, *Antoninus*, knowing how grateful that name was to the souldiers, & made him *Cæsar*, and his colleague in the Empire. But *Mesia Julia*'s sister, which was the wife of *Severus*, had two daughters *Soæmis* Concubine of *Bassianus*, who of her begot *Heliogabalus* and *Mammæa*, the mother of *Alexander*. *Severus* begot of her by *Varius Marcellus*. This *Mæsia* by bribing the souldiers, got them to fall off from *Macrinus* to her son *Heliogabalus*. *Macrinus* sent *Julian* to destroy both the mother and son, but the souldiers killed *Julian*, & adhered to *Heliogabalus*, whereupon a battell was fought, in which both *Macrinus* and his son were slain. He used to punish informers with death, if they failed in their proofs, if not, he rewarded them; but still with disgrace: he lived 54 years, and reigned 14 months.

4189. *A.C.* 219. *Varius Antoninus Heliogabalus* was elected Emperor, with no lesse applause then rejected with indignation. He was called *Varius* becaus some think *Varius Marcellus* was his father; *Antoninus* from *Bassianus*, who by *Soæmis* was said to be his father, and *Heliogabalus*, or as it is in ancient coines *Elagabalus*, from the name of the Idol, whose Priest he was, either from the Hebrew *El-Gebal*, the God *Gebal*, or from Ἥλιος the sun, and the Syriac *Gabal*, which signifieth Bounds or Confines, because the Sun bounds or confines the year, by his motion in the Ecliptick. This Idol was a statue of a triangular figure, representing the Sun whose Priest he was. He loved his mother so well, that he was altogether ruled by her. He set up the service of his Syrian God upon Mount Palatine, intending to have him worshipped every where. He exposed all honours to sale. He put *Pomponius Bassus* and many other worthy men to death, for prying into his manners. He marryed *Bassus* his wife, then repudiated her for having one spot in her fair body. Then he marryed with *Aquila Severa* a vestall Virgin, and afterward marryed himself to men, as if he had been a woman. He sacrificed men to his Idol: he fed his dogs with goose livers: his Palace was a meer bawdy house, he never spent lesse on a supper, then 30 *l.* weight of silver. He caused 10 thousand pound weight of Cobwebs from all parts of Rome to be brought to him, by that shewing the greatnesse of the city. He caused himself to be drawn into his Court, by 4 great dogs, & never would wag

any

any where without 600 Chariots, shewing that the Persian King never travelled *An. Mundi*
with lesse then 10000 Camels: he spent whole dayes together among roses and sweet ointments; he sent yearly presents to his flatterers, to wit, vessels full of snakes and scorpions, and boxes full of flies, calling them tame Bees: he wore no shoes but what were beset with rich jewels: he used to have tame Lions and Leopards at his table: he married his Idol of the Sun to the *Palladium* or Image of *Pallas*, which he caused to be brought into his chamber; then divorced them because she was armed, and made a match between his Idol and *Urania*, which represented the Moon; which Idol was consecrated by *Dido*, and held in much veneration by the Africans; this *Urania* had a great dowry conferred on her; and Festivall dayes appointed through all Italy for joy of this marriage betweene the Sun and Moon. This Image of the Sun he translated from the City, into the Temple which he built in the Suburbs, with great solemnity he himselfe going backward before the Chariots, causing all the way to be strowed with the dust of gold; then assembling multitudes of people together from a high tower, he flung down amongst them gold and silver plate, and other rich things, which occasioned a great destruction, people treading down one another.

When *Heliogabalus* saw that the Senats affection was more set upon *Alexander* his cousin German, whom they had made *Cæsar*, then on himself, he adopts him, but shortly after repenting, indeavoured to murther him, because he would not follow and approve of his wicked courses; wherefore the souldiers intended to cut off this young *Sardanapalus*, for so they called him; yet for this time they spared him, upon hopes he would reform (being yet but young) and put away from him his evill Counsellors, but he grew rather worse; and sought to murther *Alexander*: wherefore the souldiers fell furiously upon his followers, and parasites, cut them in peeces, and slew the Tyrant in the privy, where he went to hide himselfe; whose body was dragged up and down, and flung at last into the river being fastened to a great stone. His mother, with whom he used to commit incest was slain with him; and an Act made, that never henceforth any woman should be suffered 4193.
to come into the Senat: for her son was wont to bring her thither. He lived 18 *A. C.* 223.
years, and tyrannized almost 4. From the manner of his death, and place of buryall, he was called *Tractitius* and *Tiberinus*, he gave way to the rebuilding of Nicopolis or Emaus in Palestina, upon the intreaty of *Julius Africanus* a learned Christian. He thought to have abolished all religions except that of his Idol, or else to transfer all religions, even the Christian to Mount Palatine.

Aurelius Alexander, by birth a Syrian, was son to *Varius*, and *Mammæa*, he would neither be adored nor flattered, nor take upon him the name of *Antoninus* or *Mag-* 4193.
nus; yet for his strict life & Government, he was called by the souldiers *Severus*. He *A. C.* 223.
countenanced Christians. His mother was a Christian, and a great lover of *Origen*. He was much addicted to learning and learned men. He kept the souldiers in awe by paying them duly, and disbanding the refractory, sometimes by whole Legions together, knowing that poverty made souldiers desperate, and due pay kept them in awe. He suffered none of *Heliogabalus* his preferring to stay in their places: and never bestowed preferment but on those that seemed to be unwilling. He cared not for rich apparell, saying that *Principality consisted in vertue, not in ornaments*. He was milde, curteous, and affable. He would have had all offices, trades, and callings, masters and servants, to wear distinct apparell. He repaired all Cities demolished with Earth-quakes, but would bestow no gold on Temples; shewing that it was needlesse there. He forbad the use or abuse rather of Evnuchs. He admitted no magistrate, but such as the people approved off, knowing that mens estates and lives depended on them. He assigned salaries for all publick officers. He suffered no place to be bought, saying: *he that buys must sell*. He caused one to be stifled with smoak, for selling promises of preferment: the Executioner in the meane time crying, *He is punished with smoak that sold smoak*. He had in his private chappell the Images of *Christ*, *Abraham*, *Apollonius*, and *Orpheus*. He would have built a Temple for Christ, but that he feared the Gentile Temples then would be forsaken. He made much of that Christian

Ne Mundi sentence; *Do to all men, as you would have all men doe to you.* Understanding that one *Camillus* sought to be Emperor, and to make a rebellion, he thanked him for affecting that charge, which good men did avoid, then did he make him his Colleague, clothed him richly, and made him undertake the managing of the wars with him, till he was weary, and so upon his desire was dismissed, and sent safely home. The Christians had got a publike place to exercise in, which the Cookes challenged did belong to them: *Severus* told them, that it *was a place fitter for the worship of God, then the dressing of meat.*

Artaxerxes the Persian King came into the field with a mighty Army in which were 700 Elephants, 1800 hooked Chariots. He having subdued the Parthian King *Artabanus*, and united both Kingdomes: he demanded restitution of all the Asiatick countries, which of old belonged to the Persian Monarchy. *Severus* returned him this answer, that he were best make much of what he had in possession, and not meddle with the Roman confines, lest he buy his demanded purchase at too dear a rate. This answer not being satisfactory, but injuries increasing dayly; a battell was fought, in which the Romans took 300 Elephants, 200 Chariots, and defeated 100 and 80 thousand horse, and Mesopotamia was recovered, the Persians redeemed their Captives, and never durst in 40 years space take the field again: the Romans also lost many of their men in this battell. They had also good successe in Armenia, Mauritania, and Illyricum. The enemies lands were bestowed on the souldiers that were left to guard the borders, and on their sonnes, if they proved souldiers. After this, when *Severus* had quelled the rebelling Germans, and had commanded the disbanding of some seditious Legions, he was murthered with his mother *Mammæa* by the German souldiers who could not indure to be curbed, having injoyed so much liberty under *Heliogabalus*: this murther was committed by the instigation of *Maximinus* that barbarous Thracian, pretending that his exactions upon the Provintes, caused by his covetous mother, were insupportable. One of the *Druids* foretold him this fatall stroke, by wishing him to beware of the souldiers. He dyed neer Mentz in Germany, in the year of his life 29. of his Empire 13. His chief Counsellors were *Ulpianus* the great Lawyer, and *Fulvius Paulus.*

Ulpian was a great enemy to Christians, causing many of them to be put to death; but he himselfe was killed in the night by the Prætorian Guard. Pope *Calixtus* was flung into a deep well and drowned. *Calepodius* the Presbyter then suffered; so did *Hyppolitus* a learned Christian. Under *Ulpian* Governour of the City, the Sect of Valesians then flourished; who after the example of *Origen* gelded themselves; therefore were called Eunuchs: then was *Origen* excommunicate for his errors. *Cæcilia* the Virgin was then martyred. *Hierom* about this time translated the Hebrew Bible into Latine; because there was great altercation about the LXX. Translation, being then three editions, to wit, *Origens*, *Lucians* the Martyr, and that of *Hesychius*. Then *Gregorius Thaumaturgus* so called, and *Magnus* too, for his great learning and wonders, was martyred. Hee was Bishop of Neocæsaria, the scholar of *Origen*; his name before was *Theodorus*; then *Ammonius* a Christian Philosopher professed publickly at Alexandria; then were there common buriall places made without the City for Christians, called *Cœmeteria*, *Area*, *Tumba*, *Catatumba*, *Cryptæ*, &c.

CHAP.

An. Mundi

CHAP. V.

The Roman affaires under Maximinus, Philip, Decius, Gallus, Valerian, Gallienus *and others.* 2. *The Christian and forraign affairs of those times.*

Maximinus a Thracian, whose father was a Goth, and his mother an Alan, or Scythian; was the first that without the Senats decree, by the souldiers was made Emperor; to whom he joined his son for his Colleague: he being conscious of his mean parentage, hated the Senat and Nobility, whom he murthered at his pleasure, and all those that knew his originall: he murthered at one time 4000, at another time in Germany beyond the Rhene, hee plundered and burned the countrey for 400 miles together, killing multitudes of people: thence he intended to make war against the Sarmatians, and to reduce all those Northern countries to the Roman obedience; but neither the Romans nor Armies could indure his cruelty; therefore in Africa the souldiers in a sudden tumult made old *Gordianus* being now 80 years of age Emperor, against his will, he was Deputy Consul of Africa; the army having killed *Maximinus* his Procurator, put upon *Gordian* the Imperiall robe, and saluted him with his son by the name of *Augustus*: he was brought to Carthage in great pompe, whence he wrote to the Senat, how he was forcibly elected Emperor. The Senat out of hatred to *Maximinus*, approved his election, gave order to destroy all *Maximinus* his friends; they declare him and his son enemies to the State, and Letters are directed to all the Provinces, to shake off their allegiance: which inraged *Maximinus*: he bribed the souldiers, and makes haste for Rome.

4026. A.C. 236.

4028. A.C. 238.

Capellianus a Commander under *Maximinus* in Africa, raised an army against *Gordianus*. The old Emperor sends his son with sufficient forces to encounter him: the skirmish was hot, in which young *Gordian* was killed; as soone as the Father hears of his sons death, knowing the cruelty and strength of *Maximinus*, and the perfidiousnesse with the weaknesse of the Africans, he strangles himself. Then did *Capellianus* either banish or murther all that were of *Gordianus* his side. He robs the Temples, plunders the cities, and gives the spoile to the souldiers: when the Senat heard of this, they erected two Emperors, to wit, *Maximus Papienus* the city Captain, and *Clodius Balbinus*, of an ancient and noble Family, to whom they join the young nephew of *Gordian* by his sister. *Maximus* marched forth with an army, *Balbinus* stayed in the city to appease the tumults: for the Senators fell upon the Pretorian guard for prying into their secrets, and the Guard fall upon the people; fire and sword rageth through the city, neither could the tumult be appeased till young *Gordian* was presented to the people.

When *Maximinus* had entred Italy, his army was pinched with famine, all the provision of the countrey being carried into strong Towns and Garrisons. *Aquileja* shuts the gates against him: he besiegeth it round; but the Inhabitants made stout resistance, continually annoying the souldiers with darts, stones, fire-brands, burning pitch and brimstone; and when their Engines grew useless for want of strings or cords, the women made strings of their hairs. *Maximinus* being mad that he could doe no good upon the town, thinking it had been the lasinesse or cowardise of the souldiers, put many of the Commanders to death, which so exasperated the souldiers, that whilest *Maximinus* and his son in the heat of the day were resting in the tent, they rush in and killed them both, saying: *Of a naughty brood, one whelp is not to be left alive.* Their heads on long poles were carried about Aquileja to be seen, and thence to Rome, to the great joy of the people and Senat, which had sacrificed to their Gods, that *Maximinus* should never return alive. Thus dyed he who of a shepheard, and then of a foot-boy to *Severus* became Emperor. His nimblenesse in running, keeping pace with *Severus* his horse, made him a Tribune, his son was a comely youth, but haughty and wicked, permitting men to kisse his knees and feet: their bodyes were flung into the river, and their heads

heads disgracefully used, then burnt in *Campus Martius*, the people stiling him *Cyclops, Busiris, Antæus.*

He raised the six persecution against Christians, out of malice to *Alexanders* Family, because many of them professed Christianity, and to palliate this cruelty, it was given out that the Gods had sent divers earthquakes lately for tolerating Christianity, and neglecting their service. Then was *Pontianus* Bishop of Rome martyred, and within a month his successor *Anterus* with many others, chiefly Clergy men.

4209. A.C. 239. *Maximus* and *Balbinus* striving for superiority, the former standing upon his valour, the latter on his nobility, gave occasion to the souldiers who loved neither of them, (because chosen by the Senat,) to murther them both. Whereupon *Gordianus* is proclaimed *Augustus* being 13 years old, or as others say 16. His short reign was presaged by a great earthquake, and such an eclipse of the Sun, that they were fain to burn candles by day: he suppressed the faction of Africa raised against him by *Sabinianus*; then marryed with the daughter of *Misitheus* a wise and learned man, whose advise he alwayes used. After this he openeth the Temple of *Janus*, and denounceth war against *Sapores* the Parthian King, who had invaded Mesopotamia. He goeth into Mæsia, subdues his enemies in Thracia, drives the Persians out of Antiochia, and takes many other townes from the enemy: he fils all the Garrisons and frontier Towns with provision; but after the death of *Misitheus* his father in law, he was slighted by the army for his youth, and one *Philip* is appointed to be his tutor, and Governor; who insulting over the young Prince, first thrust him quite out of Government; then gave way to murther him, which was done by nine assasinats, who all of them afterward slew themselves, with the same swords that murthered their Lord. This was the end of *Gordian* the third, in the 20 or 22 year of his age, having reigned 6 years. This priviledge the Senat bestowed upon his family that none of them should bee called to publick offices or imployments against their wills. This Epitaph was set up for him on the confines of Persia in Latin, Greek, Persian, Hebrew, and Ægyptian letters *Divus Gordianus conqueror of the Persians, Goths, Sarmatians, subduer of the the Roman seditions, conqueror of the Germans, but not of the Philips.* About this time *Helcesaites* suffered Martyrdom, whose brests were first cut off, and flung to wilde beasts, then she was tortured with fire, and at last beheaded.

Philip the Arabian of obscure parentage succeeded with his son *Saturninus*, whom now he cals *Philip*: he made peace with the Persian, built Philippopolis in Arabia, made a great Part for water beyond Tibris where water was scarse, and celebrated the thousand year of the city with secular sports, in which were shewed to the people all sorts of wild beasts, as Lions, Leopards, Tigers, Elephants, &c. which *Gordian* had provided for his Persian triumph. But such multitudes of torches there were in the night time that a great part of the city took fire; *Philip* was the first Emperor that was baptized, but was not admitted to the Communion, till he had publickly made confession of his former sins, his son was so grave, that he was never observed to laugh. *Philip* having sent *Decius* against the rebelling Pannonians, was by him stript both of his life and Empire. For *Philip* hearing that *Decius* was made Emperor by the Pannonian souldiers, left his son in the city, and marcheth against him with an army, the battell was fought at *Verona*, in which *Philip* is slain and his army defeated; upon the news of this, his son is slain at Rome being 12 years old, they reigned 6 years.

4220. A.C. 250.

About this time the Arabian heresie, concerning the dying or sleeping of the souls with their bodies, and their rising again the last day, was refuted by a Synod held in Arabia, and by *Origen* who disputed against them. Then did Cyprian succeed *Donatus* in the Bishoprick of Carthage: who scoffingly was nicknamed *Caprian* by his adversaries. The Christians in Alexandria, are persecuted, among the rest, *Apollonia* the Virgin, who suffered all her teeth to be beat out, her jaws broken, and at last to be burned, rather then she would blaspheme. The Helcesaites denying *Pauls* writings, and holding mentall faith sufficient, without orall confession, are refuted by *Origen.*

Decius

Decius a Pannonian born, is with his son *Decius* confirmed in the Empire by the Senat. In their reign was a great persecution. *Babylas* was martyred at Antioch, *Alexander* at Jerusalem, *Fabianus* at Rome, all Bishops. *Babylas* did first see his 3 sonnes martyred, exhorting them to constancie, then suffered himself, his wife looking on, who buryed their dead bodies. He had wars with the Goths or Getes of whom he killed 30000. but shortly after his sonne was killed, and he himselfe driven by the Goths into a lake where he was drowned, nor could his body bee found afterward: they reigned two years. In the great and seventh persecution, which was about their time, *Paul*, (and after his example) others retired for security into the wilderneſſe, whence begun the order of Anachorites to increase; then also did *Gregorius Thaumaturgus* retire into the desart. *Ani. Mundi* 4222. *A.C.252.*

Gallus after the death of *Decius* and his son was choſen Emperor by the souldiers and confirmed by the Senat. It's thought that they both loſt their lives by his treachery: he concluded a dishonourable peace with the Goths, making himselfe their Pensioner: then he went to Rome with his son *Volusianus* whom hee made *Cæsar*, and his Colleague in the Empire: hee adopted *Decius* his other sonne, and then murthered him: his cruelty against Christians, and his careleſſe government drew in the Scythians, Goths, Burgundians, and Persians, who wasted the borders of the Empire lying neer them: besides the plague from Æthiopia raged 15 years through the Empire. *Emilianus* Generall to *Gallus*, in one battell defeated the Goths. Whereupon he was made Emperor by the souldiers, which *Gallus* understanding, marched with his son against him; but they were both slain in the second year of their reign, and *Emilianus* 3 months after was killed by his souldiers in the 40 year of his age. 4224. *A.C.254.*

About this time *Novatus* and his sectaries lived, who called themselves *Cathari*, that is, Puritans, they denyed hope of pardon to those that fell in time of persecution: he was condemned by a Synod of 60 Bishops called by Pope *Cornelius*; and so he was by *Cyprian* and by the Bishops of Africa. *Sabellius* then taught that there was but one person of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. *Origen* about this time died being 68 years old, who at Alexandria had indured divers tortures for Christ, at last offered incense to the Idol, to avoid the abusing of his body by a Blackmore; for which fact he spent the rest of his time in weeping, and silence, refusing to Preach or write any more: not long before this, in the time of *Decius* seven young men at Epheſus, to avoid the persecution fled into a cave, where being shut up by their persecutors, slept in the Lord; hence they were called The seven sleepers; then *Pionius* Bishop of Smyrna, *Agatha* the Virgin, and many others were martyred. Pope *Cornelius* also suffered martyrdom about that time.

Lucius Valerianus being now aged is made Emperor in Rhetia: his son *Gallienus* is made *Cæsar*. *Valerian* had gone with much credit through all degrees of honor, at first he was a great friend of the Christians, till he was perverted by a certain Magician of Egypt: who brought him to exercise diabolicall arts, to sacrifice men and children, and persecute the Christians. For which impieties the whole Empire is punished with famine, plagues and war; the Scythians and Marcomans break in upon Macedonia and Greece: the Goths and Burgundians upon Italy, the Scythians and Persians rage in Asia. *Valerian* having left the Government of the West to *Gallienus*, makes an expedition into the East against the Persians who had taken Antiochia and Cæsarea: he did what he could to keep out the Scythians, but in vain, for they brake in with such multitudes, that they burnt and sackt Trapezus, Chalcedon, Nicomedia, Nicæa, and many other towns, carrying away infinite booties and numbers of people. At last finding his army wasted with sickneſſe, and that he was not able to encounter with *Sapores* the Persian, he offered to buy his peace, but *Macrinus* his Ægyptian witch, who had incensed him against the Christians, betrayes him to *Sapores*, who so long as hee lived used him as his foot-stoole when he took horse, at last flead him alive; his sonne *Gallienus* deified him after his death, whom he neglected in his life. For he rejoyced when he heard his Father was dead; that being freed from a censor, he might give himselfe to his pleasures, leaving the East at randome, which 4231. *A.C.261.*

was

An. Mundi was invaded by *Macrinus*, or *Macrianus*, with his two ſonnes *Macrinus* and *Quietus*.

So weary were the ſouldiers of *Gallienus*, and ſo giddy headed, that in his time they choſe no leſſe then 30 Emperors, every army ſetting up their own Generall. The Gauls & Germans were driven out of Italy, with their Emperor by *Gallienus*. *Ingenuus* is overthrown by him at Murſia, and whole Cities left deſolate. *Regilianus* is defeated alſo by *Gallienus*, and *Piſo* in Theſſaly by *Valens*, is killed and he by the ſouldiers ſhortly after. *Aurelius* in Illyricum overthrowes *Macrianus*, who came thither out of Aſia with 44000 men: he with his ſon *Macrinus* were both killed, and 30000 of his ſouldiers became priſoners to *Aurelius*. His other ſon *Quietus* and *Baliſta*, were defeated and ſlain by *Odenatus*. Thus was *Macrianus* puniſhed with his two ſons, for his treachery againſt *Valerian*, and the Chriſtians: and *Gallienus* for his favour to them began again to flouriſh: he proclaimed peace through all the Provinces, and permitted Chriſtians to have their meetings in their *Cœmeteria*. *Æmilianus* Governour of Egypt and *Thebais* for his cruelty againſt Chriſtians, was in a conflict taken priſoner by *Theodotus*, *Gallienus* his Generall, ſent to Rome, and there ſtrangled in priſon: he had been made Emperor by the ſouldiers, who ſo tyranniſed that *Dionyſius* Biſhop of Alexandria, was glad to fly with many more to the Deſarts of Arabia: where in ſtead of preaching, he ſpent his time in writing. *Cauſoleus* brother to *Theodotus* defeated *Trebellius*, whom the Iſaurians a people in the leſſer Aſia had made Emperor. Yet henceforth they ſhook off the Roman yoak, truſting to the naturall ſtrength of their country, more then to their men.

In *Gallienus* his time *Poſthumus* rebelled in Gallia, and armed the Franci a people neer the Rhene, not known or named before this time in any Hiſtorian. He governed with great moderation for 10 years, at laſt was ſlain by his ſouldiers. In his time alſo beſides the miſery of war, there were divers earthquakes, and ſuch darkneſſe for many dayes together, that people dyed with fear. So great was the plague at Rome and Achaja, that 5000 dyed in one day. Macedonia is overrun by the Gothes; Aſia by the Scythians, who ſpoiled and burned the Temple of *Diana*; Sicilia by the ſlaves; Gallia and Spain by the Francs. *Saloninus Gallienus* his ſon is killed by *Poſthumius*, and *Gallienus* himſelf wounded; his father a priſoner and ſlave in Perſia. Yet for all this *Gallienus* muſt triumph at Rome over the Perſians by whom his father was beaten; ſo that ſcoffingly among the Perſian captives at Rome, inquiry was made for *Valerian* the Emperour.

The valour and fidelity of *Odenatus*, Generall of *Gallienus* in the Eaſt, is remarkable; for when all ſeemed to be loſt, he raiſeth an army, takes in Niſibis and Meſopotamia, defeates *Sapores*, and makes him fly, ſeiſeth on all his treaſures and Concubines, ſends the captive Perſian Nobility to Rome, to be inſulted over; in requittall of which good ſervice, he makes *Odenatus* his Colleague, in his Empire, cals him *Auguſtus*, and on his money ſtampt his victories. In the mean while the Scythians returning home with their booties and captives, were moſt of them drowned by ſhipwrack. And ſuch is the uncertainty of military felicity, that *Odenatus* by the treachery of *Meonius* his couſin german is ſlain with his ſonne *Herodes*; and *Meonius* ſhortly after by the ſouldiers. *Zenobia* the maſculine wife of *Odenatus* undertook the Government in her childrens minority, ſo dexterouſly, that ſhe kept all about her in ſubjection: So was *Poſthumius* after all his good ſervices ſlain in Gallia by *Lollianus*, and he by *Victorinus*, the ſon of *Victorina*, who like another *Zenobia* by the help of *Tetricus* and *Marius*, ſtopt the incurſions of the Barbarians. *Victorinus* a brave Emperor, but given to women, is murthered by the means of a woman the wife of *Attitianus*, whom he loved. *Marius* a Blackſmith is made Emperor, and the third day after was murthered by his ſervant. Then was *Tetricus* made Emperor by *Victorina*. He was of a noble extraction, and Governour of Gaſconie: his ſon *Tetricus* is made *Caſar*.

Gallienus wholely addicted to his pleaſures neglected the Government: among

among divers of his ridiculous Acts, this is one; he cauſed a certain fellow for ſelling glaſſe jewels in ſtead of true, to be brought to the place, where he was to be caſt to the Lions; but inſtead of a Lion, he lets a Capon out of the coop upon him; whileſt the people ſtood wondering at this toy, he cauſed this to be proclaimed: *the cheater is cheated.* His careleſneſſe drew *Aureolus* with an Army of Rhetians and Pannonians towards Rome, whom *Gallienus* met and drove him into Millain; having defeated his Army. But *Gallienus* was not long after by *Martianus* and *Heraclianus* murthered in the dark, as he ſuddenly ran out of his tent, upon a noiſe that the enemy was breaking in upon him. *Aureolus* was guilty of this murther; for he deviced letters in which were written the names of the Tribunes and chief Captaines of *Gallienus* his Army whom he meant to ſlay; theſe Letters were ſecretly flung over the wall, and taken up, as if they had been loſt by chance. By this device *Gallienus* was ſuſpected, and ſo murthered, having reigned 9 years alone, and 6 with his Father. He was deified by his ſucceſſor *Claudius*; but vilified by the Senat, who decreed that his friends and courtiers ſhould bee flung down the Gemonian ladders, and prayed the infernall Gods, that his place might be among the wicked. *An. Mundi*

Gallienus was a wicked Prince yet mild towards the Chriſtians, who put an end to the perſecution by his Father *Valerian*, under whom Pope *Xiſtus* was martyred; *Cyprian* beheaded; and S. *Laurence* the Deacon, broyled. About this time was the great diſpute concerning rebaptization. *Cyprian* made hereticall baptiſm void. The Biſhops of Rome held it to be good; and ſo did *Dionyſius* of Alexandria; only he made void the Baptiſm of thoſe hereticks which denyed the Trinity. He alſo refuted the Millenaries opinion of Chriſts 1000 years reign. About this time ſprung up the Angel-worſhippers, called *Angelici*, who were quickly extinguiſhed; and the *Apoſtolici*, who held it ſin to poſſeſſe either goods or wives: then was *Samoſatenus* who denyed Chriſts Divinity, condemned by the Synod at Antiochia: and depoſed afterward by *Aurelian*.

30

CHAP. VI.

1. *The Roman affaires under* Claudius, Aurelianus, Tacitus, Probus, Proculus, Bonoſus, Carus, Numerianus *and* Carinus. 2. *Of* Zenobia, *and of the Chriſtian and forraign affaires.*

FLavius *Claudius* a Dalmatian, was by the Senat and ſouldiers named Emperor. He was ſtiled by the Senat, *Father, Brother, Friend.* He overthrew *Aureolus* in a battell and ſlew him. He defeated the Alemans, neer the lake Benacus. The Goths, and Scythians, to the number of 300 and 20000. fall upon divers parts of the Empire, at ſuch a time when the Romans had neither offenſive nor defenſive Armes, when *Tetricus* had all Gallia and Spain, the chiefe ſtrength of the Commonwealth, when *Zenobia* had al the Archers with her, yet the Barbarians were ſtill put to the worſt both at Mæſia, Martianopolis, Byzantium and Theſſalonica. Multitudes of them fled to the hill Hemus, where without purſuing of *Claudius*, they dyed of the plague and famine. The Romans careleſſely buſied about their plunder, loſt 2000 of their men by the Scythians in their flight, returning upon the Romans; but this loſs was repayed with the ſlaughter of 50000 Scythians. 4239. *A.C.* 269.

About this time *Zenobia* Queen of Palmyrena a Town and Countrey of Syria, raiſed an Army of 80000 againſt Egypt, and cauſed the Egyptians to receive a Garriſon; but *Probus* Admirall of thoſe Seas under *Claudius* drove out the Garriſon againe, and with an Army of Egyptians and Africans, defeated the Palmyrenians; but ſhortly after being betrayed by *Timogenes* the Egyptian, he killed himſelf. The Scythians invaded Crete and Cyprus, but could doe no good by reaſon of the ſickneſſe that followed them; of which *Claudius* dyed at Sirmium in Pannonia neer Danubius. He was not only deified, but had a golden ſtatue

erected

An. Mundi erected to him, neer Jupiter in the Capitol; and a golden Target with his Image on it in the Curia. He dyed of the plague with which also the Roman Army was infected.

Quintillus his brother succeeded, a Prince of excellent parts had he lived; but he dyed the 17 day of his Empire, being slain by his souldiers for his severity; or as others say, at Aquileja he killed himselfe for anger, that *Aurelianus* was made Emperor by the souldiers. In *Claudius* his time the Christians began to be persecuted a fresh. An edict being published that all Christians should keep within their prisons, otherwayes they should bee punished if any of them were found abroad.

4241. *Aurelianus* was elected Emperor by the souldiers; he had given good proof of
A.C. 271. his valour in the time of *Claudius* by expelling the Goths out of Thracia. In the Sarmatian war he slew in one day with his own hands 48 of his enemies, and in divers battels above 950. He was born in Syrmium of mean parentage, his mother was a priestesse of the Sun. He was a valiant but cruell Prince. He caused a souldier for committing adultery with his hostesse, to be torn asunder between the bowes of two trees. He kept the souldiers in such awe, that they durst not quarrell, nor be seen in Taverns, nor suffered to steal or rob the least thing without punishment. He recovered all the Roman bounds invaded by the Barbarians. He overcame the Marcomans, and in 3 great battels, to wit, at Placentia, at the river Metaurus and in the Fields of Ticinum now called Papia in Insubria. But not without great losse of the Romans, who presumed so much on his valour, that they thought it needlesse to implore the help of the Gods. He returnes to Rome and appeaseth the City seditions, having put to death the chief incendiaries, and some Senators too, for small offences, taking the witnesse of one mean man against them. He inlarged and strengthened the Roman wals, so that now they were 50 miles in compasse. He marcheth against *Zenobia*, now Queen of Egypt, and of the East; in the way he had many skirmishes with the Barbarians. Thyana shut the gates against him, whereat he vowed he would not leave one dog alive in the town; yet when it was betrayed, he spared it, killing onely the Dogs for his oaths sake, and the Traitour, saying: *He that was not faithfull to his countrey, would be faithfull to none*: then he recovers Antiochia, and afterward defeates *Zenobia*, (after the Roman Horse had fled) by the Foot incouraged to fight, by a divine apparition. So at last *Zenobia* being discomfited, hee enters Emissa victoriously.

Aurelian having quieted the Syrians, Persians, Saracens, Armenians, and Egyptians, besiegeth Palmyra, and in it *Zenobia*, whom he had already overthrown in battels. She finding the town in danger, makes an escape, toward Persia upon Dromodaries, but is overtaken and brought back to *Aurelian*, who reserves her and her children for the triumph. He spared the town, but slew *Longinus* the Philosopher, and the other Authors of this war. Having pacified the East, he returns to Europe; where he subdues the Carpi; in the mean time the Palmyrians rebell, fills the Garrison, and delivers *Achilleus* to his enemy. *Aurelian* upon this returns in fury, levels the town with the ground, and kils men, women, and children. Then returning to the West, he makes Egypt quiet; thence he marcheth against Tetricus in Gallia, who delivers up his Army, which he could not rule to *Aurelian*; some of these Legions he subdued, the rest submitted to him. So having quieted East aud West, he is carryed in triumph through Rome, and was the first that wore the Diadem with Robes all of gold and rich stones. After *Zenobia* had been led in triumph with her children, they were permitted to live privately at Rome.

In his time the coyners of false money, fearing to suffer, rebelled, and raised an army of 7000 in the city; whom *Aurelian* overthrew, and cruelly used. He condemned also many of the Nobility. He removed the Roman Garrisons out of Dacia which he could not keep, and placed them in Mæsia. He increased the citie provisions, he made an *amnesty* or act of Oblivion, and put downe all informers. He punished exacting and corrupt Officers most rigorously. He was rich in gold

and

and jewels, which he laid up in the Temple of the Sun. At last having denounced war against the Persians, in the way betweene Heraclea and Byzantium, hee was murthered by his Secretary *Mnesteus*, who fearing to be questioned for some bribes he had taken, and for exaction, counterfeited the princes hand, and sent abroad among the souldiers the names of those whom *Valerian* meant to cut off; but falsely. The souldiers thinking this to be true, plotted his death. But when truth was discovered, *Valerian* was honoured with a Temple, and *Mnesteus* flung to the wild beasts. *An. Mundi* 4246. *A.C.* 276.

In his time *Samosatenus* Bishop of Antioch, was maintained in his heresie by *Zenobia*, then Queene of all that Countrey. Whilest *Aurelian* was putting pen to paper to subscribe an edict against the Christians, his armes were taken and shaken with such a sudden palsie, that he could not write. Now dyed *Plotinus* the Philosopher, and *Porphyrie* his scholar, first a Christian, afterwards becomes the bitter enemy of Christ, against whom the eight, or (with others) the ninth persecution was raised, in which Pope *Felix* was martyred. Now the Manichees spread, and *Manes* their Patron is flead alive by the Persian King, for undertaking to cure his sick son with his prayers, which he could not doe, for the child dyed. In the Sea of Antioch *Domnus* succeeded to *Samosatenus*, and to him *Timæus*. *Aurelian* reigned 6 years.

To him succeeded *Claudius Tacitus*, chosen by the Senat, six moneths after *Aurelians* death; for all that time the souldiers refused to choose any, leaving the election to the Senat, at which all good men rejoyced. But he reigned not much above six months, for he dyed of a feaver, some say he was killed by the souldiers, being 66 years of age. He was an excellent Governour: he caused a golden statue to be erected to *Aurelian*, and put to death all that had a hand in his murther: his brother *Florianus* succeeded as heir, without consent of Senat or Army, wherefore he continued not much above two moneths, for understanding that *Probus* was chosen Emperor by the Armies, and was marching against him, he fell into a deep melancholy, and killed himself; others say, he was killed by his Guard, being 23 years old. He affected the Empire, which his brother *Tacitus* refused; who made it death to adulterate money; who bestowed his Patrimony on publick uses. He highly honoured *Tacitus* the Historian, placing him in every Library: he was very spare in his dyet, and modest in his apparell, wearing no richer then private men use to wear; nor did he suffer his wife to wear jewels: he never suffered a night to passe, in which he did not either read or write somewhat: He was too good for the Romans to enjoy long. 4247. *A.C.* 277.

Aurelius Probus succeeded, being a good man both in name and life. He was an Hungarian born, and son of *Maximus* the Tribune. The souldiers made him Emperor against his will; and when it was propounded, that none should be chosen but he that was valiant, just, holy, modest, and milde, all cryed out with one voice, *God save Augustus Probus*. He was made a Tribune, before he had a beard: he executed justice on those that plotted the death of *Aurelian* and *Tacitus*: but spared them that followed *Florian*, because he was the Princes brother, and no tyrant: he drove the Germans out of Gaul, & recovered from them 60 Cities, & killed almost 400000 Barbarians. 9 German petty kings humbly submitted, and fell flat at his feet. He suppressed the Getes and Sarmatians: then marching into the East, he cleared those countries of oppression, robbers, and high way men: he made peace with the Persians. And translated 100000 Bastarni (a people of Sarmatia) into the Roman Territories: he suppressed the Vandals and others who rebelled: hee overthrew *Saturninus* Warden of the East Marches. Him the Egyptians against his will saluted Emperor. *Probus* sent him mild Letters, and promises of pardon, but the souldiers would not trust him; wherefore he was fain to subdue him by force of armes; whom he overthrew in divers battels, at last besieged him, whom the souldiers took and slew, though against *Probus* his will. He overcame also *Proculus* whom the Gaules had saluted Emperor. And *Bonosus* the great Drinker, called therefore the *Hanging Tankart*: this man was imployed by *Aurelian*, to entertain Embassadours purposely to fox them, that thereby he might fish out of 4247. *A.C.* 277.

An. Mundi them their secrets. He being overcome by *Probus* strangled himself. But his wife (being a noble Goth and a good woman) hee respected and bestowed on her whilest she lived a yearly Pension. But the wicked souldiers could not long brook so good a Prince; for they hated him because he would not suffer them to live idlely like drones, and to feed upon the sweat of other mens labours; therefore he imployed them in making vineyards throughout Gallia, Pannonia and Mæsia: and as he was imploying them to drain the fens of Syrmium, where he was born, there he was murthered, having fled into a tower, but to no purpose. He reigned about 6. years, and lived 75.

4252. Thus ended that good Emperor, whose Epitaph was this: *Here lieth* Probus
A. C. 282. *the Emperor, truly* Probus, *or good. Conqueror of the Barbarians, Conqueror of the Tyrants.* After his death the souldiers grew exorbitant, taking on them the full power to choose the Emperor, which the Senat out of covetousnesse, or cowardise, or factions, neglected. In his time *Trophimus* and others were martyred at Antioch. Pope *Eutychianus* who had buryed with his own hands 42 Martyrs, suffered martyrdom himself.

Carus Captain of the Guard succeeded. Him *Probus* had recommended to the Senat for a brave man. He suppressed the Sarmatians, making irruptions upon Pannonia and Thracia, and made them quiet after he had killed 16000 of them, and taken prisoners 20000. Hee had two sonnes, *Carinus* and *Numerianus*, these he named *Cæsars*: he commits to *Carinus* (a wild young man) the charge of Gallia; and takes *Numerianus* a solid and eloquent Prince alongst with him into the Persian War. He enters Mesopotamia with a great Army, and takes it. Then marcheth along to Ctesiphon without resistance, and obtaines the title of *Imperator Persicus*. But having passed beyond the bounds of the Empire, he was struck with thunder, and dyed suddenly in his Pavilion. His best sonne *Numerianus* was subject to soar Eyes, which now ware so weake with weeping, that hee was carryed in a Litter. *Arius Aper* his Father in law, aiming to be Emperor himselfe; murthers *Numerianus*, and conceals the fact, giving out that he could not come abroad because of his soare eyes; but the smell of the dead carkasse revealed the murther; whereupon *Diocletian* is chosen Emperor by the Army; and *Aper* slaine by the said *Diocletian*; so the Druide told him, that he should be Emperor when he killed the Boar; which now was fulfilled: for *Aper* is a Boar.

Carinus the other sonne, and another *Heliogabalus* for wickednesse, hearing his Father and Brother to bee dead, grew worse then before. Hee overthrew and killed *Julian* and his Army, who aimed at the Empire. In divers battels he with stood *Diocletian*. At last hee was killed by his own souldiers. He did so degenerate from his Fathers vertues, that he denyed him to be his son. *Numerian* was a good Poet, and like to prove an excellent Prince. Thus *Carus* and his two sonnes reigned about two yeares. *Carus* lived 43 yeares. *Numerianus* 20. and *Carinus* 18. to *Numerianus* was erected an Image of brasse.

CHAP. VII.

The Roman affaires under Diocletian, Maximianus, Galerius, Constantius, *and* Maxentius. 2. *The horrible persecution of Christians under them.* 3. *Of the Persian and forraign affaires of those times.*

4254. *A. C.* 284. *Valerius Diocletianus* born in Dalmatia, his Father was Secretary to *Amilinus* the Senator: his mothers name was *Dioclea*. He finding the Empire subject to so many distractions, did choose a Co-Emperor, *Maximianus* of country parents, but a good souldier. He called him *Herculeus*, and himselfe *Jovius*, after hee had subdued the Persians and Egyptians. They also chose two *Cæsars* to assist and succeed them. *Diocletian* chose *Galerius Maximinus*

minus a Thracian, *Maximinus* elected *Flavius Conſtantius Chlorus*, whom *Carus* meant to have made his ſucceſſor, and to have killed his flagitious ſonne *Carinus*. *Maximianus* marcheth into France, and ſuppreſſes the inſurrections there of the countrey people, and robbers, called by them *Baganda*. Theſe foure thus divided the Empire between them. *Maximianus Herculeus* obtained Italy and Afric. *Conſtantius* all beyond the Alpes Northward. *Galerius* all the coaſt of Illyricum to Pontus. *Diocletian* undertook the reſt. By marriages theſe great Commanders united themſelves, for *Diocletian* beſtowed his daughter *Valeria* upon *Maximinus*. *Max. Herculeus* gave his daughter in law *Theodora* to *Conſtantius*. *Diocletian* ſubdues Egypt, and in it *Achilleus* who called himſelfe Emperor, whom hee condemnes to the wilde Beaſts. Unwalls Alexandria, overthrowes Coptus and Ptolemais, and puniſheth multitudes with perſecution or death.

An. Mundi 4261. *A.C.*291.

Maximinus Cæſar is ſent againſt the Perſians, by whom hee firſt was beaten. Wherefore was harſhly uſed by *Diocletian*, when he came to meet him, for he ſuffered him in his purple robe to run before his chariot a mile or two. At laſt having recruited his army with old ſouldiers, marcheth through Armenia againſt the Parthians; falls ſuddenly upon *Narſus* the the Perſian King, wounds him, and drives him to the mountaines, and takes his wifes, children, Nobility, priſoners; and plunders his Palace and treaſure: and if *Diocletian* had not hindred him, he had made Perſia a province. Yet the Romans got five countreys beyond Tigris, ſo that the paſſing beyond the old bounds of Euphrates was not alwayes unfortunate to the Romans: as the ancient Oracles foretold: becauſe though *M. Craſſus*, *Valerian*, and ſome others miſcarried; yet *Trajan*, *Odenatus*, *Carus*, *Probus*, and this *Maximinus Galerius*, had good ſucceſſe. *Carauſius* invaded Britain, which he held 6 years, till he was traiterouſly killed by his Colleague *Alectus*, whom in 4 years ſpace *Conſtantius* by *Aſclepedatus* captain of his Guard, overthrew, and added Britain again to the Empire.

About this time the Marcomans and Carpi were conquered again; in the mean while the city was well governed, for all oppreſſions and wickedneſſe were ſeverely puniſhed: the poore was provided for with corn, and ſtipends were duly paid. But *Diocletian* gave himſelf to exceſſe in wearing cloth of gold, in treading upon ſilk and purple carpets, beſet with pretious ſtones. In cauſing himſelfe to be called God, and to be adored after the manner of *Caligula*, and *Domitian*. So *Herculeus* gave himſelf over to all licentiouſneſſe, being a man of as ſtern a countenance as conditions. Theſe Emperors triumphed at Rome, where the wives, ſiſters, and children of king *Narſus* were led before the chariot, *Conſtantius* in *Gallia Belgica* did then wage war againſt the Alemans, who after he had by them been driven into the town, where he was taken up by ropes over the wall, (the gates of Lingon or Cangreſſe being ſhut) killed 5 houres after, when his army was come, about 40000 Alemans.

4272. *A.C.* 382.

The Empire flouriſhed all this while, Rome, Carthage, Milan, and Nicomedia were fenced with new wals; and the barbarous Nations feared the Romans. But *Diocletian* about the 19 year of his reign with *Maximianus*, began to rage againſt the Chriſtians, beginning firſt with the ſouldiers whom they caſheered, and ſome they ſlew. Then publick edicts are made for pulling downe the Chriſtian churches, for burning their Bibles; for degrading of ſuch as were in honour, and inſlaving ſuch as were free. All Biſhops and Paſtors of Churches, who would not deny Chriſt, or offer incenſe to Idols, were commanded to be ſlain. Then promiſcuouſly the ſword raged againſt all ſorts of Chriſtians. More cruell were theſe men, then the wilde beaſts, who oftentimes ſpared thoſe, whom they murthered with all kind of tortures, which malice could device. *Coſmus* and *Damianus* after all ſorts of torments, at laſt were beheaded with three more of their brethren. *Sebaſtianus* a Commander in the army, was firſt wounded with many arrowes, afterward recovering was whipt to death. None were ſuffered to draw water, nor grinde their corn, till they had offered incenſe to the Idol. Pope *Cajus* ſuffered Martyrdome, ſo did that Noble Roman *Gabinius*, with his daughter *Suſanna*. A

*A.C.*306.

An. Mundi whole Legion of Christians after two decimations, were all at last cut off by the command of *Maximianus*. So were the two Captaines, *Cerion* and *Victor* with their Troopes. *Marcellus* the Centurion with his 12 sonnes were martyred; and so were *Zenoche* Tribune with all his souldiers: with many other brave men and women. In a church of Bithynia, on the day of Christs Nativity were burned multitudes of people. In one month there dyed 17000 Martyrs. In Egypt there dyed by Martyrdome 144000 in ten years space, besides 70000 banished. No lesse cruelty was used in Africa, against those who would not be *Traditores*, that is would not deliver up their Bibles to be burned. In France among many other Martyrs, *Victorinus* Bishop of Poytiers suffered. In Spain *Vincentius* the Deacon. *Osius* Bishop of Corduba, and many more; *Agnes*, *Eucratis*, the two *Eulalæ*, with divers other Virgins shewed more then humane courage in suffering unspeakable tortures; whereas Pope *Marcellinus* fainted as *Peter* did before him.

4274. *A. C.* 304. *Diocletian* and *Maximianus* being satiated with innocent bloud, tortured with diseases, and an evill conscience, fell madde, and so both in one day resigned up their Empire, being content to live privately; *Diocletian* was then at Nicomedia, *Herculeus* at Millain. This betook himself into Lucania, the other to his native soil at Salonæ. Both raging, that they could not with all their cruelty suppresse the religon and name of Christianity. *Diocletian* poysoned or stabbed himself, being 68 years old. *Maximianus* dyed of a loathsome and torturing disease in his bowels in the 68 year also of his age.

Constantius Chlorus, and *Galerius Maximinus*, are declared Emperors. *Constantius* was favourable to the Christians, a Prince of an excellent temper, who cared not for wealth, holding himselfe sufficiently rich, if his subjects were rich. When *Diocletian* upbraided him for his poverty, he presently gathered great store of wealth, which having shewed, he restored again to the right owners. He was the son of *Eutropius*, a noble Roman, and of *Claudia* daughter of *Claudius Augustus*. Though Italy, Africk, Gallia, Germany & Britain were allotted to him for his share of the Empire; yet he contented himself with Gallia alone; which hee ruled with good laws and moderation:

Galerius was a good souldier, and a handsome man, born in Dacia, of mean parentage, for his father was a husbandman, and he himselfe a Cow-heard, whence he was called *Armentarius*. Hee gave out that his mother had begot him of a Dragon, as *Olympia* did *Alexander*. He was indeed a Dragon to the Christians, for his persecution was the bloudiest of all, to prevent which, multitudes of people fled to desart places and rocks. *Urbanus* president of Palestina put *Appianus* and *Edæsius* his brother with many others to cruell deaths. But he himself was by *Maximinus*, (whose cruell commands he so readily obeyed) sentenced to death. But *Firmilianus* worse then he, raged over dead carcasses, denying them buriall; which inhumanity the very Gentiles abhorred, when they saw wilde beasts and birds carrying away mens limbes. When the friends of *Pamphilus* saw, that his body and 12 others lay four dayes in the streets untouched by any beast, took the boldnesse to bury them. And *Firmilianus* shortly after sheathed the same sword in his own bowels, which he unsheathed against Christians; so fierce was this Dragon against all that professed Christ, within his Dominions of Palestina, Egypt, Syria, Mesapotamia, Pontus, Cappadocia, and Bithynia, that he burned a whole towne of Christians at one time. The Governour of Provinces proffering rewards to those that should find out new tortures.

About the 8. year of this bloudy Tragedy, both Judges and Torturers began to grow weary of acting, for they perceived that Christians ran as cheerfully to Martyrdome, as the Romans did to a May-game. Therefore the tyrants fearing that their cities would be left desolate, were contented to put out onely one eye, and to break one of the confessors thighs, and to condemne them to work in mines. Many Bishops and Presbyters suffered martyrdome in these times. But *Constantius* was a friend to the Christians, who did not suffer under him, but in the two years of *Diocletian* and *Maximianus*. One day *Constantius* would try the sincerity

rity of his Courtiers, commanding all that did worship Christ, either to renounce him, or forsake his Court; many went, many stayed: those he recalled, these he expelled, shewing that they who were not faithfull to their God, could not be faithfull to him that was but a man. *An. Mundi*

Maximinus having also obtained the Government of Italy, appoints two *Cæsars*. *Severus* for Italy, and *Maximinus* his sisters son for the East, both being Illyrians. He kept *Constantine* by him as an hostage, under pretence of religion. For hee saw in him though a childe, more then a manly spirit. Therefore he indeavoured to expose him to danger, sometimes wishing him to fight with some barbarian, or with a Lion. But he perceiving his life aimed at, fled, and to retard the pursuers, killed all the Post-horses that hee found in the way: and so came safe to Britain, where hee found his aged Father sickly, who dyed not long after at Yorke the 13 yeare of his reign, the 63 of his life. Hee was deified by the Romans.

The Prætorian souldiers at Rome being bribed, declare *Maxentius* the son of *Herculeus* Emperor. Upon this *Herculeus* makes haste for Rome, hoping to bee re-invested in the Empire, which he unwillingly lost; to that purpose writes letters to *Diocletian*, that he would reassume again his command and dignity, who returnes this answer, that he found more pleasure in planting his pot-hearbs, then ever he did in ruling over the Romans. But *Severus Cæsar* is sent by *Galerius* to Rome, to appease the Prætorians, and *Maxentius*. He sits downe with his army before the city: but his souldiers forsake him, and join with *Maxentius*. *Severus* betakes himself to Ravenna: but *Maximianus* cunningly inticed him to come forth, whom he carries to Rome, where he is put to death. After this *Maximianus* in a full assembly went about to discover his sonnes nakednesse, and to shew how weake he was, and unfit for Government, but for his labour he was railed at by the souldiers. Thence he went to Gallia to *Constantine*, to whom hee had given his daughter *Fausta* in marriage; pretending that hee was banished by his sonne; and that hee was desirous to live with *Constantine*; but indeed his intent was to kill him, which his daughter *Fausta* perceived, and acquainted her husband with it. Whereupon hee flies to Massilia, intending to saile to his sonne, but by the command of his sonne in law, hee was there strangled, yet others thinke, hee dyed of a loathsome disease, as I shewed before.

About this time *Licinius* the Dacian was made Emperor by *Galerius*, who dyed shortly after, having reigned Emperor 13 years. For having left *Licinius* to rule the Illyrians and Thracians, hee went to Rome to suppresse *Maxentius*; but finding him strongly maintained by the souldiers, whom he bribed, and fearing his own souldiers would be bribed to betray him, departed out of Italy, and shortly after died of an uncurable wound, his genitals being putrefied, and his whole body eat up with Vermine. Hee was told by his Physitians (many of whom he killed out of impatience of his paines) that his disease was incurable: he finding himselfe checkt in conscience for murthering so many Christians, repealed his edicts against them, set them all at liberty, and recommended himself to their prayers, and so dyed. About these times Pope *Marcellinus*, *Serena Diocletians* wife, S. *Catharine*, *Lucianus* who was the seventh that turned the Bible into Greek, and many more suffered martyrdome. In the Councell of Rome consisting of 300 Bishops. *Marcellinus* condemned himselfe for offering incense to Idols. *Donatus* the Numidian storming that *Cæcilianus* was preferred to him in the Bishoprick of Carthage, broached his schism, which in a short time became an heresie: he objected against *Cæcilianus*, that he was one of them who delivered up the Bible to he burned, but he was absolved by *Constantine*. *Theophilus* was made the first bishop of the Goths. 4280. A.C. 310.

Am. Mundi

Chap. VIII.

Of the Roman affaires under Constantine, Maxentius, Maximinus, *and* Licinius. 2. *Of the Christian persecutions, and forraign affaires, during that time.*

Constantine was the sonne of *Constantius Chlorus*, and *Helena*, not a Bithynian as some think, but a Britain, he with *Maxentius*, *Licinius*, and *Maximinus* ruled the Empire. *Alexander* who had then a command in Afric, would have been a fift Emperor, he was a Pannonian, and of mean parentage; but *Rufus Volusianus* being sent by *Maxentius* did quickly suppresse him. So Africa was now exposed to the fury of *Maxentius* who raged in Carthage, and all about with fire and sword. At first he shewed some favour to Christians, but being confirmed in his Empire, he persecuted them with as great fury, as ever did his predecessors. Neither Virgins nor Matrons could escape the fury of his lust, but such as fled, or dyed. He abused many noble women, and then sent them back to their husbands. He studyed magick, and to that purpose he cut up the bowels of divers children, and ript up the bellies of many mothers.

After the East had rested a while from persecution, upon the recantation of *Gallerius* his successor, *Maximinus* fell with fresh fury on the Christians, imputing to them all the miseries that had fallen on the Empire; and recriminating them with pollutions and abominations whereof they were no way guilty; he commands all the Idol Temples to be repaired, their sacrifices renewed, and the Christian religion to be quite banished. But by Divine Justice it came to passe, that plagues, famine, and unusuall diseases never raged in the world so much as now, that Christians are persecuted, who notwithstanding the miseries they indured did shew the fruites of their Religion, by burying the dead bodies of their enemies, which lay scattered up and down the streets. But the Armenians by force of armes compelled *Maxentius* to permit them the free exercise of Christian religion. After this *Maxentius* exercised his cruell and barbarous nature against the Nobility of Rome and Italy, which *Constantine* understanding, resolves to ease the Empire of such a tyraht. Wherefore having quieted Gallia, to make himself the stronger, he marryeth his sister to *Licinius*; *Diocletian* was invited by these two Emperors to the wedding; but he excused himself by reason of his age and weaknesse. Upon this denyall he receiveth menacing letters, shewing that he favoured *Maximinus* and *Maxentius*, whereupon he fearing some disgracefull death, poysoned himself, as was said. He was an ambitious and proud man, as may be seen by assuming to himself Divine honors, and by changing the ancient computation of years, causing the accompt begin from the first year of his reign, this was called *Æra Diocletiani*, and continued 248 yeares. Yet hee was a fearfull man, chiefly of thunder and lightning; with which notwithstanding his Palace was set on fire.

Constantine hasteneth to Rome, the noise of whose approach affrighted *Maxentius*. Yet an Army is sent to retard *Constantines* march, at Verona the two Armies meet: *Maxentius* lost the day; who was little troubled, either at the loss of his Army, or the disaster of his father; at last with much adoe, he ventures with a fresh Army against *Constantine*, 9 miles from the City, who obtaines a second victory. *Maxentius* flying back to Rome, and entring upon a bridge of boates, over the river, his horse stumbled, and he fell into the water, where he was drowned with the weight of his armour, and scarce could his body be found in the mud. The same fate befell his guard and Courtiers. Thus dyed he in the 6. year of his reign. His Armie consisted of 170000 Foot, and 18000 Horse, whereas *Constantines* were not half so many. The report of this overthrow was not at first beleeved in the City, till *Maxentius* his head was brought in upon a pole; then there was great joy; for both Senators and people were delivered from the massacre intended by the Prætorian Guard upon them; which murther was plotted by

by *Maxentius*, and should have been executed by his souldiers, whom *Constantine* for this put to the sword, and destroyed their fortifications. *An. Mundi*

Whilest *Constantine* was in doubt whether he should go against *Maxentius* or not, there appeared to him about noon, the sign of the Crosse in the air, and on it these words ingraven, *In this thou shal overcome*: which sign the next night Christ himself confirmed by his own presence to *Constantine*, bidding him make use of this sign against his enemy. Upon this victory edicts are sent abroad for the free exercise of Christian religion. *Maximinus* in the east hearing of his fellow tyrants death, out of fear desisted from persecuting of the Christians, yet he did not permit their assemblies. But *Licinius* in a short time delivered the Church from this oppressor; for understanding that his souldiers had forsaken him; he pursues him from Illyricum to Thracia, and from thence to Cilicia, where he shuts him up within Tharsus; there he dyed the third year of his reign, of a loathsome disease, in which hee lost his sight, and his body stunk like a dead carkasse, before hee was dead. Thus the Church is freed of seven tyrants, to wit, *Diocletian*, *Maximianus*, *Galerius Maximinus*, *Maxentius*, *Valerius Maximinus*, *Severus*, *Galerius* his Colleague, and *Alexander* tyrant of Africa, there remaines only *Licinius* with his Colleagues; but not long.

Licinius giving too much heed to Magicians and Soothsayers, began first to inhibit the meeting of Bishops; then prohibited women to come to Church, commanding them to be instructed at home by those of their own sex, shortly after he shuts up all the Churches, casheers all Christians in his Armies, and banisheth them from his Court. At last he embrewed his sword with the bloud of Bishops. He overthrew the Church Amasena in Pontus, and cut some Confessors in peeces, then flung them into the Sea. He hated learning, and scholars, chiefly Lawyers and Philosophers, calling letters the poyson and plague of the State. He was friendly to none, except to husbandmen, from whom he descended, and soothsayers, who soothed him up with promises of great happinesse. Yet this was commendable in him, that he kept the souldiers in good order; that he hated calumnies and flatterers, calling them the rats and moths of the Palace. Many Christians fled to *Constantine*, who both maintained Christianity and learning, being a scholar himselfe. He abolished the punishment of crucifixion, and breaking of legs. He suppressed all oppression and tyranny; he wrote kinde letters to *Licinius*, desiring him to bee favourable to Christians, according to the league made between them: he was proudly answered, that he had no reason to meddle with his part of the Empire. Whereupon *Constantine* with his son *Crispus*, marched against *Licinius* in Thracia, where neer Odrissa, since called Adrianopolis, he defeated him; from thence *Licinius* flyes to Bythinia in Asia, and raiseth a new army, which *Constantine* overthrew by the power of Christ, the representation of whose Crosse he carryed still in his Banners, and on his Coin.

Licinius sends his wife *Constantines* sister to procure his pardon, which was granted, conditionally, that he should live privately with his wife at Thessalonica. But *Valens* whom *Licinius* had chosen for his Colleague, was put to death by *Constantine*. *Zosimus* writes, that *Constantine* not only pardoned, but also received him again as Co-Emperor, and named his sonne *Licinianus* fellow *Cæsar*, and successour with his owne sonnes *Crispus* and *Constantine*. But six yeares after, this peace was broken, and *Licinius* driven out of Thracia into Chalcedon, where he chose *Martinianus* for his *Cæsar*. And as *Eusebius* writes, they were both overthrown by *Constantine*, who having received his imperiall robe sent by his wife, pardoned him again, and sent him to Thessalonica, whereupon new commotions raised by him and his Colleague *Martinianus*, they were both put to death. *Licinius* reigned about 15 years, and lived almost 60. About these times the Christian Religion was much propagated through Scotland, by meanes of the Britaines who fled thither to avoid the fury of *Diocletian*. But Christianity was imbraced in Scotland above 100 yeares afore this, by *Donaldus* their first Christian King, in the year of Christ 199, about the time that *Severus* came over to Britaine, to suppresse the Scots and Picts, which had made

An. Mundi made divers incursions upon the Roman Territories there, and had committed great slaughter upon them. For which cause he was forced to build a wall and fortifications to keep out these Northern Britaines, a people free, and no ways disposed to receive the Roman yoak.

The third Book OF THE SECOND PART,

INTREATING Of the times from *CONSTANTINE* the Great, till *CHARLES* the Great, containing 476 Yeares.

CHAP. I.

The life, actions and death of Constantine *the Great.* 2. *The history of his four sonnes.* 3. *The affaires of the Church under these Emperors.*

4294. *A.C.* 324. THE Church hitherto Militant, begins now to be Triumphant, which being delivered from a longer captivity, then that of Babel, is setled by a greater Captain then *Zorobabel*; *Constantine* the great Eagle carries this woman upon his two wings into the wilderneſſe, or state of rest and security. Now Religion lifteth up her head, the Temples are opened for the true God, at whose presence Idolatry like *Dagon* falls to the ground; Bishops and Doctors, chiefly those that suffered are highly rewarded; controversies are silenced; therefore *Constantine* gives order for calling of Councels, and will himselfe hear the difference between *Cæcilian* and *Donatus*, by his Deputies who absolve *Cæcilian* and condemne the turbulent spirit of *Donatus*, and his sect. *Constantine* compelled no man to embrace Christianity; yet suffered none to commit Idolatry: he would have Christ to be professed freely; not by constraint. He will not use that bloudy course against Pagans which they used against Christians. Furious reformers of Religion, are the successors of *Diocletian*, not of *Constantine*. But this fair day of the Churches peace was quickly overcast by the black cloud of Arianisme, which like a sparkle being kindled at Alexandria by *Arius* Presbyter, there did spread it selfe soon after into a flame through Egypt, Lybia, and the rest of the world. The Emperour willing to quench this fire betimes, sends *Osius* Bishop of Corduba, with letters, desiring
4295. *A.C.* 325. them *to study more piety, and lesse controversie, lest they become a mocking stock to the Infidels.* But seeing he could not thus prevail, he cals a Councell at Nicea in Bithynia of 318 Bishops, besides innumerable Presbyters and Deacons. *Sylvester* the Pope by reason of his age could not be there, but sent his Deputies. *Constantine* sitting down in his gilded Throne, exhorted them, to decide the controversie by Scripture, and to lay aside all emulation and strife. In the end *Arius* is condemned and banished; and the eternall consubstantiality of the Son of God with his Father is confirmed. The controversie also about Easter is abolished, and it is commanded to be kept, the first sunday still, after the Equinoctiall full Moon, and not with the Jewes, the 14 day of the Moon. All other controversies between

the

the Bishops he ended by flinging the papers in the fire. He commanded the Lords day to be observed, he put downe the *Gladiators*, and would not suffer any Christian to be slave to a Jew. He did not permit the Governours of Provinces to infringe the Bishops Decrees and Canons. He caused the Church goods to be restored, which were held by the city, and many other excellent laws he made in favour of Testators, Orphans, and Virgins. He alwayes heard Sermons standing, acknowledging thereby what reverence was due to Gods Word. *An. Mundi*

After the overthrow of *Arius*, *Constantine* celebrates the 20 yeare of his reigne, and entertaines the Bishops with a great Feast, on whom he bestowed gifts. Hee kissed the scars of *Paphnutius* Bishop of Thebais, and of *Spiridion* bishop of Cyprus, calling them *blessed that were wounded for Christ*. It was this *Paphnutius* that stood up in the Councell in defence of the marryed Clergy. *Constantine* reproved *Acesius* bishop of the Novatians, for denying the Communion to those that had fallen, and wished him *to set up a ladder, and climbe up himselfe alone to heaven*. But the Arians did not cease to spew out their malice against the Orthodox, by false accusations, whereas other wayes they could not hurt them. In the mean time *Constantine* gives order to pull down the chappell of *Venus*, built over the Holy Sepulchre, and in lieu thereof to erect a Temple to our Saviour; and a town, which he called new Jerusalem. His mother *Helena* built churches in the places of Christs Nativity and Ascension. Shee searched and found the Holy Crosse, by which miracles were wrought. At last having done much good, she dyed being 80 years old.

Crispus was *Constantines* eldest son, who being falsely accused by his stepmother *Fausta*, that he would have ravished her, is by his Fathers command put to death, and she afterward being found guilty of this murther, is killed in a scalding bath. Hee caused also *Licinianus* his sisters son to be slain. Then he repaires and beautifies Byzantium, and cals it from his own name *Constantinople*, and having translated thither many Noble Families, and wealth from Rome, and erected magnificent buildings and Temples there, it was called new Rome: he builds again the wals which by *Severus* 130 yeares before were thrown down; and gives the same priviledges to new Rome, which old Rome had. This he did in hatred to Romes greatnesse and Idolatry; and because this city lay fit for the suppressing the Goths, and Sarmatians: but it was impolitickly done to weaken the old seat of the Empire, and Italy which lay so fit for Dominion. He adorned also Nicomedia, Hebron, and Antiochia and other places. He caused Idolatry to be suppressed, and Idols to be thrown downe, and hereticall conventicles to be abolished: hee subdued the Scythians and made them tributaries, and likewise the Sauromatæ or Sarmatians, Indians, Ethiopians, and Persians honour him with presents. *Hormisdas* the Persian king fled to him for aid. He upon spleen of his Nobility was put by his right, being the eldest son, and cast in chains; the younger brother was made king: but *Hormisdas* wife delivered him, by sending him a fish, and in it a file, wherewith he filed off his fetters, and in the clothes of an Eunuch passed unknown through the drunken guard; and so got to Armenia, and from thence had a convoy to *Constantine*: who had sent to *Sapores* the old Persian King to surcease persecuting the christians, as he did; upon the instigation of Jews and Magitians, he killed above 16000 Christians.

Constantine in his latter dayes began to waver, for the Arian faction wrought upon his sister *Constantia*, the wife of *Licinius*, and she upon him, to recall *Arius* from banishment. *Eusebius* also bishop of Nicomedia, with other Arians falsly accused *Athanasius* successour to *Alexander* in Alexandria, and in a councell held at Tyrus condemned him, with *Eustachius* bishop of Antioth, whom they falsly accused of adultery. *Athanasius* is banished to Treviri, but by a Synod of 80 bishops in Egypt, he is absolved from the Arians unjust sentence, who condemned him for a magitian: but *Arius* having fraudulently subscribed and sworne to the Nicean creed, having another under his arm, was received by the Emperor, and order given to *Alexander* bishop of Constantinople to receive him publickly into the church there, seeing the Alexandrians refused to communicate with him: but

4306.
A. C. 336.

An. Mundi but the next day as *Arius* was going in pomp towards the church, he stept aside to ease himself, and in the privy, his guts and soul went together. He dyed belike of a rupture; this was it that *Alexander* in his prayers did so earnestly desire the night before.

Constantine had three sonnes besides *Crispus* whom the stepmother *Fausta* the daughter of *Maxentius* murthered, that her own sonnes might succeed; the eldest *Constantinus* was made *Cæsar* the 10 year of his Fathers reigne; *Constans* the second son in the 20 year, and *Constantius* the youngest in the 30. In lieu of *Crispus* unjustly slain, and much lamented by *Helena* his Grandmother, and the whole city. The good old Emperor having celebrated the marriage of his sonne
4307. *Constantius*, and answered the Embassadours of India and Iberia, as he was going
*A.C.*337. against the Persians, and was baptized in the Suburbs of Nicomedia, departed this life the 63 of his age, and the 32 years of his Empire. His death was foretold by a comet, his body was interred with great solemnity in the Apostles Church which he built at Constantinople. He was much lamented by the Romans, such was his piety that he taught his armies to pray, and gave them a set forme of his own making. He caused his Image to be stampt on his coin, in the gesture of one kneeling and praying to Christ: In his time *Meletius* bishop, for his misdemeanours was degraded, and then out of spleen became Arian. *Clodomerus* King of the Francs invaded Gallia, the two Feasts of exaltation and invention of the Crosse were instituted. The Irish are converted by the preaching of St. *Patrick*. Christianity increaseth in India, Iberia and Armenia.

Constantine a little before his death, upon the importunity of the souldiers made *Dalmatius* his brothers sonne *Cæsar* also; but by the same souldiers he was oppressed, and so the Empire was divided betweene the three brothers. *Constantine* the eldest had for his share Spain, Gallia the Alpes and Britain, *Constans* (whom others call *Constantius* confounding the names) had Italy, Afric, Græcia, and Illyricum. *Constantius* or *Constans* obtained the East. *Constantine* having restored *Athanasius*, as his father had ordered, quarrelled with his brother about Italy and
4310. Afric, and was overthrown by *Constans* his army; having received many wounds
A. C. 340. as hee fell from his horse neer Aquileja, and is flung into the river Alsa, the 3 year of his reign, the 25 of his age. *Constans* was at first a valiant and just Emperor, but after growing gowty, he began lascvious and cruell. Hee subdued the Francs oppressing Gallia: he maintained *Athanasius* and the Nicean creed: but one day as he was hunting, *Chrestius*, *Marcellinus* and *Magnentius*, conspire against him, and murther him. Ungratefull *Magnentius* forgot that one time *Constans* saved his life, by casting his robe over him, when the souldiers would have killed him.
4320. *Constans* dyed the 13 year of his reign, he had been *Cæsar* 3 years before his fathers
A. C. 350. death, he was 27 years old, some say 30. *Magnentius* made himselfe Emperor of the East. *Vetranius* Generall of the Illyrian and Pannonian Forces, invaded the Emprire on that side, but *Constantius* by an eloquent speech hee made to both the armies ready to fight, made *Vetranius* lay down his command, the 10 month after he had taken it up, and content himselfe with a private life. At Rome *Nepotianus* sisters sonne of *Constantine* the Great, having slaine the Governour of the city is made Emperor in such a tumult, that the streets ranne with bloud, and all places were filled with dead bodies. The Persians also invaded the Empire.

Constantius finding how unable he was alone to manage the Empire, makes *Gallus* his cousen German *Cæsar*, and marryeth to him *Constantina* his sister, who had been marryed to *Annibalianus* Governour of Armenia. *Magnentius* also makes his kinsman *Decentius Cæsar*, beyond the Alpes. These having many times skirmished, at last encountred with all their strength neer Mursia, where *Magnentius* the Gaul is defeated, having lost 36000 men, and *Constantius* 30000. This victory was deer bought, for by the losse of so many men, the Empire was much weakned, so that the barbarous Nations could not be kept out. *Magnentius* fled to
4323. Lions, where he killed himselfe with his own sword, the 4 yeare of his Empire;
A. C. 353. and about the 50 of his age. *Decentius* hearing of his overthrow and death, strangled

led himself. *Gallus Cæsar* quieted the Jewes who would have made them a new King; he killed many thousand of them, and burned Cesarea, and Tiberias. This *Gallus* was of a fierce and bloudy disposition; so was his wife. They caused many innocent men to be murthered, upon false accusations of informers, she thought she might doe any thing, being the Emperors sister. But they both were invited by flattering letters to come to *Constantius*. She feared her brothers cruelty, yet adventured to see him; but having come to Bithynia, she fell sick of a Feaver and dyed, *Gallus* was apprehended at Pola a town of Istria, where he was accused of all his cruelties, he laid the blame of al upon his wife; but there he was beheaded, the 4. year of his tyranny. *An. Mundi* 4324. *A. C.* 354.

Silvanus was chosen in his room by *Constantius*; he was a Gaul by birth, but of an aspiring nature, who aiming too high was killed by the souldiers, within a month of his advancement. *Constantius* having now no Competitor, begins to exercise his cruelty, accusing many, as if guilty of plotting with *Magnentius Gallus*, and *Sylvanus* against him. He banisheth also many Orthodox Bishops. And because the Francs, Alemans, Saxons, and Quadi made irruptions upon Gallia, he chose *Claudius Julianus* the brother of *Gallus*, and having sent for him from Athens, makes him *Cæsar*: and gave him command over the Transalpin countries, he subdued the barbarous Nations thereabout; and took king *Chonodomarius* prisoner: and regained the ancient bounds of the Empire. He took also prisoner *Badomarius* chief King of the Alemans. He defeated the Saxons and Quadi; upon this he is proclaimed *Augustus* by the Army. *Constantius* by Embassadours counsells him to content himselfe with the title of *Cæsar*; who replyes that he will be no lesse officious and obedient, under the high title of *Augustus* then before.

Constantius overcame the Sarmatians, who had over run Illyricum, but having no successe against the Persians, and understanding that *Julian* was marching against him with an Army, out of impatience and long watchings, fell into a violent feaver and dyed, at Mesocrene neer the foot of mount Taurus, having reigned 24 years, 8 alone, 16 with his brother & *Magnentius*. He had fought 9 battels with the Persians, but with little successe: the last was lost by the wilfulnesse of his souldiers. He was a good archer, temperat in dyet and sleep, a good scholar; and one that could indure hard labour. Not much given to venery, contenting himself with his wives, chiefly *Eusebia*. Hee favoured the Arians, being induced thereto by the same Presbyter that wrought upon Great *Constantines* sister. He was 41 years old when he dyed; his genius that was wont to be cheerfull with him, a little before his sicknesse looked sad upon him.

In his time *Athanasius* was much vexed by the Arian Bishops, for returning to his charge without Episcopall approbation; for bringing into the Church the word *Consubstantiall* not found in Scripture. He to avoid *Constantius* his fury, flies to Pope *Julius* at Rome; in his absence one *George* sits down in his chair at Alexandria: and *Eusebius* at Antioch in a conventicle of 80 bishops, expels the word *consubstantiall*, and possesseth the chair of Constantinople, which belonged to *Paulus* the true bishop. But after his death *Paul* is received again by the Catholicks; but *Macedonius* is ordained by the Arians, and ratified by the Emperor, who sent *Hermogenes* with some Forces to thrust out *Paul*. But the people killed the captain, and burned downe his house. For this sedition the city is fined, *Paul* banished, and *Macedonius* with the losse of 3000 citizens gets up into the chair. By the favour of *Constans* and Pope *Julius*, *Athanasius* returnes to Alexandria, and is banished the third time, being accused for converting the Poors corn to his own use. He flies to *Constance*, and desires a free Synod. His fellow-sufferer *Paul*, by the Arians malice perished in his exile: and *Macedonius* himselfe, who held the Holy Ghost to be the servant only of the Father, and the Sonne, was shortly expelled by the Arians, because he would not call the Son of God a creature.

Constans calls a Synod of 300 Westerns, and 800 Eastern Bishops at Sardica in Thracia, in which *Athanasius* is absolved by the Western bishops, and is again

An. Mundi gain restored to his charge, to the grief of the Eastern Cleargy: but *Constans* being dead, *Constantius* was much abused by the Arian bishops, chiefly by *Valens* who prayed with *Constantius*, whilest his Army was fighting with *Magnentius*, and got him the first news of the victory; he with divers others, still waited on the Emperor, soliciting him against the Catholicks; whom *George* at Alexandria did eagerly persecute. *Photinus* bishop of Syrmium is condemned by a Councell held there, for giving Christ no other beginning but from *Mary*. *Aetius* and his scholar *Eunomius*, dissent in this from the Arians in denying Christ to be like his Father. A Synod is called by *Constantius* at Millan in which Pope *Liberius*, *Hilarius* bishop of Poytures with divers others are banished for not subscribing to the unjust sentence against *Athanasius*. But the Arians dissenting among themselves, & with the Orthodox gave occasion of calling another Synod at Ariminum in Italy of 400 bishops. But there could be no reconciliation. Whereupon a Synod is called at Seleucia, in which much digladiation there was about the word ὁμοιος or *like*; whether was meant the similitude of *essence* or of *will*. But nothing could be agreed upon, wherefore the Arians fly to Constantinople, and forced many Orthodox bishops to receive that fallacious Symbol, which was compiled in the Synod of Seleucia, in which the word *usia*, or substance was put out, and concluded that the Son was like the Father, and that he was not a creature like other creatures: but some who refused to subscribe were banished. *Hilarius* is sent back to France, as being found too hard a disputant for the eastern bishops.

About this time *Apollinaris* starts up, affirming that the Word assumed the flesh, but not the soul, or minde, and that God was the mind or soul of the flesh assumed. *Constantius* was a great enemy to superstition; he punished all that consulted with cunning men or witches. He removed out of the *Forum*, the image of *Cybele*. Many Jews were converted to Christ upon the sight of a fiery crosse in the air, reaching from Golgotha to Mount Olivet.

CHAP. II.

Of Julian, Jovinian, Valentinian, *and* Valens. 2. *Of the Church, and forraign affaires.*

4331. *A. C.* 361. *Flavius Claudius, Julianus* the sonne of *Constantius Constantine* the Greats brother, whose mother was *Basilina* a Noble Lady. In his youth he was bred a Christian under the bishop of Nicomedia, and for his pregnant wit and eloquence was made reader in the church. He was studious and expert in the Greek tongue. But being too familiar with *Libanius* the Sophister, with *Jamblicus*, *Maximus*, and other Philosophers, hee became a heathen, a magician, a persecutor of Christians, and a right Apostate. He used to diffame great *Constantine*, calling him an innovator and disturber of the ancient lawes. He put none to death for religion, but pretended other causes: hee shut up all schools of learning among Christians, knowing that learning was an enemy to Gentilism. He opened the Idolatrous Temples, and commanded sacrifices there to be offered. He stampt upon his coin *Jupiter*, setting the crown on his head; *Pallas* putting on his cloak, and *Mercury* giving him the scepter. He robbed the church of her revenues, telling the Clergy that they should be the fitter for heaven, because it is written, *Blessed be the poore*. He suffered no military honours to be conferred on Christians. He writ invectives against Christian Religion, which *NaZianZen* and *Cyrill* refuted. He would not permit Christian children to learn Rhetorick, fearing lest they might wound the Gentiles with their own quils. He incouraged the Jewes in hatred of Christianity, to set up again their owne State and religion, promising them great immunities and priviledges. Upon this the Jews began to rebuild the Temple, but they were faine to give off by reason of thunder, hail, fire, and earthquakes which destroyed many thousands of them. Where ever

ever they cast their eyes they saw crosses on their garments and tables; the Delphic Temple also, was much about this time overthrown with thunder and earthquakes, as *Julian* was sending thither to know by the Oracle what successe he should have against the Persians. It had been overthrown before and spoiled 4 times, namely by the Phlegians. 2. by *Xerxes* his souldiers. 3. by the *Rhodenses* 4. by *Brennus*; but still it was rebuilt again; by the overthrow of these two Temples, Judaism, and Gentilism were deadly wounded. *An. Mundi*

It's recorded of *Julian* (whom *Athanasius* called *a cloud soon vanishing*) that in private he put divers Christians to death for their religion: among the rest *Artemius* Governour of Egypt, which made the Alexandrians fall furiously upon *George* their Arian Bishop, and murther him. This *George* had used to inveigh bitterly against them, to make sport with the skuls of the murthered Catholicks; tricks fitter for a Turkish turbant, then a Bishops miter. *Julian* threatned to revenge this murther of *George*, but was taken off with fair words, and the Persian war: which he was preparing for. Understanding that *Apollo* could utter no Oracle, because the christians had buryed some of their Martyrs neere to him, he caused their bodies and reliques to be removed; the people in the interim singing that of the Psalmist: *Confonnded bee all they that worship graven Images.* At which *Julian* was vexed inwardly, but could not helpe it, but vowed to sacrifice the bloud of christians to his Gods, if he prevailed against the Persians. About this time also *Apollo's* Temple at Rome was burned down.

Sapores who was made King before he was born, 24 years of age, made irruptions upon the Empire. *Julian* with 65000 souldiers tooke divers Forts and Towns from the Persian, and wasted all Assyria. Having crossed the river Tigris, he burnt his boats, as if he had conquered all: but being brought into an ambush by a fugitive, where he was beset with famine and Persian armies, was shot in the liver, by an unknown hand; he in a rage flinging the bloud of his wound in the air, cries out, *Thou hast overcome mee O Galilean*, and so dyed the 31 year of age, having reigned alone 1 year, 8 months, and 10 yeares with *Constantius*. His wife was *Helena* great *Constantins* daughter, of whom hee had no children, her Matrix being poysoned by *Eusebia* the Empresse, so hee dyed childlesse. *Maris* bishop of Chalcedon was blind, whom *Julian* mockingly told him, that he could not have so much as eyes from his Christ. *I thank Christ for it* (saith he) *for so I shall not see thee, who art the great plague of the world.* *Athanasius* after the death of *George* was restored againe to Alexandria; but presently was forced to hide himself a while from *Julian's* fury; in which time he compiled his excellent Symbol. *Nazianzen* writes of *Julian*, that he was unstable in his head, eyes, and feet; at first he exhorted them to agree among themselves; and not to trouble themselves with points of Religion; but to let every one enjoy his owne opinion. He restored to the Donatists their churches again.

Jovinian or *Jovian* succeeded, he was chosen for his fathers sake *Varonianus* a Noble Pannonian, and who had done good service. *Jovinian* was a good christian, a bountifull Prince, and a handsome man. He was forced upon the ill successe of *Julian* to make a dishonourable peace with the Persian, upon these articles. 1. That five regions beyond Tigris with some castles should be surrendered to the Persian. 2. That Nisibis and Singara, which the Romans held ever since *Mithridates* till now, should be delivered to the Persian, but not the inhabitants. 3. That the Romans should not aid *Arsaces* King of Armenia the greater against the Persians; this Article was hard, being this King was alwayes faithfull to the Romans; but they were forced to yeeld, because the Army was much weakened with famine and war in that hostile and barren countrey. Hee would not take upon him the Empire, till the whole Army had declared themselves Christians, for many of them in *Julians* time had apostatised. He shut up all the Idol Temples again, and restored the true worship of God, with the churches revenues, and *Valentinian* (who had been banished) to his former charge of the

4333. A. C. 363.

Army. He recalled the baniſhed Biſhops, chiefly *Athanaſius*, to whom he wrote for a copy of that truth in Religion which he was to follow: Upon this *Athanaſius* cals a Synod at Alexandria, where the ſum of the Catholick Faith was compiled, and ſent to the Emperour.

As the Emperor was returning from Perſia, the *Semi-Arian Macedonian* heretickes met him, crying out againſt the Arians, and ſtriving to inſinuate themſelves into his favour, but he rejected them, profeſſing that hee would give no ear to contentions. *Acacius* the great Arian, Biſhop of Cæſarea, who had been a great ſtickler for Arianiſm, is now (but hypocritically) content to ſubſcribe to the Nicæan Creed in the Councell of Antioch held by *Meletius* Biſhop there, who was lately returned from exile: his example was followed by divers other Arian biſhops, more out of fear to the Emperour, then love to the truth. *Jovinian* could abide no diſputes in Religion, but advanced thoſe who were moderate and peaceable men. He dyed in Illyricum ſuddenly of a ſurfeit the 8 month of his Empire, and of his age the 33 year. In his time *Vlphilas* the Arian Biſhop of the Goths found out the Gothic letters, and was the firſt who turned the Bible into the Gothic tongue. He was interred neer to the Capitol, and his obſequies kept in Pannonia; before his death a comet appeared, and the Library at Antioch was burned.

4334. A. C. 364.

Valentinian the firſt ſucceeded, he had been Tribune of the ſouldiers under *Julian*, who caſheered him for ſtriking a heathen Prieſt, that beſprinkled him with Holy water in the Church porch, as *Julian* was ſacrificing to his Idol. But *Jovinian* reſtored him. He was a Pannonian born, his fathers name was *Gratian*, who was ſo ſtrong that five ſouldiers could not with all their ſtrength wring a rope out of his hand, which he had then to ſell. The Army urged *Valentinian* to chooſe a conſort, one told him, that if he loved his kindred, he had a brother; if the State, he ſhould ſeek out ſome other. This ſpeech angered him; but hee ſaid nothing till he came to Conſtantinople, and then pronounced *Valens* Co-Emperour: no man daring to oppoſe him, they two depoſed moſt of *Julians* officers. About this time the barbarous Nations on all ſides invaded the Empire, the Picts Saxones, Scots, and Attacots, (a Nation in the South of Scotland, or North of England) fell upon the Britaines, the Perſians on Armenia, the Alemans on Gallia, the Sarmatians on Pannonia, the Goths on Thracia, and the Mauriſci on Africa. Upon this *Valentinian* ſets up his ſeat at Millan, *Valens* at Conſtantinople, where he was infected by *Eudoxus* the Arian biſhop, from thence he removed to Antioch, where he caſt the Catholicks out of their churches. *Petronius* his Father in law did ſo pole the people with extortions that they ſet up one *Procopius* to be Emperor of Conſtantinople, Armies are raiſed, and Bithynia is taken. The Thracians and Goths are invited to ſide with them. The poſthume daughter of *Conſtantius*, the Emperor is carryed about the Army, as if this new Emperor intended her good: *Cyzycus* is taken; but when *Procopius* ſhould have fought with *Valens*, his ſouldiers forſook him, and he was brought to *Valens*, who gave order hee ſhould loſe his head, and be quratered; many alſo of his ſide ſuffered with him: thus ended that civill broil.

At this time a great ſchiſm was in Rome, about the election of the Pope *Damaſus* and *Vrſicianus* ſtriving for it; the faction was ſo great, that many were killed; at laſt *Damaſus* carryed it. He was the firſt that authoriſed the Latin Verſion before the Greek: but the Clergy retained their old Pſalmes; he cauſed the Creed of Conſtantinople to be ſung in ſtead of the Nicen. *Lucifer* biſhop of Sardinia brought a ſchiſm into the church, for refuſing to admit thoſe Arians into the Prieſthood, who had renounced their errours. *Ambroſe* then tranſlated from the Greek into the Latin church the ſinging of hymnes and Anti-hymnes; he was made biſhop, being Governour of Millan, for he being commanded by *Valentinian* to ſuppreſſe the ſedition that was riſen about the election, he himſelfe was elected by the approbation of all.

4337. A.C. 307.

After *Valentinian* had ſuppreſſed the Alemans, and was recovered from a deſperate ſickneſſe, he named his young ſonne *Gratianus* Emperor: ſo now are three

three Emperours. Hee began to be a rigorous punniſher of every ſmall offence in the Army. He ſuppreſſed the Scots and Picts incurſions upon the Britains: whom ſtill they vexed in the Romans abſence. He ſubdued the *Randon* the Aleman, and fortified the Rhene. *Valens* alſo ſuppreſſed the Perſians, and killed their King *Arſaces*. At Rome *Maximinus* rageth upon all ſorts of people. One *Theodorus* at Antioch foretold that the foure firſt letters of his name did belong to *Gratians* ſucceſſour, meaning *Theodoſius*, but this *Theodorus* with ſome other Mathematicians were burned, and divers Philoſophers beheaded, *Famblicus* poyſoned himſelfe. For *Valens* raſhly condemned all ſuch learning, not diſcriminating betweeu good and bad, nocent and innocent. In the Weſt *Valentinian* did ſo oppreſſe the people with taxes and tributes, that the Mauritanians rebelled and made one *Firmus* their Emperour, whom in divers battels *Theodoſius* defeated. This *Firmus* flying to the neighbor king *Igmazanes* for help, but finding none, killed himſelf. The Quadi alſo rebelled becauſe Garriſons were placed beyond Iſther, and *Gabinius* the king was ſlain by *Cadeſtus Perca* at a feaſt treacherouſly, therefore they fell upon Pannonia, and had almoſt taken the daughter of *Conſtantius*, who was going to be marryed to *Gratian*, if *Meſſala* Governour of Pannonia had not by poſt brought her back to Syrmium. The Sarmatians alſo breake out, but they were ſo beaten by *Theodoſius* then a young man; that they were forced to beg for pardon and peace from *Valentinian*, excuſing themſelves, that this inſurrection was not cauſed by the Nobility, but by the countrey people, who were angry at the new erected Garriſons. *Valentinian* in a violent paſſion reproved them for this frivolous excuſe, and their ingratitude, and upon the vehement ſtirring of his ſpirit fell into a Feaver, and within few dayes dyed, having reigned about 15 years, and lived 55. *An. Mundi*

Valentinian had two wives, *Severa* the mother of *Gratian*, and *Juſtina* mother of *Valentinian* the ſecond. This being as yet but 4 yeares old is made Emperor, of that part, by the Army which might be indangered without a head, ſeeing *Valens* and *Gratian* were far off, and could not help them. So he is Emperor of Italy, and Afric, and Illyricum. In the mean while the Hunns an unknown people beyond Mæotis towards the frozen Sea, having no ſetled aboad, nor houſes, nor lands, but lived in waines, made a ſudden incurſion upon the confines of Iſther: ſo that the Goths and Scythians implore *Valens* for aid. He unwiſely receives theſe barbarians within the Roman territories, who being pinched with famine, in great multitudes paſſe over the Danow, and enters Thracia with their Armes, which they were commanded to deliver up, when they petitioned for help: but *Maximus* and the other Roman Governours were careleſſe. *Valens* was forced to leave the Perſian war, and to aid Thracia, which was oppreſſed by the Goths, to whoſe aſſiſtance there did flock all ſorts of diſcontented perſons: beſides as *Gratian* was coming with an Army to aid his Uncle *Valens*, he was ſet upon by the Aleman forces, but *Gratian* defeated and killed 40000 of them. *Valens* unwilling that *Gratian* ſhould have any ſhare of his victory, would not ſtay for his aſſiſtance, but ventured with his Army upon the Goths, Alans, and Hunns, who defeated him, and at laſt burned him in a cottage whither he had retired, to dreſſe his wound he received by an arrow. He lived almoſt 50 yeares, and reigned about 14. This, next to that of Cannæ, was the greateſt blow that ever the Romans had; the Goths alſo loſt aboundance of men, both in this battell, and in their ſiege of Adrianapolis; hee was a cruell and an illiterate prince, who could indure any religion except the Orthodox. Which againſt his brothers will he perſecuted. As he was ſubſcribing an edict for baniſhing of *Baſil* out of Cæſarea, his arm was taken with ſuch a ſhaking, that he was forced to deſiſt. He cruelly cauſed to be burned in a ſhip 80 Orthodox men, that were ſent to petition for the free exerciſe of their faith. About this time dyed *Athanaſius*, having beene biſhop of Alexandria 46 years. In the time of *Conſtantius* he hid himſelfe 6 years in a dark cave, where he ſaw not the Sun all the time of *Julian*, he hid himſelf in Alexandria, under *Valens* he lay hid 4 months in his fathers tomb. To him ſucceeded *Peter*, but becauſe he was Orthodox, *Valens* thruſt him out, and ſet up *Lucius* the Arian.

An. Mundi

CHAP. III.

Of Gratianus, Theodosius, Arcadius, Honorius, *and* Theodosius *the younger.* 2. *Of the Goths, Vandales, and other barbarous Nations.* 3. *The Church assured of those times.*

4349. A. C. 379. *Gratianus* was born at Syrmium; this was a learned and good Prince; who after the death of *Valens* called home the banished Catholicks. He would neither take the title nor habit of the High Priest, as others used to doe. He was moderate in his sleep, diet, and delights. He permitted liberty of conscience, except to the Manichees, Eunomians and Photinians: he sent for *Theodosius* out of Spain, and made him Co-Emperor, by whom he subdued the Alans, Hunns, and Goths, Nations not touched by *Alexander*; and he overthrew them at such a time, when the Roman army was almost lost, and when the enemy had furnished themselves with the Roman horse and arms. *Gratian* reigned with his Father *Valentinian* 8 years, with his Uncle and brother three, with the same brother and *Theodosius* four, with these and *Arcadius* 6 moneths. *Theodosius* was baptized at Thessalonica, and after his great victory in Thracia which he set free, entred Constantinople, and was made Emperor.

4350. A. C. 380.

Valens had placed in divers towns of Asia, the sons of the chief Barbarians to be civilized and educated. These understanding of the great overthrow of their countrymen, resolved to sacrifice to their Ghosts, these towns they dwelt in, but were prevented by *Julius* who had the charge of them: for one day he assembled them all together, as if hee meant to reward them, and suddenly by the souldiers laid in ambush, slew them. *Theodosius* made much of the Fugitives, and mixed them with his own souldiers. He was a Prince endowed with as many vertues as ever any, and nothing inferiour to *Trajan* his countryman, from whom he derived his pedegree; but hee exceeded *Trajan* in being more temperate, and lesse ambitious. His diet was simple, his apparell was plaine like others; his modesty was such, that hee forbid the marriage of cousin germans. He was an enemy to all lasciviousnesse, not suffering women to play or sing at Feasts. He was learned, wise, diligent, sober; a hater of *Cinna*, *Marius*, *Sylla*, and such like tyrants. He overthrew Idolatry, and established the true religion.

Gratian began to grow careless, and to prefer the Alans before the Roman souldiers, so that hee became hatefull to them. *Maximus Theodosius* his fellow souldier, angry that no honour was conferred on him, in Britain made himself Emperour, then passing over into France, *Gratians* souldiers being angry with him, entertained *Maximus* for their Generall, who driving him to Lions, killed him, having lived 28 years. He was a good Oratour, whose Epistle to S. *Ambrose*, wherein hee professeth the Nicen Faith is yet extant. In his time *Audaus* in Syria, taught that God had a humane shape; his scholars were called *Audeani* and *Anthropomorphites*. To these were coetaneall the Messalians, called *Euchites* and Enthusiasts, who bragged much of prayer, and of the Spirit, in the interim living an idle life. *Priscillianus* then lived in Spain, who renewed the heresie of the Gnostics, he with his followers were banished out of Spain, and in Gallia being brought before *Maximus* Emperour, there were punished with death. The Messalians or Euchites were called *Valentiniani*, because in his time they first appeared. *Vigilantius* and *Jovinianus* hereticks affirmed, that all sins were equall. The Saracens and Gothes turn Christians, but withall, Arians. *Theodosius* cals a Synod at Constantinople, where *Macedonius* is condemned, and the Divinity of the Holy Ghost asserted, then was the title of Patriarch first mentioned, and given to the four chief Bishops.

4353. A. C. 383.

Gratian being dead, *Theodosius* chose his brother *Valentinian* the second, yet a child for his colleague. *Justina* his mother supplyed his room, in his minority; she had a fair face, but a foul soul, infected with Arianism. Shee would have expelled *Ambrose* out of Millan, but he resisted the souldiers that were sent into the

Church

Church to apprehend him, saying the Church was Gods House, not the Emperors. *Maximus* who had the charge of Britain, Gallia, and Germany, not content with this share aimed at *Valentinians* also, wherefore having past the Alpes, he drove *Valentinian* out of Italy, who fled to *Theodosius* for help, the rather because he had new marryed with *Galla*, the daughter of old *Valentinian* and *Justina*; for he had buryed his former wife *Placilla* mother to *Arcadius* already created *Augustus*, and his brother *Honorius*. He resolves therefore by reason of this affinity with *Valentinian*, and the justnesse of this cause, to assist him. *Andragathius* Generall of *Maximus* his Forces, had fortified the passages of the Alpes, but hearing of *Theodosius* his preparation, forsakes the Alpes, and by a naval expedition, intends to prevent the enemy; *Theodosius* unexpectedly passeth the Alpes now open, falleth upon Aquileja, where *Maximus* thought himselfe secure, takes him, and kills him. *Andragathius* hearing that *Maximus* was slain, flings himself overboard into the Sea. So *Valentinian* recovered Italy and his Empire, and by the perswasion of *Theodosius* embraceth the Catholick Faith. *Theodosius* in his victory shewed great clemency in sparing *Symmachus* and others of *Maximus* his faction. *Victor Maximus* his sonne Generall of the French Forces was now dead, whereupon *Valentinian* repaires thither, and governed Gallia about 5 yeares. *Theodosius* goeth to Rome, and there shuts up the Idol Temples, and reformes many abuses. *Valentinian* at last by *Eugenius* his Secretary, and *Arbogastus* the Goth, Generall of his French Armies, was strangled at Vienna; because hee had casheered *Arbogastus* upon suspicion of treason. He told *Valentinian* to his face, that *hee received no preferment from him, nor had hee power to casheer him*; and so put himself out, and killed his Lord. *An. Mundi*

Arbogastus presuming on the souldiers favour raised a great Army, and declares *Eugenius* Emperour, who unwillingly accepted it; knowing hee should bee Emperour but in Title. These two intended to re-establish Idolatry: but *Theodosius* hearing of these great preparations, betakes himselfe to his prayers, then marcheth with his small army against the enemy, carrying the Crosse for his standard. *Arbetion* with a part of the enemies Forces went over to him. In the heat of the battell, a sudden whirlewinde fell upon the enemy, and beat the darts against themselves. Upon this the whole Army submitted to *Theodosius*, for whom the Heavens did fight. *Eugenius* fell flat at the Emperors feet, but was killed by the souldiers. *Arbogastus* killed himselfe. *Theodosius* returning victorious to Rome, declares his son *Honorius* Emperor, and appoints *Stilico* for his Tutor. He perceiving how unwilling the Romans were to leave their old Idolatry, under which they had flourished 1200 yeares, seiseth upon all the revenues that belonged to the Priests and to the Idols, and so Idolatry began to decay: and the poor in stead of Idols were relieved: yet Gentilism could not be as yet quite extirpated.

Whilest *Theodosius* was at Millan in a popular tumult, at Thessalonica, *Valericus* the Governour there was killed. Upon this the Emperor in anger sent thither some Troopes to revenge his death, these killed about 7000 men. *Ambrose* Bishop of Millan, hearing of this, debarred *Theodosius* from the Communion, who publikely acknowledging his errour, shewed serious repentance, and made a a law that 30 dayes should intercede between the sentence and execution. For *Theodosius* though an excellent Prince, yet was oftentimes rash and rigid in punishing, as may bee seene in the Antiochians whom he caused to bee plundered and inslaved; for breaking downe the statue of *Placilla* the Empresse. Yet was afterward pacified by *Flavianus* the Bishop, and so hee was reconciled to the Byzantines for pulling downe the Jewes Synagogues, and by S. *Ambrose* perswaded to thrust them out of all Cities into the Suburbs. After this good Prince had reigned 16 years, he dyed at Millan, the 50, others say the 65 year of his age, and left the Empire to his two sons, his body was buryed at Constantinople.

The Goths not long before *Theodosius* chose them a King, *Alaricus* by name, who persecuted the Christians. Afterward he embraced Arianism, in which 4365. *A. C.* 395

An. Mundi the Goths continued 213 yeares. *Theodosius* subdued them; to whom they submitted, but afterward chose *Alaricus* for their king. The Helvidians or Antidicomarianits lived about these times; then also ceased the Olympiads, and the Indictions were instituted. *Isdigerdes* persecutes the Christians in Persia. *Gregory Nazianzen* surrendred for peace sake his Bishoprick of Constantinople, to whom succeeded *Nectarius* who abolished private confession, upon an abuse offered by a Deacon to a Noble woman: a Synod was held at Constantinople, and another by *Damasus* at Rome.

After *Theodosius*, *Arcadius* succeeded in the East, *Honorius* in the West. These two were bred under *Arsenius* a Roman Deacon, whom *Theodosius* one day coming into the schoole reproved, for suffering his sonnes to sit, whilest hee stood teaching them; therefore he made them stand up, and him set down, charging him to whip them when they deserved. This *Arsenius* might have had any preferment from his scholars, but hee refused all, and lived an Eremit. They had two Governours in their minority; *Arcadius* had *Ruffinus* a Gaul and a wicked man; *Honorius* had *Stilico*: to *Gildo* was committed Africa. *Ruffinus* drew *Alaricus* the Goth into Greece, where he committed many outrages. *Stilico* marryed with *Serena*, the daughter of *Theodosius* his brother, of her he had a daughter *Mary* by name, whom he marryed with *Honorius*. Then sends Captain *Gaina* with an army to *Arcadius*, in whose presence they kill *Ruffinus*. So *Stilico* was rid of a corrivall. *Gildo* by defrauding the souldiers of their pay, caused them to rebell, hoping thereby to be Emperour. But him also *Stilico* destroyed by the help of his brother *Mascelzel*, who hated *Gildo* his brother, for some wrongs received from him, therefore he overthrows him in a battell, and drives him to self-murther. Afterward *Mascelzel* by *Stilico*'s treachery was drowned in the river.

4368.
A. C. 398.

The two Emperors having now got some breath after these tumults, in imitation of their Father, command all Idolatrous temples to be overthrown, and the gladiators to be abolished. *Chrysostom* was then sent for to be Bishop of Constantinople; who reproved *Gaina* to his face for aiming at the Empire; and endeavouring to overthrow *Eutropius* who succeeded to *Ruffinus* in the Emperours favour: *Gainas* conspiring with his countryman *Tribigildus*, began to make shew of a civill war. *Tribigildus* wastes many places in the provinces, against him *Gainas* is sent, who of purpose increaseth the feare, and labours with *Arcadius* to banish or put to death *Eutropius* for his own security. So *Gainas* a Goth and Arian is received within the City, desires to exercise publikely the Arian heresie, telling the Emperor that it did not stand with his honour, that he who was the Roman Generall should exercise his Religion without the wals. But *Chrysostome* resisted him, telling him of his ingratefulnesse, and turbulent nature. But the Traitor intends to invade the city and Empire, wherefore under pretence of recreating himself, removes into the countrey, carrying some Forces with him, and leaving some in the city to act for him. But whilest they thought to surprise the city in the night, there appeared a guard about the Tower, as if they had been angels. For *Arcadius* not doubting of treachery, placed no guards in the city. But some armour which he was conveying away being found, *Gainas* is proclaimed traitor, and all the Goths in the city, were by the inraged multitude murthered; even those 7000 that had taken sanctuary in the Temple. Then *Travittas* being made Generall, overthrew *Gainas* in a Sea fight, and drove him home into his owne country, whom at last the king of the Hunns overthrew in a battell, and then put him to death.

The Alani about this time made inroades upon the Empire. *Stilico* the Vandall got the good will both of the Roman and Barbarian souldiers. He kept secret correspondency with the enemies of the Empire, and endeavoured to set the two brothers Emperors at variance. He imployed *Alaricus* to seise upon Illyricum, and all this was to make his own son *Eucherius* Emperour. Hee imployed also his countreymen the Vandals, with the Alans, Sueves, Goths, and Huns against Gallia and Germany. The Vandals under *Croscus* their Generall did much havock in Gallia. *Alaricus* king of the Visi-goths, or Western Goths, drove the Alans

and

and Sueves with the Vandals thence into Spaine. *Stilico*'s ambition was raised by the great victory he got over the Scythians, of which 200000 under their king *Rhadagaisus* break in upon Italy, having laid waſt many townes by the way. Hee vowed the bloud of Chriſtians for a ſacrifice to his gods. But *Stilico* ſo ſhut him up within the barren hils of Feſulæ, that they conſumed away with the plague and famine, their king was laid in irons, and ſtrangled, and they were ſold by flocks like ſheep, a crown then could buy a whole flock; but they dyed ſhortly after. In the mean while *Arcadius* dyeth, being 31 years old, having reigned 14 years alone, and 13 with his Father. His Empreſſe *Eudoxa* dyed a little before, having a dead child in her womb. *An. Mundi* 4378. *A.C.* 480.

In his time the Monkes who in *Diocletian*'s perſecution began, were increaſed to great numbers: they perſecuted *Theophilus* Biſhop of Alexandria, for denying to God a humane ſhape, this *Theophilus* was an enemy to *Chryſoſtome*, becauſe hee befriended the Monkes which he had excommunicated, for commending *Origens* bookes. *Chryſoſtome* ſtood for *Origen*, whom *Epiphanius* Biſhop of Salamis in Cyprus reſiſted condemning theſe bookes, which *Methodius* Biſhop of Lycia, then of Tyrus, compared to the Syrenes for their many allegories. *Epiphanius* was reproved by the Monkes for condemning theſe bookes before a Councell was called, and ſo as he was returning home dyed by the way. *Chryſoſtome* for being too free in his ſpeech, chiefly againſt *Eudoxa* the Empereſſe, whom he calls *Herodias*, inveighing bitterly againſt her and her ſtatue which was erected neere the Church upon a marble pillar, at which the Stage players uſed to act. Hee thruſt out alſo 13 Biſhops, and reproved the Monkes for comming into cities; refuſing to converſe or eat with any of them. Hereupon hee is baniſhed, but by the importunity of the people recalled again; yet could hee not refrain from inveighing againſt *Eudoxa*, which made *Arcadius* being uxorious baniſh him the ſecond time, then he dyed on the borders of Armenia, a year before the death of *Arcadius*, two years before Rome was taken by *Alaricus*. But Pope *Innocentius* excommunicated the Emperour and the Eaſtern Churches for condemning of *Chryſoſtome*.

Arcadius left one ſonne *Theodoſius* behinde him, a child of 8 years, to the tuition of *Iſdigerdes* king of Perſia, hoping by this meanes that the Perſians would forbeare to moleſt the kings pupill by incurſions on his territories. He was a milde and religious Prince, well educated by his ſiſter *Pulcheria*, who in his minority ruled the Empire with great commendation. About this time a certain paralytick Jew by baptiſm was recovered, and *Maruthas* Biſhop in Meſopotamia by his prayers freed *Iſdigerdes* from his continuall head-ach, and his ſonne from the evill ſpirit with which he was poſſeſſed, ſo that the king was like to turn Chriſtian had not his *Magi* hindred him.

The ſame year that young *Theodoſius* began his reign, *Honorius* underſtanding of *Stilico*'s treaſons cauſed him to be put to death at Ravenna with his confederats. *Stilico*'s daughter that was marryed to *Honorius*, is reſtored to her mother *Serena*. His ſonne *Eucherius* is executed at Rome, and the wives and children of the Goths are by the inraged ſouldiers through all the townes of Italy murthered. The Goths to be revenged, aſſembled themſelves in a body of 30000 under *Alaricus*, who finding no juſtice from *Honorius*, by a ſecret command as hee ſaid, marcheth toward Rome, without medling with any towns by the way; to hinder him: hee ſeiſed upon the harbour and ſtopt all proviſion. He laughed when hee heard the citizens would fight; ſaying: *that thick hay is eaſyer cut then thin.* *Innocentius* cauſed all the Images to be ſtript of their ornaments and jewels, to make up the ſumme of 5000 *l.* weight of gold, and 30000 of ſilver, to pay *Alaricus*, who upon receipt thereof, removed the ſiege. But *Honorius* refuſed to give hoſtages, and to ratifie the peace which the city had made with *Alaricus*, wherefore hee intercepted the ſouldiers which *Honorius* ſent to guard the City. *An.* 4379. *A.C.* 409.

Honorius continuing in his obſtinacy ſent for the Huns to aſſiſt him, and remitted to *Conſtantine* the Tyrant, all the Territories beyond the Alpes, then did

An. Mundi did the Britaines, Celtæ, and Armorici recover their liberty, by expelling all the Roman Officers. *Alaricus* beſiegeth Rome againe, and forceth the citizens to make *Attalus* their Governour *Cæſar*, and to join their Forces with him againſt *Honorius*. But the Army of *Attalus* which hee ſent to ſubdue Africa, was cut off by *Heraclianus* Governour there under *Honorius*. *Alaricus* would willingly have made peace with *Honorius*, and to that purpoſe ſent divers Embaſſies, but *Honorius* had vowed the contrary. *Attalus* with a great Army drew neer Ravenna where *Honorius* was, which ſo affrighted him, that hee profferred to make *Attalus* his colleague, which he refuſed, in a proud and ſcornfull way; whereupon *Alaricus* deveſted *Attalus* of all his honour, and princely ornaments, which hee ſent to *Honorius*, hoping thereby that hee would hearken to peace. But *Sarus* and *Jovius* the two great Commanders of *Honorius* his Armies, would not give way to
4380. any peace. Wherefore *Alaricus* by treaſon takes Rome, and ſackes it; when the
*A.C.*310. newes thereof came to *Honorius*, that Rome was taken, he thought the meſſenger had ſpoke of his great Cock, which hee named Rome. *Alaricus* gave order that none ſhould be ſlain who took Sanctuary: but he could not keep the ſouldiers from pillaging and burning. So great was the famine in Rome before it was betrayed, that the people deſired a price might bee ſet upon mens fleſh. *Alaricus* ſtayed not in the city above three days, for he feared leſt *Theodoſius Honorius* his brothers ſonne, might be coming with his Eaſtern army, wherefore having waſted Italy, as he was paſſing over into Sicily, dyed ſuddenly, to whom ſucceeded his kinſman *Ataulphus*.

This *Ataulphus* marryed with *Placidia Honorius* his ſiſter, who by her allurements was perſwaded to make peace, and goe into Spaine, that *Honorius* might ſuppreſſe the new upſtart tyrants, which invaded the Empire, to wit, *Conſtantine*, *Conſtans*, *Gerontius*, *Iovinus*, *Sebaſtian*, *Sarus*, and others. Which was effected by the meanes of *Conſtantius* and *Vulphilas* his Generall. *Conſtantine* at Arelatum is beſieged, taken, and ſlain by *Conſtantius*: his ſonne *Conſtans* is killed by *Gerontius*, and hee by his own ſouldiers: *Jovinus* alſo is ſlain. *Attalus* is carryed away with the Goths into Spaine, and being taken at Sea, had his head cut off. *Heraclianus* with a great fleet entred upon Italy, but being beaten back as hee was landing, returnes to Carthage, where hee is ſlain by the ſouldier. About this time *Conſtantius* recovered Gallia from the Goths. *Athaulphus* for deſiring to make peace with *Honorius* is killed in Spaine by his ſouldiers: and ſo was his ſucceſſor *Sugericus*, for the ſame cauſe. After whom *Mallia* was elected by the Goths, to break the peace, which the two former kept; but he remembring the miſeries, which the Goths formerly ſuffered for violating the peace, made a firm league with *Honorius*, gave him choiſe hoſtages, and ſent him back his ſiſter *Placidia*, who afterward marryed with *Conſtantius* that brave commander, and of him had *Valentinian*, afterward Emperor. In the interim the Vandals and Suevi did continually war with the Goths, to the great advantage of the Romans. But the Burgundians being grievouſly oppreſſed by *Uptarus* king of the Huns, reſolve to ſerve Chriſt, and ſo having received baptiſm, they fall ſuddenly upon the Huns, and in one battell kill 30000 of them. Since which time they conſtantly maintained the Chriſtian religion.

In the Eaſt *Baraanes* the Perſian, upon the inſtigation of his *Magi* perſecuted the Chriſtians, which *Iſdigerdas* tolerated, and becauſe *Theodoſius* would not reſtore thoſe that fled to him, hee is threatned with war: but *Ardaburius* the Emperors Generall defeated the Perſian Armies, and ſlew 10000 of their prime ſouldiers, which they called *immortall*, 100000 Saracens being ſuddenly taken with a *panic* fear, as they were flying from the Romans over Euphrates were drowned. The news of this defeat was by *Palladius* in three dayes ſpace brought from Meſopotamia to Conſtantinople. About this time *Honorius* dyed of an Hydropſie at
4393. Rome the 30 year of his Empire, and the 40 of his age. He had made *Conſtantius*
A. C. 423. his ſiſters husband Co-Emperor, but he dyed 5 moneths after his inauguration. About theſe times lived *Pelagius* the great patron of free-will, *Helvidius* alſo, *Audaus* and *Benoſus* hereticks. From *Atulphus* the Spaniards reckon their kings, for

for before him Spain was poſſeſſed by Vandals, Alans, and Sueves. The French begin their Chronicles from *Faramund* their firſt king, and General of the Francks. *Vaſconia* is ſo called from the Viſigoths which drove out thence the Vandals, Alans and Sueves into Spain, and 19 years after they drove the Vandals, thence into Africa, they alſo overthrew the Alans and Sueves, and reigned there about 386 yeares, untill they were deſtroyed by the Mores. *Innocentius* the firſt drove the Novatians out of Rome. The Britains being forſaken by the Romans, became a prey to the Scots and Picts, from whoſe oppreſſions that they might be delivered, they invited to their own deſtruction the Saxons or Angles out of Germany. The Gaules alſo ſhook off the Roman yoak, and called in the Francks, whileſt *Alaricus* was raging in Italy. *Palladius* by Pope *Celeſtine* is ſent into Scotland, to convert them from the Pelagian hereſie. He was the firſt Biſhop there, before him that Church was governed by Monks. About theſe times dyed S. *Hierome* in Bethlem 91 yeares old, and about 11 or 12 years after, S. *Auguſtine* in Hippo in the 76 year of his age, the 40 of his Biſhoprick. The Univerſity of *Bononia* is inſtituted by *Theodoſius*. *An. Mundi*

CHAP. IV.

Divers alterations in the Empire under Theodoſius, Martianus, Leo *and* Zeno. 2. *The Weſterne Empire ruined by the Goths, Vandals, Huns, and Heruli.* 3. *Divers forraigne paſſages of thoſe times; and of the Church affaires.*

UPon the death of *Honorius*, *Caſtinus* Generall of the Army, advanceth *John* the Secretary to the Empire; who ſent Embaſſadours to *Theodoſius* for his favour and approbation. But hee impriſons the Embaſſadours, and ſends *Ardaburius* the Prætor againſt him, whom *John* neer Ravenna beſet round. Which being known, *Theodoſius* ſends *Valentinian* the ſonne of *Placidia* his Aunt, whom hee had made *Cæſar* to recover the Weſtern Empire. *Aſper* the ſonne of *Ardaburius* was ſent before, whom a ſhepheard in an unknown habit, conducted through a Lake into Ravenna. *Ardaburius* is ſet free, *John* is ſubdued, and *Caſtinus* baniſhed. So *Valentinian* by the conſent of all Italy is made Emperor. *Bonifacius* and *Aetius* by *Theodoſius* are allowed for his Generalls. But theſe two by their emulations, and *Valentinian* his negligence ruined all. Spain, Gallia, Britaine, and weſt Lybia are loſt. *Aetius* inſtigated the Emperour againſt *Boniface* Governour of Africa, who underſtanding of the danger he was in, and what was intended againſt him by *Valentinian* and *Placidia*, called in *Guntharius* and *Genſerius* kings of the Vandals then in Spain. Theſe with fire and ſword waſt Africa, and poyſon it with Arianiſm. But at laſt *Boniface* underſtanding that *Aetius* his letters, which he ſent him were falſe concerning the Emperors intentions againſt him, would fain have thruſt the Vandals out of Africa again, but could not, wherefore he comes to Rome, and in a ſet battell defeats *Aetius*, but ſhortly after hee dyed, and left Afric to the Vandals, who beſieged Hippo, in the 3 month of this ſiege S. *Auſtin* dyed. 4395. *A. C.* 425. 4402. *A. C.* 432.

After this *Aetius* is reconciled to the Emperours. Numidia is given to the Vandals and a peace concluded with them. *Aetius* forceth the Burgundians, and *Litorius*, the Goths then beſieging Narbon, to hearken to peace. *Theodoſius* his wife *Athenais* daughter of *Leontius* the Athenian Philoſopher, was baptiſed, and new named *Eudoxia*. Shee expreſſed ſome places of Scripture in *Homer's* verſes, as *Proba Falconia* did before her in *Virgil's*. This *Eudoxia* had a daughter by *Theodoſius* of her own name, who was marryed to *Valentinian* in Conſtantinople. *Eudoxia* the mother went the next yeare to Jeruſalem, whence ſhee brought *Peters* chaines, in memory of which ſhee cauſed the firſt of Auguſt to be kept holy, which before was obſerved in honour of *Auguſtus* his victory over *Antonius* and *Cleopatra*. In the 30 yeare of *Theodoſius* there were earthquakes which

An. Mundi which lasted many moneths together, overthrowing houses and townes, which presaged great commotions and changes in the State. In these earthquakes a certaine young man was suddenly taken up in the air, and let down again, who told the people, that they must all sing: *Holy God, Holy and strong, Holy and Immortall, have mercy upon us.* Hereupon they all sung *Kyrie eleison*, and the earthquake ceased. But the Empire began more and more to decline. For *Theodosius* let loose the reins to his covetous Eunuchs.

The Goths first defeated *Valentinians* Army, took *Litorius* his Generall prisoner, and forced the Emperour to sue for peace, and to surrender a part of Gallia. In the interim *Gensericus* possesseth himselfe of Carthage, the next year he crosseth over to Sicily, which he wasteth. *Theodosius* sent Forces thither, but to little purpose. Shortly after, that scourge of God *Attila* king of the Huns, wastes Thracia and Illyricum: takes in all Castles, and Cities, except Achrianopolis and Heraclea. So that *Theodosius* was fain to hire him to be gone, for 6000 *lib.* weight of gold, and a yearly tribute. But pretending not long after, that his tribute was not duly paid, he renews the war; and being confederate with *Genserico*, he arms the Scythians, Ostrogoths, Sarmatians, Marcomans, Saxons, and divers other nations, making shew that he would drive the Goths out of Gallia, and makes the Goths beleeve, that he was the greatest enemy the Romans had. But *Valentinian* having discovered his cunning plot, unites himself to all the kings of Gallia, to *Theodoricus* of the Goths, *Gundericus* of the Burgundions, *Merovenus* of the Francs, and *Sangibanus* king of the Alans; all these under *Aetius* his Generall, he employeth against *Attila*. In the large fields of Catalaunum or Chalons the battel was fought, on both sides were slaine 162000, besides 90000 of the Gepidæ and Francs, which before the great battell had killed each other in the night time. The Francs held with the Romans, the Gepidæ with the Huns. *Theodoricus* king of the Goths, or of Spaine was killed by a fall from his horse, as hee was riding about his souldiers, animating them to fight. *Attila* after the battell durst not venture out of his Camp. It's thonght hee had in his Army 500 thousand men.

4420. *A. C.* 450. *Theodosius* the second being 50 yeares old, dyed of a bruise which hee had by a fall from his horse, he reigned 42 yeares after his father. In his time lived Pope *Leo* a great Champion against *Eutyches Archimandrita* or Abbot of Constantinople, who held but one nature in Christ. Him *Flavianus* the Bishop excommunicated, *Eutyches* appeares to *Leo*, who condemned his Colleague of temerity: and the heretick by the meanes of *Chrysaphius* the Eunuch got a Councell to be held at Ephesus, in which *Dioscorus* of Alexandria guarded by souldiers was president. Here *Flavianus* was condemned, and *Eutyches* absolved. The Bishops then present out of fear were fain to subscribe to *Dioscorus*. *Flavianus* was kickt out of the Councell by *Dioscorus*, and dyed three days after. It's said that *Dioscorus* troad on him after he was dead. This second Councell of *Ephesus* was called Λῃστικὴ, or the theeviish Synod. After this *Domnus* of Antioch repenting that hee had voted with that impious Synod, incensed the Emperour against *Dioscorus*, to appease whose anger *Chrysaphius* made *Anatolius* Bishop of Constantinople, and removed *Pulcheria* from the Court, upon false surmises. But *Theodosius* upon better information baniseth the Eunuch, recals his sister to the Court againe, and reproves his wife, who pretending a vow went to Jerusalem. But the death of *Theodosius*, and wars of *Attalus* hindred the full decision of this heresie till the third yeare of *Martian*.

Before this, in the 24 yeare of *Theodosius* the second, the first Councell of Ephesus was held against *Nestorius* the Syrian Bishop of Constantinople, who held there were two persons in Christ. Against him *Cyrill* of Alexandria wrote, whose doctrine was received by the Church of Constantinople. *Nestorius* is banished beyound Thebes in Egypt, where he dyed, his tongue being eat out with worms: this Ecclesiasticall broil raised by *Nestorius* was presaged by the murther done in the Church of Constantinople. Not long before, some slaves being threatned by their Masters, took sanctuary in the Church, from whence they were commanded to depart

depart, but they having killed a Priest, and one more that resisted them, at last murthered one another: And not only was the Church infested with Nestorians and Eutychians, but with Pelagians also and Novatians, against whom divers Councels were assembled; and the Novatians by force of armes were forbid the exercise of Religion. The Jewes about this time were driven out of Alexandria, and those of Crete being deluded by a false *Moses*, who perswaded many of them to leape into the Sea, promising he would divide it for them; as the true *Moses* once did, were drowned, and the rest being wiser were converted. *An. Mundi*

The Goths being gone, *Attila* layeth siege to Aquileja, which hee took and overthrew, with Millan, Ticinum, and Vincentia: the Veneti or Heneti, a people of Paphlagonia, seated neer the Hadriatic, for fear of *Attila* fled into those little Islands of the Sea, and laid the foundation of Venice. Pope *Leo* so pacified *Attila*, that he went not further, but returned with his army into Gallia, where hee was defeated by *Thursimundus*, and so retreated into Stythia, where he dyed in his marriage bed: for though he had many wives, yet he would marry with *Hildico* a young maid and daughter of the King of Bactria, that night being inflamed with wine and *Venus*, he surrendred his bloudy soul, being choaked with bloud in his sleep which gushed out of his mouth in great aboundance. Not long after *Valentinian* was murthered by *Maximus* who was then a great man at Rome; and whose wife *Valentinian* had abused by sending her husbands ring to her which he in sport pulled off from his finger, she thinking it had been her husbands pleasure to repair to the Court, went, where she was ravished by the Prince. To be revenged of this wrong, *Maximus* aleniates *Valentinians* affection from *Aetius*, as if hee aimed at the Empire. Whereupon *Aetius* who had done him so much good service, is by his command put to death; *Valentinian* (as one told him) had done better to have cut off his own right hand. *Maximus* causeth two of *Aetius* his souldiers to kill him, which they did, and thus was his magick, lusts, and murther punished in Campus Martius the 30 year of his Empire. About this time the Saxons being called by the Britaines against the Scots, drove those they should have aided into Wales. The Acephali were the Eutychian spaune, who held that Christ was to be worshipped but in one nature, which was made up of the divinity and humanity. 4424. *A.C.* 454. 4427. *A. C.* 455.

Martianus succeeded to *Theodosius*, he was a Thracian by birth, and the Generall of *Theodosius* his Army in Africa against *Gensericus*, and in Syria against the Persians. *Pulcheria* being now a Virgin of 50 years, advanced him to the Empire, and marryed with him conditionally, that he should make no use of her bed, for she meant to dye a Virgin. He had been taken heretofore a prisoner in Africa by *Gensericus*, to whom hee swore that if ever he were Emperor, he would hold perpetuall peace with the Vandals. For when he was sleeping among the rest of the captives in the field, *Gensericus* observed how an Eagle spread her wings over his face to keep him from the Sun, which he tooke as a presage of his future Empire. Therefore dismissed him, on the condition above said, which he observed, holding it unlawfull for a publick person to breake the Oath he made when he was a private man. That he might put an end to the quarrels of the Macedonians, Arians, Nestorians, and Eutychians, which had now troubled the world 150 years, he cals a generall Councell at Chalcedon, in which he was present with 600 and 30 Bishops. Here *Dioscorus* of Alexandria was condemned; and it was determined, that in Christ remained the two natures without confusion, mutation, division or separation, united in one person.

The quarrell was no sooner ended, but upstarts another between the two Patriarchs of Rome and Constantinople about the primacy; *Leo* challenging the headship over all Churches. The Councell gave to Constantinople an equall share with Rome. In the mean while *Attila* was wasting all the Westerne Empire. Earthquakes every where, and flashes of lightning in the air. *Leo* disliked the definition of the Councell, and impugned it with publick and private Epistles written to the Churches. *Valentinian* and *Aetius* being killed, the Barbarians without feare broke in on all sides upon the Empire. The Francs were now sub-

ject

ject to *Merovius*, after *Feramundus* and *Clogio*; they took possession of Paris, and the Isle of France. The Visigoths under *Theodoricus* were seated in Spain, whence they expulsed the Suevi. At Rome *Maximus* matryed with *Endoxia* the daughter of *Theodosius*, and wife of *Valentinian*. Possessing both wife and Empire together by force of armes. But when foolishly hee had discovered to the Empresse, that hee was the cause of *Valentinians* death; shee desiring to bee revenged, invited *Gensericus* out of Africa by private letters. *Gensericus* glad of this occasion, hastens to Rome with a great Fleet. *Maximus* being unprovided, thought to escape by flight, but his own souldiers stoned him to death. The Princes flye away, the City is delivered to *Gensericus*, which the souldiers for 14 dayes together spoil and plunder, carrying away the rich statues and ornaments thereof, with the plate which *Titus* brought from Jerusalem; this plate *Belisarius* afterward, having recovered Africa, sent to Constantinople, and by *Justinian* it was remitted to Jerusalem: the City also in many places was fired; but consecrated places upon the intreaty of *Leo* were spared, much of the spoil was cast away by shipwrack, as they returned home.

The tyrant carryed with him to Africa *Endoxia* with her two daughters, which shee bare to *Valentinian*, *Placidia*, and *Galla*, *Eudocia*, with many more Captives. Hee marryed *Eudocia* to his sonne *Hunnericus*, *Placidia* to *Olybrius* a Roman Senator. Others write that *Gensericus* to appease *Martianus* who was moved for the losse Rome had suffered sent, to him *Placidia* with her mother; but before they came *Martian* was dead, and so *Leo* had them. Gallia now is divided among the Burgundians, Goths, and Francks. But on a sudden *Avitus* whom *Maximus* had made his Generall invaded the Empire of France, which he was forced to lay down again, and to accept of the Bishopwrick of Placentia. But thinking himself not safe there, returned into Gallia where he dyed of griefe. Him
4426. shortly after followed *Martianus* who dyed the 7 year of his Empire. He was a
A. C. 456. peaceable and religious Prince.

Leo succeeded to *Martianus*, hee was a Thracian, and had beene a Tribune of the souldiers, he was the first Emperor that was crowned by a Patriarch. *Anatolius* was the Bishops name that crowned him. Hee maintained the Chalcedon Faith; and punished the Alexandrians for murthering *Proterius* their Bishop. He made *Majorinus* Generall of his Forces, and sent him to govern the West, which he did for 4 years, at last was killed by *Ricimerus*, whom hee had invited with his Army to expell the Alans out of Gallia. *Leo* made a league with the Ostrogoths, who drove *Hernacus* the sonne of *Attila* into Scythia, and the Sueves out of Spaine. *Ardaricus* King of the Gepidæ, a people among the Getæ, the first who freed himselfe from the slavery of *Attalus* his sonnes, received Dacia from *Leo*. The Goths had Pannonia, a part of the Alans had the lower Mæsia.
4431. After *Majoranus*, *Severus* reigned 3 yeares, under him *Ricimer* defeated the A-
A.C.461. lans, breaking in upon Italy, and killed *Beurgus* their King. By a Candle left burning in the *Forum* carelessely, Constantinople took fire, which could not be quenched in 4 dayes. Antioch, Gallia, and others parts were shaken with Earthquakes, which occasioned *Mamertus* Bishop of Vienna to institute larger Litanies, which afterward were wont to be sung still the sixt week after Easter. *Severus* being killed by *Ricimer* the Goth *Anthemius* is sent to Italy by *Leo*, upon the
4445. intreaty of the Romans, his daughter *Ricemer* marryed, and so was quiet a while.
A. C. 465. In the mean time *Gensericus* is defeated in a Sea fight. *Leo's* Fleet was 1000 and 100 ships; but shortly after, *Basiliscus* the brother of *Verina Augusta*, (whom *Leo* upon the recommendation of his two great Generalls *Aspar* and *Ardaburius* both Arians, had made Admirall) treacherously lost this Fleet to the Vandals, *Basiliscus* being an Eutychian, and willing to please his two Patrons, that the Arian heresie might flourish. *Ricemer* also the Arian besiegeth his Father in law *Anthemius* in Rome, which hee took, and then murthered him, having reigned
4452. 5 yeares; but hee shortly after dyed, to whom succeeded *Anicius Olybrius*, who
A.C.472. dyed 4 months after. Then did *Leo* upon the importunity of *Aspar*, create his sonne *Cæsar*, at which the people repined, that an Arian should reign over them.

But

but not long after *Leo* finding *Aſpars* treachery, commanded both him and his two ſons to be ſlain and bequeathed by will, the Empire to his Grandchilde by *Ariadna* his daughter. *An. Mundi*

To *Olybrius* ſucceeded *Glycerius* at Ravenna; he bribed the Goths to keep out of Italy, and ſo did *Leo* to keep them off from Greece. Who ſhortly after dyed of a looſeneſſe, having reigned 17 yeares. Hee named *Julius Nepos* for the weſtern Empire, who comming to Italy by Sea, removed *Glycerius* after he had reigned 5 yeares, and made him a Biſhop in Dalmatia. In *Leo*'s time *Childericus* King of the Francs, was baniſhed by the people (for his inſolency) into Thuringia, and by them *Ægidius* a Roman Commander is choſen: but 8 years after *Childericus* returnes, and is received again, whoſe reign afterward was more moderate. The name of France was given to all that part which *Merovæus* held. About this time dyed Pope *Leo*, to whom ſucceeded *Hilarius*. And at Conſtantinople to *Genandius* ſucceeded *Acacius*. *Studius* a Conſular man ſet up an order of watching Monkes who were to ſing divine Service, and to watch by turnes night and day: in Conſtantinople. There a certain painter repreſented Chriſt in the form of *Jupiter*, whereupon his hand withered. *Veſuvius* brake out into great flames, with the aſhes whereof many countreys were covered; in memory of which, an annuall ſolemnity was ordained to bee kept at Conſtantinople. *Eutyches* and *Dioſcorus* refuſing to ſtand to the decrees of the Councell of Chalcedon, divided themſelves into divers ſects; the two chiefe were the *Jacobites*, ſo called from *Jacob* the Syrian, and the *Hæſitantes* or *Diacrinomeni*, which doubted whether or not they ſhould receive the ſaid Synod. The Rogation ſolemnity was then inſtituted by *Mamercus* Biſhop of Vienna: In which the time was ſpent in faſting, praying, ſinging, and weeping, it was occaſioned by the Earthquakes of Vienna, and the irruption of Wolves and other wild Beaſts into the City, which deſtoyed many people: then did *Rabbi Jonathan* perfect the Thalmud of Jeruſalem.

Leo's Nephew being dead in his infancy, deformed *Zeno Leo*'s ſon in law, a Cilician of obſcure parentage, and father to the foreſaid Infant, ſucceeds in the Eaſtern Empire, and *Nepos* in the Weſtern, whom *Oreſtes* drove into Dalmatia, as *Nepos* had done *Glycerius* before. *Nepos* his ſonne called *Momyllus*, is made *Auguſtus*, and for his ſmall ſtature is named *Auguſtulus*. But hee ſhortly after is baniſhed by *Odoacer* King of the Heruli, who being called in by the friends of *Nepos*, overrun all Italy, ſlew *Oreſtes* at Placentia, and took Rome; which is now the 4 time it is taken. 1. By the Gaules. 2. By the Goths in the time of *Honorius*. 3. By the Vandals in *Martians* time. 4. Now by the Heruli. And 5. it was afterward taken by *Attila*. In the reigne of *Juſtinian*, as wee ſhall ſee, *Odoacer* named himſelfe King of Italy, aboliſhed the Conſular dignity, tranſferred the ſeat of his Kingdome to Ravenna, and ſo that glorious Empire which began in *Auguſtus* ended in *Auguſtulus*, 522 years ſince *Auguſtus Cæſar*.

In the Eaſt *Baſiliſcus* brother to *Verina* the Empereſſe, made war againſt *Zeno*, *A.C.476* ſhee animating her brother againſt her ſon in law, *Zeno* being a coward, fled with his wife *Ariadne* to Iſauri neer mount Taurus in Cilicia, where hee was born; there he lived one year and 8 moneths. In the meane time *Baſiliſcus* as bad as *Zeno*, advanced the Eutychian hereſie, and forced *Acacius* to ſide with him againſt the Councell of Chalcedon. But within two yeares his Army under *Harmatus* fell off to *Zeno*, againſt whom they were ſent, and brought him back to Conſtantinople, who ſent away *Baſiliſcus* with his wife and children to a Caſtle in Cappadocia, where they periſhed with famine. In *Baſiliſcus* his time, the Library of *Byzantium* took fire, in which 120000 bookes were burned. *Zeno* being nothing bettered by theſe troubles, names for Cæſar *Baſiliſcus* ſonne to *Harmatus* the traitor; hee firſt kills *Hermatus* the father, not daring to truſt him who betrayed his Maſter, then after her had named his ſonne *Cæſar*, according to his promiſe, hee makes him a Clergy man. *Zeno*'s ſonne dyed, before hee attained the Empire. And he himſelf being one day dead drunk fell down ſpeechleſſe, his

An. Mundi wife *Ariadne* buryeth him before he was quite dead, no man offering to help him, though he groned lamentably, and ſo dyed having reigned 17 years. 532 yeares after *Iul. Cæſars* death.

Two years before *Zeno* dyed, *Theodoricus* the ſonne of *Amalus*, King of the Oſtrogoths, having overrun Thracia and Mæſia, threatens Conſtantinople. *Zeno* a better flatterer then a ſouldier, invites his enemy into the City, made him Conſul, and beſtowed divers honours on him; and at laſt perſwaded him to goe againſt *Odoacer* in Italy. *Theodoricus* an active Prince was eaſily perſwaded to this, being troubled that Italy the miſtreſſe of the World ſhould bee ſubject to the obſcure Nation of the Heruli, and finding that *Odoacer* having ſubdued *Phæbas* Prince of the Rugi upon the Baltick ſea (whoſe ſeats were now poſſeſſed by the Longobarbs) was ſecure at this time; haſtens into Italy, and defeates him at the bridge Sotius, then gives him a ſecond overthrow neer
4460. Verona, whence he was called *Veronenſis*. In the third encounter hee drives
A.C. 490. him within Ravenna, who having made a ſally upon *Theodoricus* in the night, was beat back again; a part of the Army was left to beſiege the towne, with the reſt *Theodoricus* marcheth about Italy, makes peace with *Hunericus* King of the Vandals in Africa, and frees Sicily from their oppreſſion. This *Hunericus* worſe then *Genſericus* his father, upon the inſtigation of the Arians, baniſhed and ſlew 400000 Catholicks. Hee cut out ſome of the Preachers tongues: and at laſt hee fell ſo madde that hee tore and bit his owne fleſh, ſo that hee dyed miſerably, his body being putrefied, and eat up with vermine the 8 yeare of his reigne. *Odoacer* after hee had beene beſieged three yeares in Ravenna, was ſlaine by *Theodoricus*, who having recovered Italy, recommended the care of Rome to the Senat, and made Ravenna the ſeat of his Kindgdome. But being an Arian hee impriſoned Pope *John*, till hee dyed there, for not permitting the Arians to have Churches. Hee impriſoned at Ticinum two Senators, *Symmachus* and his ſonne in law *Boetius*; then ſeiſed upon their eſtates, and ſlew them. Not long after, at ſupper, as hee was looking on the head of a fiſh; hee thought hee ſaw *Symmachus* with fiery eyes gaping on him, which put him into ſuch a ſhaking, that he was carryed away to his bed and dyed. This *Symmachus* was not hee that in the time of *Theodoſius* wrote againſt the Chriſtians.

About *Zeno*'s time the South-Saxons erected their Kingdome in England 32 yeares after their arrivall. The Jewes at Tiberias by the help of *Rabbi Ben Aſer*, and *R. Ben. Nepthali* found out thoſe Hebrew pricks which we uſe at this day in ſtead of vowels and accents, which are read in ſome words otherwayes by the Eaſtern Jewes about Babylon, then by the Weſtern. *Enricus* King of Spain was the firſt there, that gave lawes to the Goths in writing. Pope *Gelaſius* compiled the Canon of the Maſſe, and the Collects or ſhort Church-prayers. *Clodoveus* the firſt Chriſtian King of France is baptized by *Remigius* Archbiſhop of Rhemes, who gave him the name of *Ludovicus*. The holy Oil was then (if we may beleeve it) brought by a Dove from Heaven, with which he was, and his ſucceſſours are at this day anointed.

CHAP. V.

The Roman affaires under Anaſtaſius, Juſtinus *and* Juſtinian. 2. *Of the Perſians, Goths, and other barbarous Nations of thoſe times.* 3. *The affaires of the Church.*

4461. *A.C.* 491. ZEno being ſtarved in his tombe, for want of food eat up his own fleſh, *Ariadna* his wife not ſuffering any to help him; advanceth to the Empire *Anaſteſius*, with whom 'tis thought ſhee was too familiar in her former husbands time; therefore now makes haſt to marry him. Hee was before but a Court Scribe or Secretary, called *Silentiarius*, for Secretaries ſhould be *ſilent*, he

was

was nick named *Dicarus* becauſe the apple of his eyes were of two colours. *Euphemius* Patriarch of Conſtantinople, refuſed to crown him, till he had ſubſcribed to the councell of Chalcedon: which in policy he did, ſhewing great juſtice in the beginning of his reign; in abrogating thoſe acts by which taxes were raiſed by unlawfull wayes, as of publick ſtewes, and ſuch like; he baniſhed all informers from the city; and would ſuffer no offices to bee bought and ſold. He baniſhed *Longinus*, *Zeno*'s brother, for aſpiring to the Empire, at laſt ſlew him for arming the Iſauri againſt him. Hee forced the Arabians who had overrun Meſopotamia and Paleſtiina, to make peace with him. He took Amida from *Cabades* the Perſian King. Whom his ſubjects impriſoned for making it lawfull that wives ſhould be common. But his wife got him to be diſmiſſed by proſtituting her body to the Goal Keeper. He ſhortly after recovered his power, and became a good friend to the Chriſtians. But killed his brother who had reigned 2 years. *An. Mundi*

Anaſtaſius being ſetled in the Empire, began to ſhew himſelfe in his true colours being diſguiſed before. He demands back his hand-writing, by which hee had promiſed never to moleſt the Orthodox profeſſours. He baniſheth *Euphemius*, and ſets up *Macedonius* in his place, from whom violently hee extorted his hand-writing, and then baniſhed him, advancing *Timotheus* his flatterer, and Pander. Hee baniſhed alſo the chief of the Orthodox Clergy. He built a wall 280 furlongs diſtant from Conſtantinople, to keep off the barbarous incurſions of the Inhabitants about Pontus, Colchis and Mæotis. But he could not keep out *Vitalianus* the Thracian with his Myſians and Scythians from plundering the countrey all about Byzantium; who alſo beſet the City with a Fleet of Ships. But *Anaſtaſius* ſent *Martinus* captain of his guard with an army againſt him, and by burning glaſſes, which *Proclus* the Mathematician had made, ſet all the enemies ſhips on fire: yet he was fain to begge for peace, which was granted conditionally, that the Orthodox Biſhops which *Anaſtaſius* baniſhed, be recalled home; and that a Synod bee called. Which was aſſented to, and *Vitalianus* is made muſter maſter of Thracia, and rewarded with a great ſumme of gold. Pope *Hormiſdas* ſent to *Anaſtaſius* about this Synod; but upon ſome diſcontents, or miſcarriage of the Legats, they were ſent privately away, with command not to return any more into Greece. So little hope there was of a Synod. *Flavianus* Biſhop of Antioch was aſſaulted by the Eutychian Monks, becauſe he would not abjure the Councell of Chalcedon, but the townſmen fell upon the Monks, killed many of them, and drove many into the river Orontes, where they were drowned. Hereupon *Flavianus* is baniſhed againe, and the Eutychian *Severus* ſet in his chair, who being incenſed againſt the Monks of Syria for aiding *Flavianus*, he ſlew 300 of them, and would not ſuffer them to be buryed. *Anaſtaſius* adding to the hymne of the Trinity theſe words, *who was crucified for us*, as if he meant, that the deity was crucified, occaſioned ſuch a tumult in the people, that he could ſcarſe appeaſe them, though he layed down his crown before them.

In the ſecond year of *Anaſtaſius*, *Odoacer* was killed by *Theodoricus*, who was King of Italy 33 yeares; he repaired the decayes of Rome, and was bountifull to the people. *Clodoveus* then King of France, partly by the inſtigation of his wife, a Burgundian, and partly becauſe of his vow which he made, became a Chriſtian; for he vowed ſo to be, if he obtained the victory over the Alemans, which hee had. He overcame alſo *Gundebaldus* of Burgundy, and *Theodoricus* the Goth King of Aquitania, ſo having inlarged the bounds of France, he ſet up his Court at Paris, he was angry with *Anaſtaſius* for diverting the Bulgarians, (a people unheard of till now) from Illyricum, and Thracia, where they were ſeating themſelves, and ſent them into the Weſtern Provinces. Theſe *Theodoricus* overthrew, and added Syrmium with Pannonia to his Dominion. *Anaſtaſius* made *Clodoveus* a Patrician, and named him *Auguſtus*, whence great jealouſies aroſe between *Clodoveus* and *Theodoricus*, and then wars in which 30000 Francks were killed by the Goths. Pope *Anaſtaſius* being dead, a bloudy quarrell aroſe at Rome, about the election of a new Pope; ſome ſtood for *Symmachus*; ſome for *Laurentius*. The quarrell laſted 3 yeares, till *Theodoricus* ended it, who aſſigned the

4463. A.C.493.

An. Mundi honour to *Symmachus* that was first nominated. About this time the Catholicks in Africa were set at liberty by *Gundamundus* the Vandall, but they were baniſhed afterward by *Thraſamundus*. One *Olympius* as he was blaſpheming the Trinity, was viſibly burned by a fire dart from heaven. *Theodoricus* the Arian killed one *Diaconus* whom hee loved well, becauſe he became an Arian for the Kings ſake, ſaying: *He that will not be faithfull to God, will never be faithfull to the King*: for he hated thoſe that changed their religion. *Severus* the Eutychian Biſhop of Antioch would have converted *Alamundarus* the Saracen king to Eutychianiſm. The King fained himſelf to be ſad for the death of *Michael* the Archangel: the Biſhops told him an Angel could not dye, to whom he replyed: *How then could Chriſt dye, if he was only God?* and ſo ſtopped the Eutychians mouths.

4488. A. C. 518.

Anaſtaſius having lived 88 yeares, and reigned 27. was ſtruck dead with thunder. In his time the Acephali or headleſſe hereticks, having no Biſhops to patroniſe them, divided themſelves into many ſects: to wit, Trithaits, Agoners, Theopaſchites, Jacobites, Armenians, &c. A people of Perſia called Immeres, who had been Jews, after *Salomon* had viſited their Queen, but turned again to Gentiliſm, ſent to *Anaſtaſius* for a Biſhop, and ſo embraced Chriſtianity. *Alamundarus* alſo the Saracen Prince was baptized. The Babylonian Thalmud was now finiſhed by the Rabbies, about 100 yeares after the Thalmud of Jeruſalem, and 29. years after, the invention of the Hebrew pricks. The feaſt of *Michael* the Archangel is inſtituted. *Anaſtaſius* dreamed before he dyed that 14 years of his life ſhould be cut off, for his hereſie; he was forewarned alſo that he ſhould dye by thunder. His ſtatues and his wifes are dragged through the ſtreets of Byzantium by the inraged people.

Juſtinus a Thracian born, of a Sow-herd became Emperor, by bribing the ſouldiers. For *Amantius* the Eunuch and great Chamberlain to *Anaſtaſius*, had given to *Juſtinus* a large donative to be diſtributed among theſe ſouldiers, who did vote for his friend *Theocritus* whom he meant to make Emperour, *Juſtinus* preferred himſelfe, and ſo got the ſouldiers to vote for him. *Amantius* being thus deluded conſpired with *Andrew* the Chamberlain, and *Theocritus* againſt *Juſtinus*, but the plot being diſcovered, they were all three ſlain. *Amantius* had dreamed a little before this, that he was devoured by a great hogge. *Juſtin* to ſhew his zeale to the Councell of Chalcedon, called his wife *Dupicina* by the name of *Euphemia* the martyr, in whoſe church that Councell was held. He recall'd the Catholicks from baniſhment, exiled the Arians and Eutychians, thruſt *Severus* from his Biſhoprick of Antioch, and condemned him to loſe his blaſphemous tongue. *Vitalianus* muſter-maſter under *Anaſtaſius*, and very intimate with *Juſtin* was (as its thought) by his command murthered in the palace. In whoſe place *Juſtinian* his ſiſters ſon was choſen.

4489. A. C. 519.

Cabades the Perſian king having wars with *Juſtin*, he hired for gold *Zeliobes* King of the Huns, to aſſiſt him. Who being invited by the Perſian for a greater ſumme forſook *Juſtin*, and aſſiſted the Perſian. *Juſtin* by his letters acquainted *Cabades* how this diſhoneſt King had ſerved him, who could not deny, but hee had received the money, whereat *Cabades* being incenſed ſlew him, and many more of the Huns with him, which had not eſcaped by flight; (there were 20000 of them) and peace was made with *Juſtin* for his ſincerity, which laſted not long: for *Tſathius* King of the Lazors or Colchi revolting from the Perſian, came to *Juſtin*, receives the Chriſtian religion and is baptized, therefore hee is called King by *Juſtin*, and is ſent back to Colchis, which then was ſubject to the Perſian. This cauſed a quarrell; the Colchi and Huns join with *Juſtin* againſt the Perſians. But *Cabades* being aged and ſickly, deſired his ſonne *Coſroes* might bee adopted by *Juſtin*; which had beene done, but that he was by *Proclus* his Treaſurer diſſwaded, as being dangerous both to himſelfe, and to *Juſtinian*. Upon this the quarrell grew greater; and now not only is *Cabades Juſtins* enemy, for advancing *Tſathius*, but *Theodoricus Veronenſis* alſo, for perſecuting the Arians. Pope *John* the firſt ſucceſſour to *Hormiſdas* with *Boetius* and *Symmachus*, came to intreat *Juſtin*, that hee would not bee too rigid againſt the Arians, leſt *Theodoricus* ſhould uſe the ſame rigour in his Dominions againſt the Catholicks. Theſe Embaſſadours were honourably entertained, and great joy there was to ſee a Pope in Conſtantinople,

who

who becauſe he was above the Patriarch, *Iuſtin* would bee crowned by him; hee was the firſt Emperour that was crowned by the Pope; *Theodoricus* hearing of this was inraged, thinking theſe Embaſſadours had plotted with *Iuſtin*, againſt him, and his Weſtern Dominion, therefore he ſtarved *Iohn* in priſon, and ſlew the other two (as was ſaid) with their followers; he dyed ſhortly after himſelf. *An. Mundi* 4496. *A. C.* 526.

His daughter *Amalaſunta* ſucceeded with her young ſonne *Athalaricus*, they reigned together 8 yeares, and reſtored to the Francs thoſe parts of Gallia, which the Grand-father had taken. After the death of *Alaricus*, *Amalaſunta* made *Theodatus* her couſin german Colleague with her in the kingdome, whom ſhee uſed to reprove freely for his looſe manners. Shee alſo put to death three prime men of the Goths, for telling young *Alaricus*, that it ſtood not with the greatneſſe of a Prince to bee under the mothers ferula. But ſhee for her good will towards her ſonne and couſin, loſt her life; for by command of *Theodatus* ſhee was ſtrangled in a bath. But *Eudoxia* daughter to *Valentinian* the third ſo inſtructed her ſonne *Childericus*, that hee having obtained the kingdom of the Vandals in Africa, by the death of *Tharſimund*, broke the Oath which his Father made him ſweare, to perſecute the catholicks, and hearkening to his mother, called home all the baniſhed Biſhops. *Iuſtin* in the mean time having reigned 9 yeares, and lived 77 dyed of grief, for the overthrow of Antiochia by Earthquake, in which *Euphraſius* the Biſhop, with millions of people periſhed, foure moneths before his death hee nominated his ſiſters ſonne, *Iuſtinian* Emperour. In his time the Manichees were utterly deſtroyed by King *Cabades* in Perſia, becauſe they poyſoned his ſon *Phatuarſas* with their hereſies, and were tampering with him, to bring innovations into the kingdom. *Clodovejus* four ſonnes divided the kingdom amongſt them, and to entertain peace with *Alamaricus* the ſon of *Alarinus* they marry their ſiſter *Clotilda* to him. *Alaricus* 2 King of Spain, and *Aquitain* marryed with *Amalaſintha* daughter to *Theodoricus* King of Italy. Shee was learned in the Greeke and Latin tongues, beſides divers vulgar languages; whereas *Iuſtin* the Emperour could neither write nor read. *Alamaricus* marryed with *Tottilla* the daughter of king *Clodovejus*, whom hee uſed roughly for holding firm to the Catholick Religion, which cauſed a warre between *Childebertus* (who ſucceeded *Clodoveus*) and *Almaricus*, who here loſt his life. S. *Benedict* inſtituted the order of the *Benedictin* monkes. Slavi a people of Scythia invaded Iſtria and the borders of Venetia; theſe in the time of *Mauritius* tranſplanted themſelves into Bohemia and Polonia. The Hiſtrians upon the comming of theſe Slavonians removed to the Iſle Capraria or Aegilon in the Tuſcan Sea, abounding in Goates; here they built Juſtinopolis. The Longobards invade Pannonia, whence they drive out the Huns and Oſtrogoths. *Theodoricus* reſtores Spain and Aquitania to his Nephew *Amalaricus*. About this time lived S. *Brigid* that famous Scots Lady, who was very intimate with S. *Patric*.

Iuſtinian ſucceeded, a Catholick Prince, learned and fortunate, by reaſon of his good Commanders, but covetous and wretched, extorting great ſummes from the people, which he ſpent on his buildings and ſouldiers. He ſo broke the Perſian with that war which *Iuſtin* began that he forced *Coſroes* the ſon of *Cabades* to ſue for peace. He ſlew alſo the rebellious Jews, hee cauſed *Tribonianus* and other Lawyers to abbreviate and reduce into method, the old lawes confuſed and diſperſed in many volumes. Whence we have the *Codex*, the *Digeſts* and *Inſtitutions*. The reſt of Antioch is overthrown with a new earthquake, and in a dangerous ſedition at Conſtantinople above 30000 were ſlaine. For *Hypatius Pompejus* and *Probus* couſin germans, and the Nephews of *Anaſtaſius*, being armed by the people who were weary of *Iuſtinian*'s taxes, invaded the Empire, firſt pillaging for five dayes together, all that were loyall to *Iuſtinian*. But *Hippatius* and *Pompejus* were both ſlain, as they were offering to ſeiſe upon the Palace, by *Beliſarius* who being before in ſome diſgrace, did now by this fact reingratiate himſelfe with the Emperour. 4497. *A.C.* 527.

In Afric *Gilimer* having killed *Hildericus* the ſonne of *Hunericus*, and *Eudoxa*

An. Mundi *Valentinians* daughter, took the kingdome of the Vandals by force. *Iustinian* who interceded for the life of *Hildericus*, finding his requeſt ſlighted, and *Hildericus* murthered in the priſon, ſent *Beliſarius* with an Army, who drove *Gilimer* into Numidia, took Carthage, which had been 95 yeares out of the Romans poſſeſſion, ſince *Genſericus* tooke it. *Gilimer* being beſieged and forced with famine, was taken and carryed in ſilver fetters by *Beliſarius* to *Iuſtinian*, who as he was led in triumph cryed out *Vanity of vanities, and all is vanity.* Thus was the kingdome of the Vandals extinguiſhed in Africa, which had continued ſince their firſt comming thither 108 yeares. *Iuſtinian* divided Afric into ſeven Provinces, three Conſular, and four Prætorian: that is, three were appointed by the Conſuls and people, and foure by the Emperour, then *Beliſarius* being made Conſul is ſent into Sicily to revenge the murther of the Queen *Amalaſventa*, who in priſon implored the Emperours help. *Beliſarius* having ſeiſed upon Sicily, *Theodatus* ſends Pope *Agapetus* to Conſtantinople to make his peace with the Emperour. *Agapetus* condemned *Anthimus* the Patriarch of hereſie, and having got *Menna* to ſucceed him, dyed ſhortly after at Byzantium, to whom by the appointment of *Theodatus Silverius* ſucceeds. *Beliſarius* takes Naples, upon which *Theodatus* is ſlain at Ravenna by his ſouldiers for his careleſneſſe, and ſo hee was puniſhed for the murther of *Amalaſventa* his couſin german. *Vitiges* is made King by the Goths. *Beliſarius* was invited to Rome by the citizens, who takes it and repaires the walls; the Italians fall off every day to *Beliſarius*; *Vitiges* joining with the Francs, raiſeth an Army of 150000 men, layeth ſiege to Rome, *Beliſarius* ſtoutly defends it, ſo that 30000 Goths were at this ſiege deſtroyed in one day. The ſiege laſted above a year, in which time there were 69 skirmiſhes, and the Goths at laſt driven from the ſiege. Pope *Silverius* being accuſed of treachery is by *Iuſtinian*'s command baniſhed into Pontia an Iſland in the Tyrrhen Sea, called Porce. In whoſe place *Beliſarius* ſets up *Vigilius*, and then raiſeth the ſiege before Ariminum. But the Goths aſſiſted by the Burgundians, take Millan upon ſurrender, and put all to the ſword; it's thought at leaſt 300000. of all ſorts, the women were beſtowed on the Burgundians. 50000 dyed of the plague at Picenum, and ſo great was the famine, that mothers eat their children. This famine drove the Francs back again into Gallia; wherefore *Vitiges* being in great ſtraights, ſolicited *Coſroes* the Perſian to make warre upon the Emperour, who otherwayes was like to bring all his Forces into Italy. But in the meane while *Beliſarius* tooke Ravenna, *Vitiges* ſubmits to him; the Goths proffered to *Beliſarius* the Empire of Italy, which he refuſed, and retorning home upon *Iuſtinians* command, carryed with him *Vitiges*. In whoſe ſtead the Goths beyond Padua ſet up *Theudibaldus*, who having ſcarſe reigned a year, was killed. *Araricus* ſucceeded, who was ſlain ſhortly after; then *Totilas* was made King. He thruſts the Romans out of Ravenna, and overthrowes them in a pitcht battell.

4511. *Beliſarius* upon his returne is imployed in Syria and Perſia againſt *Coſroes*, at
A. C. 541. which time the plague ſo rageth at Conſtantinople, that there dyed 10000 a day. *Coſroes* burnes Selencia and divers other cities. In Italy Neapolis is recovered by the diligence of the Goths. The Garriſon is friendly diſmiſſed, and the Inhabitants almoſt ſtarved, are kindly uſed. So ſtrict was the Diſcipline of the Army, that *Totilas* executed a kinſman of his for lying with a maid, whoſe whole eſtate he beſtowed on her. Italy being in danger to be loſt again. *Beliſarius* is called back from Perſia, and ſent to Italy, where hee could doe but little good, becauſe the old ſouldiers were either al gone, or elſe they were grown ſtubborn. Therefore *Totilas* takes Rome again, being betrayed, and almoſt all ſtarved, and overthrowes ſome parts of the walls, but abſtained from ſlaughter. In England *Oeca* King of Cantium having invited the Saxons againſt *Arthur* King of the Britaines, was diſappointed; for they were not permitted to land, wherefore they take pay under the French King. *Serditius* King of the South-Saxons, ſeiſeth on the Iſle of Wight, which he beſtowed upon *Stuffa* and *Whitgar*, who deſtroyed the old Britains. *Whitgar* called the Caſtle there Whitgarsburg, now briefly Garesburg.

Beliſarius returnes again into Italy, takes Tarentum, Spoletum, and Rome, which

which hee fortyfieth; but the Perſian warre being renewed by *Coſroes*, hee was a- *An. Mundi*
gaine commanded thither. Whoſe departure gave occaſion to *Totilas* to over-
runne againe all Italy: hee obtaines alſo Rome by the treaſon of the Iſauri, which
now hee fenceth for himſelfe. Not long before this, the Danes being driven
out of France, fell upon Friſia. The Lombarbs came out of their countreys be-
fore this, *Sujon* being then king of the Danes, they under their Captain *Alboi-*
nus, on the borders of Pannonia overcame *Cunimundus* King of the Gepidæ, to
whom Syrmium and much of Dalmatia was ſubject. Shortly after *Narſes* whom
Juſtinian ſent to Italy in ſtead of *Beliſarius* ſends for theſe who did him good 4522.
ſervice in ſubduing the Goths: in a ſhort while after *Totilas* in Tuſcia was over- *A. C.* 552.
thrown and killed. So Rome and Italy became ſubject again to *Juſtinian*, from
whence the remainder of the Goths were quite expulſed, who choſe *Tejas* for
their King. He having raigned one year, was in a battell overthrown at Cumæ, and
ſlaine. The 22 year of the Gothic war. *Aligernus* Captain of the Cumæan Garri-
ſon, yeelded himſelfe to *Narſes*. Shortly after the Francs and Alemans, as they
entered into Italy, and fell to plundering, were ſet upon, ſtript of all their booty,
and of 30000 Scairs 5000 returned home, the reſt being conſumed by the ſword
and the plague. So Italy being quieted, and *Coſroes* forced by many loſſes to
ſue for peace, both Rome and Conſtantinople were ſhaken with earthquakes,
upon which follows the plague, which ſwept away multitudes of people: *Juſtinian*
laying aſide his Crown, beſtowed the money on the poore, which was wont to
be imployed on ſports and playes. He made a law againſt Sodomites, puniſhing
them with the loſſe of their genitals, and ſacriligious perſons with the loſſe of their
hands.

Beliſarius though now aged, yet was imployed againſt the Huns, who had broke
in upon Cherſoneſus and Greece, theſe alſo he overthrew, and cleared the Em-
pire of them. But after all his good ſervices, upon ſuſpicion of treaſon hee was
impriſoned, ſome ſay hee was forced to begge for almes; but hee being found in-
nocent, was reſtored to his wealth and honours, and two yeares after dyed in peace.
Juſtinian alſo dyed the ſame yeare, having reigned 38 yeares and 7 months. In his 4535.
time the fifth generall Councell was called at Conſtantinople; in which *Theodo-* *A.C.*565.
rus Biſhop of Mapſveſta in Cilicia, *Theodoritus* Biſhop of Cyprus, and *Ibas* Bi-
ſhop of Edeſſa were condemned, which had moved many dangerous diſputations
ſavoring of Neſtorianiſm; *Origen* was alſo condemned, though *Vigilius* the Pope
would not be preſent or give his aſſent, for which cauſe hee was baniſhed, but re-
called by *Narſes* the Evnuch, and in his return dyed of the ſtone in Sicily. In
this Councell alſo were condemned the two Originiſts, *Didymus* and *Euagrius*,
for teaching that the ſoules were extant before the bodies, that the Divels ſhould
bee ſaved, and that the paines of hell were not eternall. *Juſtinian* occaſioned
much barbarouſneſſe and ignorance in his time, by converting the ſalaries allowed
for maintenance of ſchooles and learning, to his owne uſe; he ſpent vaſt ſummes
in building: the chiefeſt whereof was the Temple of S. *Sophia*, dedicated to the
eternall wiſdome of the Father. Hee held before hee dyed, that Chriſts body was
immortall and incapable of ſuffering from the time of his birth: which opinion
he forced upon all men, and becauſe *Eutychius* the Patriarch of Conſtantinople
would not give his aſſent to it, hee was baniſhed, and *Iohannes Scholaſticus* ſubſti-
tuted in his place. In his time *David* an Indian king, upon a victory hee had
over the Homerits a people of Ethiopia, became a Chriſtian, and had a Biſhop with
ſome Monkes ſent into his country, two of theſe Monkes brought home with
them Silk-wormes, which were before unknown to the Romans, and ſo they learn-
ed to make ſilk ſtuffes, which they were wont to buy ready made, hitherto. As
Juſtinus had commanded Chriſts Nativity to bee kept, ſo did *Juſtinian feſtum oc-*
curſus Simeonis ὑπαπαντὴς, the purification of *Mary*, and afterward *Mauritius* her ſleep
or death. Then did the Avares a people of the Huns obtain from *Juſtinian* a place in
Pannonia to inhabit, upon the removing of the Longobards from thence into Ita-
ly. *Gethes* King of the Heruli, *Gorda* King of the Huns, *Abaſgi* and divers other
people upon Tanais become Chriſtians. The Sarmatians and their new King *Iulian*

were

An. Mundi were destroyed. Toletum is taken by the Francs, who plunder the Churches thereof. The hereticks called Agnoetæ, held that Christ knew not the day of judgement. Pope *Agapetus* for calling *Justinian Diocletian*, in that hee became an Eutychian, was smitten on the face by a courtier; some thinke *Iustinian* dyed madde. *Narses* of the booties which hee tooke from the Goths, built a Temple at Venice to *Theodoricus* the Martyr, where now is the Church of S. *Mark*. *Rupertus* Bishop of the Francs converted the *Boii* or *Bavarians* to Christ. The last of the Consuls was *Basilius*, in whom ended that honorable Office. *Childebertus* & his brother *Clotharius*, takes divers towns in Spain, and bring away with them the coat of *Vincentius*, the martyr, to whom they build a church in the Suburbs, now called S. Germans.

CHAP. VI.

1. *Of* Justin, Tiberius, *and* Mauritius. 2. *Of the Persians, Goths, Longobards, Suevi, Avares, and others of these times.* 3. *The affaires of the Church then.*

Iustinus the second a Thracian born, and Nephew to *Justinian* by his daughter, succeeded; in the beginning of his reign he took off many taxes, built fair houses, and adorned the Churches. But shortly after, being of an infirm body, hee gave himselfe to women and idlenesse. Hee sold the Church livings, and by connivence, permitted many injuries, till one demanding of him the Government of the City, and wishing him to give way for execution of justice, caused a Senator that was found guilty to be whipt, and so the others by this punishment were affrighted. *Justin* deposed *Narses* being accused by the Romans for his oppression, and *Longinus* is sent in his place. In whom began the Exarchat of Ravenna; the Emperors Deputies being called *Exarchi*. *Sophia* the Empresse, scoffingly sent word to the Ennuch, that hee should returne to spin among the women. Hee returned her this answer, that *He would spin her such a thred, as neither shee nor her husband should bee able to untwist*. Whereupon hee cals the Longobards into Italy, who under
4538. their King *Alboinus*, made no scruple to exchange poore Pannonia for rich Italy,
A. C. 568. thither they came accompanyed with the Saxons and other Nations, leaving Pannonia to the Huns, bnt conditionally, that if things fell not out to their mindes in Italy, they might injoy againe their old habitations. This migration of the Lombards into Italy was presaged by the rushing of armed men in the air. *Narses* having raised the storm, forsooke Rome, and sheltred himself in Naples, Pope *Iohn* the third (who succeeded *Pelagius*) followed after, desiring his return to Rome; but not long after they both dyed, and left Italy as a prey to the Barbarians. In the interim the Huns and Avares did utterly extirpate the Gepidæ, and the Saxons country being forsaken, is re-peopled by the French King with plantations of Suevians.

Alboinus having possessed himself of Gallia Cisalpina, called it Longobardia, now Lombardie. He spent 3 yeares and 6 months in the siege of Ticinum, which hee took, and made the seat of his kingdome, and called it by the name of Papia. Three dukedomes were erected: one called Forojulium now called Friuli, the second at Spoletum, and the third at Beneventum. But *Alboinus* in the 4. yeare of his reign ended his life by drunkennesse. He had killed some yeares before *Cunimundus* king of the Gepidæ, whose wife being dead (shee was the daughter of *Clotharius* the French King) He marryed with *Rosimunda* the daughter of *Cunimund*. One day at Verona in a feast, hee drunk to her in a cup made of her Fathers skull, desiring her to be merry with her Father. Shee in a rage prostitutes her body to *Helmiches* the kings page, and to one *Perido* a resolute souldier, desiring no other reward but the murther of her husband. Upon this *Alboinus* is murthered in his chamber, as he was sleeping after dinner. *Helmiches* flyes with adulterous *Rosimund* to *Longinus* the Exarch. Shee falling in love with another poysoned *Helmiches*, as

he was coming out of the bath; he perceiving that hee was poysoned, drew his sword, and forced her to drink up the rest of the potion: thus three murtherers are justly punished. *An. Mundi*

To *Alboinus* succeeded *Clephus*, who having reigned tyrannically 1 yeare and 6 months, was murthered by one of his servants. After him the Longobards chose them Dukes, as they were wont. These subdued a great part of Italy, and made warres upon Gallia, these lasted 10 yeares, till one of them fell off to *Longinus* the Exarch. About this time the peace was broken by *Iustin* with the Persian for he with held the payment of 500 *l.* weight of gold which hee used to pay to *Cosroes*. He armed *Arethas* the Ethiopian King against the Parthians, and undertook also the protection of Armenia the greater. *Martianus Iustins* Generall, defeated the Persian, and besieged Nisibis; but *Iustin* most foolishly took away *Martianus* commission, and substituted *Acacius* as great a coward as himselfe. This made the Army in a rage give off the siege, which the Persian perceiving; presently *Hormisdas* the sonne of *Cosroes*, sends *Ardamanes* with new Forces, which far and neer wasted the Eastern Empire; so that *Sophia* the wife of *Iustin* (who was now become phrenetick upon his bad successe) was forced to sue for peace. *Iustin* being recovered, by the advice of his wife made *Tiberius* a Thracian, but a good souldier, his successour, to whom hee gave many wholesome admonitions, in which hee shewed himselfe a better Counsellour, then an Emperor. And so grieving at his own follies and miscarriages dyed the 13 yeare of his reigne. In his time Cantabria was subdued by the Visigoths, who having overthrown the Suevi, made Toletum their Regall Seat. In France there were civill warres between the four sonnes of *Clotharius*. Two French Bishops *Sagitarius* and *Salonius* were degraded in the councell of Lyons, for arming themselves like souldiers, and going to the wars; but upon their appeal to Pope *Iohn* they were restored, yet afterward continuing in their lewd courses they were degraded again in the Councel of Cabilon. *Herebertus* or *Charibertus*, the son of *Lotharius* or *Clotharius* King of Paris, for putting his wife away unjustly, & committing incest with his two sisters, was excommunicated by *Germanus* Bishop of Paris, and suddenly after dyed.

Tiberius Constantinus was made Co-emperor with *Iustin* before his death, and was crowned with his wife *Anastasia* by *Eutychius* the Patriarch. He was a just, milde and bountifull Emperor, chiefly to the poore, whom *Sophia* the Empresse reproved, as being too prodigall; he answers, *that hee should never want wealth on earth, as long as hee laid up treasures in heaven by relieving the poore.* For as hee caused a marble stone to be taken up, on which was ingraven the crosse, counting it unchristian like to tread upon it, hee found many talents of gold buryed there. Hee was also informed of the great treasure which *Narses* had hid; with this wealth he relieved the poore, and made war against the Persians which had broke in upon Armenia, and recovered all that had been lost under *Iustinian* and *Iustin*. *Cosroes* being aged and grieving for his losses dyed; and made a Law that no Persian King hereafter should make war against the Romans. *Tiberius* having found such good service from *Mauritius* in this last Persian warre, bestowed his daughter *Constantina* on him, and having crowned them both, made him his successour in the Empire. He shewed himselfe so gratious to the captives, that hee sent them home without any ransome. He releived the Romans with corn from Egypt, when they were almost famished, and ready to surrender to the Longobards, or long bearded Barbarians, who were grown very insolent, because *Tiberius* was wholely employed about the Persian war.

Tiberius before he was made Emperour by *Iustin*, was sent against the Avares, who being vexed by the Turkes their neighbours, removed from the higher Scythia, and passing over Caucasus, sat down upon the banks of Ister, and threatned to take Syrmium. In this expedition *Tiberius* escaped narrowly from being taken. But at last he made peace with them. *Coganus* their King desired *Tiberius* to send him some Carpenters to make baths for him after the Roman fashion; but when the Carpenters came, hee forced them to build him a bridge over *Danubius*, that he might on all occasions plunder the Roman Provinces. *Tiberius* having reigned

4436. *A. C.* 576.

An. Mundi reigned with *Justinus* 3 yeares and 11 moneths, and by himselfe 4 yeares, dyed of a surfeit, eating too many mulberries. In his time *Pelagius* the second being consecrated Pope without the Emperors knowledge, sent *Gregory* then a Deacon, to excuse him to *Tiberius*, whom he could not acquaint with his consecration, because the city was besieged: then did *Gregory* begin his Commentaries on *Job*; and caused *Eutychius* the Patriarch to renounce his Origenicall opinions. Such violent Arians were in the Goths in Spain, that King *Lemugildus* slew his own sonne *Elmingildus*, because hee forsooke the Arian heresie. Many Jewes in his time became Christians. It's thought that *Cosroes* dyed a christian, and that he sent two golden crosses, with other rich presents to the Church of S. *Sergius* in Antioch. The remainders of the Suevi are driven out of Spain, having reigned there 177 years. The Gothish Kings who hitherto wore the same clothes and used the same seats, that the Nobility used; begin now to sit in a throne and to wear the regall purple. One *Donatus* then, was the first that brought into Spain the monasticall profession.

4553. *A. C.* 583. *Mauritius* a Cappadocian born, succeeds: an excellent Prince had he not been covetous. Having taken *Alamundarus* the Saracen in the Persian war, and sent him prisoner to Sicily, he had wars next with *Caganus* King of the Avares, who had taken Syrmium the chief city of Pannonia, and exacted a yearly stipend from the Romans. And not content with this, he sends the Sclavi to plunder and waste the Roman territories, whom *Mauritius* by his General *Commentiolus* suppressed; and recovered all the Roman prisoners, and the booty. *Hormisdas* the Persian King slighting his fathers command, makes wars upon the Romans. Against him *Mauritius* sends *Philippicus*, on whom he bestowed his sister in marriage. The Roman Army had rejected their Generall *Priscus* for his insolency, and chosen *Germanus*, but by the intreaty and eloquence of *Gregory*; they received *Philippicus* for their Generall, who had good successe against the Medes and Persians, but *Martyropolis* was betrayed to the Persian by *Sitta* the Decurion, whereupon *Commentiolus* is sent in *Philippicus* his place. He overthrowes the Persian neer Martyropolis. *Hormisdas* being angry with *Baras* his Generall, (who had subdued the Turks, and made them tributaries to Persia) banisheth him to Colchis, where *Baras* was again overthrown by *Romanus Mauritius* his Prætor. Upon this *Hormisdas* takes away the Generals place from him, and in a scoffe sends him a womans garment. *Baras* to be revenged of this disgrace, faines letters as from the King written to the armies, in which he upbraided them for their cowardise & effeminateness, and withdrawes also a good part of their pay. The souldiers thinking these letters to be reall, swear fealty to *Baras*. *Bynodoes* a great man whom *Hormisda* had put in irons was set at liberty by his brother *Basta*; who seise on the King, and imprison him. These having called a Parliament; condemne the King as unworthy of Government, because of his cruelty, and needlesse wars, besides his other crimes. Hereupon he is deposed, imprisoned, and exoculated, his wife, and son whom he appointed his successour, both put to death, and his son *Cosroes* whom he hated is made King. This new King used his Father at first very kindely, but being exasperated by his railing language continually against him, at last commanded him to be cudgelled to death. This fact made him odious to his people, who fel from him to *Baras*. Hereupon *Cosroes* flyes away on post Horses to the Roman camp: He was received by *Probus* the Patrician, and recommended to *Mauritius*, whom he animates against *Baras*. *Narses* is sent with the Army, who overthrowes *Baras*: besides many thousand Persians that were slaine, 6000 were taken prisoners. *Cosroes* is restored to his kingdome, who puts all the captives to the sword, except the Turkes who are sent to the Emperour at Byzantium, and so in the 8 year of *Mauritius* a generall peace is concluded in the East. But the wars with *Caganus* King of the Avares is not yet at an end. Many doubtfull battels are fought betwixt them. And many inrodes are made by the Sclavi. But *Mauritius* in the 10 year of his reign removed *Caganus* out of Thracia by this trick. He faigned some letters and sent them to *Priscus* the Prætor, who was then besieged in a castle by *Caganus*; he wisheth him to hold out the siege, for the Barbarian

should

ſhould be forced to remove ſuddenly; becauſe the Fleet which hee had ſent to waſte his coaſt, had already made great havock in his countrey; *Chaganus* having intercepted theſe letters, and ſuppoſing them to be true, raiſed the ſiege and marched homeward. But for 6 yeares after there were continuall wars; ſo that *Chaganus* ſackt 40 cities of Dalmatia. *Mauritius* out of covetouſneſſe, and the bad counſell of *Commentiolus*, gave way that *Caganus* ſhould take many of his ſouldiers priſoners, becauſe they refuſed to contribute towards the charges of their armes and clothes, yet tooke 12000 captives, whom hee offered to releaſe for a ſmall ſum, which *Mauritius* out of hatred and avarice refuſed to pay. Wherefore *Chaganus* in a rage put them all to the ſword, and would not depart thence, till he had received a great ſum of gold. *An. Mundi*

Mauritius was ſo little ſenſible of what he had done, that he abſolved *Commentiolus*, when hee was accuſed as the chief actor in this treachery, and his accuſors were puniſhed; which ſo incenſed the people, that they flung ſtones at the Emperor as he was going to the Church. He had after this ſome victories over the Avares. But ſhortly after a Monke running with a naked ſword through the ſtreets cryeth out, Mauritius *ſhall ſhortly be killed with the ſword.* A comet burned for whole 6 moneths. At laſt his heart ſmote him, for the murther of the ſouldiers, and deſired that he might be prayed for; In his ſleep hee thought that hee ſtood before Chriſts Tribunall, where he was asked, *whether he would be puniſhed here or hereafter*: he anſwered *here Lord*, and ſo he was by *Phocas*; of whom he underſtood by *Philippicus*, that he was a raſh young fellow, but unconſiderable, and a coward; then ſaid *Mauritius*: *if a coward, then a murtherer*. This *Phocas* was a Centurion, he had been Yeoman of the ſtirrop to *Priſcus* the Patrician; but now a great ſtickler againſt *Mauritius* his government. Who uſed his army undiſcreetly and rigidly, abridging them of their pay; and refuſing to let them have any proviſion but what they ſhould take from the enemy, and therefore willed them to take up their Winter quarters among the Slavonians. Upon this the Army did mutiny, and lifting up *Phocas* on a Target, as the cuſtome was, they ſalute him Emperour; *Peter Mauritius* his brother who had charge of the Army is forced to flye. In Conſtantinople they would have made *Theodoſius* the ſon of *Mauritius*, or elſe *Theodoſius* his father in law *Germanicus* Emperor; but *Mauritius* had already impriſoned *Philippicus* who marryed his own ſiſter, upon ſuſpicion. He cudgelled his ſonne. *Germanicus* took ſanctuary in a Church, whence *Mauritius* would have pulled him out, but the uprore ſo increaſed, that hee is driven our of the City; *Phocas* is received, who having ſworne to maintaine the Orthodox Religion, is crowned by *Ciriacus* the patriarch. 5 dayes after *Mauritius* is purſued by *Phocas*, and taken at Chalcedon, where hee fell ſick. In the preſence of *Phocas*, *Mauritius* his two younger ſonnes are ſlain, then his 3 daughters, at laſt *Conſtantina* their mother and daughter of *Tiberius*, though ſome write that the mother and 3 daughters having taken ſanctuary, were not beheaded till 5 yeares after. But *Mauritius* having ſeen the execution of his ſons, and his owne at hand, cries out: *Juſt art thou O Lord, and righteous are thy judgements*: and ſo ſubmitted his neck to the ſword. After their heads were cut off, their bodies were left on the ſhore for the gazing objects of the people; but at laſt they were buryed in the Church by a certain Eunuch. The eldeſt ſonne *Theodoſius* was fled to the Perſians by his Fathers advice: but he was ſo eagerly purſued, that he was overtaken, and by a command from *Phocas*, ſlain alſo. Shortly after *Germanus* is killed, and his daughter the wife of *Theodoſius*; and at laſt all that had any relation to *Mauritius* even his youngeſt child of all, which was but an Infant, and whom the Nurſe would have ſaved, by offering her owne to death, which *Mauritius* refuſed. He reigned 20 yeares, three moneths, and ſome odde dayes. 4572. *A. C.* 602.

In his time the Saxons being weary of the Longobards Government, returned to their own countrey, which was now poſſeſſed by the Suevi, between whom there aroſe ſuch a quarrell about the removing of the Sueves, that 20000 were killed. The Lombards after they had bin ruled 10 years by Dukes, they choſe them a King

whom

An. Mundi whom they named *Flavius*, becauſe this was an honourable name among the Romans; on him they conferred the halfe of their goods, that hee might maintaine the greater ſtate. *Mauritius* hired *Childebertus* the French King, to oppoſe him, which cauſed great troubles in Lombardy. Such inundations of waters there were in Italy, that Tibris overflowed the wals, a great Dragon ſwimmed through the city downe towards the Sea, upon which followed the plague, whereof Pope *Pelagius* dyed: this ſickneſſe laſted many yeares. *Gregorius* is made Pope; who by letters deſired *Mauritius* not to confirm this election, but this honour was forced on him; and not without cauſe was he called *great*, if we conſider either his doctrine, or life. Hee appointed Litanies againſt that plague, which ſwept away in an houres ſpace 80 people. *Gregory* ſent *Auſtin* with ſome other Monks to inſtruct the Saxons in the Chriſtian Faith, who had now been ſetled 150 yeares in England. Antioch 61 yeares after the former earthquake was ſhaken again, in which there dyed 60000 people. *Gregory* Biſhop of that City was ſtrangely preſerved, for no ſooner was he gone out of the houſe, but it immediately fell down: *John* Patriarch of Byzantium aſſumed the title of *Oecumenicall* Biſhop; which Antichriſtian pride in him *Gregory* ſharpely reproved. In Spain *Ricaredus* the ſonne of King *Leburgildus* who killed his ſon for being a Catholick, drove the Arian hereſie out of Spain, and obtained the title of Catholick King. He overthrew 60000 French, who had broke in upon Spain. Hee was both a good and fortunate Prince, who having reigned 15 years dyed at Toletum. Such was the ignorance of that age, that neither the Latin tongue at Conſtantinople, nor the Greek at Rome was underſtood. *Chilpericus* King of France was ſlaine by his ſubjects, at the perſwaſion of his wife *Fredegunda*, for his cruelties, and hereſies; a Synod of 62 Biſhops in Toledo is held againſt Arianiſm. With Religion, learning flouriſhed in theſe South parts of England, till *Charles* the great, who ſent for *Beda*'s ſcholars hence to teach in France and Italy. The Slavi ſet themſelves in Iſtria and Dalmatia, which from them is called Slavonia: *Gregory* calls himſelfe the ſervant of ſervants. He introduceth many ceremonies, ſets up divers Monaſteries, one in his own houſe, and ſix in Sicily, and ſends abroad many Apoſtles to preach the Goſpell. *Columbanus* out of Ireland preacheth to the Picts.

CHAP. VII.

The affairs of the Empire under Phocas *and* Heraclius. 2. *Of Mahomet and the Saracens.* 3. *Of the Church and divers Forraign paſſages of theſe times.*

4581. *A. C.* 611. PHocas who murthered his Maſter, and by ſedition; got the Empire, by tyranny maintaines it. But not long; for hee tyranniſed not much above 7 yeares. That Army of his which murthered *Mauritius* is overthrowne by *Coſroes*. And hee who cut off the head of his Maſter, had his own head at laſt cut off with his armes and genitals. Not onely he, but the whole Empire ſuffers, for his cruell paricide. The Perſians ſubdue Phenicia, Syria, and Paleſtina, they waſt Galatia, Paphlagonia, and Cappadocia. In Europe the Avares overrunne Thracia, and kill every where the Roman Legions. In Antioch the Jews murther the Chriſtians, and among the reſt *Anaſtaſius* their Patriarch, whoſe body they burned. The Jewes for theſe outrages are condemned to loſe firſt their genitals, then their heads. *Phocas* was a notorious drunkard, who being taxed by ſome for that vice, rageth on the people murthering multitudes of them: but tyranny is ſhort-lived: therefore *Heraclius* Governour of Afric, enters into a league with *Priſcus* and *Gregoras* Patricians, that hee who firſt did diſpatch *Phocas*, ſhould be Emperour. *Heraclius* the ſonne of this *Heraclius*, by a Fleet of Ships obtaines Conſtantinople. *Photius* a Noble man, whoſe wife *Phocas* had abuſed, breakes into the Palace, flings down *Phocas* from his throwne, lays him in Irons, and brings him to *Heraclius*, who kicking him with his heels, cauſed his genitalls with which he

abuſed

abuſed ſo many women to be cut off, and at laſt his head; ſome ſay he was burned in a braſſe furnace. It's remarkable that of all *Phocas* his Army, which conſented to the death of *Mauritius*, there are but two left alive, in leſſe then 8 yeares ſpace. *An. Mundi*

Caganus King of the Avares enters Lombardy, kills *Giſulphus*, king *Agilulphus* his Generall, and beſiegeth Forojulium, and takes it by the treachery of *Romilda* the wife of *Giſulphus*, to whom hee promiſed marriage. *Caganus* hating the treachery and leachery of *Romilda*, performed his promiſe for one night, and lay with her, then he delivered her to the luſt of his ſouldiers, who having abuſed her, thruſt a long pole through her. But her daughters more modeſt then the mother, preſerved their chaſtity, by keeping in their breſts the fleſh of chickens, which putrefying with heat, ſo ſtunk that no ſouldier could come neer them, who thought that all the women of Lombardy had ſmelled thus ranck. About this time the Sclavi ſhake off the tyrannicall yoke which the Huns and Avares (now called by one name Hungarians) had laid on them; and made one *Samon* a French Merchant their King, under whom they defeated the Huns in a battell. *Agilulphus* Duke of Taurinum in Lombardy is choſen King by *Theudolinda* (the widow of the former King *Autharus*) whom ſhe marryed, and made a good Chriſtian; her *Gregory* had by his letters ſeaſoned with the Catholick Religion. This King made peace with France, and with the Exarch, & cauſed al Church Lands to be reſtored, which had been taken away. In Spain *Vittericus* obtained the kingdome by murthering the ſonne of *Recaredus* the former king, and he himſelfe in the 7 year of his reign was murthered by his own ſubjects at a feaſt. *Gindemarus* that followed reigned 2 yeares, and *Seſibutus* his ſucceſſour 8 yeares. Pope *Gregory* dyed the 2 yeare of *Phocas*, to whom ſucceeded *Sabinianus*, and after him, *Boniface* the third, who obtained of *Phocas*, that Rome ſhould be the head of all other Churches. He was willing to comply with the Pope, knowing how conducible this was to his affaires; *Boniface* the third, 8 months after this dyed, to whom ſucceeded *Boniface* the fourth, who turned the Pantheum dedicated of old to all the Gods, to a Church dedicated to *Mary* and all the Saints. *Coſroes* took Jeruſalem from the Romans, and carryed away the Croſſe to Perſis with many thouſand Chriſtians. About theſe times the uſe of clocks and bels was found out. The Roman government was quite extinguiſhed in Spain by *Seſibutus* King there.

Heraclius a Patrician, and ſonne of *Heraclius* or *Heraclius* Governour of Africa, is made Emperour by the Senat and Army. He with his wife *Fabia Eudoxia* were crowned by *Sergius* the Patriarch. He indeavoured firſt to make peace with the Perſian, but could not, except he would reject Chriſt and worſhip the Sun. In the interim the Jewes inſult over the Chriſtians, having bought from *Coſroes* their conqueror 90000 of them, which they barbarouſly murthered. Jeruſalem being taken; the Perſians ſeiſe next upon Alexandria, Egypt, and Libya, ſubduing all to Ethiopia, about the 6 yeare of *Heraclius*, and in the 7 they tooke Carthage: and at the ſame time *Caganus* was pillaging Thracia. At the ſame time alſo *Johannes Limigius* ſucceſſour to *Smaragdus* in the Exarchat, and after him *Eleutherius* for their tyranny in Italy are ſlaine by the ſouldiers. *Heraclius* who could not make peace with *Coſroes*, makes it with *Caganus*; and ſo removes his European Armies to the eaſt: Exhorting them to remember the wrongs done to Chriſtianity by *Coſroes*. They firſt enter Armenia, and defeat *Saburus* the enemies Generall there. In the 13 year of his reign he marcheth through the heart of Perſia, killing many thouſand of Perſians, and overthrowing their groves, and fire which they worſhipped. He had ſo many captives, that in Albania where he wintered, he ſuffered 50000 to eſcape. 4589. A.C. 619.

About this time appeared *Mahomet* the Saracen, being left a poor orphan, he marryed his rich miſtreſſe *Chadiga*, whom hee made beleeve that his falling ſickneſſe was but a conſternation of his mind, proceeding from the ſight of the Angel *Gabriel*, who uſed to appear to him: which lye was confirmed by *Sergius* the Monk, who was baniſhed out of Byzantium for his Neſtorianiſm, by whoſe help and of an impoſtor Jew, hee compiled a gallimafry of errours out of Chriſtian, A.C. 623.

An. Mundi Jewish and Heathenish writers, which he called Alcoran, wherein hee denyes Christs Divinity, and the Trinity; approving Circumcision and Polygamie. Of this absurd and impious book I have spoke, in my caveat against the Alcoran. He was forced to flye from Mecha; being in danger to lose his life for his errours. This flight the Arabians call Hegira, that is, the persecution, from whence they compute their yeares. *Cosroes* mad at the successe of *Heraclius*; plunders all the Christian churches of his Dominions, and forces them to embrace Nestorianisme, already professed by the Armenians and Georgians. Hee invites the Bulgarians, Avares, Gepidæ, and Sclavi to invade Constantinople. *Heraclius* hearA.C. 626. ing of this, calls in the Chazari or Turkes to the number of 40000. Byzantium is besieged by the Barbarians, who ten dayes after were forced to flye. *Heraclius* marcheth as farre as Ninive, where he defeates the enemie, kills *Razates* their Generall, and many of their prime men. *Cosroes* shuts himself up in Seleucia, and sends *Spartarius* to kill *Chardarigas*, who with *Sarbarus* besiegeth Chalcedon, because hee suspected that hee entertained correspondence with *Heraclius*. This businesse of killing *Chardarigas* was discovered, at which the Persians were discontented, and the rather because *Cosroes* refused to hearken to any peace with *Cæsar*. *Gundabundas* a Colonell to *Sabaros* revolts to the Romans; many of the Commanders fals off to *Siroes* the Kings eldest sonne, whom he meant to dis-inherit, and to crown *Merdaces* his son, by another venter. Upon this *Heraclius* and *Siroes* conclude a peace; wherein it was agreed that all places and captives 4598. should be restored. *Siroes* the new chosen king pursues his father, overtakes A.C. 628. him in his flight, and layes him in irons, then shewing him his gold and jewels; which he had bought at so deare a rate from the Romans, by the losse of so much blood, he left them with him to feed upon, for he was was kept 5 days without food; then having seen *Merdaces* whom he designed for his successor, with his other sonnes murthered before his face, by *Siroes* command he was shot to death with arrowes, and so he lost both his crown and life by the Romans; of whom he had received both. Thus the captives & plunderings being restored on both sides, the Crosse and *Zacharias* Bishop of Jerusalem, then a captive, were restored. *Heraclius* in the 7 year of this war, returned in a triumphant chariot to Jerusalem bearing the Crosse in his hand; upon this was instituted the feast of the exaltation of the Crosse.

Heraclius understanding by the Astronomers that his Empire should bee laid waste, by those of the circumcision; he thought the Jews had been meant, and not the Saracens: wherefore hee forces them to embrace the Christian profession; and those, that refused he banished out of his Dominions, commanding them not to come within 3 miles of Jerusalem. The same was done by *Sisebutus* in Spaine, and by *Dagobertus* the French King in France, against the Jews, of whom divers joined themselves with *Mahomet*, supposing him to be their Messias, till 4602. they saw him feed upon Camels flesh, and then they fell from him again. *Ma*A. C. 632. *homet* having in 9 yeares space inlarged his Dominion by force and craft, his wives made him away: hee dyed being 40 yeares old, the 22 year of *Heraclius*. His stinking carcasse which had lain 3 dayes on the ground unburyed, was put in an iron chest, and sent to Mecha. Hee promised his Disciples he would rise again the third day, but forgot it. The Saracens souldiers who had served under *Heraclius*, were slighted by one of *Heraclius* his Eunuchs, who had charge to pay them their arreares, but hee paid them with ill language, calling them dogs, so being incensed for want of their pay, and with ill words, they stirre up the whole Nation of the Saracens, being accustomed to robbing, against *Heraclius*. These under *Abubecher* their leader, *Mahomet*'s kinsman; take Gaza, and the passages of Mount Sinai, being a while resisted by the Governour of Cæsarea Palestina, two yeares after *Abubecher* dyed; *Homar* succeeds. Who fell upon Arabia, and tooke the city Bozra, then drove *Theodorus Heraclius* his brother to Edessa.

Heraclius sends an Army of 40000 under *Theodorus Sacellarius* and *Bahanes*, against the Saracens, *Sacellarius* was first defeated, then *Bahanes* having the dis-

advantage

advantage of ground, and the winde which drove the duſt in his face. *Homar* ſeiſeth upon Damaſcus, then upon Phenicia. Thence he falls upon Egypt and makes it tributary. In the 26 year of *Heraclius* hee ſits down before Jeruſalem, and in two years ſpace takes it. To *Sophronius* the Biſhop, and to all the Chriſtians of Paleſtina he promiſed ſecurity. In the 28 year of *Heraclius* Antioch is taken. *Muhavias* is made Amaras or Prætor of Egypt, as far as Euphrates. Then *Hyaidus* another of their Generalls takes Edeſſa, Daræ, and Meſopotamia. The next yeare they enter Perſia where king *Syroes* was dead, having reigned one year. *Hormiſdas* ſucceeded, whom they defeated and put to flight, and took the three daughters of *Coſroes* priſoners, with all the kings wealth and furniture, and ſo in a ſhort time ſubdued the Eaſt, and conquered the Perſians, calling them Saracens now from *Sara Abraham*'s wife. *Heraclius* being grieved at this great ſucceſſe of the Saracens or Hagarens rather, dyed of an hydropſie, having reigned 31 yeares. His inceſtuous marriage with *Martino* his brothers daughter, and his hereticall profeſſion, in holding there was but one will and operation in Chriſt, as *Sergius* Biſhop of Conſtantinople, and *Cyrus* of Alexandria had taught him, were the cauſes of theſe miſeries which fell on the Empire. *Martina* his inceſtuous widow having poyſoned her ſon in law *Conſtantine* the third, after he had reigned 4 months, not without the knowledge of Biſhop *Sergius* undertakes the Government. But having ruled halfe a yeare, ſhee was condemned by the Senat to have her tongue cut out, and her ſon *Heracliònas* to looſe his noſe, and both to be baniſhed. *Conſtans* the ſon of *Conſtantine* and nephew of *Heraclius* obtained the Empire. *Pyrrhus* the Patriarch who ſucceeded *Sergius*, upon a ſedition raiſed againſt him, fled to Africa, to whom ſucceeded *Paul*.

An. Mundi

4611.
A.C. 641.

About theſe times *Edwin* king of Northumberland was chriſtned by *Paulinus*, whoſe ſucceſſour *Oſwaldus* propagated the Goſpell farther in thoſe parts. *Iſaacius* Exarchat of Ravenna robs Pope *Horonius* of his treaſures. One *Mauritius* keeper of Records, aiming to be king of Italy, is by this *Iſaacius* apprehended and ſlain. In Lombardy *Rotharis* ſucceeded *Ariobaldus*, who ſet down in writing the Laws of the Lombards 77 yeares after their comming into Italy. *Mathuvius* the Saracen after 7 yeares ſiege took Cæſarea Paleſtina. In France *Brunchilde* the Queen mother of *Childericus* who had cauſed much effuſion of bloud, by ſetting the French kings at variance among themſelves, and had been the death of ten kings, was by king *Lotharius* of France condemned to loſe one foot and one arm, then to be tyed to the tail of an unruly horſe, and torn in ſunder. To *Lotharius* ſucceeded *Dagobertus* in Auſtraſia, Neuſtria and Burgundy. His other ſonne *Aribertus* ſucceeded in Aquatania. *Rupertus* or *Robertus* Biſhop of Woorms firſt, then of Ratisbone converted *Theodon* Duke of Bavaria to the Chriſtian faith; being baniſhed by *Lotharius* baptizeth Duke *Boſon* in Auſtria. The Neſtorian hereſie by means of *Coſroes* ſpreads far in the Eaſt, and continues to this day, whoſe Patriarch reſides in Mozall or Seleucia of the Parthians.

Paulinus a Biſhop.

Lupus Biſhop.

Pope *Boniface* the fifth made Sanctuaries of Churches and Altars; ſo did *Honorius* and *Theodoſius* long before. The Jacobites ſo called from *Jacob* the Syrian increaſe much. Pope *Honorius* the firſt in the 4 Councell of Toledo is excommunicate and degraded by the Biſhops. The Weſt Saxons are converted by the preaching of *Berinus*; ſent thither by Pope *Honorius*. *Severus* a Biſhop in Spain is martyred. *Chilenus* a Scotch man converted to the Faith the Atrebates or people of Arois, about Arras. The Univerſity of Cambridge was erected by King *Sigebert*, or as ſome will have it repaired or inlarged by him, but founded by *Cantaber* King of Spain many yeares before, when hee lived here in exile. *Cyrus* the laſt Biſhop of Alexandria ſave one, a Monotholit, paid to the Saracens for 3 years an annuall penſion, and ſo long Egypt injoyed freedome of religion, but when *Heraclius* refuſed to allow it the Saracens ſubded it. *Heraclius* was the laſt elective Emperour; after him it became hereditary. The Saracens ſeiſe on Perſia, which had continued in the race of *Artaxerxes* 413 years; that is from *Artabanus* the laſt Parthian king till *Hormiſdas* 2. the laſt Perſian king. *Dagobertus* king of France erects many Monaſteries and Churches; hee covered S. *Dennis* with ſilver, and made the

An. Mundi Duke of Britany doe him homage. *Rotharis* king of Lombardy placed in every Church two Bishops, an Orthodox and an Arian, which occasioned much mischief and factions. In Italy *Sosphronius* was the last Bishop of Jerusalem. From hence till the year 1100 that it was recovered by the Christians, if there were any between they were only titular. Pope *Severinus* sate in the chaire a year two months: his successour *John* the fourth 1 yeare 9 months, to him succeeded *Theodorus* or *Theodosius* 6 yeares 5 months. Pope *John* by his letters reproves the Scots for their Pelagianism, & undue observation of Easter. *Peter* was the last real Bishop of Alexandria, for now after the Saracens had got it, the Bishops were but titular: the Saracens make Babylon the seat of their kingdom, which before was in Damascus: they call their chief Prince, *Amiras* or *Caliphas*, that is a *successour*, because *Ebubezar* was the first *Caliphas* or successour of *Mahomet*, the Governours of their Provinces, they name Sultans.

Chap. VIII.

The affaire of the Empire under Constans *the second*, Constantine *the fourth*, Justinian *the second*, Philippicus Bardanes, Anastasius *the second, and* Theodosius *the third.* 2. *The affaires of the Saracens, Longobards, Spaniards, French, and others.* 3. *The affaires of the Church in that time.*

4612. A.C. 642. *Constans* the second son of *Constantine* the second succeeded. He was a Monothelite, and a persecutor of Orthodox men. By *Theodorus Calliopas* the Exarch, Pope *Martin* was seised upon, and sent to this *Constans* who banished him into Chersona where hee was starved to death, because he condemned the Monothelites in a Synod held by him; in whose chair he set up *Eugenius*. He murthered his brother *Theodosius*, though a Clergy man, with the horrour of which murther he was so affrighted in his sleep (for he dreamed that his brother presented him with a cup full of bloud) that he resolved to transfer his seat from thence to Rome, saying, *the Mother deserves more honour then the daughter*, but he was diswaded by his wife, children, & friends. Yet he went over into Italy, and made war upon *Romoaldus* king of the Longobards: from whom hee tooke some towns in Apulia, and was set down before Beneventum; but hearing that *Grimoaldus* Prince thereof was comming to raise the siege, *Cæsar* removed to Naples, and there being beaten by *Romoaldus* he marcheth to Rome. Pope *Vitalianus* with all the Clergy and people met him. A cloak interwoven with gold was by *Constans* presented to S. *Peter* which hee had better been without. For *Cæsar* robbed the Churches and City too of all their brasse ornaments, for 12 dayes together, and stript the Pantheon that was covered with brasse, then he laid heavy taxes upon Sicily, Calabria, Sardinia, and Afric, and who did not pay, had either their wives or children taken from them. So that he was laden with the curses of the Sicilian women, and under this burthen hee dyed, being stifled in a scalding bath the 27 yeare of his reign.

4639. A.C. 669. In the 11 year of *Constans* his Empire there rained ashes, upon which followed a cruel plague; a Ghost was seen to knock at mens doors, and as often as he knocked so often there dyed some out of that house; a year before his death, *Sapor* Governour of Armenia who revolted to *Muhavias* had his brains dashed out against a wall by his horse. In his time *Homar* having built a Moscu at Jerusalem was stabbed by a Persian, to whom succeeded *Hormanus*, who defeated *Gregory* the Patrician in Affrica, having rebelled against *Constans*, and so imposed a tribute on that part of Africa. The next year which was the seventh of *Constans Muhavias* in a Fleet of 1700 ships invaded Cyprus and took Constantia the *Metropolis* of that Island. He conquered also the Island Aradus after much oppositition. Constantinople was delivered from a siege by two sonnes of a certain Trumpeter, who broke their prison doores, slew *Amiras* and set the Fleet on fire, but *Muhavias* prepared a new Fleet with which hee beat *Constantines* neer Phenice a harbour of Lycia, the Sea was dyed

died with the Roman bloud, the Emperor was fain to disguise himself in a poor habit, and so escaped. Then also did the Saracens subdue the Isle of Rhodes, and in it break down the Colossus of the Sun, which a certain Jew bought. The brasse of that statue loaded 900 Camels. *An. Mundi*

Shortly after this the Saracens fell out among themselves. Some of them followed *Muhavias*, some *Aly Mahomets* son in law, who called himselfe the true Prophet, saying, that the Angell *Gabriel* was sent to him, and not to *Mahomet*, but by a mistake. *Muhavias* during this division was humbled, and content to pay a yeerly pension to the Emperour, which afterward when things were setled he refused to pay. He subdued *Haly* and his faction, by intercepting the waters, so that being tormented with thirst they submitted in the 15 yeare of *Constance*. Pope *Vitalianus* brought the use of Organs into the Church, *Eligius* Bishop of *Novio magum* converted Flanders to Christ, *Zechius* a Croatian, by birth a Sclavonian, having committed murther at home, fled into Bohemia, and there planted. His brother *Lechus* planted in Polonia, so called from *pole* which in Sclavonic signifies a plain or champion countrey. The posterity of *Zechius* planted Moravia and Lusatia. But Russia and Pomerania were peopled by the children of *Lechus*. *Sigebertus* in France, fearing hee should be childlesse made *Hildebert* son of *Grimoaldus* his successour. But beyond hope having got a sonne, whom he called *Dagobert*, hee commits the care of him to *Grimoaldus*, and then dyed. *Grimoaldus* having shaved *Dagobert* sent him into Scotland, and made his own sonne *Hildebert* king. The French hating this treachery, sues him before *Clodoveius*, who imprisoned him, thrusts out *Hildebert*, and sets up his own sonne *Hildericus* King of the Austrasii. *Clodoveius* spoiled all the Sepulchers of the Martyrs, of their wealth, which his Father *Dagobert* had bestowed on them; and distributes all to the poore. But to make amends hee exempts the Monastery of St. *Dennis* neer Paris, which his Father had built, from the Iurisdiction of the Bishops. To him succeeded *Ebrunus*; about this time the French Kings growing dissolute and careless, left the managing of the kingdome to the Governours of the Palace. *Homar* ordained that every month the Alcoran should be read. *Azomon* the fourth from *Mahomet* much weakened the Empire. *Theodiscus* a Greek Bishop of Hispalis or Sivill, was unbishopped for corrupting *Isiodores* workes, wherefore he becomes an Arabian heretick, in detestation of this wickednesse, the primacy of the Church of Spaine is translated from Hispalis to Toledo. *Eugenius* the first, ordained that Bishops should have peculiar prisons for Delinquent Clergy men. *Cindasuindus* king of Spain, repaires the Churches which were demolished by the hereticks, *Peter* succeedeth to *Paul* in the seat of Constantinople. To Pope *Eugenius* who sate almost 3 yeares succeeded *Vitalius* who was Pope 14 years: from the first year of *Clotarius*, which was the 662 yeare of Christ, till the 750 which is about 90 yeares, to wit, till *Pipin* the Father of *Charles* the Great, the *Major Domus* or Steward of the Kings house managed the kingdome, the kings themselves taking their pleasures, and presenting themselves to the people but once a year. The Saracens under *Muhavias Gizad* expelled the Romans and Vandals out of Africa; Pope *Adeodatus* succeeded to *Vitalius*, and sate 4 yeares.

Constantinus the 4th called *Pogonatus* from his great beard which he wore when he returned from Sicily, whither he went to revenge his Fathers death, was made Emperor in his Fathers time. He overcame & slew *Mezentius* the Armenian whom the Sicilian Legions had saluted Emperor. *Constantine* the Patrician, and al that assisted *Mezentius* were taken by the help of *Theodorus Calliopa* the *Exarch*, and punished: the Eastern Princes, would have had *Tiberius* and *Heraclius Constantines* two brothers to be crowned, desiring a Trinity of Governours on earth, as there was in heaven. *Constantine* making shew as if he assented, sent for these Princes, and slew them as seditious persons, and made his brothers uncapable of the Empire, by cutting off their Noses. The Saracens in the mean time waste Africa, and took 80000 prisoners. They take also Syracuse, they besieged Byzantium 7 yeares, in which time they lost many ships and men, and were at last forced to return home, in which return they lost by a sudden storm all their ships, but this losse they repaired, and

4639. A.C.669.

An. Mundi shortly after they lost their ships again, by the invention of *Callinicus* the Mathematician, who by a new invented fire called *Marinus* or *Græcus*, which burned in the water, consumed them all, with the losse of 30000 men. This fire from *Callinicus* the Græcian is called *Græcus*; but indeed before this the Romans made bals of fire which would burn in the water. The Saracens had also another losse by the Mardaits in Mount Libanus: they made them sue for peace, which was granted for 30 yeares, paying yearly during this time 3000 *l.* weight of gold, 50 men, and so many of their best horses to *Cæsar*. Upon the report of this peace, *Cæsars* European enemies, fearing lest their countreys might be made the seat of warre, by presents and intreaties, obtained also peace of the Emperour: the yeare fol-
A. C. 679. lowing there was a great Earthquake, a forerunner of the Bulgarian eruption out of Scythia upon the lower Mysia not farre from Byzantium, called from them Bulgaria, and this from the river Bolga, whose springs are from the lakes of Moscovia: against these *Constantine* marcheth with an Army, which made the Bulgarians keep themselves within their trenches. This war was like to hold; *Cæsar* being troubled with the Gout, went to the baths of Mesembria, a city in Thracia. His souldiers thinking that hee had fled for fear, began all to fly, which the enemy perceiving, pursued and killed multitudes of them: and subdued the Sclavonians; *Constantine* was forced to pay them a tribute, that they might not annoy the Roman territories. About this time dyed *Muchavias* Prince of the Saracens, to whom succeeded his son *Gizildus*.

Constantins care now was, having peace abroad, to quiet all controversies in
4653. the Church also: therefore cals a Synod at Constantinople of 280 Bishops. This
A.C. 680. was the sixt *Oecumenicall* Councell, in which the five former were confirmed, and the Monothelites condemned for hereticks: among which were *Sergius*, *Pyrrhus*, *Cyrus*, *Paulus*, *Petrus* and Pope *Honorius*, who lived in the time of *Heraclius*. But some excuse him in that he held there were not in Christ two contrary wills. *Theophanes* the Abbot was made Bishop of Antioch. Alexandria and Jerusalem, sent no Bishops, being now in the possession of the Saracens. Pope *Agatho* his Legats had the chief place in the Councell next the Emperour. Who eased Rome of the money which was wont to be paid to the Emperour, for the Popes ordination, but conditionally, that the Pope should not be consecrate without the Emperors decree. The Bishop of Ravenna is commanded to receive his ordination from Rome, which hitherto he neglected, presuming on the greatnesse of the *Exarchs*.

In *Constantins* time *Partharis* king of the Longobards, after the death of *Grimoaldus* is called home from his banishment, and is made King. *Bamba* King of Spain, having reigned 10 years with great commendation, and after hee had subdued the Saracen Pyrats on the Coast, became a Monk. *Hildericus* or *Childericus* the French King, for causing *Bodilo* a noble man to be whipped, was with his wife great (with child) killed by this *Bodilo*, as hee was hunting; and so *Theodoricus*, who had been thrust into a Monastery, was called to the Scepter. To *Adeodatus* succeeded *Donnus* who was Pope five years, his successour was *Agatho* who sate two yeares. Under him began the sixt generall Councell held in Constantinople, but it ended under Pope *Leo* the second, who sate not above 10 moneths. At this Synod the Popes Legat celebrated the Masse in the Latin tongue before the Emperour and people in the great Church of S. *Sophia* in Constantinople. In this Synod the Monothelits were confuted out of the writings of the Greek and Latin Fathers.

Cæsarea Queen of Persia with her husband and 40000 Persians are baptized at Constantinople. This Pope *Leo* brought into the masse the holy kisse or *osculum pacis*. In Spain to *Bamba* succeeded *Eringius*; in that time *Maildulphus* a a Scotchman, was a famous professour of Greek and Latin tongues in *England*. To *Leo* succeeded *Benedict* the second, who was Pope 10 moneths, who sent *Chilianus* to preach the Gospell in Germany, chiefly in Franconia. His successour *Iohan* the fifth, was Pope 1 year. He ordained that the Pope should bee consecrated in the Church of Lateran by the Bishops of Ostia, Portunus, and Velitrnum, which custome yet continues, whereas before, he was only carried to St.

Peters

Peters chaire where hee ſate while *Abdmelech* King of the Saracens, recovers *An. Mundi*
Perſia, Meſopotamia, Armenia, and Hircania, having overcome his two enemies, *Mi-*
ſtar in Perſis; and *Said* in Meſopotamia. *Conon* in the Popedome ſucceeded to *Iohn*,
and ſate 11 months. *Conſtantine* reigned 17 yeares.

Juſtinian the ſecond ſucceeded *Conſtantine*, ſon of *Anaſtaſia* the Empreſſe. He 4666.
by *Leontius* his Generall ſubdued divers Nations in the Eaſt, whileſt the Saracens *A. C. 698.*
were at difference among themſelves: for *Abd melech* had great warres with the
Kings of Perſia and Arabia, whom he ſubdued, and ſo he put an end to the Ma-
humetan civill warre, In the 5 year of *Juſtinian*, with whom the Saracens made
peace, by reſtoring to him Africa, and paying dayly 1000 peeces of ſilver, with one
ſervant and one horſe, conditionally that *Juſtinian* would cleer *Libanus* and the
adjacent Mountaines of all the Mardaites, which much infeſted the Arabian ci-
ties. But in ſo doing *Cæſar* weakened the Empire. for ſo long as theſe Mardaites
held the Mahumetans play, they troubled not the Empire, but when they were
removed, the Saracens power increaſed. Hee alſo weakned himſelfe by breaking
the ſecond yeare of his reign the league, which his Father made with the Bulgari-
ans. At firſt he had the better, but afterward, he loſt his Army, and was forced
to flye almoſt alone to Byzantium. In the 7 year of his reign, having entertained
30000 Sclavi, and truſting to his power, broke the peace with the Saracens, pre-
tending that the money which was paid him for a tribute, was not ſtampt with his
Image. The Saracens calling upon God the revenger of perjuries, and carrying
on the top of a ſpeare in ſtead of a Banner the Articles of peace, fell upon the Ro-
man Army and routed them. The Sclavonian Generall having firſt revolted
with 20000 to the enemy, who corrupted him with money. *Juſtinian* hard-
ly eſcaped, who comming to Leucate, commanded the remainders of the
Sclavi to be killed and flung into the Sea. After this the Agarens made havock of
the Roman Provinces, and *Sabbatius* the Armenian Prætor, delivered up Armenia
to them.

The Arabians overrun Africa, to whom *Sergius* the Patrician betrayed the city
Lazica. But *John* brother to the Emperour *Leontius* recovered Africa again, and
drove out the Saracens. This *Leontius* had been impriſoned 2 yeares by *Theo-*
doſius and *Stephanus* the Emperours favorites, but having eſcaped out of priſon,
was by the Patriarchs help made Emperour. He cut off *Iuſtinian*'s noſe, and
baniſhed him to Cherſoneſus, having reigned 10 yeares. The two ſycophants
Theodoſius and *Stephanus*, were by his command dragged through the ſtreets, by
ropes faſtned to their feet, and afterward were burnt. *Leontius* after three yeares
reign was by *Tiberius Apſimarus* (whom his Army had made Emperour, upon his
return from Africa) ſerved, as he ſerved *Juſtinian*; for he cut off his Noſe, and
then thruſt him into a monaſtery: then he ſent his brother *Heraclius* into Syria
againſt the Saracens, who tooke and ſlew of the enemies about 200000. The Ar-
menian Princes killed their Agaren Governours, and returned to the Roman o-
bedience. But *Mahumet* Prince of the Arabians, ſubdued the Armenians again,
and burned their princes alive. Yet in Cilicia he was defeated by *Heraclius* who took
multitudes of the Saracens priſoners, and ſent them to his brother *Abiſmarus* for
ſlaves, who about this time ſent *Theophylact* into Italy as ſucceſſour to *John* in the
Exarchat. After this *Juſtinian* eſcaped out of priſon, and marryed with *Theo-*
dora the ſiſter of *Chaganus*, with whom hee lived a whole yeare in Phanogoria a
town of Sarmatia. But the Barbarian king being corrupted with gold from *Abiſ-*
marus, promiſed to betray him, which hee underſtanding by his wife, fled to *Tre-* *A. C. 703.*
bellis the Bulgarian king, by whoſe Armes hee was reſtored, the 10 yeare of his
baniſhment. The third day after he laid ſiege to Byzantium, by ſome ſluces of
water which he opened, he got within the town. *Abiſmarus* fled, but was overtaken
and brought back, multitudes of the people who had abuſed *Cæſar* with ill lan-
guage as hee lay before the City, were ſlaine. *Leontius* and *Abiſmarus* being in
irons fell flat at the Emperours feet, who troad on their necks, the people crying
out: *Thou ſhalt walk upon the Aſpe, and the Baſilisk*, and then they were both be-
headed. *Callinicus* the Biſhop had both his eyes thruſt out, and was baniſhed to

Rome

An. Mundi Rome, and *Cyrus* ſet up in his place, who had incouraged the Emperour in his baniſhment to recover his right. *Abiſmarus* had reigned 7 yeares. It's ſaid of *Juſtinian* that ſtill when hee wept or blew his cut noſe, he cauſed one of *Leontius* his faction to be ſlain. For he had vowed before when he was like to be drowned in a ſtorm, that if God would preſerve him then, he would ſhew no mercy to his enemies.

Things thus ſetled, King *Trebellis* being honourably rewarded was diſmiſſed; but afterward *Juſtinian* quarrelled with him about the extent of their borders: the Bulgarians being ſuddenly ſet upon by the Imperialiſts, fled to the mountains, whence afterward perceiving the Greeks to be ſecure, came down and made ſuch ſlaughter among them, that *Juſtinian* in haſt got on ſhipboard, and returned with diſhonour to Conſtantinople. Afterward hee ſent an Army againſt the Cherſonæans, among whom he had been exiled. They in the beginning of his deſignes would have deſtroyed him; therefore he cauſeth them to be cruelly murthered, and their Grandees to be burned: and delighted himſelfe to ſee 73000 of their youths drowned in a ſtorm. The Cherſonæi being thus barbarouſly uſed, and their childrens heads by *Juſtinian*'s command daſhed againſt the wals, implore aid from the Chazari, and perſwade *Philip Bardanes*, lately returned from baniſhment, and made Admirall of the Seas, to invade the Empire, with him joines *Elias* the Prætor, whoſe children *Juſtinian* murthered in their mothers breaſts, and marryed her to an Indian cook. *Bardanes* with *Elias* riſe againſt the tyrant, who was now in Amaſtris a town of Paphlagonia, which *Elias* took, and in it *Juſtinian*, whoſe head he cut off with his own hands; and ſlew his ſonne *Tiberius* whom he begot of *Theodora*, and had made his colleague in the Empire. This was the laſt of *Heraclius* his race, who of all the Emperours had the happineſſe alone, to have a ſixt ſucceſſour of his own bloud. *Juſtinian* reigned 7 years after his baniſhment. He was nicknamed *Rhinotmetus* from his cut noſe; his tongue alſo was cut out by *Leontius* after he had been animated by the Aſtrologians, and *Calinicus* the Biſhop (whom *Juſtinian* had firſt deſigned for the ſlaughter) to invade the Empire. In his time a Synod was held in the palace called Trullus of Conſtantinople, wherein Clergy men are ordained to retaine their wives. Pope *Sergius* who ſucceeded *Conon* oppoſed this Synod, wherefore *Juſtinian* commands him to be brought to Conſtantinople; but in vain, for the Army at Ravenna reſiſted, and did not ſuffer the Pope to be touched. Beſides *Kilianus* that was ſent to convert the Franconians in Germany, who was murthered there. *Wigbertus* with divers other preachers from England, were ſent to convert the Friſians, Danes, Saxons and others.

4682. *A. C.* 712.

At this time *Cunibertus* the ſonne of *Bertarius* was King of Lombardy. Him *Alchiſus* Duke of Trent, whom *Cunibertus* ſaved when his Father *Bartarius* would have killed him, drove him out of his kingdome. But *Alchiſus* tyranniſing over the Clergy, was hated, and *Cunibert* is reſtored; who defeated *Alchiſus* in a battell, and then cut off his head and feet. To *Cunibert* ſucceeded his young ſon *Ludbert*; whom he recommended to the care of Duke *Aſprandus*. But *Regnibert* Duke of Taurinum made war and overthrew the young King with his Governor *Aſprandus*; and ſo made himſelfe King. He dyeth within one yeare of his reign, to whom ſucceeded his ſonne *Aripertus* the ſecond, who reigned 12 yeares. He killed the lawfull heirs. *Ludbert*, whoſe Governour *Aſprandus* fled into Bavaria, where he lived in exile 9 yeares: then being aſſiſted by *Dithbertus* Duke of Bavaria, hee returnes to Lombardy, where he overthrowes in a great battell *Aripertus* the uſurper, and in his flight at Ticinum kills him. This *Aripertus* beſtowed on the Popedome that part of Piemont, which of old was called Alpes, Cottiæ, or Cottiæ, or Gothitæ. *Cerduella* king of the Weſt-Saxons was baptized at Rome, and there dyed, to whom ſucceeded *Ina*. *Conredus* King of the *Mercii*, that is, of Nottinghamſhire and Darbyſhire, taking *Offa* the ſon of *Sigerus* King of the Eaſt-Saxons with him, at Rome puts on the habit of a Monk. In Spaine all the Jews are made ſlaves, their goods confiſcated, and their children delivered to Chriſtians, to be bred by them. *Felix* Archbiſhop of Ravenna, for refuſing to

bee

bee subject to the Pope, looseth his Bishoprick and both his Eyes. *An. Mundi*

In Spaine *Iulianus* a Grandee whose wife King *Rudericus* abused, called the Saracens out of Africa, who oppressed the Goths, and in a great battell overthrew *Rudericus* and killed him. The Saracen Generall was *Tarichus*, from whom the Mountaine Gibraltar, upon which he pitched his camp, was called of old Gebel-Tarich. So now the Saracens possesse Spaine, and drive the remaining Goths to Biscay and the Pyrenæan hils, and the Astures, whose Captain *Pelagius* was the first King there. In France *Pipinus* Duke of Ostrasia was Master of the Palace under *Theodoricus*, *Clodoveus* and *Childibertus* the French Kings, whose power he exercised; he made *Lambertus* Bishop of Trajectum, or Utricht, who enveyed against *Alpaida Pipins* concubine, of whom he had *Carolus Martellus*. She caused her brother *Dodon* to murther the bishop, to expiate which wickednesse shee erected a Colledge of Canons; but the murtherer was eat up with vermine, the stink of whose body was so odious, that he was flung and drowned in the river Mosa. *Egicus* King of Spain was like to be murthered by the Jews, which was the cause of their hard usage there, as is said. *Sergius* was Pope 13 yeares, he added divers Litanies to the Masse. His successour was *John* the sixt, who sate 3 yeares.

Paulus Anafer of *Heraclea* in *Magna Græcia* is chosen the first Duke of Venice under *Absimarus* 252 yeares since the building of that City. The Egyptians fall off quite from the Empire, and choose themselves a King, whom they call *Caliph*. Afric which was recovered by *Belisarius* from the Vandals, and had continued since subject to the Romans 170 yeares, is now possessed by the Saracens. The West Goths had now reigned in Spain 256 years, but (as is said) already, are driven into corners, which is 346 years since by the Huns they were thrust out of Scythia. So the Saracens have now all Spain (except Gallicia the seat of the Astures and Cantabrians) which they injoyed 800 yeares together. The Visigoths yet possesse Aquitania, but ten yeares hence they are driven out by *Carolus Martellus*, *Vitisa* the sonne of *Egicus* King of Spain, orders the Clergy to keep what Concubines they will, and forbids them to obey the Pope. *Ulid* king of Arabia destroyes the Christian church at Damascus, commanding the Arabick tongue to be used in stead of Greek. To Pope *John* succeeded *Zosimus* for 20 dayes, and after him *Constantinus* 7 years, whom *Justinian* in Nicomedia honorably useth, to whom hee confessed his sinnes, and received absolution, lying prostrate at the Popes feet. He was the first Emperour that ever kissed the Popes Feet.

Philippicus Bardanes having murthered *Justinian*, obtaineth the Empire for 2 yeares and 9 months. The Pope rejects him as an heretical Emperour, for he abrogated the sixt Synod, and reestablished the Monothelites, upon the request of that Monkish Astrologer who foretold him, he should be Emperour. *Cyrus* the Patriarch is deposed by him, and one *John* an heretick is advanced. He prodigally exhausted the treasures which were left by his predecessors, suffering in the interim Thracia to be exhausted by the Bulgarians, and Asia by the Saracens: wherefore he was hated by his Peeres, two of which, to wit, *Theodorus* and *Buramphus* deprived him of his eyes, as hee was reposing himselfe after dinner, this was done by the advice of *Artemius* the chief Secretary, who the next day 4685.
is proclaimed Emperour. Pope *Constantine*, absolves the Emperours subjects *A. C.* 715.
from their allegiance to him. *Artemius* or *Anastasius* the second reigned one year and 3 months. Hee prepares a great Fleet against the Saracens, and takes order that Byzantium be furnished with 3 yeares provision. But the Army upon a sodain sedition forceth one *Theodosius* of Adramyttum, a Collector of Subsidies, and a quiet man, to accept the Empire against his will. *Anastasius* upon this layeth down his Emperiall Ensignes, is made a Monk, and is sent to Thessalonica, he was both a good scholar, and a good Catholick. He put down *John* the heretick, and set *Germanus* in the chair of Constantinople. About this time dyed *Pipinus*. *Carolus Martellus* is imprisoned by his stepmother *Plearudis Pipins* widow; but *Dagebertus* being dead, he escaped out of prison, and recovered his fa-

thers

thers dignity, which he so managed, that he establisht his posterity in the kingdome of France. *Theodosius* was Emperor not much above a year, for understanding that *Leo Isauricus* was made Emperour by the Army, and that his son *Theodosius* was taken prisoner, he resigned up his interest to the new Emperor, and having received the publick Faith for his indemnity, he with his son enter into holy Orders, in which they spent the remainder of their days at Ephesus, in his his time *Musalmas* the Saracen took Pergamus.

An. Mundi 4687. *A. C.* 717.

CHAP. IX.

The Roman affaires under Leo *the third, and* Constantine *the fifth.* 2. *Of* Pipinus, *and Forraigne affaires.* 3. *The Church affaires of these times.*

Leo the third called before *Isaurus Conon* from his country Isauria, had been Governour of Albania in *Justinian's* time, and subdued the Abasgi a people of Scythia. Now in the beginning of his Empire he is exercised by the Saracens, who with a Fleet of 3000 ships besiege Constantinople almost 3 years, but of this great number scarse 5 escaped, but were all consumed with famine, plague warre, thunder, stormes, and artificiall fires in the water. The Bulgarians alone killed 22000 of them, as they were plundering of the countrey. In the meane while *Sergius* Prætor of Sicilia, with one *Gregory*, aime at the Empire, but they were quickly suppressed by *Leo*; *Gregory* was killed, *Sergius* upon submission is pardoned. *Leo* in his third year overthrew *Nicetas Xylinites* and seise upon his whole estate for assisting *Artemius* (who was now banished in Thessalonica) to recover the Empire. *Artemius* with his Bulgarian Forces arrive at Byzantium, hoping the City had been for him, but finding it otherwayes, the Bulgarians for money betray him to *Leo*, who put him, with all that were of his plot, to the sword. The plague at this time was so hot at Rome and Byzantium, that it consumed 300000 Inhabitants. *Tybris* overflowed the wals of Rome: the Jews were a-
*A.C.*718. gain deluded by a false *Messias*, a Syrian born. Which caused *Leo* to force baptisme upon them, for which some of them were so desperate, that they burned themselves with their families. One *Radbodus* a German Prince and Heathen, as he was ready to be baptized, asked whether there were most of his Ancestors in heaven or in hell, it was answered in hell; with that he pulled his foot out of the water, saying: *I will rather follow many then a few*; but within three dayes after he dyed: So *Gizid* a Saracen Prince was perswaded by a Jewish Impostour, that hee should raigne a long time, if hee would abolish the Im-
4695. ages of Christ, and of the Saints, which he went about to doe, but dyed the next
A. C. 725. year after.

Leo in the 10 yeare of his reign commanded all Images to be abolished. *Philippicus Bardanes* had commanded the same before, but was resisted by Pope *Constantine*, as *Leo* is now by Pope *Gregory* the second, who would not suffer any tribute to be payed to the Emperour out of Rome and Italy, because he took upon him to alter religion. This gave occasion of great troubles in Italy, between the Pope and the Exarch, till it came to that passe, that the Emperor lost all his power in Italy, and had almost lost it in Byzantium; for not onely were his officers murthered by the tumultuous multitude, but the City also was assaulted with new Fleets of Saracens and others, which were forced with losse to be gone. *Leo* deposeth *Germanus* the Patriarch and other Bishops, for resisting his command about the Images, and sets up *Anastasius* Patriarch, whom *Gregory* in the Synod which he assembled condemneth, and then dyeth the 16 yeare of his Popedome, to whom succeeded *Gregory* the third, no lesse zealous for Images then his predecessour, against whom *Leo* sent a Fleet of ships, which miscarryed in a storme. Upon this the Pope cals a Councell, and excommunicates all enemies to Image-worship. This so inraged *Leo* that he did cruelly put to death divers learned men and others, who distiked his proceedings against Images. *Oecumenicus* pro-

fessour

feſſour in the Colledge of Conſtantinople is burned with his bookes. Hereupon Rome and Italy by *Gregories* means fall off quite from the Greek Empire. A league is made beteween the Pope and the French againſt *Luitprandus* the Longobard, who was now beſieging Rome. *Corolus Martellus* cauſeth *Luitprandus* to raiſe his ſiege and be gone. *Leo* ſeeing all his revenues in Italy to be ſtopped, gave order to confiſcate all the Popes revenues in Sicily and Calabria. He purpoſed to be revenged upon Italy, but was hindred by the incurſions of the Saracens upon the Eaſtern Empire. *Gregory* having excommunicated the Emperor, dyed the 10 year of his Popedome, whom *Leo* followed ſhortly after. He reigned 24 yeares and 2 moneths: before his death the wals of Conſtantinople, Nicea, Nicomedia, and other townes were ſhaken down with earthquakes. In his time dyed venerable *Beda*, and *Iohn Damaſcen* for patroniſing Images, was baniſhed among the Saracens. *Leo* dyed of a bloudy flux. *An. Mundi* 4711 *A.C.* 741

In this *Leo*'s time *Eudon* Duke of Aquitania, calls into France the barbarous Saracens to ſuppreſſe the greatneſſe of *Martellus*, they under *Abdiran* their General take Garunda and Burdeaux. *Charles* being aided by the Lombards and Germans, ſubdues the Saracens, and kills their Generall. *Eudon*, repenting for calling in the Saracens, turnes head againſt them. It's thought there were killed in that war 375000 Saracens, of the French onely 1500. Pope *Gregory* ſent to congratulate with *Martellus* this great victory, and withall to implore his help for the City and Church of Rome. The Venetians and Pantapolitans, by the Popes authority ſhook off *Leo*'s Government, they kill the Duke of Campanie with his ſon, and ſoon after *Paul* the Patrician and Exarch, whoſe ſucceſſour *Eutychius* is excommunicated by the Pope. The Romans ſweare to defend *Gregory* againſt the Emperour. The Exarch with *Luitprandus* King of Lombardy, enter into a league to ſuppreſſe Rome, Beneventum and Spoletum, and to reduce them again unto the Empire. But *Gregory* made all quiet, and a peace is concluded. *Tiberius* who thought to be King is killed. *Inas* King of the Weſt-Saxons commanded that each houſe ſhould pay a penny to St. *Peter* yeerly. *Luitprandus* confirmes the donation of the Alpes, the Patent whereof written in golden letters was carefully kept at Rome. Pope *Gregory* the ſecond, ordained that on every Friday in Lent there ſhould be faſting and ſolemne maſſe. He ſent *Boniface* or *Vinefred* to convert the Friſians and their neighbours, who is made the firſt Biſhop of Ments. Under *Martellus S. Willibore* converted the Weſtphalians. Whileſt Pergamus was beſieged by the Saracens, they were perſwaded by a Magitian to rip open the belly of a woman with child, and to waſh their right hands in the childs bloud, which they did in hope of victory. But they loſt it, with the town, in Gods juſt fury.

Pelagius deſcended of the Gothiſh Kings, is made the firſt King of Aſturia and Legion or Leon, by the remaining Chriſtians of Spaine, four yeares after *Roderic* had loſt Spaine to the Saracens. Hee tooke for his armes a red Lion in a white field, which yet the Kings of Leon wear to this day. From him is deſcended without interruption *Philip*, the now King of Spain. The Kings of Navar and Aragon are deſcended from *Garſias Ximenius* the Goth, and firſt king that reigned among the Pyreneans. The Chriſtians that were permitted to live in Spaine were called Mozarabes, becauſe mixed with Arabians. This liberty continued till *Alphonſus* the ſeventh. About the yeare 1100 that the *Almoad* Arabians came into Spain, they ſuffered no Chriſtians to live among them. *Martellus* ſubdued Burgundy and Aquitania, ſlew *Eudon*, and drove the Saracens quite out of France. *Alphonſus* the firſt King of Galicia, ſon in law, and heire to *Pelagius* drove Arianiſm quite out of his kingdome, for which he obtained the name of Catholick for him and his poſterity. *Abathaminus Calypha* nephew of *Abdimelech* having ſubdued Egypt, built Cayro where Memphis of old ſtood. From him *Caliph* became a title of honour, both in Egypt and Babylon, or Baldac. About this time dyed *Carolus Martellus*, who would not be called *Major Domus* as his predeceſſours, but Prince of France. He left two ſons *Carolomanus* and *Pipinus* to rule France. Theſe ſuppreſſed the Saxons: then *Carolomanus* became a Monk.

Con-

An. Mundi

Constantine the fifth, sonne to *Leo Isauricus* called *Iconomachus*, for being an enemie to Images, was crowned at two yeares old, therefore the first that was called *Porphyrogenitus*. He was called *Copronymus* from fouling in the Font when hee was baptized, which some held as a presage that he would pollute Religion. He was suspected to be a Nestorian. Whilest he was imployed in the Saracen war, *Artabasdus* his sisters husband, by the aid of *Anastasius* the Patriarch, set up the Images in Byzantium again, and for this cause was saluted Emperour by the people; which caused three yeares wars. In the end *Constantine* took *Artabasdus* and his son, these he blinded. *Anastasius* the Patriarch he caused to be carryed about the city upon an Asse, with his face to the Asses tail, but afterward restored him to his spirituall charge. In the fifth year of his reign, whilest the Saracens were involved in civill broiles, he overrun Syria and Assyria, he tooke the city Germanitia between Cappadocia and Cilicia, and there advanced the Christian religion; He made a league with the Bulgarians, and marryed with the daughter of *Caganus*, who after shee was baptized was called *Irene*. But his hatred to Images, reliques, and intercession of Saints: his persecuting of Priests and Monks who sided not with him, forcing them to marry, causing them to be beaten and banished to Cyprus, which was then invaded by the Saracens: his buyring, burning, drowning and breaking of pictures and Church ornaments, made him odious to the people and Clergy, many calling him the young Leopard, and brat of the old Lion; some called him *Caballinus*, because hee loved to wallow in horse dung. The sixt and seventh yeare of his reigne were terrible by reason of a violent plague through Calabria, Sicilia, Greece and Thracia; at Byzantium, there wanted people to bury the dead: such darknesse there was for 10 days together in August, that mens hearts failed them for feare: such Earthquakes were in Syria, that hils were turned into valleys, and townes removed 6 miles out of their places.

Constantine cals a Synod at Constantinople, in which were present 338 Bishops, who condemned Image-worship. This Councell he named the seventh Oecumenicall, notwithstanding the Popes opposition. He was not content to demolish statues and Images, but violates the Temple of *Euphemia* the Martyr, in flinging her odoriferous bones into the Sea, which being driven by the wind to the Isle Lemnos, were taken up and brought back to Chalcedon. He drew *Stephen* the Monk out of his cloyster, because hee taught men to despise worldly greatnesse. He killed and banished many of his Grandees; he made all men swear against worshipping of Images. *Constantine* the Patriarch who succeeded to *Anastasius*, was accused of secret plotting and correspondency with the banished Princes, for which cause he was banished, and then basely murthered. It was treason to say, *Mother of God help us*: or to watch at the tombes of the dead. He took some townes of Armenia from the Saracens, and filled Byzantium againe with Armenians and Syrians, which had beene almost exhausted of people by the plague. In the 22 of his reign he tooke occasion to quarrell with the Bulgarians, whilest they were intangled with civill discords; he defeated *Zeletines* their new King, who was therefore murthered by his people, and shortly after his successour *Sabinus* was banished for desiring peace: but the Emperour comming upon them with new Forces, made them sue for peace, which they obtained: but *Telerichus* their King resolved to breake it, by assaulting suddenly the Roman Forces. For that purpose an ambush is laid, which was discovered to *Cæsar* by some of the Bulgarian Nobles. He without shedding of bloud seised on the ambush, and took all that lay in it. *Telerichus* perceiving his plot was discovered, thought to finde out the discoverers by these meanes. He makes shew as if he would submit himselfe to *Cæsar*, for this cause he desires the names of such men as might be fittest to be imployed in this Negotiation, and such as *Cæsar* might put most trust in; divers of *Tilerichus* his friends were nominated unawares; these the Tyrant murthers supposing they had discovered the plot. *Constantine* to be revenged on the Barbarian for his treachery, resolves to fall againe upon Bulgaria, but in the interim he is taken with a burning Feaver, which was so

hot,

hot, that he cryed out, he was in burning flames, and so dyed, having reigned almost 35 years. He had been three times marryed, his first wife was *Irene* the Bulgarian mother to *Leo*, whom he marryed with *Irene Attica*, who made him a Grandfather, by the birth of his nephew to *Constantine*, in the 30 yeare of his Empire. *An. Mundi* 4745. *A. C.* 775.

In this Emperours time, the Turkes breaking out of the Caspian straits over-run Armenia and Iberia; and being richly laden with booties, return home. This was about the year of Christ 763 and 764. At which time there fell out such a cold winter, that the Euxin sea was frozen 30 foot deep, and 100 miles over. Upon this followed such a hot summer, that the springs were dryed up. Mountaines of ice broke down the wals of some towns. To *Luitbrandus* in Lombardy succeeded *Ratchesius*, who forgetting the 20 yeares peace he made with Pope *Zacchary*, and which he confirmed by an oath, besieged Perusia. To his camp the Pope repaires, and so wrought upon him, with presents, and his eloquence, that to expiate the violation of his oath, he resolves to enter into a Monastery, and did accordingly, with his wife and sonnes: but his brother and successour *Aistulphus* tooke another course. For hee seised upon Ravenna, and the whole Exarchat, and drove *Eutychius* the Exarch to Byzantium. This Government had lasted in Italy 182 yeares under 10 Princes.

Aistulphus withheld from the Pope those towns which hee said belonged to St. *Peter*. Wherefore Pope *Stephen* who was the first that sealed his buls with lead, and the first that was carryed on mens shoulders to the Lateran, implores the help of France, which he obtains for the courtesie *Pipin* had received of Pope *Zacchary*; which was this: *Pipin* had two brothers; the one *Carolomannus* was entred into a Monastery; the other *Gryphon* was killed; wherefore he affecting the kingdome of France, by his letters desires to know of *Zacchary*, *whether a stupid Prince or an active subject were fittest to rule.* The Pope understanding his meaning, gives present order to *Boniface* being lately made Archbishop of Mints, to annoint *Pipin* King of France, so *Chilpericus* being held unfit for government, was forced to lay downe the Scepter and Crown, and to content himselfe with a Monks hood. He was the last of the *Merovean* race. Thus *Pipin* being established in his throne by the Popes meanes, could doe no lesse then assist him to recover his own; wherefore having passed over the Alpes with an Army, he wrests from *Aistulphus* the Exarchat, and Pentapolis: and for the good of his soul he bestowed as a patrimony on the Church Ravenna, Bononia, Imola, Faventia, Ferraria; and in Pentapolis, Ariminum, Pisaurum, Ancona, Auximum and Urbinum, of old these provinces were called Ærmilia, Flaminia, and Picenum. At this day they are named Romandiola, and Marca Anconitana. 4720. *A. C.* 750.

No sooner was *Pipinus* returned to France, but *Aistulphus* repenting of his bargaine, besiegeth Rome with an Army, wasting all the countrey about with fire and sword. Wherefore *Pipins* help being implored again, *Aistulphus* is forced to pay the third part of his treasures, and a tribute to the French. Shortly after he broke his neck with a fall from his horse, as he was hunting. *Pipin* having with a long war wearied *Guaifarius* Duke of Aquitania, for denying of the Churches rights, and the Duke at last being killed by his people, enlargeth his Dominion by the addition of Aquitania. *Constantine* the Emperour in hope to recover the Exarchat of Ravenna, sends presents to *Pipin*, and among the rest a rich Organ, the first that was ever seen in the West. But to no purpose, for it was answered him, that those countryes were purchased for, and given to S. *Peter*: so *Pipin* dyed at Paris. To *Charles* he left Austrasia, to *Carolomanus* his other son, Burgundy and Alemannia. Gascony is divided between them. He founded the Bishopricks of Saltzburg, Ratisbone, Aichstart and Frisinge. *Burchard* founded the Church of Herbipolis or Wirtsburg, and *Boniface* the Abby of Fulden in Germany. *A.C.* 768.

Aistulphus being dead, *Ratichisus* had a minde to recover the Kingdome of Lombardy, slighting *Desiderius* who from the Duke of Tuscia came to sway

An. Mundi the Scepter of Lombardy, but Pope *Stephen* changed his minde; he having confirmed *Desiderius*, received from him Faventia and Ferraria. In Spain to *Alphonsus* succeeded his sonne *Frotolas*, who overthrew *Juzaphus* a Prince of the Saracens on the borders of Gallicea, after which time Spain was no more tributary to *Miromalinus* the Babylonian. For *Abderamen* thrust out *Juzaphus* and made himself king of Corduba. The Saracens were now distracted into factions, so that their Dominion was divided among divers. *Abubales* had Persia, *Salimus* Egypt, *Habdallas* Syria, who having killed the other two obtained the whole Empire of the Saracens 21 years. He laid heavy taxes on the Christians and favoured the Jewes, yet permitted the Antiochians to choose them a new Patriarch, having been 40 yeares without one. He punished 16 of the Persian *Magi*, for offering by the vertue of certaine inchantments to flye in the aire, whence they fell down and hurt themselves. *Habdallus* Prince of Arabia dyed the same month that *Constantine* did. The same year *Adelgisus* sonne of *Desiderius* King of Lombardy fled to the Emperour *Charles* the Great, having invaded his Fathers kingdome, which had continued 206 yeares. *Charles* was set on by Pope *Hadrian*, because *Desiderius* laid claim to all the lands granted by *Pipin* to the Roman Church. And *Charles* had devorced his wife *Bertha* the daughter of *Desiderius*, which made him a greater stranger then before, to the Lombards; wherefore passing over the Alpes with his Army, he gave battell to *Desiderius*, whom he defeated, and drove into Ticinum; at last tooke him upon surrender of the town, whom he sent with his wife into France; for his sonne *Adelgisus* was gone to Constantinople. So *Charles* obtaines all Italy except Neapolis, and the Provinces belonging to Sicily. He restores to Pope *Hadrian* the Exarchat and Pentapolis. Who having called a Synod makes
A. C. 775. *Charles* a Patrician, and power is given him to invest Bishops. Two years before this Italian war, the French made war upon the Saxons, as yet heathen Idolaters, who exercised *Charles* his armes 33 yeares. The Church was much beholding to these two Princes, *Pipin* and *Charles*, for their munificence towards her, for propagating Christianity, and suppressing Heathenism, Judaism, and heresies, for a setled Parliament in Paris, the work of *Pipin*, who was the first that brought the use of Organs into the Western Church, after he had been presented with one from the Eastern Emperor; he also brought into the Gallican Church, the regulated musick of Rome, for before him, the French musick was confused, and inharmonious.

CHAP. X.

The affaires of the Empire under Leo, Irene, *and* Constantine. 2. *Of forraigne affaires under* Charles *the Great.* 3. *Of the Church affaires in those times.*

A. C. 775. *Leo* the fourth succeeded to his Father *Copronymus*. Hee was also called *Porphyrogenitus*, because in his childhood hee was made Co-emperour with his Father, and was clothed with a purple robe. He banished his brother *Nicephorus* with divers more, upon suspition, that he aimed at the Empire. By his preswasion *Telerichus* King of Bulgaria being banished by his own subjects, was baptized, and marryed with *Irenes* cousin german, then hee was made a Patrician. *Leo* was perswaded to make his young sonne *Constantine* Co-emperour with him. Hee had warres with the Saracens in Syria, where hee killed 5 of their Amiras, and 6000 Arabians. Hee removed the Jacobite Syrians into Thracia. By this war he exasperated the Mahumetans, so that they overrun Asia, but all provision being conveyed into strong towns, they were faine to return home without effecting any great matter. *Mahdy* contrary to his oath persecuted the Christian within his Dominion, so that divers suffered Martyrdome. *Leo* persecuted and punished the Image-worshippers

ſhippers as his Father did. The firſt yeare of his reigne, hee woulds needs ſet upon his head the Sacred Crowne beſet with rich jewells which *Mauricius* had dedicated in the Church of S. *Sophia* upon the wearing of this Crowne, his head ſwelled with carbuncles, then he fell into a violent feaver, and ſo dyed. *An. Mundi* 4750. *A.C.* 780.

Charles the ſon of *Pipin* ſucceeded proſperouſly in his wars againſt the Saxons, Weſtphalians, Huns, Angarians, Heſſians. *Rodgundus* the Longobard with divers others. In all his conqueſts he ſettles Chriſtianity. He gave many honors, and created many Nobles, of ſuch as had done him good ſervice. He had alſo good ſucceſſe in Spaine againſt the Infidels, but in his return he loſt the greateſt part of his Army among the Pyrenæan hils, the Vaſcones being better acquainted with thoſe places deceived them, and cut them off. Herein were ſlaine *Eginhardus*, *Anſhelmus*, *Roland*, and many more of his chief commanders. The Saxons under *Witskundus* their Generall oftentimes rebelled, and were ſtill ſubdued, they were ſupplyed ſtill with Auxiliaries of Danes, and Vandals, but at laſt *Witikundus* was baptized in the year of Chriſt 785. *Charles* erected the Biſhopricks of Paderborn, Minden, and Oſnaburg in Germany. About this time *Ximenius* the firſt King of Navar dyed, to whom ſucceeded *Garzicas Eunicus*, who relieved Pampilona, and took many caſtles and garriſons from the Moores. One *Leſcus* was the firſt that taught the Polonians about this time to ſhooe horſes.

Irene Leo's widow, with her young ſonne *Conſtantine* rule the Empire. She was a great defender of Images. Having underſtood that her husbands brother had plotted treaſon againſt her, ſhee cauſed them to be ſhaven, and then made Prieſts of them, and baniſhed all thoſe that favoured them. To make her ſonnes Empire the more firme, ſhee contracts him to *Charles* the Greats daughter, for that purpoſe ſends *Eliſeus* the Eunuch to inſtruct her in the Greek tongue and cuſtoms. Shee overthrew in divers battels *Elpidius* Prætor of Sicilia, and forced him to flye over to the Saracens in Africa, becauſe he would have ſet up *Nicephorus Conſtantines* Uncle. Shee let the Saracens enjoy Afric quietly, being afraid of their power, and made the Empire tributary to *Aaron* the Saracen Prince. *Paul* the Patriarch repenting that he had withſtood Image-Worſhip, enters into a Monaſtery; *Taraſius* his ſucceſſour adviſeth *Irene* to call a generall Synod, which was done by Pope *Adrians* aſſiſtance, whoſe Legats were there. The place was firſt at Byzantium, then Nicea of Bithynia. In this 7 generall Councell was undone whatſoever had been done by *Leo Iſaurus*, and his ſonne and grandchild concerning aboliſhing of Images. The 6 yeare of her reign a great commotion was raiſed, which diſturbed the proceedings of the Synod, ſo that the Biſhops being 350 in all were forced to riſe: the Empreſſe making ſhew of an expedition againſt the Saracens, demands all the armes of thoſe who were of the contrary ſide and enemies to Images, which when ſhee had gotten ſhee baniſheth them all from the city, and arms her own party, and calls the Councell again; the 8 year of her reign at Nicæa, Image Worſhip is their concluded, and by her authority confirmed.

After this ſhee diſſolves the contract made between her ſonne and *Rhotilde*, and made him againſt his will to marry with one *Mary* an Armenian. She ſends alſo *Adalgiſus* the ſonne of *Deſiderius*, with ſome Commanders to make new ſtirres in Lombardy againſt *Charles*; becauſe hee had ſeiſed upon the Dukedome of Beneventum. But *Adalgiſus* is overthrown by the French and Lombards in a battell, wherein he was taken and put to death. *Conſtantine* perceiving that his mother did what ſhe liſted, and was altogether ruled by *Stauratius* a Patrician; and that hee being the lawfull heire, and now of yeares ſufficient to rule the State, was ſlighted, and kept like a child under the *ferula*; reſolves to take the government upon himſelfe. But ſhee on the other ſide will not part with any ſhare of her power; keepes her ſonne at home under correction being 20 yeares of age; baniſheth all who adhere to him, and makes the ſouldiers ſweare fidelity to her alone, and not to acknowledge any power in him whileſt ſhe was alive. But the Armenian Armies were conſtant

An. Mundi in their loyalty to *Constantine*, and would not acknowledge the mothers soveraignty, whose example moved other souldiers, against their oath, to fall off from the Empresse. Therefore *Constantine* by their helpe takes the reines in his owne hand, commands *Stauratius* to forbeare meddling with State affaires, and confines his mother to her palace at Eleutherium, which shee had lately built, in which shee was entertained with all princely respect, and the next year he intending an expedition into Bulgaria, and another into Arabia, restores her again to her former power; which when shee had obtained, shee fell to vex and punish all his friends and acquaintance; hee makes an expedition iuto Bulgaria, but with ill successe, for his army was defeated, and his chiefest Nobility either killed or taken prisoners. Upon suspition of treason, hee caused his three Uncles *Nicephorus*, *Christophorus*, and *Nicetus* to be apprehended, and their eys to be put out, which cruelty made him to be hated, chiefly of the Armenians, and to make himselfe the more odious hee puts away his wife *Mary*, pretending shee would have poysoned him, whereas it was known she was a vertuous and religious Lady: then he being puft up for some good successe he had lately against the Saracens, takes one *Theodate* a Virgin out of the Nunnery, and makes her his Empresse, which incensed the Monks against him, who accused him of bigamy, for which he banished them.

Constantine makes a second expedition into Bulgaria, to take off (if he could) the tribute, which they so insolently demanded, but understanding that his wife was brought to bed of a sonne, hee repaires to the City, and commends the charge of the Army to his mother: shee takes this absence of her sonne, as a fit opportunity to reinvest her selfe in the soveraignty; to this end both shee and *Stauratius* with bribes and flatteries worke upon the Army, whose good will shee obtained. Upon this the Emperour is called home from the Saracen war, the intent was to apprehend and secure him, which was done accordingly; he thought to have escaped, but could not, wherefore hee is brought back to the City, and his eyes are put out, 5 yeares after hee had so served his Uncles, and on that very day. Not long after he dyed, his death was accompanied with 17 dayes darkenesse, the eye of the world disdaining to looke on those who had thrust out the eyes of their Soveraign. Hee reigned 8 yeares alone. His mother after this reigned 3 yeares, in which time shee put to death her husbands Uncles, that they might not aspire to the Empire. Embassadours are sent by her to *Charles* for confirming a solid peace, for parting the Empire between them, and for the making up of a match between *Charles* and her; hee likewise sends Embassadours to Constantinople to the same effect; but whilest they were there a great change fell out; for *Irene* being sick, it was given out by some of the Grandees, that she had nominated *Nicephorus* the Patrician to succeed her in the Empire; upon this, he is saluted Emperour by the Armies, to whom hee gives the oath of allegiance, then besiegeth *Irene* in the Palace, makes her deliver up all her treasures; then banisheth her to the Isle Lesbos, where shee was secured with a strong guard, there shee pined away with griefe, and dyed, having reigned 23 yeares. *Nicephorus* dispatcheth the Embassadours with letters to *Charles*, desiring a ratification of the peace, propounded by *Irene*. *Charles* having again subdued the Saxons, hee transplates a great number of them into Flanders and Brabant. Hee beat the Sclavi and Vinidi, as they were plundering of Magdeburg. Hee takes *Thassilo* sonne in law to *Desiderius*, who by his wifes perswasion had renewed the rebellion. Him hee condemnes of treason, and then sends him to a Monastery. *Charles* also suppressed the Hungarians, who were *Thassiloes* associates, and had invaded Germany. So having after 8 years warre subdued the Huns, and quieted Pannonia, *Charles* assembleth a Synod at Francfurd of 300 Bishops, wherein Nestorianism is condemned, which *Elipandus* and *Felix* two Bishops had renewed, and it was defined that Christ according to his flesh was the true sonne of God, and not adopted, and that in his humanity he should be worshipped, no lesse then in his Divinity. Image worship is condemned, and the second Synod of Nice rejected. *Alphonsus* also King of

4768.
A.C.798.

Asturia

Asturia and Gallicia in Spaine wearyed with payment of Virgins which was exacted by the Saracens, in way of a tribute, resolves to fight them, and did accordingly, in which battell hee defeated them, took *Lysbone*, killed many 1000 of them, and freed a great part of Spain from the Saracens yoak. The Ensigns of this victory he sends to *Charles*. After *Stephen* the fourth, or third as some say, who sate 4 years succeeded *Adrian* the first, who sate 23 yeares. He ordained that every day 100 poore people should be fed in the Lateran Court. In *Leo*'s time a coffin or chest of stone, was digged out of the ground. *Christ shall be born of a Virgin. In him I beleeve*, was ingraven on it, the dead body that was found in it, is thought by some to bee *Plato*'s, this was found a little before the warres of *Charles* with the Avares and Boii, whose last King *Tassilo* hee tooke with his sonne, and put them in a Monastery. About this time England was invaded by the Danes. In the yeare 791. the University of Paris is erected by *Charles*, whose first professours were foure Monkes, all *Beda*'s scholars, to wit, *Rabanus*, *Albinus*, *Claudius* and *Scotus*; not *Scotus subtilis* the Franciscan, who lived long after: he erected also the Universities of Papia, of Ticinum, of Osnaburg, and renews that of Bononia fonnded by *Theodosius*. To *Hadrian* succeeded *Leo* the third, who sate 4 yeares: he lost both eyes and tongue by the malice of the Romans. He escaped out of prison, and was restored by *Charles*. In his time the Empire was transiated from Greece to France. But which was a greater wonder; *Leo* was restored again to his eyes and tongue. *An. Mundi*

An. Mundi

The fourth Booke OF THE SECOND PART

INTREATING

Of the times from *CHARLES* the Great, till *PHILIP* the Emperour in the West, and the French Empire in the East, containing 400 Yeares.

CHAP. I.

The affaires of both the Empires under Charles *in the West, under* Nicephorus, Michael, *and* Leo *in the East.* 2. *Of the Nations subdued by* Charles.

4770. A.C.800. *CHARLES* having obtained the name of *Great* for his conquests over the Saracens, Saxons, Danes and many other barbarous Nations, is brought to Rome by Pope *Leo*, who having beene condemned to prison, and to lose his eyes for some crimes objected against him, escaped out of prison, and either by miracle received his sight again, or else hee did not totally lose it, the executioner taking pity on him. *Charles* was at Paderborn in Saxony with his Army, when the Pope came; who made no delay to follow his ghostly Fathers conduct to the Imperiall City with his Army, where having called a Synod to examine the crimes objected against the Pope; he was told, that *the Bishop of Rome was not to be judged by any man.* And therefore no crime being there alleadged against him, hee cleared himselfe by his owne oath, and so was absolved, and placed again, to the great griefe of his enemies, in his pontificall chair. To requite this favour of *Charles*; in S. *Peters* Church upon Christmas day, the Pope solemnly pronounces him Emperour, setting the crown on his head, and the people with loud acclamations, saying: *Long life and victory to* Charles *Augustus, crowned by God, the Great, the Peace-maker, Emperour of the Romans.* Hence came the custome, that the Western Emperours received their Crowns from the Popes. For the Eastern Emperours had been now for a long time slighted at Rome, ever since they opposed Images. *Charles* now intends to subdue Sicily, but is retarded by *Irenes* Embassadors, who promised marriage with her; this Embassie was acceptable to *Charles*, who hoped by this marriage to unite the two Empires again. But *Aetius* the Eunuch, who endeavoured to have his brother *Leo* then Governor of Thracia and Macedonia to be Emperour, marred this match; and he was also deceived, for *Nicephorus* (as we have said) obtained the Empire.

Nicephorus a perfidious and covetous man, spared not those by whose helpe hee obtained the Empire. Hee got by his faire promises *Bardanas* the Patrician whom the Eastern people had proclaimed Augustus, to relinquish his title, swearing hee should receive no prejudice by it; no sooner had *Bardanas* devested himselfe, and entred of his owne accord into a Monastery, but *Nicephorus* under hand caused his

eyes

eyes to bee thruſt out, and then wept, as if this had been done without his know- *An. Mundi*
ledge. Then hee makes *Stauratius* the ſonne (for the father was dead) his Co-
Emperour, and ſhortly after fighting againſt the Saracens, hee loſt the battell, narrowly eſcaping himſelfe. He fortifieth Ancyra of Galatia, and other townes to keep off the Saracens incurſions: but baſely hee made himſelfe, his ſonne, and his Empire tributaries to the Mahometans, who under *Aaron* being 300000 ſtrong, overrun Romania. Hee promiſed to pay yearly 300000 peeces of ſilver for the Empire, and 3000 for himſelfe and his ſonne: binding himſelfe alſo not to repair the Forts demoliſhed by the Arabians. But ſhortly after *Nicephorus* as his manner was broke the league; which brought the Saracens upon Cyprus, who overthrew the Churches of that Iſland, and drove out the inhabitants: they alſo invaded Rhodes, but could not take the town, having loſt their Fleet in a ſtorm. Shortly after *Aaron* dyeth, to whom ſucceeds his ſonne *Mahomet*, hee had civill warres with his brother which was pernicious to the Chriſtians and Arabians of thoſe places, many Churches and Monaſteries were deſtroyed. In the interim *Nicephorus* gives himſelfe to wantonneſſe, hee abuſeth two Ladies of great beauty, and beſtowes one *Theophania* another mans wife, an Athenian, and of kin to *Irene*, upon his ſon.

Nicephorus fearing *Charles* his increaſing greatneſſe ſends Embaſſadors to proffer him Italy, except ſo much as lay upon the Sea between Naples and Sipontum or Siponio in the Apulia. He deſired they two might live as brothers, that one might injoy the Eaſt, the other the Weſt. It was alſo covenanted that Venice which had now ſtood 350 yeares, ſhould be free from both the Empires. Yet this ſame year they drew upon themſelves, both the Grecian and French Forces; for they had expelled *John* their Duke: whom *Nicephorus* would have forced again upon them. But the French under *Pipinus* were ſent by *Charles* to aſſiſt the Venetians. Who finding *Obelerius* the Tribune thruſt out of the City, for favouring the French, fell fowle upon the Venitians; but having loſt many of his men, and done no good, was forced to make a diſhonourable retreat to Ravenna: yet *Charles* ſuffered the Greekes to enjoy Venice. *Nicephorus* the 9 yeare of his reign invades Bulgaria, to be revenged on *Crunnus* king thereof, who had ſeiſed upon the ſouldiers pay by the way, as it was conveying from the Emperour to the camp. Hee had alſo taken Sardica, and killed many 1000 Romans. But was willing to make his peace with *Nicephorus*; and to give ſatisfaction; which proffer was rejected, and an army is ſent to waſt Bulgaria. But ſuddenly in the night *Crunnus* fals upon his camp, made great ſlaughter among the Romans, and killed *Nicephorus* himſelfe in his pavillion, whoſe head *Crunnus* faſtned on a long pole, and carryed it about. Moſt of the Nobility were ſlain, all the arms and the imperial wealth in the Camp were carryed away; *Stauratius* Cæſar received a wound in his neck, and fled to Byzantium, where many who hated the ſonne of *Nicephorus*, intended to make *Curopalates* husband of *Procopia Stauratius* his ſiſter Emperour. *Michael Curopalates* perceiving the peoples inclination towards him, and fearing leſt hee ſhould bee prevented, procured alſo the ſouldiers good will, ſo the next day the Senat being called, he was ſaluted Emperor the third month after the death of *Nicephorus*. *Stauratius* hearing the acclamations of the people, put on a Monks habit, in which 3 months after he dyed of his wound, which did ſtink and feſter. *A.C.* 810.

Michael being ſetled deſired the friendſhip of *Charles* and Pope *Leo*, propounding a match between his ſon and one of *Charles* his daughter. After this he led an Army againſt the Bulgarians, but with ill ſucceſſe, for the Barbarians prevailed, who waſted Thracia and Macedonia, and drove the Chriſtians out of Berœa and Anchialum; many imputing theſe miſeries to Image-worſhip, and wiſhing that the ſonnes of *Copronymus* were ſent for out of Panormus, to free the Empire from the Barbarians: theſe *Michael* puniſhed with baniſhment, and the loſſe of their eyes. *Crunnus* propounded peace to *Michael* on this condition, that he might enjoy the ancient bounds of Bulgaria, and have liberty to receive fugitives; which being denyed him, hee fals upon Meſembria, and by the help of a certain Arabick Chriſtian, whom *Michael* had defrauded of his pay, tooke it, and in it much treaſure.

An. Mundi ſure. Shortly after he gave ſuch an overthrow to *Michaels* Army, that he having loſt all, and in deſpaire ever to recruit again, fled and changed his robes with a Monks habit, and left the Empire to *Leo* the Armenian. *Theophylact Mithaels* ſonne, being already called Emperour, had his genitalls cut off, and hee with his mother *Procopia* and brothers were baniſhed. *Nicephorus* reigned 9 yeares. *Stauratius* the younger one year, and *Michael* almoſt 2 yeares. The Danes afore this had invaded England, and carryed away great booties, they were called Normans, a generall name to all the Northern people, their King *Godefrid* had warres with *Charles*, with whom hee quarrelled for invading the Nordalbing Saxons, now called Holſatians. Two years after *Godefrid* with 200 ſhips arrived in Friſia, where having ſubdued the Friſons in a battell, impoſeth a tribute upon them: but before hee could encounter with *Charles*, hee was killed by a ſouldier. To him ſucceeded *Hemingus* his brothers ſonne, the ſame yeare that *Pipinus* king of Italy, *Charles* his eldeſt ſonne who beat the Beneventins, and Venetian Captaines, departed this life; when upon the reſtoring of Venice to *Nicephorus*, peace was concluded between the Greeks and Francs. The next year peace
A. C. 811. was concluded between the Francs and Danes; *Hemingus* ſent him divers preſents and then dyed, to whom ſucceeded *Sigefridus* and *Anilo*, who both were ſlain in battell, and 11000 with them of the Danes; *Hazald* and *Reginfrid* obtained Denmark the ſame time that *Michael* got the Empire of Byzantium. But theſe brothers were driven out of their kingdome by another faction, who had lived
4784. in exile among the Suiones now called Swedes. This fell out the ſame yeare
A. C. 814. that *Charles* dyed of a Feaver and Pleuriſie the 72 yeare of his age; having been King of France 47. of Italy 42. and Emperour 14. yeares. Hee was honourably buryed at Aquiſgranum, now called Aix, (where he dyed) in our Lady Church built by himſelfe. He was a wiſe, valourous, learned and fortunate Prince. He built divers religious houſes, Churches and Colleages, hee inſtituted the 12 Peeres of France. He built a moſt ſumptuous bridge over the Rhene neer Mintz. This bridge was counted halfe a mile in length, ten yeares were ſpent in building it: which a yeare before his death was burned downe, ſome ſay by caſualty, others by *Ricolphus* the Archbiſhop, becauſe in the night time many robberies were committed there. He gave Teutonick names, (that being his own tongue) to the windes and moneths. Hee appointed proper Leſſons for each Feſtivall day, to be read in Churches. He was canonized by Pope *Alexander* at the deſire of *Frederic* the firſt Emperour; and a hymne appointed to be ſung to him at Aix. He ſubdued the greateſt part of France, of Spain, of Italy, beſides Pannonia, Saxony, Hiſtria, Dacia, Liburnia, Dalmatia, and many barbarous Nations. The Greeks with preſents ſought his friendſhip, ſo did *Aaron* Prince of the Saracens, who ſent him an Elephant, a rich clock, and other Princely gifts. He bequeathed by his laſt will all his treaſures on charitable and pious uſes. Hee never miſcarried but that time he returned from his victory over the Moores in Spain, for as he was comming downe the Pyrenæan mountaines hee loſt his Army, by the treachery of the Vaſcons, as we have ſhewed. 23 Metropolitan Churches inherited his treaſures; to wit, Rome, Ravenna, Millan, Friuli, Gradus, Colen, Mintz, Saltsburg, Rowen, Trevers, Sens of old Senones, Viſontium or Biſontium, Lions, Rhemes, Arles, Vienna, Tarentaſia, Ebrodunum, or Yuerdon, Burdeaux, Turones or Tuors, Bituriges. *Charles* had four wives, 1. *Hermingardis* daughter to *Deſiderius* King of Lombardy, whom hee put away. 2. *Hildegardis* daughter to *Godefrid* Duke of Alemans, who bore to him 3 ſons, *Charles*, *Pipin*, and *Lodovic*, and four daughters. 3. *Faſtrada* a French Lady. 4. *Luitgarda* an Aleman. By his Concubines he had other children, one of them called *Pipin*, who was crooked, with ſome others plotted treaſon againſt him, which he prevented, and caſt his ſon into a Monaſtery. Among his three ſons lawfully begotten he divided his Empire, to *Pipin* he gave Italy, to *Charles* Germany, to *Ludovic* France and hither Spain, but *Pipin* and *Charles* dyed before their Father. *Pipin* left one ſon *Bernhardus* and 5 daughters. *Charles* dyed the yeare after his brother, having ſubdued the Sorabi a people in Luſatia, and killed their King *Miloducus*.

After

After the death of *Charles* the Great's two ſonnes, the Saracens and Moores invaded Italy, *Charles* ſends his Grandchilde *Bernardus*, who tooke from them Nicea in Gallia of Narbon, and *Centum cellæ* in Hetruria, which ſome thinke to be *Civita vechia*. Pope *Leo* the third, after he was reſtored by *Charles*, ſate 16 years, ſo in all he was Pope 20 yeares. *Egbert* ſubdued all the South part of Great Britain, and ordained it ſhould be ever after called England. In *Charles* his time 10000 Saxons with their wives and children are planted in Brabant and Flanders, and many Flemings are ſent into Saxony. The 12 Peeres of France which *Charles* inſtituted were 3 Archbiſhops, 1 of Rhemes, 2 of Laudon or Laon, 3 of Lingon or Langres. Theſe were alſo Dukes: three Biſhops, and Counts or Earles: 1. of Bellovacum or Beauvais in Piccardy. 2. Of Novion or Noyon in Piccardy likewiſe. 3. Of Catalaunum or Chalon in the Dutchy of Burgundy. The ſix of the Laity were 1 three Dukes, 1. of Burgundy, 2. of Normandy, 3. of Aquitan or Gaſcony. Then 3 Earles: 1. of Flanders, 2. of Tholouſe, 3. of Campania, which at this day are changed according to the pleaſure of the King. Among other Nations ſubject to *Charles*, England alſo ſubmitted to him, who ſent thither *Guido* to ſubdue it. The clock and candleſticks which the Perſian king ſent to *Charles* he beſtowed upon our Lady Church at Aquiſgranum or Aix in Province. The Saracen King of Gallicea being ſubdued by *Charles*, received the Chriſtian Faith. The Northern people that moleſted the Chriſtians in Ireland are driven out by the Scots. *Crunnus* the Bulgarian King was not contented to carry about *Nicephorus* his head on a pole, but hee alſo at laſt made a cup of it to drink in. *Charles* erected 9 Cathedrall Churches, to wit, Monſter, Winden, Oſnaburg, Brem, Paderburn, Verden, Hamberg, Hildemen and Halberſtad in Saxony. He uſed to have read to him in ſupper time S. *Auſtin* of the City of God. He cauſed *Paulus Diaconus* write the lives of the Saints. *An. Mundi*

In the Eaſt to *Michael* ſucceeded *Leo* the fifth. Hee ſubdued *Crunnus* that was now puſt up with ſo many victories, and gave him a deadly wound by an arrow, who after this victory over *Crunnus*, commanded the abolition of Images, baniſhed *Nicephorus* the Patriarch, for withſtanding his edict, and ſet up *Theodatus* in his roome. *Michael Balbus* conſpired againſt him: for which treaſon hee is condemned to bee burned, but by the intreaty of his Empreſſe hee put off the execution to his owne deſtruction, till the ſolemnity of Chriſts Nativity was paſſed. In the meane while hee kept the key of the priſon: but in the night time not being able to ſleep, hee riſeth and goeth into the priſon, where hee ſeeth *Balbus* ſleeping ſoundly upon the bed, and *Papias* his Keeper lying on the ground. At which *Leo* was much moved, and with his hand gave threatning ſignes, for *Papias* affection to his priſoner: one of the watchmen upon *Leo*'s departure awaked *Papias*, and told him of the Emperours being there, and of his anger; hee awakes *Balbus* and tells him what had happened: upon this they tell the Aſſaſinats, that they muſt diſpatch the Emperour quickly, or elſe *Balbus* who was condemned, would diſcover them. They being affrighted at this, without delay put on Prieſts habit, and joine themſelves with the ſinging men in the Quire, having their ſwords under their garments, ſo while the Emperour was ſinging Divine Hymnes, with the reſt they fall upon him, cuts off his head and hand; then run into the priſon, breaks off the fetters from *Balbus*, and proclaimes him Emperour: then crowns him in the ſame Chappell where *Leo* was killed: they baniſh his wife, and 4 ſons, after their privy members were cut off. *Leo* reigned 7 years and 5 months.

CHAP.

An. Mundi

CHAP. II.

The affaires of the Empire under Ludovic *and* Lotharius, *in the West, under* Michael Balbus, Theodosius, Theodora, Michael *the second, in the East. 2. Forraign affaires of those times and of the Church.*

A. C. 814. *Ludovic* (called the *godly* from his bounty to the Clergy and the poor,) about a month after his fathers death, removes from Aquitain to Aix; where hee began his reign. He renewes the league with *Leo* the Emperour of Byzantium. Pope *Leo* being dead succeeds *Stephen* the fifth, who crowned *Ludovic* at Rhemes the third yeare of his reign. To *Stephen* who sate but 4 months succeeded *Paschalis* who was Pope 7 yeares. *Ludovic* was like to be killed by the fall of a porch or gallery at Aix, by which fall hee was hurt in his body, and mortified in his minde. At the same time *Sclavomirus* King of the Eastern Sclavonians revolted from him, and *Bernhard* in Italy raised an Army against him. But when *Ludovic* was marching with his Forces against *Bernhard*, his souldiers forsooke him, and so he surrendered himselfe to his Uncle. *Ludovic* having assembled a Councell at Aix, condemnes the chief authours of *Bernhards* sedition; the Clergy men he punisheth with degradation, and the Laity with losse of their eyes, and both with banishment. Among these were *Anselmus* Bishop of Millan, and *Theodulphus* bishop of Orleans or Aurelia. *Bernhardus* a few dayes after hee had lost his eyes dyed, which made *Ludovic* grieve for his rash sentence. Not long after this *Irmengardis* his wife dyed, by her he had 3 sons, *Lotharius*, *Pipinus*, and *Ludovit*: but the losse of his wife was recompensed, by the regaining of a lost kingdome: for *Sclavomir* was brought captive, who not being able to excuse his rebellion, is devested of his kingdome.

A. C. 826. *Ludovic* after this marryed with one *Juditha*, a Bavarian and his neer kinswoman, this marriage cost *Frederic* bishop of Utrecht his life, for he spoke against it, as unlawfull, whereupon *Juditha* sent some Assasinats who murthered him at the Altar. About the 7 yeare of his reigne, he had a cruell warre with *Luidevicus* King of Hungary; which war ended with the death of *Luidevicus*. *Bernhard* King of Italy being dead in the monastery, where his Uncle put him, *Lotharius* is made King of Italy, and Cæsar by his father *Ludovic*, who marryed to him *Irmengardis* the daughter of one *Hugo*. Afterward he sent him into Italy, and desires *Paschalis* the Pope to proclaime him Emperour. This *Paschalis* was elected Pope by the Romans, without the Emperours knowledge; at which he was displeased; but quickly pacified again by the Popes excuse: who purged himselfe by oath, that hee had no hand in the murther of the Emperors servants at Rome. To *Paschalis* succeeded *Eugenius* the second who sate 4 yeares, and then gave place to *Gregory* the fourth, who sate 16 yeares.

In *Ludovic*'s time the Danes by *Ebbo* Archbishop of Rhemes were converted to Christianity, who caused *Heraldus* (that was lately after his banishment, setled again in Denmark by Cæsar's means) to be baptized at Mintz, with a great multitude of Danes. About the time that *Ranimir* successour to *Alphonsus* in Spaine obtained a great victory of the Saracens, wherein were slaine 40000 Barbarians: but this joy lasted not long, for the Dane was expelled by *Godefrids* sonnes; the Saracens out of Spaine wasted Barcinone or Barcellone in Arragon now, but in Aquitain of old: the Bulgarians plundered Pannonia; for which cause many of their Commanders and Officers for their neglect were cashee red. The spoile that was done by the Saracens in Spain is repayd by *Boniface* Earl of *Corsica* who plunders the coasts of Africa, and doth not suffer the Saracens to settle their wealth in Sicily, which they tooke lately from the Governour thereof under *Balbus*. *Ludovic* was severe against the rich apparell of the Clergy. But the Nobility perceiving that hee was altogether ruled by his wife *Juditha*, they stir up *Pipin* King of Aquitania against his Father, as unworthy to reigne any longer; with him in this conspiracy *Lotharius* is joined, lately come out of Italy,

Italy. *Judith* is commanded from the Court, and the Emperour himſelfe is threatned to be put into a Monaſtery, but the controverſie was quickly taken up, the Emperour and his ſonnes are reconciled; the Authours of the rebellion are ſhut up in Monaſteries, *Judith* is abſolved, and reſtored to her dignity again, and *Ludovic* to his Empire by the Germans help. *Barnhard* Earle of Barcilona who was accuſed of adultery with her, (which was the maine cauſe of this rebellion of the ſonnes againſt the father) profferred to vindicate his innocency by his ſword; but no adverſary being found, hee cleared himſelfe by oath, and is alſo reſtored to his honor. *Pipin* would not give his conſent to this, wherefore hee is confined to Aquæ in Aragon: but he eſcaped thence into Gaſcony. Which when his father underſtood, hee commanded that *Pipin* ſhould be ſecured at Trevers; but he having made his party in Gaſcony ſtrong, and his brothers being animated by bad Counſellours to joine with him, they reſolve to take armes, and to force their father to give over the Empire, the rather becauſe they thought his love was altogether ſet on *Charles* the balde, his ſonne by *Judith*. With theſe Pope *Gregory* the fourth combines, threatning to excommunicate the Emperor, out of a grudge, becauſe *Ludovic* commanded that the Popes election ſhould not be valid, unleſſe it were examined and confirmed by his Legat. At length both Armies meet neer to Baſil, ready to fight, but the Pope cunningly goeth over to *Ludovic*, pretending to reconcile him to his ſonnes, but indeed to protract time, that the Emperours army might be wrought upon his followers, to fall off to his ſonnes: which partly by promiſes, partly by threatnings was effected. *Ludovic* being thus forſaken, went over to his ſonnes camp, hoping to be kindly uſed by them, but he was put in priſon, and his power wreſted from him. This unnaturall fact was ſo odious to *Varinus* and *Bernhardus*, that they ſend *Lotharius* a challenge, either to ſet his father at liberty, or elſe to fight with either of them. He laid the fault upon the Biſhops, and ſo leaving his Father in the Monaſtery of St. *Dennis*, retires to Burgundy, where he begins to fortifie himſelfe, and to raiſe arms; in the meane while *Ludovic* by the help of his friends is reſtored againe to his right, and *Lotherius* being forſaken by his brothers, *Ludovic* and *Pipin*, came humbly to his father and ſubmitted himſelfe to his mercy, who having ſharply reproved him, gives him the oath of allegiance, which he took, and then returned to Italy. *Ludovic* ſtopped all paſſages towards Italy, that none might come thence into Germany without his knowledge. *Ebbo* that converted the Danes with divers other Biſhops are degraded, and baniſhed for their ſeditious counſels, the reſt of the evill counſellours are purſued by Divine juſtice, for in the ſpace of 7 weekes the plague ſwept them all away, in whoſe deſtruction *Ludovic* rejoyced not, but prayed for them. *Pipin* the fifth yeare after he was repoſſeſt in his power was ſtruck with an untimely death, which was uſhered by a comet, at the ſight of this *Ludovic* preſaged ſome evill comming, wherefore hee by alms giving and prayers labours to divert Gods anger. *An. Mund.*

After this, by the perſwaſion of *Judith*, hee divides his Dominions among his ſonnes. To *Lotharius* he gives the Empire, with Italy, and the South part of France, even to the river Mæſa. The reſt of France he beſtowes on *Charles* the Balde *Judith*'s ſonne, and to *Ludovic* he bequeathed Germany; who not contented with his portion, laid claim to all beyond the Rhene, and ſo began to make new commotions. Auguſtus haſtning to appeaſe them is forewarned by a terrible eclipſe of the ſun, that the light of the Empire ſhould be removed, which fell out true the ſame month. For the Emperor dyed of grief, and of an Inpoſthume neer Mintz the 64 year of his life, the 28 of his Empire. *Drogo* his brother Biſhop of Metz in Lorrain, ſometime the Capitol City of Auſtraſia, performed his funerals there with great ſolemnity. 840 *A. C.* 840.

Michael Balbus a Phrygian born, a defender of hereſies, a hater of diſputations, a countenancer of all Religions, a denyer of the Reſurrection, and of Divels, a maintainer of whoredomes, a rejecter of lawfull oaths, the ſink of all wickedneſſe: as he nefariouſly got the Eaſtern Empire, ſo he ruled it, or rather miſruled it. He was called *Balbus* from his ſtammering tongue. He could neither

read

An. Christi read nor write, and therefore suffered no children to be taught to read, lest they should be learneder then himselfe. One *Thomas* who called himselfe *Constantine*, a Tribune, and who had defeated the Hagarins, strove to be Emperour; therefore with a great army besiegeth Byzantium: but Winter comming on he was forced to raise the siege, and return the next spring. Many encounters he had with *Balbus*: but at last by the help of the Bulgarians *Thomas* is defeated, & flyes to Adrianopolis where he was apprehended, upon the surrender of the City by famine, and tortured to death, his hands and feet being first cut off. Perinthus the Metropolis of Thracia, called also Heraclea from *Heraclius*, held out a great while against *Balbus* in defence of *Thomas*. So did also Panium, but they were at last taken. In the
823. meane while the Agarens of Spain seise upon Crete, and there settle, having made
828. slaves of the Islanders. The Saracens of Afric invade Sicily, which they took by the treachery of one *Euphemius*, whom the Prætor of the Island should have executed for the abusing of a Nun; *Balbus* strove to recover these, but was still beat off with losse. Dalmatia likewise shook off the Græcian yoak, and became a kingdom. Thus
829. the Eastern Empire being torn, *Balbus* dyed of a Phrensie and Strangury, or as some say of a Bloudy flux, having reigned 8 yeares.

To him succeeded *Theophilus* his son, who justly punished the murtherers of *Leo Armenius*, though they advanced his father *Balbus* from the prison to the Throne. He punished his wifes brother for building so close to a widows house, that he stopt up her windowes. Many other acts of justice he did; and was a great enemie to Images. He burned off the fingers of one *Lazarus* a Monk, for painting or colouring of Images. He confessed that he never had to doe with any woman but his own wife, except one Lady, for which hee was sorry. He was a great lover of Musick. With divers successe he made excursions upon the Arabians. He took Sozopetra in Syria, *Amira*'s native place, in requitall of which *Amira* took Amorya in Phrygia (whence *Theophilus* derived his pedigree) killed many thou-
841. sands in it, and imprisoned the Nobility, whom *Theophilus* would have ransomed, but could not, whereupon with griefe hee fell sick and dyed the 13 yeare of his reign, the next yeare after *Ludovic*'s decease, but before his death hee had overcome and slain *Theophobus* whom the Persian Army of 30000 men had named Emperour.

In the reign of these Emperours *Garsias* King of Navar dyed, to whom after 4 years *interregnum* succeeded *Eunicus* who was anointed King. The Bulgarians had received the Christian Faith the former age, but were since returned to Gentilism, they are made Christians again under *Ludovic. A.C.*817. afterward *An.*860 they were totally converted under *Theodora*. Near Tulle in Belgica a maid lived 3 years without meat or drink. The Paulicians then flourished in Phrygia and Lycaonia, these were a new sect of Manichees patcht up of Judaism, Gentilism, and Christianism; these were favored by *Balbus*. By the skil of *George* a Venetian Priest, at the charges of *Ludovic* water Organs were made at Aix. *Ludovic* parted with his right of election of the Popes and confirmed the Emperors former grants to them. S. *Marks* body is translated from Alexandria by Sea to Venice, to which a magnificent Church is erected. The Feast of all Saints which had been 220 years before this time, observed in Rome, is now by *Ludovic* imposed upon France and Germany: the Saracens plunder in Italy, and rob the Vatican at Rome, but in their returne they made shipwrack. *Alphonsus* the third sirnamed the *Great*, reigns in Spain, *Egbert* in England, *Kenneth* the second son of *Alpinus* in Scotland.

To *Ludovic* succeeded his sonne *Lotharius* in the Empire. He would have subjected his brothers to him, as Emperour, and attempted to deprive them of their inheritance; making *Ludovic* to content himself with Bavaria, and *Charles* with Gascony, which they must hold of him in Fee. These scorning to be subject to their brother, and to loose their Patrimony, understanding also that hee had raised an Army against them, resolve to join their Forces together, and to withstand *Lotharius*: a bloudy battell is fought neer Antissiodorum or Aexer in Province, in this conflict above 100000 men were slain, on both sides. *Lotharius*

lost

loſt welnigh all his Army, and he was fain to fly to Aix, where he recruits his army; *An. Chriſti*
the next year his brothers meet him again in the field, but his ſouldiers being mind-
full of their laſt great defeat, forſook him, ſo that he was forced to flye again. Yet
doth not mean to give over, but recollects his Forces, and encampeth neer Matiſcon
a town in Burgundy, thither his brothers came with their Army; as they were
ready to fight, the Peers of the Empire did ſo mediate between them, that *Ludovic*
ſhould have Germany for his ſhare, *Charles* ſhould injoy France, and *Lotharius*
Italy with the Empire, and ſo much of Germany as lay between the two rivers,
the Rhene and Moſell, hence the countrey was called from *Lotharius* Lotharin-
10 gia. *Pipin* the ſonne of *Pipin* had Aquitania, which *Charles* not long after aim-
ed at, not without great loſſe of his men, yet at laſt by force he got it, and ſhut up
Pipins two ſons, to wit, *Pipin* and *Charles*, into two Monaſteries, whence they made
an eſcape, but were brought back at laſt. *Ludovic Germanicus* beſtowed on *Charles*
the Archbiſhoprick of Mints. *Charles* killed alſo *Bernhard*, his mothers favourite of
old. *Ludovic Germanicus* ſubdued the Abotriti a people bordering upon Bulga-
ria, and killed their King, who was the cauſe of their revolt, and ſet Dukes or Go-
vernours over them. He cauſed 15 Bohemian Dukes to be baptized, and brought
all their countrey in ſubjection.

About this time, the Normans with a great Fleet plundred the coaſt of France,
20 and by the river of Loire entred into the bowels of the countrey as farre as
Paris. King *Charles* not being able to force them, perſwaded them by mony
to be gone out of his Kingdome. They had firſt infeſted the Spaniſh ſhoare, but
were beat off by King *Ranimirus*, they moleſted alſo England, Friſland, and Sax-
ony, they overthrew Hamburg, which *Charles* the Great built as a bulwark to keep
them out. At laſt they took the Iſle Valacra, and called it Seland: ſo after they had
done much miſchief abroad, and had vexed France 20 years, they returned to Den-
mark laden with gold, where they deſtroyed one another with civill wars. *Lotha-*
rius the Emperour underſtanding that the Romans had a minde to deliver up the
City to the Greek Emperours, hee made a journey thither; puniſhed the authors
30 of this plot, changed the Magiſtrates and reaſſumed his ancient right in confirm-
ing the Popes election. Returning from Italy, he divides his Kingdomes among
his 3 ſonnes. He declares *Ludovic* Emperour and Lord of Italy. Hee placeth
Charles in that part of France which of old was called Gallia Narbonenſis, and
Braccata, containing Languedoc, Provence and Dalphine. *Lotharius* the youngeſt
is ſetled in Lotharingia or Lorrain: ſo being weary of the world, and ſorry for
the great mortality that was in all his Dominions by the plague, willing alſo to
expiate his rebellion againſt his father; layeth aſide his Empire, and entereth in-
to a Monaſtery called Brumia neer Trevers, where the next yeare after hee dyed,
having reigned 15 yeares. His ſonne *Charles* did not live long after his father.
40 *Lotharius* having put away his wife *Ditberga*, marryed his Concubine *Baldrada*
the Biſhop of Colens ſiſter, wherefore he was excommunicate by the Pope, which
coſt him a journey to Rome; where he obtained abſolution: then having aſſiſted his
brother in ſuppreſſing the Saracens, in his return homeward he dyed of the plague
at Placentia having loſt a great part of his Army. This *Lotharius* had two ſons by
his Concubine; *Lotharius* the third, and *Hugo* Duke of Lorrain. *Ludovicus Ger-* 869.
manicus had long wars with the Sorabi, Bohemians, and Marcomans. He had three
ſons, *Carolomanus* the eldſt who dyed of an Apoplexie, *Charles* ſurnamed the
groſſe and *Ludovic*. His daughter *Ludgarta*, lived a monaſticall life; to *Ludovic*
the third ſon of *Germanicus* the Empire fell.
50 In the reign of *Lotharius* the Arabian Mores plundered the coaſt of Campania,
ſeiſed upon Beneventum, ſackt Caſſinum and pillaged the Suburbs of Rome: then
was *Sergius* the ſecond Pope, before his Popedom he was called *Os porci* or Swines
face, of which being aſhamed hee changed his name to *Sergius*, whence it came
to be a cuſtome afterward for every Pope to change his name. He ſate 3 yeares,
to whom ſucceeded *Leo* the fourth, who fortified the City againſt the Saracens,
and by the help of the Neapolitans and Cajetans overthrew their fleet. The Iſlan-
ders of Corſica and Sardina, were forced to leave their habitation to the Saracens,

An. Christi and to dwell at Rome, *Leo* was the first that forbid laymen to be in the Quire at Masse time. He caused Cloysters or Schooles to be built neer the Churches. *Leo* sate 8 yeares, to him succeeded *Benedict* the third, who sate 2 yeares. After whom sate *Nicholaus* the first 9 years. He excommunicated *Lotharius*. In Spain *Haldaragmau* the third, and after him his son *Mahomet* reigned, who 3 times persecuted the Christians. The Saracens take the Isle Lipara, and in it they found the reliques of S. *Bartholomew*, which they abuse and disperse.

At Constantinople *Theodora* the wife of *Theophilus* the Emperor, reigned in her son *Michael*'s his minority. She was given to Images, therefore repeals the acts of *Theophilus* against them, deposeth *John* the Patriarch, and sets up *Methodius*, who being accused of whoredome, cleered his innocency by shewing to the Judges his shrunk and dryed genitals. The Bulgarians rebell against *Bogores* their king, for being a Christian, but hee overcame them in a battell, and by *Theodora* obtained the inlargement of his territories. The Paulician Manichees, fell off totally from the Arabians, and infested the Provinces of the Empire with many incursions. About this time *Godaliscus* the Monk mis-understanding St. *Austins* Doctrine of Predestination; taught that God absolutely decreed the salvation and damnation of men; and that Christ did not dye for all. After *Hincmarus* Bishop of Rhemes, and *Rabanus* Bishop of Mints had refuted him, *Lodovic* drove him out of Germany. Then lived *Etelwoolph* King of England, who made his Kingdome tributary to the Pope. *Kenneth* the great in Scotland was yet alive. He by a stratagem of fish skins, with which in the night he was clothed, and speaking through a bugles horn, incouraged his Nobles to give battell the next day to the Picts which they did accordingly, supposing they had been warned by an Angell; and obtained such a victory as quite extinguished the Picts Nation.

855. *Michael* having shut up his mother in a Monastery, undertakes the Easterne Empire. He was a drunken foole, a slave to his pleasures, his belly, and his flatterers, hee spent the whole treasure his mother *Theodora* left, upon his luxury and pleasures, and at last was fain to make money of his robes and houshold-stuffe. He was twice defeated by the Saracens: but his Uncle *Petronas* gave them such an overthrow, that hee killed their King *Amirus*, and tooke his sonne prisonner: but after *Petronas* was dead, the Saracens tooke head again, and seised on the Cyclades Islands, and with their incursions infested the Greekes in Syria, *Michael* besiegeth the City Samosata in Syria, but was beat off with almost the losse of his life. Hee made *Bardas* his Uncle by the mother, Cæsar, and committed all to his managing. This *Bardas* advanced learning, by erecting Schooles, and professours of all Arts, to whom hee allowed good maintenance. Hee made great use of one *Leo* a learned man, who in the Isle Andros had been taught Rhetorick, Arithmetick and Philosophy by *Michael Psellus*. *Amirumnes* the Saracen Prince offered to *Theophilus* this *Michael*'s father, a great summe of money, if he would part with *Leo*, to teach the Sciences in his Dominions: but *Theophilus* considering the great happinesse and honour that learning brought to Greece, and unwilling the Agarens should out strip the Grecians in knowledge, would not part with *Leo* whom hee made Bishop of Thessalonica, which dignity hee lost under *Theodora*, for subscribing against Images. But *Bardas* for his Bishoprick, gave him the Mastership of all the Colleges which hee erected. This same *Bardas* was excommunicate by *Ignatius* the Patriarch for devorcing his wife. But hee thrust *Ignatius* out of his place, and set up *Photius* a learned man: whose Bibliothec and Nomocanon are yet extant, with *Balsomons* Notes.

In this Emperours time the Rossi or Roxolani, whom at this day wee call Mosces and Moscovites, inhabiting the North side of Taurus, with a Fleet invade the Euxin Sea, and lay siege to Byzantium, but were forced to return by stormy weather, without effecting any thing. *Michael* grew every day worse and worse and still more sottish: one time being in his sports, news were brought him that the Beacons were on fire, which signified the Saracens had invaded the Empire

pire. He cauſed the watchmen and Beacons to be removed, that his ſport might receive no interruption. He mocked all reverend ceremonies in the Church, cauſing them to be acted in an Apiſh way, by hiſtrionicall young fellows. He had raiſed one *Baſilius* an Horſe-courſer, to be maſter of his horſe; he was a poor exile; but ſaid to be deſcended from the ancient family of the *Arſacidæ*. He was ſo well beloved by *Michael*, that he heard his falſe accuſations againſt *Bardas*, whom hee ſuffered to be murthered in his own ſight, becauſe he uſed to reprove him for his fooleries. Then he marries this *Baſilius* to *Eudocia* his owne Concubine, and proclaimes him Cæſar; in his mad humour he uſed to cut off the noſes or hands and heads too ſometime of his moſt familiar friends, in ſport. The new Cæſar fearing leſt he might be thus uſed, endeavours to prevent it, by the death of the tyrant, which was haſtned by this occaſion. A certain waterman highly extolling and flattering the Emperour, was by him clothed with the purple robe, then turning to *Baſilius* (who frowned to ſee this ſight) Have not I power (ſaith he) to make this man an Emperour as well as thee? *Baſilius* fearing that *Michael* might ſpeake in earneſt, in the night when he was drunk and a ſleep, he brake into his chamber with his aſſociates and murthered him, having reigned alone 11 yeares with his mother 14. *Baſil* of a horſe-courſer becomes Emperour, and rules the Eaſt 17 yeares.

An. Chriſti 866. 867.

CHAP. III.

The affaires of the Empire under Ludovic *the ſecond.* Carolus Calvus. Ludovic *the third, and* Carolus Craſſus *in the Weſt, and of* Baſilius *in the Eaſt.* 2. *Of forrain affaires of theſe times.*

Ludovic the ſecond *Lotharius* his eldeſt ſonne was made Co-emperour with his Father, hee with the help of his brother *Lotharius* ſtoutly oppoſed the Saracens at Beneventum: but having loſt a great part of the Army by ſickneſſe, he left the defence of the town to *Adalgiſus* Prince of Salernum, who in the Emperours abſence revolted to the Greeks, with all the towns of Samnium, Campania and Lucania. *Ludovic* to be revenged of this treachery, returnes into Italy, and recovered the revolted townes, even Capua at laſt which had made long reſiſtance, and drives the Saracens out of Campania. But hee ſhewed himſelfe a weak Prince, in ſuffering himſelfe to be deluded and perſwaded by *Adelgiſus*, to disband his Army; which when hee had done, *Adelgiſus* with fire and ſword ſet upon his Palace having no ſufficient guard, and forced him to ſweare that hee would never come again within the confines of Beneventum, and that hee would not revenge this wrong. But *Ludovic* was abſolved ſhortly after by the Pope from this forced oath, and ſo comming upon *Adelgiſus* with an Army, drove him out of Italy into Corſica, and puniſhed his friends that remained. So having ſetled Italy, he dyed at Millan the 20 year of his reign, without iſſue male, which miniſtred occaſion of quarrell for the Empire, betweene his Uncle *Charles* ſurnamed the *Balde* king of France, and *Ludovic* king of Germany. But this controverſie was betimes compoſed in a Synod, called by the Pope, in which by generall conſent *Charles* is named Emperor, and is crowned by Pope *John* the eight, at Rome whom ſome call *John* the ninth.

875.

Baſilius the Macedonian having by the murther of *Michael* obtained the Greek Empire. He firſt of all redemands the money which *Michael* had profuſely ſpent, cauſing every man to reſtore who had not right to it. Yet when it was reſtored, he was content with the halfe, returning the reſt again: hee preferred none to places of judicature, but ſuch as were uncorrupt, and free from covetouſneſſe. His ears were open to all complaints, and he was a carefull provider for the poore. *Photius* the Patriarch ſuſpended him from the Communion for his murther, wherefore he depoſeth him, and ſends for *Ignatius* who had been baniſhed: having diſcovered a plot of his Grandees againſt him. Hee inveſts his three ſonnes *Conſtantine*, *Leo*, and

876.

An. Christi and *Alexander* with the Imperiall Enſignes: Of his fourth ſon *Stephen* hee made a Clergy man. Againſt the Eaſtern Agarens hee fought with good ſucceſſe, and overrun all Aſia even to Euphrates, where hee tooke in many Caſtles, and ſo returned in triumph to new Rome. Hee reſtores *Photius* againe to his Patriarchat, 878. *Ignatius* being dead; and yet *Photius* for oppoſing Images had beene condemned by a Synod at Conſtantinople. *Baſilius* by *Nicephorus Phocas* drove out of Apulia (which with ſome other places adjacent belonged upon agreement to the Greek Empire) the Carthaginian Saracens which had invaded it, and took Raguſium (a city in Sclavonia, where Epidaurus of old ſtood) from them, by the help of *Ludovic* the ſecond Emperour, and of the Venetians. Hee overthrew the Saracens power at Sea, and converted many Jewes to Chriſtianity, to the profeſſion of which he perſwaded alſo the Roſſi: and ſo he did the Bulgarians, whoſe King having entred into a Monaſtery, delivered the government to his ſonne; but ſhortly after perceiving that he was falling back to Gentiliſm, reaſſumes his own power, depoſeth his ſonne, and puls out his eyes, and then makes his other ſonne King. *Baſilius* alſo overthrew the Mahumetans, and ſlew *Chriſochires* their Prince, who had invaded the Greek Territories. Hee tooke in Cæſarea of Cappadocia, and laid waſte many of the countreys of the Agarens. The Saracens of Tarſis with their *Amiras* wrote defying letters to *Baſilius* ſhewing that neither he, nor the ſonne of *Mary* ſhould be able to breake his power: againſt theſe Bragadoces *Andrew* a Scythian and Patrician is ſent, who ſo quelled them, that few of all that bragging Army were left: but *Andrew* is depoſed for not taking in of Tarſus, and *Stypejota*, whoſe tongue was nimbler than his hand, was ſent. He careleſſely ſate down before the wals, and neglected to intrench himſelf, wherefore he was ſuddenly ſurpriſed by the Saracen horſe.

Ludovic and *Baſil* joining their Forces together ſuppreſſed the Weſtern Agarens, and tooke the Sultan priſoner, who being brought in triumph to Capua, and ſuddenly laughing at the volubility of the chariot wheeles, was asked why he laughed, he anſwered, that he ſaw in the whirling about of the wheeles, *the Symbol of humane inconſtancy*. For this ſaying *Ludovic* received him into favour, but hee was deluded by him, when he perſwaded him to tranſplant to ſome other places the chiefe families of Beneventum and Capua, to prevent inſurrections, then he informed thoſe againſt whom hee gave this advice, that *Ludovic* meant to remove them, whereupon they fell off from him, and carryed back the Sultan into Africa, yet at laſt they were forced to ſubmit to *Ludovic*. *Baſil* having reigned 20 years, one day in his hunting was wounded by a Stagge, of which wound he dyed: the Stagge got him by the girdle on his horns, a Courtier for drawing his ſword to cut the girdle, was unjuſtly put to death, as if hee intended to kill the Emperour. Hee left behinde him three ſonnes above named, the fourth *Conſtantine* was dead, his daughters hee ſhut up in Monaſteries. About theſe times ſome write that Pope *Joan* the woman lived, whom ſome call *John* the ſeventh, ſome *John* the eight. *Nicolaus* the firſt ſate 9 years, to him ſucceeded *Adrian* the ſecond, who was Pope 5 years. *Photius* the Patriarch calls a Synod at Byzantium againſt Pope *Nicolaus*, upon this a ſchiſm is made between the Greeke and Latine Churches; and then openly the proceſſion of the Holy Ghoſt is oppoſed by the Greekes. *Cyrillus* and *Methodius* preach to the Sclavonians, and Dalmatians. Pope *Adrian* the ſecond was the firſt that crowned *Elfred* the ſixt King of England. Then was the Univerſity of Oxford erected, where 3 Colleges were built by the King. Some think the foundation of this Academy was laid in the Britains time in Wiltſhire, and from thence tranſlated by *Elfred* to Oxford. In Scotland reigned *Donadus* the fifth, who overthrew the remainders of the fugitive Picts aſſiſted by the Engliſh, and not long after was overthrown himſelfe, in another battell by the Engliſh. His ſucceſſour *Conſtantine* the ſecond defeated the Danes in Fife, and in a ſecond battell was defeated by them.

875. *Charles* the Bald Grandchilde to *Charles* the Great, ſucceeded in the Empire, to *Ludovic*. He by bribes got the Popes good will, and therefore was preferred to his elder brother *Ludovic*, who entred upon France in his brothers abſence,

but

but shortly after dyed abroad. About 37 years after the decease of his father *Ludovicus Pius*; his sonne *Carolomannus* held Bavaria, Bohemia, Moravia, Carinthia, Pannonia three yeares. His other sonne *Ludovic* held Belgium, France, Saxony, and Thuringia, with the Earoli. *Charles* the grosse obtained Suevia, Alsatia and Lorrain, till he got the Empire. *Carolus Calvus* his second wife was *Rothildis* the widow of *Lotharius*, the deceased Emperour, by whom hee had children, but they all dyed. Hee was a proud, but a cowardly prince; having made *Boson* his wifes brother Duke of Italy, prepares an Army against his brother who had invaded France, but understanding hee was dead, resolves to imploy his Army of 50000 men against his brothers sonnes, therefore hasteth towards Germany. *Ludovic* the younger laboured what he could to make peace; but not prevailing, he with his people betake themselves to fasting and praying; after which hee marcheth with his small Army against his Uncle, whose great Army he so defeated, that he was faine to flye for his life. *Carolus Calvus* falls desperately sick upon this overthrow, but being recovered, hee is sent for to Italy against the Saracens, who were fallen upon the Popes territories; as soone as hee arrived thither, hee makes *Boson* King, and sends his Army against *Caroloman* his cousin German; and then out of feare flyes to Rome, *Caroloman* forsakes Italy. *Calvus* about to return to France falls sicks at Mantua. It's thought he was poysoned by *Zedechias* a Jew his Physitian. His brother *Ludovic* King of Germany dyed the year of Christ 882. *Caroloman* of Bavaria deceased two yeares before *A. C.* 880. *Charles* the Grosse succeeded in the Empire.

An. Christi
876.
877.
877.
874.
879.
882.

About that time *Pasquintan* and *Varfrand* Dukes of Britanny, having killed *Salomon* their King, fell at oddes between themselves; a cruell battell is fought, in which *Pasquintan* though backt by the Normans, is defeated by *Varfrands* small Army, and when *Pasquintan* renewed his Forces, hee was put to flight by *Varfrand* though sick in bed. Pope *Johan* the eight who sate ten yeares, crowned 3 Emperours in 4 yeares space, to wit, *Charles* the Balde, *Ludovic* the Stammerer, and *Charles* the Grosse. Swarmes of Locusts in France for one dayes space darkned the air; till flying to the British Sea, with a sudden blast of wind are all drowned; upon this followes the plague and famine, which consumed the third part of the people.

Ludovic the third sirnamed *Balbus* or the the *Stammerer*, the son of *Calvus*, having with much pompe and magnificence intertained Pope *Johan* the eight at Lyons is by him invested Emperor, and crowned by *Hincmar* Archbishop of Rhemes. He did not live long after, nor did he any memorable act: for he dyed the second year of his reign, not without suspition of poyson. He sent his crown as he was dying with his regall robes to his son *Ludovic* as yet but young. To whose share France fell, to his other son *Caroloman*, Burgundy. *Ludovic* in the year 882 dyed, *Carloman* in 884. The Normans under *Rollon* their Captain seat themselves in that part, which is from them called Normandy, it was called Neustria before. *Theodoricus* was created the first Earl in Holland.

Carolus the third sirnamed *Crasso* or *Grosse*, the youngest sonne of *Ludovic* the second King of Germany, obtained the Empire from the posterity of *Ludovic* the third, he was brother to *Ludovic* the French King (who dyed a year after his eldest brother *Caroloman*) and great grand childe to *Charles* the Great. His two brothers being dead, all Germany, Italy, and France did now belong to him. He was forced to let the Normans quietly injoy that part of France called Normandy from them: and upon *Godefrid* the Norman he bestowes Frisia with the daughter of *Lotharius*. His brother *Ludovic* tooke a part of Lorrain from the French. He defeated 5000 Normans neer Scaldis, and was defeated by them in Saxony having lost 12 Earles, and 2 Bishops, among which was Duke *Brunno* the builder of Brunswick. His brother *Caroloman* dyed of the Palsie. This *Charles* the Grosse overthrew *Hugo* and *Boson*, who laid claim to the Kingdome of France. He thrust out *Hugo*'s eyes, and clapt him up in a Monastery. He drove *Boson* out of Vienna, then posted to Rome where hee was crowned by *John* the eight. *Ludovic* being dead, the Normans rage with fire and sword in Germany, they plunder

An. Christi Utricht, Collen, Trevers (whose Bishops they slew) with many other townes. *Ludovic's* only sonne at Ratisbone falling from a window broke his neck. *Charles* having made peace with *Godefrid* King of the Danes or the Normans, he caused him to be baptized. Pope *John* the eight having sate 10 yeares was poysoned, and then knockt in the head, his successor *Martin* the second sat not much above one yeare. *Vido* Earle of Tuscia, and Duke of Spoleto being guilty of treason, to avoid punishment, cals into Italy the Mauritanian Saracens against him. *Charles* sends his Kinsman *Berengarius*, who overthrowes *Vido*. Hee at last cleered himself by oath of the treason objected against him, and so is received again into *Charles* his favour. *Caroloman* the sonne of *Balbus* is wounded by a Boare as he was hunting, which cost him his life. *Charles* after much happinesse, and many victories, was faine to come under the tuition of his brothers sonne *Arnulphus*, whom the Francs, Saxons, Bavarians, and other Germans made their King at Francfurt. Because *Charles* had cast off his chaste and lawfull wife, and had given too much advantages to the Normans enemies of his Kingdome: therefore finding all his friends to forsake him, he sent presents to *Arnulphus* desiring some maintenance for his life, which he obtained, and the next year dyed, having reigned almost 9 yeares.

888.

In his time *Rollon* being setled in Neustria or Normandy bordering on the Britans, and Gallicocean, the capitall City whereof is Rothomagum or Roan, received the Christian Faith, and with it *Charles* the Simples (or as others say) *Charles* the Grosses daughter in marriage, and a new name also, for he was named *Rupert*, from whom descended the Norman Dukes, among whom was *Richard* the second, who by his sword conquered Apulia, Calabria and Sicilia, having driven out thence the Greeks and Saracens. This *Carolus Crassus* had for wife *Richardis* daughter to the King of Scotland. About these times the African Agarens, overthrew *Syracusis*; *Abdalla* a new Caliph of Africa, abjured *Mahomet*, and followed *Hali*; and withall changed the Saracen rites and Prayers; his nephew *Elmedinallas* having obtained Egypt set up his regall seat at Cair, equall to that of Babylon. The Rossi or Russi were miraculously converted to Christianity; for the Bishop whom *Basil* sent for that end, cast his Bible in a flaming fire, which was found among the ashes untouched by the fire. It is reported of the Emperor *Basil*, that desiring to see his sonne *Constantine* who was dead, one *Theodorus* a Monk, represented him, as if he had been alive, for this *Basil's* other sonne *Leo*, accuseth him for a witch, but *Basil* favoured and admired him. *Theodorus* to bee revenged of *Leo*, counsels him to weare a dagger in his bootes privately, as a spell against all danger, and then informes his Father, that *Leo* meant to kill him, for he carryed a dagger in his bootes for that end: the dagger being found, *Leo* is laid in Irons; at which the people were much afflicted, crying out, *Alasse Lord* Leo: these words a Parrat learned, and one day as *Basil* was at dinner speaks them; at which he being moved, and earnestly intreated by the people, *Leo* is set free. About that time also the Danes invade England again, and are expulsed, except such as became Christians. *Theophylact* is sent by *Photius* the Patriarch to be Bishop of Bulgaria. *Charles* the Grosse was the first that dated his Letters and Patents with the year of Christ: whereas the Eastern Princes, even untill the Councell of *Basil* used no other computation in their subscriptions, but that of the World, according to *Eusebius* his account, which is erroneous. To *Martin* succeeded in the Popedome *Adrian* the third, who sate one year. He renews the Decree of Pope *Nicolaus* the first, to wit, that the Pope should be chosen by the Clergy and people of Rome without the Emperour. To him succeeded *Stephen* the sixt, or as some say the fifth, he sate 6 years.

CHAP.

An. Christi

CHAP. IV.

Of Carolus Craſſus *and* Ludovic *the fourth in the Weſt.* 2. *Of* Leo *and his ſon* Conſtantine *in the Eaſt.* 3. *Of the affaires of Italy, Germany, Spain, Scotland, and other paſſages of thoſe times.*

THE poſteritity of *Charles* the Great, lawfully begotten failed in *Carolus Craſſus*; for *Arnulphus* was of the fourth degree from him, or his Nephews Nephew, that is, the ſonne of *Carolomanus Germanicus* by a Concubine. He ſucceeded his Uncle *Craſſus*, who had a ſonne called *Bernhard*, by a concubine: and *Ludovic Balbus* had a poſthume ſonne named *Charles*, but theſe were paſſed by, and the French choose for their King *Odo* or *Otho* the Earl of Paris, who had ſtoutly defended the City againſt the Normans. Him *Arnulphus* permitted to be King, conditionally that hee did homage and fealty to him: the Italians choſe for their King *Berengarius* the ſonne of *Eberhard*, Duke of Friuli: others choſe *Vido* Duke of Spoletum, who defeated *Berengarius* in a battell, and forced him to flye to *Arnulphus*. *Vido* having got the Empire of Italy, enjoyed it but 3 years. For *Berengarius* by the help of *Arnulphus* obtained it, who ſtript him of his Empire, and drove him to Spoletum. Hee dyed the 3 yeare of his Empire, vomiting bloud. His ſonne *Lampertus* Emperour in name dyed in hunting. *Rodulphus* the ſonne of *Conradus* and Grandchilde of *Hugo Abbas* makes himſelfe King of Burgundy, the Normans breake in upon France and Germany: the Hungarians upon Italy, Pannonia, Carinthia, and Moravia: the Chriſtian Britains in a battell killed 15000 of the Inhabitants that were Gentiles. *Arnulphus* brought the Hungarians firſt into Germany, by whoſe help hee overthrew the rebelling Bohemians. The Normans at firſt defeat *Arnulphus* his Army, but in a ſecond battell are ſo defeated by him that ſcarſe were any left to carry home tidings. The Danes who were then the chief of the Normans loſt two Kings *Godefrid* and *Sigfrid* with 15 Enſignes. *Berengarius* being aſſaulted by an Army under *Lambert Vido's* ſonne was forſaken for his tyranny by his own ſouldiers, and ſo loſt his Kingdome. *Otho* King of France is driven out by *Charles* the ſimple ſonne to *Balbus*.

887.

Arnulphus is forced to make another journey into Italy againſt *Lambert*, who was crowned by Pope *Formoſus*. He layeth ſiege before Rome, and enters it by the guide of a Hare: which the ſouldiers purſuing with hooting towards the walls, and the Watch thinking that they were comming to aſſault runne away: and ſo the imperiall City, which from Pope *Leo* was called Leonina, is ſurpriſed by a Hare. *Arnulphus* is crowned there by *Formoſus*, and his enemies are put to death, the Romans take the oath of allegiance to him: the government of the City is committed to one *Foroldus*. *Lambert* in hunting was killed by *Hugo* Earl of Millan, whoſe Father for rebellion hee had put to death, when he was King. From this time that *Arnulphus* is crowned, the Germans claim title to the Empire. The wife of *Vido* and mother of *Lambert* was then at Firmum, which ſhee held out againſt *Arnulphus*. Shee cunningly ſends to him by his ſervant a poyſonable drink, which put him in a Lethargy, and ſo the ſiege broke up. *Arnulphus* the third yeare after his imperiall inauguration dyed of the louſie diſeaſe. This Kingdome of Italy begun by *Berengarius*, continued 80 years, till the 32 year of *Otho* the great, who thruſt out *Adelbertus*. The Italian Kings were theſe, 1. *Berengarius*. 2. *Vigo*. 3. *Lambertus*. 4. *Ludovic* the ſonne of *Baſon*. 5. *Hugo*. 6. *Lotharius* with his father. 7. *Berengarius* the ſecond. 8. *Adelbertus*. To *Adrian* ſucceeded Pope *Formoſus* who ſate 5 yeares: ſome thinke that *Charles* the ſimple, the French King after the death of *Otho*, was the firſt that wore in his coat the three lillies. *Rodulphus* about this time erected the kingdom of Burgundy. To *Formoſus* ſucceeded *Boniface* the ſixt, or as ſome ſay *Romanus*, who was Pope 26 dayes. His ſucceſſour *Stephen* the ſeventh ſate one yeare. Hee hated *Formoſus* ſo much, that hee condemned and abrogated all his Decrees: drew his body

894.

899.

896.

899.

out

An. Christi out of his tomb, robbed it of all its pontificall ornaments, and having cut off three of its fingers, commanded it to be flung into Tibris. *Romanus* succeeded who sate 3 months, and to him *John* the ninth, who was Pope 2 yeares. It was agreed that the Bishop of Rome should be called Pope, and the Bishop of Constantinople Patriarch, and both Oecumenicall or Universall.

899. To *Basil* in Constantinople succeeded *Leo* his sonne, called the Philosopher for the love he had to learning. Hee remembring the wrong done him by *Theodorus Santabarenus* the Monk in belying him to his Father, first degraded him (for now he was a Bishop) then caused him to be whipt, and then banished to Athens, where his eyes were thrust out by his command: and because *Photius* favoured him, hee is deposed from his Patriarchall chaire, sent into a Monastery, and his brother *Stephen* placed in his roome. Hee was disliked by his people, for doating upon his Concubine *Zoe*, whom after his wifes death hee marryed. He made warres upon *Angæus* or *Berengarius* Duke of Lombardy. Hee raised such customes upon the Bulgarian goods, that they tooke up armes against him. *Leo* not being strong enough to master *Simeon* the Bulgarian King, cals in the Turkes bordering upon Isther, these were called then Hungarians, they at first defeated the Bulgarians, but at last were defeated by them: the battell was so great, that of the Bulgarians were slaine 20000. and most of the Imperialists were killed.

One *Basilius* cousin german to *Zoe*, conspired with some others against *Leo*, but the plot was discovered by *Samonas* an Agaren, and *Basil* is banished. *Leo*'s third wife was *Eudocia* who dyed in childebed. On the day of Pentecost as *Leo* was going into the Church, hee was knockt down with a cudgell, and narrowly escaped death. One *Alexander* was suspected to be the Authour of this plot: but nothing could be proved against him, yet hee was quartered and burned. *Leo* entertained friendship with *Arnulphus*, and sent him divers presents. He would one night try how vigilant his guard was, by disguising himselfe, and bribing them with money, the first and second guard tooke money and let him passe, but the third would upon no tearmes, but beat him and imprisoned him. So knowing who were false, who true, hee expels the one from his Court, and advanced the other: hee reigned 25 yeares, then dyed, having
911. left the Empire to his son *Constantine* which he had by his last wife and to his bro-
900. ther *Alexander*.

Ludovic the fourth son of *Arnulphus* succeeded his father in the West-Empire. His tutors were *Otho* Duke of Saxony, and *Hatto* Archbishop of Mints. In his minority there were many civill broiles. *Zuendebold Arnulphus* his bastard was killed by his own subjects whilest hee was striving to reduce them to his obedience. *Ludovic* the Emperour for a great summe of money made France tributary to the Hungarians, who upon this becoming insolent fall with fire and sword upon the Italian cities beyond Padua. *Ludovic* the sonne of *Boson* drove *Berengarius* out of Italy into Bavaria, and upon this disbands his army thinking all was safe, but *Verona* which favoured *Berengarius* calls him again into Italy, who comming suddenly with his Army in the night seiseth upon *Ludovic*, and deprives him both of his eyes and kingdome: so *Berengarius* is saluted Emperour. About this time *Nicolaus* the Patriarch excommunicates *Leo* the Greek Emperor for his fourth marriage; *Nicolaus* was entreated to absolve him, but would not, wherefore *Leo* deposeth him, and sends him into a Monastery, and then sets up *Euthymius Sincellus* in his room. After *Leo*'s death, his brother *Alexander* governed the Empire, or rather neglected it, giving himself to voluptuousnesse & gormandising. He thought to have emasculated his pupil, but he was hindred by death, for having overcharged himself with too much meat and drink, as he was taking horse hee broke a vein, so that he dyed bleeding.

In Germany there were civill wars also in *Ludovic*'s time; for *Adelbert* Earl of Bamberg, for 7 yeers stood out in rebellion against the Emperour, the Bishop of Mitzburg, and *Conradus* Earl of East Franconie, opposed *Adelbert* or *Albert*, who in this expedition lost his two brothers, wherefore to be revenged he treacherously mur-

murthered *Conradus*. *Ludovic* ſummons him to appeare and to give account of this murther; but refuſed, whereupon an Army is levyed againſt him. *Hatto* Biſhop of Mintz perſwades *Albert* to ſubmit himſelfe to the Emperour, which he did; and then immediately being condemned of high treaſon, he loſt his head: his poſterity afterward became Marqueſſes of Auſtria. There brake out alſo civill wars in Lorrain, and other places of the Empire, which brought the Hungarians out of Thrace into Bavaria, waſting Pannonia by the way. *Ludovic* with all the ſtrength he could make fights them for three dayes together; in this battell hee loſt the flower of all the German Nobility, and himſelfe was forced to flye: the Hungarians purſue their victory with fire and ſword, ſo that *Ludovicus* was faine to buy peace of them for a great ſum of money, which coſt him his life; for upon this he grew ſickly and melancholy, and in the 24 year of his age dyed, having reigned 12 years: in him ended the iſſue male of *Charles* the Great, from the beginning of whoſe Empire, to the death of this *Ludovic* were 111 years. He dying childleſſe miniſtred occaſion of much trouble in the Empire, till by conſent *Henricus Auceps* was elected. *An. Chriſt* 912.

Alexandor Leo's brother on his death bed recommended the care of his brothers ſonne *Conſtantine* being yet but 7 yeares old, to his mother, and to ſome of the Nobility: having made *Phocas* Generall of all the Land Forces, and *Romanus* an Armenian Admirall of the Seas: but *Conſtantinus Ducas* the ſon of *Andronicus* aiming at the Empire, raiſed a faction againſt the young Emperour, which was quickly appeaſed by the Tutors and Prætorian Guard, who ſeiſed upon *Ducas*, and cut off his head. Then theſe Tutors began to tyranniſe, which canſed commotions in the City; and drew the Bulgarians againſt them, who ſate down twice before the city; the ſiege could not be raiſed without much intreaty, and great ſums of mony: they pillaged Hadrianople twice, and in their laſt expedition they waſted Thracia, and made incurſions upon Macedonia. *Conſtantine* longing to ſee his mother *Zoe*, who was baniſhed from the Court by *Alexander*; ſhe is ſent for, who ſhortly after takes upon her the government, and removes moſt of *Conſtantines* Tutors.

Romanus the Admirall having removed *Conſtantines* mother from the government and mued her up in a Monaſtery, he marryeth his daughter to him, and then ſetting him aſide, makes himſelfe and his own ſonnes Emperors, and ſo ruled the Empire 26 yeares, but at laſt hee was taken by his ſons and baniſhed. Theſe ſons *Conſtantine* ſeiſeth upon whom he ſhaveth and makes Prieſts of them: and then ruled all alone. He recovered in Italy from the Lombards Beneventum. Hee had no luck againſt the Saracens. He quieted the Turkes with money which he could not doe with armes, and converted many of them to Chriſt, at laſt he was poyſoned by his owne ſonne *Romanus*, after he had reigned 54. years, 13 with his father, Uncle and Mother, 26 with *Romanus* his father in Law, and 15 years alone: but the poyſon being not ſtrong enough to kill him, he recovered and betook himſelfe ever after to a private life; ſequeſtring himſelfe from the world, in hill *Olympus* with one *Theodorcus Syzicus* a devout man: his life was equall to his reign, for he lived 54 yeares. *Phocas* Generall of the Land Forces was oppreſſed by the greatneſſe of *Romanus*, and his eys put out. *Romanus* ſlighting his ſon in law *Conſtantine* ſo much, that he was fain to get his living by painting; Had made his owne ſonne *Chriſtopher* Emperour, but he dyed ſhortly after. At laſt *Conſtantine* being deluded and abuſed 26 yeares together by *Romanus*, and his two other ſonnes; by the help of *Stephen* his kinſman he layes hold upon *Romanus* whom he ſhaved, and baniſhed to Prota a ſmall Iſle in Boſphorus Thracius. His 2 ſons as they were with him at dinner, were ſuddenly by his command layd hold on, put in Irons, and ſent to keep their Father *Romanus* company in his exile, in which one of them *Conſtantine* by name, as he was ſtriving to eſcape loſt his life.

To Pope *John* the ninth, who called a Synod at Ravenna in which he reſcindeth all the decrees of Pope *Stephen*, ſucceeded *Benedict* the fourth, who ſate 3 yeares: after him came *Leo* the fifth or ſixth, who after 40 dayes was caſt into priſon by *Chriſtopher* the Prieſt, who invaded the Popedome; this having ſate 7 moneths, was by Pope *Sergius* the third aſſiſted by the French King impriſoned and

An. Christi and afterward made a Monk: so was also *Christopher* after he had sate 7 months. *Sergius* the third succeeded, who was Pope 7 years. He rebuilt the Lateran church from the ground which fell down in his time. About these times *Gregory* called the Great, King of Scotland, subdued the Danes & Northern Britaines, went over to Ireland, besieged Dublin, and took it, where he was made Protector of Ireland, during the minority of young *Duncan* the Prince. After his returne into Scotland, he began to build the City of Aberden in a pleasant place betweene the two rivers of Dee and Done famous for Salmons, which beyond Seas are of more account, and dearer then any other Salmons. In King *Milcolumbus* his time, about the year of Christ 943. Cumberland with Westmerland are annexed to the Crown of Scotland conditionally, that the Scots King should swear fealty to the King of England for those lands.

912. The race of *Charles* the Great having now failed; *Conradus* Duke of East Franconi (his sonne that was killed by *Adelbertus*) is by the Peeres of the Empire made Emperour. Against him conspire *Arnulphus* Duke of Bavaria, *Giselbert* Duke of Lorrain, and *Burghard* Duke of Suevia, who send for *Carolus Posthumus* out of France, with whom *Henry* the son of *Otho* joyns his Forces. This dissension had broke out into a civill war, but that the eruption of the Hungarians into Germany hindred it; these came with their whole strength upon Bavaria, but were defeated by Duke *Arnulphus*, with whom having made their peace, they fell upon Italy: where they were overcome by money, not by armes, and so they return to Germany, making havock of all before them, so that *Conradus* was faine to buy his peace, by payment of an annuall pension. After this he proscribes his enemies, and drives *Arnulphus* out of Bavaria, who returns thither again, after the Emperours death. He beheaded the two brothers of the Duke of Lorrain: hee suspected the greatnesse of *Henry* the son of *Otho* Duke of Saxony, and the rather because he was one of those who had formerly conspired against him; therefore he imployed *Hatto* the Bishop of Mintz to catch him; *Hatto* by a golden chain thought to have intrapped him, or else by *Conradus* his army to force him; but *Henry* very wisely avoided the treachery, and fortunately defeated the Army. *Hatto* being troubled in conscience for causing so much bloud to be spilt, removed himself from the Court, and was eat up by rats. After this *Conradus* fals sick; who notwithstanding that *Henry* was his enemy, yet knowing his power and worth, names him Emperor, & so dyed: he reigned 7 years, & was the first of the German Emperors.

918. To Pope *Sergius* the third, succeeded *Anastasius* the third, who sate 2 yeares. About this time a new order of Benedictin Fryers, was instituted in Burgundy by one *Otho* or *Oddo*. *Ennius* the Goth King of Arragon drove out the Moores that were returned to Arragon and Celtiberia: there were at this time three eminent men in Spain, namely *Ferdinand*, who obtained the Kingdome of Castile and Legio. 2. *Garcias* King of Navar, and 3 *Sanctius* King of Arragon. *Garcias* his posterity lasted not long, therefore Navar hath been subject sometimes to the French, sometimes to the Spaniard.

CHAP. V.

The affaires of Italy, Germany, France, and other neighbouring countreys under Henricus Auceps, *and* Otho *the Great.* 2. *The Easterne affaires under* Constantine *and his son* Romanus. 3. *The affaires of the Church.*

919. HEnricus *Auceps* or *Henry the Fowler* (so called because he loved fowling) the Nephew of *Arnulphus* the Emperour by his daughter *Ludgarda* was the first Saxon Emperour, *Arnoldus* Duke of Bavaria, thought by force of armes to obtain the Empire: but when both his Army and *Henrys* were ready to fight, he so mitigated *Arnold* with his wisdome and eloquence, that he submitted to the Emperor, and from him received power to establish the bishops of his own jurisdiction. The Hungarians for non-payment of the tribute promised by *Ludovic*

Ludovic the Emperour, over-run *Henry*'s countreys of Saxony, killing all the men that were above 14 years of age. *Henry* though ſickly at that time, yet raiſed an Army, and fought the Hungarians neer Merburg in the confines of Saxony. Hee charged his ſouldiers to keep off with the Targets the firſt flight of arrows ſhot at them, and then ſuddenly to ruſh in upon them as they were making ready to ſhoot again, which they did accordingly, and by which meanes they got the victory, driving theſe Turkiſh Farmers-like ſheep before them: few of them eſcaped, but either then were killed, or ſhortly after by the impriſoned malefactours who were ſet at liberty to purſue and deſtroy the reſt of thoſe Hungarians. *An. Chriſti*

So having quieted Germany, hee erects divers Offices called Marquiſats, for guarding and ſecuring the Marches and borders of the Empire from forraigne force. Againſt the Danes he ſet up the Marquiſat of *Schleſuic*, whence came the word Danimarchia or Denmarck: againſt the Henets he erected the Marquiſat of *Brandeburg*: againſt the Polonians and Bohemians the Marquiſats of *Lansberg* and *Miſne*: and againſt the Sorabi or Suevi, the Marquiſat of *Luſatia*. He began alſo to build the Churches of Miſnie or Meyſſen in the upper Saxony, of *Brandeburg*, and of *Havelburg*. He cauſed *Charles* the ſimple (ſo called for his ſtupidity) to ſubmit the kingdome of France to the Empire, and to reſtore the kingdome of Lorrain, which he took from *Rudbert* the ſonne of King *Odo*, which *Rudbert* he killed in a battell, when he claimed from *Charles* the kingdome of France. This *Charles* was ſhortly after apprehended in Gaſcony, and there committed to priſon where he dyed the year following: his ſon flew into England. *Rodulphus* King of Burgundy takes poſſeſſion of France, his kinſman *Ludovic* having extorted from *Berengarius* the kingdome of Italy, which he ſhortly after loſt, and his eyes to boot. But *Berengarius* recovered Lombardy, who would have forced *Lambert* to buy the Biſhoprick of Millan, and put divers of his Princes in priſon, wherefore the Italians call in *Rodulphus* of Burgundy; *Berengarius* to reſiſt him, hires the Hungarians, and by their help takes or kills his factious ſubjects, except Earl *Giliberd* whom he diſmiſſes; but within 30 dayes *Giliberd* forgetfull of this courteſie, brings *Rodulphus* back into Italy, who being received by all; *Berengarius* hath nothing left him but Verona. Three yeares after *Berengarius* got an Army together of perſons diſaffected to *Rodulphus*; a bloudy battell is fought, in which *Berengarius* is defeated, and ſhortly after murthered by one *Flanbert* whom he had advanced, who for this murther was hanged by Melo *Berengarius* his friend.

The Hungarians after the death of *Berengarius* rage through Italy, take and burn Ticinum. *Rodulphus* doats upon *Ermengardis* the ſtrumpet, and neglects the publick affaires; wherefore he is forſaken by his friends, is forced to flye back into Burgundy and to leave the kingdome of Italy to *Hugo* Earle of Arles, who kept good correſpondency with both the Emperours. In this meane time great commotions are at Rome. *Guido* Marqueſſe of Tuſcia husband to *Marozia*, who was thought to be *Sergius* the third's Concubine, enters the City with an Army, kills *Peter* Pope *John*'s brother, in his preſence ſtifles the Pope himſelfe in priſon with a pillow held to his mouth, ſets up *John* the eleventh, who was thought to be the baſtard of Pope *Sergius* by this *Marozia*. After the death of *Guido* this King *Hugo* marries her; by whoſe meanes he got Rome, but was expelled again by *Albericus* the ſonne of *Guido* the Marqueſſe by this *Marozia*. The King raging at this affront, revengeth himſelfe upon *Lambert Guido*'s brother, and puts out his eyes, then creates *Boſon* Duke of Thuſcia, and beſtowes Provence upon *Rodulphus*, that he might not lay claim to Italy: after this *Hugo* overthrows *Arnoldus* Duke of Bavaria at Verona, and drives him back into Germany. But he could not recover Rome from *Albericus*, though he had beſtowed his daughter upon him, nor could he hinder the Saracens from waſting Fraxientum, or keepe off the Africans from plundering Genua. God blaſting all his enterpriſes, for his ſacriledge and whoredomes with his Concubines, among which was *Bertha* the widow of *Rodulphus* King of France.

Henry the Emperour overcame the Sclavi, beſieged Prague, and made a league with

An. Christi with *Wenceslaus* Duke of Bohemia, who the yeare after was treacherously murthered by his brother *Boleslaus* in the Church. He killed also 120000 Vandals in
925. a great battell neer the Baltic sea, for wasting Saxony. He made *Vornius* King of
936. Denmark pay him tribute, he suppressed also the Rhedarii a people of Sclavonia, and caused many of the Northern people to receive Christianity. Among the rest he made *Chiupa* King of the Danes to be baptized. At last having againe defeated the Hungarians, and distributed among the poore, that tribute for
936. which they had raised this war, Hee dyed of a palsie the 18 yeare of his reign.

At Constantinople *Stephen* the Patriarch was now dead, *Tryphon* a Monk is named his successour, but conditionally, that after a certain time he should resign his Bishoprick to *Theophylact*, sonne to *Romanus* the Emperour, being yet very young, this *Tryphon* was unwilling to doe, till he was perswaded to write down his name on a blank; and then Cæsars friends filled it up with a resignation of the Patriarchat; to which *Tryphon* was forced to stand, being (though ignorantly) subscribed by him: and so a boy of 16 yeares old was made Patriarch.

Inger King of Russia with 15000 saile besieged Byzantium, but they were so defeated and dispersed that few of them returned home. *Ludovic* son to *Charles* the Simple, after his Fathers death is called home by *Hugo*. This *Ludovic* was called *transmarin* from his his travelling beyond the Sea. Hee found France full of troubles, therefore marcheth with his Army to Lorrain, hoping to
939. recover that which his Father resigned to *Henry*: but hee was thrust out thence againe by *Otho* the sonne of *Henry*, and *Giselbert Henry*'s sonne in law, and Governour of Lorrain, with the rest of those that rebelled are killed by *Otho*.

Otho the first surnamed the Great, for his happy government of the Empire 36 yeares, the sonne of *Henry* by *Mathilda* the Saxon was annointed at Aix by the Bishop of Mintz. Hee first suppressed the Bohemians, and then put an end to a long and seditious war raised against him by disaffected persons, to their own ruine. *Tancmarus Otho*'s brother because he had not the Marquisat of Brandeberg conferred on him, joines himselfe to *Eberhard*, Count *Palatin*, and *Giselbert* Duke of Lorrain, and so fell upon the town Barduic, and sackt it, but shortly after hee was taken and slaine. *Eberhard* armes *Henry Otho*'s other brother against him, who is assisted by *Frederic* of Mintz, the Emperour having subdued the sons of *Arnold* Duke of Bavaria, who were in armes one against the other about their Fathers inheritance, and having repaired Magdeburg or the confines of Saxony, which he bestowed on his wife for her dowry, marcheth over the Rhene against his enemies, whom he subdued by good counsell more then by force. Many of them being struck with Divine terrour flung down their armes; and the rather when they perceived how resolute he was in defending the Churches rights, and that hee would not consent to part with that upon any tearmes, which was dedicate to God. As he was at prayer in a Church of Alsatia, newes came to him that his chief enemies were overthrown by *Conradus* Duke of Suevia, that *Eberbart* was slain, and *Giselbert* drowned in the Rhene, that the Bishop of Mintz was forsaken by his people and gone they knew not whither. *Henry Otho*'s brother finding all had failed him, comes in black apparell to the Emperoar at Franckfurt, falls down at his feet, cals for mercy, promising ever after to be faithfull and obedient, and so he was pardoned.

Ludovic the French King, let fall the war hee undertook for recovering of Lorrain, and marryed with *Otho*'s sister the widow of *Gillebert*. *Bertholdus* Duke of Bajoaria marryed her daugher. *Conradus* took to wife *Luidgard Otho*'s daughter, with whom he had Lorrain. *Hermannus* Duke of Suevia marryed his only daughter to *Liuthulfus Otho*'s sonne. In Italy *Berengarius* the younger put himself under *Otho*'s protection, which occasioned King *Hugo* to enter into a league with the Saracens whom he might have destroyed, after hee tooke Fraxinetum their strong garrison; but *Berengarius* by *Otho*'s help got in a short time the Italians love, who disliked *Hugo*'s government, whereupon *Hugo* retires to

Provence

Provence, where he dyed, and left his sonne *Lotharius* to the courtesie of *Berengarius*; who being setled in Italy, received in a tax 10 bushels of money towards the removing of the Hungarians thence: so much *Hugo* had payed heretofore. After this *Otho* with 32 Legions enters France, and sets *Ludovic* their King at liberty, who was confined for hanging up *Herebert* his fathers enemy, and for killing *William* of Normandy. Shortly after this *Otho* made wars with the Danes, whom he caused with their King *Harald* to embrace Christianity, which *Harald* afterward was deposed for his ill government by his own son *Sueno* who destroyed Religion again, for which he was highly beloved of his people, and 3 times by them redeemed from the pyrats, who had taken him. *An. Christ.* 953.

Shortly after this *Lotharius Hugo*'s sonne dyed of a Phrensie in Italy. *Berengarius* his Governour besieged his widow *Adelheide* daughter to King *Rodulphus* and heir of Italy: the Queen with Pope *Agapetus* the second implore *Otho*'s help, who sends his son *Luthulphus*, and comes after himselfe with a greater Army. *Berengarius* and *Albert* or *Albericus*, are thrust out of their kingdome. *Adelheide* is set at liberty, and marryed to the Emperour. The daughters of *Berengarius* are sent into Germany; then *Conradus Otho*'s son in law is made Governour of Italy, who having taken *Berengarius* with his son conveys them into Germany: but *Luthulphus* or *Ludolphus Otho*'s son disliked his fathers marriage: and *Conradus* found the Emperour not well pleased with his service in bringing *Berengarius* into Germany, wherefore they two conspire against *Otho*; and *Berengarius* having sworn fealty to the Emperour is sent back to Italy. But Aquileia and Verona are assigned for *Henry Otho*'s brother: this dissension cost much bloud; but *Conradus* by surrendering Mintz to *Otho*, was made friends with his father in law: *Ludolphus* having seised upon Bavaria, seated himselfe in Ratisbone, where he was so strictly besieged, that being pinched with famine, was forced in a poore habit to submit himself and to beg for pardon, which was granted him by his father, but he was sharply reproved by *Henry* his Uncle.

After this the Hungarians who were brought into Germany by the rebels, committed many outrages, but neer Augusta 100000 of them were overthrown by eight Legions of *Othos*; *Conradus* who had heretofore called them in was slaine in this conflict. The Sclavi also at this time were destroyed in Germany. *Hermannus Bilungus* received from *Otho* the Dukedome of Luneburg. So after that *Otho* had overcome his brother *Tanguardus*, and subdued the Bohemians, Hungarians, and defeated the conspiracy of his brother *Henry* with his complices; and had forced *Hugo Capetus* Earle of Paris to restore France to *Ludovic*, in which expedition he lost his English Lady *Editha*: and after hee had broken the strength of *Berengarius* in Italy, and delivered the captive Queene *Adelheide* whom he marryed: after he had broken the plot of his sonne *Ludolphus*, and his sonne in law *Conradus*. After he had vanquished the Danes, and by the help of *Adaldagus* Bishop of Hamberg, had converted them to Christianity, and setled 3 Bishopricks amongst them: after he had overcome the Heneti, and brought them also to Christianity: after all these noble exploits and good successe, hee is visited with an affliction, as it were with some water to temper his wine, in the death of his sonne *Rudolphus*, who had done him good service in Italy against *Berengarius*, his body was honourably buryed by *William* his brother Bishop of Mintz in the Church of St. *Alban*. *Ludolphus* and *William* were *Otho*'s sons by *Editha*. 955.

The death of *Ludolphus* occasioned *Berengarius* to flie out again, being urged thereto by Pope *John* the twelfth: so that *Otho* is called again into Italy; but before he went, he called a Diet or Parliament at Ratisbone, where he declared his son *Otho* being 7 yeares old Emperour, and committed his education to *William* his brother; upon this he enters Italy, takes in Ticinum and the other Townes, pursued *Berengarius*, and in the way enters Rome, where he is by Pope *John* saluted Emperor, and all both Senat and people take the oath of allegiance: after this hee pursueth *Berengarius*, whom he tooke prisoner, and brought him to Germany, where hee was condemned to perpetuall imprisonment in Bamberg, where hee 962.

An. Christ. dyed, with his wife. In the mean while the Pope repenting of what he had done, calls *Albertus* the son of *Berengarius* into the City; whereupon *Otho* makes another journey to Rome; the report of whose march made the Pope and *Albertus* to flye: the Citizens take the Oath of allegiance the second time to *Otho*, and sweare never to create any Pope without the Emperours consent. Withall he cals
963. a Synod here, in which Pope *John* the twelfth, for his perfidiousnesse and other crimes is deposed: and *Leo* the eight is set up in his roome, who confirmed the Emperours assent in the election of Popes, with Anathema to those that should oppose this decree. *Otho* also swore not to order any thing in the City without the Popes assent, which oath some think to be suppositious, but when *Otho* was gone, the Romans being corrupted by *Albertus* call home Pope *John*, and depose *Leo*: after the death of *John* one *Benedict* is chosen.

964. *Otho* hearing of the Romans revolt, returnes again with his Army, and besiegeth the City so close, that they were forced by famine to yeeld. Pope *Benedict* is banished and committed to the custody of *Adaldagus* bishop of Hamburg, where he dyed: so Italy after 60 yeares trouble under divers Lords is setled by *Otho*. Pope *Leo* being dead, the Romans desire the Emperour to name his successour, he names *John* the thirteenth, whom they presently imprisoned. Upon this *Otho* in a rage returnes to Rome, sets up again the Pope, hangs thirteen of the prime Authours of his imprisonment, whips the City Governour, sets him on an Asse with his Face backward, and condemnes him to perpetuall imprisonment, then because he meant to stay sometime in the City, the better to settle the people, he sends for his sonne *Otho*, and there causeth him to bee declared Emperour.

Nicephorus of Constantinople sent to *Otho* to renew the old league between his Ancestors, & the French Emperors to that purpose *Otho* demands *Theophania* the daughter of *Romanus*, and daughter in law to *Nicephorus* for a wife to his son; which the Grecks refused, and affronted his Embassadours, wherefore he pillageth Calabria and Apulia, and at last in spite of them carryed away *Theophania*, and married her to his son, then returns into Germany; where he makes one *Hermannus* Duke of Saxony, a man of mean extraction, but had done *Otho* good service; and had faithfully governed Saxony in his absence. He bestowes on him the inheritance of the Marquisse of *Steden* there. The last Duke of this race was taken by *Henry* the fourth, and imprisoned, where he dyed without issue-male. Then *Otho* among the Heneti erects the Bishopricks of Aldeburg, Havelburg, and Brandeburg, and subjects them to the Metropolitan of Hamburg. Amongst the Sorabi he makes bishopricks of Magdeburg, Mersburg, Cicen, and Wisnen. At
973. last he dyed suddenly of an Apoplexy the 37 yeare of his reign being begun. He was buryed at Magdeburg: a little before his death, *Hatto* Bishop of Mintz, who succeeded *William* the Emperours son, was eat up by rats, for deluding the poore people whom he burned in a barn, calling them the rats of a common-wealth. *Otho* by *Adelheide* had 3 sonnes, *Henry*, *Bruno*, and *Otho* his successour, and one daughter *Adelheide*, whom he marryed to *Hugh Capet* Earl of Paris, and King of France. *Otho* founded a Church in Denmark called from his name *Otensia* or *Othonia*. In his time Pope *John* the fourteenth called a great bell by his own name, whence came the custome of naming and baptizing bells. About these times the University of Lovan is founded by *John* Duke of Brabant. Parnassus a City in Lombardy is overthrown by the Neighbours, and all the Inhabitants killed, for maintaining the heresie of the Anthropomorphites, they who recanted their heresie were spared, and permitted to build Crema, a town hard by. *Stephen* the first King of Hungary, for his piety was canonised. *William* the second Duke of Normandy was killed by *Rollo*: shortly after that Dukedome was turned into an Earldome, and seised upon by the French Kings, which ministred occasion of long warre betweene France and England. *Ethelstan* King of England got from *Otho Constantines* sword, in the hilts of which was one of the nailes that fastned Christ to the Crosse. He obtained also the Lance with which his side was pierced, a peece of the Crosse, and of the Crowne of Thorns.

Romanus

Romanus the younger having poyſoned his father *Conſtantine*, reigned in Conſtantinople 13 yeares, 10 yeares whileſt his father was alive, and 3 yeares alone. Hee was much addicted to luxury and wantonneſſe, therefore was ſurnamed the *Childe*. *Nicephorus Phocas* his Generall took Candace the chief town of Crete, whence the whole Iſland is called Candy, and expelled all the Saracens. Hee beat alſo the Saracens in Syria. At laſt *Romanus* having ſpoiled his body with luſt and glottony, dyed, being 24 years old, a childe both in years and manners. His firſt wife was *Berta Hugo's* daughter King of Italy: his ſecond *Theophania* of whom he had *Baſil* and *Conſtantine*, and one daughter *Theodora* who married to *Zimiſca*, who afterward was made Emperour. *An. Chriſti* 961. 963.

To Pope *Anaſtaſius* the third, ſucceeded *Landus* who ſate 6 moneths. After him came *John* the tenth 13 yeares, then *Leo* the ninth followed 7 moneths. After *Leo*, *Stephen* ſate 1 moneth. *John* the eleventh his ſucceſſour 4 yeares. *Leo* the ſeventh followed 3 yeares. Then came *Stephen* the ninth or eight 3 yeares. *Martinus* the third ſucceeded 3 yeares whoſe ſucceſſour was *Agapetus* the ſecond 7 yeares. To him ſucceeded *John* the twelfth 9 years, then *Leo* the eight 1 year. *John* the twelfth returning from his baniſhment ſate 3 moneths. *Benedict* the fifth ſet up by the Romans againſt *Leo* the eight, was Pope 2 months. *Leo* being reſtored ſate 8 moneths: to him ſucceeded *John* the thirteenth, who ſate almoſt 8 yeares. In Scotland a great Army of Danes were defeated by means of one *Hay* a country man and his two ſons; the Scots at firſt were forced to flye being overpowered by the Danes; but this *Hay* with his two ſons being at plough, met them in a narrow lane, and upbraiding their cowardiſe, made them for ſhame return, who fell with that violence on the Danes, that they utterly deſtroyed them. *Hay* was rewarded with as much land as a Falcon could flye over at one flight, which was 6 miles in length. Whence came the noble family of the *Hays*, whoſe chief is Earl of Arroll.

30 CHAP. VI.

The Eaſtern affaires under Nicephorus Phocas, Zimiſces, Baſilius, *and* Conſtantine. 2. *Of the Weſtern under* Otho *the ſecond.* 3. *Of the Turks, and ſome other paſſages of thoſe times.*

Romanus being dead and his two ſonnes *Conſtantine* and *Baſil*; as yet too young to meddle with publick affaires, *Nicephorus Phocas* is by the Eaſtern Army declared Emperour. He marryed with *Theophania* the widow of *Romanus*, He defeated the Saracens in Cilicia, recovered much of Aſia and Syria, and took in Antiochia the Metropolis: but by Sea his ſucceſſe was not ſo good, for *Manuel* his Admirall loſt his Fleet and Army, and was taken himſelfe by the Saracens. *Bringes* the Chamberlain thought to have beene Emperour, and to that purpoſe was incouraged by *Zimiſces* Generall of the Land Forces, to look after it; but he was hated by the people, therefore *Nicephorus* carryed it. *Polyeuctus* the Patriarch would have diſſolved the Emperors marriage with *Theophania*, pretending a ſpirituall affinity, becauſe hee had been Godfather to one of her children; but in the Synod which was called for that purpoſe, it was concluded, that the Emperours marriage could not be hindred by ſuch affinity. This *Nicephorus* was a good ſouldier, but a bad Emperour, for he oppreſſed the people with heavy taxes, pinched them with hunger by ingroſſing the corn, and raiſing the price thereof. He abaſed the coin, and yet raiſed the value of it. Wherefore knowing how hatefull he was to the people for his covetouſneſſe, and bad ſucceſſe his Fleet had in Sicily, being ſpoiled upon the Syrtes by the raſhneſſe of young *Manuel* the Patrician; hee cauſed an high wall to be built round about his Palace; but that could not ſave him; for ſoon after the wall was finiſhed, although he kept the keys of the gates himſelfe, yet he was found out by *Zimiſca* and the other conſpirators, who being pulled up in baskets, got over the wall, and in the

An. Christi night time break into his chamber, where the murthered him. Not long before his death, as he was in the *Forum*, the people railed and flung ſtones at him; ſome
969. think his wife *Theophania* had a hand in his death, being jealous that hee would defeat her ſonnes by her former husband, of the Empire, and confer it on his brother *Leo*. He was no friend to the Church, but envyed her wealth complaining that it was miſpent by the Clergy, therefore would not ſuffer any lands or money to be given by legacies, or other wayes on Churches or Clergy men. He dyed the 57 yeare of his age, and reigned 7 yeares. The Saracens being inraged at the great loſſes they had ſuſtained by *Nicephorus* in Syria, they burned downe the goodly Temple of Chriſts Sepulchre, with the Patriarch in it.

969. *Nicephorus* being murthered, *Zimiſces* invades the Empire, whom *Polyenetus* the Patriarch would not crown, till he had cleered himſelfe of the murther, and baniſhed *Theophania*, (whom others call *Theodora*) and all the reſt of the conſpirators, and till he had repealed *Nicephorus* his Act concerning the election of Biſhops, to wit, that none be choſen Biſhops without the Emperours conſent: all this being performed by *Zimiſces*, and having ſworn that he did not touch *Nicephorus*, He was crowned by the Patriarch, who about a month after dyed, to whom ſucceeded *Baſilius* the Monk. *Zimiſces* obtained a great victory over the Saracens as they were beſieging Antiochia. He made peace with *Otho* by ſending him his wife *Theophania*, who was crowned at Rome by Pope *Johh* the fourteenth. He made *Baſil* and *Conſtantine* the ſonnes of *Romanus*, conſorts with him in the Empire. He ſubdued the Roſſians and Bulgarians, by *Bardas Sclerus* his wifes brother, who tooke the Bulgarian King priſoner, and made them ſue for peace. After which victory he rode into Conſtantinople in a triumphant manner, carrying in waggons the plunder of Bulgaria, and the Image of the Virgin *Mary* with great ſolemnity. He cauſed ſtamp upon his gold and ſilver coin, this inſcription, *Jeſus*
975. *Chriſt King of Kings*: at laſt having reigned almoſt 7 yeares, he was poyſoned by *Baſil* his Chamberlain, for reproving his covetouſneſſe, and threatning to take his place from him. *Zimiſces* favoured the Manichees, and called them out of Aſia into Europe.

965. About theſe times *Mieſlaus* Prince of Poland received the Chriſtian Faith, and was baptized: from which year the Polonians began their Calender. *Harald* King of Denmark with his wife and ſonne *Sueno* are baptized; who before worſhipped
966. Chriſt and Idols together, now they flung away their Idols being induced thereto by *Poppo* a Clergy man, who carryed before the King a burning Iron in his hand, without hurt. *Edgar* King of old Albion (as he was ſtiled then) perceiving how England was obnoxious to forraign invaſions, as firſt by the Romans, and then ſo often by the Danes and others; for want of ſhipping, cauſeth a great Navy to be built, which like wals ſhould ſecure his Kingdome. *Egbert* had built ſome ſhips before, and 30 years after him *Alfred*, but they were either diſuſed or conſumed by the enemy.

967. *Otho* the ſecond being twice declared Emperour in his fathers time, once at Aix and the ſecond time at Rome, is by all received, after his fathers death, except by *Henry* Duke of Bavaria his couſin german, who by the help of ſome Biſhops, cauſed himſelfe at Ratisbone to be proclaimed Emperour. *Otho* ſummons him to ſhew cauſe why he aſſumed that title, he perceiving his owne errour, and how few came to aid him, layeth aſide his claime, and ſubmits himſelfe to the Emperour, who gave him his life, but baniſhed him, and beſtowed the government of Bavaria upon *Otho* Duke of Suevia, his nephew by his brother *Ludolphus*. He cauſed alſo *Harold* the Dane, *Meſico* the Polonian, and *Boleſlaus* the Bohemian, who had entred into league with *Henry*, to lay downe their Arms. But whileſt *Otho* is thus imployed, *Lotharius* the French King by force of armes laboureth to regain Lorrain. *Otho* marcheth againſt him with an Army, at the report of whoſe approach *Lotharius* flyes; upon this *Otho* purſues him, waſting and burning all before him, even to the walls of Paris, then having burned the ſuburbs, retreats with his Army homewards, *Lotharius* purſueth him in the rear;

many

many of *Otho*'s ſouldiers were drowned in the river Axona, and many hee loſt at Arduenna: and if he had not made the more haſt, he had fallen into the hands of the French. Yet ſhortly after peace is made, and Lorrain is reſtored to *Otho*, though the French Peers ſtormed at it. Some parts of the country the Emperor aſſigns to the Biſhops of Collen and Leege; the reſt he beſtows on *Charles* the brother of *Lotharius*, conditionally that he ſhould hold it in fee of the Emperour, as a Province of Germany. *An. Christi*

Things at home being thus compoſed, *Otho* intends an expedition againſt the Greeks and Saracens. In his minority he had done his Father good ſervice in Apulia and Calabria, againſt the Greeks: whom he drove out thence: but whileſt hee is buſie at home, the Greeks by the help of the Saracens of Sicily, under *Baſil* and *Conſtantine* recover theſe countreys again, being loſt by *Nicephorus*. *Otho* to regain them raiſeth a great Army of Germans and Italians, which under *Otho* Duke of Suevia expelled the Greeks out of their Garriſons of Iſtria and Dalmatia. At Beneventum a great battell is fought, in which *Otho* was defeated, and he himſelf hardly eſcaped: for he flung away his arms and clothes, that he might runne the more nimbly towards the Bay of Tarentum, where his wife *Theophania* was, but before he could get to the town, he was intercepted by the Saracens, and ſo was fain to leap into the Sea, and there was taken by the enemies ſhips, who not knowing him, let him goe again for a peece of money, ſo he came ſafe home; where he raiſeth a new Army, and returneth into Italy, to fight the Saracens, whoſe Forces he utterly deſtroyed; after the battell he puniſheth the Roman and Beneventan ſouldiers, who treacherouſly forſooke him in the firſt conflict; the chief Romans he put to the ſword at a Feaſt, and the Beneventins he puniſhed by the totall deſtruction of their City which he levelled with the ground. Shortly after he dyed at Rome, having reigned 10 years, and was buryed in St. *Peters* Church in a porphyrie tomb. 982. 983.

About this time *Adelbert* Biſhop of Prague being weary of the Bohemians, went down to Pannonia, and baptized *Geiſa* King of Hungaria; thence he went to preach in Boruſſia, where hee was torn in peeces by the Barbarians. To Pope *John* the fifteenth ſucceeded *Benedict* the fifth or ſixth one year; he was ſtarved to death in the caſtle of St. *Angelo*. His ſucceſſour was *Donnus* the ſecond, one year. *Bouiface* the ſeventh followed who ſate 7 moneths. *Benedict* the ſixth or ſeventh his ſucceſſour ſate 8 yeares. *Stephen* King of Hungarie ſends to Pope *Benedict* to have the title and Crowne of a King conferred on him, which he obtained; but this favour was denyed to *Mieciſlaus* Duke of Polonia, who ſent to *Benedict* the Biſhop of Cracovia. St. *Edward* the ſonne of *Edgar* King of England, and a hopefull Prince was murthered by his ſtep-mother to advance her owne ſonne *Ethelred*; whoſe Kingdome layd in bloud proſpered not, but became tributary to the Danes; who laid heavy and yearly taxes upon the land, before which time impoſitions called then *Dane-gelt* were not known in England. *Otho* had by *Theophania* *Otho* the third, yet a childe; *Hugo* or *Ulricus* Marquiſſe of Saxony, and 5 daughters. *Otho*'s minority occaſioned new troubles in the Empire.

Zimiſces being poyſoned by *Baſil* the Eunuch, the Eaſtern Empire came to *Baſil* and *Conſtantine* the ſonnes of *Romanus* the vounger. *Conſtantine* was more addicted to his pleaſures, then to government. *Baſil* being 20 years old; and *Conſtantine* the 17. began to manage publike affairs by the advice of *Baſil* the Eunuch. He recalled his mother *Theophania* to the Court, being baniſhed thence. Fearing the greatneſſe of *Bardas Sclerus*, ſo called from his harſh or hard diſpoſition, who had done in the Eaſt great ſervice, he tooke much of his power and command from him, making him content with the government of Meſopotamia. But hee would not be content to be thus affronted, therefore raiſeth all the power he had in the Eaſt againſt *Baſil*, defeats his Army, and takes in Nicæa the Metropolis of Bithynia: upon this *Phocas Bardas* is ſent for from his baniſhment, and is made Generall of all the Forces of the two Cæſars. He in a Duell having wounded *Sclerus*, put to flight all his diſturbed Legions. *Sclerus* was fain to flye to *Coſroes* 975. σκληρός

An. Christi the Sultan of Babylon; but being accused of treachery, he was imprisoned: So *Basil* being freed from civill wars, resolves to recover Calabria, and Apulia, *Theophanias* dowry. *Otho* in the sixth yeare of his reign, marcheth into Italy with a great Army, to defend his wifes dowry. In the first conflict he defeated the Greeks and Saracens, in the second he was defeated, as we have said. About this time *Olaus* King of Noraway converted his country to Christianity, and sent shortly after some to convert Island.

Basil understanding that *George* Lord of the inward Iberia, had invaded the bounds of the Empire, sends an Army against him, and forceth him to buy his peace for a great summe; till payment of which he gave his son as hostage, but he afterward stood not to his promise; therefore *Basil's* Army fell upon him, and utterly defeated his Forces. Hee subdued also the Saracens in Syria and Phænicia. Shortly after he and the Bulgarians fell at variance for some wrongs offered by them to the Greeks. About which time the regall family of Bulgaria ended in *Peter* who was now dead. Thereupon 4 brothers of an ancient family strove for the principality: Three of these failed by death, the fourth *Samuel* by name, taking advantage of the civill wars of Greece invades divers of their towns which he tooke. *Basil* upon this undertakes an expedition against Bulgaria, where his Army miscarryed by the treachery of his Commanders. And withall *Phocas* who before had defeated *Sclerus*, now rebels against *Basil*. For he finding himselfe slighted by *Basil*, whom hee had delivered from so great an enemy, invades the Empire; but hee was overthrowne in divers battels, and at last dyed suddenly. *Basil* also had good successe against the Bulgarians, by the industry of his Generall *Uranus*. He took some townes beyond Mount Hemus, and the next year he invaded Bulgaria himself, and rebuilt the Greek Garisons in Thessalia that had beene demolished, about the time that *Veremundus* King of Spaine had overthrowne *Almansor* Lord of the Corduban Saracens.

Samuel King of Bulgaria could not be quiet from molesting the Greeks, wherefore *Basil* in the 38 year of his reign suddenly falling behinde the Garrisons that kept the narrow passages between the hils, put them to flight, and withall tooke 15000 Bulgarians, whose eyes hee thrust out, leaving onely for every hundreth a Captain with one eye, to conduct the rest, these hee sent to *Samuel*, who being affrigted of so many calamitous people, became suddenly vertiginous, and within two dayes dyed. His cousin German *Bladislabus* to be revenged, raised an Army, but this also was defeated, and he himselfe slain, so at last Bulgaria was totally subdued, and the chief Nobility was transported to Constantinople. Hereupon shortly after the Crabits and Syrmium the chiefe City of Pannonia submitted to Cæsar.

At the same time the Turkes, a race of *Hunns* inhabiting the North side of Caucasus, were sent for, and imployed by *Mahomet*, Sultan of Persis and Media against the Persians, who were animated by *Inargus* (who was of the bloud royall of Persia) to rebell, and vindicate their liberty, from the Saracen yoake. *Cosroes* then had *Bardas Selerus* with many other Christian souldiers, he promised to set them at liberty, if they did defeat the Persians, which they happily did. So *Sclerus* having obtained the victory, returnes to the Christians, and joines himselfe to *Bardas Phocas*, who was then contesting with *Basil* for the Empire. He cunningly sent his sonne *Romanus* as a fugitive to assist *Basil*; whilest he himselfe stayed with *Phocas*, to the end that if *Basil* prevailed, *Romanus* his sonne might procure his Fathers pardon; if *Phocas* prevailed, that then hee might obtaine his sons pardon. *Basil* having got the victory, *Romanus* who was now become his favourite, perswades him to remove the Eunuch *Basil*, (by whose meanes *Zemisces* was murthered) from all government being he was hated by the people; this was accordingly done, *Zemisces* shortly after dyed of griefe. *Phocas* also dyed suddenly. *Selerus* by his sonnes meanes is made the chiefe Steward of the Palace. But before came to Byzantum, hee lost his Eye-sight with age.

The Prince of Iberia being now dead, *Basil* seiseth upon it. He recovered also

Media

Media and Chazaria the 4 yeare of his Empire, and made the Princes of Tripoli, Damascus, and others who were plundering the Territories of Antioch, to become his tributaries, thus being puft up with victories and wealth (for he had heaped to gether 200000 talents of gold, besides jewels, pearles, and an infinite masse of silver) hee began to slight both citizens and souldiers, and to account of learning as a thing useless, which made him more feared then loved of his people. So intending to recover Sicily from the Saracens, sends his Fleet before with a purpose to follow himself, but his journey was hindered by death. He had lived and reigned 72 years, 50 alone, and the rest of the time he was Co-emperour with his Father; then with *Nicephorus*, and after him with *Zimisces*. *An. Christi* 1025.

After the death of *Basilius* his younger brother *Constantine* ruled the Empire 3 years, by others rather then by himself. For he could scarse spare so much time from whoring, drinking, dicing, hunting, and Stage playing. Under him divers towns of Syria and Phenicia, re-assumed their liberty, and killed their garrisons. He sent twice to suppresse the Saracens in Italy and Sicily, but did no good. Yet by his Generall *Constantinus Diogenes*, Governour of Syrmium and Bulgaria, hee drove away the Scythians beyond Isther. The Governour of Samos overthrew the Saracen Fleet which had wasted the Cyclades. Hee caused *Romanus Argyrus* to marry his daughter *Zoe*, having taken his former wife from him, whom hee shaved, and put into a Monastery; but the third day after the marriage, he died the 70 yeare of his life: in his hast and furie he used to kill or blind his chiefe Courtiers, and then to weep and repent when it was too late. 1028.

Cosroes the Saracen being dead; *Mahomet* his successour inferiour in strength to *Pisastirius* Prince of the Babylonian Arabians, was fain to call in the Turkes (as we have said) for his assistance: by whose help he overcame the Babylonians and Indians: but having other enemies to buckle with, he was loath to let the Turkes goe home, till they had done the rest of his work; therefore hee detaines them in Persis, and besets the river Araxes (over which they were to pass) with strong guards. The Turkes were highly incensed, that they should be forcibly kept from their native country by him who quietly injoyed his own country by their meanes: wherefore in a rage they forsooke him, and being about 30000 tooke possession of the mountaines, and fell to plundering the Saracens. *Mahomet* to drive them out of their strong holds sends 20000 men, who were put to flight by *Tangrolipex Mucaletus* the Turish Prince. The Sultan inraged at this disgrace, blindes many of the Captaines who were sent against the Turkes, and so terrified his Army with threatnings, that most of them fell off from him to the Turkes. The Sultan to be revenged raiseth an Army of 500000 men, who were all defeated by the Turkes. So *Araxes* being now made passable, the Turkes came swarming in upon the Territories of Babylon, and so they obtaine the Saracens Kingdome.

CHAP. VII.

The affaires of the Western Empire under Otho *the third*, Henry *the second, and* Conradus *the second.* 2. *Divers passages of England, Scotland, Italy, France and other parts of Europe.* 3. *Of some Popes.*

OTho the third, as yet a childe succeeded to his Father, for whose sake hee was beloved, though disaffected by some because his mother was a Greek. Therefore *Henry* his cousin german, and Duke of Bajoaria took upon him to be young *Otho*'s Protector, and to rule the Empire: but the Saxons being mindfull of their oath and allegiance to *Otho*, by the help of the Princes got the young Emperour again out of *Henrys* hands, and restored him to *Theophania* his mother, and *Adelhida* his Grandmother, under whom he was bred in all kind of divine and humane learning. His mother some few years after dyed, so that his 984.

Grand-

An. Christi

Grandmother had the sole education of him, till he by the evill counsell of some green heads, puts her away. In his minority new troubles sprung up, *Crescentius* the Roman Consul will have the City choose an Emperour of their own, and cast off the Germans in France. *Lotharius* makes wars upon Germany for the Dukedome of Lorrain, which *Otho* the second took from him. In Germany *Henry* the Bavarian returning from banishment, after the death of *Otho Suevicus*, not onely recovered Bavaria, but aimed also at the Empire.

When *Otho* was come to yeares of discretion, he falls upon setling the Empire: in the interim *Lotharius* was forced by death, to give off his challenge of Lorrain. His sonne survived his Father but one year: *Charles* also dyed, the brother of *Lotharius*, as he was challenging the kingdome of France, which *Hugh Capet* Earle of Paris invaded and obtained now the whole race of *Charles* being extinct. This *Hugh* began the third race of the French Kings which hath lasted till this day: the first race began in *Meropheus* or *Clodoveus*, and ended in *Hilderic*us. The second which began in *Pipin* and ended in this *Ludovic* the last. *Hugo* acknowledged *Otho* for Emperour, and permits *Otho* the son of *Charles* to enjoy Lorrain as in fee from the Emperour. But debarres him from his right in France.

Otho having setled Germany, bends his whole strength to appease the distractions of Rome and Italy. Therefore understanding that *Crescentius* did domineer in Rome, and had thrust out the Pope, he marcheth thither with his Army, but in the way at Ravenna, newes came to him, that the Pope was dead, wherefore he appoints for his successour *Brunno* his kinsman, son to *Otho*, Duke of Suevia, and nephew to *Ludolphus*, whose name was changed to *Gregory* the fifth. He is sent before to Rome, the Emperour with his Army followes, who being let into the City, pardons *Crescentius* upon his submission, and then is crowned Emperour by the Pope. All things being there setled, he marcheth back toward Germany, but he was not gone far, when *Crescentius* thrusts out *Gregory*, and sets up *Johannes Placentinus* a wealthy man, and withall fortifieth the City with Bulwarkes against a siege. Hee shuts himselfe up within that strong and spacious building called then *Moles Hadriani*, being his buriall place, then the tower of *Crescentius*, now the castle of St. *Angelo*. *Otho* hearing of this, returnes to Rome, the Citizens open the gates, presuming on pardon, which was promised to *Crescentius*, if he did deliver up his strong hold, which he did; but the promise was not kept; for *Crescentius* being carryed on a jade through the City, with his face backward, and torn by the people, was at last hanged with 12 more of his associates, *Johannes Placentinus* had his nose cut off, and his eyes put out, and then was flung down headlong from the Capitoll: the other Senators that were accessary to this plot *Otho* banished into Saxony. Upon this sedition it was agreed between the Emperour and Pope, that the Germans alone should have power to choose their Emperour, and the Pope to confirme the Election. When hee is chosen he was to be called Cæsar, when confirmed by the Pope, Augustus. By which meanes all factions both in Italy and France, for the imperiall place and dignity should be prevented. And Italy with Germany should be the stronger united against the incursions of Saracens, Turkes, and other barbarous Nations. This would be a meanes also to quiet the Italian Princes, who fell out among themselves, and ambitiously striving for the Empire destroyed one another, and chiefly by this the Popes power was bridled, who tooke upon him to nominate Emperours, which caused much bloud shed. There were 7 electors appointed to avoid confusion and quarrels, to wit, 3 Bishops of Mintz, Colon, and Trevers, and 4 secular Princes, the Palsgrave, Duke of Saxony, Marquesse of Brandeburg, and King of Bohemia: but whether these were ordained then by *Otho* or afterward, when the Empire was in the Family of the Suevi, is uncertaine.

Otho having setled the Empire, undertakes a pilgrimage to the bones of *Adelbert* in Polonia, where being magnificently entertained by *Boleslaus* Duke of Poland, by way of recompence, hee named him King: and erected there an Arch-

Archbiſhoprick at Gneſnau, under which were Crocovia, Colberge, and Viotiſlaen, Suffragans. He was forced to make a new journey to Rome, to appeaſe the commotions there raiſed by the Pope, for being excluded from the Emperors election. There he fell in love with the widow of *Creſcentius* pretending to marry her, but when ſhe perceived, that hee meant no ſuch thing, upon his returning to Germany, ſhe preſents him with a paire of poyſoned Gloves, which killed him the 30 yeare of his age, of his Empire the 19. He dyed childleſſe, his former wife *Mary*, daughter to the king of Arragon, he cauſed to be burned, becauſe ſhe had falſely accuſed and cauſed to be put to death a young Noble man, with whom ſhee was in love, for that he would not pollute the Emperours bed at her inſtigation, to be revenged of him, ſhe accuſeth him as if he meant to raviſh her, whereupon he was condemned and executed. But his wife ſhortly after to prove his innocency, carryed in her hand a burning iron without hurt: Which induced *Otho* to doe juſtice on his perfidious Empreſſe. *Otho*'s bowels were interred at Auguſta or Ausburg, by *Henry* of Bavaria his ſucceſſour, who beſtowed on them a marble tomb: his body was buryed at Aix. He was a prince indowed with ſo much wiſdome, learning and piety, that hee was called the wonder of the World. *An. Chriſti* 1001.

In *Otho*'s time are recorded ſtrange prodigies, as uncouth earthquakes and Comets, ſhowres of wheat and little fiſhes out of the clouds. In Sicily neer Ætna were heard ſtrange cryes and yellings, which were then ſuppoſed to be the complaints of tormented ſoules in purgatory, whence the feaſt of All ſouls was ordained. Fire brake out of the river Rhene which burned down the neighbouring villages. Great Froſts in the midſt of ſummer, which deſtroyed graſſe and corn, whereupon followed plagues and famine, and the eruption of the Sclavonians upon Saxony. *Vlodomirus* Duke of Ruſſia is made a Chriſtian. 995. 997.

To *Benedict* ſucceeded *Johan* the fourteenth, who was Pope 3 months, and then was impriſoned; whereupon *Boniface* the ſixth was re-inthroned, and ſate foure months, his ſucceſſour *John* the fifteenth ſate 8 moneths: to him ſucceeded *John* the ſixteenth, who was Pope 10 yeares. *Gregory* the fifth his ſucceſſour 2 yeares. *John* the ſeventeenth a Greek and Magician, thruſt out *Gregory* for 10 months, but was himſelfe deprived both of his dignity, eyes, and life by *Otho*, and *Gregory* reſtored, to whom ſucceeded *Cerebertus* or *Sylveſter* the ſecond, a Mathematician and Philoſopher, and therefore in that rude age, he was thought to bee a witch. He was firſt Archbiſhop of Rhemes; then of Ravenna, laſtly of Rome, where he ſate 4 years.

Much about the ſame time the Empire of Germany, the kingdom of France, Poland, Hungary, and Bohemia were eſtabliſhed; and the kingdome of the Arabians in Corduba which had continued 300 yeares, had its period: and then began the Hebrew tongue to flouriſh there, under *R. Joſeph*, who turned the Thalmud into Arabick, then an Academy of Saracens was erected at Babylon. 1000.

In England the Danes were generally maſſacred for their intolerable tyranny and oppreſſions, whereupon *Swain* King of Denmark armed with rage and power, came with a great Fleet, and conquered this land, drove King *Ethelred* to Normandy, but upon the death of *Swaine* he was called home; whoſe Forces *Knute* or *Canutus Swaines* ſonne defeated. *Ethelred* being dead, his ſonne *Edmund Ironſide* fought divers battels with the Danes, not without good ſucceſſe, till at laſt he was betrayed and utterly defeated, and ſo *Canutus* obtained the Kingdome. But neither *Swaine* nor his ſonne *Canutus* had ſuch good ſucceſſe in Scotland, for in two ſeverall battels they were worſted: in the firſt *Swaine* was utterly defeated, and hardly eſcaped with his life: in the ſecond *Canut* was ſo weakned, that hee was forced to ſue for peace, in which it was agreed, that the Danes ſhould depart Scotland, and that neither Scots nor Danes ſhould moleſt one another, during the lives of *Micolumbus* the Scots King, and *Swaine* the Dane. Yet this *Milcolumbus* or *Malcolme*, whom the Danes could not hurt was afterward murthered by ſome of his own ſubjects in his bed, becauſe of ſome oppreſſions

An. Christi sions committed, or at least permitted by him upon his Nobility; but vengeance pursued the murtherers immediately after, even the same night; for having mistaken their way in the snow, they fell into a lake, in which they were all drowned, men and horse, as they were flying away, the ice breaking under them.

Otho the third being dead without children, *Henry* the second succeeded: hee was Duke of Bavaria, a Saxon by bloud, but a Bavarian by birth: He was the nephew of *Otho* the first by his brother. In the beginning of his reign he was opposed by *Ethard*, Marquisse of Saxony, whom *Lotharius* and *Benno* Dukes of Saxony killed. *Henry* also Marquisse of Austria, with his brother *Brunno* Bishop of Ausburg made insurrections against him, but they were quickly suppressed. So having setled things at home he went against the Heneti, who had fallen off from Christianity, which they had imbraced in *Otho* the firsts time, and were now become heathen Idolaters, having first destroyed their Churches, and murthered their Bishops. But *Henry* brought them again under the obedience of Christ, and made them rebuild their Churches, then he endowed the Bishopricks with new reveneus, chiefly that of Marburg, to which he assigned a great part of the Earldome of Marburg. Having subdued the Heneti, he made wars upon the two *Boleslaii*, the one king of Poland, the other Duke of Bohemia: these having flowen out into open hostility against him, he caused to submit to his obedience, and to doe him homage. He converted also the Earldome of Bamberg (Earle *Rinold* being dead without children) into a Bishoprick, and so inriched and honoured it, that hee made the chief Princes of Germany the Bishop of Bamburgs Vassals, and to doe him fealty, so that the Electors as yet hold of him in Fee, whatsoever they enjoy as Electors. He suppressed also the insurrection of *Henry*, and *Theodoricus* brothers to *Cunegunda* his wife, who stormed because they could not enjoy their sisters estate being now dead, and which the Emperour had distributed among the Clergy men. These two brothers raised an Army against him; invaded and took Ausburg, then thrust *Brunno* the Emperors brother thence; but the Emperour overthrew them both in a battell, and deposed *Henry* from his Dukedome, yet afterward upon submission, restored him.

1005. *Hermannus* Duke of Suevia being dead, he made *Ernestus* husband to *Gisel* his cousin german Duke thereof, and so having setled the troubles of Germany, he addresses himselfe for Italy, to take possession thereof as Emperor, to suppresse the Greeks and Saracens there, and to subdue *Arduinus* whom the Bishops and Nobility had proclaimed Emperour at Millan, who in two great battels was overthrown by the Emperour and slaine. *Henry* was taken prisoner himselfe, but having deceived his Keepers, leapt down from the wall, and so broke his thigh,

1014. which made him halt ever after, whence he was called *Henry the lame*. After this victory he was crowned Emperour by Pope *Benedict*. After this hee marcheth towards Apulia and Calabria, against the Greeks and Saracens, who were strugling for that part of Italy, a share whereof *William* Duke of Normandy had taken from them under *Otho* the third, and at last that whole country of *Magna Græcia* became subject to the Normans. But at this time *Henry* subdued both the Greeks and Saracens, and tooke from them their New Troy, which the Greeks

1022. had lately built in Apulia; in that same place where anciently *Hannibals* campe lay. This was the third journey that *Henry* made into Italy, and the last. In his return homeward, he had conference with *Robert* King of France, about setling the State and Church: and to that purpose they appointed to give the Pope a meeting

1024. at Ticinum, but death prevented this, for the next yeare after he dyed at Groning the 52 yeare of his life, and was buryed in his own Church of Bamburg. Hee reigned 22 yeares. Being childlesse, hee nominated *Conradus* for his successour. Hee was a pious and a munificent Prince who, (as they say) lived perpetually chast with *Cunigunda*, though marryed. Hence hee was called *Saint*.

In his life time he had many wars with the Polonians, Bohemians, Italians, Russians, Greeks and Saracens, in all which he had good successe. He had a dangerous

war

war with *Baldwin* Earle of Flanders about the Dukedome of Lorrain, which he gave away after the death of Duke *Otho*, to *Godefrid* Prince of Arduenna: but *Henry* by the helpe of *Robert* King of France, and *Richard* Duke of Normandy took Gant and wasted Flanders, so that *Baldwin* was fain to submit, who received in Fee from the Emperour, the Isle of Zeland, with the City Valentina. In the time of this *Henry*, the Turkes tooke Jerusalem from the Saracens, and overthrew the Temple which *Constantine* had built there. The King of Denmark with a great train went to Rome, to intreat the Pope that the Churches of his kingdome might be exempted from the jurisdiction of the Archbishop of Hamburg: the Pope promised to send a Cardinall thither, for that purpose, but nothing was done in that matter till *Gregory* the seventh, who subjected all the Churches of Denmark, Swethland and Noraway to the bishop of Breme. The Transilvanians by the meanes of *Stephen* King of Hungary received the Christian Faith: for he tooke *Giula* with his wife and children prisoners, who being released were all baptized. *Canutus* King of Denmark and England, obtained also the kingdome of Norraway. *Rainimir* the sonne of *Sanctius Major* was first King of Arragon. To *Sylvester* succeeded Pope *John* the seventeenth or eighteenth, who sate 4 moneths: his successour *John* the nineteenth sate 4 yeares, to whom succeeded *Sergius* the fourth, who was Pope two yeares. *Benedict* the seventh or eight sate 11 yeares: and so many yeares sate his successour *John* the nineteenth or twentyeth. *Canutus* King of England marryed *Emme* widow to king *Ethelred*. He went about to extirpate those of the royall bloud of England; therefore sent away the two sonnes of the late king *Edmund*, and his brother, to be murthered abroad; but they were by divine providence preserved. Hee went to Rome, and freed the Saxon Schoole which the Kings of England had erected there, from all imposition. *An. Christ.*

From the Saxons the Empire of the West is translated to the Francs in the person of *Conradus* the second, who is called *Salicus* because the country of Franconia was called Salia, from the river Sala, whence came the Salique law, with the French, which by the Salii or Francs were driven out of Franconia. The Empire continued in the Saxon Family about 100 years; this *Conradus* was descended of the ancient *Gibelins* in Franconia. Hee marryed with *Gisil Henry* the Emperours kinswoman by whom hee had a sonne called also *Henry*. In the beginning of his reign he was threatned with wars by his cousin german, and competitor for the Empire, *Cuno* the younger. By *Ernestus* also the Emperors sonne in law, by *Frederic* of Lorrain, by *Boleslaus* King of Poland, and *Robert* King of France, but all these clouds he dispelled by his wisdom and dexterous carriage. 1024.

The third yeare of his Empire he prepares an Army for Italy, to quiet the commotions there: and withall holds a Parliament at Aix, where he declares his sonne his successour: whom 3 yeares after he made Duke of Bavaria, Duke *Henry* brother of S. *Cunigunda* being dead. Hee caused those of Papia who had demolished his Palace to rebuild it, hee quieted the people of Ravenna, who would have driven him out of the City, and rewarded a souldier who for him had lost a leg in that skirmish, with a boot full of silver. From thence he went to Rome, where he was crowned Emperor by Pope *John*, and was conducted to his chamber by two Kings, namely *Canutus* King of England, and *Rodulphus* king of Burgundy. At Rome two souldiers falling out about an Oxe hide, the one being an Italian, the other a German, raised such a tumult that many were slain in it, the Romans being worsted, were fain to beg pardon bare footed with ropes about their necks; which they obtained. *Conradus* bestowed Apulia upon the Normans to be held by them in fee of the Emperour for the defence thereof against the Greeks. 1026.

Whilest *Conradus* was in Italy, *Frederic* of Lorrain, *Cuno* of Wormatia, and *Ernestus* of Alemannia Dukes conspired against him; but *Frederic* dyeth before the plot came to maturity. *Cuno* was glad to demolish all his fortifications to obtain the Emperours favour. *Ernestus* having pillaged Alsatia and Burgundy was

at

An. Chri. at last forsaken by his souldiers, and so yeelded himselfe a prisoner; but afterward flying out againe, was so hotly pursued by the Emperours guard that they inclosed him within a wood, and slew him. About this time *Conradus* brought *Miseco* the Polonian in subjection, who had expelled his brother *Otho* out of the kingdome by the means of *Gisell* the Empresse; he was reconciled to *Conradus*, and
1032. was restored to the third part of Poland. He quieted also the Francs, French, and Bohemians and *Stephen* King of Hungary, who made war upon *Conradus* for the Dukedome of Bavaria, which he claimed as his sonnes right, being the childe of *Henry* the Saints sister: but the war ended by the death of *Emericus Stephens* sonne.

To *Rodulphus* King of Burgundy by his will bequeathed his kingdome to *Conra-*
1035. *dus*; but *Otho* nephew to *Rodulphus* by his sister laid claim to it, and thought by the sword to obtain it, but he lost both it and his life to boot, being killed in the battell, and so Burgundy was made a Province of the Empire, having continued a kingdome, from the death of *Carolus Calvus* 144 years. It was made a kingdome under *Arnulphus*, it was afterward parted into the Dutchy, which the Emperour retained, and the county which fell to the King of France, this *Rodulphus* who gave it away was the tenth and last king.

After *Conradus* by his sonne *Henry* had subdued the Bohemians, he marryed him to *Cunelinda* daughter of *Canutus* king of England and Denmark; she being brought to bed of a daughter to him, dyed in Italy, and was buryed in Himburg, at that time the bishop of Millan with some other bishops of Lombardy, raised a faction against the Emperour, which he suppresst by taking in of Millan, Parma, and the other rebellious towns, and by banishing the seditious bishops. So having quieted Lombardy, he returnes to Germany, and puts his sonne in possession of Burgundy. *Hermannus* Duke of Suevia being dead of the plague in Italy, the Emperour be-
1032. 1 stows that Dukedome on *Otho* nephew to *Otho* the third, Emperour by his sister, at last he dyed suddenly at Utricht in Frisia the 15 yeare of his reign, the year before dyed St. *Cunigund*, and St. *Stephen*, king of Hungary. *Conradus* was a valiant and wise Prince, he shewed princely magnanimity in his warre against *Misece* king of Poland, whom *Vdalricus* the Bohemian tooke prisoner, when hee fled to him for shelter. The Emperour hating the treachery of him that did betray his trust, would not countenance the Traitour, nor receive the King as a prisoner. Hee was buryed at Spire in the Church which he built himself.

About this time in *Ferdinand* the Great, were united the kingdomes of Castil, Navar, and Legido, by the marriage of *Sanctia* the onely sister and heir of *Veremund*, and at last *Aragon* also by the death of *Ramirus* his base brother. In England to *Canutus* succeeded his sonne *Harald*, who reigned but 4 yeares, in which time hee banished his stepmother *Emme*, and put out the eyes of *Alfred* her sonne by *Ethelred*, and cast him into a loathsome prison, where he dyed. In Scotland king *Donald* did homage to *Canutus* for Cumberland. Hee was murthered by *Macbeth* his cousin german, who got himselfe to be proclaimed king. The Danes had so many overthrowes in Scotland, that they vowed never to returne thither in a hostile manner; for not onely were they destroyed by the sword, but many of them were poysoned with the juice of seeds of *Solanum somniferum*, an hearb we call Nightshade mingled with their bread and wine.

CHAP.

An. Christi

CHAP. VIII.

The affaires of the Eastern Empire under Argyropolus, Michael, Calaphates, Zoe, Theodora, *and* Monomachus. 2. *Of the Turkes and Popes of those times.* 3. *Of the Polonian, Hungarian, English, Scottish, and other affairs.*

Constantine the Greek Emperour being dead, *Romanus* the third, called *Argyropolus*, from his too great bounty, or rather prodigality, succeeded. Hee to ingratiate himselfe with the people took off the tribute, which they called *allelengium*; imposed on all rich men by *Basil*. This was to bee paid by wealthy men to the children of those souldiers which had dyed in the warres to confirme his title. He put away his wife, and married with barren *Zoe* the daughter of *Constantine*, she being 50 yeares old, and he 60. He inriched the bishops who had been beggered before: and banished *Theodora Zoes* sister into an Island upon suspition: and sent *Constantine Diogenes* for affecting the Empire into a strong tower, where he killed himselfe by leaping from a high window, lest he should be forced to discover others that were of the plot with him. He beat the Saracens at Sea, but was beat by them on the land: for as hee was striving to recover the townes of Syria, which his predecessour had carelessely lost, he was overcome and forced to flye to Antioch; whereas hee might have had these townes without losse of bloud, had hee hearkened to reason rather then to ambition, whilest he strived to extort that by force, which was proffered in love; yet by the help of *Amiras* of Tripolis, who had fallen off from the Egyptians, he tooke in two castles in Syria: but could doe no good against the Saracens in Sicily nor against the Normans in Apulia being aided by *Conradus Cæsar*. Under him *George Maniaces* took Edessa by storm, where finding the Epistle which as they say Christ wrote with his owne hand to King *Algarus*, he sent it to Constantinople: but shortly after this *Romanus* by exactions oppressed the people: and because hee could not make his old barren wife fruitfull, hee began to slight her, at which the libidinous woman being impatient, began to dote upon *Michael* the Paphlagonian. This the Emperour suspected, but *Michael* by oaths denyed there was any affection betweene *Zoe* and him, for which perjury he was taken with the Falling-sickness, which abated *Romanus* his suspition; for hee thought that *Zoe* could not affect one troubled with that disease: but at last *Romanus* was poysoned by *Zoe*, and being one day in the bath, the adulterer held downe his head in the water, till hee was almost stifled, and then being laid in his bed, dyed immediately, having reigned 5 yeares, and 6 moneths, to whom by *Zoes* help succeeded *Michael*.

Michael for his adultery and murther is rewarded with the Eastern Empire, at first he shewed himselfe a good Governour, but not so good a Scholar as his predecessour, who was skilled in the Greek tongue, in Philosophy, and in the laws. All the while that *Michael* was Emperour, his Dominions were vexed with comets, plagues, siccity, sterility, earthquakes and locusts, which so devoured the fruites of the earth, that the Inhabitants were faine to change their habitations: these locusts were by a strong winde carryed into the Hellespont, and there drowned, but after they were left dry upon the shoare, they revived, and for 3 yeares together wasted Thracia, till at last they were destroyed at Pergamus. At first *Michael* made much of *Zoe*, till hee was throughly setled, afterward he kept her up so close, that all her servants were removed from her, and none suffered to see her, or speak with her, but by leave of the Captaine of the watch, who examined the cause of their comming. Some thinke *Michael* was visited with an evill spirit, which to palliate, he called the Falling-sickness. Hee made three yeares peace with the *Amiras* of Egypts widow. Under him *George Maniaces* by the help of France recovered all Sicily from the Saracens, after they had possest it 230 yeares, who were at civill warres among themselves. But *Stephen* foolishly let the Sultan escape, for which being sharply reproved by *Maniaces*, hee was accused by *Stephen* as if he had aimed at the Empire. Upon this *George* is imprisoned,

1034.

An. Christi and *Stephen* made Governour of Sicily, who in a short time loſt it all againe; *Michael* falling into an Hydropſie, and ſo unfit for government, and being touched
1041. in conſcience for his murther and adultery, entred into a Monaſtery, where hee dyed, having firſt named for his ſucceſſour *Michael Calaphates*, his nephew by his ſiſter, he reigned 7 yeares. In his time a Thracian woman killed a certain ſtranger with his own ſword, for offering to raviſh her, which fact was ſo approved by the Thracians, that they crowned her with garlands, and flung out his body into the ſtreets, who as a ſelf-murtherer lay there unburyed.

Michael Calaphates the ſonne of *Stephen* who loſt Sicily, was adopted ſucceſſor by *Paphlago*, and confirmed by *Zoe*, who made him ſwear, he would be faithfull and loving to her, but he quickly forgot his oath and duty. For he baniſhed *Zoe*, and depoſed his Vncle *John* from his Government, by whoſe help he obtained the Empire, when he fell on his knees to *Zoe*, beſeeching her to confirm *Michael*'s adoption. He emaſculated moſt of his kindred: but for this his inſolency, the people of Conſtantinople roſe in armes againſt him, calls home *Zoe* with her ſiſter *Theodora*, makes them lay downe their monaſticall habit, and aſſume the imperiall; in the tumult 3000 Citizens were ſlaine by the Prætorian Guard, yet the Citizens prevailed who thruſt *Michael* with his uncle *Conſtantine* into a Monaſtery, and then put out their eyes, and drove them out of the City. Not long after old *Zoe* marryed againe to *Conſtantine Monomachus* whoſe former wife was the nephew of *Romanus Argyropolus*, him *Michael* had baniſhed upon ſuſpition of his too much familiarity with *Zoe*. But now hee is called home, with his wife *Sclerena*: ſo now the Empire is guided by one man and three women.

1042. This *Conſtantine Monomachus* is confirmed in the Empire, which he much weakned by his prodigall waſting of the treaſure, which made him lay heavy taxes on the borderers of the Empire, to keep off forraigners, but the borderers grew careleſſe, and let all break in that would, when they ſaw the treaſure exhauſted, and the burthen lye on them, they knew their condition could not be worſe under ſtrangers. *Michael* Governour of Dyrrachium, (now Durazzo a City in Macedonia on the Adriatic,) under *Monomachus* was killed with 40000 ſouldiers by the Scythians, who had waſted the Triballians and Servians people in Meſia joining upon Pontus. *George Maniaces*, was animated by his Army to invade the Empire, which he did; but he was ſlaine in Bulgaria; though his Army had the better of the Imperialiſts, and ſo this war ended. *Leo Torentius* kinſman to *Monomachus* did alſo enter in competition for the Empire, which *Monomachus* perceiving, cauſed him to be ſhaved with intent to put him in a Monaſtery. But hee being well beloved by the Macedonians, was received at Adrianopolis, where hee quickly raiſed an Army, with which hee beſiegeth Byzantium, and had taken it, but that he was dull and neglected his opportunity, permitting the Emperours Forces to increaſe, by which in divers battels he was overthrowne, and at laſt taken alive by his enemies, who thruſt out his eyes. *Vladomirus* Prince of Ruſſia, for having had one of his men killed at Byzantium in a quarrell, raiſed an Army of 100000, which in boats made of one peece of timber, called Monoxyla hee brought afore Conſtantinople; conditions of peace were offered him, which hee refuſed, therefore his Army and Fleet in Gods juſt judgements were utterly overthrown. The Boſſini a people of the Eaſt, were ſubdued by *Monomachus*.

At this time the Turkes were grown ſo ſtrong, having taken Babylon, and ſubdued Media, that they ſend an Embaſſie to the Emperour *Monomachus* offering to make a league with him, conditionally that he will become tributary to the Sultan, but the Embaſſadour was ſlighted, and ſent back without any anſwer; whereupon the Turkes overrun the Eaſtern Provinces, even to the Sea Coaſt of Byzantium, where they encampe over againſt the City. *Monomachus* had lately ſubdued the Pazinacæ a people of Scythia; and having converted them to Chriſtianity, placed them in Bulgaria: he ſends 15000 of theſe to Iberia to fight againſt the Turkes; who had taken *Lipanitus* the Iberian King priſoner, and made him ſwear never to raiſe armes againſt the Sultan any more. But theſe

Pazinacæ

Pazinacæ would go no further then Chryſopolis, therefore they ſwim their horſes over the Helleſpont, and join themſelves to their country men, waſting Thracia, Macedonia, and other parts neer Conſtantinople: at laſt, after divers skirmiſhes, they make a league for 30 yeares: in the meane time the Turkes make havock of all without control; for the borders lay open, being the Garriſons were diſcharged for want of pay. But the Turkiſh conqueſts were a little ſtopped by a victory obtained againſt them by the Preſident of Media, and by the civill warre that fell out betweene the Sultan of Perſia and his brother *Abraham*. *An. Chriſti*

Monomachus being long troubled with the Gowt, fell at laſt into a Pleuriſie and dyed, having reigned almoſt 13 yeares. He left the Empire to *Theodora Zoe's* ſiſter, who dyed not long before, being 70 yeares old, Shee reigned alone almoſt 2 yeares: ſo finding her ſelfe aged and ſickly, by the intreaty of the Peers, ſhe names *Michael Stratioticus* for her ſucceſſour and then dyed. To Pope *John* the nineteenth or twentyeth ſucceeded *Benedict* the eight or ninth, who ſate 13 yeares. But his chair was invaded by *Sylveſter* the third, who ſate one moneth, and then was forced to ſurrender his pontificate to *Benedict* again, and in this ſchiſm *Gregory* the ſixth is choſen, who ſate 2 years: ſo that now Rome is like the three-headed *Cerberus*. After them came *Clemens* the ſecond, who ſate 9 moneths: and after him *Damaſcus* the ſecond, who was Pope 23 dayes; then came *Leo* the ninth, who ſate 5 yeares. About theſe times *Caſimir* of a Monk and Deacon became King of Poland, being the next heir, with whoſe orders and vowes the Pope diſpenſed. Queen *Rixa* the mother of this *Caſimir*, for her miſ-government was fain to flye from the fury of the people, with this her young ſonne; for not onely had ſhee incenſed her own ſubjects, but the Ruſſians alſo who broke in upon the North, and the Bohemians who pillaged the South part of Poland. In memory of this diſpenſation given to *Caſimir*, the Polonian Knights, at certain ſolemnities in the Church uſe to weare long white ſurpluſſes, after the manner of Prieſts and Deacons; the Plebeians were taxed by the Poll to pay yearely one penny towards the maintenance of a perpetuall light in Saint *Peters* Church: they were alſo injoyned to bee ſhaved on the crowne like Monkes, and to weare ſhort haire. 1054. 1055.

Berengarius the Archdeacon broached his doctrine againſt Tranſubſtantiation, which afterward he recanted, whether willingly or by force, is doubtfull. The dignity of Cardinalls began about this time to be in requeſt. At Rome was found a Gyants body uncorrupted, which being ſet up right, was higher then the City walls: Its Epitaph was this, *Here lyeth Pallas the ſonne of Evander, killed by Turnus his Lance.* The Hungarians fell off again to Pelagianiſm, and killed the Clergy: but *Andrew* the fourth King of Hungary, made it death for any man in his Kingdome to profeſſe Paganiſm.

In England *Hardiknut* ſon of *Knut* by Queene *Emme* ſucceeded to *Harold*, whoſe body he cauſed to be untombed, the head ſtruck off, and flung into the Thames. He puniſheth ſuch as were guilty of the death of *Alfred* his brother by the mother. Hee offended the whole State by grievous taxes; he called home *Edward* his other halfe brother out of Normandy; then dyed ſuddenly the ſecond year of his reign: and in him ended the Daniſh Kingdome in England, having laſted but 26 yeares under theſe 3 laſt Kings. *Edward* the Confeſſour is crowned. He was ſon of *Ethelred*, and is commended for his gentleneſſe, continency, and piety, who with his touch cured certain diſeaſes. Yet the Earl *Godwin* made inſurrections againſt him, becauſe hee favoured the French too much that were about him, being led altogether by them: till at laſt hee made his peace with the King; whereupon the French forſook both Court and Kingdome: which occaſioned the firſt difference with France. This Prince having reigned 24 yeares dyed, his corps was interred in the Church of Weſtminſter, which hee had founded a little before. In Scotland *Macbethus* having treacherouſly murthered King *Duncan*, invaded the Kingdome, and for 17 years poſſeſſed it, untill *Malcolumbus* the ſlain Kings ſonne being aſſiſted by King *Edward* of England with 10000 men, recovered it from *Macbethus*. 1042. 1065.

An. Christi.

Chap. IX.

The troublesome affaires of the West, under Henry *the third, and* Henry *the fourth. 2. The affaires of Italy, Spain, Portugal, Sicily. 3. The Popes of these times.*

1039. HEnry the third, firnamed the *Black*, from the colour of his hair, succeeded to his Father *Conradus*, against him *Vratislaus* king of Bohemia made warre by the assistance of *Peter* King of Hungary; in this warre *Henry* lost the chief Commanders of his first Army. His expedition against the Bohemians was frustrated, because they had stopped all the passages and high-wayes by cutting downe the woodes. But in his second expedition hee forced them to submit, and to pay the annuall tribute which they had refused. Hee had another war against the Hungarians, who had deposed King *Peter* grandchilde to *Stephen* for being too favourable to strangers, and for maintaining of Christian Religion: but pretending his mis-government, *Ovo* was the King they set up against him. *Henry* employes *Leopold* Marquisse of Austria, who having recovered a great part of Hungary, forced this new King to beg for peace and pardon, which was granted him: but afterward falsifying his oath and promise, hee renewed the war in which hee was utterly defeated, put to flight, and at last being apprehended, was brought to *Peter*, and was by the sentence of the Peeres of Hungary
1050. beheaded. But *Peter* would not bee induced to forsake Christianity and to professe Paganisme, wherefore the Hungarians conspired against him, and sent for his kinsman *Andrew* whom they had banished; him they made King, and put out *Peters* eyes, who shortly after dyed at *Alba Regia*.

After this *Henry* marryed with *Agnes* the daughter of *William* Prince of Pictavia: hee rejected the Musitians and Players that came to the wedding, thinking these fooleries farre below his imperiall gravity: but hee could not enjoy peace long; for *Godefrid* Duke of Lorrain entred into league with the French king, and with *Baldwin* of Flanders, to expell his brother *Gottello* out of his part of the Dukedome, that so hee might injoy all alone: this so incensed *Henry* that hee caused him to bee apprehended and imprisoned, yet upon his submission hee let him goe, and sent him with aid to Pope *Leo* the ninth against the Normans. In the meane while *Benedict* the ninth, *Sylvester* the third, and *Gregory* the sixth. Anti-Popes made such stirs in Rome and Italy, that the Emperor was forced to repaire thither, and to call a Synod at Sutrinum not far from Rome. In this *Benedict*, who had set up his residence in the Palace of Lateran, *Sylvester* at S. *Peters*, and *Gregory* at S. *Marks*, were all three deposed, and *Sindeger* or *Suideger* Bishop of Bamburg was elected, who was named afterward *Clemens* the second. In this Synod also was confirmed the former Act, that no Pope should be chosen without the Emperors consent.

After this *Henry* being crowned Emperour by this *Clement*, marcheth with his Army into the farther part of Italy, to compose the differences betweene the Normans and Lombards, some whereof were yet remaining there: so all things there being setled, Hee returnes for Germany; but before hee could get out of Italy Pope *Clement* the second is poysoned, and immediately after him Pope *Damasus*; therefore hee was faine to choose Pope *Leo* the ninth, who was the third hee chose before his departure from Italy. This *Leo* being afterward to stay in Rome, accompanies the Emperour into Germany, where in the Councell at Mints assembled there by *Henry*, the Pope was forced to submit and give way to the Bishop of the place, who claimed it as his due.

After *Henry* returned from Italy, hee made an expedition into Hungary, against *Andrew* their King, to revenge the death of *Peter*; but hee had no successe in this interprise: onely *Andrew* the King was slaine by a fall from his horse, and trode under foot. Hee banished *Conradus* of Bavaria, for his mis-government

ment, and for entering into league with the Hungarians, who at last made their peace with the Emperour by promising to pay a yeerly tribute, and to furnish him with Auxiliaries upon all occasions. *Conradus* dyed in his exile: whereupon *Henry* made his young sonne *Henry* the fourth Duke of Bavaria, being but 2 yeares old, and got him to bee declared Emperour. Then hee sent back Pope *Leo* into Italy with an Army under the conduct of *Godefrid* Duke of Lorrain to suppresse the Normans, who at first were put to flight, but recollecting their dispersed Forces overcame their overcommers. Shortly after *Godefrid* marryed with *Beatrix* the widow of *Boniface* Marquise of Tuscia in Italy; *Henry* suspecting that *Godefrid* (whose Faith was wavering, and spirit ambitious) by this marriage aimed at the Empire, returnes with an Army into Italy to put a stop to *Godefrids* intentions; in the interim hee crownes his sonne at Aix, being 4 yeares old. Hee stayed a yeare in Italy, where having setled all things hee invades the Sclavi of Lusatia, by whom his army was totally routed, and he shortly after dyed of grief, after he had lived 40 years, and reigned 17: he was buryed at Spira neer his Father *Conradus*, he was a good and mild Prince: his first wife was daughter to the King of England, who dyed childlesse. His second wife *Agnes* bore him *Henry* the fourth.

An. Christi 1053. 1055. 1056.

This *Henry* the fourth was 7 yeares old, when his Father dyed; who committed to his wife the care of this Prince: and his education to *Conradus* a Noble man of Suevia. Shee was also trusted with the Government of the Empire, which prudently shee managed for 5 yeares space: but afterward being deposed by the plot of some Princes in Saxony, shee lived privately in a Monastery. The young Emperour is conveyed fraudulently into Saxony by the Bishop of Colen. *Ecbert* Marquisse of Saxony, and *Otto* the Saxon who lately had obtained Bavaria of the Empresse, pretending that they would breed the youth in Military Discipline, and State affairs, which he could not learne under his mother, but rather effeminateness; whereas indeed their aime was, either to procure to themselves the Empire, or at least the administration thereof during the childes minority. In the interim the souldiers grew licentious and outrageous for want of discipline, and having got to themselves a fit Captaine *Otto* the brother, begot of *William* Marquisse of Thuringia by a Concubine, they began to rob and plunder Saxony, this theevish Army of robbers was at last defeated by *Bruno* and *Ecbert* brothers, Marquisses of Saxony, being assisted by the Emperours Forces, the battell was fought above Mesburg, where the young Emperour was placed a little way off from the Army, as a terrour to the enemy, and a spectatour of the victory. In this conflict *Bruno* was slaine, and so was *Otto* the ring-leader of the robbers, whose inheritance in Thuringia was seised on by *Ecbert* Marquisse of Saxony, who erected a Colledge of Canons at Naumburg, and translated thither from Cyzicum, the Episcopall Seat.

Henry being 13 yeares of age, undertooke the managing of the State; and first hee assisted *Salomon* his kinsman King of Hungary, against *Bela* who thrust him out of his kingdome: this *Bela's* Army *Henry* overthrew, and reestablished *Salomon* in his kingdome: then hee waged warre against the Sclavi of Lusatia with good successe; but the Saxons storming that the Empire should bee any where, except among themselves conspired against the young Emperour, the authour of this conspiracy was *Otho* Duke of Bavaria, whom a little before *Henry* had sent into Italy with the Bishops of Colen and Trent, to confirm the Italians in their allegiance to the Emperour, and to demand the ordinary tribute. *Otho* by insinuating himselfe with the Princes of Italy, brought a suspition upon himselfe, that hee aimed at the Empire. The chiefe actors with him in this conspiracy were the Bishops of Magdeburg and Halberstad, with some Dukes and Marquisses. But he quickly overthrew their Forces by the help of *Rodulphus* of Suevia, and others. This *Rodulphus* being desirous to take up the differences, and end the war, interposed himselfe as a Mediator between the Emperour and them, but they rejecting all meanes of reconciliation, were apprehended and imprisoned, afterward

An. Christi ward escaping out of prison, they grow more eager and fierce against the Emperour then before. *Otho* the Bavarian was not indeed in the battell, yet he was convicted of treason against the Emperours life, wherefore hee lost Bavaria: which caused him to raise new Forces against *Henry* out of Saxony and other places.

1073. Pope *Gregory* the seventh, called *Hildebrand* before, was chosen without the Emperours consent against the ancient lawes of election, *Henry* to bee revenged of this wrong; raiseth an Army, but hee was pacified by *Gregory* for the present, who not long after makes a decree, that henceforth the Emperour should have no hand in the Popes election, and withall cites *Henry* to make his appearance in the Court of Rome, to answer to such things as should bee objected against him, concerning his wicked life and simoniacall practises in permitting all Bishoprieks and Church-dignities to be bought and sold. At this the Bishops of Germany stormed, but the Saxons were glad, who assist the Pope against

1076. *Henry*. Hee therefore to cleere himselfe repaires to Rome in the midst of Winter, that the sentence of excommunication against him might bee taken off. Hee was forced to stay from morning to evening bare-foot, and without any food before the Popes Palace, ere hee could bee admitted into his presence, which was not till the fourth day after, then being admitted, and sharply reproved by the Pope, hee is injoyned to dismisse his Army, to forbeare medling any more with the government of the Empire, or else to hold it of the Pope, and withall to call a Parliament. The more fierce was *Gregory* against him, because hee had called a Synod at Wormes: wherein *Gregory* was condemned of Simonie. To cleare himself of which he took the Sacrament, imprecating against himself sudden death, if hee were guilty of the crime of Simonie, and wishing the Emperour to doe the like, which he refused, affirming that he would make it appear in the Parliament, how he had discharged his duty in managing the Empire.

But the Pope fearing lest *Henry* should gather strength again, and revenge the affronts put upon him, sends his Decree to bee proclaimed in Germany, whereby *Henry* is excommunicate, and by the instigation of the Saxons a crown of gold is sent to *Rodulphus* Duke of Suevia, with this inscription; *The rock gave*

1080. *to* Peter, *and* Peter *to* Rodulphus *the Diadem*. *Rodulphus* upon the perswasions of the Bishops of Mints and Colen, that hee was bound to obey the Pope and not to keepe Faith to him who was excommunicate; accepts the Title of Cæsar, and is crowned at Mints; and so takes possession of the Empire; forgetting what favours hee had received heretofore from the Emperour. Then he prepares an Army against him, relying on his owne and the Saxons power, with whom joined divers Bishops and Dukes. But the Francs and others abhorring this perfidiousnesse, under Duke *Godefridus Bilioneus* in the Emperours absence at Rome, raise an Army to defend his right. *Henry* understanding by the Bishop of Strasburg what was done, steales away out of Rome, sends a new Duke into Suevia, drives *Rodulphus* his Garrisons out of Mints, encounters with the Saxons in nine severall battells, in the fourth whereof *Rodulphus* is defeated, deadly wounded, and his arme cut off; which when it was presented to him as hee was dying, confessed that with this hand he had confirmed his faith to *Henry* which he falsified, and so accusing the Bishops for their wicked counsels, dyed. When it was told the Emperour that *Rodulphus* was richly intombed. *I envy not that honour to him* (saith he) *but wish that all my enemies were thus entombed.*

Rodulphus being slaine *Henry* converts all his force and fury against the Pope, from whom hee meant to recover his rights, which hee had invaded, but first hee calls a Synod at Brixia, wherein hee causeth *Gregory* to be excomunicate and deposed, and imprisoned in the Castle of St. Angelo, having named for his suc-

1084. cessour *Clement* Bishop of Ravenna: whom hee brought to Rome after two years siege, and there placed him being consecrated in the Pontificall chair, and was by the same Pope declared Emperour, and crowned with his wife *Bertha*. In this expedi-

expedition *Henry* corrected the Normans for assisting the Pope. But the Saxons after *Rodulphus* his death renew their Forces, and make *Hermannus* Prince of Lorrain Emperour by the Popes command. He fought with *Henry*, and overcame him neere the town of Wurceburg: but hee was quickly driven thence into Saxony, where he thought to renew the warre, but was forsaken by his souldiers. Hee at last by the fall of a gate which hee was besieging was slaine with many others. After him *Ecbert* Marquisse of Saxony invaded the Empire: but hee shortly after was slaine by *Henry*'s guard in a Mill, whither he had fled. Thus the fury of the Saxons was by so many bad successes somewhat abated; but the Popes indignation increased: for *Urban* the second, stirred up against *Henry*, his sonne *Conradus* by his first wife; who by his father had beene made Governour of Italy, but he being taken away by untimely death, *Paschalis* the second sets up his other sonne *Henry* against him whom his Father had named his successour in the Empire. Hee by the help of the Saxons, wrung the Empire from his Father, whom the Bishop of Mints in the presence of his sonne disgracefully devested of all his imperiall ornaments. But whilest the old man went about to raise new Forces to revenge this wrong, he dyed at Leodium the 56 yeare of his age, and the 49 of his reign; whose Body was not buryed in 5 yeares space after his death, at last it was removed from Leodium to Spira, where it was intombed neer his Father. This war against *Henry* lasted 38 yeares from the time he went out of Rome till he dyed. He had two wives, by the first he had *Conradus*, who having marryed *Rogers* daughter of Normandy, called himself King of Italy, but shortly after dyed, and was buryed at Florence He had another son *Henry* the fifth, who succeeded him.

An. Christi 1088. 1105. 1106.

In *Henry* the fourths time divers Bishops & Princes of Germany made an expedition into the Holy land, but with ill successe, for most of them were destroyed by the Turks & Saracens, for of 7000 scarse 2000 returned home. In Spain *Anfus* king of Gallicia after some years siege took from the Saracens there greatest City Toledo, and there established the Christian Religion. This age produced the Carthusians by *Bruno* of Colen: and the Cistertians by *Robert* Abbat of Molismum: the old *Benedictines* were much degenerated from the rules of their Ancestors. We shewed before that the Normans had taken Apulia from the Greeks; *William* the son of *Tancredus* was the first Prince there, then *Drogo*, to whom succeeded *Humfrid*. After him came *Robert Wiscardus*, who were all brothers: this *Robert* helped the Pope against the Emperour, and subdued Calabria with Sicily, whereupon *Gregory* the seventh excommunicated him; but afterward he submitted to the Pope, and was contented to hold these Provinces in fee of the Church, paying a yearly revenew to the Pope. The next year *Robert* with 15000 overthrew *Alexius* the Greek Emperours great Army of 100 and 70000. Hereupon *Alexius* for a great summe of money procures *Henry* the fourth to invade *Roberts* Territories, but he imployes the money against Pope *Gregory* the seventh, whom he shuts up in prison; takes possion of the Palace of Lateran where he placeth *Guibert* the Anti-Pope. *Robert* returning with his Army, drives home the Emperour to Germany, punisheth the rebellious City, sets *Gregory* free, and brings him to Salernum where he dyed: and shortly after followed the death of *Robert*, who left the Dukedomes of Calabria and Apulia to his son *Rogerius*.

1074. 1080. 1085.

About these times *Henry* by extraction a French man having marryed *Theresia* the daughter of *Alphonsus* the sixth King of Castile, with her got the Earldome of Lusitania or Portugall. He by his valour drove out and subdued the Saracens, and so obtained the principality of Lusitania, which was the beginning of the kingdom of Portugal: The Temple of the holy Sepulchre, which was demolished by Sultan *Calipha*, is rebuilt by the permission of *Daber* Caliph of Egypt, at the cost of Monochus and Argyropilus. The Vandals and Sclavi having killed *Gotschalus* their Governour with all religious persons they revolt again to Paganism, which is now the third time. The Church service or Liturgy in Spain was compiled by S. *Leander*

1100.

An. Christi. 1086. Leander and S. Isidor called *Mozarabum* is changed by *Gregory* the seventh. One *Peter* an Eremit, and afterward a Captain in the Holy War, was the first that taught to pray upon beads. The Dukedome of Bohemia is now erected into a Kingdome: for *Vratislaus* becauſe he ſubdued *Leopoldus* Marquiſſe of Auſtria, is by *Henry* the Emperour at Mintz declared King; and crowned by *Gilbert* Archbiſhop of Trevers. The Italians by the perſwaſion of Pope *Victor* invaded Africa, where they killed 100000 Saracens, and overthrew their chief Cities. Abſtinence from fleſh on Saturdayes is injoyned by *Gregory* the ſeventh. The States of Venice and Genua contend for the maſtery of the Sea, both of them having done good ſervice for the Holy War. But at laſt the Venetians obtaine the totall command of the Sea. *Roger* Duke of Normandy was the firſt King of Sicily, Apulia and Calabria: to whom ſucceeded his ſonne *William* ſurnamed the *Wicked*.

To Pope *Leo* the ninth ſucceded *Victor* the ſecond, 2 years after him came *Stephen* the ſeventh, by ſome the 9, by others the 10, he was brother to *Gotfrid* of Lorrain. He being ſent to Byzantium cals a Synod, at which becauſe the Emperor and Patriarch would not be preſent the Cardinal departed, & with Apoſtolicall indignation, beat the duſt from his Sandals, he was choſen Pope after this without the Emperors ſuffrage: and ſubjected the Church of Millan to the See of Rome, having been independent 200 yeares. He ſate but 7 months, to him ſucceeded *Benedict* the ninth or tenth, who having ſate 9 months, was thruſt out by *Gerard* Biſhop of Florence, called *Nicolaus* the ſecond, though ſome make theſe two diſtinct men. He cauſed *Berengarius* openly confeſſe that the true body of Chriſt was eaten in the Sacrament, which opinion was confirmed by *Lanfrancus*, who wrote Bookes to this purpoſe. He was Pope 3 yeares, to whom ſucceeded *Alexander* the ſecond, who had been Biſhop of Luca: againſt him was ſet up *Cadulus* Biſhop of Parma, who comming twice to Rome with a great Army, thought to obtain the Pontificate by force, but could not. *Alexander* ſate 11 years, his ſucceſſour was *Gregory* the ſeventh, who was Pope 12 years. He could ſhake fire out of his ſleeves when hee was angry: he inhibited the marriage of Clergy men, which *Henry* the fourth commanded; in thoſe dayes marryed Clerks were called Henrician hereticks. Againſt this *Gregory Henry* advanced to the chair one *Guabert* or *Gilbert*, aſſuming the name of *Clemens* the third, who was Pope (but not without oppoſition) 17 years: after him came *Victor* the third, who ſate one year, and then was poyſoned, to whom ſucceeded *Vrban* the ſecond, who ſate 13 years. He animated the weſtern Princes to undertake the Holy War.

CHAP. X.

The Eaſtern affaires under Stratioticus, Ducas, Diogenes, Michael, Botoniates, *and* Alexius. 2. *The Holy War and Kings of Jeruſalem, and new orders of Knighthood.* 3. *The affaires of Cyprus, Portugall, England, Scotland, and the Popes of this time.*

1056. IN the Greek Empire to *Theodora* ſucceeded *Michael Stratioticus*, ſo called, becauſe a meer ſouldier, being unskilfull in Government, and all things elſe; for which cauſe he was choſen by the Eunuchs of the Palace; that he bearing the title, they might in effect rule the Empire. But he ſlighting the ſouldiers, and Nobility, he being very aged, beſides his want of skill, the Army choſe *Iſaacus Comnenus* to be Emperour, againſt whom *Stratioticus* ſends *Theodorus*, with an Army, but he was defeated by *Comnenus*, whereupon *Stratioticus* willing to make his peace, ſends to aſſure *Comnenus* that he will make in his laſt Will him heir of the Empire, with which *Comnenus* ſeemed to be contented, till he ſaw that *Stratioticus* under hand did bribe the people and Nobility, to the end they would not give their conſent to his election. Therefore *Comnenus* ſends the Patriarch to degrade

degrade him, who as he was perſwading *Stratioticus* to part willingly with the Empire, asked the Patriarch what reward he ſhould have for leaving an earthly kingdome; he anſwered, that he ſhould receive an heavenly for it: Vpon this, hee reſigned the Empire, having reigned one year, and then takes himſelf to a Monaſticall life. *An. Chriſt.* 1057.

Comnenus ſucceeded, who firſt depoſed the Patriarch that advanced him, then fals upon the Church revenues, to fill up his exhauſted treaſure. He made warre upon the Hungarians, and Boſſini, and forced them to beg for peace. One time as he was hunting, he was ſo affrighted with the ſight of an horrible Boare (which ſome thinke was an apparition) and with ſudden lightning and thunder that he fell from his horſe, after hee had reigned 2 yeares, and 3 months, and having reſigned the Empire to *Conſtantine Ducas*, he betooke himſelf to a private life.

Ducas was ſo covetous that to ſpare charges he disbanded a great part of his Army, and garriſons, giving thereby boldneſſe to the neighbouring Nations to invade that little of the Empire which was left; whereupon the Uzzi a people of Scythia, being 60000 in number paſt over the Iſther, and invaded Macedonia and Greece. *Ducas* being deſtitute of ſouldiers for want of pay, betakes himſelfe to prayers and tears, by which armes God was overcome, who ſent a plague among the Uzzi, which ſwept away moſt of them: the remnant were deſtroyed by the Bulgarians: theſe calamities were forewarned by an earthquake, which overthrew divers houſes and Temples: there ſhined alſo a Comet as big as the Moon at the full, but as the Moon increaſed, this decreaſed and vaniſhed. *Ducas* advanced *Johannes Xiphilinus* of Trapezuntium to the Patriarchate, affirming that he had rather obtain honor by ſcholars then by ſouldiers. Having reigned 7 yeares and 6 months, he dyed of a lingring diſeaſe in the 61 year of his reign: he recommended the Empire to his wife *Eudocia*, whom he cauſed to ſweare that ſhee would never marry again, nor leave the Empire to any, except to his three ſons, *Michael*, *Andronicus*, and *Conſtantine*. Shee therefore undertook the Government, but finding that the Empire was much weakened, and the enemies thereof increaſing dayly, and that there were need of a ſtronger defender then her ſelf, reſolves to break her oath, and ſo marryeth 7 months after her husbands death with *Romanus Diogenes*, a good ſouldier, who became Emperour ſhortly after. 1059. 1067.

Diogenes againſt his promiſe made to *Eudocia*, excludes her out of the Government, and undertakes the Empire alone, that he might without oppoſition recover the honour of the Eaſtern Empire, almoſt loſt, by reaſon the Turkes had invaded Aſia, which they were like to carry cleer away having no Garriſons to reſiſt them. Therefore he marcheth into Aſia againſt the Forces of *Aſpaſales* Caliph of Babylon, whoſe ſeat was now in Perſis, he by his Sultans had ſent two Armies, one into Cappadocia which he waſted, the other into Syria: with theſe *Diogenes* encounters, defeates them, takes Hierapolis and Alepus, and ſeiſeth on their plunder, which they had laid up in Neocæſeara. His next expedition was into Cappadocia, where he had divers encounters with the Barbarians, who by the help of the Armenians overthrew the greateſt part of them. After this preſuming on his good ſucceſſe, he would needs fight with *Azan* the Sultan, who offered him honourable conditions of peace, but he rejected them. He fought ſtoutly with the Turkes, then towards the Evening returned into his Camp. *Andronicus* the brother of *Conſtantine Ducas*, ſuppoſing *Diogenes* had fled; withdrawes his Forces ſuddenly, and leaves him for a prey to his enemy: but hee perceiving how he was betrayed, reſolves to fight again notwithſtanding, which he did courageouſly, and killed many of the Turkes, but at laſt by the fall of his horſe which was wounded, he was taken by the enemy and brought to the Sultan, who firſt troad upon his neck, and then commiſerating his caſe, uſed him with all reſpect, and having made a league with him, after he had honoured him with divers rich preſents, he lets him goe home, where hee found harder uſage; for being hated by *Eudocia* and her children, in his abſence, the Empire was conferred on *Michael* the eldeſt ſon of *Ducas*, who beſieged *Diogenes* in Adena, then cauſed

An. Christi caused him to deliver up the towne, upon assurance that hee should receive no hurt, but *Michael* against his oath, thrust out his eyes, his head for want of good looking to putrified, and so he dyed, having reigned almost 4 years.

1071. To him *Michael* succeeded, whose sirname was *Parapinacius* from *pinatium* the fourth part of *medymnus*, which was a measure equall almost to two of our bushels, because in his time was a great famine, in which this measure of corn was sold at a deer rate. A little before this famine was born a monster with Goats feet, and one eye in his forehead, upon which followed a great plague. This *Michael* gave himselfe more to study then to government, under *Psellus* the Philosopher whose Arithmetick is yet extant; hence it came to passe that the Eastern Empire was ruined for want of a good Emperour. For the Turkes subdued all the countreys about Pontus, and erected a Kingdome, called yet Turcomania. Towards the West the Croats or Heneti overrun all the countrey even to Byzantium, and at last seated themselves in that part of Illyris or Pannonia, which of old was called Liburnia now Croatia. The Crabats or Servians infested Bulgaria. The Empire being thus without a guide, *Nicephorus Botoniates*, who was descended of *Nicephorus Phocas*, enters into a league with the Turkes of Asia, and *Nicephorus Briennius* Duke of Dyrrachium sets up a new Kingdome in Thracia, *Botoniates* at the same time possesseth Nicæa. *Briennius* is overthrowne by *Ruselius Latinus*, wherefore *Botoniates* growing potent by the Turks power, made *Michael* give up his Empire which he did willingly, and entred into a Monastery, with his wife *Mary*, having reigned almost 7 yeares. In the Patriarchat to learned *Xiphilinus* succeeded *Cosmus* a dunce.

1078. *Botoniates* succeeds in the Empire, who first of all suppresseth *Briennius* and kills him, then he defeats *Constantine Ducas*, the sonne of *Michael* whom the Army had proclaimed Emperor at Chrysopolis: but the brothers *Alexii* conspired against *Botoniates*, and by the help of the French besiege Constantinople, which having taken, they raged promiscuously upon all ages and sexes. Then they thrust *Botoniates* into a Monastery, after he had reigned 3 yeares. So the

1081. Empire is divided among the brothers. *Alexius* he had the imperiall title and power, his brother *Isaacius* by a new name is called *Sebastocrator*: the third called *Adrian*, is named *Protosebastos*, and the youngest *Sebastos*. These four divided also the revenues of the Empire amongst them, so that there were not meanes left for the Emperour to resist an enemie.

Alexius wanting money fell to exactions and rapine, in stead of gold and silver coin, hee made use of brasse, yet would have all his taxes and tributes to bee paid in gold. Neer Epidamnum he received a great overthrow by the Normans under Duke *Robert*. He lost the Islands of Chius, Lesbus, Samus and Rhodes to the Turkes, under their Captain *Zacchabus*, who also tooke from the Greekes

1196. Creet and Cyprus. *Alexius* also had warres with the Bosini who overthrew him, and made him buy his peace, by assigning them some lands to dwell in. He was also defeated by *Godefrid* of Bullion in his expedition into the Holy land: he lived 70 yeares, and reigned 37. a little before his death all his friends forsook

1198. him, so finding himself slighted, dyed with grief, having first named his son *John* Emperour. His body was buryed without any solemnity: he was Co-Emperour with *Henry* the fourth.

In these Emperours time the Holy war was undertakan by *Godefrid* Duke of Lorrain with his brothers *Eustachius* and *Baldwin*, by *Robert* of Normandy, *Hugh* brother to *Philip* the French King, with divers others. *Peter* the Eremit had undertaken an expedition before this, but with ill successe, his Army which consisted of 40000, came to nothing, for they were utterly destroyed by *Solyman* the Turk, after they had suffered much by the Bulgarians, in their march towards Asia; there were also before *Godefrids* two other Armies sent, these were defeated by the Hungarians: but *Godefrid* had better successe, who having sold his patrimony, the Dukedome of Lorrain to the Bishop of Leodium, spent it all upon this expedition, which he undertooke about the middle of August,

and

and arrived with his whole Army before the end of that year at Conſtantinople. *An. Chriſti*
He muſtered his Army at Chalcedon now called Scutari, and found that it conſiſted of 600000 Foot, and 100000 horſe, their badge was a red Croſſe on their ſhoulder. The Turks had ſubdued all from Pontus to the Helleſpont in the ſpace of 40 yeares; the Greeks and Saracens being driven out thence; and both the Caliphs of Babylon and Egypt much weakened, they had alſo ſubdued Paleſtina, and taken in Jeruſalem: but this they did not enjoy above 8 yeares, for it was retaken again by the Saracens.

The firſt conflict the Chriſtians had was at Nicæa, with *Solyman* the Turkiſh Sultan, and firſt of that name, whoſe great Army they overthrew, and after 26 dayes ſiege took the town, and in it the Sultan *Solymans* wife. In 4 yeares ſpace they ſubdued Lycaonia, Cilicia, Syria, Meſopotamia, and Comagena, all the Turkes being either deſtroyed or fled: theſe victories ſo affrighted the Saracens, that the Calypha of Egypt, by Embaſſadours was glad to ſue for peace. They beſieged Antioch and after 9 months took it. But the Sultan *Belchiacor* ſent an other Army of Perſians, who beſieged the Chriſtians within the City, ſo that they were pinched with famine; the Greek Army ſent by *Alexius* to raiſe the ſiege, durſt not venture upon ſo numerous an Army of Saracens, wherefore the weſtern Chriſtians within perceiving they were in a deſperate condition made a furious ſally upon the enemy, whom they routed and put to the flight. The Saracens loſt here above 100000; but the Chriſtians ſhortly after this victory loſt 50000 by the plague; at laſt they beſiege Jeruſalem now in the Saracens poſ- 1099.
ſion; and after 38 dayes ſiege took it, not without much difficulty, for they were ſo famiſhed, that they went praying for 8 dayes together bare footed about the walls, and at length were animated to fall on again by a glittering Target which they ſaw in the air over Mount Sion. The City being taken, and ſo much bloud ſhed, that it came up to the horſes knees; *Godefrid* who firſt ſcaled the walls, was by generall conſent made King; but he would neither take the Title nor Crowne in that place, where our Saviour had been crowned with Thornes, where hee had ſuffered death, and ſo much diſhonour; yet there he eſtabliſhed the foundation of a new Kingdome, which the Saracens poſſeſſed about 360 yeares.

Baldwin the Kings brother was now in poſſeſſion of Cilicia, Comagena, and Meſopotamia, and was honoured with the Title of Earl of Edeſſa which is a City in Comagena called Rages in *Tobias*'s Hiſtory, at this day it is named Orpha. *Tancredus* nephew to *Guiſcardus* by his ſiſter, obtained the 1100.
Government of Tiberias. *Boemundus* Prince of Tarentum, who was one of the undertakers of this expedition, got the government of Antioch: But this yeare proved fatall to many Princes, for *Godefrid* King of Jeruſalem dyed, having reigned one year. *Boemundus* Duke of Antioch was taken by the Turkes, whom *Tancredus* Earl of Tiberias ſucceeded. *William Rufus* King of England was killed by chance. *Henry* of Lovan was ſlain in running a tilt. *Britiſlaus* King of Bohemia was murthered by a high way robber as he was returning from hunting.

To King *Godefrid* ſucceeded his brother *Baldwin* Earle of Edeſſa. He by the help of the Fleet of Genua took Cæſarea of Paleſtine, Ptolemais, Tripolis, and Berythus, with other townes, the third part of which is aſſigned to the Genuans. Apamea alſo and Laodicea townes of Syria, were taken about that time, and ſo was Carræ of Meſopotamia by *Boemund* (who had been ranſomed) and *Tancredus*. But they loſt it again, whileſt they were ſtriving for the ſuperiority of it. Hereupon *Boemund* returnes to Italy: but having married with *Conſtantia* the daughter of *Philip* King of France, he returns to Antioch. *Robert* Earl of Flanders with *Euſtachius* the Kings brother, goe back again to their owne countries. *Baldwin* having taken the Iſle Pharos in Egypt, after he had raigned 18 yeares dyed.

To him ſucceeded his couſin German *Baldunus de Burgo*: in his time was inſtituted

An. Christi stituted the order of the Knights of St. *John* of Jerusalem, afterward of Rhodes: these were to wait upon the King in his expeditions against the common enemy, to defend and enlarge the bounds of Christianity; to cleare all the wayes of Pilgrims to Jerusalem from theeves and robbers. These did good service whilest they were assisted by Christian Princes, but being forsaken by them, they were forced to give up Rhodes to the Turke, and to containe themselves within the small confines of Malta. After them sprung up two other Orders of sacred Knighthood: to wit, the Templars and Teutonics, the Templars had one *Hugo De Paganis*, and *Gaufred* for there Authours: these seated themselves in Jerusalem, and were to guard the pilgrims from the Sea side to Jerusalem, and back againe. But in processe of time they dispersed themselves into all parts of Christendome, aiming at nothing but wealth, greatnesse, and luxury, being quite degenerate from their first institution; so that the Christian Princes having aforehand plotted their destruction did suddenly at once extirpate them, after they had continued about 200 yeares, in the reigne of *Henry* the seventh Emperour. The chiefe Master of
1190. this Order had his seat at Jerusalem. The Teutonics from their profession and Symbole were called Marians, their beginning was at Ptolemais in the time of *Henry* the sixth Emperour, where certaine rich Citizens of Lubec and Breme built a large Hospitall for strangers who should be of that Order; from thence plantations were derived into Germany; their first Master was one *Henry Walpodius*. These Colonies growing numerous and wealthy, in the time of *Frederic* the second, subdued Prussia and Livonia, and kept out the barbarous Nations from these parts: but when these Knights grew loose, effeminate, and careless, Prussia and Livonia
1131. were torne from the Empire. King *Baldwin* having defeated the Turkes at Damascus, and the Saracens of Egypt, and taken in Tyrus, dyed in the 13 yeare of his reign.

Baldwin being dead, the Princes fell at variance among themselves, which increased the strength and courage of their enemies. *Fulco* son in law to *Baldwin* is made king, in whose time there was nothing but civill jarres about the principality of Antioch: he having reigned 11 years dyed at Ptolemais, by a fall from his horse in hunting, leaving two young sons *Baldwin* and *Almericus*.

Baldwin was assisted by *Conradus* the Emperour by land, and *Lewis* the French
1162. King by Sea. But *Conradus* having lost his Army in the siege of Damascus and Ascalon returnes home. *Baldwin* having at last taken Ascalon, dyed at Berythus the 24 yeare of his reigne: to whom succeeded his brother *Almericus*, he invaded Egypt, and fought with *Saracon* the Sultan, who had driven the Caliph out of Egypt. Hee had warres also with his successour *Saladin*, but with no successe. *Almericus* dyed the 12 yeare of his reigne, leaving a young son *Baldwin*, who being leprous, and despairing of ever having children, made *Baldwin* sonne of *William* Marquisse of Montferrat, his sisters sonne, his successour, whom *Guido* his Father in law poysoned, that hee with his wife *Sibylla* might obtaine the Kingdome, whereupon *Raimundus* the young Kings tutor made warre against *Guido*, hee to strengthen his cause drawes *Saladine* out of Egypt, which was the overthrow of that kingdome of Jerusalem, for hee took upon surrender Ptolemais,
1187. Asotus, Berythus, and Ascalon: and after one moneths siege Jerusalem, 88 yeares after it was taken by *Godefrid*.

Sibylla with her foure children were killed in the tumult, her sister *Isabella* the wife of *Humfredus Toronius* was carryed away by *Conradus* Marquisse of Montferrat, hoping in her right to obtaine the kingdome: but hee was murthered, and *Henry* Earle of Campania and Lord of Tyrus, marryed with *Isabella*, but refused the title of King of Jerusalem, because *Guido Lusignanus* a French man laid claime to it in the right of *Sybillas* children, whose Father in law hee was. He helped *Richard* King of England with money when he was about to recover the Christians losses in Asia, and for this mony Cyprus was pawned or sold to *Guido*; after *Richard* had seised on the Island and had taken *Alexius Comnenus* prisoner. His posterity held Cyprus till the death of *Jacobus Lusignanus*,

the

the last King, and then it came into the possession of the Venetians. For his Widow being a Venetian borne, and too weake to buckle with the power of the Turkes, resigned it to the Venetians: who held it almost 100 yeares paying a yearely tribute of 40000 Crownes to the Egyptian, and after to the Turkish Sultan. But they lost it to *Mustapha* Generall of the Turkes under *Selymus* the second: As for the Kingdome of Jerusalem, *John* De Breen was the last Christian King thereof in Syria or Palestine, whose daughter *Yoland* marryed to *Fredric* Emperour and King of Naples, who in her right called himself King of Jerusalem, which title the King of Spain retaines as being King of Naples. *An. Christi*

In this Holy Warre the Venetians, Genuans, and Pisans did much good service by Sea, and inriched themselves with the spoils of Syria: the Genuans commanded the Ægean, Bosphorus, Hellespont, Thracian and Euxin Sea; the Venetians were masters of Creete, Peloponnesus, the Cyclades, Thessalonica, and Isles of the Ionian Seas; these two States having oppressed the Pisans, contended long about the mastery of the Sea with various successe, till at last at Methon the Genuans were overthrowne, and so the Venetians became absolute Masters.

About this time began the Kingdome of Portugal in *Alphonsus* the sonne of *Henry* Earl of Lorrain. This *Henry* marryed with *Taresia* the daughter of *Alphonsus* the sixth king of Spain, who took Toletum from the Saracens. *Henry* obtained Portugall for his wifes portion, whose sonne *Alphonsus* was content at first with the Title of Duke: but having subdued the Saracens, hee was saluted King by the souldiers. The Monastery of Clarevall was erected and S. *Barnard* made the first Abbot thereof, S. *Agnes* instituted her Order of Nuns at Jerusalem. *Otho* Bishop of Bamberg converted Pomerania to 1105
the Faith.

In England King *Harald* was assaulted by his younger brother *Tousstain* and *Harfager* King of Norway, both by Sea and Land; but these both were slaine, and *Harald* obtained the victory. Shortly after *William* Duke of Normandy, 1065
pretending a right to the Crowne of England, by the last Will of King *Edward* 1066
his kinsman, landed in Sussex, where a bloudy battell was fought, in which *Harold* was slaine, and with him almost 61 thousand English; and so ended the Saxon line, about 500 years after the first comming in of *Hengist*. *William* was received into London and crowned on Christmas day at Westminster by *Aldred* Archbishop of York; the next spring *William* returnes to Normandy to settle his affaires there, and takes with him the chiefe of the English Nobility: fearing lest they might revolt in his absence. Upon his return there were divers discontents and rebellions at Exeter, Oxford, and chiefly in the North, the Nobility being discontented with *Williams* bounty towards the French: but hee subdued them 1074
all, and defeated also afterward another rebellion in the Isle of Ely. Prince *Edgar* *Williams* competitor, with many of the English Nobility were fled to Scotland, who were protected by King *Malcolin*: whereupon *William* with a puissant Army enters Scotland, where both Kings conclude a peace. *Edgar* submits, and is restored to grace, and a faire maintenance. *Roger Fits-Auber* with many others 1078
conspire against *William*; but the fire was discovered before the flame broke out, and so the plot vanished; after this the king in the 13 yeare of his reign subdues Wales. In Normandy his son *Robert* rebels against him, which drew *William* over thither with an Army, *Robert* lying in ambush with 2000 men, fell upon the King, defeated his Forces, unhorsed the King himselfe, and wounded him in the arme, but hee was cured at Rouen, and reconciled to his sonne, who rebells 1080
the second time: and upon his fathers arrivall, submits againe to him at Burdeaux: but *William* brings him into England, and employes him against the Scots: for now the league was broken betweene the two kings. After this 1081
his sonne *Henry*, and *Louis* the French kings eldest sonne fell out at Chesse, and wounded each other; which occasioned a Warre betweene the two Fathers:

A. Christi. the French with *Robert* invade Normandy, *VVilliam* enters France, and at Rouen is reconciled the third time to his ſonne *Robert*: a ſhort peace was made, which was quickly broken: for *VVilliam* refuſeth to doe homage for the kingdome of England, though hee was content for Normandy. The French
1087. king mocking him for his great belly, made *VVilliam* enter France againe, where at Mantz he was hurt, and thence conveyed ſick to Rouen, and ſo ended his Warre. *VVilliam* changed the lawes, and puts them in French, alters the tenures: but the cuſtomes of Kent were preſerved by the mediation of the Archbiſhop *Stigand*. Hee ſeiſed on all the Forreſts and Chaſes of the kingdome. Hee diſ-peopled for 30 miles ſpace the countrey of Hamſhire on the Sea coaſt, and made it a Forreſt. Hee ſeiſed upon the Plate, Jewels, and Treaſures of the Monaſteries, pretending that the rebells had hid their wealth there as in priviledged places: he relyed much upon the advice of *Lanfranc* an Italian born, and Archbiſhop of Canterbury, he dyed at Rohan the 74 yeare of his age, and 21 of his reigne: his Corps lay three dayes neglected, till his youngeſt ſonne *Henry* had it conveyed to the Abbey of Cane, where it could not bee interred, untill the ground wherein hee lay was purchaſed. To *Robert* his eldeſt ſonne hee left the Dukedome of Normandy, to *VVilliam* his third ſonne England; to *Henry* the youngeſt, his treaſure with an yearely penſion: his ſecond ſonne *Richard* was ſlaine by a ſtagge in the Forreſt; where *VVilliam* the ſecond alſo was ſlaine by an arrow, and *Richard* the ſonne of *Robert* Duke of Normandy broke his neck. Hee erected ſeven Abbyes of Monkes, and 6 of Nuns, beſides his munificence to 9 Abbies & 1 Nunnery in Normandy. In England he founded one Abbey where he fought his firſt battell, and two Nunneries, one at Hinching-brooke in Huntingdonſhire, and the other at Armthewt in Cumberland.

1087. *William* the ſecond ſucceeded, who was faine to make an agreement with his elder brother *Robert*, who challenged the Crowne in right of Primogeniture, by paying to him 3000 Markes *per annum*. *Odo* Biſhop of Bayeux, with divers of the Nobility, conſpire againſt *VVilliam*, and invites *Robert* into England, but the King by ingratiating the people to him, and by granting them many freedomes, diſappointed the plot, takes in divers Forts, which his enemies had poſſeſſed againſt him, and tranſports an Army into Normandy, where hee tooke many places from
1088. *Robert*, though aſſiſted by the French: at laſt a peace is made betweene them, that the Surviver of either of them ſhould ſucceed to the rule both of England and Normandy. After this *VVilliam* aſſiſts *Robert*, againſt his brother *Henry*, who had taken the Fort of Mount *Michel*, for not repayment of the money
1091. which *Henry* had lent *Robert* againſt *VVilliam*: the King was like to have been taken priſoner, as hee was alone on the Sea ſhoare neer the Fort, had not reſcue come the ſooner, for his horſe being loſt, hee defends himſelfe with the ſaddle from the darts ſhot at him: at laſt *Henry* is reconciled with his brothers, and
1092. was allowed to hold in morgage the Countrey of *Conſtantine*, till the money was payed: but when the day came, for want of payment *Robert* is impriſoned, and forced to renounce the Countrey of Conſtantine. This was after *Roberts* returne from Scotland, who was imployed there againſt *Malcoline*. After this *Robert* raiſeth Forces to recover the Caſtle of Dampfront in Normandy taken by *Henry*, and inveighes againſt *VVilliam* for underhand dealing, but he paſſeth over with an Army into Normandy, and fees the French King to forbeare aid to Duke *Robert*. Hee thereupon made his peace with *VVilliam*: who upon his
1094. return made warre upon Scotland, and Wales; in Wales the Earle of Shrewſbury uſed much cruelty, but was afterward ſhot in the eyes, and tumbled into the Sea. *Robert* of Mouberry raiſed a ſedition againſt *VVilliam* which was by his diligence ſoon ended. *Robert* being dead in the Holy expedition, King *VVilliam* obtaines Normandy, and ſo became more inſolent, laying heavy taxes on his people, keeping Biſhopricks vacant, that hee might receive their revenues, taking money of the Jewes, and ſelling all ſpirituall preferments, which hee profuſely ſpent

on

on buildings, and on the French to keep them quiet, he makes another expedition in- *An. Christ.*
to Normandy against *Conte de la Fleſche*, who had ſurpriſed the City of Mains, him he takes priſoner, and after releaſes him: at laſt hee was ſhot by *Walter* 1100.
Terell a Norman in the new Forreſt, being 43 yeares old, and having reigned 12 years.

In Scotland *Milcolin* or *Milcolumbus* ſirnamed *Canmore*, reigned. He brought in the titles of Dukes, Marquiſſes, Earles, Barons and Knights. The Nobility before were called Thanes. He entertained Prince *Edgar* with his mother and ſiſters, and divers of the Engliſh Nobility, which fled to him from the tyranny of *William* the Conquerour. He marryed *Margaret* eldeſt ſiſter to *Edgar*: then many Engliſh planted themſelves in Scotland. In the midſt of Stanmore was erected a Croſſe of ſtone called Recroſſe or King-croſſe, with the King of Englands ſtatue and armes on the one ſide, and the King of Scotlands on the other. This Croſſe divided the two kingdomes. He erected the Churches of Durham and Dunfermling. He delivered *Edgar* to *VVilliam*, but upon honourable tearms. He was threatned with a civill warre at home by the Moravians, Roſſians, Cathaneſians and Iſlanders; but the quarrell was compoſed by the mediation of the Clergy. The inſurrection in Galloway was ſuppreſſed by one *VValter*, whom for his good ſervice the King made chief Steward of Scotland: whence the ſirname of *Stewarts* had its originall. He erected two Biſhopricks, to wit, of Murry and Cathneſſe. He aboliſhed that barbarous law of *Eugenius*, which authouriſed the new marryed Brides to proſtitute there Virginity to their Lords. As *Malcolme* was beſieging Anwik Caſtle which *VVilliam Rufus* had ſurpriſed, hee was ſlaine by one *Robert Mowbray*, who delivering the Caſtle keyes to the King on the point of his lance, runne him through the eye; hereupon *Mowbray* was called *Percie*, of whom are the Earles of Northumberland. Prince *Edward* in revenging his Fathers death was alſo ſlain; this double loſſe was the cauſe of queen *Margarets* death. He reiged 36 yeares, his body with his ſons were tranſlated from the Abbey of Tinmouth, to the Church of Dunfermling.

At Rome to *Urban* the ſecond, ſucceeds *Paſchalis* the ſecond, who ſate 18 years: he called a Councel at Lateran: in which he anthematiſeth *Henry* the fourth; another Councell he calleth at Florence againſt *Fluentinus* Biſhop thereof, for holding that Antichriſt was then borne. He cauſed *Henry* the fifth, in his Fathers life time call a Synod at Northuſen in Thuringia againſt Simony and the marryed Clergy. The Synod called at Trecaſſina in France, was called by *Paſchalis* for the ſame end, he cals alſo another Synod at Lateran, in which he excommunicates *Henry* the fifth, for medling with inveſtitures of Biſhops. In *Paſchalis* his time were 3 ſchiſmaticall Popes.

CHAP. XI.

The Weſtern affairs under Henry *the fifth, and* Lotharius *Duke of Saxony.* 2. *The Eaſtern under* Calojohannes. 3. *The affairs of France, Spain, England, Scotland, Denmark, &c. with the Popes of thoſe times.*

HEnry the fourth being dead, but not buryed (for his body by the Popes command, lay five yeares without ſepulture) *Henry* the fifth, his ſonne ſucceeded. Hee firſt puniſheth *Henry* Duke of Lorrain, *Robert* Earle 1109.
of Flanders, with Colen, Norinburg, and ſome other cities, who were faithfull to *Henry* the fourth: then he aſſiſts *Almus* King of Hungary againſt *Coloman*. Shortly after hee made war upon the Polonians, for denying to paying the accuſtomed tribute to the Emperour; but the Bohemians his Auxiliaries falling off from him, he loſt the battell, and was forced to give off the ſiege of Glogove

An. Christi gove, and to make his peace with the Polonian. In the fifth yeare of his reigne hee entereth Italy with an Army, to regaine his right of inveſtiture of Biſhops and Abbots by the croſier ſtaff and ring. A right which the German Emperours have obtained for above 300 yeares, ever ſince *Charles* the Great; on the other ſide *Paſchalis* claimed that right as belonging to the Clergy and people of Rome: and whereupon *Henry* beſiegeth the City, takes it, and in it the Pope and Cardinalls: which hee impriſoned, till his priviledges were confirmed; which being done, and crowned Emperour, hee returns into Germany, where hee beſtowes an honourable funerall on his Father at Spire, but the Clergy ſtorming at the Popes conceſſions, and *Henry's* power in Eccleſiaſtick dignities, they cauſe him to repeale his former grants, and to excommunicate *Henry* for his Simony, and withall they ſtir up the Saxons to rebell, by the Biſhop of Mints, who travelled through Saxony incouraging the people to joine with *Lotharius* their Duke. *Rodulphus* Marquiſſe of Brandeburg, and *Sigefrid Palatin* of Saxony, (whoſe life the Emperour had lately ſpared) with divers others ſide with *Lotharius*. But *Henry* in a great battell overthrew all theſe Forces, and ſlew *Sigefrid*: after this victory hee married with *Mathildis* the King of Englands daughter at Mints, where Duke *Lotharius* in ſackcloth ſubmitted himſelfe to the Emperour, who pardons him.

But *Lotharius* ſhortly after this, forgetfull of his pardon, with the Biſhop of *Halberſtad*, raiſe new tumults, and with a great Army of Saxons, encountered with the Emperour in the County of Mansfield, and defeated him: in this conflict *Hugerus* Earl of Mansfield *Henry's* chiefe Generall was ſlaine, and hee himſelfe was forced to flye, and to remove as farre as hee could
1109. from the fury of his domeſtick enemies. Hee goeth into Italy, being ſent for to take poſſeſſion of the inheritantance of *Mathildis* widow, who was ſiſter to *Ecbert* Marquiſſe of Saxony. This yeare was terrible by reaſon of ſtrange thunderings, earthquakes, and apparitions in the aire. *Paſcalis* hearing that *Henry* was marching towards Rome, went into Apulia, where hee raiſeth an Army of Normans, with which as ſoone as hee came to Rome, hee dyed, to whom ſucceeded *Johan Cajetan*, who tooke the name of *Gelaſius* the ſecond. Hee refuſed to abſolve *Henry* from his ſentence of excommunication, wherefore hee is depoſed, and one *Berdinus* or (as ſome call him) *Mauritius* a Spaniard is made Anti-Pope, whom afterward *Calixtus* who ſucceeded, *Gelaſius* tooke priſoner, and baniſhed, having excommunicated the Emperour again; wherefore hee is forced to returne into Germany, with a reſolution to puniſh Mints for the perfidiouſneſſe of their Biſhop; but hee durſt not, becauſe hee underſtood that the Saxons were making new preparations againſt him by the Popes inſtigation. *Gelaſius* not being ſuffered to live at Rome, retires himſelfe into France, where hee dyed the firſt year of his Pontificate, and there *Guido* of Vienna called *Caliſtus* the third, is made Pope by the Cardinals at Cluniacum; who refuſed the Pontificall habit, till the Romans had confirmed his election. Hee continuing the Papall hatred againſt Cæſar, at Sutrium ſeiſeth on *Berdinus* the Anti-Pope, who having ſet him on a Camell, leads him to Rome in triumph, where being diſgracefully uſed, hee is thruſt into a Monaſtery.

The Emperour finding himſelfe too weake to reſiſt the Popes power, being backt by France, Italy, the Normans, Saxons and others, is perſwaded by his Peeres to yeeld, and to reſign againe the inveſtiture of Biſhops, and elec-
1122. on of Prieſts to the Pope, which hee did: and this agreement was publiquely proclaimed at Wormes with great acclamations of the people, who hoped by this for perpetuall ſerenity. In the meane while *Rogerius* Prince of Sicily, ſlighting the Emperours threats and exhortations, invades Apulia and Calabria, in the abſence of Duke *VVilliam*, by the inſtigation of *Caliſtus* the Pope, the Venetians drive the Babylonian Turkes from the ſiege of Joppe, and after 4 months

ſiege

siege take in Tyrus the Metropolis of Phœnicia, having first covenanted with *William.* Viceroy of Palestine, that they should enjoy the third part of the Maritime townes they tooke in. Shortly after the Pope dyeth; *Henry* having composed the troubles in Belgium raised by *Lotharius* of Saxony; having also aided *Henry* the king of England, his Father in law against *Lovis* the French king, he makes a journey to Utrich, to settle the disorders of that place, where he fell sick and dyed the 19 year of his reign. In his time *Otho* Bishop of Bamberge converted Pomerania to the Christian Faith. *Henry* dying childlesse, left Franconia to *Conradus* of Suevia, who after *Lotharius* was Emperour, he repaired the City of Norica, and built a Monastery to S. *Aegidius*, which he greatly inriched. *An. Christi* 1125.

Lotharius Duke of Saxony was made Emperour by the instigation of the Pope, and Saxons, who were willing to assume their ancient dignity and power. *Conradus Henry* the fifth sisters sonne, who had got Franconia by *Henry* the fifth, as his Father had obtained Suevia by *Henry* the fourth, challenged the Empire in right of his mother; yet *Lotharius* carryed it. *Conradus* hoping to prevent *Lotharius*, hastneth for Italy to obtaine the Popes confirmation, having secured Ulma, Norimberg, and Auspurg for him, but he spoiled his cause by invading of Lombardy, and accepting there of a Crowne from the Archbishop of Millan, thnugh it was but of iron; for Pope *Honorius* excommunicates him; so that he was forced to forsake Italy; but when hee returned to Germany, hee found the Cities which he had fortified, all surrendred to *Lotharius*, whereupon finding all helpe failed him, by the mediation of S. *Bernhard* who flourished at that time, he was reconciled to *Lotharius*. 1125.

Lotharius being setled, upon the request of Pope *Innocent* the second, he came with an Army into Italy, to suppresse the faction at Rome, which had set up *Anacletus* an Anti-Pope: when he came, the faction fled, and he was crowned Emperour by *Innocent*, whom he brought back to the City, being driven out by a prevailing party. *Lotharius* demanded the Emperours rights back again from *Innocent*; but being disswaded by the Pope and S. *Bernhard* whom hee brought with him, to claime that which had caused so much trouble and bloudshed, lets fall his demand. After this, he made a second expedition into Italy against *Roger* King of Sicily, who had invaded the Churches lands. Wherefore having passed the Apenius without resistance, he takes in Ancona, Spoletum, and other towns, and by the help of the Pisan Fleet pursues *Roger* by Sea and Land, so that he was forced to abandon Italy: which at last being setled the government of Apulia was committed to *Reginaldus*, and of Thuscia to *Henry* his son in law, but as he was returning into Germany, through the groves of Trent, hee fell sick in a poore cottage, and dyed the 13 year of his reign, and was buryed in a Monastery of Saxony, called from him *Lotharia Cæsaria*. 1132. 1137.

Before this last expedition into Italy, *Lotharius* pacified the troubles of Denmark, which were occasioned by *Magnus* King *Nicolaus* his sonne, who had murthered *Canutus* his cousin German. *Ericus* brother to this *Canutus* implored the Emperours aid against the murtherer, who with his Army quieted the Cimbrians a while; but after hee was gone *Ericus* with his Forces which consisted most in horse, fell suddenly on *Magnus* his quarters, kills him with most of the Danish Nobility. Shortly after *Nicholaus* Father to *Magnus* was murthered with his guard in his own Palace; by this meanes *Ericus* obtained the kingdome of Denmark. *Lotharius* authorised *Vernerius* to gather together and to teach the Roman Lawes, which had been neglected above 600 years. Rome and Bononia were the places appointed for this reading. About this time also *Gratian* the Monk compiled together the Popes Decrees, to which many additions have been made by the subsequent Popes. From hence sprung up the Canonists and Schoolemen; the one maintained

An. Chriſti the Popes Hierarchy, the other his Doctrine, which Schoole doctrine was compiled afterward in *Frederic* the firſts time by *Lombard*, called the Maſter of the Sentences, on whom *Thomas*, *Scotus*, and innumerable Schoolemen have commented. *Lotharius* had by his wife *Rixa* one ſonne, who dyed young, and two daughters, the one he marryed to *Henry* the proud Duke of Bavaria, to whom he gave Saxony, the other he beſtowed on *Lovis* the bearded Earl of Turingia.

1060. In France to *Hugh Capet* ſucceeded his ſonne *Robert*, who built many Churches and Monaſteries: he reigned after his Fathers death 36 years: to him ſucceeded his ſonne *Henry* the firſt, who placed *William* the baſtard ſonne of *Robert* Duke of Normandy in his Fathers inheritance, having ſlain 30000 Normans, he dyed the 28 yeare of his reign, whoſe ſonne *Philip* a childe ſucceeded, *Baldwin* Earle of Flanders was his Governour. He was excommunicate by Pope *Vrban*, for repudiating his wife, and marrying another, but
1108. two yeares after, he was abſolved and reconciled, he reigned 49 yeares; to him ſucceeded *Lovis* the ſixth ſurnamed the *Groſſe*: for ſome difference between him and the Archbiſhop of Rhemes, he would be anointed at Orleans, and crowned by the Biſhop of Senon. He ſaw 5 Popes in France, to wit, *Vrban*,
1137. *Paſchalis*, *Gelaſius*, *Calixtus*, and *Innocent*. He reigned 30 years, the Monaſtery of Clarevall was erected in his time, the firſt Abbat whereof was S. *Bernhard*.

Alphonſus the ſeventh was called Emperour of Spaine, by his death the kingdomes of Legio and Caſtile were divided in his two ſonnes *Sanctius* and *Ferdinandus*, in his time the Arabians in Spaine called Almohades, would ſuffer no Chriſtians to live amongſt them under pain of death. The ninth generall Councell, and firſt among the Latines called the Lateran of 900 Biſhops and Prieſts was held, about the recovering of the Holy Land from the Saracens and Turkes. The Synod of Rhemes was ſummoned by *Gelaſius* and held by *Calixtus* againſt Simony, in this the Emperour was excommunicate. And councel alſo was held at Neapoli in Samaria for reforming of Manners. *Lovis* is excommunicate by *Stephen* biſhop of Paris, for invading the Churches rights. After which hee lived not long, beſides he loſt his ſonne *Philip* as hee was riding through Paris in his regall ornaments, by a fall from his horſe, by which he dyed ſuddenly. One *Tamdemus* authour of the Adamites, ſeduced many people at Antwerp; againſt whom was ſet up *Norbertus* biſhop of that place, who was authour of that order which was called *Premom ſtratenſis*; from the place where hee retired him ſelfe. In a Synod held in France, it was ordained that the Knights Templars ſhould weare a white cloak, of which order there were not at firſt above nine; but in the ſpace of 50 yeares they grew to be 300; abounding in wealth, beſides innumerable inferiour brethren, which they called ſervants; their office was to defend the high-wayes and pilgrims towards or from Jeruſalem, as the Knights of Saint *John* were to provide lodgings and uſe hoſpitality.

In the Eaſt to *Alexius Comnenus* whileſt he was yet alive ſucceeded his ſonne *Calojohannes*, a better and greater man then his Father; for hee ſubdued the Turkes in Aſia, the Scythians and Tartars in Europe, who had ſwarmed like Locuſts into Thracia and Macedonia in time the of *Alexius Comnenus*. Theſe Calojohannes drove out; he ſuppreſſed alſo the Huns
φεσπιχώριον. neer Belgradum: a place famous for the ſlaughter of the French by the Hungarians, as they were marching towards the Holy Land. He ſent Embaſſadours to congratulate *Lotharius* his victory againſt *Rogerius*, whom he drove out of Apulia. He afterward entred into league with *Conradus Suevus*. He was a rich Prince in money; therefore bought Antioch for a great ſumme from *Raimund* Prince thereof, finding ſome reſiſtance as he went to take poſſeſſion, hee waſted Syria: he tooke Soſopolis the ſtrong City of Pamphilia by a ſtratagem, cauſing his men to ride as neere as they could to the Workes, and let flie their arrowes at the Garriſon, and then to runne away towards

towards the Woodes, purposely to toll the Garrison from their strong hold, *An. Christi* which was done accordingly, and so the Grecians wheeling about entred the Towne. He tooke Castamon from the Persarmenians, and returned with triumph to Byzantium; but this happinesse lasted not long, for shortly after *Tanismanius* the Turk, and then *Mahumet* recovered what they had lost, and Gangra to boot with the strong City Pontus: at last, as hee was hunting of the wilde Boare in Cilicia, he hurt his left hand with one of the poysoned arrowes which fell out of his quiver, whereby it gangrened, and his whole body was infected, so he dyed the 25 yeare of his reigne. The Physitians would have had his hand cut off; but hee refused, saying, *One handed Cæsar was not fit to governe the World.* He had four sonnes, two dyed before him; of the other two, he chose *Manuel* the younger, to succeed him, finding *Isaacius* the elder of too harsh and fierce a nature to governe. About this time dyed *John a Stampis*, who had lived above 360 yeares, for he was a souldier under *Charles* the Great, and dyed under *Lovis* the Grosse.

In England *Henry* the first sirnamed *Beauclerke* for his learning, the youngest sonne of *William* the first, was crowned after his brothers death, *Robert* being then in Apulia: hee recalls *Anselme* Archbishop, furnisheth the vacant Bishopricks with fit men, relieves the Laity of their pressures, and punisheth the Ministers for their exactions. *Ralph* Bishop of Durrham is imprisoned for his evill counsells to the late King: the Court is reformed, the lights in the night are restored, which were forbidden by *William* after the *coverfeu* bell. He marryed *Maude* daughter to *Margaret* late Queen of Scots, and Neece to *Edward Atheling*: but *Robert* having returned into Normandy, arrives at Portsmouth with a strong Army to recover the Crowne: the Armies being ready to encounter, for avoiding bloud a peace was concluded, that *Henry* should be King during his life, paying to *Robert* 3000 markes *per annum*. 2. That *Robert* surviving should succeed. 3. That all *Robert*'s friends should bee pardoned. After *Roberts* departure *Henry* assumes the investitures of Bishops, which *Anselmus* opposed; *Henry* sends to the Pope *Paschalis* to let him know the collation of church dignities was derived to him from his predecessours. *Anselme* opposeth the Ambassadours at Rome, wherefore hee is banished: but by the Popes perswasions *Anselme* is restored, and the King forbeares to meddle with the Church. In the interim *Robert de Belesme* Earle of Salisbury fortifies his Castles, and combines with the Welch against the King, but in 30 dayes his castles were retaken, and his complices scattered, and the Earle banished into Normandy, where combining with *William* Earle of Mortaigue, he commits many outrages, *Robert* conniving at the same, and afterward joining with these Earles, raised Forces against King *Henry*, who being invited over by the Normans weary of *Roberts* oppressions, and incouraged by Pope *Pascall*, fights against his brother and defeats him, then brings *Robert* prisoner to England, commits him to the castle of Cardiffe, where hee lived 26 yeares; his eyes were put out for attempting an escape: so *Henry* after his brothers death became absolute Duke of Normandy: hee kept good correspondency with Scotland, and France; hee sent into Wales a colony of Flemmings, which much infested this countrey: he had some debate with the Earl of Flanders, about the payment of a pension, which the Earl claimed, but the debate was more verball then reall. But after this *Lewis* the Grosse, had some quarrels with him about the Dutchy of Normandy, which was intertained by the quarrell between the Pope, and *Henry* the fifth Emperor. The King of England having marryed *Maude* his daughter to him, animates him against the French, who supported the Pope against him; but by the mediation of the French King *Lovis*, the Emperour submits to the Pope: all differences are taken up betweene them and *Lovis*; so that the King of England was disappointed;

1100.

1106.

yet

An. Christi yet hee continues his quarrell with *Lovis*, for procuring *Fulke* Earle of Anjeou to seize upon the countrey of Mayne, and animating *Baldwin* as is said against him for with holding his Pension which was paid by the conquerour onely to *Baldwin* the fifth Earle of Flanders during his life, and was upon courtesie continued by succeeding kings. But *Henry* beat the French, and at last they were reconciled. After this the Welsh rebelled, and were subdued by him: but hee was much afflicted for the losse of *William* the young Prince, who was drowned returning to England, with many persons of honour, and their attendants to the number of 140, besides 50 Mariners. After this the Emperour being dead, *Henry* marryes his daughter *Maude* to *Geffery Plantagenet* the sonne of *Foulke*, Earle of *Anjou*, by whom shee had three sonnes,
1014. *Henry* who was King after *Stephen*, *Geffery* and *William*. The first Parliament *Henry* established in Salisbury consisting of the three Estates: about 5 yeares after the death of *Anselme*. *Ralph* Bishop of Rochester, is made Archbishop by the King, and gives him his investiture, but *Thurston* the Kings Chaplaine, who was designed for Yorke, refuseth to sweare obedience to Canterbury, appeales to the Pope, who absolves him, invests him, and gives him the Pall: the king is forced to submit in this also to the Pope: at last having reigned 35 yeares, he surfeted on a Lamprey, and dyed, he was buryed in the Abby of Reading, which he had founded. He erected two Bishopricks of Ely and of Carlyle: and founded the Monasteries of Circester, Reading and Shyrborne. Hee compounded with Priests for annuall Pensions to keep their wives. He levyed but two taxes on his people, the one was to maintain his wars against France, the other to preferre his daughters marriage with the Emperour: in him ended the issue males of the Conqueror. He built the mannor of Woodstock, and inclosed the Park with a stone wall.

In Scotland *Malcolme* being dead, the Crowne was usurped by *Donald*, who was assisted for that end by the king of Norreway, which so exasperated the people, that they sent for *Duncan Malcolmes* sonne out of England, upon whose approach *Donald* fled, being forsaken by his people, the sixth moneth after hee had invaded the kingdome. Neither did *Duncan* continue long, for his government was so harsh that hee was hated by his people, upon which *Donald* got *Makpender* Earle of Mermes to murther him, and then returning from banishment, invaded the Crowne againe, but in the third yeare of this second invasion hee was taken and imprisoned, where he first lost his eyes, then his life. To this *Donald Malcolmes* brother succeeds *Edgar Malcolmes* sonne, who lived peaceably 9 years, he built the Monastery of Coldingam, who dying without issue, his brother *Alexander* succeeded. This king in the very beginning of his reign, was assaulted by an Army of the discontented youth of the kingdom, whom he defeated near the river of Spæa. Afterward hee was assaulted in the night as he was asleep, by some assasinates, who were let in by one of the groomes of his bed-chamber; but he suddenly awaked, flew to his sword, killed the groom, and six of the assasinats, and so hotly persued the rest; that few of them escaped, After this delivery he built the Church of St. *Michael* at Scone. Having also escaped drowning in a storme; he erected a Church to St. *Columbus*, and inriched the Church of St.
1124. *Andrews*. He dyed without issue; to whom succeeded his brother *David*; who gave himself to building and repairing of Churches and Monasteries, he built Holy rood house, with 9 other Abbeys, and two Nunneries, one at Carlile, the other at Berwick, and two Abbeys near New-Castle. To the 6 former Bishopricks, he added four more, to wit, Ross, Breichin, Dunkeld, and Dunblane, allowing them large revenues out of the Crowne Lands, by which hee impoverished his successours. Hee possessed Huntington, besides Northumberland, Cumber and Westmerland. Hee walled Carlile: and had some quarrels with king *Stephen* of
1139. England, which were shortly after composed. *Maude* the Empresse sent her sonne *Henry* (who succeeded *Stephen* afterward) to receive the order of knighthood from king *David* his great Uncle, whose eldest sonne Prince *Henry* of Scotland

Scotland dyed, to the great griefe of the kingdome, his eldest sonne *Malcolme* *Malcolme Canmore* *David* caused to bee declared Prince of Scotland, and made *William* his second sonne Earl of Northumberland: at last *David* dyed the 29 yeare of his reign.

In Rome to *Paschalis* who sate 18 yeares, succeeded *Gelasius* the second one yeare; *Berdinus* called *Gregory* the eight was Anti Pope. To *Gelasius* succeeded *Calixtus* the second five yeares: his successour was *Honorius* the second five yeares: his Anti-Pope was *Celestinus* the second. To *Honorius* succeeded *Innocent* the second 14 yeares. When hee came into France, the Parisian Jewes presented to him the Volume of the Law wrapped up in a rich cover of cloth; to whom hee said: *Almighty God, remove the vaile from your hearts*: He annoints at Remes *Lovis* the younger King of France.

CHAP. XII.

1. *A briefe History of Egypt from* Augustus, *till the Turkish conquest.* 2. *The westhern affaires under* Frederick Barbarosse. 3. *Divers passages of Italy, Germany, and Denmark, and the other Holy Warre.* 4. *Divers occurrences, and the Popes of these times, with some passages of Tartaria.*

After Ægypt had been subdued by *Augustus Cæsar*, it remained subject to the Romans till the Empire was translated to Greece, and then it was under the Greek Emperour till being weary of their oppressions, they called in the Saracens, whose Calipha they chose for their Governour, and so shaked off the Græcian yoke; this Caliph was descended from *Mahomet* the Impostour, and different both in Government and profession from that other Caliph of Babylon. The last Caliph of Ægypt being much troubled by *Almericus*, who in the kingdome of Ierusalem succeeded *Baldwin*, craved aid from the Sultan of Syria, who sent thither *Sarraco* with an Army which overthrew *Almericus*, and drove the Christians quite out of Ægypt, this being done he suddenly seised upon the Caliph, whom he imprisoned, and dasht out his brains, and then makes himself king of Ægypt, to whom succeeded *Saladin* his nephew by his brother. He overthrew the Christians in Syria and Palestine, and brought their kingdom of Ierusalem to nothing. To him succeeded his brother, whose posterity reigned till *Melechsala*; he finding his best and oldest souldiers almost quite extinct by reason of his continuall wars with the Christians, and not daring to confide in the treacherous and effeminate Egyptians, buyes of the Tartars, who had lately broke into Asia through the Caspian Straights, and had subdued the Cappadocians, where of old dwelt the Colchi, Iberi, and Albani along the Euxin Sea (at this day they are named Mengrellins, Georgians, and Siberians) he buyes I say of the Tartars their captive slaves, transports them into Egypt, & trains them up in Military discipline, by their help he overcame *Levois* the French king at Damitia, in Ægypt, which was the old *Heliopolis* or *Pelusium*, takes him prisoner, and destroyes his brother *Robert*, with his Forces, who was got farther into Ægypt, for this good service *Melechsala*, chose out of them a guard for his own body, but not long after he was murthered, by this new guard, who seised on the kingdome after it had been possessed by the posterity of *Sarracon* about 100 yeares.

These slaves having now made themselves kings, chose Alcair of old called Memphis or Babylon, for the seat of their kingdome: the country out of which they came is now called Cercassia, the inhabitants are of the Greek Religion with the Muscovites and Raxolans, their children were wont to be sold, and by Merchants transported by Sea to Alexandria, and thence to Memphis, where abjuring

In Christ joyning Christian Religion, they were sent to schoole to be instructed in the Ma-
humets Religion, and then were trained up in Military affaires, and so were im-
ployed in the wars, which custome the Turkes learned, in making of their Jan-
saries: these were called Mamaluchs, which signifieth circumcised. None were
admitted either to the regall or equestrall dignity in Egypt, but those that were
thus born, and educated, so that neither the Mamaluchs children did inherit their
fathers equestrall, nor the Sultans children, the regall honor. The first slave that ob-
tained the kingdome was *Turquemenius*, he was intituled the Sultan, and so were
all the succeeding Kings, as before they were called Caliphs. This new Sul-
tan released King *Lewis* from his imprisoment, and grew so insolent and imperi-
ous over his fellow slaves, that he was murthered by *Cothus*, who for this fact
was saluted king by the Army of slaves, and was after he had overcome the
Tartars, slain by *Bendocader*, who succeeded. He drove the Christians out of
Syria, and recovered Antioch. After he had much wasted Armenia, he was
poysoned at Damascus. *Melechsait* succeeded, whom *Elpi* thrust out of his throne
and murthered. He took from the Christians Tripolis, Sidon, Beritus, and Tyre
and razed them, so made them unusefull for the Christians, he was murther-
ed by one of his guard in the camp, his successour *Melechseraph*, or *Vstrephus*
tooke Ptolemais the last Christian towne, and razed it to the ground. He was
murthered by his guard, as he was hunting, to him succeeded *Melechnasar*, and
after this *Melechadel*, with divers others, till *Caithbeius*, whose names are scarse
known, much lesse their actions. This *Caithbeius* was a great scourge to the
Turkes under *Bajuzet* the second, whom he overthrew in two great battels, his
sonne *Mahomet*, succeeded contrary to their custome, therefore he was deposed,
and upon this arose divers factions in the Court: so that in three yeares were
five Sultans, the two last were *Campson*, *Gaurus*, who reigned 16 yeares, at
last siding with the Persian against the Turk, *Selimus* the first was overthrown
and slain in the battell. The last was *Tonombeius*, whom *Selimus* overthrew,
tooke prisoner, and hanged him up in the gate of Memphis, so ended the *Ma-
maluchs* kingdome, having continued 260 years. Egypt since that time remains
a province to the Turks.

Conradus the Emperor before his death named *Frederic* the first, called *Barbarossa*
and *Aenobarbus* from his read beard, for his successor, though he had a son of his
1155. own now at years; at this time *Henry* of Austria, and *Henry* of Saxony his sonne in
law did contend for the Dukedome of Bavary. This controversie was so taken up
by the Emperor, that *Henry* of Austria was honoured with the title of Duke, who
before was but a Marquisse; and had withall a part of Bavaria assigned to him. He
held a Dyet at Mersburg, where he composed the difference between *Canutus* the son
of *Magnus*, *Sueno* the son of *Ericus*, and *Wooldemarus* the son of *Canutus* whom
Magnus slew, which three contended for the kingdome of Denmark: there it was
agreed that *Sueno* should hold the kingdom of the Emperor, *Canutus* of *Sueno*, and
Woldemar should be bound to appear such a day in the high Court: so *Frederic*
having in some sort quieted Germany, he makes an expedition into Italy, being cal-
led upon by the banished Apulians, and some Cities of Lombardy, which were
oppressed by the Millanois, who aimed at a Soveraign Dominion. He used great
severity against Verona for excluding him the gates, because he was not as yet con-
firmed by the Pope. Millan for a time submitted to him; then having crossed the
Appenin, he enters Rome, where he is crowned by *Adrian* the fourth, not without
great tumults and opposition of the people, so that he was forced to fight within the
City in his own defence; in this conflict many were taken and slain, and many
drowned in Tiber. After this he returned into Germany, where he composed the
difference between *Arnold* Bishop of Mints, and *Herman* the Palatin; the Bi-
shop he spared because of his age, and order, being a Church-man, but hee caused
Herman for troubling Germany with a needlesse war, to carry a dog upon his
shoulders, holding him by the hindmost legs before all the people; which then
was accounted a great punishment. Hee caused also *Bolislaus* King of Poland to

pay

pay a fine or mulct, for neglecting to bring into the Emperiall Exchequer his yearly tribute. *An. Christi*

But whilest the Emperour was imployed at home, the Millanois made new work for him abroad, by oppressing their neighbour Cities, and drawing many into their rebellion; with whom Pope *Adrian* conspired, who also exasperated *Frederick* by sending him word, that the Empire was at his disposing, to give it, to whom he pleased; wherefore he thought it time now, to look to himself, therefore with an Army he passeth over the Alpes; falls upon Millan which hee took by storm, and was about to destroy it, but upon the submission of the citizens, with naked sword about their necks, and crosses on their breasts, falling downe at his feet, he spared it, yet he imposed on them a mulct of 9000 markes, and injoined them to build him a Palace in the city, and resign over to the Empire their coin, 1158. harbours, and customes, and withall to repair the towns of Cumæ and Lauda, which they had spoiled. But scarce was *Frederic* gone thence into Burgundy, when the Millanois enter into a new confederacy with other cities, with *William* of Sicily, and a great number of Cardinals, animating the Pope to excommunicate him, because he made the Bishops to doe him homage, for their temporalties, which he affirmed were given him by the bounty of his predecessors, hereupon the Millanois stone *Frederic*'s Embassadours, and intend by some assassinates which they had hired either to poyson or stab him; wherefore he enters Italy again, overthrows Crema, a confederate city with Millan, fights with the Millanois army, defeats them, and besiegeth their city. *Adrian* in the mean while as he was preparing the thunder of excommunication against him, is choaked with a flye in his drink, and so dyed: but before his death he bound 14 Cardinals by an oath, not to choose any man Pope but him who would oppose Cæsar and maintain the cause of Millan, and of *William* the Sicilian. Hence two Popes are chosen, one *Roland* named *Alexander* 1160. the third: by the Millan faction, the other *Octavian* named *Victor* by the Emperours side, to whom were joined the kings of England, Denmark, Hungary and Bohemia: a Synod is called at Papia, where *Alexander* is cited to appear; he condemnes that Councell, and refuseth to come, affirming himselfe to be above Councels; he excommunicates also *Frederic* for holding with *Victor*, and procures the greater part of Italy and France to side with him: upon this *Frederic* fals again upon Millan furiously, takes it by storm, overthroweth it to the ground, and soweth salt on it; then the chief actours of this last rebellion were condemned and beheaded, 1162. the rest wandering up and down in Italy, and destitute of all help and comfort, set up a new order called *Humiliati*.

Pope *Alexander* in the mean time was not idle, but drew France, Spaine, and England to his party. Venetians also with Padua, Verona, and others places join with him against *Frederic*. The Romans call home *Alexander*; the townes of Lombardy cast out the Emperours garrisons, and all arm against him. In the interim *Victor* the Anti-Pope dyed at Luca; in whose place was substituted one *Guido* of Crema, who takes the name of *Pascalis*. *Frederic* is forced to return againe into Italy, where having crossed the Pope, he takes Ancona; encounters with the Roman army at Tusculum, where they lost 15000. He enters the city; *Alexander* flyes, and *Pascalis* is placed in the Palace of Lateran; the Romans take the oath of allegiance to *Frederic*. But he lost divers principall men in this fight, besides there dyed of the plague the Bishops of Colen, Ratisbone, and Spire, with *Frederic* the sonne of *Conradus* Cæsar, and divers other prime Commanders; this loss with the news of the Greek Emperour, who had promised aid to *Alexander* conditionally, that he would restore to him the Western Diadem, and the jealousie he had of the Italian treacheries, made him to returne in hast to Germany.

About this time, after *Waldemar* had killed *Suene*, the murtherer of *Canutus* he obtained the Kingdome of Denmark; and made divers expeditions against the Sclavi, who with their Piracies infested the Danish Islands. He brought *Nicloth* Duke of the Sclavi into great straights, that he was forced to destroy many of his own

An. Christi owne townes; *Henricus Leo.* And *Albertus Ursus* wasted most of his countrey and peopled it with Flemings, Hollanders, and Frislanders, who erected divers Churches there. Rostoch was built by *Primislaus* sonne of *Niclotus*. *Waldemer* overcame the Rugi. *Ericus* King of the Sueci subdued the Finlanders. The Merchants of Breme and Lubec, by their arms brought the Livonians to Christianity. Dantsick is built by the Danes in the mouth of the river Vistula. In Italy the rebels by the assistance of *Alexander* and the Greek Emperour, rebuild Millan, they build also another City, which from the Popes name, they called Alexandria, and peopled it with 150000 men. *Frederic* to hinder the Popes proceedings, prepares a fift expedition into Italy, after he had demolished the wals and
1173. fortifications of Mints, which had lately murthered their Bishop *Arnoldus*, and had banished *Christianus* his successour: for *Conradus* the Popes Bishop of Mints, was joined with *Alexander*, and mainly opposed the Emperour, who sent *Christianus* the banished Bishop into Italy, He did good service there for *Frederic*, in recovering Ancona a Sea town, from the Greeks. The third year after he came thither, by the addition of Cæsars Forces he besieged Alexandria, which held the Cæsarians play a long time to their great losse. Wherefore hee was forced to make peace with them: and so disbands imprudently a great part of his Army, whereupon the Lombards revolt again: *Frederic* is fain to send back for his disbanded men; and because the power of *Henricus Leo* was great in Germany, as being Duke of Saxony and Bavaria, having also conquered the country of the Sclavi, and being likewise in league with *Waldemar* King of Denmark; having besides done good service at Jerusalem: the Emperour earnestly implores his help, which hee favouring the Pontifician party, denyed, pretending that hee was aged and infirme of body. *Frederic* was vexed at this denyall, yet ventured upon the Ligurians, and was by the treachery of the Brixians overthrown. His Eagle is taken, and he knockt downe from his horse, being missed 5 dayes, it was thought generally, that he was dead, but the fift day he shewed himselfe at Ticinum, where the Bishops all protested to forsake him, if he did not submit to the Pope.

In the mean time *Alexander* mistrusting the Romans, fled to Venice in a Sea mans habit. *Otto Frederic's* son with a Fleet of 50 ships pursues him. The Venetians in defence of the Pope, encounters with *Otto*, defeats him, takes 48 of his ships, the other two being sunk, and carryes him prisoner to Venice. The Pope to reward this good service, bestowes on the City a ring of gold, with which they should espouse the Sea to them, which custome is yearly observed upon Ascension day by casting a ring into the Sea. *Frederic* having lost both his sons, the one by death, the other by captivity, finding also that his enemies increased both in number and power, and that he was not able to help the afflicted Christians in Asia; in this turbulent condition of the West, resolves by the advice of his
1177. friends to agree with the Pope; who would condescend to no agreement, till *Frederic* should come, and falling downe at the Popes feet, should petition for absolution: then that hee should quiet Italy, and lead his Army into Asia. *Frederic* having consented, repaires to Venice; and at the Gates of S. *Marks* falls down at the Popes Feet, who sets his foot on his neck, saying: *thou shalt walk upon the Basilisk and Aspe, and upon the Lion, and the Dragon thou shalt tread.* *Frederick* replyed: *not to thee but to Peter.* Yes saith the Pope, *both to me and to Peter.*

The Pope having honoured Venice with many priviledges, returnes after 18 years wars into Rome, where he calls a Synod, in which he assumes the power of canonizing of Saints, to him and his successours alone. The Waldenses there are condemned and decreed, that they should be suppressed by force of Armes. *Peter Lombard* is unjustly condemned of heresie, concerning the Trinity. It was also decreed that none should be held for Pope, but he who was chosen by the major
1181. part of the Cardinals, and that the Roman Magistrates should sweare obedience to him and his successours, and then dyed.

Frederic

Frederick returns to Germany, to fit himself for his Asiatick expedition; to that end he calls a Diet at Tamberg, where he accuseth Henricus Leo of Treason, condemns, and proscribes him, commanding the neighbouring Princes to invade his Castles and Dominions; he gave away Saxony to Bernard of Anhalt, and Bavaria to Otto of Wittelsbach, for their good service to him: yet Leo by the means of Henry King of England, his father-in-law, obtained so much of his land again from Frederick as now the Dukes of Brunswich and Luneburg do possesse. The Duke of Bohemia for his good service to Frederick at Millan, obtained the title of King, or at least a confirmation of it. Some think the seven Electors had their original at this time. It is certain, that before this, the Marquesse of Brandeburg and Palatine of Rhene were of small account, and Bohemia but a Dukedome. After this, Frederick declared his son Henry, Cæsar, by girding his sword to him. In the Diet at Mentz the next year, Pope Lucius the 3. and Frederick quarrelled about the Roman Consuls, whom the Pope would have abolished, and therefore was thrust out of Rome by the Citizens; they quarrelled also about the Principality of Maulds or Mathildis, which Cæsar challenged as given to the Empire, the Pope as due to the Church; besides Cæsar chose Rodolphus for Bishop of Trevers, but the Pope set up Volomarus being nominated by the greater part of the Canons; therefore Lucius refuseth to confirm Henry in his Regalities, except his father would give over the Empire. At Millan the marriage was celebrated between Henry Fredericks son, and Constantia the daughter of William King of Sicily, by which means Apulia and Sicily returned again to the Empire: This Henry escaped a great danger at Erford: for as he was composing a difference between Conradus of Mentz, and the Lantgrave of Thuringia, the floor of the chamber yeelded, where they with many others were; four Earls, and divers Gentlemen fell down into a sinke or privy, where they had an uncleanly death. Pope Lucius died at Verona, to whom succeeded Urbanus, called Turbanus, from disturbing the peace of Italy, in raising his Country-men the Lombards against Frederick, whom he was about to excommunicate, but that death prevented it: Some think he died for grief at the losse of Jerusalem. To Urban succeeded Gregory the 8. who died at Pisa the 57. day of his Pontificat; his successor was Clement the 3. who by his Edict urgeth the Holy-war against the Sarazens, for Saladin the Sultan of Ægypt had taken five and twenty Cities from the Principality of Antioch, which City also had been lost by the corruption of the Patriarch who was bribed, had not the unexpected arrival of the Sicilian fleet under William hindred it.

An. Christ.

1182.

1186.

The Christians having lost all in Syria and Phænicia, except Tripol, Tyrus and Antioch, having lost their Army, and the Crosse, the Templers and Hospitalers being slain by Saladine, and Jerusalem surrendred: Frederick, assisted by Richard of England and Philip of France, prepares an expedition into Syria; therefore advancing the Crosse, he gathered an Army of 30000. Isaacius the Eastern Emperor made some resistance, fearing lest Fredericks intent might be to subdue the Grecians; but afterward understanding the truth, he furnisheth him with shipping and provision: he passed over the Propontis into Asia, but the French and English supply could not come soon enough, being hindred by storms. Frederick recovered Cilicia, and killed multitudes of Turks at Iconium which he took, & upon the Sultans submission restored it; then he drove Saladines forces out of Armenia; but unhappily as he went into the river Serra, or as some call it Cydnus, to swim, he was carried away by the stream, and with much difficulty drawn out by the souldiers, he remained speechlesse for three dayes and so died, having reigned 38. years: he was a valiant Prince, but full of troubles; by the father he was of the Gibeline race, and of the Guelphs by the mother; he was buried by his son Frederick in Tyrus, who undertook the remainder of the war, conducted his Army to Antioch, and there left a strong Garrison; thence he went to Laodicea, ready to revolt to the Sarazen, which he

1189.

An. Christi pacified, and fortified, he took also *Berythus* and other Towns, then went to relieve *Ptolemais*, where he died of a pestilent Fever, and most of his Army. By his second wife *Beatrix*, *Frederick* had five sons, *Henry* his successor, *Frederick* of whom I spake now, *Otto* Earle of *Burgundy*, *Conradus* Duke of *Suevia*, and *Philip* Duke of *Tuscia*, who reigned after his brother *Henry*. Its written of *Barbarossa*, he so much honoured Pope *Urban*, that he lighted from his horse when he rid to meet him, and held the Popes stirrop; but afterward he raised the cruel faction in *Italy* between the *Pontificians* which they called *Guelps*, and the *Cæsarians* called *Gibellins*, from the two families in *Germany*, between which of old was deadly feud: shortly after his death the third Holy-war ended, about which time two Orders of Knighthood were made in *Spain*, the one of *Calatarava*, the other of S. *Jago* or *James*; but I finde that these Orders were more ancient, for *Santius* King of *Toledo* instituted the Knighthood of *Calatrava*, *An.* 1130. so called from the Province where they were setled; their garment was black, and on it a red-crosse: The Order of S. *James* was much more ancient, being by King *Ramiro* instituted when he defeated the *Moors* at *Compestella*; at which time St. *James* of *Compestella* was honoured with many priviledges, and great riches, their Ensign was a Red-crosse in form of a sword.

About these times *Petrus Aboilardus* or *Alardus*, broched many dangerous errors in Divinity, against whom under *Lewis* the younger, a Councel is held at *Senon*. From *Petrus de Bruis* sprang up the *Petrobrusiani* called *Sacramentarians*. *Gilbertus Porretanus* Bishop of *Poicton* was deposed for denying the Divine-Essence to be God, but upon his recantation he was restored. The Archbishoprick of *Lisbon* in *Portugal* is erected, and the four Archbishopricks in *Ireland*, to wit, *Armagh*, *Dublin*, *Cassils*, and *Touman*. By Pope *Adrian*, *William* is crowned King of both *Sicilies*, which he holds in fee, then began *Sicily* to be called *Peters-Patrimony*. *Livonia* or *Lisland* is converted to the Faith by S. *Menardus*, who by Pope *Alexander* the 3. is made Bishop there, where now is *Riga* the Metropolis.

Much about this time also, the *Tartarians*, a mighty and warlike people, but without setled habitation, wandring up and down the vast Northern Countries of *Europe* and *Asia*, being subject at first to that great Lord called *Uncam* or *Presbyter-John*, to whom they paid the tenth of their Beasts for tribute; but he fearing their multitudes which daily increased, resolves to disperse them into divers Countries, which so displeased them, that they forsook their former places, and went further North, refusing to pay any more tribute to *Uncam*; then they chose for their King one *Cingis Can*, who in a short time grew so great, that they subdued nine Provinces next them, and at last came upon *Uncam* with a great Army, and slew him, and so *Cingis* possessed his state, and daughter too, which *Uncam* refused to bestow upon him in marriage, when he desired it; the successors of this *Cingis* waxed so potent, that they over-run the great Country of *Cathaia*, wasting many times the Dominions of the *Turks*, *Muscovites*, *Polonians*, *Hungarians* and others, of whose antiquities and actions I dare not speak, because for the most part fabulous and uncertain: They are of different Religions, some Christians, some Mahumetans, and some Pagans. About this time, a certain mad *Sardinian* lived a long time in woods and desarts among the Deer, feeding on grasse, and walking upon all four like beasts; one day as the King of that Island was hunting, he was taken and brought to his parents, who would neither speak to them, nor taste either of bread or wine, but eat grasse; in the night he made an escape to the woods, and was never afterward seen. The Order of *Heremites*, called *Williamites* from *William* Duke of *Glascony* their author, sprung up at this time, they were to follow the rules of S. *Austine*. The eleventh General Councel, and second of the *Latines*, was held in the *Latheran* by Pope *Alexander*; there the *Waldenses* so called from *Waldo* of *Lions*, are condemned, and the Popes election

1162.

1171.

by

by Cardinals alone eſtabliſhed. *Petra* a town beyond *Jordan*, is made a Biſhop- *An. Chriſti*
rick. The *Jewes* are perſecuted in *France* and *Germany*, for crucifying a Chri- 1177.
ſtian child. The *Carmelites* Order began in the Deſarts of *Syria*, which after-
ward was brought into *Europe*, by *Albert* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*. There
was long debate between the Popes and the Romans, about the government
of the City, and form of Magiſtrates: this difference laſted fifty years, from
Innocent 2. till *Clement* 3. who at laſt prevailed. 1188.

In *Rome* to Pope *Innocent* 2. ſucceeded *Celeſtine* 2. five moneths: his ſuc-
ceſſor was *Lucius* 2. eleven moneths: to whom ſucceeded *Eugenius* 3. S. *Bernards*
10 diſciple, who ſate eight years, to him he wrote his Books of *Conſideration*: his
ſucceſſor was *Anaſtaſius* 4. one year: to him ſucceeded *Adrian* 4. an Engliſh-
man, who had before his Popedome converted the *Norwegians* to the faith;
he ſate almoſt five years: *Alexander* 3. ſucceeded, who ſate one and twenty
years, longer then any other Pope except S. *Peter*, who ſate five and twenty
years; *Silveſter* 1. and *Adrian* 1. who reigned three and twenty years; his
Antipopes were, *Victor* 4. *Calixtus* 3. and *Paſchalis* 3. To *Alexander* ſuc-
ceeded *Lucius* 3. four years; he was the firſt that was created Pope by the Car-
dinals alone: his ſucceſſor was *Urban* 3. one year, whom *Gregory* 8. ſucceeded
for one moneth and 27 dayes: *Clemens* 3. ſucceeded for three years.
20

Chap. XIII.

The Eaſtern affairs under Manuel Comnenus, Alexius, Andronicus, Iſaacius *and* Alexius Angeli. 2. *The affairs of* France, Spain, Denmark, Conſtantinople, Rome, England *and* Scotland, *in theſe times, with divers other paſſages.* 3. Henry *the* 6. *Emperor.*

TO *Calojohannes* in the Eaſt, ſucceeded *Manuel Comnenus*, a perfidious,
30 turbulent, and unhappy Prince. *Conradus* the Emperor of the Weſt, and
he, married two ſiſters: yet by his treacherie and conſpiracie with the
Saracens, the Armies of *Frederick* and *Lewis* the French king were overthrown;
for *Conradus* having croſſed the *Thracian Boſphorus*, entred *Aſia*, where he was 1147.
promiſed to be furniſhed with all neceſſaries by the Greeks, who both de-
ceived him, and betrayed all his counſels to the Sultan of *Iconium*, whereby
the German army was ſpoiled with famine and the ſword, and unknown dan-
gerous wayes: wherefore the Emperour was forced to bring away the re-
mainders of his army, and to ſend *Frederick* his brothers ſon poſt, to acquaint
the French army who were going to *Iconium*, of the Greeks treacherie; for
40 they had ſuborned ſome to tell the French, that *Iconium* was delivered up to
the Germans, purpoſely to bring them to the ſame miſerie: it was ſaid that the
Greeks mingled chalk and lime with their flower, by which they poyſoned the
Latines. *Conradus* ſtayed a while at *Epheſus*. The French at the river *Meander*
were beaten by the Turks. *Roger* the Sicilian, to revenge the Latines wrongs,
with a Fleet of ſhips takes *Corcyra*, and waſtes all the Greek coaſt. At laſt *Con-*
radus and the French arrive at *Syria*; *Lewis* haſteneth to *Judæa*. *Conradus* be-
ing brought to *Ptolomais*, and thence to *Jeruſalem*, gave way to beſiege *Damaſ-*
cus, which coſt the Latines much blood; for having taken the ſuburbs, the
City was upon ſurrender, till the Princes began to quarrel who ſhould be go-
56 vernour; the old ſouldiers perceiving that *Theodoricus* of *Flanders* was like to
carry it, removed their camp to the other ſide of the City, and ſo permitted the
inhabitants of the ſuburbs to get within *Damaſcus*, which ſo angred the Em-
peror, that he left the ſiege, and returned home by *Conſtantinople* inglorioufly:
the French followed the next Spring, and were like to be ſurpriſed by the
Greeks, had not *Roger* encountred with *Michael Palæologus*, *Manuels* chief
Commander.

An. Christi

At that time, *Roger* brought from *Chalcis* Silk-makers into *Sicily* and *Apulia*. Another Fleet of Christians at that time took *Lisbone*, and the Country about from the *Saracens*; that City was delivered to *Alphonsus*, made lately Duke of *Lusitania* by the King of *Castile*. The *Danes* and *Saxons* brought the *Sclavi* to Christianity. *Lewis* returning from *Sicily* into *France*, put away his wife *Elianor*, pretending the unlawfulnesse of that marriage, by reason of consanguinity: she presently married to *Henry* of *Anjou*, King of *England* and Duke of *Normandy* by right of his mother, Earle of *Angiers* and *Turon* by the father, but by the right of his wife Earle of *Poicton* and Duke of *Gascoigny*, which occasioned great war between *England* and *France*. Legats are sent from *Armenia* to Pope *Eugenius*, to be instructed in the mysteries of Christianity; who brought news, that *Presbyter-John* that great Eastern Prince had overrun *Media* and *Persia*, purposely to invade *Jerusalem*; The *Turks* also upon the departure of *Conradus* and *Lewis*, chiefly the Sultans of *Damascus* and *Iconium*, began again to make excursions upon the Christian territories. *Joscelinus* Earl of *Edessa*, as he was at stool, was surprised and imprisoned. *Noradinus* made excursions upon *Antioch*. *Manuel* the Greek Emperor obtains *Edessa* from *Baldwin* the 3. and within a year lost it to *Noradine*. *Raimundus* Prince of *Antioch* is slain by *Noradine*, whose widow *Reinold* of Castle married, and with her obtained *Antioch*: He suppressed the high-way robbers of *Cilicia*; and for want of his pay from the Greek Cæsar, plunders *Cyprus*; and afterward to prevent a greater war, submits to *Manuel*. The Templers and Hospitallers, though much inriched with booties, deny to pay their Tenths any more to the Patriarch of *Jerusalem*, having for mony procured immunity at the Court of *Rome*. In *Manuels* time lived *Eustathius*, *Homers* Interpreter, and Bishop of *Thessalonica*, who manfully resisted *Manuel*, endeavouring to corrupt the Christian doctrine with some points of Mahumetanisme. As this Emperor had many faults, yet some good things he had in him; for he was very bountifull, in forcing all his treasures upon the Sultan of *Iconium*, when he was in want of money, (but I should rather call this prodigality:) He was also tender-hearted; for not only sent he Greek Chyrurgions to cure his son-in-law, *Baldwin* 3. king of *Jerusalem*, who had broke his arm in hunting, but he himself also on his knee did use to foment and bind up the Kings broken arm: He shewed also his piety, before his death, in repenting that he had entertained Astrologers, or hearkned to their predictions, finding them by experience to be false and deluforie, for they had promised that he should live fourteen years longer then he did, therefore by his hand-writing he condemned their impostures; he
1180. reigned 38 years, and died the 60. year of his age; a little before his death he resigned his Empire, and imbraced the Monastical life; he had two wives, one was *Conradus Cæsars* wifes sister, the other was daughter to *Raimund* Prince of *Antioch*, of whom he had *Alexius* his successor.

This *Alexius* was betrothed to *Anna* daughter of *Lewis* the French king, which exasperated the Greeks, fearing the Latines would become too great in *Byzantium*: therefore they send for *Andronicus* the cousin-german of *Alexius*, living in exile among the Turks in *Chaldæa*; he raiseth an Army, which he brings in view of *Byzantium*, having first overthrown the forces of *Protosebastus*, who undertook the protection of the young *Cæsar*; afterward *Andronicus* puts out his eyes, and imprisoned him: So being admitted to the government, he thrusts out all the Latines, and many of them he murthers; then undertakes the protection of *Alexius*, whom he carried on his shoulders to the Church to be crowned; then having removed all that might oppose him out of the way, he accuseth *Xene*, *Alexius* his mother, of treason, as if she had plotted with *Bela* king of *Hungary* against the State, and so strangles her; shortly after he strangles the young Emperor, being but fifteen years old, and having reigned but three, whose body being wrapped up in lead was let down into the sea.

Andro-

Andronicus having murthered *Alexius*, reigns alone, and marries with *Anna* or *Agnes* who had been betrothed to *Alexius*, being as yet but eleven years old, and he an aged man. He took *Nicæa* and *Prusia*, exercising all kind of cruelty on his enemies who had fled thither. *Alexius*, *Manuels* Nephew, and the Latine souldiers flie to *William* king of *Sicily*, who to revenge the wrongs received from *Andronicus*, took *Thessalonica* & *Dyrrachium*, using all kind of cruelties against the Citizens. In the mean time *Andronicus* rageth like a savage beast at *Byzantium*, upon the living and the dead also, causing them to be dragged out of their graves: Understanding that one whose name began with these letters, *J.S.* was to be his successor, and that it was *Isaacius Angelus*, he sent one to kill him, who was killed by him; whereupon *Angelus* fearing the cruelty of *Andronicus*, fled into the Temple; the people immediately in a great tumult salute him Emperor. *Andronicus* perceiving that he was hated by the people, forsaken by his souldiers, and pursued after by *William* of *Sicily*, he thought to escape by sea, but could not by reason of the storms; therefore he is laid hold on, brought back to the City, set with his face backwards on a lean scabbed Camel, his right hand being cut off, and one of his eyes thrust out, at last is brought upon a theater, where he is hang'd by the feet upon two posts, and there by the enraged multitude is torne in peeces by pincers and flesh-hooks, he crying out in the mean while, *Lord be mercifull!* and, *Why do you bruise the broken reed!* So he died after two years reign, and in him ended the *Comneni*. *An. Christi* 1183.

Isaacius Angelus by the popular faction is made Emperor: he at first complied with the people, and eased them of many burthens; he overthrew the Sicilian fleet sent against him, and took the two chief Commanders *Richard* and *Baldwin*; but undeastanding that King *William* was preparing another Fleet for revenge, he made his peace with him: He was much troubled with two false *Alexii*, who called themselves the sons of *Manuel*; but having suppressed them, he gave himself to luxury, wantonnesse, and oppression. He had ill successe against the *Mysians* or *Wallachians*, who rebelled against him: He strove to hinder *Barbarossa's* march through *Thracia*, but so doing he procured his anger, to his great losse: He sent a Fleet to regain *Cyprus* from *Isaacius Comnenus* the Tyrant, but with no successe: He committed sacriledge in robing the Churches. At last he was seised upon by his own brother *Alexius Angelus*, (whom he had redeemed from the Turks with much gold, and made him his Consort in the Empire) and was by him deprived both of his eyes and government, the 10. year of his reign, being deluded by the Astrologers, who made him believe that he should reign two and thirty years: His son long after got him out of prison, who upon the change of aire and diet shortly after died. 1185.

Alexius Angelus, who changed his sir-name, and would be called *Comnenus*; having blinded his brother, invades the Empire; but as he was riding in triumph with the Crown on his head, the Imperial horse (having more wit then the people that chose this Tyrant) flung him down, with which fall the Crown broke, an ill presage. He gave himself to rioting and tyrannie: he threatned to kill *Alexius* the younger, son to *Isaacius*, who therefore fled to *Venice*, where he procured the Venetian and French assistance. At that time *Boniface* Marquisse of *Montferrat*, *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, with divers other Commanders, were met at *Venice*, to have their assistance in their expedition to *Asia*, which was promised with a great sum of mony, conditionally that they would assist the Republike to besiege the Town *Jadera*, that had revolted from them to the *Hungarians*, which accordingly was performed. In the mean time *Alexius* arrives, complaining of his Uncles tyrannie, his Fathers imprisonment, and his own banishment; promising them great matters, if they would aid him to put down the Tyrant. 1195.

An. Christi

Upon this a Fleet is prepared of two hundred and fifty ſhips, in which were thirty thouſand Foot, and a thouſand Curiſers. *Alexius* the Tyrant, in the interim, ſuffers his Towns to be taken in the Eaſt by the Sultan of *Iconium*, and his Armies to be beat by the *Schythians* and *Wallachians*. The Venetian fleet ſets ſaile from *Dalmatia*, and arrives into the Bay of *Byzantium*, having broken the Iron-chain which ſecured the Bay: Upon this, the Tyrant robbed the Emperours Tombes, and fled with a great treaſure of gold, having reigned eight yeares. The City-gates are opened to the beſiegers, and the Citizens adore their old Emperor, whom the Latines had delivered out of priſon and re-inſtalled: but the people deſire that young *Alexius* might be joyned with his father *Iſaacius*; this was granted, conditionally that the old man would ratifie his ſons promiſes to them: but the people murmured and fretted, that ſo much treaſure ſhould be given to the Latines as was promiſed, crying out, that the Empire was pawned by a Child, to a proud and covetous Nation; hereupon the Latines being incenſed fall to plundring, not ſparing the Churches, they ſet on fire the *Saracens* Synagogue, by which a great part of the City was burned; there is no end of their exactions: The two Emperors ſate ſtill, permitting their deliverers to pay themſelves; whereupon the enraged multitude, by the inſtigation of *Alexius Ducas* a ſtout man, met together in the great Church, railing againſt both the Cæſars, calling them evil Angels, and threatening to chooſe another Emperor; in the interim old *Iſaacius* dieth, and one *Nicolas Canabus* is named Emperor: *Alexius* upon this ſends back for *Boniface* the Marquis, and the Latines, to put down this new Tyrant. *Ducas* (ſirnamed *Murzuffus*, from his hanging-brows) comes privately to *Alexius*, counſels him to flie betimes from the fury of the people, and therefore gets him to come out of the palace, pretending that he would protect him; but he preſently thruſts him into a dark dungeon, and then ſtrangles him the 7. moneth of his reign, and withall drawes *Canabus* out of the Temple: for ſome time he defended the City againſt the beſiegers; at length he goeth out to treat with them, but was beat back with loſſe; he ſuſtained the ſiege a while, but finding the City unable to hold out, he gets away, the 76. day of his government, carrying with him *Euphroſine* the Empreſs, and her daughter *Eudocia*, with whom he was in love. *Theodorus Laſcaris* ſon-in-law to *Alexius Comnenus* fled likewiſe. At laſt the *Grecians* fall to petition for quarter, ſubmitting themſelves to the *Latines*, who uſed them with all kind of rigor and tyrannie. Thus the chief *Grecians* departing out of the City, and the reſt yielding themſelves, *Byzantium* and its Provinces fall now into the power of the *Latines*. After this, *Murzuffus* or *Murziphlus* is apprehended in *Peloponneſus*, brought to *Byzantium*, where his eyes were thruſt out, and he flung down from a high tower by the Latines; the people raged on the dead carkaſſe, tearing it in peeces.

The City being taken, fifteen men are ſelected who ſhould name the Emperor: the *Venetians* were to name a Patriarch of their own Nation, if ſo be the Empire ſhould not fall to them: So the Earls of *Flanders* and S. *Paul* named five men apeece, *Montferrat* and the *Allobroges* as many more, the *Venetians* name the reſt; the ſuffrages fell to *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, to whom was given the half of the Cities, of the Provinces, Tributes, and other things which they had conqueſted in the war. Thus the City being ſetled, they march into *Thracia*, where all places between *Byzantium* and *Adrianopolis* are ſurrendred. *Baldwin* to gratifie his fellows, declares *Boniface* the Marquis King of *Theſſaly*, and beſtowes the Iſle of *Crete* (which *Boniface* had got as a gift from *Alexius Angelus*, and which he willingly reſigned) upon the *Venetians*; this occaſioned
1204. the emulation betwixt the *Venetians* and *Genuois*. So now the Eaſtern Empire is transferred from the *Greeks* to the *French*.

In

In *France*, to *Lewis* the Groſſe ſucceeded *Lewis* the 7. called the Younger: he married with *Alienora* the daughter of *William* Duke of *Gaſcoign*. He made his expedition into *Paleſtina*, where he loſt his Army by the Greeks perfidiouſneſſe (as we have ſaid) after a years ſtay he returns, and divorceth *Alienora*; then marrieth with *Mary*, or as ſome call her *Beatrix*, daughter to *Alphonſus* 7 Emperor of *Spain*, and *Alienora* (as is already ſaid) married with *Henry* Duke of *Normandy* and King of *England*. This *Lewis* died at *Paris* the 44. year of his reign. To him ſucceeded *Philip*, called *Auguſtus*, and *Adeodatus*: he was made King in his fathers life-time: He baniſhed the *Jewes* out of *France*; and with *Richard* of *England* went to *Paleſtina*, where with the confederate Princes he took *Acona*, and returns the ſame year into *France*: He had five years war with *Richard of England*; he obtained two victories, one over the Engliſh at *Poictou*, another over *Otho* the Emperor in *Flanders*; he died the 43. year of his reign after his fathers death. In his time was held a Synod at *Paris*, in which the Clergy parted with their Tythes, for promoting the war againſt *Saladine* the Turk: he much enlarged and beautified *Paris*. In his time a cuſtome aroſe in *France*, that when any Prieſt was dying, he laid on his breaſt a paper containing the true faith of the Reſurrection, becauſe at that time ſome made queſtion of it. Then alſo did ſome Citizens of *Breme* and *Lubec* ſet up the Order of the Marian ſouldiers at *Ptolomais*, after the form of the Teutonick order, which two are by ſome confounded: Colonies of them were tranſlated into *Germany*, to ſubdue the *Sclavi* and other Northern infidels.

An. Chriſti
1137.
1147.
1150.
1180.
1191.

In *England*, after the death of King *Henry*, *Steven* Earle of *Boloigne*, ſonne and heire-apparent of *Stephen* Earle of *Bloys*, and of *Adela* the Conquerors daughter, made himſelf King, albeit he had ſolemnly vowed to King *Henry* to further the ſucceſſion of *Mauld* the Empreſſe, and *Henry's* daughter. He ſeiſed on the treaſure of his unkle King *Henry*, and diſperſt it among ſuch as he knew would ſtand him in need. He created divers Noblemen and Knights, and releaſed the Dane-gilt, cauſing ſome rigorous lawes to be mitigated: He much advanced the Clergie with priviledges and immunities, exempting them from the Temporal Magiſtrate: he erected many Forts and Caſtles: he gave all *Cumberland* to *David* King of *Scots* and uncle to *Mauld* the Empreſſe, that he ſhould not help her to recover her right; he alſo made *Davids* eldeſt ſon Earle of *Huntington*; yet not long after (in her quarel) he waſted the North with fire and ſword, till he was forced with loſſe to retreat by *Thurſton* Archbiſhop of *York*. In the ſixth year of his reigne, *Mauld*, with her baſe-brother *Robert* Earle of *Glouceſter*, landed with an Army, which was much increaſed by the acceſſe of Engliſh and Welſh: the King with his Army encounters the Empreſſe; a bloody battell was fought, in the end the King is taken, being forſaken by his common-ſouldiers, and ſent to the Caſtle of *Briſtol*, and after three moneths ſet at liberty, to free the Earle of *Glocester* who was taken priſoner. The Empreſſe is received into *London*, where ſhe was like to be ſurpriſed, for refuſing to reſtore King *Edwards* lawes; therefore ſhe ſuddenly flies to *Oxford*, where ſhe is unexpectedly beſieged; but cloathing herſelf, with her chiefeſt complices, in white, ſhe eſcaped by the benefit of the ſnow, and got away in a ſhip to *Normandy*; After this was peace. In the 17. yeare of this Kings reign died *Geoffery Plantagenet* husband to the Empreſſe; and *Henry Short-mantle* her eldeſt ſon married *Elianor* (as was ſaid already) heire to the Earle of *Poictou*. This *Henry* was encouraged to invade *England*, which was his due in the right of his mother; He therefore arrives with his Army, whom King *Steven* encounters, whoſe only ſonne *Euſtace* was unfortunately drowned, which cauſed a peace; for *Steven* being childleſſe, adopted *Henry*, and proclaimed him heir-apparent to the Crown: the Prince returns to *Normandy*, and

1142.
1151.

An. Christi and the next yeare after King *Steven* died, the nineteenth yeare of his Reigne: he was buried in the Abbey of *Feversham* in *Kent*, which he had founded. And so in *Henry*, the Saxon blood is again restored to the Crown.

1154. As *Henry* was besieging one of his Castles in *Normandy*, which was surprised by the French, newes came to him of King *Stevens* death: He was advised to raise the siege, and hasten for *England*; but he resolves not to stirre till he had taken the Castle, which upon this was surrendred: then he sailes into *England*, and is crowned. He reformed the Common-lawes, and divided the Kingdome into sixe Circuits, appointing Judges twice every yeare to ride these Circuits. He banished the strangers, who had flocked hither in great multitudes, and such of the Nobility as had adhered too much to King *Steven*: He caused most of the Inland-castles to be demolished: He seised on all Crown-lands which had been alienated, and resumes into his own hands *Cumberland*, *Northumberland*, and *Huntington*: He married *Geoffery* one of his youngest sonnes, to *Constance* daughter of *Conaccus* Duke of *Britany*, by whom he had that Dutchy; his youngest sonne married with *Adela* King *Lewis* of *France* his daughter; and he bestowed his daughter *Mauld* on *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*, about which time died the Empresse his mother. He never suffered his Souldiers to be idle, but did still exercise them at home or abroad. In the 19. year of his Reigne, he sailed into *Ireland*, and made himselfe by his Victories
1174. Lord of that Country. He caused his eldest Son *Henry*, and his wife *Margaret* the French Kings daughter, to be Crowned twice; himself, the second time, serving as a Sewer at his Sons table; who then bragged, *That his Father was but the Son of an Empresse, but himselfe the Son both of a King and Queen.*

His sonnes *Henry*, *Geoffery*, and *John*, with the Earles of *Leicester* and *Chester*, and *William* King of *Scots*, took part with the French against him; yet *Henry* prevailed, and pardoned his Sonnes and Lords for this rebellion. Prince *Henry* died before his Father, and *John* was poysoned by a Monk. The rebellions of his Sonnes put him into a Feaver, which killed him in four dayes: He died in *Normandy*, the five and twentieth yeare of his Reigne, and was buried at *Founteverard* in *France*. He was a fortunate, wise, and valiant Prince: but unhappy in his Childrens rebellion; his vain dotage on *Rosamond*, whom he loved above his chaste wife *Elianor*; and in his quarrel with *Thomas Becket* Lord Chancellour, and Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who would not be invested by the King, but went to *Rome*, and received his Pall from *Innocent* the second, and was made a Legate: at his return, he surrenders his Chancellorship and Great-seale to the King, not shewing him any reason why he did so. Upon this discord between *Henry* and *Thomas*, the Clergie grew insolent without controll; whereupon the King calls a Parliament, in which King *Stevens* Law for exempting the Clergie from the Temporal power, is abolished, by the consent of the Bishops, even of *Becket* himself at last, but with much adoe; who after he had sworne to allow this act, yet relapses, and obtaines the Popes pardon for this sin of his: hereupon the King seiseth upon all *Beckets* Temporal lands, and demands an account of 30000 marks, which he had in his Chancellorship turned to his own use: This *Becket* refused to doe, and went privately to *Rome*; after whom the King sends letters to the Pope, complaining of *Becket*; but the Pope took his part, and threatned the King with excommunication, unlesse he were restored. In the interim he is recommended to the Abbot of *Pontinyack* in *France*, to whom the King sent to have *Becket* turned out, and withall forbids accesse from the Pope into *England*, *Beckets* friends also are banished: The Abbot fearing the Kings displeasure, perswades *Thomas* to leave his house; then did *Lewis* the French king procure him better entertainment,

ment, and animated the Pope againſt King *Henry*; who ſails over into *France*, *An. Chriſt.* and in the French Kings preſence proffered to reſtore *Thomas* and his friends, if he would take the former oath and ſubſcribe; which he utterly refuſed to doe, except he might adde this exception, *Salvo honore Dei*; which highly diſpleaſed the King, who returns into *England:* two Legats with an Interdict againſt him came from *Rome*, which made him paſſe over to *Normandy* to conferre again with *Becket*, who was ſtill the ſame man; ſo the King was forced to reſtore him. The young King *Henry* was alſo offended with him, for refuſing to abſolve the four Biſhops whom he had ſuſpended for performing the ſolemnities to him without his leave, and ſo was confined to his houſe in *Canterbury*; but within foure dayes after, *Becket* was murthered by foure aſſaſinates in his own Church, for which the Pope accuſeth the King, and enjoyns him to war three years in perſon in *Paleſtina*, but this he redeemed by erecting three Religious houſes; he viſited *Beckets* ſhrine, walking barefooted from *London* to *Canterbury* as he was enjoined, and there was whipped by all the Monks; the four murtherers died miſerably in exile, within four yeares.

Richard ſirnamed *Cour-de-Lion*, king *Henry* the 2. his eldeſt ſon now living, 1189. ſucceeded his father: he firſt of all enlargeth Queen *Eleanor* his mother, who had been reſtrained by *Henry*, for diſliking his wantonneſſe with *Roſamond*. She governed the kingdom, till her Son came home from *Normandy*: ſhe ſet at liberty priſoners for ſmall offences, and paid many of their ſmall debts: in this her ſon *Richard* did imitate her, pardoning ordinary offences, and freeing all his debtors. He made his brother *John* Earl of *Lancaſter*, and married him to the Earl of *Gloceſters* heire; he gave him alſo *Nottingham*, *Devonſhire*, and *Cornwal*; but he proved unthankfull, in affecting the Crown. This *Richard* in a ſhort time by his bounty exhauſted all his fathers treaſures. He was perſwaded by the Pope, to accompany in perſon *Frederick* the Emperor and *Philip Auguſtus* of *France*, into the Holy-land; *Sicily* is the place appointed for their meeting: And becauſe he would not be burthenſome to his people in taxing them, he ſold his Forts of *Barwick* and *Roxburgh* to the *Scots* King for 100001. he ſold alſo the Earldom of *Durham* to the Biſhop; he made ſale alſo of divers Honours and Manors. Having fitted himſelf for this expedition, he commits the government of the Kingdome to *William Longchamp* Biſhop of *Ely*, who ſhortly after was made the Popes Legate. Then he ſailed to *Cyprus*, being driven thither by tempeſt; which he won, and ſold to the Templars for 30000 marks: Thence he ſail'd into *Sicily*, where he diſcontented *Philip* the French king, becauſe he denied him a ſhare in his conqueſt of *Cyprus*, being he was abſent when it was taken, and becauſe their covenant of equal-ſharing extended only to the Holy-land; yet they agreed for the preſent, and proceeded together in their journey, having good ſucceſſe againſt the *Turks*; they took many Towns and Forts, and among the reſt *Acon*, where *Richard* pull'd down the Banner of Archduke *Leopold* ſet on the walls, ſaying, that his own Banner ſhould be firſt ſet up, ſeeing he firſt entred the City; at this *Philip* was much diſpleaſed again with *Richard*, ſo that he returned in a rage home, carrying with him the Forces that belonged to the Emperor and to *Leopold*: King *Richard* notwithſtanding, by the help of ſome Chriſtian Princes with him, perſued his victories againſt the *Turks*; and then returned to *Cyprus*, which he won from the Templars, and exchanged it for *Jeruſalem*, with *Guido* or *Guy* of *Leſingham*, the laſt Chriſtian king, whence *Richard* was ſtiled King of *Jeruſalem*. In the mean while, the Biſhop of *Ely* (ſon of a Cow-herd) did ſo tyranniſe over the kingdome in his Protectorſhip, that he became odious: wherefore 1191. perceiving how he was hated, went diſguiſed in a womans habit to *Dover*, purpoſing to leave the kingdome; but he was diſcovered, and by the people dragged up and down, and after ſent to the Tower; but when the King returned, he was reſtored to his offices: ſhortly after, as he was travelling to *Rome*,

An. Christi Rome, he died. In the Kings absence, his brother *John* seised upon many Towns and Forts, angry that *Ely* was preferred to him in the Protectorship: K. *Philip* also made many incursions into *Normandy*, which caused king *Richard* to forsake his Conquests in *Asia*: but in his return he suffered shipwrack, between *Aquileia* and *Venice*, and by swimming saved his life; he was shortly after taken prisoner by *Leopold* in *Austria*, and sold to the Emperor *Henry* the 6. for 60000 marks, from whom he ransomed himselfe for 100000 pounds: then he rides post to *Normandy*, raiseth an army, and revengeth himself upon the French king. In this mean while his brother *John* repaires to him, with humble submission and acknowledgment of his disloyalty, laying the fault thereof upon *Ely's* misgovernment; hereupon *John* is received into the Kings favour. *Richard*, upon his return, ransacked the Monasteries, taxed the people, and resumed all the Mannors, Castles, and Offices he had sold, into his hands, to pay his ransome, 80000.l. whereof he paid, the rest was discharged by *Leopold*, whom the Pope excommunicates for making *Richard* a prisoner, after his good service in the
1193. Holy-war. He caused himself to be again crowned King; then transports an Army into *France*, where at the Castle of *Chalons* neer to *Lymois* he was shot with an arrow, of which he died within three dayes, the 9. year of his reign; but before he died, he won the Castle, causing all to be put to the sword ex-
1199. cept the malefactor, whom he pardoned. In the beginning of this Kings reign, *Robin-Hood* and *Little-John* robbed and spoiled many rich misers and usurers; but *Robin* being betrayed bled himself to death, so his theevish rout was dispersed. King *Richard* was buried at *Fonteverard* in *France*, at his fathers feet: he left three parts of his treasure to his brother *John*, and the fourth to his servants.

1153. In *Scotland*, to *David* succeeded his grandchild *Malcolm*, against whom *Sumerled Thane* or Earl of *Argile* rebelled, whose Army was defeated, and he driven into *Ireland* by *Gilchristius* Earl of *Angus*. King *Henry* of *England*, forgetfull of his oath which he made to king *David* when he knighted him, that he would never trouble him nor his posteritie for those lands he held in *England*, took the jurisdiction of *Carliste* from the Archbishop of *Glasco*; then he caused this young King to swear him fealtie at *Chester*, and carried him against his will over with him into *France*, thereby to keep the *Scots* from invading *England*, and to bring *Malcolm* in dislike with the French king. At his return into *Scotland*, he endeavoured to pacifie the offended Nobility, excusing himself, that what he did in assenting to king *Henry's* demands, was by force; and so they were pacified for the present. After this, *Malcolm* is invited by *Henry* to the Parliament at *York*, where he is accused for assisting the French; therefore his lands in *England* were forfeited to the Crown: upon his return homeward, the people were so incensed, that they had almost seised on him in his house at *Berth*: He complained to his Nobility, how he had been circumvented by *Henry*, wherefore a war is proclaimed; the two Armies met at *Carliste*; but to avoid blood-shedding, *Henry* was contented to leave *Cumberland* and *Huntingdon* to *Malcolm*, and only take *Northumberland* from him; to which *Malcolm* against the mind of his Peers assented, and therefore was despised by them: Upon this the country of *Galloway* rebels, but in three battels they were defeated by *Gilchrist* Earl of *Angus*. The *Moravian* rebellion was worse, in which the Kings forces were beaten first; but a new Army being sent, the *Moravians* were quelled, and most of them killed or fled. *Sumerled* took occasion
1163. by these tumults, to invade the sea-coast with an Army, having the assistance of malecontents; but he was apprehended, and his forces defeated. The Parliament proposeth a marriage for the King, being now 22 years of age; but he refuseth to marry at all, preferring Celibate to the married life, and shewing that he had provided an heire for the Crown. So all being quiet at home and abroad, he gave himself to repairing and building of Religious houses, and died
1165. shortly after, the 25 year of his age, having reigned above 12 years.

To

To *Malcolm* succeeded his brother *William*. He is called upon by king *Henry* to do homage for *Cumberland* and *Huntington*; for that cause he repairs to him, and withall remands *Northumberland* as his due. *Henry* promised to satisfie him the next Parliament, at which he was desired to be present: thither when he came, *Henry* going over to *France* with his Army, takes *William* with him against his will: having stayed there some time, with much adoe he got leave to go for *Scotland*, whither when he arrived, he fals to settle the kingdome, and to build forts: then he sends Embassadors to *Henry*, to demand *Northumberland*: *Henry* being busie in the French war, was content to part with a share of *Northumberland*, but not with all; afterward this share caused a new war, for *William* demanded the rest, and *Henry* was sorry for giving so much; Armies are raised, and incursions made on both sides; at last they came to a parley, in which *William* unexpectedly was surprised by 400 horse in ambush, which he thought to have been *Scots*, and carried into *France*. Having staid there some time, he ransoms himself, by delivering unto the English four garrisons, *viz.* *Edinburgh*, *Sterlin*, *Rosburgh*, and *Barwick*, with fifteen hostages, till the sum agreed upon was paid; in the mean time he is dismissed, who being returned home, he with his Nobility swear fealty to the King of *England*, till these garrisons were redeemed; then he quiets the tumults at home. King *Henry* demands, that the Bishops of *Scotland* should acknowledge the Archbishop of *York* for their Metropolitan, which they refused to do, for this cause they complained to Pope *Alexander* 3. who freed the Scotish Bishops from subjection to the English yoke. Shortly after this, *Gilchrist* kills his wife the Kings sister, for being found in adultery: he is summoned to appeare to answer for this murther, who refuseth, therefore is proscribed, his houses pull'd down, and his whole estate forfeited: Some years after this, the King returning from *Murry*, where he overthrew *Donald Baan* that had rebelled there, meets with *Gilchrist* in the habit of a begger, whom demanding what he was, fell flat at the Kings feet, confessing his miserable condition; at which the King being moved with pity, considering his former greatnesse and good services, restored him to his ancient honours and estate. *An. Christ.*

King *Richard* having succeeded *Henry*, and preparing for his Eastern expedition, sends home the Scots hostages, and restores to *William* his three garrisons, (for *Edinburgh*-Castle was redeemed before, upon the payment of the fourth part of the ransome) he frees him also and his successors from all bargains and covenants made with king *Henry*; in requital of which favour, *William* sends him towards his charges in the Holy-war 10000 marks, and sent his brother *David* Earl of *Huntington* to wait on king *Richard*, who in his return from *Syria* was shipwracked, sold by the *Egiptians*, bought by the *Venetians*, and sent home the 4. year after his departure from *Scotland*. King *Richard* also being returned, was visited by king *William* and his brother, with a present of 2000 marks: here *William* fell sick, and it was rumoured through *Scotland* that he was dead; which gave occasion to *Harald* Earl of *Orkney* and *Cathnesse*, to pick a quarrel with the Bishop of *Cathnesse*, and then to thrust out his eyes, and cut out his tongue; but *VVilliam* being returned, he caused *Harald* to be apprehended and hanged, having first put out his eyes, and emasculated all his male-children. This same year *Alexander* king *VVilliams* son was born. 1190. 1199.

King *John* of *England* quarreled with *VVilliam*, for refusing to aid him against *Philip* the French king; therefore began to erect a garrison over against *Barwick*, which the *Scots* threw down again: upon this Armies are raised on both sides; but without any blowes, a peace was concluded, and agreed, that *Williams* two daughters should marry *Johns* two sonnes, and that no garrison should be built neer *Barwick*. After this, *William* lost his youngest sonne, with his nurse and fourteen more, by the sudden inundation of *Tay*, which drowned a great part of *Berth* in the night-time, so that the king hardly escaped himself; therefore he caused the Town to be built in a more safe place upon the same

An. Christi same river, and called it *Perth*, now S. *Johns-town*. After this it was agreed between the two kings, *John* and *William*, that for the time to come, the children of the Scots kings should do homage for their lands in *England*, but not the
1214. kings themselves. Not long after this, *William* died, the 74 year of his age, and of his reign 49.

In *Rome*, to *Clemens* 3. succeeded *Celestine* 3. who sate 4 years and 7 moneths: he excommunicated all *France* for king *Philips* divorce, who had repudiated his wife *Gelberga*; he confirmed the Teutonick Order, prescribing to them the rule of S. *Augustine*, with a white-garment and black-crosse, injoyning them to say in 24 houres, the *Lords Prayer*, *Creed*, and *Ave Maria*, 200 times. To *Celestine* succeeded *Innocent* 3. who sate 18 years and 7 moneths: He sent some Religious men to convert the *Tartars*, who by the *Sarazens* perswasion preferred Mahumetanisme to Christianisme; some think this was done afterward by *Innocent* 4. He also procured *Livonia* to imbrace the Christian faith: under him was held the 12. Oecumenical Councel at *Lateran*, at which were present two Patriarchs, of *Constantinople* and *Jerusalem*, seventy Archbishops, four hundred Bishops, twelve Abbots, and eight hundred Priors; in this Synod the word *Transubstantiation* was confirmed. About this time sprang up the Order of Predicants by *Dominicus* the Spaniard, of which are recorded to have been 4143 Monasteries: the *Minorites* Order by *Francis* the Italian, of these were 90000, in *Platina's* time.: the *Carmelites*, by *Albert* Patriarch of *Jerusalem*, the *Eremites* Order also of S. *Austin*, & the Order of the *Holy-Trinity*.

1191. In *Germany*, *Henry* 6. succeeded to his father *Barbarossa*, whose wife *Constance* daughter to *Roger* king of *Sicily*, was married out of a Monastery; by her *Sicily* was annexed to the Empire: when she was fifty years old, she was brought to bed at *Panormus* of *Frederick* 2. in a publike Chappel which *Henry* had built to that purpose, that it might be seen the child was not supposititious. He was resisted in the beginning of his reign, by the Bishops of *Colen* and *Liege*, with whom the *Burgundians* sided, but they were quickly suppressed by *Henry*, after he had put the Bishop of *Liege* to death, who was more active against him then the other. After many conflicts, he quieted the *Sicilians* and *Apulians* who would have revolted from him, and put divers of their ring-leaders to exquisite torments, fleaing some of them alive, blinding others, and thrusting sharp pikes through them; some that aimed to be Kings, he crowned with Iron-crowns red-hot: for this cause he was named *Henricus Asper*, *Henry* the rough or sharp. In *Italy* he placed new Governours, to keep them from rebellion: Being well used at *Cremona* and *Bononia*, he gave them power to coin their own mony. The death of *Saladine*, (who caused his shirt to be carried in his funeral, with this acclamation, *Here is all that is left of the great Conqueror of the East!*) gave hopes to *Henry* of some good to be done in *Syria*; therefore he prepares an expedition, and to that purpose sends great forces before, under the Bishop of *Mentz* and divers other Commanders, who took *Joppe* from the *Saracens*, and fortified divers Towns: but as *Henry* was coming after with his supplies, he fell sick of a feaver at *Messana*, where he died; some think he was poysoned by his wife, for his adulteries; he was buried at *Panormus* in a Porphyrie tomb, having reigned somwhat above seven years: his son *Frederick* was now five years old, whom he committed to the care of his brother *Philip*; him he had made Governor of *Hetruria*, and married him to
1199. *Irene* the sister of *Alexius* the Greek Emperor. *Henry's* death hindred the Christians progresse in *Syria*.

In *Spain*, the *Numidians*, *Moors*, and *Africans*, being arrived in great fleets, set upon *Alphonsus* king of *Castile*, whom they overthrew, and laid waste his country, so that the *French* were afraid they would passe over the Pyrenean hills thither: this expedition of the *Moors* into *Spain*, was occasioned by the *Danes*, *Frisslanders*, and *Hollanders*, who in several fleets set upon and wasted the coast of *Barbary*; in revenge whereof, the *Moors* fell upon *Spain*.

THE

THE FIFTH BOOK OF THE SECOND PART:

Intreating of the times from *Philip* Emperour in the West, and the French Empire in the East, till *Wenceslaus* the German Emperour, containing the History of 200. years.

CHAP. I.

1. The Troubles of Europe *under* Philip, Otto *the Fourth, and* Frederick *the Second, Emperours of the West. 2. The Affairs of the Holy Land. 3. Of the* Danish *and other Europeian Affairs.*

THe report of *Henry's* death being come, *Philip* hasteth from *Hetruria* into *Germany*, sending the Peers of the Empire before, desiring them to fulfill the will of the deceased Emperour, in confirming his sons Succession, and his own Protectorship; but Pope *Innocent* by his Legats sent to the Princes to rescind the will of *Henry*, and to reject *Philip* from the Government of the Empire, for he hated *Frederick* and his race, and so he did *Philip*, for curbing the Popes power in *Italy*: therefore he is excommunicated, and the Bishop of *Sutrie* that absolved him degraded upon the Popes instigation. Many voted for *Bertholdus* D. of *Loringia*: but the King of *Bohemia*, D. of *Saxon*, Marques of *Mysnia* and *Bavare*, with others in Parliament declared *Philip* Emperour; which *Bertholdus* perceiving, and that his power was too weak to resist, yielded to *Philip*; upon this the Pope instigates the Princes to confer the Empire upon *Otto* the son of *Henricus Leo*, and withall excommunicates *Philip*, which made the *Bohemian* and other Princes to fall off; hereupon *Otto* is crowned at *Aix* by the Bishop of *Colen*; but *Philip* being nothing dejected, raiseth an Army, takes in *Strausburg*, and at *Spire* encounters with *Otto*, whom he defeats and puts to flight; upon this the Lantgrave of *Thuringia*, after his Countrey was wasted by *Philip*, submitted: then, because the *Bohemians* sided with *Otto*, *Philip* falls upon them with fire and sword; he forced also the Cities upon the *Rhine*, even *Colen* it self to yield, so that *Adolphus* the Bishop was fain to crown him at *Aix*, notwithstanding K. *Richard* and K. *John* of *England* stood entirely for *Otto*, being his Uncles: *Otto* thrusts *Adolphus* out of his Bishoprick, *Philip* maintains him; hereupon another Battel is fought by *Colen*, in which *Otto* lost the Field, and was forced to flie into *England*.

An. Christi. 1200. 1207.

Conradus Bishop of *Mentz* was lately returned from *Palestina*; he for siding with *Philip*, is stript of his Bishoprick by the Pope, and so was his successour *Ludolphus*, and *Sigifrid*, *Philips* enemy, is made Bishop: but an end was shortly after put to these Civil wars by the Marriages of *Philips* Daughters; for the two eldest he bestowed upon the King of *Bohemia* and Duke of *Brabant*, the third he married to *Richard* the Popes Nephew by his brother, and the fourth to his Competitor *Otto*, who upon this left off prosecuting his right in the Empire: By this last Marriage *Philip* bought his peace, but lost his life; for

An. Christi. one *Otto Wittelsbachius* who had been a ſuiter to this daughter, and was by *Philip* encouraged in the ſuit, but afterward rejected, in a rage gets into the room where *Philip* was at *Bamberg* with a private friend, and thruſts his Dagger (which he had under his cloak) into the Emperours throat, of which wound he dyed, having reigned ten years almoſt; the Paricide eſcaped by
1208. means of *Erbert* Biſhop of *Bamberg*, but afterward he was apprehended and ſlain. *Philips* body was buried at *Bamberg*, and from thence tranſlated to *Spire* by *Frederick* the Second; his wife *Irene* dyed ſhortly after with grief.

Otto ſucceeded to *Philip*, for ſo they had covenanted, that *Otto* ſhould not meddle with the Empire whileſt *Philip* lived; but he did not enjoy it long quietly, for ſhortly after he had been crown'd by Pope *Innocent* the ſecond at *Rome*, (where his Gold prevailed more then his Sword) there aroſe a quarrel about the Principality of *Maud*, ſometime the wife of *Henry* the Fourth; this ſhe had bequeathed on the Church of *Rome*, but the Emperours ſtill claimed it as their due; therefore *Otto* reſolves to recover by Armes both that Marquiſat and the other Territories with-held from *Frederick* the Second's Tutors. At this reſolution of *Otto's*, Pope *Innocent* was highly offended, and becauſe he would not leave off his claim, he is excommunicated; therefore *Otto* ſets Guards upon the Pope, ſuffering none to have acceſs to him, which cauſed ſuch a tumult in the City, that *Otto*, not without great ſlaughter, was fain to flie thence into *Lombardy*, where he collects his Forces and invades *Romandiola*, *Tuſcia*, and the Marquiſat of *Ancona*; thence he marched into *Apulia* to recover what the Pope had detained from the Empire: in the mean ſeaſon the Popes curſe is publiſhed in *Germany*, and the Princes are deſired to thruſt the Excommunicate Emperour out of his Government. Hence ariſeth a new War, which drew *Otto* home out of *Italy*, ſome do ſide with him, but more with the Pope; hereupon the chief *German* Princes, with the Bohemian, ſend for *Frederick* the Second out of *Sicily*, remembring the promiſe they had made to *Henry* his father, about ſetling his ſon in the Empire. *Frederick* comes into *Alſatia*; *Otto* with his Army prepares to encounter him, but moſt of his Souldiers forſook him, ſo that he returns into *Spain*; *Frederick* in the interim takes in all upon the *Rhine*, then being crowned at *Aix*, he makes a League with *Philip* the French King; the King of *England* aſſiſts *Otto* with men and money; upon this the War is renewed; but it laſted not long, for
1214. *Otto* being defeated by the French, and forſaken by his men, reſigned up his Empire the fourth year after he had undertaken it, and five years after this reſignation died of the bloody Flux, and was buried at *Bruſwige*.

In theſe Civil wars of *Germany*, the Marqueſs of *Brandenburg* drew the *Sclavi*
1218. to rebell againſt *Canutus* King of *Denmark*. *Peter* Biſhop of *Roſehild* arrived in the *Oder* with an Army, which he landed in the Marquiſat; a bloody Battel is fought, and he taken priſoner, but eſcaped, and with another Army defeated the Marqueſs as he was plundring of *Sclavia*, and took divers places in *Holſatia* from *Adolphus* the Earl who aided the Marqueſs: At laſt *Lubec* being taken by *Valdemarus* D. of *Sleſvic* who aſſiſted *Peter*, *Hamburg* is ſurpriſed by him, and in it *Adolphus*. *Canutus* being dead, *Valdemor* the ſecond is ſaluted at *Lubec*, King of *Denmark* and *Sclavia*, and Lord of *Nordalbingia*. *Adolphus* for his ranſome delivers up the ſtrong Fort of *Lavenburg* to the King.

About the ſame time *Philip* of *France* recovered all *Normandy* again, the 270. year after it had been given to *Rollo* the *Dane*, from whom till this time were reckoned twelve Dukes, ſix whereof were Kings of *England*. *Odoacer* King of *Bohemia*, for ſiding with the Pope, is depoſed by *Otto* the Emperour at the Dyet of *Norimberg*, and his ſon ſet up in his place.

The *Waldenſes*, called commonly the poor men of *Lions*, *Albigenſes* and *Beggini*, were buſie about theſe times in oppoſing the corruptions of *Rome*, againſt whom the Dominicans and Franciſcans were imployed by Argument, and the Earl of *Montsfort* with ſome other Princes by the Sword, many

of

of them were ſlain, and many burned for Hereticks: the *Saxons*, *Weſtfalians*, *Friſlanders*, and *Auſtrians* were making an Expedition againſt them, but changing their mind, they aſſiſted *Spain* againſt the *Moores* or King of *Morocco*. *Peter* King of *Arragon* loſt his life in aſſiſting the *Albigenſes*. *An. Chriſti.*

Frederick having ſetled *Germany*, and annexed again *Belgium* and *Lorain* to the Empire, was fain to be crowned the ſecond time at *Aix*, and to take a ſolemn Oath to the Pope, that he would raiſe all the ſtrength he could to recover the Holy-Land; for which purpoſe alſo he aſſembled the Councel of *Lateran*, and promiſed to declare *Frederick* Emperour; but before this could be performed, *Innocent* died at *Peruſium*, as he was going to compoſe the War between the *Piſans* and *Genuois*: At laſt *Innocents* promiſe was performed by his Succeſſor *Honorius*. After this, *Frederick* returns to *Italy*, to take order with the *Tuſcians* and *Apulians*, who by the aſſiſtance of the Biſhops, had invaded and ſpoiled the Emperours Territories; theſe he ſubdued, and removed the Biſhops out of their places, which fled to the Pope for remedy, who deſired *Frederick* to reſtore them; which he refuſing, and withall inveighing againſt the Popes pride, covetouſneſs, and frauds, gave occaſion of new troubles, by which all *Italy* banded againſt the Emperour, and at laſt the French were called in to the Kingdom of *Naples*, (theſe troubles were preſaged by Earth-quakes, and blood mingled with duſt, out of the clouds, at *Rome*.) The Emperour is excommunicate; the *Sicilians* take up Armes againſt *Frederick*, having ſhaken off his Government, therefore *Frederick* is forced to leave *Italy*, and to paſs over into *Sicily*, which he quieted, and performed Funeral obſequies to his wife *Conſtantia* lately dead: Thence he returned into *Germany*, where he held a Dyet at *Wurceburg*, and made his ſon *Henry* by *Conſtantia* his Colleague in the Empire, but afterward condemned him to perpetual impriſonment in *Calabria*, with his two ſons, by conſent of the *German* Princes (where he died the next year after) becauſe he aimed to dethrone his Father, againſt whom by the Popes inſtigation he ſtirred up the Cities of *Lombardy*: This quarrel was ſomewhat mitigated between the Pope and Emperour by *John de Bregna* K. of *Jeruſalem*, who acquainted the Pope with the danger of *Aſia*, and that if *Damiata* had not been ſurrendred again to the Sultan, the Chriſtian Army had been drowned by opening the ſluces of *Nilus*. He alſo beſtowed his daughter *Jole* upon *Frederick*, with the Kingdom of *Jeruſalem* for her dowry, to engage his ſon-in-law againſt the Sarazens in *Aſia*; *Frederick* having undertaken the Expedition, ſends his ſon *Henry* into *Germany*, to have a Dyet called for raiſing of mony horſe and men towards this Expedition. 1222.

Ludovic Lantgrave of *Thuringia* is by the Princes made chief Commander of the German Forces. *Frederick* invites the German Princes into *Cremona*, to conſult with them about the Empire, for he could not with ſafety leave *Italy*. This the Pope ſuſpected, wherefore by raiſing of *Lombardy* he hinders the meeting; but Pope *Honorius* dieth in the interim, to whom ſucceeds *Gregory* the ninth, as fierce as the former againſt the Emperour, accuſing him for lingring in *Italy*, and neglecting the Aſian Expedition, whereas he knew that *Frederick* by his ſon *Henry* was promoting the buſineſs in *Germany*; *Brunduſium* was the Rendevouz for the Souldiers, where the Lantgrave of *Thuringia*, with divers others fell ſick & died; *Frederick* alſo himſelf was ill diſpoſed, by reaſon of the unſeaſonable weather, and when he put to Sea, was beat back again by contrary winds, ſo that he was forced to ſtay at *Brunduſium*; the Pope notwithſtanding rageth againſt him, accuſing him of perjury, adultery, and cruelty to his wife; of treachery alſo, in ſuffering *Damiata* to be loſt; therefore he curſeth him, and denounceth war againſt him, to that purpoſe calleth *Bregna* or *Brennus* his father-in-law into *Romandiola*, giving him the Title of *Exarch*; he armes alſo the *Tuſcians* and *Lombards* againſt him. *Frederick* to purge himſelf from the Popes criminations, calls the Princes together at *Ravenna*, but the tumults of *Lombardy* hindred that meeting, therefore he clears him- 1225.

An. Christi. himself by writing. So having repaired his Fleet, he sets saile for *Asia*, having sent before, with the greatest part of the Army, *Reinold* D. of *Bavaria*, and
1228. Master of the Horse; the charge of *Italy* was committed to *Reinold* D. of *Spoletum*: but because *Frederick* took not his leave of the Pope, nor expiated his crimes, contemning as it were the Popes curse, he commanded the Syrian Armies not to follow, or to obey him, and withall layeth hold on the Kingdom of *Naples*, and fills all *Italy* with troubles: *Frederick* notwithstanding fortifieth *Joppe*, and forceth the Sultan to restore *Jernsalem*, *Bethleem*, & *Nazareth*.

This *Brennus* or *Bregna* had married *Mary* the daughter of *Almaricus* King of *Cyprus* and *Jerusalem*, and with her received the Title of King: he did good service in *Asia*; but being forsaken of *Andrew* King of *Hungary*, who having washed himself three times in *Jordan*, thought he had sufficiently paid his vow, returns home with his Army: being (I say) thus forsaken, and hopeless to recover *Palestina*, he intrencheth himself between *Cæsaria* and the hill *Caiapha*, and grew so strong with the continual aid of Pilgrims, that he much infested the Barbarians; then having got a Fleet of Ships, he sailes to *Damiata* (of old *Heliopolis*) in *Ægypt*, breaks down the Chain which kept off Ships from entring *Nilus*, and at last, not without much labour and blood took the Barbarians strongest Hold. Here *Saphadinus* was slain; his son wanting provision, retreats from the place with his Army. *Conradin* the Sultan of *Damascus* and *Jerusalem*, and the son of *Saphadin*, offers conditions of peace, and promiseth restitution of the Cross, and all that the Christians had lost in *Cyria*, or *Phenicia*; this was liked by all the Latines, except by *Pelagius* the Cardinal, who would yield to no tearms till *Egypt* were first subdued: At this, *Conradin* in a rage demolisheth the walls and chief buildings of *Jerusalem*, *Cæsaria*, and other places, that they might not be serviceable to the Christians, who lost many men by the Plague and Famine; at last, *Damiata* after a years siege and a half, is taken; *Pelagius* claims it as the Popes due; King *Brennus* retires to *Ptolemais*, who with much intreaty of the Princes returns; *Pelagius* the Legat urgeth the subduing of *Egypt*, and first of the regal City *Cayre*, whom *Brennus* resisteth, alledging they came not for *Egypt*, but for recovering the Holy-Land; but the Legat would have his will; therefore commands *Lodovick* of *Bavaria* to go before, and the rest to follow, threatning to curse those that obeyed him not; about 70000. went for fear of his curse; no sooner had they pitched their Tents about ten miles from the City *Cayre*, when the *Nile* is let in upon them, many were drowned, and the rest forced to forsake *Damiata*, and to leave *Egypt*; the Sultan of *Damascus* made Truce with them for ten years; upon this *Brennus* repairs to the Pope for new supplies.

About these times, *Waldemar* the second, King of *Denmark*, was surprised and carried away with his Son by *Henry* Earle of *Suerinum*, whose Wife the King had abused whilest *Henry* was absent at the holy War, notwithstanding he had intrusted her with the King, hoping she could not have been any where so safe. This King having recovered by his Armies, and subdued the *Sclavian* coast of the *Baltick* Sea, and having regained *Hamburgh* from *Otto* the fourth, was in his sleep seized upon by night, carried away in a Ship, and imprisoned in the Castle of *Daneberg*; so that two years after he was forced to ransome himself with 35. Talents of Silver; so he recovered his Kingdome, but in the interim lost the Town of *Vandalia*, which revolted from him.

1230. *Frederick* having returned from *Asia*, shewed that he was not dead, as was given out, purposely to encourage *Brennus* to invade *Apulia* and *Calabria*, being the Lands of one dead in Excommunication. *Frederick* lands in *Sicily*, and overthrows in a Battle the forces of his Father in law, and reconciles himself to Pope *Gregory*, who had been driven out of *Rome* by the People for his exactions, and was indigent of money; therefore the Emperour by *Leopold* of *Austria* sends him a great summe, and upon that he is Absolved and entertained by the Pope: So they joyn their forces together against the Rebels and Hereticks,

Hereticks, raging on them with Fire and Sword; *Frederick* on the *Meſſanians* in *Sicily*, *Gregory* on the *Teutons*; who being again purſued by the *Romans*, aiming at their antient liberty, ſtoutly defended himſelf: At *Reaum* a bloody battel is fought, in which 30000. were ſlaine: After this, he ſends his Preachers about for raiſing of men and money again for the Holy Land. A great Army is raiſed under *Theobald* King of *Navarre* and other Commanders; They march by land, ſuffering much hardſhip and loſſe by the way; but ſhortly after they were come to *Ptolemais*, the Turks Army overthrew them, ſo that few eſcaped, who returned home with diſhonour. *An. Chriſti.*

About this time *Ferdinand* King of *Caſtile* took *Hiſpalis* and *Cordnba* from the *Sarazens*; and *James* King of *Arragon*, *Valentia* and *Majorca*, driving the *Barbarians* into *Africa*: And about the ſame time did *Henry* rebel againſt his Father *Frederick*, whom he alſo would have poyſoned as ſome think, upon ſuſpition that he loved his Son *Conradus* begot of *Jole* the Queen of *Jeruſalem*, better then him. The ſame year, *Frederick* married *Iſabel* Siſter to King *Henry* the Third of *England*; then did Pope *Gregory* ſet forth his Decretals: *Frederick* prepareth an Army to chaſtiſe the *Lombards*, chiefly the rebellious *Millanois*; but the inſolencies committed againſt the *Hungarians* by *Frederick* of *Auſtria*, who deſpiſed the Emperours Summons, cauſed him to raiſe his Siege from before *Millain* and return home, where he ſtript the *Auſtrian* of all his power and bands; then renews his quarrel with the *Millanois*, whom he ſubdued, and took in *Sardinia* ſubject of old to *Sicily*: The Pope challengeth *Sardinia* as a part of the Churches Patrimony; *Frederick* refuſeth, ſhewing it belonged to the Empire, the Priviledges of which he was bound by Oath to maintain; upon this *Frederick* is accurſed for an Heretick, and an Enemy of the Church: He on the other ſide, by Letters to the Chriſtian Kings excuſeth himſelf, and accuſeth *Gregory* of high crimes, whom the *Romans* upon hope of gain by his preſence, received again into the City: Then did *Gregory* ſtrengthen himſelf by the *Venetians* and *Genuois*, who had contended long for the Dominion of the Sea; between them he made a League for Nine years, that they might be the better able to aſſiſt him againſt *Frederick*: He alſo invites *Lewis* the French King to take upon him the Empire, which he refuſeth; yet afterward both *Lewis* of *France* and *Henry* of *England* fell foule with *Frederick*, for imploying the Earle of *Tolouſe* his forces againſt *Raimund* Earle of *Province*, who was Father in Law to both Kings: however, *Frederick* was prevalent againſt the Pope by Land, and againſt the *Venetians* at Sea; onely *Ferraria* was recovered by *Gregory*. Such confuſion was then in *Italy*, that the Emperour could ſcarce know who were for him, who were againſt him; therefore he brought in for diſtinctions ſake the Barbarous names of *Guelphs* and *Gibellins*, which two Families had heretofore quarrelled in *Germany*; the Cæſarians are named *Gibellins*, the Pontificians *Guelphs*; theſe two factions fill all places of *Italy* with blood, moſt Towns fell off from the Pope, even *Rome* was ready to forſake him, but that he in a ſolemne ſupplication cauſed the heads of the two Apoſtles *Peter* and *Paul* to be carried through the City, to move the people to commiſeration. 1235.

Frederick in the mean ſpace takes *Beneventum* by ſtorm, and overthrows it; he drives the *Benedictines* out of their Monaſtery at *Caſſinum*, and gives *Nuceria* in *Apulia* to the *Sarazens* (whom he drove out of *Sicily*:) He fals ſuddenly upon *Ravenna* and ſubdues it. Upon this *Gregory* cals a Synod at *Lateran* for depoſing of *Frederick*, who by his Letters to the Princes ſhewed, that both the time, place, and perſons, and other circumſtances were for *Gregories* advantage, but all to his prejudice; therefore he ſhuts up all paſſages to *Rome* both by Sea and Land, and intercepts ſome Cardinals going thither, whom he impriſoned, with divers Biſhops; which ſo grieved *Gregory*, that he fell ſick and died, the 15. year of his Pontificat, and almoſt 100. of his life. Then did *Faventia* after a long ſiege yield to *Frederick*: his two ſons, *Conradus* and

An. Christi. *Henry* drove the *Tartars* from *Danubius*; these had plundred *Poland*, *Hungaria*, & *Silesia*; the Church wants a Pope for twenty one moneths, in which vacancie *Frederick* removes the University of *Bononia* into *Padua*; at last the Emperour by the intreaty of *Baldwin*, who had left *Asia*, and of *Raimund* the *Tolosan*, being both now in *Italy*, dismisseth the imprisoned Bishops and Cardinals, wishing them to choose a new Pope, which they neglecting to doe, were forced by *Fredericks* Armes, and *Lewis* the French Kings threatnings; at length *Innocent* the Fourth is chosen at *Anagnia*, now called *Campagnia di Roma*; he
1245. pretending that *Frederick* meant to kill him, fled to *Genua* from *Rome*, and then by Sea into *Lions*; in the interim, the Romans overthrew *Fredericks* Garrisons, and in a Skirmish one like unto the Emperour was killed, whereupon it was rumoured that *Frederick* was killed, which caused many to fall off from his Faction.

The Pope in this mean while chooseth new Cardinals, whom he honoureth with Scarlet Garments and Hats; then he fals with his Curses upon *Frederick*, and invites the *Germans* to choose *Henry* Lantgrave of *Thuringia* for their Emperour, which was hindred by *Fredericks* Armies; this not succeeding, the Pope cals a general Council at *Lions*, there *Petrus de Vineis* with
1245. others stoutly pleaded for *Frederick*, yet notwithstanding he is anathematized: But to shew how much he slighted this Curse, he fals upon oppressing the *Millanois* again; but finding divers of the Princes to forsake him as an Excommunicate Person, he promiseth the Pope to maintaine the Holy War, if he would absolve him and settle his Son *Conradus* in the Empire, which by him was refused; of this *Frederick* complains to the Princes, but *Innocent* proceeds in solliciting *Henry* to accept the Empire, which he did at last, whom *Conradus Fredericks* Son opposeth with an Army; but his Commanders being bribed forsook him, so that he was fain to return with dishonour to his Father: after this, the Lantgrave by the help of the Bishops, playes the Emperour, and as he was going to receive his Inauguration at *Ulma*, was set upon by *Conradus*; the Landgrave had the better, but a Reserve of 15000 *Conradus* had laid in Ambush, breaking out suddenly on the Lantgrave, defeated his Army, in which he received a wound, and of that died shortly after.

1247. *Innocent* being much troubled at this, sends his Oratours abroad to sollicite the Princes to rise unanimously against *Frederick*, and withall sends a great Summe of money to *William* Earle of *Holland*, to raise an Army and to invade the Empire, but the money was intercepted by *Fredericks* Friends; yet by the diligence of *Conradus* Bishop of *Cullen*, and the other Prelates of *Germany*, as also by the continuall preaching of the *Franciscans* and *Dominicans*, infinite summes were raised for *William*, with which he raised an Army that drove *Conradus* King of the Romans quite out of *Germany*; wherefore *Frederick* resolves to go into *Burgundy*, that from thence he might send forces against *Lions* where the Pope was; but in his journey he was stayed by *Parma*, which thrust the gates against him; he resolves not to stir till he had taken it, but the siege lasted a whole year, in which time he builds a new town close by it, which he called *Victoria*, and caused new Coyn to be stampt in honour of *Victor* the Martyr, to whom he vowed to build a Temple, if he subdued the City: He had there three Sons with him, *Henry* the younger whom he created Vice-Roy of *Italy*, *Frederick* the bastard Prince of *Antioch* and Governour of *Tuscia*, and *Hensius* King of *Sardinia*; he had also received Elephants and some other wilde beasts out of *Africa*, with these he made publick shews at an unseasonable time, and spent his treasure vainly; so that he was faine to turn his new stampt Gold into Leather money, promising to repay it again in Gold: The Citizens of *Parma* proffered to surrender upon Articles, which were denyed them by *Frederick*, wishing them in scorn to eat sparingly, and make much of their provision, for that should be the last that ever they should eat; this so exasperated them, that desperately they salley out upon the

the *Cæsarians* (*Frederick* being then retired for healths sake, with some part of his Army) whom they defeat and put to flight, seise upon 15000. Horse, and cut *Thaddæus* the General in pieces, and the new City *Victoria* they overthrow and level with the ground. *An. Christi.*

William of *Holland* in the mean space, desirous to be consecrated, laid siege to *Aix*, the Dukes of *Saxony* and *Bavaria* were against him; but he had the Bishop of *Colen*, with the rest of the Clergy, for him, whose Armes and purses were at his command; by their help, and by an inundation of water, the City yielded, and received *William*. About this time *Petrus de Vineis*, who had pleaded so much for *Frederick*, was ill rewarded by him, upon suspition that Pope *Innocent* had hired him to poyson the Emperour by his Physician, who having brought the potion, and willed by *Frederick* first to take it, poured it on the ground; upon this, *Peters* eyes were thrust out, who to avoid further punishment, or else mad for being falsly accused, beat out his own brains against a pillar. In the mean while *Frederick* begins to prevail again; he drove *William* back into *Holland*; he subjected *Parma*, being secure, with other Cities in *Italy*. People began to murmure, that the Popes persecuting of *Frederick* kept him from *Asia*, where all was now in danger to be lost, many revolted from *Christ* to *Mahumet*: Hereupon *Innocent* is desired to receive *Frederick* into favour again, that he might heal these sores of Christendome, or else that he should be gone from *Lions*, but he remained inexorable; and therefore sends to the King of *England* to have *Burdeaux* for his residence, being he was banished from his own Church. In this mean season *Frederick* died in *Apulia*, of poyson, as some think, of a Feaver, say others; and to hasten his death the sooner, his Bastard-son *Manfred* stifled him with his pillow; he died the 38. year of his Empire, and the 54. of his age; by his Will he left a great treasure towards the holy Warr; he was buried at *Panormus* in a Tomb of Porphyrie, on *Manfreds* charges, to avoid the suspition of murder. 1250.

He was a Prince eminent both in vertue and vice: he was a good Scholler and Linguist; he caused *Aristotle*, *Galen*, *Ptolomy*, and *Avicenna* to be translated into Latine out of the Greek and Arabick; he erected an University at *Naples*, corrected many of the Laws, and was a lover of learned men: he had three wives, the first was *Constantia* Queen of *Arragon*, of whom he had *Henry* the elder Duke of *Suevia* and King of the *Romanes*; the other was *Jole*, *Bregna's* daughter King of *Jerusalem*, whence the Title of King of *Jerusalem* was annexed to the Kings of *Sicily* and *Naples*, of her he had *Conradus*, on whom *Frederick* conferred the titles of his brother *Henry*, and bequeathed him *Sicily* and *Naples*: The third was King *Johns* daughter of *England*, of whom he had *Henry* the younger: he had also, besides divers daughters, bastard-sons; *Manfred* prince of *Tarentum*, who stifled him for giving away *Naples* from him; *Henzius* King of *Sardinia*, whom the *Bonanians* killed, being shut up in an iron Cage; and *Frederick* Prince of *Antioch*.

CHAP. II.

1. *The true estate of the Eastern Empire.* 2. *The affaires of* France, Tartary, Denmark, Poland, England, Scotland, Spaine, *and other places.* 3. *The Popes of these times.*

THe *Greeks* having lost the Eastern Empire, *Baldwinus* Earl of *Flanders*, being but 32. years old, is made Emperour of *Constantinople*; who to inlarge his Empire, passeth into *Asia*, having sent his brother *Henry* before, against whom *Prusa* of *Bithinia* shut her gates. *Baldwin* was quickly called back out of *Asia*, upon the revolt of some Cities in *Macedonia* and *Thracia*, among the rest *Hadrianopolis*, which held out so long, till *John* Duke of *Mysia* came

An. Christi. came with his Army to raiſe the ſiege; the Latine Army is overthrown, and *Baldwin* with divers Commanders taken priſoners; he had reigned but one year, when he was laid in irons, at laſt they cut off his hands and feet, and ſo left him alive for a prey to the Birds, but he died the ſecond day after. The Latines to be revenged, rob and murther both by ſea and land, ſo that they and the *Scythians* deſtroy one another. *Henry*, *Baldwins* brother, ſucceeds in the Empire; and *Boniface* the Marquis having loſt moſt of his Townes, ſhuts himſelf up in *Theſſalonica*. Miſerable was the condition of *Greece* at this time, men devouring one another, as Wolves do ſheep.

1205.

1206.

In the Eaſt, *Pruſa*, *Nicha*, *Smyrna*, *Epheſus*, and divers other places, with the *Lydians*, ſubmitted themſelves to *Theodorus Laſcaris*, who having got together a Fleet of Ships, ſubdued divers Iſlands. *David* and *Alexus*, brothers, the Nephews of *Andronicus* ſometimes Tyrant, *Aldobrandinus* the Italian, and the *Genuois* who took *Crete*, tore away divers limbs from the Greek Empire. *Henry* made peace with the Bulgarians, and married with the prince of *Bulgaria's* daughter; ſo returning with his Army to *Byzantium*, he fortified the City, where having left a Garriſon, went to *Theſſalonica*, where the Marquis of *Montsferrat* was, whom he made King there; and then returned to *Conſtantinople*; where he died the 11. year of his Reign, having betrothed his daughter *Jolanta* to *Petrus Antiſiodorenſis*, who in her right claimed the Empire, and then he went to *Rome* to be crowned by the Pope. In the mean time *Theodorus Laſcaris*, who had overthrown the Turks in a great battel, and killed the Sultan with his own hand, made himſelf Emperour at *Nicha*, and ſeiſed upon *Epirus* and *Dyrrachium*, that he might ſhut up the Emperours paſſage in his return to the City; he beſieged the Tower, but to no purpoſe; ſo he promiſed to raiſe the ſiege, if *Theodorus* would give him the publike Faith for his ſafe departure, which he did accordingly; but as the Emperour was paſſing through the Woods of *Theſſaly*, he was treacherouſly apprehended by ſome Forces in ambuſh, which brought him to *Theodorus*, by whom he was condemned, impriſoned in a loathſome Dungeon, and two years after beheaded; his widow ruled the Empire in the mean ſpace, till her ſon *Robert* was returned from *France*; becauſe he could not come by Sea to the City, the Enemy having ſhut up all paſſages, he makes a long journey through *Panonia* and *Myſia*. When he had got the Empire, he admits *Martinus Michael*, the Venetian Pretor, out of his love to the people, to be his Colleague in the Empire; but he lived not long, for he died in *Achaia*, as he was returning after his inauguration from *Rome*; his ſon *Baldwin* was as yet too young for Government, and the *Laſcarius* with the *Comnins* were buſie in uſing all means poſſible to recover the City; which danger the *Venetians* perceiving, entred into a League with the one to deſtroy the other; therefore they adviſed the young Emperour to marry with the daughter of *Alexius Comnenus*; but the French Peers fearing a change of Government in a Grecian affinity, rejected this wholſome advice, and by the ſuggeſtion of Pope *Gregory*, they made a match between the young Emperour to *Martha* the daughter of *Brennus* King of *Jeruſalem*, whoſe ſiſter, or (as others ſay) daughter *Joſe*, *Frederick* married. So long as *Brennus* lived, *Baldwin* was ſtrong enough for his enemies; but after his death the enemies increaſing, and his treaſures being ſpent, which ſhould have maintained the *Venetian* Fleet, he was forced to repair into *Italy*, hoping for aide from *Frederick* (then before *Parma*) and the Pope, but both failed him; yet when he heard of the death of *Theodorus Laſcaris*, he took courage, and returned to *Conſtantinople*, hoping to quell his enemies; but *Michael Palæologus* forced him into the City, which he beſieged, and at laſt by treachery took; *Baldwin* eſcaped narrowly in the night, and got into *Italy* by *Euripus* & *Eubœa*, then in the Venetian poſſeſſion. Thus was *Conſtantinople* loſt by *Baldwin* the ſecond, the 60. year after it had been poſſeſſed by *Baldwin* the firſt.

1216.

Theodorus Laſcaris Emperour of *Nicha*, having defeated the Turkiſh Sultan, whoſe

(whose head he carried upon a long pole about his Army, to the terrour of the Turks, who fainted at the sight thereof, and submitted to him) reigned 18. years, and then died, leaving for his successor *Johannes Ducas* his son-in-law, who in 33. years of his Reign recovered almost all the Empire from the Latines, and then dyed; whose son *Theodorus Lascaris* succeeded, who died the fourth year of his Empire, being 36. years old, and left a son, *John* by name, of 6. years old, to succeed him; but *Michael Palæologus* usurping the Empire, thrust out the eyes of this young Emperor, whose tuition he had undertaken; and so being now ten years of age, lost both his eyes and Empire at once. *An. Christi.* 1222. 1255. 1259.

In *France*, *Philip* raised an Army against the *Albigenses*, who were defended by the King of *Arragon*, and *Raimond* Earl of *Tholouse*. In this war, *Simon Montfortius*, General of the Catholike Forces, gave divers defeats to the *Albigenses*, and at last was killed at the siege of *Tholouse*, which was given him by the Lateran Councel as a reward. This war was renewed by K. *Lewis* the 8. and determined by his son St. *Lewis*, who caused Earl *Raimond* at *Paris* to abjure their opinions; and then he bestowed his daughter, with the Earldome of *Tholouse* upon *Alphonso* the brother of St. *Lewis*. The *English* were beat out of *Rochel*, and a great part of *Gascony*, by *Lewis* the 8. who returning from his *Albigensian* Expedition, died the fourth year of his reign, whose son *Lewis* the 9. was crowned at *Rhemes* the same year, the 12. year of his age; he for his good life was canonized by *Boniface* the 8. and called *Lewis* the Saint: he subdued in the begining of his reign *Theobald* Earl of *Campaina*, and *Hugh* Earl of *Marchia*; then having made peace, and being recovered of a dangerous sickness, he raiseth an Army, and under the sign of the Cross saileth into *Egypt*, obtains a Victory, and withall *Damiata*; thence he marcheth to *Cayre*, and was in a fair possibility to have taken it, the *Calyph* Forces being much weakned: but by reason of the unwholsome vapours of those Marish places, the Pestilence grew so violent in the French Army, that multitudes died; so that the King being defeated, and taken prisoner, was forced to yield to such conditions as pleased the enemy, to wit, that *Damiata* should be restored, with the captives on both sides, a great sum of money should be paid, to wit, 8000. Marks of gold, and truce made for 10. years; so the King and Army were dismissed: The Kings intention was to have recovered *Jerusalem* from the *Parthians*, who being beat out of their own Countrey by the *Tartars*, entred *Syria*, took *Jerusalem*, and destroyed it, abusing and polluting the Temple of the Holy Sepulchre. This King was very devout and religious, causing publike fasting and prayers through all his Dominions, when *France* was visited with the Plague: he redeemed the Holy Reliques of Christs Passion, among which was the Crown of Thorns, from the Venetians, to whom *Baldwin* had pawned them for a great sum of money, to be imployed against the *Greeks*, which incensed them exceedingly against the Latines, storming that those Reliques should be possessed, bought and sold by them, whereas they had been so carefully kept by the Græcian Princes so many years. *Lewis* had also a religious Mother *Blanca*, who in his minority and absence governed the Kingdome with great prudence; by her meanes peace was made between *France* and *England*. This same *Lewis* took many Towns in *Brittany*, and caused the D. do him homage; he advanced the University of *Paris*, after many Schollers had left it upon some jarrs between them and the Citizens: he would not be perswaded to forsake the Army, when the Plague was hot among them in *Egypt*, but stayed all the while, and was at last infected himself; the fame of his sanctity caused a great Prince of the *Tartars*, and many of the *Scythians* to become Christians; he stayed 5. years in the East, converting the Barbarians by his good life; he sent home his two brothers *Charles* and *Alphonsus*, to comfort their disconsolate Mother, after they were set free, being taken prisoners with him: as he was returning homeward, his Ship was cast upon a rock by a storm, 1218. 1226. 1229. 1244.

An. Christ. during which time he prayed kneeling, and so the Ships got off without hurt.

About these times the *Tartars*, under the conduct of their King *Hoccottas*, did in great swarmes enter *Asia* and *Europe*; they subdued *Persis*, and all the Countries between that and *Tanais*; at length they over-ran *Poland* and *Hungary*, even to *Austria*: upon this, Pope *Innocent* sends some choise Franciscans and Dominicans, to try if they could bring these Barbarians to the knowledge of Christ, which they did accordingly, so that their new King *Mago*, or *Meto*, was baptized: *Halon*, King *Meto's* brother, having defeated the Turks, recovers *Syria*, and was in possibility to have setled the Christians again in *Jerusalem*, had not their own discords hindred, and his departure thence; for at that time his brother *Meto* died, and he was called away to inherit the Kingdome.

In *Denmark* to *Waldemar* the 3. succeeded *Erieus*, whose brother *Abel* was made Duke of *Jutia*; this *Ericus*, as he was preparing to chastise *Lubeck* and *Hamburg*, who had entred into confederacie against him, was treacherously murthered by his brother *Abel*, who having reigned two years, was in Gods just judgement slain by the *Frisones* in a tumult, as he was raising an Army against them, for refusing to submit to his unjust exactions. To him succeeded *Christopher*, the third brother; against him his subjects rebelled, and threw down his Castles and Houses; he imprisoned his Archbishop, for which his Kingdome was under the Popes curse nine years.

Poland at this time was afflicted with Civil Warrs: for *Conradus* and *Henry* the two Tutors of young *Boleslaus* the King, strove for the Principality; divers battels were fought, till at length *Conradus* the Kings Uncle prevailed; but the Queen and her son were more inclined to *Henry*; wherefore *Conradus* seiseth on the King, and shuts him up in a Monastery, where he made an escape, having intoxicated his Keepers with wine, and so betakes himself to *Henry*, who with much trouble setled him again in his Kingdome, both the
1240. Tutors submitting. In the interim, the *Tartars* break in upon *Poland*, destroying all with fire and sword; so that the King with his wife fled into *Hungary* to his Father-in-law; but he also by the same storm was driven out of his Countrey; which fell likewise upon *Silesia* and *Moravia*. *Boleslaus* was glad to hide himself in a Castle; in the mean while, the son of *Henry* the Kings Tutor, upon the death of his Father, who was slain in the war, takes possession of *Poland*, whom *Conradus*, *Boleslaus* his Uncle, drove out; but he did not enjoy the kingdome long, for he grew odious to the people, for laying heavy taxes on them, that a way was made for *Boleslaus* to return, who upon the death of *Conradus*, which fell out shortly after, possessed the Kingdome quietly.

1247. In *England*, *John Plantagenet*, youngest son of King *Henry* the 2. succeeded to *Richard*, albeit *Arthur Plantagenet* his Nephew, and son to *Geoffrey* his elder brother was then living, whom *Philip* the second King of *France* animated and assisted with men and money against King *John*, so that in a short time *Arthur* levied a puisant Army, and invaded *Normandy*, where he took divers strong places; at length King *John* came over with a strong Army, and fought divers battels with his Nephew; after which they came to an agreement, and a place was concluded, but shortly after interrupted by the French King, who with a more numerous Army enters *Normandy*, and depopulates it: king *John* for want of money and courage gave way to the French Victories, till the people cryed out on him, and furnished him with a large tax, every lusty man proffering his service; upon this an Army is raised and transported into *Normandy*, where cruel battels were fought, and the French defeated; *Arthur* the kings Nephew, and rightful heir, was taken prisoner, and sent to the Castle of *Roan*; where upon hope to escape, he leaped from the Walls, and was drowned

drowned in the Ditch. The next year following the French king pretending title to that Dutchy, invaded it with such a power and fury, that the whole Countrey, to avoid desolation, subjected it self to him. Shortly after this, Pope *Innocent* the third quarrelled with king *John*, about the election of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*; for upon the death of *Hubert*, St. *Austins* Monks there without the kings consent elected *Raynold* a brother of their own, of whom they took an Oath to repair to *Rome* for his investure and pall: the King being displeased at this, they elect *John Gray* Bishop of *Norwich*, in whose behalf the King sent to the Pope, intreating him to ratifie this last choyce; but the Pope slighted the Kings Letters, and confirmed the first election; yet understanding that divers of the Monks disliked the first election, because it was done in the night, advised the Monks to elect *Steven Langton* the Cardinal of *Chrysogone*, which was done accordingly, albeit the K. prohibited the choice, who storming that he was thus slighted, writes to the Pope, that he would not from thenceforth suffer him or his Kingdom to be thus enslaved to *Rome*: The Pope answers, that the election should stand, requiring the King to give him quiet possession, and to recall the banished Monks, and authorised 4. Bishops to interdict the King and Kingdom, if he did not obey; the King upon this seised on these Bishops lands and goods, promising to do the like to all that should have any recourse to *Rome*; wherefore the Pope sends his two Legats, *Pandulphus* and *Durant*, wishing the King to submit himself to the Pope, and to be reconciled to the four Bishops, and the Monks of St. *Austin*, which he was willing to do, conditionally that he might not allow the Cardinals election; upon this the Legats pronounce the Popes Curse against the king, absolving his Subjects from their allegiance, and withall gave his Crown to *Philip* the French king: this fulmination the King slighted; and to confront the Pope, he enters *Scotland* with a great Army, because King *Alexander* the second had sided with the Pope, and entertained divers of his rebellious Clergy; the Scottish King to avoid further trouble, reconciled himself to King *John*. King *Philip* of *France* having now some pretence to war upon *England*, provides a great Army, but 300. of his Ships laden with Victuals were surprised by King *John*, so his hopes failed him: but the Pope pursued the King so eagerly with his Thunder-bolts, that he was fain at last on his knees, before *Pandulphus*, to confess his disobedience to the Pope; and craving pardon, by a publike Instrument under his hand and seale resigned his Crown to the Pope, which *Pandulphus* kept four dayes for the Popes use, and then gave the Crown to King *John* and his heirs, reserving a tenure thereof to the Church of *Rome*, with an annual Tribute of 1000. Marks, 7000. for *England*, and 3000. for *Ireland*. Many of the Nobility upon this revolt from the King, and flie over to *France*, to assist *Philip* against him, who was making preparations for his son *Lewis* to invade *England*; which he did, and was like to have carried it, had not the Pope required *Philip* and his son *Lewis* to desist from all hostility against that Crown which was holden of the See of *Rome*: this injunction the French King refused to obey; wherefore the Pope sends *Guallo* the Cardinal of Saint *Martins* hither, who accursed *Philip*, *Lewis*, and the English that sided with them: Hereupon the common Souldiers forsook their Leaders, and went home, and divers of the Countrey people fell to robbing and plundring the houses of the Nobility and Gentry that were accursed; which caused them, being destitute of means, and forsaken of their friends, to submit to King *John*, who pardoned them, and restored them to their Honours and Lands; and so after this followed peace. The Pope shortly after, in the Councel of *Lateran*, published, that the tenure of *England* was to be of the Church of *Rome*. At the same time *Otho* the Emperour, *Peter* King of *Arragon*, and *Raymund* Earl of *Tholouse*, with some other Princes, were excommunicated for heresie, as was pretended, but indeed to subject their temporalties to the Pope; and therefore it was decreed, that no man should be made Emperour, untill he had

An. Christi.

1213.

An. Christi. ſworn his homage to the Pope. But the Clergy was never heartily reconciled to King *John*, againſt whom they ſtill bore a private grudge; therefore in the Abbey of *Swinſted* neer *Lincoln* he was poyſoned by a Monk of Saint *Bernards* Order, who to make ſure work, drank firſt to the King, and poyſoned himſelf for company; ſome think he died of a ſurfeit of Peaches and new Ale. King *John* reigned 17. years, and was buried at *Wincheſter*. In the 7. year of his reign he went into *Ireland*, and reduced that revolted people to his obedience. In the 9. year he renews the *Londoners* Charter for the annual
1209. electing of a Maior and two Sheriffs. The next year *London-Bridge* was built. He had two ſons, *Henry*, who ſucceeded him, and *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal* and King of the *Romans*. His three daughters were, *Joan* the eldeſt, married to *Alexander* the ſecond, King of *Scots*; *Elianor*, wife to *Simon* Earl of *Leiceſter*; and *Iſabel* the youngeſt, who was married to the Emperour.

1216. *Henry*, King *Johns* ſon, was crowned at the age of 9. years, whoſe Protector was the Earl of *Glouceſter*. In this Kings minority, the French invade this Kingdome, with whom the Welch take part; but the Protector ſtoutly oppoſed them: The Pope in the mean time thunders out his curſes and Excommunications againſt the French, and their adherents: At this, Prince *Lewis* deſiſted from Armes, but his father *Philip* ſhipped new Forces to aide his Son. *Hugh de Burgh* Maſter of the Cinque-Ports rigs out a Fleet, and beats the French; wherefore Prince *Lewis* makes peace with the Engliſh, and for a ſum of money received, he ſurrenders all the Forts and Towns he had taken, and returns to *France*. Upon his departure, a Parliament is called, in which King *Edwards* Laws were eſtabliſhed, and the grand Charter, or *Magna Charta*, the Wardſhips and Marriages of Wards granted of old to King *Edgar* and *Edward* the Confeſſor, were revived, and a voluntary Tax given to the King for raiſing of Forces to be conducted by *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal*, the Kings brother, for recovering of *Poyteers* and *Gaſcoign* again from the French; which Provinces were ſhortly after recovered by the ſame *Richard*, but invaded again, and taken by the French, and re-taken afterward by the ſaid *Richard* the ſecond time; at laſt a peace is made between the two Kings. After this the Barons of *England* were diſcontent with King *Henry*, for applying himſelf meerly to ſtrangers, and neglecting them; which error the King perceiving, he reconciled himſelf to his Nobles, and reſumed the Earldom of *Cheſter* into his own hands, *John Scot* the Earl thereof being dead without iſſue male; the four daughters of this Earl were, by way of exchange, enriched with other Territories and Honours. Prince *Edward*, the Kings ſon, is married to *Elianor* the King of *Spains* ſiſter, on whom he beſtowed *Guian*, *Ireland*, *Cheſter* and *Wales*; theſe two laſt dignities he annexed to the eldeſt ſons of the Engliſh Kings. Not long after a Scholler in *Oxford* intended to murther the King, but miſſed him, for that night he lodged not in his uſual bed-chamber; ſo the Traitor was apprehended and put to death. In the 24. year of *Henry's* reign, *Lewis* the 9. invadeth *Guian*, againſt whom King *Henry* carried over an Army; divers skirmiſhes there were, with diverſe ſucceſs: After King *Henries* return into *England*, the French King married his brother to the daughter of the Earl of *Tholouſe*, to whom he gave *Poytiers* and the Engliſh Territories in *Alberne*; he invades alſo the Earldome of *March*; king *Henry* upon this tranſporteth an Army unto *Burdeaux*, and neer to that place fought the French, but loſt the Field; whereupon the Earl of *March* ſubmitted himſelf to the French king. *Henry* upon his return, married his ſiſter to *Alexander* king of *Scots*. The Popes exactions were ſo great upon this Land, and his demands ſo unreaſonable, in ſending his Mandate to have 300. *Romans* preferred to the Benefices which ſhould be firſt vacant in *England*, that the Clergy generally murmured; the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, *Edmund*, in diſcontent gives over all, and retires to the Abbey of *Pontiniac* in *France*; and the king was fain to complain in the *Lateran* Councel againſt the Pope, who had no other

ſatis-

satisfaction from him but this, *Let us first kill the great Dragon*, (that is, *Frederick* the Emperour) *and then we shall quickly tread down these petty Snakes*, that is, the inferiour Kings and Princes. *An. Christi.*

In *Scotland*, to king *William* succeeded his son *Alexander* 16. years old; he being invited into *England* by the oppressed Clergy under king *John*, falls upon the Royalists and their Lands with fire and sword. King *John* in requital enters *Scotland*, wasting all before him in *Lothian*. *Alexander* was deterred by the Popes curse, from assisting Prince *Lewis* of *France* against King *John*, who had now resigned his Kingdome to the See of *Rome*; therefore he returns to *Scotland*, but with great difficulty, king *John* having caused the Bridges over *Trent* to be broken down; but his death (by poyson,) did facilitate *Alexanders* return, who being absolved by the Popes Legat from his curse, makes peace with King *Henry* of *England*, whom the Pope had now established in his Kingdome. The *Scots* restore *Carlile* which they had taken in the former war, and the *English* surrender *Berwick*. The Legat by his excommunication raiseth a great sum of money from the *Scotish* Clergy, who joyning with the Clergy of *England*, send Messengers to *Rome* with complaints against the Legates sordid and unjust carriage, on whom the Pope set a great fine. *Ægidius* the Cardinal after him was sent to raise more money in both Kingdomes, which when he had lavishly spent, returns empty to *Rome*, pretending he was robbed by the way: After him, another Legat comes, but he was commanded to depart, without giving him any thing. After this, a great Rebellion was in *Rosse* under one *Gillespic*, who had taken *Innernes*, and done great hurt thereabout: *Cumin* the Earl of *Buchan* is sent against him, whom he defeated and took, with his two sons, their heads he cut off, and sent them to the king. The people of *Cathnes* burned the Bishop, with some others, in his house, having before complained of his exactions: the chief actors were cruelly put to death; and the Earl of *Cathnes* being suspected to have had a hand in this murther, though absent, was brought to the king, who upon his submission was pardoned. After this, another Rebellion of 10000. discontented persons, under *Thomas* the Bastard-son of *Alan* Earl of *Galloway*, was suppressed, with the loss of 5000. Rebels, and their Captain. After this, he lost his Queen, who returning with the *English* Queen from visiting the Reliques of *Canterbury*, fell sick and died, being childless; he married again, and had by this wife, *Alexander* the third, who succeeded him. Two years after this, whilst the king was at *Haddington*, the Earl of *Athol* was burned, with some others, in his house. *Patrick*, the chief of the *Bisots*, was suspected; he to clear himself offered a Duel with any of his accusers, which being denied him, he fled with divers of his Family, into *Ireland*. Another tumult was suppressed in *Argile*; and not long after this the king died, the 51. year of his life, and of his reign the 35. 1220.

In *Rome* to *Clemens* the third succeeded *Celestine* the third, who sate four years: his successor was *Innocent* the third, who was Pope 18. years; In his time the Greek Church, by means of *Baldwin* Emperour of the East, was reconciled to the Latine, and *Thomas* the first of the Latine Church, was made Patriarch of *Constantinople*, against whom the Greeks chose *Michael* the fourth who sate without the City. The Venetians take *Crete* or *Candy* from the Greeks, but permit them to retain their Greek Ceremonies. This Island was the cause of 70. years war between the *Venetians* and *Genuois*, which by *Gregory* the 10. was at last composed, so that the Island remained in the power of the *Venetians*. *Peter* the second, king of *Arragon*, was crowned by this *Innocent* at *Rome*, who authorised the Arch-bishop of *Tarracon* to crown his Successors at *Cæsaranguſta*. His Successour *James* took from the *Moors* the kingdome of *Valentia*, and *Murtia*, with the *Baleares*. *Alexius Comnenus*, father-in-law to *Theodorus Lascaris*, erected a new Empire at *Traperuntinum*, containing *Cappadocia* and *Colchis*. St. *Clara*, a Disciple of St. *Francis*, sets up a new Order of Nuns.

An. Christi. Nuns. To *Celestine* succeeded *Gregory* the 9. who sate 14. years: He Canonized St. *Dominick* and St. *Francis*, and forbad the Civil Law to be read at *Paris*: He digested the 5. Books of Decretals into that method they now have; he forbad Lay-men to preach. Power is given to the Archbishop of *Mentz* to consecrate the kings of *Bohemia*, which continued long, till one of them sold that priviledge to the Church of *Prague*. To *Gregory* succeeded *Celestine* the 4. who sate but 18. dayes; then followed the vacancy of one year nine moneths, in which time S. *Ferdinand* drives the *Moors* almost quite out of *Spain*; having obtained both the kingdome of *Castile* and *Legion*, with *Corduba* and *Hispalis*, he erects the University of *Salmatica*. *Innocent* the 4. is chosen Pope; he sate 11. years. About this time the Bible was distinguished into Chapters, as now we have them, the distinction before was uncertain. *Robert Sorbona*, a Divine, founded and enriched the Colledge of *Sorbon* at *Paris*. To *Innocent* succeeded *Alexander* the 4. who sate 6. years; he reconciled again the Greeks and Latines in the Councel of *Lions*.

Chap. III.

1. Fredericks *posterity*. 2. *The Affairs of the Western Empire under* Rodulphus, *and others*. 3. *Of* France, England, Scotland, *and other places*. 4. *Of the Popes of these times, and other memorable things*.

Frederick the second, before his death, had made his Son *Conradus* king of the *Romans* and of *Sicily*; to his Son *Henry*, whom he had by his *English* Lady, he bequeathed the kingdome of *Jerusalem*, and to *Manfred* the government of *Italy*. *Conradus* fell furiously upon those Towns, which after his Fathers death revolted to Pope *Innocent*: He overthrew *Naples* after eight
1251. moneths siege, driving from thence all the Nobility; he plundred *Capua* and unwalled it, and burned *Aquinum*. But *Manfred* aiming at the Empire of *Italy* and *Sicily*, poysoned *Conradus*, four years after his Fathers death; a just reward for him, who had caused his younger brother *Henry*, and his son *Frederick* to be murthered: *Manfred* also commanded *Conradinus*, the son of *Conradus*, to be poysoned, having undertaken his tuition; and then fals upon the Towns of *Apulia*, and of the kingdome of *Naples*, which he took from the Pope, and so made himself King, giving out that *Conradinus* was dead, but was not: After this he seiseth upon *Sicily*, and to make himselfe the stronger against the Popes power, he makes a match between *Peter* the son of *James* K. of *Arragon*, and his daughter *Constantia*. Upon this, *Urban* the 4. *Alexanders* successor, curseth *Manfred*, and armeth *Charls* of *Anjou*, brother to *Lewis* the French king, who encountring with *Manfred*, defeats and kills him, and so obtains both kingdomes, paying to the Pope fourty thousand Crownes yearly.

Conradinus being now of years, and having raised an Army of *Germans*, with whom divers *Italian* Townes joyned: *Conradus* also, his brother, Prince of *Antioch*, helped him to recover *Sicily*; the *Sarazens* likewise assisted him; all *Sicily* yielded, except *Panormus*, *Messina*, and *Syracusa*. *Conradinus* after this, fighting with *Charles*, is defeated and taken, and so was *Frederick* Duke
1268. of *Austria*, both whom upon the Popes perswasion he caused to be beheaded; as for *Conradus* Prince of *Antioch*, he first pulls out his eyes, and then caused him to be hanged. Thus the French obtained *Sicily*; whose tyranny, pride, and luxury was such, that *John* Duke of *Proclyta*, whose wife the French had abused, and himself by them was plundred, having advised with Pope *Nicolas*, (*Charles* his enemy) as also with *John Palæologus* Emperour of *Constantinople*, (who had lately taken *Byzantium* from the French) and with *Peter* king of *Arragon*, *Manfreds* son-in-law, they all agree to cut off the French, and to con-

confer *Sicily* on the Arragonians; a Fleet for this purpose is prepared by both kings, and the business kept close for two years together, till the very hour that all the French throughout the whole Island were destroyed, as it were, in a moment, except a few who were in the strong Castle of *Spirlinga*; it is thought, that in the space of two hours, above 8000. were slain by the *Sicilians*, who spared not women great with child, but ript up their bellies, and dasht the infants against the stones, that none of the French blood might there remain; (this was done on Easter day at evening Service, *March* 30. Hence the proverb, *Vespera Siculæ.*) The slaughter being finished, *Peter* of *Arragon*, who stayed at *Hippo* in *Africk* with his Fleet, waiting for the event of the *Sicilian* conspiracy, was sent for, and by the Nobility hath the Island surrendred to him. Thus *Charles* lost *Sicily* quite, who though he raised a war against the *Arragonians*, yet they kept the Island till his Race was wholly extinguished, and then they obtained also the kingdome of *Naples*, being invited thither by *Joan* the widow: And thence also the French were quite excluded. Afterward *Ferdinand* king of *Arragon* dying without issue Male, left these kingdomes to *Charles* the 5. his Grandchild by his Daughter. *An. Christi.* 1282.

William the Emperour being slain, ashe was preparing an Army against the *Frislanders*, *Germany* was divided into Factions about a new Emperour; some were for *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal*, k. *John* of *Englands* son, others for *Alphonsus* king of *Castile*, both had made parties by giving large bribes, and both are nominated; *Richard*, by the Bishops of *Mentz*, *Colen*, and the *Palatine*; but he being too eager and violent against those that were for *Alphonsus*, and having run himself out of all his monies by his too much bounty, is forsaken of his own party, and so forced to return to *England*. *Alphonsus* being sent for into *Germany* by his own party, to wit, by the Bishop of *Trevers*, the Duke of *Saxony*, Marquess of *Brandenburg*, and king of *Bohemia*; but delighting more in Mathematicks then in Dominions, and being fearful to meddle with the distracted estate of *Germany*, staid so long in *France*, that he lost both the Empire and his own kingdome, which his son *Sancin* seised on; therefore he returns discontented to *Sivil*, where with grief he died, having advanced the knowledge of Physick and Astronomy, to his great charges, and the benefit of posterity; for he spent above 40000. Crowns in compiling of his Tables, and interpreting of Arabick, and other books into Latine. 1257.

Germany being exposed to every great mans violence, for want of a Head, and both *Fredericks* faction and the Popes were so strong there, that no man durst venture to meddle with the Imperial Government: Pope *Gregory* is at last moved with the afflictions and complaints of that Countrey, so that he gives order to the Electors to choose them a king of the *Romans*, otherwise he would provide one for them: When they met at *Franckfort*, they unanimously pitched upon *Rodulphus* of *Habspurg*, who was then besieging of *Basil*; upon the news of his Election, which at first he did hardly believe, he makes peace with the *Basilians*, repairs to *Aix*, where he is crowned with his wife *Anna*. As soon as he was setled, he applyes himself to compose the differences of *Germany*; complaint was made against *Ottocar* king of *Bohemia*, for invading and seising upon *Austria*. The *Hungarians* had invaded the lower, and the *Bavarians* upper *Austria*; their oppressions were such, that the people resolved to invite thither, either *Henry* Marquess of *Mysnia*, the husband of *Constarca*, who was sister to *Frederick* the last, or else one of his two sons. *Wenceslaus* king of *Bohemia* perceiving this, married his son *Ottocar* to *Margaret* the Widow, who had born two sons to *Henry*, *Frederick* the Emperours son: Upon this Match, *Ottocar* pretending a Title, invades *Austria*, which he did not long enjoy, for *Rodolphus* the Emperour overthrew him, brought him on his knees, and took *Austria* from him, which he bestowed on his son *Albertus*, whose posterity hath possessed it till this time. But not long after, *Ottocar* scorning that he should be thus used by *Rodolphus*, who had heretofore 1282.

been

An. Christi. been his ſervant, being alſo inſtigated by his wife *Cuniganda*, (for he had unjuſtly repudiated *Margaret*) ſecretly raiſeth 10000 men, and with monies tries to corrupt the Peers to forſake *Cæſar*; but the buſineſs could not be ſo cloſely carried as he ſuppoſed; for *Rodolphus* with an Army of *Germans* and *Hungarians* beat *Ottocar*, whom a common Souldier killed after he was taken, becauſe he had killed a brother of this Souldiers. In this Battel the Emperor was beaten down from his horſe, yet recovered, and 14000. were ſlain; preſently after this *Moravia* is ſubdued. A new League is made between *Cæſar* and the Queen of *Bohemia*, that *Cæſars* daughter ſhould marry with *Wenceſlaus* the ſon of *Ottocar*, and ſo he ſhould hold *Bohemia* in fee of the Emperour.

After this, *Ralph* forceth the *Bernens*, *Helvetians*, and *Burgundians* to ſubmit to him, and having in fourteen ſeveral Battels got the better ſtill, he is honoured with the Title of VICTORIOUS; In *Thuringia* and the neighbouring places he pulled down 66. Caſtles of the Rebels; He reigned 18. years, in all that time he never ſaw *Italy*, affirming that the former Emperours went thither rejoycing, but returned ſorrowing: He beſtowed *Romandiola* upon the Pope; He ſold to the *Bononians*, *Florentines*, *Gennois*, and *Lucans* their liberty for gold; He deſtroyed all the High-way Robbers in *Germany*, 29. he put to death at one time. There was one who reſembled ſomewhat *Frederick* Duke of *Suevia*, who was beheaded with *Conradinus*; this fellow began to draw people into Rebellion, ſo that the Emperour being afraid, left off the ſiege of *Columbaria*, and made ſhew as if he would ſubmit to this new *Cæſar*, whoſe knavery when he found out, he cauſed him to be burnt alive. But the Pope fearing his greatneſs, renewes the Decree for recovering the Holy-Land, which was almoſt gone, for in three years after it was all ſwallowed up by the *Egyptians*. He alſo ſet out an Edict for the defence of *Italy*, the Sea-coaſt of which, for want of Garriſons, was expoſed to Piracies. Another order he publiſheth for expelling the French and Spaniards out of *Sicily* and *Naples*; and if the Emperour made not haſte to reform theſe diſorders, he threatens to invade *Hetruria* and the *Exarchat* or *Romandiola* in *Picenum*, *Flaminia*, and *Æmilia*; he allowed alſo for the holy Knights, the fourth part of the yearly Revenues; but *Ralph* not being willing to quarrel with the Pope, parted with the *Exarchat*, as we ſaid.

Ralph the Emperour being aged and ſickly, calls a Diet of the Princes, wherein he moved that his ſon *Albert* might be his Succeſſor; but not prevailing, and finding himſelf ill-diſpoſed, removes from *Frankfort* towards
1291. *Spire*, ſaying, *Let us go to the other Emperours*, and ſo died by the way, the 19. year of his Reign, and was buried at *Spire*, neer *Philip* of *Suevia*. He had by his wife *Anna*, *Albert* Duke of *Auſtria*, *Ralph* Duke of *Suevia*, with divers other ſons and daughters: In his time *Ptolemais* was onely left to the Chriſtians, about which, whilſt the Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*, the kings of *Cyprus* and *Sicily*, the Hoſpitallers, Templars, and Teutonick Knights ſtrived for ſuperiority, Sultan *Melech Sapherates* (that is to ſay, the illuſtrious King) beſieged it two moneths, the Chriſtians within not being able to hold out longer, got away privately by Sea, and ſo the Town was utterly deſtroyed, 196. years after the Conqueſt by *Godfrey* of *Bulloign*; ſo that in *Aſia*, onely *Cilicia*, now called *Armenia minor*, retained the Chriſtian Profeſſion. A main cauſe of our loſſes in *Phœnicia*, and the *Levant*, was the quarrel between the *Venetians* and *Genuois*, upon ſuſpition that *Philip* of *Montferrat* Governour of *Acre* or *Ptolemais* was more favourable to the *Venetians* then the *Genuois*: There was alſo in the Town a Church of Saint *Saba*, for which they ſtrove; the Pope underſtanding this difference, decreed that the Church ſhould be common to them both; whereupon the *Genuois* got into it firſt, filled it with Souldiers, and turned it
1259. into a Garriſon: The *Venetians* hearing of this, in a rage parted from *Tyre* with three Gallies, enter forcibly the Port of *Acre*, break down the Chain, and burns 23. Ships with two Gallies of the *Genuois*; afterward they overthrow

throw the Church, affirming that the *Gennois* had profaned it: Of theſe ſmall beginnings, ſprung that war, which held ſo long, in which many cruel Battels were fought; the *Venetians* at firſt being ſuperiors, by the aſſiſtance of the *Piſans*, and of their own Forces. *An. Chriſti.*

In *France* S. *Lewis* reforms the Laws and the Judges; ordaines that all blaſphemers and profane ſwearers by Gods Name, ſhould be burnt in the forehead with a hot iron, wiſhing he might be ſo burnt himſelf, conditionally he might purge his kingdome of that hainous ſin: He built and finiſhed divers Religious Houſes, as that of the *Jacobins* at *Paris*, of the *Cordaliers*, of the *Carthuſians*, and others: he married his ſon *Philip* to the Infanta *Elizabeth*, daughter to *James* king of *Arragon*; he reconciled the difference that was between the children of *Margaret* Counteſs of *Flanders*. Having ſetled his kingdome and houſe, he goeth on Ship-board at *Marſiles*, with his three ſons, *Philip*, *John* and *Peter*, and ſets ſaile for *Carthage*, where he takes divers Ships in the Port, and ſinks the reſt, and then laid ſiege to the City; a furious battel was fought between the *French* and *Moors*, which continued doubtful a great while, at laſt a party of the French Army getting between the City and the *Moors*, ſeiſed on the Caſtle, and took it; the *Moors* having loſt their Fort, and being aſſaulted on both ſides, ſubmitted, and were received to mercy by *Lewis*, and ſo the Town was ſurrendred. After this, the French Army marcheth towards *Tunis*, the Royal City at that time, with an intent to take it: The king of *Tunis* encounters them with his Army in the way; a Battel is fought, in which 10000. *Moors* are killed, and the whole Army defeated, and ſo he marcheth to the City, which he beſieged 6. moneths ſo cloſe, that no proviſion could come thither; the Citizens begin to think of a ſurrender, and were beginning to Article, when the Plague ſeiſeth upon the French Camp, ſo that many died every day, among the reſt, Prince *John*, who from this ſad unfortunate accident was named *Triſtan*, he was born whilſt his Father was a priſoner in *Egypt*; and Saint *Lewis* himſelf, to the great grief of his Army, and of all good men, died in the Camp of a Flux, the 25. of *Auguſt*; after whoſe death the king of *Sicily* arrived before *Tunis* with a great Army, to the comfort of the French, much dejected for the loſs of their good king. *Henry* alſo Earl of *Cornwal* ſhortly after arrived with a great Fleet, hoping to finde Saint *Lewis* alive, that they two might joyn their Forces with Prince *Edward* of *England*, for recovering of *Syria*. *Tunis* being now beſieged by *Italians*, *French*, and *Engliſh* both by Sea and Land, the *Moors* within, who uſed to make daily ſallies before, do now begin to faint and yield; the Chriſtians being weary and ſickly, yielded to a peace, that the Barbarous king ſhould permit the Goſpel to be freely taught through all his Dominions, and that he ſhould pay yearly to the king of *Sicily* 40000. Ducats, which was the ſum due from *Sicily* to the Pope: After this, the Chriſtians reſolve to go for *Sicily*, there to refreſh themſelves with the change of aire, but they were ſurpriſed by the way with ſuch a ſtorm, that all their Ships were ſcattered ſundry wayes, and many of them ſunk and torn; beſides, the Plague was ſo hot amongſt them, that they reſolved every man to his own home, and to give off their voyage intended for the Holy-Land. 1270.

To Saint *Lewis* ſucceeded his ſon *Philip* the third, ſirnamed the Bold: the next year after his return from *Africk* he was crowned at *Rhemes*; he made *Guy* Earl of *Flanders* in place of his brother, who died in *Sicily*. The Queen-Mother following the ſteps of her Husband Saint *Lewis*, gave her ſelf wholly to devotion, and founded in the Suburbs of *Paris* a Covent of the Order of St. *Francis*. The King made himſelf Lord of *Tholouſe*, the Heirs thereof being dead. His eldeſt ſon *Lewis* was poiſoned by his Chamberlain *Peter de la Broche*, who accuſed the Queen, *Philips* ſecond wife, of the murther, as if ſhe had done it, that her children might ſucceed to the Crown: The King ſends to an old Wizard in *Brabant*, famous for divination, who excuſed the Queen, and laid 1271.

An. Christi. laid the blame on *La Broche*, whom upon this he caused to be hanged. He re-
duced the *Gascoigns*: He raised a great Army against *Arragon*, whose King
1284. *Peter* had seised upon *Sicily*, and was excommunicate by the Pope, and his kingdome bestowed on *Philip Valois*, king *Philips* son. At the siege of *Gerunda*, which *Philip* took, *Peter* was killed; but *Roger* Admiral of the *Arragonian* Fleet falls unexpectedly on the French, as they were removing thence, because of the Plague, and sets both the Town and Fleet on fire, and so they make their way through the *Pyrenæan* Straits with their swords. *Philip* at this news fell sick and died at *Perpinianum*, or *Parpignan*, and was buried at S. *Denis*. This
1285. year was famous for the death of three Kings, namely, of *Charles* King of *Sicily*, *Peter* King of *Arragon*, and *Philip* King of *France*. He reigned above 15. years; he left two sons behind him by his first wife *Isabel* the daughter of *Arragon*, to wit, *Philip* the Fair, his Successour, and *Charles Valois*; of his second wife *Mary* the *Brabantine*, he left *Lewis* alive.

Philip the Fair had almost continual wars with *England* and *Flanders*, that were Confederates: by his brother *Charles Valois*, he defeated the Forces of *Edward* the Second, and recovered *Gascoign*. *Guy* Earl of *Flanders*, who took
1293. part with *Edward*, was overthrown with him at *Turnæ* by the same *Valois*, and caried prisoner to *Paris* with his two sons. After this the *Flemings* rebel against
1295. the K. and defeat his Army at *Courtray*; but two years after, they fought again at *Andomaropolis*, and were beaten by the King: Then there was a peace con-
1304. cluded between them. This *Philip* for refusing to undertake the Holy War, was accursed by *Boniface* the 8. but his Successour Pope *Benedict* absolved him. *Clemens* the 5. who translated his seat to *Avinion*, where it continued 70. years, conspired with this *Philip* against the Templars, whom they destroyed, and
1307. bestowed their wealth on the Hospitallers, except what they put up in their
1314. Exchequers. He fixed the Parliament, which before was ambulatory, at *Paris*, and built the great Hall of his Palace, with other convenient rooms for that purpose; and at the request of the *Normans*, he granted them a Parliament at *Rouen* their capital City, which sits twice yearly, in the Spring and Autumn, for six weeks at a time. About this time Queen *Jane* founded the Colledge of *Navarre*. King *Philip*, after he had been royally entertained in *Flanders*, with all the cost and magnificence that could be devised, left such Governours behind him, who did so tax and oppress the people, that they resolve to shake off the French yoak; to that purpose a cruel massacre was committed on them at *Bruges* in their beds at night; and all the Gentry of *Flanders*, with the people, arm themselves against the king, who was raising an Army of 24000. to ruine *Flanders*, and was on his march as far as *Doway*; but being disswaded by his sister, king *Edwards* wife, upon his instigation, who was loath that *Flanders* should be swallowed up by the French, *Philip* returns back with a part of his Army, leaving the rest to Garrison the frontier Towns: but he could not be at quiet with himself, till he had revenged this murther of his Subjects upon the *Flemings*; therfore under the cōmand of the E. of *Artois* he sends a great Army against them who furiously and foolishly set upon their Trenches, where the *Flemings* held them play so long, til a great part of their Army wheeled about a private way, and fell upon the Rear of the French, whom they so disordered, that 12000. Horse and Foot were slain, besides many prisoners; Count *Artois* with many of the Nobility, were killed, over whose dead bodies, chiefly of the Earls, the enemy barbarously insulted. Upon this defeat, the king sends old *Guy* their Count, to see if he could perswade them to submit upon hope and promise of pardon; but they would not yield; and withall, being puft up with their Victory, they invade the Countrey of *Henault*; but they were beat back from thence. The French king sends for 6. Gallies from *Genua*, resolving to beat the *Flemings* both by Sea and Land; but they being nothing daunted, make excursions as far as *Arras*, setting fire on the Suburbs thereof; but the French recovered some part of their honour lost at *Curtray*, by defeating

ting the *Flemings* neer Saint *Omer*, where they killed 15000 of them, and shortly after 800. of *Bruges*, and 500. before *Tournay*; but these losses did not discourage them; therefore they resolve with fresh Forces to assault the French again; which they did with such fury, that *Valois* took his heels, but the king with his Army fought stoutly, and got the Victory, with the loss of 6000. *Flemings* on the place; among which was found the body of *William*, son to *Guy* Count of *Flanders*. This defeat made the *Flemings* submit to peace, which was concluded upon this condition, that 200000. Crowns should be paid to the French king, and *Flanders* restored to *Robert*, *Guy's* eldest son, for the Father was dead in *France*. *An. Christ.*

About this time, *Cassan* the Tartarian Prince, who was become Christian, having defeated the *Persians*, and chased the Sultan out of *Syria*, writes to the Pope and French king for their aide, and alliance with the Latine Princes, for recovering of *Jerusalem*: Upon this, Pope *Boniface* the 8. sends menacing Letters to *Philip*, to promote with all speed this Expedition: which Letters the king slighted, and withall imprisoned the Bishop of *Palmiers* (which place he had lately erected into a Bishoprick for the Province of *Narbon*) for holding correspondency with the Pope against him; and forbids any of his Clergy to repair to the Councel which the Pope had call'd: Hereupon he is excommunicated, and his Subjects absolved from their Allegiance; so that the king was forced to set the Bishop at liberty. But *Boniface* not yet contented stirs up *Albert* Duke of *Austria*, elected Emperour, to invade *France*; but he stirred not: He solliciteth also the king of *England*, but he could not, being imployed in his *Scottish* wars. *Philip* sends an Embassador to the Pope to be reconciled; the French Clergy send also three Deputies in their names to excuse their not waiting on his Holiness at the Councel; In the mean while the Pope was seised on at *Anagnis*, a City of *Abruzzo*, by *Sciarra Colonesi*, a Bandito of *Rome*, by the French Kings aide, and carried to *Rome*, where he died shortly after. This *Philip* afterward being present with the Kings of *England* and *Arragon* at the Popes Coronation in *Lions*, was like to be smothered by the fall of a wall, which killed and hurt many, among the rest *John* Duke of *Brittain* was slain. The Templars were accused by this King and the Pope, of hainous crimes, and of keeping correspondency with the Turks and Sarazens; therefore were condemned to be burnt alive: The great Master, with his brethren, protested before God at their death, that they were free from the crimes objected against them. The Templars of *Germany* were more favourably dealt with, for though their estates were taken away, yet none were condemned, but such as were found guilty. The Hospitallers being enriched with the Templars Estates, raised a great Army, with which they took the Isle of *Rhodes* from the Turks. The war of *Flanders* was beginning again, because the money agreed upon, was not as yet payed; therefore the French Army enters the borders; but upon promise of submission and payment, the peace is renewed. A little before *Philips* death, a great tumult arose at *Lions* between the Episcopal party and the Royal, about their Rights, which with much ado was appeased by *Lewis* King of *Navarre*, and the Count of *Savoy*. The King died at *Fontain-bleau* where he was born, and buried at S. *Dennis*, having reigned 24. years. 1303.

In *England*, king *Henry* the third hearing of St. *Lewis* his captivity, and that he was willing to resign *Normandy*, if *Henry* would come to his rescue; Upon this, he presently undertakes the Cross, and demands the Tenth of his Clergy and Laity, for defraying of the charges, exhorting the people to attend him; but he found the *Londoners* backward; a Parliament is called, in which the demanded Tenth is denied by the Bishops and Lords; but such were the kings wants, and *Gascoign* was upon revolt, that another Parliament is called, and a Tenth is granted by the Clergy for three years, and Scutage three Marks of every knights fee by the Laity for that year. The king resumes

An. Christi. *Gascoign* from his brother *Richard*, who had possessed it now 27. years, and gave it to his eldest Son *Edward*. *Richard* was unwilling to part with his possession, and so were the *Gascoigns* to part with him: Whereupon *Simon Monfort* Earl of *Chester*, a stern man, is sent with a Charter for 6. years, to curb them. Three years after the *Gascoigns* accuse him of Tyranny; the king sends for him, but he being supported by the Nobility, contests with the king, who is fain to send him back again to his charge, with promise to the *Gascoigns*, that Prince *Edward* should come shortly after; but *Monfort* tyrannizeth more then ever; wherefore *Henry* goes over into *Gascoign* with 300. Ships, and deposeth *Monfort*; and because the *Gascoigns* had put themselves under the protection of the king of *Spain*, who claimed Title to *Aquitane*, *Henry* proposeth a Match between his son *Edward*, and *Elinor* the *Spaniards* sister; The Marriage is agreed upon and solemnised at *Burgos*, where the king of *Spain* knights the Prince, and quits his claim to *Aquitane*. *Henry* invests the Prince and his wife therein, and gives besides to him *Ireland*, *Wales*, *Bristol*, *Stamford*, and *Grantham*. After this, king *Henry* returns homeward by *Paris*, with one thousand Horse, and is feasted by Saint *Lewis* lately returned from captivity. Upon king *Henry's* arrival into *England*, he fines the *Londoners*, though they had presented him with a hundred pound in mony, and two hundred pound in plate. After this, *Elinor* the Princes wife arrives with a great Train. There comes also from the Pope *Alexander* the Fourth, the Bishop of *Bononia*, with a proffer of *Sicily* to *Edmond* the kings second son. Then comes *Rustandus* with power to collect the tenth of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, which is denied him; he comes also with power to absolve the king from his Oath for the Holy War, if he would destroy *Manfred* son to *Frederick* the Emperor, now king of *Sicily* and *Apulia*; but the *Apulians* angry that the Pope should give away their Land to a stranger, help *Manfred* to defeat the Popes forces. In the mean while, *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal* is elected King of the *Romans*, and crowned at *Aix*. King *Henry* demands a Tax for attaining the kingdome of *Sicily* for his son *Edmund*; two and fifty thousand Marks are granted; but this contents him not, he demands a greater summe, which is denied him. Hereupon Prince *Edward* is fain to mortgage *Stamford*, and other Towns, to *William de Valence*, to supply the Kings wants. After this a Parliament is called at *Oxford*, called the Mad Parliament, where many wrongs are complained of, and many things established tending to the weakning of the Kings Prerogative: Twelve Peers are chosen, whereof the Earls of *Leicester* and *Gloucester* were chief, to whom power was given to maintain the Laws made lately, which were ratified by the King unwillingly; but he being displeased that the twelve Peers should remove from him most of his chief Servants, calls another Parliament, where he complains of this wrong; but they so little regarded the kings displeasure, that they ratified the Laws formerly concluded on: This made the King comply with *France* and *Scotland* for aide. He re-

1261. signs *Normandy*, with the Lordships of *Anjou*, *Poytiers*, and *Mayn*, to *Lewis*; in lieu of this, *Henry* is made Duke of *Guyan*, for which he was to do his homage: He also procures two Bulls from *Rome*, by which he and all others that had sworn to maintain the late Laws, were absolved; notwithstanding the twelve Peers went on in reforming abuses, and removing from their charge such Officers as the King had placed. The king publisheth the Popes Bulls, countermandeth the Authority of the twelve Peers, and makes the *Londoners* swear to assist him. The Barons upon this raise an Army, and write to the king, beseeching him not to suppress the *Oxford* Laws, and withall they march toward *London*, spoiling by the way the houses of all those who held for the Popes Bulls; they write to the *Londoners*, who sent the Letter to the king, and their resolutions to hold with the Twelve Peers in maintaining the late Lawes, and so they receive the Barons into the City with joy: from thence they march with the Army to *Windsor* Castle, where they plunder and displace all the

Aliens

Aliens, who had Offices there. The Lords of the Kings Councel gave order for reſtitution of the Aliens goods; but the Barons refuſed to obey: At laſt theſe differences were referred to the judgement of Saint *Lewis*, whoſe ſentence was, that the twelve Peers ſhould loſe their authority, and none ſhould rule but the King. This ſentence, as partiall, is rejected by the Barons, who repair again to the Marches of *Wales*, and levy a new Army; in their march toward *London*, they plunder and burn the houſes of Sir *Roger Mortimer*, who counſelled the King to withſtand them. The Prince levieth another Army, which is beat by the Barons, who remain Maſters of the Field. After this Victory, they are joyfully received at *London*; and two Conſtables elected by ſome Citizens gathered a multitude together, who ſpoiled the houſes of *Richard* King of the *Romans*, lately returned from *Germany*, whom the Barons forced to ſwear to maintain their cauſe: But now he becomes their enemy, who before was mediating a peace. The King in the interim ſurpriſeth *Northampton*, and in it Sir *Peter Montfort*, and *Simon*, *Leiceſters* eldeſt ſon, who had raiſed an Army thereabout for the Barons. Another Battel after this was fought neer *Lewis* in *Suſſex*, where the King with his brother *Richard*, Prince *Edward*, with many Knights and Gentlemen are taken priſoners, and more then 20000. ſlain. After this, a peace is made, and agreed that the King ſhould confirm the twelve Peers authority; which being granted, the two Kings are ſet at liberty, and their two ſons left for Hoſtages with the Barons, who ſend them to *Dover* Caſtle. Then did the King call a Parliament, in which he ſwore to maintain the Barons rights, untill they ſhould be reformed, if any thing were amiſs. Hereupon the Princes were enlarged. Shortly after the two heads of the Faction, *Leiceſter* and *Glouceſter*, did jarre about theſe Ordinances. Prince *Edward*, upon this, with *Glouceſter*, *Warrein*, and Sir *Roger Mortimer* raiſed a new Army; *Leiceſter* did the like; a cruel Battel is fought at *Everſham* in *Worceſterſhire*, in which the Barons are diſcomfited: Here *Simon* Earl of *Leiceſter*, with his eldeſt ſon, and Sir *Hugh Spencer*, with many other prime men were ſlain; the Earls carkaſs was inhumanely mangled by the Souldiers, who cut off his head, hands, feet, and privy members. Upon this Victory, the King calls a Parliament, in which he recovers his former power, and the Barons utterly loſt theirs: The King alſo inſtigated by his brother *Richard*, reſolved to conſume *London* with fire; but the Citizens came humbly ſubmitting their lands, goods, and lives to his mercy; but he was ſo implacable, that he would not hearken to them, nor to any for them; till at laſt the Prince mediated in their behalf, and ſo the King was content with a fine of one thouſand Marks; he pardoned alſo the Cinque-ports, for their robbing at Sea, during the troubles. But the Earl of *Glouceſter*, who by his revolt from the Barons, had furthered the kings good ſucceſs, being ſlighted for all his good ſervice, grew deſperate, goeth to *London*, and there the raſcality flock to him, and having committed divers outrages, falls upon the Kings houſe at *Weſtminſter*, which they ranſack and plunder; but the Prince again interceded both for the Earl, and the other offenders: The Earle deſirous to be imployed, requeſts that he might be ſent with an Army to the Holy-Land, which was granted, becauſe the K. was willing to be rid of him; but he uſing too long delayes, loſt this opportunity, which was laid hold upon by Prince *Edward*, who conducted the Army into the Holy-Land, where he did brave ſervice, and raiſed the ſiege of *Acon*; he was traiterouſly wounded with a poiſoned knife by a Sarazen, but recovered. His Couſin *Henry*, ſon to the king of the *Romans*, was ſlain in the Church of *Viterbo* in time of divine Service, by his own couſin-german *Guy de Montfort* ſon to *Simon* Earl of *Leiceſter*, in revenge of his fathers death: king *Richard* died ſhortly after; and the next year following k. *Henry* the 3. departed this life, the 65. year of his age, and the 57. of his reign; he had by his wife *Elinor* 6. ſons, whereof two ſurvived him, *Edward* and *Edmund*; and two daughters, *Margaret*, wife to the king of *Scots*, and *Beatrice*, who married *John* the firſt D. of *Brittain*.

An. Chriſti.

1265.

1274.

To

An. Christi. To *Henry* ſucceeds his Son *Edward*, being now in *Syria*, who three years after his departure from *England*, begins his voyage homewards; he lands in *Sicily*, where he is royally feaſted by *Charles* King thereof; he is alſo in *Italy* honourably uſed by the Pope and Princes; and in *France* entertained by *Philip* the third, to whom he did homage for his lands held of that Crown; at laſt arrives in *England* after ſix years from his ſetting out: *Alexander* King of Scots, and *John* Duke of *Brittain* were preſent at his Coronation: He began betimes to clip the Clergies wings, by cauſing the Statute of *Mortmain* to be enacted, againſt which afterward the Clergy petitioned the King, when they had raiſed him a great ſum of money, but they were not heard: he abridged alſo divers Monaſteries of their Liberties, and took from the Abbot of *Weſtminſter* the Return of Writs granted him by King *Henry* the 3. He reſolves to ſubdue *Wales* which had alwayes been a receptacle for the *Engliſh* Rebels: he ſummons *Leolin* their Prince to be preſent at the Parliament who refuſed, therefore he enters *Wales* with fire and ſword, and forceth *Leolin* to ſue for peace, which he had, paying a Fine of 50000 *lib.* and 1000 *lib. per ann.* but withall delivers him *Elinor*, *Simon Monforts* daughter Earle of *Leiceſter*, with whom he was in love, ſhe comming from *France* was taken at Sea; yet for all this, within three years he rebels again with his brother *David*, on whom the King had beſtowed divers graces; an Army is raiſed againſt him, *Leolin* is ſlain in the battell, and his head is ſent to King *Edward*, who cauſed it to be crowned with Ivie, and ſet upon the Tower of *London*: thus ends the laſt of the Welch Princes; his brother *David* is apprehended, drawn at a horſes tail about the City of *Shrewsbury*, then beheaded, his heart and bowels burnt, his head ſent to the Tower, and his four quarters to *Briſtol*, *Northampton*, *York*, and *Wincheſter*. In this interim *Alphonſus* the Kings eldeſt Son twelve years old dyeth, ſo *Edward* born at *Carnarvan* is heir of the Crown, and firſt of the Engliſh who was ſtiled Prince of *Wales*. After this, King *Edward* at the death of *Philip* the Bold, paſſes over into *France*, there to do homage to the new
1286. King *Philip* the fourth for *Aquitain*; then he reconciles the King of *Arragon* and *Sicily* in *Spain*, and redeems *Charles* Prince of *Achaia* (Son to King *Charles* of *Sicily*) priſoner in *Arragon* for 30000 *lib.* After three years and ſix months being abroad, he returns into *England*, calls a Parliament, reforms divers abuſes, and enricheth himſelf with Fines laid upon corrupt Officers and Judges, he baniſheth the Jews, ſeiſeth upon their eſtates, for which the Kingdome gave him a fifteenth, and the Clergy a tenth; many other ſupplies of money he had in his time, he new coyned all the old money which had been defaced by the *Jews*, for which two hundred ninety ſeven ſuffered at one time in *London*. He was choſen Arbitrator by the Scots, who were divided
1290. about the true ſucceſſor of King *Alexander*; and as he was going Northward, his vertuous Queen *Elinor* dyed, who had ſucked (as ſome write) the poyſon out of his wound given him by the *Sarazen*. Whereupon he returns with the Corps to *Weſtminſter*, he cauſed Croſſes to be erected at *Stamford*, *Waltham*, *Weſt-cheap*, *Charing*, and elſewhere in memory of her, with her ſtatue thereon. After this, he returns to the North, and by his means *Baliol* is made King of Scots, who afterward upon an affront offered him in the Court of *England*, defies King *Edward*, ſo a long War begins; King *Edward* enters into a
1297. League with *Guy* Earle of *Flanders*, with *Adolph* the Emperour, to whom he ſends 15000 *lib.* to recover his lands in *France*, and with other Princes; ſo he ſends an Army into *France*, where all his Territories are forfeited and ſeiſed upon for refuſing to come and do his homage. He then enters *Scotland* with 4000 Horſe, and 30000 Foot, beſide 1000 Foot, and 500 Horſe of the Biſhop of *Durheſme*; many places in *Scotland* are ſubdued, and *Baliol* ſues for peace, and doth homage: after this he raiſeth heavy Taxes on the Clergy and Laity; the Clergy refuſe to pay, whereupon they are put out of the Kings protection; But wen they ſaw how they were expoſed to all wrongs for want of Juſtice,

they

they ſubmitted, and redeemed themſelves and Monaſteries, which the King had ſeiſed on. His brother *Edmond* in the mean while dyed at *Byon*, having beſieged *Burdeaux* a long time to no purpoſe: upon this news the King calls a Parliament, in which he deſires his Lords to go to *Guſcoign*, which they refuſed, except he went in perſon, which he could not do, becauſe he was tyed to aſſiſt *Guy* Earle of *Flanders*, whoſe Daughter the French King kept as a priſoner in *Paris*, for that *Guy* was to marry her to King *Edwards* Son: Beſides the *French* King falls upon *Flanders* with an Army of 60000 and wins many Towns: King *Edward* upon this paſſeth over into *Flanders* with 500 Sail, and and 18000 men, but was diſappointed of the Emperours aſſiſtance, and ſo could do little good for *Guy*: He ſtaid that Winter in *Gaunt*, where he loſt many of his men whom the *Gantois* killed in a mutiny, and *Edward* himſelf hardly eſcaped; therefore he is forced to make peace with the *French* King for two years, and to leave *Guy* to himſelf, who ſhortly after was carried priſoner to *Paris*, where he dyed (as ſome think) and his Daughter of grief. King *Edward* upon his return, underſtanding that the Scots by the courage of *William Wallas*, had almoſt regained that Kingdome, makes a new invaſion, and defeats the *Scots* in a great battel at *Tonkirk*; during this time, the Exchequer and Courts of Juſtice were kept at *York* about ſix years. At the Parliament held in S. *Andrews*, the *Scots* (except *Wallas* and his party) ſwear fealty to the King of *England*. *An. Chriſti.* 1300.

In *Scotland*, *Robert Abbot* of *Dumferling* was removed by King *Alexander* the third from his Chancellorſhip, for legitimating the baſtard daughter of King *Alexander* the ſecond, intending ſhe ſhould ſucceed if the King died without iſſue; the Seal was delivered to *Gamelinus* Archbiſhop of St. *Andrews*. Some of the Lords being ſummoned to anſwer for their oppreſſions, refuſed to appear; whereupon they are by the young King declared Rebels; they watching an opportunity when the King was thinly accompanied, ſeiſed on him, and carried him to *Sterling*, pretending they removed him from his Engliſh Counſel by which he was much ruled, being lately returned from *England*, with his Lady King *Henries* ſiſter, and a great Engliſh train: but the arrival of *Acho* King of *Norway*, with 120 ſhips cauſed the King to be ſet at liberty, and the Lords to be pardoned; for then was no time to quarrel, when the common Enemy was ſo near. This *Acho* pretending right to ſome of the Scottiſh Weſtern Iſlands, came with 20000 *Danes*, and ſuddenly ſeiſed upon two of the greateſt Iſles; then he landed his men on the ſhore of *Cunigame*, againſt whom *Alexander Stewart* grandfather to him who was firſt of that name King of *Scotland*, was ſent with an Army; he after a long skirmiſh defeats the *Danes*, kills ſixteen thouſand on the place, and drives the reſt on ſhip-board, all the ſhips were caſt away on the Iſles of *Orkney* by ſtorms, except four which came ſafe home to *Norway*; ſhortly after this King *Acho* died of grief; his Son *Magnus* was glad to make peace with the *Scots*, and reſign all his right in the Weſtern Iſlands, for which he was to receive 4000 marks preſently and a hundred marks yearly, beſides a match is made between *Margaret* King *Alexanders* daughter, and *Hangonan* King *Magnus* his Son: about this time King *Alexander* took the Iſle of *Man*, it was there agreed that it ſhould be under the protection of *Scotland*, and that the King of *Man* ſhould furniſh the *Scots* with ten ſhips when he ſhould be required: After this, *Alexander* ſends five thouſand *Scots* to aid King *Henry* againſt his Barons in *England*, where moſt were killed, the reſt taken priſoners. At that time there was great emulation in *Scotland* between the Nobility and Clergy, whoſe wealth and power was much envied; complaints of wrongs done by ſome young Lords to the Clergy were brought to *Alexander*, which he ſlighted; but the Clergy threatning to complain to the Pope, King *Alexander* was forced to comply with them, for avoiding further trouble, and cauſed ſatisfaction to be made them; in the interim a Legate from the Pope comes to collect money for the Holy War, 1253.

but

An. Christi. but he was not ſuffered to enter the Kingdome, and anſwer was made him, that the King would himſelf raiſe money, and ſend Souldiers to *Syria*; therefore an Army is ſent under the Earles of *Carric* and *Athol* to the *French* King *Lewis*, & to the Pope a thouſand marks. Not long after, the King loſt his wife, and both his ſons; firſt *David*, and then *Alexander*, who had married the Earl of *Flanders* daughter: *Margaret* alſo his daughter the Queen of *Norway* died, who left one daughter, called the Maid of *Norway*, By his ſecond wife the Earl of *Drux* his daughter in *France*, he had no iſſue; for the ſame year of his
1285. ſecond marriage, he fell from his Horſe neer *Kingorne*, and dyed the five and fortieth yeer of his Age, and the ſeven and thirtieth of his Reigne; his death was much lamented both for his good Laws, and his juſt government.

After *Alexanders* death, Six Governours are ſet over the Kingdome, three for the South-ſide, and three for the North-ſide of *Forth*. In the mean time, King *Edward* finding an opportunity to unite the two kingdomes, ſends Ambaſſadours into *Scotland*, with Propoſitions of a match between his Son and the Maid of *Norway*, Inheritrix of *Scotland*; the match is agreed on, and Ambaſſadours ſent to *Norway* to bring away the young Queen; but ſhe was dead before they came, to the great trouble of *England*, and almoſt the ruine of *Scotland*, which was torn into many factions by divers Competitor; the two chief of which were *John Balliol* and *Robert Bruce*; *John* had the better right, but *Robert* the moſt affections, and both ſtrong parties to ſide with them; *Bruce* had lands in *England*, *Balliol* in *France*, and both had great poſſeſſions in *Scotland*: To avoid civil wars, the controverſie by generall conſent is referred to king *Edward* of *England*, both, becauſe of his fathers affection and alliance to *Scotland*, and of his own deſire to have renewed this affinity with a new match: King *Edward* upon this comes to *Barwick*, cals the Nobility thither, not as Subjects, but as Friends; they ſent their Deputies; He firſt ſwears the Competitors to ſtand to their award, then he ſwears the Peers to obey him that ſhould be named king; this oath he cauſed to be ratified by their Hands and Seals; then he chooſeth out twelve prime men of *Scotland*, as many of *England*, whom he ſwears to give their Verdict juſtly and ſincerely; the chief Lawyers of *France* are ſent to, for their opinion in this difficulty, but their anſwer was not ſatisfactory: the twenty four were encloſed in a Church alone, to determine the controverſie; in the mean while *Edward* deals with *Bruce* apart, whoſe title was weakeſt, and proffers him the Kingdome, if he would become his Vaſſal, which he refuſed; then he deals with *Balliol*, who accepts the proffer; ſo *Balliol* ſix years and nine moneths after *Alexanders* death is declared king of *Scotland*, and crowned at *Scone*; but *Bruce* and divers others refuſed to ſwear Allegiance to him, who repairs to King *Edward* at *New-Caſtle*, to whom as he promiſed, ſwears Fealty, to the great grief of the Lords, who could not now tell how to help it: But not long after, the Earle of *Fifes* brother having his lands wrongfully given away by *Balliol*, and his brother murthered by the *Abernethies* without juſtice, appears to king *Edward* ſitting then in Parliament: *Balliol* was called upon to anſwer to his accuſation, and to come down to the Bar, (for he ſate next the king) at which indignity he ſo ſtormed, that he went home, cals a Parliament, at which were preſent Ambaſſadors from *France*, deſiring a renovation of the old League; and alſo from *England*, demanding aſſiſtance againſt the *French* according to their allegiance. The *French* League was preferred and renewed, being at that time of five hundred years continuance; and the *Engliſh* allegiance rejected, as being extorted from a king without conſent of his Parliament. Upon this, a defiance is ſent to king *Edward*, who having a Fleet ready, intended for *France*, ſends it to *Scotland*, which the *Scots* overthrew in the mouth of the river toward *Barwick*: this ſo exaſperated king *Edward*, that he invites *Bruce* to accept of the kingdome, and withall beſiegeth *Barwick*, which after a long ſiege by a ſlight was taken; for king *Edward* making ſhew of a retreat, the Town-gates were opened,

opened, the ſouldiers went out to refreſh themſelves; in the interim, the Engliſh Horſe return ſuddenly, enter the town and put all to the ſword: then he beſiegeth *Dunbar* and takes it, and defeats the Scots army that came to relieve it: Upon this *Edinburgh* and *Sterlin* are ſurrendered; at laſt, *Balliol* ſubmits himſelf and kingdome to *Edward*: who ſends him by ſea into *England*, and cauſeth the Scots Lords to ſwear Fealty again to him: *Balliol* is impriſoned, the fourth year after he was crowned, but upon the Popes intreaty is ſent into *France*, whither king *Edward* alſo went with a great army. In this mean ſpace *John Cumin* Earle of *Buchan* is ſent by the Scots with forces into *England*, who with Fire and Sword fall upon *Cumberland* and *Northumberland*; *Wallas* alſo, a private man, but well deſcended, of a high ſpirit, and ſtrong body, pittying his countries ſad condition, gathers an army together, and aſſaults the Engliſh Garriſons beyond *Forth*, which he took in; then fights *Craſſingham* (whom king *Edward* had left to be Treaſurer of *Scotland*) defeats his forces by *Sterlin*, and with his army enters *England*, where he ſtayed without oppoſition three moneths, and returns home with much bootie. Upon the report of theſe proceedings, King *Edward* haſteneth out of *France*, raiſeth a great army, and marcheth to *Stammor* or *Stainſmoore*; the Engliſh ſeeing the carriage of *Wallas* and his Captains, with the order of his army, which conſiſted of 30000. retreated without fighting; *Wallas* fearing ſome treachery did not purſue; Hereupon, the *Scots* Lords who held for King *Edward*, envying *Wallas* his valour and ſucceſſe, gave out that he aimed to be King himſelf, and that it were better for the Scots to be ſubject to King *Edward*, then to a new upſtart; beſides, the Scots army began to mutiny among themſelves, which was the cauſe of their overthrow ſix miles from *Sterling*; in which conflict ten thouſand Scots were ſlaine: *Wallas* upon this diſmiſſeth his forces, and King *Edward* returns into *England*. The Scots that ſtood upon their liberty, ſend to King *Philip* of *France* to mediate for a peace with King *Edward*, which was granted for ſeven moneths; during which time, the Ambaſſadors that were ſent to Pope *Boniface* the eighth were intercepted by the *Engliſh* and impriſoned; this with ſome other wrongs incenſed the *Scots* again, who drove all the *Engliſh*, and *Scots* that were for King *Edward*, out of their Garriſons: another army is ſent into *Scotland*, which being divided into three bodies, were all three defeated in one day by an army of eight thouſand Scots; which ſo enraged King *Edward*, that he raiſed the greateſt army that ever was raiſed by him; he rigs out alſo a great Fleet, and ſo invades *Scotland* by Sea and Land: ſo great was his army, that it went through the moſt part of *Scotland* without oppoſition; onely *Wallas* would ſally out of his Ambuſhes now and then upon the Rear: King *Edward* with fair promiſes would have drawn him to his ſide, but could not prevaile; all the Caſtles and Forts which had held out againſt the Engliſh hitherto, now yeelded; *Sterling* which held out three months, was faine to ſurrender for want of proviſion. The Scots again (except *Wallas* and his party) ſwear Fealty to King *Edward*, who returning into *England* carried with him the antient Records, Monuments, Libraries, Learned men, and the Fatall Chaire of *Scotland*. *Wallas* keeps himſelf in ſafe places, till he was betrayed by his friend *Montieth* to king *Edward*, who cauſed him to be put to death in *London*, and his quarters to be diſperſed to divers parts of both Kingdomes. King *Edward* now thought all ſure; but he found afterward that he had to to doe with a ſlippery Kingdome, which he could not long hold: For *Robert Bruce* the ſon of *Balliols* competitor, and *John Cumin* *Balliols* Couſin-german, taking the oath of ſecreſie from each other, combine to revolt; they agree that *Bruce* ſhould be King, and *Cumin* next in dignity; and ſhould alſo enjoy all *Bruces* poſſeſſions, which were very great; yet *Cumin* repenting of his bargain reveals the Plot to king *Edward*, who reſolves when opportunity ſerved, to have him queſtioned for high treaſon: Earle *Gomer* or *Gloceſter*, *Bruces* old friend, advertiſeth him of his danger, not by word or writing, for he durſt not,

An. Chriſti.

1302.

An. Christi. but by ſending him a pair of gilt Spurs with ſome money by his ſervant, pretending he had borrowed theſe of him: *Bruce* underſtanding the meaning, cauſeth three Horſes preſently to be ſhod backward, that in the Snow the tracks might not be known, and with his two ſervants rides poſt into *Scotland*, where by the way he intercepts *Cumins* Letters going to King *Edward*, in which he found, that *Cumin* did inſtigate the King to diſpatch *Bruce*, with what ſpeed he could, for he was a dangerous and active man, popular and potent in *Scotland*: Upon this *Bruce* goeth to finde out *Cumin*, who was then
1305. in the *Gray-Friers* Church at *Dumfriſe*, and ſheweth him his own Letters, which he diſclaimed; with that *Bruce* in a rage runs him through with his ſword, and leaves him dead in the place.

In *Rome*, *Alexander* the Fourth was Pope ſix years; in whoſe time *Daniel* Duke of *Ruſſia* made the Popes Legate in *Polonia* believe, that he and his Countrey would be of the *Romiſh* communion, and would maintain the Chriſtian Religion againſt the *Tartars*, whoſe power was grown formidable to the Chriſtian Princes; but as ſoon as he obtained what he ſought for, to wit, the Crown and Title of King, he continued in the Greek communion. To *Alexander* ſucceeded *Urban* the fourth, a Coblers ſon; he ſate three years; he ordained *Corpus Chriſti* day: In his time *Byzantium* was taken with eight hundred men, by *Palæologus*, from the Latines, in whoſe Family it continued almoſt two hundred years, till it was taken by *Mahumet* the Turk. To *Urban* ſucceeded *Clemens* the fourth; he was Pope three years, and had two daughters by his wife, who was now dead. After two years and nine moneths vacancy *Gregory* the tenth was elected, who ſate four years; he ordained the uſe of the Conclave in the Election of the Pope, to prevent future vacancies; for the Cardinals muſt not go out of the Conclave, till they have choſen a
1274. Pope: He ordained in the Councel of *Lions*, that none ſhould undertake the charge of a Parochial Church, till he was five and twenty years old. About this time died *Thomas Aquinas*, being fifty years of age; and the Whipping Hereticks aroſe, who preferred their Whipping to Martyrdome. Pope *Innocent* the fifth ſucceeded, he ſate ſix moneths; he was the firſt Pope of the *Prædicants* Order. *Adrian* the fifth ſucceeded, who ſate but one moneth and nine dayes; he died before his Conſecration, and revoked the Decree of the Conclave, which revocation was confirmed by his Succeſſor *John* the one and twentieth; and ſo without the Conclave were elected *Nicholaus* the third, *Martin* the fourth, *Honorius* the fourth, *Nicholaus* the fourth, *Celeſtine* the fifth, who renewed the Conclave, and *Boniface* the eighth confirms it. *John* the twenty one, or as ſome ſay, twenty two, ſate eight moneths: To him ſucceeded *Nicholaus* the third, who ſate three years, eight moneths: In his time the Turks, after they had been ſuppreſſed by the *Tartars*, gather new ſtrength, and invade
1280. the remainders of the Greek Empire. Pope *Martin* the fourth ſucceeded four years. *Honorius* the fourth followed two years; he confirmed the *Carmelites* Order, and turned their party-coloured coats into white; and confirmed alſo the Order of S. *Auſtins* Eremites. *Honorius* the fourth ſucceeded, and ſate two years: In his time *Rodulphus* the Emperour ſubdued the *Helvetians*, who before were ſubjects to the Earl of *Savoy*. *Nicholaus* the fourth ſucceeded four years; he was the firſt Pope of the *Franciſcans*. To him *Celeſtine* the fifth ſucceeded five moneths, who was deluded by a voice through a Cane, as if it had been from Heaven, willing him to reſign his Pontificat to *Boniface*: he decreed, that the Popes and Cardinals ſhould ride on Aſſes, as Chriſt did, and not on Mules and Horſes; he openly in the Conſiſtory laid down his Mitre, Rings and Sandals, and ſo reſigned his Pontificat to *Boniface* the eight, who came in as a Fox, reigned like a Lion, and died like a Dog in priſon; he Canonized S. *Lewis*, and ordained the Jubilee to be every hundreth year: In his time the ſtreets of *Paris* were overflowed with the Sein, ſo that there was no paſſage through them without boats: He put on both the Pontifical and Princely habit,

habit, causing two swords to be carried before him. The *Tartars* imbrace Mahumetanism, and so lost both Christianity, and *Asia* together. Hence the *Ottomans* began to flourish. *Selymus* the Turk married with the daughter of the Prince of the Precopit Tartars, who seated themselves in *Tauric Chersonesus*. This Match produced *Solyman*. And much about the rising of the *Ottoman* Family, arose the House of *Austria*. *An. Christi.*

Chap. IV.

1. *The Eastern Affairs under* Michael Palæologus, Andronicus *the elder, and younger.* 2. *The* Turkish *and* Tartarian *Affairs.* 3. *The Affairs of* Hungary, Poland, Denmark, *the* Low-Countries, *chiefly* Holland, *and the* Switzers.

IN the East, *Michael Palæologus* having blinded *Johannes Lascarus*, invaded the Empire, and drove the French out of *Byzantium*; he gave *Pera* or *Galata*, over-against *Byzantium*, to the *Genuois* for their good service. *Azatines* Sultan of *Iconium* being driven out of his Kingdome by the *Tartars*, fled to this *Michael*. Twenty thousand *Bulgarians* invade *Thracia*, and plunder it. The Sultan of *Iconium*, whom *Michael* had kept in strait custody, escaped by help of the *Scythians*. The Sultan of *Egypt* and *Arabia* having the *Hellespont* open, carries away many of the *Scythian* slaves, about *Tanais* and *Meotis*, into *Egypt*, by whose help he drove the remaining Latines out of the East. *Michael* to strengthen himself by the Pope and *Italian* Princes, against his enemies, repairs to the Councel of *Lions* (leaving his son *Andronicus* to rule the Empire) and there acknowledgeth the Popes Supremacy, and reconciles the Greek and Latine Churches: but upon his return home, he was hated for yielding to the Pope; and being dead, was denied the honour of burial by his own son. He lived eight and fifty years, and reigned five and thirty. He had two sons, *Andronicus* his successor, and *Constantine*, a good Souldier, who had fought successfully against the *Turks*; but *Andronicus*, upon suspition that he affected the Empire, put him in prison.

Andronicus hired the *Alani* that dwelt along the coast of the Euxine Sea, against the *Turks*: These *Alani* being impatient of the slavery they were in under the *Scythian Tartars*, repair in great multitudes to *Andronicus*, for some new habitations within his Dominions; These he armed against the Turks in *Asia*, by whom they were defeated; and so many as escaped the Turks fury, saved themselves over-against *Lesbos* on the coast of *Greece*. *Rogerius Laurea*, Admiral of the *Arragonian* or *Spanish* Fleet, against the *French* in *Sicily*, was invited by *Andronicus* with his Fleet against the Turks. He gets leave of the *Arragonian*, having made peace with the *French*, to go with his Colleague *Piringerius Terza*. *Andronicus*, to make them both the more cordial to him, creates *Rogerius*, *Cæsar*; and *Piringerius*, the great Duke: These did beat the Turks in divers battels, but for want of pay they became enemies, and fell to plunder the Greek Territories. *Rogerius* is killed in the tumult, and his Colleague was taken afterward by the *Genuois*, who stript him both of his Admiralty and life. The *Catalani*, descended of the ancient *Catti* and *Alani*, much infested *Andronicus*, against whom he raiseth an Army of *Thracians* and *Macedonians*; but he was put to the worse, and forced to flie. These *Catalans*, by the help of the Turks, wasted *Macedon*, and without them over-run *Thessaly*; thence passing into *Bœotio* and *Attica*, surprised *Athens* and *Thebes*, where they seat themselves, having killed the Prince of *Athens*.

An. Christi. At this time *John* Prince of *Theſſaly* dyed without iſſue, having lived three years with his wife *Irene*, the baſtard of *Andronicus* the Emperour; and ſo the dominion of the *Angeli* ceaſed in *Theſſaly*, *Epirus*, and *Etolia*, a part of which returned to the Emperour, and the reſt the Princes and the *Catalans* tore away. Some of the *Turks* who turned Chriſtians, went to the Prince of *Servia*: the reſt made a league with *Andronicus*, for a ſafe convoy to the *Helleſpont*, and from thence to *Cherſoneſus* with their booties; but the Emperor kept not promiſe with them, and ſo they were cut off by the Genuan and Bulgarian forces; for which perfidiouſneſſe the *Turks* were enraged againſt the Chriſtians in *Aſia*. In the mean while *Maria Domicilla*, who by right of blood claimed title to *Jeruſalem*, reſigns her right to *Charles* King of *Sicily*, though *Hugh* 1287. King of *Cyprus* claimed it. The *Armenian* Chriſtians being deſerted by the *Tartars*, were miſerably butchered and deſtroyed by the *Turks*: The falling off of the *Tartars* from the Chriſtians and Chriſtianity, and their civil wars among themſelves, gave opportunity to the *Egyptians* under *Melech-Meſſor* 1288. to beſiege and take *Tripoli*, which they burned, and in it killed ſeven thouſand Chriſtians. His ſonne *Seriphas*, about three years after, took *Ptolemais* with 60000. horſe, and 140000. foot: there were ſlain of the Chriſtians 30000. the reſt that eſcaped were drowned with ſtorms, except a few which recovered *Cyprus*. *Tyrus*, *Sidon*, *Beritus*, and whatſoever the Chriſtians had in *Syria* was deſtroyed. This *Seriphus* afterward, as he was preparing a Fleet to invade *Cyprus*, was murthered by his own Captains, who fell at variance among themſelves. *Cazanus* the ſon of *Argon* Prince of *Tartary*, was invited by the *Sarazens* to embrace Mahumetaniſme; which he did for a while to obtain his ends, therefore permitted the Chriſtian churches to be deſtroyed: but when he had increaſed his wealth and power, he fell upon the *Mahumetans* and killed them: upon this *Melech Naſor* the Tyrant of Egypt fights him; but he, though almoſt defeated, ſo carried himſelf, that he left 20000 *Sarazens* dead on the place, and drove the Sultan into *Baldac* or *Babylon* of *Egypt*. This victory gave a ſhort breathing to the Chriſtian affairs.

The Greek Church was now divided into three Factions; ſome holding with *Becus* the Patriarch of the Latine profeſſion, ſome with *Joſeph* the other Patriarch who was put out, and ſome with *Arſenius* who was dead. Whereupon to quiet all, *Andronicus* makes *Gregory* of *Cyprus* Patriarch; *Becus* and the Pontifician party are baniſhed; *Gregory* alſo ſhortly after is depoſed, and *Athanaſius* the Eremite is ſubſtituted, who becauſe he ſent every Biſhop home to look to his own flock, foure years after he alſo is depoſed, and driven into the deſarts. *Andronicus* by evil counſel deſtroyed the Grecian fleet as uſeleſſe, being now affianced by marriage to *Spain*, which had the kingdome of *Sicily*: but the want of a fleet gave occaſion for all pirats to plunder the Greek coaſts. The *Venetians* of *Byzantium* pretending ſome loſſes they received by *Andronicus*, plundred both by land and ſea; which gave occaſion to *Othoman* a petty Prince in *Carmania*, (but of an active ſpirit, and ſtrong body) to raiſe an army againſt the Chriſtians; ſo that he with other Turkiſh Commanders divided a great part of the Greek Empire amongſt them. In the battel that was fought in *Cherſoneſus* between the *Greeks* and *Turks*, for the booties which the *Turks* carried from *Greece* under the ſafe conduct of *Andronicus*, his ſon *Michael* loſt the day, and withall the Imperial ornaments, which the *Turks* diſgracefully uſed. They brake into *Thracia* with ſuch multitudes, that they plundred it all, ſo that in two years the *Byzantines* durſt not go out of their gates: The moſt of the Cities of *Bythinia* are taken by *Ottoman*, who makes *Pruſia* the capital city of his new-erected Monarchy; ſo the Chriſtian Empire in the Eaſt is but a meer *Sceliton*. The calamities that fell on this Empire by the *Turks*, were preſaged by frequent earthquakes, comets and eccliſes in the ſun and moon. *Andronicus* lived till he was ſeventy years of age, and ſaw not only theſe publike calamities, but alſo the private miſeries of his own family; for his ſonnes

and

and grand-children proved both flagitious, and factious against each other, and most ungracious to himself; for *Andronicus* the younger, sonne to *Michael*, and grandchild to this *Andronicus* the elder, thrust his grandfather, being almost blind with age and sorrow, into a Monastery, where he dyed; *Michael* the father of this younger *Andronicus*, was dead before; *Manuel* the other sonne of this *Michael*, was killed by the City-guard, whilst in the night he went to find out this dissolute brother *Andronicus* the younger. *An. Christi.*

Cazanus the *Tartar* (as we said) having beaten the Egyptian Sultan, was master of *Asia*. He was by profession a Christian, and therefore married the King of *Armenia*'s daughter. Finding that his Kinsman *Caydon* was raising a Faction in *Persia*, sends Ambassadors to the Pope and French king, for a union with the Latine Princes, towards the regaining of the Holy-Land. But he committed a great error, when he intrusted *Caycaphus* a Saracen fugitive with the government of *Damascus*, having been governour before in that place under the Egyptian: for this *Saracen* revolted from him, and brought all *Syria* into the obedience of the Egyptian Sultan. And so now the thousand yeares are ended, in which the Church did reign with Christ; for *Mahumets* religion prevailed so fast, that it drove Christianity out of the East. The *Armenians* and *Cyprians* endeavoured to recover *Syria*, but could do nothing, because *Cazanus* fell sick. The Egyptian Sultan carried away all provisions from the Christian quarters, and poisoned the grasse and fodder. After the death of *Cazanus*, his brother *Campanda* turned Mahumetan; and so the *Turks* over-ran all, even to the gates of *Byzantium*.

Michael Palæologus father to *Andronicus* the younger, being in *Thessaly*, and understanding how his younger son *Manuel* was killed, died for griefe. Old *Andronicus*, receiving continual complaints against the oppressions of his grandchild the younger *Andronicus*, was resolved to imprison him: which he understanding by the Patriarch, fled to *Adrianopolis*; and by the help of *John Cantacuzenus*, and *Syrgiannes* the bastard son of *Constantine*, and grandchild of old *Andronicus*, who was now hated for the continual taxes which he was forced to lay on the people against the *Turks*, raised an Army against his Grandfather: therefore young *Andronicus*, promising exemption from all taxes, drew almost all *Thracia* and *Macedon* to side with him; so that the old man was glad to content himselfe with *Byzantium*, and a part of *Macedon*, leaving the rest to his grandchild. Upon this rent, the *Turks* build ships, with which they infest the coasts of *Thrace* and *Macedon*. Wherefore old *Andronicus*, to furnish himself with mony against them, was forced to sell the ornaments of the antient Emperors. But *Syrgiannes*, angry that he was not Colleague with young *Andronicus* in the Empire, flies to the old man, and puts him in hope to recover all again. Young *Andronicus* at this raiseth an Army, and brings it to the gates of *Byzantium*, pretending his grandfather was dead; and to deliver his mother *Xene*, whom *Constantine* the Despot or Lord had carried away by ship from *Thessalonica* to *Byzantium*, and there imprisoned her: But her delivery caused a new peace; and the rather, because *Philadelphia* was now besieged by the *Turks*. Young *Andronicus* is now crowned and made Consort of the Empire with the old man; but *Syrgiannes* is imprisoned and plundred. In the interim, *Ottoman* subdues almost all *Bythinia*; who having reigned 28 years, died, and was buried in a Silver-tomb by his son *Orcanes*, after he had taken *Prusa* by famine. After this, young *Andronicus* desirous to reign alone, makes a league with *Michael* Despot or Lord of *Bulgaria*, with whom he marrieth his sister, purposely to defeat the old man, which they did by the help of their Captains, who worshipped the rising Sun: *Constantinople* is betrayed, the old Emperor seised upon, and by the advice of *Niphon* the Patriarch is deposed, who with grief lost his eye-sight. Young *Andronicus* makes an expedition into *Asia* against *Orcanes*, where he was wounded in the foot, and shamefully lost his army to the *Turks*: After this he fell desperately sick, upon a cold

1321.

1326.

he

An. Christi. he took after bathing. The report of his death thrust the old Emperor into a Monastery in *Byzantium*, where *Theodorus Syracenus* made him abjure his Empire, and change his name from *Andronicus* to *Antonius*. But young *Andronicus* recovers, and was invited by the *Bulgarian* against the *Triballi*, but refused to go, being content to sleep in a whole skin. This Bulgarian Lord had married *Andronicus* his sister (as was said) and therefore put away his other wife, sister to the King of *Servia*; whereupon this King made war upon the Bulgarian, thrust him out of his principality, and put *Alexander* his kinsman in his place.

1332. About this time, *Orcanes* the Turk took *Nicæa* of *Bythinia*, after a long siege. In the midst of these miseries, old *Andronicus* dyed in his Covent, the 50. year of his reign. Young *Andronicus* makes war upon *Alexander* the Bulgarian, who defeats him, and having cooped him up with the remainder of his forces, takes pitty on so many Christians, and proffers peace upon promise of future moderation. After this, *Syrgiannes* is accused of treason, but escapes, and with the *Triballi* invades *Macedonia*. *Andronicus* not able to suppress him by force, murthers him by an assasinate: the Triballian Prince being bribed by the Emperor makes peace with him, and so *Macedon* returns again to the obedience of *Cæsar*. The *Genuois* in *Peru* were grown so strong, that they slighted *Andronicus*. *Catanes* a Genuan seiseth upon *Mytilene*, but not long after *Andronicus* recovers it, having brought the *Phocæans* into subjection. The *Scythians* beyond *Isther* overrun *Thracia*, and carried away for slaves 30000. *Greeks* and *Turks*. *Orcanes* did lie in wait to surprise *Byzantium*; but *Cantacuzenus* with 70 Greek horsmen overthrew a great number of the Turkish infantry. *Andronicus* calls in the *Turks* upon the *Illyrians*, who had offended him: And whilst he is subduing *Aetolia* and *Epirus* (which shortly after he lost) *Orcanes* takes *Nicomedia* of *Bythinia*, and so the next year, the *Turks* without resistance overrun *Thracia*; a

1341. while after they passe over the *Hellespont*, and by the help of *Soliman*, *Orcanes* his eldest son, took it. Shortly after, *Andronicus* died of the Spleen, being 45 years old, and having reigned 20. He left two sons by his wife *Anne* the *Almain*, *John* & *Manuel*, over whom he appointed governor *John Cantacuzenus*, whom he made swear to be faithful in preserving the Empire to his young pupil *John*; but he shortly after forgot his oath, slighted the young *Cæsar*, and to make himself great, humoured the Greek Princes, and married his daughter to *Orcan* the Turkish Sultan. *Orcanes* having reigned 30 years, died.

In *Hungary*, K. *Ladislaus* with *Boleslaus* had scarce driven out the *Tartars*, who had overrun *Hungary* and *Poland*; when the people, who hated the tyrannical deportment of *Ladislaus*, choose for their King *Andrew*, called *Venetus*, from his mother and education, being Venetian: he was grandchild of K. *Andrew* by his son *Steven*. After the death of this *Andrew Venetus*, *Charls* Nephew to *Claudus* of *Sicily*, *Robert* Uncle to *Charls*, and *Wenceslaus* the Bohemian, became Competitors for the kingdom: but the Peeres chose *Otto* the *Bavarian*, who being taken by the *Transilvanian*, escaped by the help of his wife, and returned home: *Albert* establisheth *Charls* in the kingdome, who banished many of the Nobility, and so he prevailed over his Competitors.

In *Poland* was the like contestation: For to K. *Boleslaus* succeeded *Lescus Niger*, who had subdued the *Jazyges* and *Russians*, and his Competitor *Conradus Masovius*, whom divers of the Nobility had chosen for their King. This *Lescus* died without issue; wherefore *Boleslaus Masovius*, *Henry Vretislave*, and *Ladislaus Locticus* brother to *Lescus*, strove for the succession. In the mean while, *Wenceslaus* the Bohemian invaded the Territories of *Cracovia* and *Sendomiria*, in right of the Queen, who had bequeathed them to him; the *Tartars* fall upon some other places of that distracted kingdom: in these tumults, *Henry Vretislave* dieth, and *Primislaus* is chosen King by the *Polanders*, who lived not above seven moneths after. Then was *Ladislaus* chosen: but he who with so much toile and trouble got the kingdome, with too much ease and luxury lost it; for the Peers deposed him, and conferred the kingdome upon *Wenceslaus* the Bohemian.

In

In *Denmark*, *Ericus* the ſixth, Grandchild to *Waldemar* by his ſon *Chriſtopher*, was treacherouſly murthered, to whom ſucceeded his ſon *Ericus* the ſeventh, being a child; in his minority, the Kingdome was well governed by *Agnes* of *Brandenburg* and the Nobility. The Kings murtherers were all baniſhed; Pyrats ſeverely puniſhed; the *Holſatians* and *Vandals* reconciled; the Territories of *Roſtoch*, and other places over-gainſt *Denmark*, reduced into the Kings obedience. This *Ericus* afterward became tyrannical and ſacrilegious, who for his wicked life, and the whoredomes he committed upon divers Noble Matrons, was murthered in a Barn, where he was found ſleeping, by ſeven aſſaſinats, who gave him ſeventy wounds. He married his Daughter *Sophia* to *Waldemar* King of *Swethland*, who for inceſt with his ſiſter was driven out of his kingdome; to whom ſucceeded his brother *Ladiſlaus*. To *Ericus* the ſeventh in *Denmark* ſucceeded *Ericus* the eighth, who obtained ſome Victories againſt the *Teutones*; He died without iſſue, having reigned three and and thirty years. To him ſucceeded his brother *Chriſtopher*, an unfortunate and careleſs Prince, a hater of his Nobility, and an oppreſſor of the people; for which he was driven twice out of his kingdome. He pawned to the *Holſatians* all *Scania*, who upon this aimed at the whole kingdome, which the *Danes* perceiving, called home again king *Chriſtopher*, whom they had baniſhed, and let looſe his ſon *Ericus*, whom for his bad government with his father they had impriſoned; but ſhortly after both the father and ſon died. *Magnus* the king of *Swethland* redeemed *Scania* from the *Holſatians* for ſeventy thouſand Marks of ſilver. *Waldemar*, king *Chriſtophers* other ſon, was declared king; but he was not as yet returned from the Emperours Court; during which time, the *Holſatians* ſeiſed upon *Jutia*, but their chief Commanders were in one night ſurpriſed in their Garriſon, and murthered by the *Danes*: Upon this the new king *Waldemar* returned home. *An. Chriſti.* 1319. 1333.

In the Low-Countries, *John* Duke of *Brabant* buyeth the Earldome of *Nemours* and Dutchy of *Limburg*. The Earl of *Geldre* next heir oppoſeth. A war followeth, in which neer *Colen*, the Earl is defeated, and taken priſoner, with the Biſhop of *Colen*, *Adolph* of *Naſſovia*, and *Henry* of *Lucelburg*. The Earl of *Geldre*, upon renouncing of the Dukedome, is releaſed. *Henry's* ſon married the Duke of *Brabants* daughter, and with her had the Earldome. Not long after, *John* was ſlain in Tornament.

Holland, called by the *Romans*, *Batavia*, in the time of *Charles* the Great, was over-run by the *Danes*; but about this time *Florentius* the fifth was Earl of that Province, who was treacherouſly murthered by ſome male-contents, as he was Hawking, becauſe he had made a league with *France*, to the prejudice of *Guy* Earl of *Flanders*, and the King of *England*; the murtherers cut off his hands, and gave him two and twenty wounds. Before him were ſixteen Earls, the firſt was *Didericus* a good man, who ſtoutly repreſſed the *Norman* invaſion; to him ſucceeded *Didericus* the ſecond, of whom no memorable act is extant. *Arnolphus* followed, who had long wars with the *Friſlanders*, in which he, with the moſt of his Nobility were ſlain. His ſon *Didericus* or *Thedoricus* the third ſucceeded, who had wars with the *Friſlanders*, whom the Biſhop of *Utricht* aſſiſted againſt the Earl, whom at laſt he defeated. His ſon *Thedoricus* the fourth ſucceeded; he unwittingly killed the Biſhop of *Colens* brother; in revenge of which, the Earl being fled, two of the chief Nobility of *Holland* were murthered by thoſe of *Colen*: To requite this murther, the Earl burned all the Ships of *Colen* and *Leege* which were then in *Dort*, and impriſoned the Merchants: Upon this, the Enemy ſeiſe upon *Dort*; the Earl gets into the Town in the dark; a doubtful skirmiſh was fought, in which the Earl at laſt had the better; but in the morning he was wounded by one of the enemies in the thigh, and died within two dayes after. His brother *Florentius* the firſt ſucceeded, againſt whom the Biſhop of *Colen* and *Leege*, with ſome neigbouring Princes, raiſed a great Army, ſeven and twenty thouſand of which were drowned 1294. 1039.

Anabrifti. drowned in the Ditches neer *Dort*, and the reſt ſlain by the Earls Forces: After four years peace, his former enemies renew their Forces, and invade *Holland* again, and were overthrown again: But whilſt the Earl with ſome Troops were ſecurely refreſhing themſelves neer the *Moſe*, *Arnd* brother to the Duke of *Lorain* with freſh Forces falls upon the Earl, whom they killed with two thouſand and ſix hundred of his men. This murther was afterward repaid by the Citizens of *Dort*, who killed all the murtherers. The Earls widow, *Gertrudis*, during his ſons minority, for two years ruled the State. She married *Robert* the *Friſlander*, ſo called, becauſe he with his wife ruled *Holland*, which was then called *Friſia*; this *Robert* was ſon to *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, againſt whom *William* Biſhop of *Utricht* raiſed a war, which ruined *Holland*. *Henry* the fourth Emperour beſtowed this Province upon *William*, who to obtain it the eaſier, procured *Godfrey* (from his low ſtature and crookedneſs, called *Gibber*) Duke of *Lorain*, to aſſiſt him, who with a great Army overthrew the *Hollanders*, and drove *Robert* with his wife and children into *Flanders*; ſo by the Biſhop of *Utricht*, *Godfrey* was made Protector of *Holland*. After this, he falls upon the *Weſt-Friſlanders* with fire and ſword, and in a Battel kills eight thouſand of them; but afterward, as he was on the cloſe-ſtoole at *Antwerp*, he was murthered; his death was ſhortly after accompanied with the Biſhops, who was a great Favourite of *Henry* the 4. and an enemy to *Heildebrand*. *Didericus* the fifth, ſon to *Florentius*, being now of age, is aſſiſted by *Robert Friſlander*, and the *Flandrians*, to recover his Fathers Province: Him the Biſhop of *Utricht* oppoſed with an Army, aſſiſted by *Conradus* the *Sueve*, whom the Emperour had
1092. made Earl of *Holland*; but they were both defeated by *Didericus*, and forced to reſign their claim to him the right owner. His ſon *Florentius* the ſecond ſucceeded, a peaceable and juſt Prince, who died in the prime of his years; to whom ſucceeded *Didericus* the ſixth, who was forced by *Henry* the fifth to hold *Holland* in Fee of the Empire: He aimed to be Earl of *Flanders*, but miſſed of it. He twice ſubdued the *Weſt-Friſlanders*; then his brother *Florentius* taking part with *Friſia*, was the occaſion of much blood-ſhed. At laſt *Lotharius* the Emperour reconciled the two brothers. *Florentius* afterward was mur-
1151. thered. *Didericus* had ſome controverſie with the *Flandrians*, about the Iſlands of *Zeland*, but he died before the controverſie was ended. To him ſucceeded *Florentius* the third, who married the daughter of *Henry* Prince of *Scotland*; he had ſome conteſtation with the Biſhop of *Utricht*, but the Emperour *Barbaroſſa* reconciled them: He had wars alſo with the *Friſians*, and did good ſervice under *Barbaroſſa*, who by the *Holland* ſhips brake in upon *Damiata* or *Peluſium*. Having ruled *Holland* three and thirty years, he died in the Holy-
1190. War, and was buried neer *Barbaroſſa* in *Antioch*, whoſe ſon *Theodoricus* the ſeventh ſucceeded; He had wars with his brother *William* about *Friſland*; the quarrel at laſt was compoſed, by aſſigning *Eaſt-Friſland* to *William*: He had wars alſo with *Flanders*, and a controverſie with the Duke of *Geldre* about the election of the Biſhop of *Utricht*; the matter was referred to the Pope, who made the Earl Protector of the Biſhoprick, till a new Biſhop was choſen. He had alſo wars with the Duke of *Lorain*, whoſe woods he cut down and burned, and carried the Dukes brothers away priſoners: but *Lorain*, by the help of *Colen*, *Limburg*, and *Flanders*, ſet upon the Earl of *Holland*, and took him priſoner. In the mean while, the Biſhop of *Utricht* fell upon *Geldre* and *Holland*
1203. with fire and ſword; but ſhortly after, the Duke, the Earl, and the Biſhop were made friends. Then the Earl died, having ruled *Holland* thirteen years; to whom ſucceeded his brother *William*, who was oppoſed by the Earl of *Loſſen*, whom he defeated. Then underſtanding that *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* his Uncle was dead, and that he thought himſelf next Heir, repairs into *Scotland* with a great Fleet, where he found a party to joyn with him; but perceiving what great oppoſition he was like to have, and that the Earl of *Loſſen* had invaded *Holland* in his abſence, returns home, and drives out his enemy,

having

having ruled nineteen years, he died, to whom succeeded his son *Florentius* the fourth; he was father to *William* King of the *Romans*, and to *Margaret*, who had at one birth 365. children; he was imployed with the Dukes of *Brabant* and *Cleve*, by the Pope and Emperour, to suppress the Heathen Idolatrie that was begun to spread in those parts; He was killed in a Torneament by *Claremontanus*. To whom succeeded *VVilliam* the second his son, being six years old. His Protector was *Otho* his Uncle Bishop of *Utricht*. The Earl on his wedding-day was like to be burned with his wife, for the house took fire suddenly, so that it was burnt down, with divers in it, and much Plate and Jewels. About twenty years of age, *Frederick* the second being excommunicate, he accepts the Imperial Crown; he removed his Court from *Harlem* to the *Hague*, and built the Palace there: He had Wars with the *Flandrians* about the Isle *Walacria* of *Zeland*, which they claimed as their Island; A battel is fought, in which the *Flemings* were overthrown, drowned and slain. After this, *Charles* of *Anjou*, brother to King *Lewis* of *France*, renews the quarrel in behalf of the *Flemings*, having received *Hanonia* as a reward for his assistance; but *William* drove him out thence; and then a peace is made with *Flanders*. After this, being at *Utricht*, he is wounded in the head with a stone which was flung at him, for the *Frisians*, and those of *Utricht* hated him; and as he was making an Expedition against the *Frislanders*, who had rebelled, he and his horse were both drowned, the ice breaking under them; and being found, was cut in pieces by the *Frislanders*: He had been King of the *Romans* seven years. To him succeeded *Florentius* the fifth; in his minority were great troubles between *Holland* and *Utricht*; as soon as he was of age, he made an Expedition against the *Frislanders* in revenge of his fathers death; those he subdued; about which time many Towns of *Frisland* were drowned by an inundation: Then also was *Zeland* united to *Holland* by marriage of *Guy* the Earl of *Flanders* daughter with *Florentius*: He was one of those Competitors with *Balliol* for the Crown of *Scotland*, being descended from *Ada* wife to *Florentius* the third, and daughter of *Henry* Prince of *Scotland*; but by the advice of King *Edward*, he sold his Title for a summe of money: he had wars with the *Flemings*, and for making peace with *France* he was murthered (as was said.) To him succeeded *John* the first his son, whose protection the Earl of *Cleve* undertook; but he was put out of this Office, by *John* Earl of *Hannonia*. About this time great troubles fell out between *Holland* and *Utricht*. *Middleburg* also in *Zeland* was besieged by the *Flandrians*. The young Earl of *Holland* having married King *Edwards* daughter of *England*, was much carried away by his Favourite *Wolfardus*, who caused him to infringe the Liberties of *Dort*, upon which arose a Civil War: *Dort* will not lose her priviledges; therefore the Earl besiegeth it, but is beat off with loss. *Wolfardus* is so hated by the people, that they hanged him by a long rope out of a high window, where he was imprisoned, disgracefully abusing and wounding his body. The *West-frislanders* being wearied with a continual war, submitted to *Holland*, which overthrew their Castles, and seised upon half their goods. After this, the Earl died, not without suspition of poyson, to whom (because he wanted issue) succeeded *John* of *Hannonia*, son of King *Williams* sister.

An. Christi.
1223.
1235.
1256.
1287.
1298.
1307.

About this time the *Switzers* or *Helvetians* began to Cantonize themselves; they for their good service in *Italy* against the *Sarazens*, were permitted by the Pope and the Emperour *Ludovic*, son to *Charles* the Great, to live after their own Lawes; which liberty they enjoyed till *Italy* and the neighbouring Countries were distracted by the *Guelphs* and *Gibellines*; then *Barbarossa* took them into the protection of the Empire; but when the House of *Austria* began to oppress them, and infringe their Laws, they revolted, and vindicated their ancient Liberties, which they maintain to this day. The three Cantons that first revolted, were *Switz* (whence all the rest are called *Switzers*) *Ury*,

An. Christi. and *Underval*, which with *Lucerne*, *Zugh*, and *Soleure* retain the Catholike Religion; but *Friburg*, *Basil*, *Bern*, *Zurich*, and *Schaffouz* are Calvinists; the other two, *Glaris* and *Appentzel* profess both Religions.

Chap. V.

1. *The affairs of* Germany *under* Adolphus, Albertus, Henry *the seventh*, *and* Ludovic *of* Bavaria. 2. *The affairs of* Sicily, Naples, Florence, Rome, *and* Millain, *and other parts of* Italy, *with the adjacent Countries, from the year* 1298. *till* 1347.

Adolphus of *Nassovia*, Kinsman to *Gerhard* Bishop of *Mentz*, is by his means declared Emperour: Count *Palatine* stood for *Albertus* of *Austria*, but could not prevail, and was hated for this ever after by the Bishops Faction, whose creature *Adolphus* was; he to strengthen himself in the Empire, desires to marry his son to *Albertus* the *Austrian*, which motion is rejected; whereupon a war is raised between *Adolphus* and *Albertus*, both for this repulse, and because the Emperour had bought the Principality of *Thuringia* with the money which he received of King *Edward* of *England*, upon hope that he would assist him and *Guy* of *Flanders* against the French; but he failed both; wherefore both (having made peace with the French) became his enemies. The *German* Princes scorned that their Emperor should become a mercenary Souldier to the *English* Kingdome; and the *Thuringians* stormed that they should be bought and sold. *Albertus* of *Austria* shewed that he had reason to serve the French, if the Emperour would abase himself to serve the *English*: Hereupon forces are raised against *Adolphus*, whom the same Bishop of *Mentz* that made him Emperour, deposeth, and setteth up against him *Albert* of *Austria*, with whom the Princes joyn; onely the Duke of *Bavaria*, and *Rodolphus* Count *Palatine*, who was son-in-law to *Adolphus*, adhered to
1298. him. Neer *Spira* the battel is fought; *Adolphus* too hastily with his Horse, before the Foot came up, fell upon the Austrians, who had the advantage of the ground and Sun; The Adolphians are defeated, and *Adolphus* himself wounded in the eye, and beat down from his horse; whom as he was rising again from the ground, *Albertus* runs into the neck, and kills him, the eighth year of his Empire; he was buried at *Spire*.

Pope *Boniface* the eighth, who speaking through a long Cane in the wall, had made *Celestine* lay down his Pontificat, endeavoured to make peace between the French and Arragonians, perswading *James* to restore *Sicily* to *Charls* the Lame; but *Frederick*, brother to *James*, came in the interim with a Fleet
1298. from *Spain* into *Sicily*, and is saluted King by the people. When *James* was dead, *Robert*, son to *Charles* the Lame, came over into *Sicily*, and took *Catana*; but the *Sicilians*, who favoured the *Spaniards* more then the *French*, in a Sea-fight defeat *Philip*, the brother of *Robert*, whom they took and imprisoned. *Frederick* recovers in a short time both *Sicily* and *Calabria* in *Hetruria*. The *Genoas* were so incensed against the *Pisans*, that they sunk great ships in the mouth of the River, to hinder their Navigation: About which time, there were such fearful Earth-quakes, that the Pope being at Mass, was forced to give off, and run out of the Church into a small Cottage, fearing the earth would open; then also appeared a Comet. The *Gibellines* and *Guelphs* now
1307. raged in *Italy*, but under new names, of White and Black; the *Gibellines* were named White, whom the *Florentines* drove out of their City, with *Dantes* the Poet. The Pope, to be out of danger, removed his Seat to *Avenion*

in

in *France*, which *Clement* the ſixth bought; the *Italian* affairs he committed to the care of three Cardinals; the Popes abode in *France* was ſeventy years, in which time divers Schiſmes were in the Church, the *Italians* chooſing a Pope of their Nation, and the *French* of theirs. This time the *Italians* called the ſeventy years Captivity of *Babel*. *An. Chriſti.*

Albertus having ſlain *Adolphus*, is made Emperour; ſuch was the concourſe of people to ſee him, that the Duke of *Saxony* was ſqueezed to death with the preſs. He reconciled himſelf with *Otto* Duke of *Bavaria*, whoſe Unkle he had killed: But this friendſhip laſted not long, for *Otto* being called to be King of *Hungary* fell upon *Syria*; but ſhortly after, *Otto* is by the *Hungarians* baniſhed. *Albertus* deſires to be confirmed by the Pope in his Empire, which *Boniface* refuſed to do, ſhewing by the Crown on his head, and the ſword by his ſide, that he was both Pope and Emperour himſelf; yet ſhortly after in hatred of *Philip* the Fair, he declared him Emperor, and withall conferred on him the title of *France*: but *Philip* to elude the Popes fury, beſtowed in marriage his daughter *Blanca* upon *Ralph Alberts* Son; this *Albert* made his Son *Ralph* King of *Bohemia*, *Wenceſlaus* the ſeventh being in a tumult ſlain in *Moravia*; but *Ralph* in the very beginning of his Reign, was murthered in his chamber; *Henry* Duke of *Carinthia*, and Son in law to *Wenceſlaus* the ſixth, having ſeized on the Kingdome, notwithſtanding that *Frederick Alberts* other Son was elected King by the Peers. *Albert* had wars with *Otto* of *Bavaria*, whom *Conradus* Biſhop of *Saltsburg* aſſiſted, and withall ſo endangered the Emperors life with a poyſoned cup, that had he not vomited preſently, he had dyed; yet he never throughly recovered. Afterward the ſame Emperor was ſlain, and cut in peeces by means of the Duke of *Carinthia*, whilſt *Albert* was making war againſt *Frederick* of *Myſia*, which Country he aimed at, as being a convenient inlet to *Bohemia*. This *Frederick* was Son to *Albert* Earle of *Thuringia*, a wicked man, who would have murthered his wife, daughter to *Frederick* the ſecond, Emperor, being animated thereto by a harlot whom he doted on: *Alberts* Lady fled to ſave her life, and as ſhe kiſſed her Son *Frederick* in her flight, whom ſhe bore to this *Albert*, in her paſſion ſhe bit his cheek, the mark whereof he ſtill retained. *Dietricus* Marqueſs of *Myſia*, *Alberts* brother, commiſerating this diſconſolate Lady, gave her entertainment, and made her Son *Frederick* his heir to *Myſia*, at which *Albert* the Father ſtormed, and cauſed this his Son to be impriſoned a whole year, till by the favour of his Keepers who pitied his caſe, he was let go. After this his Father *Albert* dyed miſerably. *Frederick* ſubdued all his enemies at laſt, and among the reſt *Albert* the Emperor, and ſo obtained both the Earldome of *Thuringia*, and the Marquiſat of *Myſia*. The Emperor was ſet upon firſt by *John* his brothers Son, whom he had removed for his looſe life from the government of *Suevia*. This *John* gave the firſt blow, thruſting his Dagger in the Emperors throat; after him came others who clave his head in the middle, and others gave him divers wounds in the breaſt; he dyed the tenth year of his Empire. 1308.

Albertus being dead, *Philip* the Fair of *France* was now in hope to be Emperor, having the Pope within his Dominions; wherefore by his brother *Charles Valoiſe*, he raiſeth an Army: but the Pope conſidering how dangerous the tranſlation of the Empire might prove to the *Italian* Princes, ſends ſecretly to the ſeven Electors to haſten the election of a *German* Emperor, which was done accordingly; and *Henry* Earl of *Lucelburg* was choſen upon the commendations of his brother *Baldwin* Archbiſhop of *Trevers*; the Pope by his Legats declares him Emperor, conditionally that within two years he would repair to *Italy*, and there compoſe the long differences with which it was almoſt ruined: he to that purpoſe ſets himſelf, but firſt reſolves to ſettle *Germany*; therefore he confirms *Frederick* the Sonne of *Albert* in his poſſeſſion of *Auſtria*, conditionally that he would reſign his right in *Bohemia*, which when he had aſſented to, the Emperor by conſent of the

An. Christi. Electors, deposed *Henry* the *Carinthian*, and made his own son *John* King, by marrying him to *Elizabeth* the daughter of *Wenceslaus* the eldest, and neece to *Ralph* the Emperor. *Henry* after this, composed the wars of *Mysia* or *Mysina*, so that *Frederick* should content himself with *Thuringia* and *Mysia*, and should leave the lower *Lusatia* to the *Bohemians*: so *Germany* being quieted, he raiseth an Army for *Italy*; but first he performs the Funeral ceremonies to *Albert* and *Adolph*, whose bodies he translated to *Spire*, and declared all those to be Traitors who had a hand in the murther of *Albert*, all which dyed miserably.

In *Italy* most of the *Cisalpin* Cities had changed their Governours; the *Scaligers* had seised on *Verrona*, the *Passerins* on *Mantua*, the *Carrarians* on *Padua*, the *Venetians* on *Ferrara*, and the *Florentines* on *Pistorium*; in *Millain* the *Turrians* chief of the *Guelphs* under *Guido* had suppressed the *Gibellins*, and driven out thence *Matthew* the Viscount, who complains to the Emperor, being on his march towards *Millain*, he restores them both to their ancient patrimony and sets the City at liberty; but because *Henry* placed *Matthew* on his right hand, and *Guido* on his left, as he was going to receive his iron Crown, *Guido* raiseth a tumult in the City which had indangered the Emperor, but that *Matthew* suddenly raised all his friends, and by the help of the *German* forces fell upon the *Turrians*, and drove them out of the City; the charge of which was solely committed to *Matthew*. *Cremona*, *Phacenza*, *Parma*, *Papia*, and *Brixium*, who favoured the *Guelphs*, were reduced by *Cæsar*, to whom the *Cremonians* with ropes about their necks acknowledged their fault, and paid their Fine. *Brixium* also was punished with a mulct, and demolition of their walls; and one *Theobald* who had caused them to rebel, was torn in peeces by horses.

Lombardy and other places being setled, *Henry* goeth for *Genua*, and from thence by Sea to *Pisæ*, the Army he sent by land towards *Rome*, where the two families of the *Ursini* and *Columni* for three months together skirmished daily, that the streets ran with blood; *Robert* King of *Apulia* son to *Charles* the lame, aided the *Ursins* against the *Gibellins* who stood for *Cæsar*, and strove to keep him out of the City, but the *Columni* prevailed and brought him in, where he
1312. was crowned the third time with much difficulty and reluctancy of the Cardinal Legats. *Cæsar* after his Coronation made haste out of that turbulent City, and fatal to the *German* Emperors: he made a League with *Frederick* of *Sicily*, who then had war with *Robert* of *Apulia*: the *Florentines* with the *Bononians*, *Ferrarians*, and other Cities held out against the Emperor, who burned their fields and provision, that they might for want be forced to yeeld the sooner: He summoneth *Robert* to appear and answer to his accusations, but he refused to come, and so is condemned of Treason and Rebellion, his Arms are torn, and his right and name of King taken away. This sentence Pope *Clement* shortly after repealed, as may be seen in his Constitutions called *Clementines*, set forth by his successor *John* the 23. *Henry* having laid siege to *Florence*, and preparing to go against *Robert* upon the invitation of the *Neapolitans*, is poysoned by one *Bernard* a predicant Friar, being hired thereto by the *Florentines*; the murtherer, who poysoned the cup, or as some say the Sacramental
1313. bread, was flia'd alive. *Henries* body two years after his death was translated to *Pisæ*: the *Florentines* in thee battels were defeated by the *Pisans*, who stood for *Cæsar* and the *Gibellins*; wherefore the Legats and King *Robert*, offended at this success, give their assistance to the *Guelphs*, whose Army *Matthew* Viscount of *Millain* defeated: Hereupon he is excommunicated by *Vasco* the Cardinal, and Legate to the Pope; yet his sons had good success against the *Guelphs*, notwithstanding the aid they had of the *Neapolitans* under *Robert*, of the *French* under *Philip Valoise*, and of the *Germans* under *Henry* Duke of *Austria*.

John after his fathers death raised an Army, and confirmed the Cæsarian forces

forces in *Italy*: He enlarged also *Bohemia* by the addition of *Lusatia*, and a great part of *Silesia*; which Country lying between *Poland* and *Bohemia*, fell off from both, and made themselves free; but having abused their freedome with intestine broils, the *Bohemians* subdued them: This *John* was afterward killed in the battel of *Cressy*, in which were slain also *Charles Valoise*, and thirty thousand *French*. *An. Christi.*

After the death of *Henry* the seventh, the Empire wanted an head fourteen months, because of the rent among the Electors; for the Bishop of *Mentz* and of *Trevers*, with the Marquess of *Brandenburg* stood for *Ludovic* of *Bavaria*; but 1316.
the Bishop of *Colen*, the *Palsgrave*, and Duke of *Saxony*, were for *Frederick* of *Austria*: both were crowned; *Ludovic* at *Aix* the ordinary place, by the Bishop of *Mentz* and *Trevers*, whose office was not to consecrate; *Frederick* at *Bonnon* which was not the ordinary place of Coronation, by the Bishop of *Colen*, whose charge it was to consecrate the elected Emperor: the King of *Bohemia* with his casting voice, conferred the right title on *Ludovic*; yet to avoid jars, the Electors, by the Popes advice, were content that both should be called Emperors, and both equally rule together, as of old, *M. Antonius* and *L. Verus*, *Valentinian* and *Valens*, *Gratian* and *Theodosius*, with many others, reigned together as Colleagues. *Ludovic* thrust his brother *Ralph* the *Palsgrave* out of his inheritance, because he preferred *Frederick* to him; This *Ralph* afterwards dyed in *England*. But these two Emperors could not agree; *Germany* is divided into two factions, which last eight years; these troubles were presaged by a Comet, and accompanied with famine and mortality: five several battels were fought; the two greatest were, that at *Esling* in *Suevia*, which was besieged by *Frederick* for adhering to *Ludovic*; in this conflict many of the Nobility were slain and taken on both sides, for the victory inclined to neither, however the siege was raised. The other great battel was fought near *Muldorffe* in *Bavaria*, 1323.
which *Frederick* had invaded with ten thousand *Hungarians*, and twenty thousand *Austrians*: *Ludovic* meets him with the strength of *Bohemia*, and the neighbouring parts; great slaughter is committed on both sides; at last the *Hungarians* are forced to give ground, and though the *Austrian* horse held out a while longer, yet they yeeld at length; *Frederick* with his brother *Henry* are taken prisoners; three years was this Emperor detained a prisoner, then was set at liberty, conditionally that he would be content with the bare title of Emperor whilst he lived, but should not not meddle with the Government, nor enter into *Italy*: Seven years after he dyed, his brother was released by restoring of some Towns and Forts in *Moravia*, which in this War the *Austrians* had taken from the *Bohemians*.

After this victory of *Ludovic*, Pope *John* the 22. or 23. accuseth him for aiding *Galeacius* of *Millain* against the *Guelphs*, and for exercising his Emperial right without the Popes confirmation; his answer was, that as soon as he was elected, he was to administer justice, and to defend *Galeacius*, who had a just cause; upon this *Ludovic* is condemned by the Pope as an heretick, and the sentence declared against him at *Avenion*, for maintaining that the Pope was not to meddle with secular affairs. *Leopoldus* brother to *Frederick*, who came not in time to aid him, doth much hurt in *Alsatia* and *Helvetia*, afterward he became mad and dyed. *John* King of *Bohemia*, and *Charles* King of *Hungary*, with *Otto Fredericks* other brother over-run *Austria*; shortly after *Otto* dyed, and so did *Frederick*, being consumed by a Love-potion. Four years after the 1330.
victory, *Ludovic* marcheth into *Italy* to establish the *Gibellin* faction, the chief of which were *Galeacius* and his four brothers, *John*, *Mark*, *Luchin*, and *Steven*, Viscounts of *Millain*, the sons of *Matthew*. *Galeacius* had taken *Placentza* from *Albertus Scotus*: upon this, King *Robert*, the Pope, and the *Florentines*, who had been molested by *Castrucius*, a great friend of the *Galeacii*, entred into a League, with whom the *French* King joyned, in hatred to the Emperor; to re-establish the *Guelphs* in *Italy*; the *Gibelins* understanding that *Philip Valois*

and

An. Christi. and his Confederates were raising Forces against them, they beseech the Emperor to hasten into *Italy*, who did so; he was met at *Verona* by *Mark*, who complained of his brother *Galeacius*, that he did assume the sole command over *Milain*, infringing their liberties. This accusation *Ludovic* put off, till a more convenient time: in the interim he goeth to *Milain*, where he is pompously received by *Galeacius*, and in the Church of S. *Ambrose* receives his Iron-crown from the Bishop of *Aretin* a great *Gibelline*. Here was present at that time *Caius Scaliger*, with a thousand Horse and some Foot-companies, to wait on the Emperor; who having heard his accusation and *Marks* against *Galeacius*, understanding also that the *Millanois* would pay his Army, if their Republike might be free, and having intercepted some Letters of *Galeacius* entertaining correspondency with the Pope, he puts him with *Luchin* and *John* his brothers, his son *Actius*, and some others in close prison; Then were chosen four and twenty men out of every Tribe or Ward to rule the Commonwealth. And so having left *Montfortius* with some German forces to guard the City, *Ludovic* passeth into *Hetruria*, and so to *Rome*; where he complains to the Cardinals and Senate of the wrongs done him by Pope *John* 22. withall he makes one *Peter Corbarius* a Franciscan, Antipope, by whom he and his wife
1328. *Margaret* Lady of *Holland* and *Frisland*, are crowned in the *Vatican*. But no sooner had *Ludovic* left the City, when this poor Antipope (called now *Nicolaus* 5.) is by *Boniface* Earl of *Pisa* apprehended, laid in irons, and sent to the Pope at *Avenion*, where he ended his dayes in misery.

About this time the Emperor takes *Castrutius* Duke of *Luca* out of prison, and bestows honours on him; at whose request the Vicounts are restored. But all this could not secure the Emperor in *Italy*; for he found them, upon the Popes displeasure, to fall from him; besides, *Rome* had received King *Robert* of *Naples*, his forces in *Germany* were defeated, the *Catti* and *Saxons* had revolted; And fearing an Italian fig or pill, makes haste away into *Germany*; where having assembled the Peers, he makes confession of his faith, as he had done at *Rome* before the Cardinals, and complains of the Popes injustice and tyrannie, desiring the continuance of their allegiance to him: withall he useth the best means he could to be reconciled to Pope *Benedict* the ninth, *Johns* successor; who sent him word, that he could not absolve him, being hindered by the Kings of *France* and *Naples*. *Ludovic*, to be revenged on the French king, who sollicited the Pope to make him Lieutenant of *Italy*, joins himself in league to King *Edward* of *England*, to the great prejudice of *France*, which was wasted by their forces. Wherefore the French King cunningly got the Emperors wife to take him off from the *English*, assuring him by oath and promise that he would reconcile him to the Pope, which he did not: He procured also *Iohn* King of *Bohemia* to forsake him, who with a great Army enters *Italy*, pretending that he went to settle the troubles of *Lombardy*, where the Lieutenants or Vicounts of those cities which *Ludovic* had left to their governmenr, strove for the dominion of them. King *Iohn* suddenly seiseth upon *Brixia*, *Cremona*, *Papia*, and divers other cities; whereupon the *Guelphs* and *Gibellines* (being affrighted at this successe, and fearing lest *Philip Valois* and the Pope had conspired with King *Iohn* to subdue all the Italian cities, and to divide the dominion amongst them) of long enemies became now friends, and enter into league against *Iohn*, whom they defeated at *Ferrara* and drove him out of *Italy*; yet he retained *Parma*, *Regium*, and *Mutina*, which he committed to his Son *Charles*.

Ludovic having conferred the Dukedome of *Corinthia* upon the *Austrian*, which King *John* hoped should have been given to his son in right of his wife, the daughter of *Henry* of *Carinthia*; he declares himself an open enemy to *Ludovic*, and joyns with *France*, where he lost his life. Pope *Clement* the sixth who succeeded *Benedict*, renews the sentence of Excommunication, delivered by Pope *John* against *Ludovic*, and urges the Electors to choose another Emperour;

perour; and becauſe the Biſhop of *Mentz* would not call the Princes together for a new Election, he is firſt excommunicated, and then depoſed, and another Biſhop put in his place; but the Elector of *Trevers*, who had been *Ludovicks* chief Counſellor and ſupporter, fell off from him, and encouraged *Charles* Prince of *Bohemia* to undertake the Empire: The like did the Duke of *Saxon*. The new Biſhop of *Mentz* aſſembleth the Princes. *Charles* Marqueſs of *Moravia* (whoſe Font-name was *Wenceſlans*, but afterward called *Charles* by *Charles* the French King, who had married this Bohemians Aunt) King *Johns* ſon is elected, and is conveyed to *Aix* to be crowned; but the City denied him entrance; wherefore he is, by the Biſhop of *Colen*, crowned at *Bonna*, a Town upon the *Rhine* neer *Colen*: Notwithſtanding that *Ludovic*, by confeſſion of his faith, had refelled the Hereſies objected againſt him, and had ſtraightly charged, upon pain of proſcription, that none ſhould obey the Popes Orders, nor leave off performing of Divine Service, becauſe of his Excommunications. The French King did labour to reconcile the Pope and Emperour, but in vain; for the Pope would not abſolve him, except he would openly confeſs his Hereſies, reſign his Imperial Crown, and hold it of him; which *Ludovic* refuſed, affirming, that though he had his Conſecration from the Pope, yet the right of the Empire was not in him, but in the Electors; but *Ludovic* died the next year after this new Election, by a fall from his horſe as he was hunting, or rather by poiſon, which he could not vomit up, therefore he thought by riding and agitation of his body to diſpel it; but the poiſon was ſo ſtrong, that it put him into a Convulſion fit, in which he fell from his horſe. He reigned 30. ſome ſay 33. years; his wife *Margaret*, daughter to *William* the third of *Holland*, went to take poſſeſſion of that Province fallen to her by the death of her brother *William* the fourth, killed by the *Friſlanders*. *An. Chriſti.* 1347.

About this time the *Florentines* being oppreſſed by *Caſtrutius* and their own civil diſcords, yielded themſelves to *Charles* Duke of *Calabria*, ſon to *Robert* King of *Naples*. *Ludovic Gonzaga* invaded the Dominion of *Mantua*, having killed *Paſſerinus* Lord thereof. *Caius Scaliger*, Lord of *Verona*, having taken in *Padua*, and *Tarviſium*, from the *Carrarii*, died, whoſe ſon *Maſtinus* ſucceeded. *Galeacius* alſo died with grief, having loſt his fathers Principality by *Caſtrutius* Duke of *Luca*, and Lord of *Piſæ* and *Piſtorium*; whom the Pope excommunicated, as he was riding in triumph into *Luca* for his Victory over *Piſtorium*, upon which he died with grief, and his children ſtript of their inheritance by the Emperour, who had for *Caſtrutius* ſake incurred the Popes diſpleaſure. *Maſtinus Scaliger* to his fathers inheritance added *Vicetia*, *Brixia*, *Bergomus*, *Parma*, and *Luca*, and aimed alſo at *Venice*, which was his undoing; for the *Venetians* took from him *Padua* and *Tarviſium*. *Luchinus* the Vicount ſtript him of *Brixia* and *Bergomus*. *Benedict* the eleventh ſends his Legat to pacifie the tumults in *Rome*, where by his command *Francis Petrarch* the Poet is carried in pomp to the Capitol, and there crowned with Bayes. He confirmes *Scaliger* with the other Princes in their late purchaſed Dominions: but a dangerous war aroſe between the *Florentines* and *Piſans*, in which *Florence* was like to be ſurpriſed by *Valter* Duke of *Athens*, who was ſent by *Robert* King of *Naples* to aſſiſt them; for he undertaking to ſettle things, was made Protector by the Republike, but he made himſelf abſolute Lord; whereupon the Biſhop of *Florence* raiſeth the people againſt him, who both drove him out of the City, and the Nobility with him.

The Kingdome of *Naples* at this time was in great trouble; for King *Robert* the ſon of *Charles* the Lame, dying without iſſue male, marrieth his Neece *Joan* by his ſon *Charles*, who was dead, to *Andrew* King *Charles* of *Hungaries* youngeſt ſon, and makes him his Succeſſor; but he not being able to ſatisfie her unſatiable luſt, was by her means ſtrangled, and then marrieth with *Ludovic* the Prince of *Tarentums* ſon, and her Couſin-german, who had more right 1344.

to

An. Christi. to the Kingdome then the other. Hereupon *Ludovic* K. of *Hungary*, to revenge his brother *Andrews* death, marcheth into *Apulia* with a great Army, at whose approach *Ludovic* with his incestuous wife and parricide fled; and so he seised on the Kingdome. Shortly after, the *Hungarian* having setled *Naples*, returns home. The *Tarentine* with his wife, being in *Marsiles*, repair to the Pope at *Avinion*, who buyes this City of them, and re-establish them in the kingdome. Not long after the *Tarentine* dieth, and his wife marrieth with *James* the Arragonian, Duke of *Calabria*, whom she within a while casts off, and marrieth with *Otto* of *Brunswic*, and adopts *Lewis* of *Anjou*, brother to *Charles* the fifth of *France*, son of king *John*. Pope *Urban* the sixth being offended at the levity of this woman, invites *Ludovic* of *Hungary* to repossess *Naples*, which he refused, because of his age; but sends *Charles* the son of *Lewis* of *Dyrrachium*, and husband to *Margaret*, *Joans* sister, who suddenly enters *Italy* before *Anjou* was ready, defeats *Otto* of *Brunswick*, and imprisons him; and *Joan*, who had yielded her self, by his command is stifled with a pillow held on her face. Three years after *Otto* escaped out of prison, and recovers *Naples*; but shortly after died. *Lewis* of *Anjou*, by the help of *Clement* the seventh, raised 30000. men, with which he makes war against *Charles* two years together, takes in *Tarentum*, with some other places, and was like to carry the whole kingdome; but being poisoned by a draught of infected water, died; and so the Army, and withall the kingdome fell to *Charles* without blood-shed, who shortly after is called back into *Hungary* against *Sigismund*, where he is treacherously killed by the Queen widow. His son *Ladislaus* took *Rome* twice, being divided into factions. Against him, *Alexander* the fifth, and the Florentines call in *Lewis* of *Anjou*, son to the former, who defeats *Ladislaus*; but afterward *Anjou* was worsted, and the Florentines forced to make peace on disadvantagious tearms. *Ladislaus* is poisoned at *Rome*; to him succeeded his sister *Joan* in the kingdome, who adopted *Alphonsus*, king *Ferdinands* son of *Arragon*, and afterward dis-inherited him, she promiseth the kingdome to *Lewis* of *Anjou*, grandchild to the first *Lewis*: Hereupon a war is raised between *Alphonsus* and *Lewis*, in which *Alphonsus* at last got the victory, and left the possession of the kingdome to his base son *Ferdinand*. *Lewis*, by *Joans* consent, makes his brother *Renatus* Heir to the Crown; but she dying, he lost his right. His son *John* was defeated at *Troy*. *Renatus* the father conferred his right upon his brother *Charles* his son, who was onely left alive of the stock of *Anjou*; he left his right by will to *Lewis* the 11. of *France*. *Charles* the eighth, the son of *Lewis*, by claiming his Right, occasioned great wars between *Arragon* and *France*.

Rome, in the Popes absence, is torn in sunder by the *Columnii* and *Ursini*. One *Nicholaus* a Scrivener did so insinuate himself into the fooliish multitude, by his wit, that he made them beleeve they might recover the Cities ancient Monarchy, by adhering to him; whereupon he took upon him the Titles of *Augustus*, *Severus*, and *Clemens*; then seiseth upon the Capitol; multitudes both of the City, and abroad, adhere to him: he sends his Edicts to the Italian Princes to submit themselves to him; he sends to the Pope to repair into the City within the prefixed time of a year, or else to lose his Pontificat; he commands the seven Electors, and other Princes of *Germany* to wait on him, or else he would proceed against their contumacy; but the next year this short-lived Emperour was by the Popes forces driven out of *Rome* and *Italy*, and afterward being apprehended, was sent in chaines to the Pope. About this time the Pestilence so raged through Europe, that it swept away the third part of mankind: The Jews were accused and burned for infecting the Springs.

CHAP.

An. Christi.

CHAP. VI.

1. *The Eastern Affairs under the* Palæologi. 2. *A brief History of the* Turks, *till the year* 1412. 3. *The brief Historie of* Sweden, Denmark *and* Norway, *till the same year.* 1412.

AFter the death of *Andronicus senior* the son of *Michael*, the *Palæologi* began to reign at *Byzantium*, which race continued 121. years. *Andronicus junior* having (as is already said) deposed his Grandfather, reigned eight years, and left *John Cantacuzenus* Tutor to his two sons, *John Palæologus* and *Manuel*. Sixteen years after *Cantacuzenus* was driven out, and *John Palæologus* reigned seven and twenty years, whose successor was *Manuel*; he ruled four and thirty years, to whom suceeded his son *John* seven and twenty years, whose Successor was *Constantine* the eighth and last, for in the eight year of his reign *Constantinople* was taken by the *Turks*. 1332.

Cantacuzenus, for his ambition in aiming at the Empire, is banished; whereupon he raised an Army, with which he vexed *John*, and his Mother a widow, five years together; at last took *Byzantium* by treachery, and made himself Emperour, and *John* his Colleague, on whom he bestowed his daughter in marriage; but he disliking his father-in-law's greatness, fled to *Tenedos* to raise Forces against him, and procured *Francis Catalusius* the Genuan to assist him, for whose service he gave him the Isle *Lesbos* with *Mitylene*, which his posterity held till *Mahumet* the second. *Cantacuzenus* in the interim enters into league with the *Venetians*, *Catalanians*, and King of *Sicily* against the *Genuois*. A war is begun, the *Genuois* in a Sea-fight at *Scutari*, between *Byzantium* and *Chalcedon*, get the Victory, under *Auria* Admiral of their Fleet; but the next year the *Genuois* at *Corsica* are overthrown by *Pisanus* the *Venetian* who sunk one and forty of their Gallies. After this *Auria* renewes his Fleet, and fights *Pisanus* neer *Peloponnesus*, defeats and takes him prisoner with 5000. more, whom he carrieth in triumph into *Genua*. Upon this *Cantacuzenus* remits the Empire to his eldest son *Andronicus*, and shuts himself up in a Monastery. His youngest son *Manuel* he makes Despot, and Governour of *Sparta* in *Laconia*: His daughter he had married before to *Orchanes* the *Turk*; but *Andronicus* is driven out of his Empire by *Palæologus*, and flies to *Rhodes*, hoping to finde assistance of the great Master; but failing of this he repaires to his brother at *Peloponnesus*, where he spent the rest of his life in private. 1354.

John having obtained the Empire, or shadow of it rather, went to *Italy* for assistance, but being slighted there, returns to *Byzantium* and seeing he could not maintain himself against the Bulgarian and Servian Forces in Armes against him, he makes a league with *Amurathes*, to whose protection he both submits himself and Kingdome, promising a yearly tribute, for the payment whereof he delivers his youngest son *Theodorus* as hostage: By this means the Greek Emperours became Vassals to the Turk. *John*, in his absence had made his eldest sonne *Andronicus* Governour of the Empire; and his other sonne *Emanuel*, Ruler of *Thessalonica*. *Andronicus* was accused of Treason, as if he had conspired with *Amurathes* his sonne to kill the Emperour; therefore with scalding Vinegar his eyes were put out. *Bajazet* sent *Theodorus* into *Peloponnesus*, having put the *Cantacuzeni* to death. Blinde *Andronicus*, having recovered a little sight, complains of his father and brother to *Bajazet*, who thrust both the Father and the sonne into a dark Dungeon, and conferred the Empire on *Andronicus*;

An. Christi. but three years after *Emanuel* escaped out of prison, and by the help of *Bajazet* thrust him from his government, and sent him bound with his son *John* to the *Turks* Court.

Emanuel having profferred a yearly tribute of three millions of Crowns to *Bajazet*, obtaines the Kingdome; he is enjoyned to deliver up *Philadelphia* which had been divers times besieged in vain, to give hostages, and to bind himself by oath to aid the *Turks* with Auxiliaries upon all occasions. But not long after, *John* the son of *Andronicus* accuseth his Uncle to *Bajazet*, and alienates him so from *Emanuel*, that he besieged *Byzantium*, and seeing he could not take it by force, resolves to gain it by famine; but the sudden breaking in of *Tamerlan* the *Scythian*, diverted him from his enterprise. *Emanuel* intending for *Italy* to procure men and money of the Latine Princes against the *Turks*, leaves *John* the son of *Andronicus* governour of the Kingdome in his absence; for he was now out of the *Turks* favour, for complying secretly with his brother: *Theodorus*, the other brother, fearing lest *Bajazet* would have taken *Byzantium*, when he lay before it, sold *Argos* and *Nauplium* to the *Venetians*, and *Sparta* to the *Rhodians*; But the *Turks* afterward destroyed *Argos*, and *Sparta* returned to the *Palæologi*. This *Emanuel* had seven sons, by his *Turkish* wife, widow to the King of *Trapezuntum*; *John* his successour, *Andronicus* governour of *Thessalonia*, which he after sold to the *Venetians*, and so in *Peloponesus* obtained *Mantinæa* of his brothers; His third son was *Michael*; the fourth *Theodorus* Prince of *Peloponesus*, he strove with his brother *John* for the Empire, chooSing *Amurathes* for Arbitrator; the fifth *Demetrius*, He took from the *Albans Peloponnesus* by the *Turks* help, for which he paid a yearly tribute of fifteen thousand Crowns, at last he yeelded himself and *Sparta* to *Mahumet*; The sixth *Thomas*, who after *Byzantium* was taken, and *Peloponnesus* lost, lived obscurely in *Rome*; The seventh *Constantine*, succeeded *John* in the Empire.

About these times *Greece* was torn in peeces by the *Venetians*, *Genuois*, *Neapolitans*, *Spaniards*, *Bulgarians*, and *Servians*, or *Triballians*, every one of these snatching away a share of that wretched Country; not long after the *Venetians* lost *Athens* to *Antonius* the son of *Ceinerius* the *Florentine*: The widow of this *Anthony* after her husbands death, bought the Principality from *Mahumet*, and falling in love with a *Venetian* Merchant (who for her sake poysoned his former wife) made him Prince, who being accused by the Gentry of *Athens* for Tyranny, is by *Mahumet* commanded to be slain, and his wife also, and then commands the President of *Thessaly* to take possession of *Athens*; which afterward, because of the often seditions of the Citizens, he destroyed with its Tower, and so endeth this famous City for Arts and Arms, having flourished from *Solon* to this *Mahumet* two thousand years: now it is a poor Fisher-town. *Theodorus Emanuels* fourth son kept out the *Turks* by land from *Peloponnesus* by building a wall in *Isthmus* reaching between the *Ionian* and *Ægæan* Seas, where stood the two Cities *Corinth* and *Megara*.

To *Emanuel* succeeded his eldest son *John*, who being stript of all power could act nothing memorable; he went to the Councel of *Florence*, and shortly after his return dyed, to whom succeeded *Constantine* the seventh his youngest brother. He had done good service against the *Turks* before he was Emperor; but when *Amurathes* had taken *Heraclea*, he was forced to submit to the Conqueror, and to beat down the wall again of *Peloponnesus*, which afterward the *Venetians* set up, but *Mahumet* totally overthrew it. In him ended the *Greek* Empire, *Byzantium* being taken by *Mahumet*.

The *Turks*, originally *Schytians*, or *Sarmatians*, who had broke into *Asia* through the *Caspian* straits, and had served *Heraclius* against the *Persians*, who afterward served by the *Persians*, and subdued them, and withall received from their conquered subjects *Mahumetanisme*: whom afterwards the *Tartars* much

much weakned; but after their departure, the *Turks* recovered all that they had loſt in *Aſia*, and much more, dividing themſelves into divers Tetrarchies according to their Families, of which the four chief were, the *Aſſimbei*, *Candelori*, *Caramanus*, and *Ottomanus*. The firſt poſſeſſed *Cappadocia* with *Armenia* the leſſe; The ſecond had the Country *Sinope* about *Pontus*; The *Carmans* had *Cilicia*, and the *Ottomans Bithinia*, and the Country about *Olympus*: but in time *Mahumet* the *Ottoman* ſwallowed up the *Candelorians* and *Caramans* Countries, who fled to the *Aſſimbeans* for help; of theſe came *Uſſuncaſſanes* who ſubdued the Kingdome of *Perſia*, and had long wars with the *Ottomans*, as we ſhall ſee hereafter. The occaſion of the quarrel were *Hali* and *Homar*, the two Interpreters of *Mahumets Alcoran*; The *Ottomans* followed *Hali*, the reſt *Homar*. The firſt *Ottoman* began to flouriſh about the year 1300. and reigned twenty nine years; He was the ſon of *Orthogulies*, chief of the *Ogucian* family, and was called *Ottoman* from a ſmall Town of *Galatia*, named *Ottomanzicum*. He took *Natolia* and *Ancyra* in *Phrygia*, *Sinope* in *Galatia*, where King *Mithridates* was born and buried, and *Sebaſtia* in *Cappadocia*, it is at this day called *Siva*; He ſubdued alſo *Pruſia* the Metropolis of *Bythina*, and there made his reſidence, though ſome adſcribe this to his ſon *Orchanes*. A little before his death, eight thouſand *Turks* brake into *Europe*, having paſſed the *Helleſpont*, and joyned themſelves with the *Catallani*. *Ottoman* left three ſons; the youngeſt *Orchanes*, (the other two brothers being ſlain,) ſucceeded. *An. Chriſti.* 1327.

Orchanes ſubdued *Myſia*, *Lydia*, *Lycaonia*, *Phrygia*, and *Caria*, extending his conqueſt to the *Helleſpont* and *Euxin* ſea, whilſt *Cantacuzenus*, and the *Palæologi* are ſtriving for maſtery; ſome think he was ſlain by an arrow at the ſiege of *Pruſia*, others that he was killed in a battell againſt the *Tartars*; Some write he reigned two and thirty years, others but two and twenty. To him ſucceeded *Amurathes* the firſt, whoſe elder brother *Solyman*, that firſt of the *Turks* entred *Europe* with an Army, was dead of a fall from his horſe, as he was courſing an Hare. This *Amurathes* overcame the *Triballians*, enemies to the *Greeks*, and took in divers Towns of *Thracia*; multitudes of Chriſtians fled into *Adrianopolis*, whom he beſieged and took. Then deſirous to tranſport them into *Aſia*, he was adviſed by his Prieſts to pick out every fifth man that was moſt handſome and ſound; theſe were diſtributed among the *Turks*, to learn their diſcipline and exerciſes, and after three years to be brought to the Port and made *Janiſars*, in which conſiſteth the *Turkiſh* ſtrength againſt Chriſtendome. He makes *Adrianopolis* the ſeat of his Kingdome. He plunders *Macedonia*, and gives the booty to his Souldiers; but underſtanding that the *Myſians* and *Triballians* had raiſed a great Army againſt him, was reſolved to reſtore to the *Greeks* their Cities again, and to return into *Aſia*, had not the Earthquake which overthrew the walls of many Townes, invited the *Turkes* to poſſeſs them. He falls upon the *Triballi* as they were in drink, and ſubdues them. *Suſman* King of *Myſia*, to pacifie *Amurathes*, beſtows his daughter on him, the other he marrieth to *Andronicus* the ſon of *John*, who became ſtipendary and tributary to the *Sultan*. After this, *Amurathes* ſubdues the Governours of *Aſia* who had revolted from him. Whilſt he with *John* the Emperour were abſent in *Aſia*, his ſon *Sanzes*, with *Andronicus Johns* ſon, combine againſt their Fathers, who were rewarded both with the loſſe of their eyes. *Amurathes* at laſt ſubdued *Lararus* the *Deſpot* of *Servia* or *Triballia*, and put him in priſon: to revenge this wrong, a ſervant of *Lazarus* faining himſelf a fugitive, got acceſs to the *Sultan*, whom preſently he run through with his ſword; and ſo dyed *Amurathes*, after he had fought ſeven and thirty Battels, and reigned two and thirty years, ſome ſay but three and twenty. His ſonne *Bajazet* ſucceeded. 1389.

Bajazet the firſt, with ſtrangling his brother *Jagupe*, begins his Reign: he enters with a great Army the *Bulgarian* and *Servian* Countries, called

An. Christi. anciently *Mysia* and *Triballia*, along *Isther* to the *Pontic* sea, and defeats *Marcus* the *Despot* with all the Nobility, and so rangeth through *Illiricum*, *Macedonia* and *Albania*, even to *Hungary* without opposition, driving thence multitudes of Christians, and infinite store of plunder. Shortly after, he overruns *Thessaly* and *Thrace*, even to *Bosphorus*, then destroyes the Suburbs of *Byzantium*, and so affrighteth *John Palæologus*, that he is forced to seek out aid of the *French*; *Charles* the sixth then reigning, sends *John* Earl of *Nevers* his Cousin-german, who afterward got the *Dutchy* of *Burgundy* with an Army to assist *Sigismund* King of *Hungary* against the common enemy; divers Princes of *France* and *Germany* accompanied *John*. After they had joyned their forces with *Sigismund*, they march through *Servia*, and obtained some small victories by the way. Then they laid siege to *Nicopolis*, which gave time to *Bajazet* to arm himself, who having gathered together two hundred thousand, sent before eight thousand light horsemen, which the *French* set upon, and after them the *Hungarians* and *Germans*; but on a sudden they were encompassed with the whole *Turkish* Army. The *French* first go to wrack; the *Hungarians* seeing the *French* horse returning without their Riders, betake themselves to their heels; *Sigismund* escapes to *Byzantium* in a Galley; *John* and divers others are taken, some whereof were cut in peeces by *Bajazets* command; *John* with five others were ransomed for two hundred thousand Crowns, which was paid by *James* Prince of *Mytilene*. *John* upon his return ordained the Order of the Golden-Fleece, in memory of his banishment in that Country where the Golden-Fleece was found by *Jason*, and where *Peter* and *Andrew* the Apostles preached: Their garment is of crimson Velvet, with a Mantle of the same lined with white, and richly embroidered round about with a border of Flames and Fleeces; the Hood also is of crimson Velvet, the Collar of gold, the Toison or Fleece hanging thereat, either in memory of *Jasons*, or of *Gideons* Fleece. Some think this order was instituted afterward by *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy* and Earl of *Flanders* in the year 1429. having a resolution to conquer the Holy-Land.

1396.

Bajazet after this victory returns to the siege of *Constantinople*, which he was forced to give over, upon the entring of *Tamerlan* into *Asia*, having four hundred thousand horse, and six hundred thousand foot. This *Tamerlan*, called by the *Greeks Timures*, was a Citizen of *Samarcanda* Metropolis of the *Zagatains* in *Tartary*. He entring *Asia* takes in some *Towns* of *Armenia*, and sets on fire *Sultania* called of old *Tygranocerta* sometime the seat of the *Persian* Kings. So having crossed *Euphrates*, he enters *Cappadocia* where he took *Sebastia* now called *Suias*, and in it put to death *Orthobules Bajazets* son. He caused his horse to tread to death all the Captives, being innumerable. *Bajazet* with a great Army met him at mount *Stella*, where *Pompy* overthrew *Mithridates*, at the foot of *Antitaurus*, a cruel battel is fought, in which a hundred and forty thousand were slain; *Bajazet* is taken, his horse being shot under him with many arrows, who being brought to *Tamerlan* was shut up in a iron Cage, which was in derision carried through *Asia*, and made *Tamerlans* foot-stool when he took horse: thus was the murtherer of his brother used, and that cruel Butcher of Christians two years ago, when he defeated the *French* and *Hungarians*. At last perceiving how he was made the scorn of the world, and forced to eat the scraps that were flung from *Tamerlans* table like a dog, and seeing his Concubines abused in his presence, chiefly his beloved Wife, the daughter of *Lazarus* the *Despot*, out of impatience dasheth out his brains against the iron grates of his Cage, and so dyed, being unwilling to be carried alive in triumph to *Samarcanda*.

1400.

After this victory *Tamerlan* having passed over *Taurus*, enters *Mesopotamia*, subduing all before him even to the *Syrian* sea. He defeated the *Egyptian Sultan*, not far from *Pelusium*. All the Cities of *Syria*, even *Damascus* at last yeelded to him. His custome was to present a white Flag the first day that he

he sate down before any place, the next day a red one, and the third a black; *Ann. Christi.*
the first did signifie mercy, the second punishment, and the third death to those that held out three dayes against him. So having glutted himself with spoils and victories, and the plague raging in his Army upon the desarts of Egypt, he returns in triumph to *Samarcanda*, where he died; he reigned forty years, and *Bajazet* 24. others say 26. What *Tamerlan* suddenly got, was as suddenly lost by his sons, in their mutual quarrels. *Bajazet* left five sons; the first *Joshua*, who seised on the Dominion by the help of the Souldiers, and four years after was killed by his brother *Mulsuman*, whom some call *Solyman*. This fought with his other brother *Moyses*, whom *Tamerlan* had taken prisoner, and set at liberty. This *Moyses* was overcome by *Mulsuman*; but afterward for his insolent government he is deposed, and delivered by the army to *Moyses*, who put him to death. *Moyses* afterward for his tyrannie is delivered to his other brother *Mahumet*, who strangles him, and imprisons the other brother *Mustapha* for aiming at the Empire. But the Greeks give to *Baiazet* two sons only, to wit *Celebinus* and *Mustapha*. 1402. 1412.

Scandia or *Scandinavia*, from whence of old issued out upon the Roman Empire, *Swedes*, *Normans*, *Vandals* and *Goths*, contains now three Kingdomes, *Swethland*, *Denmark*, and *Norway*: *Swethland* is the ancienter, giving original to the Kings of *Denmark* and *Norway*; for *Dan* the first king of *Denmark*, which from him was called *Dania*, was the son of *Humel* the sixteenth King of *Sweden*; but there had been five and twenty Kings in *Sweden*, before there was any King in *Norway*. *Haland* and others who succeeded him were but petty Kings, *Harald* the first was the first Monarch there. *Sweden* was governed by its own Kings, till *Erichson* (otherwise *Smeck*) King of *Sweden* and *Norway* was deposed by his subjects, and *Albert* Duke of *Megapolis* his sisters sonne made King, who oppressing the Nobility, and filling the kingdome with *Germans*, the Peers fell off from him to *Margaret* Queen of *Denmark* and *Norway*, who was then in arms against *Albert*, and so the three kingdoms were united; till the Kings began to despise the *Swedes*, and commit all power to the *Danes*; whereupon the *Swedes* and *Norwegians* chose *Charls* the son of *Canutus*, a Noble man of *Swethland*, for their King: but the *Norwegians* being enticed by *Christiern* the first, King of *Denmark*, submitted to the *Danes*.

In *Swethland*, *Gustavus* the first descended from the ancient Swedish kings, freed his country from the Danish yoke; in thankful remembrance of which benefit, his posterity are allowed by the *Swedes* to inherit the kingdome. The first Christian King of *Swethland* was *Biornus*; before whom though they reckon an hundred Kings, yet are their stories so defective, that most of their names and actions are buried in oblivion. This *Biornus* lived about the year 816. in the time of *Lewis* son to *Charls* the Great. The next we find after him is *Ericus Sanctus*, whom they reckon their 124. King. After him the posterity of *Suercherus* and *Ericus* reigned by turns: for *Suercherus* king of the *Goths* and *Swedes*, being murthered by his own servant, *Ericus* obtained the kingdome by his worth and prowesse; He made good lawes, converted the *Finlanders* to Christ, and governed his kingdom in peace and justice; yet he was murthered by his Nobility. To whom succeeded *Charls* the son of *Suercherus*, after he had reigned two years over the *Ostrogoths*, who fell off from the *Swedes* for chooling *Ericus* to be their King; after whose death he governed both kingdoms eight years: but being hated for his affection to the *Danes*, he was murthered by *Canutus* the sonne of *Ericus Sanctus*, who believed that *Charls* had conspired with the *Danes* to murther his father: He died in the year 1188. *Canutus* succeeded, the son of *Ericus Sanctus*, who died with grief for murthering *Charls*, in the year 1192. *Suercherus* the son of *Charls* succeeded; He intended to revenge his fathers death upon the posterity of *Canutus*, but his Danish forces were overthrown, and he in another battel was killed by his subjects, *an.* 1210. *Ericus* the sonne of *Canutus*, having escaped the fury of

Suercherus,

An. Christi. *Suercherus*, reigned 6 years and died, *an.* 1216. His son *Iohn*, a youth of great hopes, died the third year of his reign. *Ericus Balbus*, great grandchild to *Ericus Sanctus*, succeeded; His kinsman *Canutus* conspired against him, and drove him out of his kingdome; but he raised an army, defeated and killed *Canutus*, and returned in peace to his kingdom; He subdued and converted the *Tavestii*, by the help of *Birgerus* Prince of the *Ostrogoths*, and then died, *an.* 1250.

Valdemarus the son of *Birgerus* was chosen King in his fathers absence, who returning from the *Tavestii* challenged the kingdome, as being rather due to him then to his son; but was resisted by the Army, and contented to be Tutor or Protector during his sons minority. *Valdemar* after his fathers death, by the instigation of his Danish wife, tyrannizeth over his brothers, for which he is deposed by the Swedes, and stript also of the kingdom of the *Goths*. His brother *Magnus Ladolus* succeeded, *an.* 1276. who took his brother *Valdemar* prisoner, and so the quarrel about the dominion ended; He murthered at a feast the chief men amongst the *Folchungi*: then giving himself to devotion and works of piety, died. *Brigerus* his son succeeded, *an.* 1282. the murtherer of his brothers, whom he accused of treason; they to defend themselves, raised an army against this Tyrant, and took him prisoner; afterward reconciling himself to them, invites them to a feast, and treacherously layeth hold on them and puts them in a dungeon, where they perished with stench and famine, (for he flung the keyes of the prison into the deep river hard by, that none might have accesse to help them) upon this his subjects take arms and drive him out of his kingdome into *Denmark*, where he died miserably with his wife. *Magnus Smeech* son of *Ericus*, killed by his brother *Birgerus*, succeeded *an.* 1319. He was a wicked and libidinous Prince: In his wars against *Norway*, he was taken prisoner by *Haquin* the Norwegian king, from whom being delivered he fled into *Denmark*; there he proscribes all the Swedish Peers; which they slighting, call in *Albert* the Megapolitan, whom by publike consent they confirmed in the kingdom at *Stockholm*; He proffers reconciliation to *Magnus*, which he rejected, preferring war to peace; wherefore he is taken prisoner, and kept in custody seven yeares, till he was freed by his son *Haquin*. *Albert* afterward began to slight the *Swedes*, therefore is slighted by them, and in his wars with *Margaret* Queen of *Denmark* is taken and detained seven yeares a
1394. prisoner, at last is forced to absolve the *Swedes* from their allegiance, *an.* 1394. *Margaret* the Dane, wife to *Haquin* king of *Norway* succeeds, and is now Lady of three kingdoms; A magnanimous Princesse, but covetous, and one that made no bones to break oaths and promises; she committed the chief places of trust to the enemies of *Swethland*, and out of hatred to the *Swedes* left them, and made her residence in *Denmark*, having first procured the kingdome to
1412. *Ericus* her Nephew by her sister, she died, and was buried at *Flensburgh* *an.* 1412.

In *Denmark*, *Waldemar* the third, whom they reckon their 94. King, succeeds his father *Christopher*; he was sirnamed the *Reprobate*, for his wicked life. In the begining of his reign, *an.* 1340. he cuningly got the possession of *Scania* from King *Magnus*, and his Castles which were kept by the *Germans*. The next year he invaded *Onland* and *Gotland*, having slain in that 500. in this 2000. and lost them both again the same yeare. He found his kingdom much impoverished and wasted by foraign incursions, but he left it rich and flourishing: He was a cruel Tyrant against his Nobility, which he endeavoured to extinguish, therefore they often rebelled against him; but his daughter, *Margaret* Queen of the three kingdomes afterward severely punished those rebellious Lords. This *Waldemar* being threatened with an Interdict by the Pope for his tyrannie and perfidiousnesse, returns this Answer:

Waldemar

Waldemar King of Denmark *to the Pope of* Rome, *ſends greeting. We have our nature from God, our Kingdome from our Subjects, wealth from our Parents, and our faith from thy Predeceſſors, which if thou wilt not let us enjoy quietly, we ſend it back again by theſe preſents. Farewel.* An. Chriſti. 1375.

He died, *An.* 1375. To him ſucceeded his daughter *Margaret*, who by her father had *Denmark*; by her husband *Haquin*, the ſon of *Magnus Smeec*, or *Smeg*, *Swethland* and *Norway*: She reigned 32. years after her husbands death; ſhe finiſhed the war begun by *Haquin* againſt *Albert* King of *Sweden*, whom ſhe took priſoner with his ſon *Ericus*, and his father Duke of *Megopolis*, with the Earl of *Holſatia*, and many Barons. *Albert* after ſix years captivity, is let free on condition to pay 60000. Marks for his ranſome, or to deliver up the City *Holme*, or elſe to return a priſoner; *Holme* upon his Letters is delivered up, and ſo the three kingdomes are united; and it is agreed, that in the election of the King, the *Swedes* and *Danes* ſhould have the firſt ſuffrage by turns; but the *Danes* not content with the firſt ſuffrage in the election of *Ericus*, they challenged it alſo in the election of *Chriſtopher*, which ſo offended the *Swedes*, that they choſe them a King of their own, *Charles* the ſon of *Canutus*, *Margaret* being childleſs, (for her ſon *Olaus* was dead) ſhe ſends for *Ericus* her Nephew out of *Pomerania*, and makes him King at fifteen years of age; ſo they reigned together till ſhe died. He married *Philippa* the King of *Englands* daughter. At laſt *Margaret* died, and was richly entombed at *Roſchilda*, *An.* 1412. 1389. 1396. 1412.

CHAP. VII.

1. *The affairs of* Italy, Germany, Bohemia, *the* Netherlands, *under* Charles *the Fourth, and* Wenceſlaus, *Emperours.* 2. *The Wars between* Venice *and* Genua *for the Iſle of* Tenedos, *from the year* 1349. *till* 1400.

ALthough *Charles* the Fourth, ſon to King *John* of *Bohemia*, had been crowned at *Bonna* before the death of *Ludovic* the Emperour; yet he now being dead, divers of the Electors make void *Charles* his Election as fraudulent; wherefore in the Dyet of *Frankfort*, *Mentz*, *Palſgrave*, *Saxon*, and *Brandenburg* proffer the Empire to King *Edward* the third of *England*, who had lately beat the French and Scots; but he prudently conſidering the difficulties of that great place, and the danger his own Kingdome might incur by the French and Scots in his abſence, waved that proffer: Then they invited *Frederick* Marqueſs of *Myſnia*, a rich and potent Prince; but he refuſed the motion, knowing that he could not enjoy the Empire (being *Charles* was already choſen) without much trouble; therefore *Charles* preſents *Frederick* with a gift of 10000. Marks. The Electors at laſt ſet up *Gunter* Earl of *Swarceburg* in *Thuringia*, who came with an Army to *Frankfort*, whither *Charles* alſo came with his Forces, but refuſed to hazard all his fortunes upon one battel, therefore labours to undermine his enemy without ſhedding of blood; whereupon he makes his peace with the ſons of *Ludovic* his Predeceſſor, whoſe lands he had ſpoiled with fire and ſword; then he marrieth the *Palſgraves* daughter, and ſo got the Houſe of *Bavaria* to ſtand for him: He alſo by a Phyſician poiſons *Gunter*, who died the ſixth moneth after his Election; but *Charls* is content to pay to his Heirs in recompenſe of their fathers loſſes and charges, 22000 Marks of ſilver, and withall to reſign over to them two Townes in *Thuringia*; he alſo brought back the publike Mart to *Frankfort*, which he had thence tranſlated to *Mentz*: and ſo at laſt *Charles* obtaines the Empire alone, not without much bribing. 1349.

Charles

An. Christi *Charles* in his younger dayes was educated in *France* with King *Charles*; therefore brought many French customs into *Germany*, and parted with the rights of the kingdom of *Arles* to the French, to the great detriment of the Empire. This *Arles* is the chief city of *Narbon*, which the *Burgundians* made the metropolis of their kingdome; in this three famous Councels have been held. *Charles* also to weaken the greatnesse of the German Princes, armed divers Cities against them with immunities and priviledges; he inlarged *Bohemia* with *Silesia* and *Lusatia*, and made divers Countries thereabout feudatory to *Bohemia*. He made *John* and *Albert*, Princes of the *Henets* on the Baltick sea, Dukes of the Empire. He advanced the power of the Senate in *Norimbergh*, which had hitherto been oppressed by the popular fury. Being invited by divers Letters from *Petrarch* and others, to settle the tumults of *Rome*, he repairs thither; After he had been crowned at *Milain* with iron, is there crowned with gold. There he stayed but a short while, for so he had promised by the Cardinals to Pope *Innocent* 6. lest his long abode there might weaken the Popes power, and cause alterations. At *Milain* he made *Galeacius* and *Barnabas* the Vicounts, Vicars or Lieutenants of the Empire in *Liguria*. This *Galeacius* was a great Lover of Learning; therefore by the advice of *Petrarch* erected a Library, having before instituted a famous Colledge, in which his son *John Galeacius* allowed large stipends to *Baldus* and the two *Raphaels* to read the Law, to *Marsilius* to professe physick, and to *Emanuel Chrysoloras* to read the Greek tongue.

1355.

Charles having returned into *Germany*, calls a Diet of the Princes, where he contracts and digests all the ancient rights, customs, priviledges and constitutions belonging to the Empire, into an Epitome and method: this was called *Lex Carolina*, & *Aurea bulla*, the golden Patent. This contains all the rites and lawes concerning the Emperors election, and shewes how far each Princes authority extends; By this all contentions about the Emperors election are cut off, and each Prince confined within his own bounds. This Patent or Bul was made and proclaimed at *Norimbergh*. After this Diet, *Charles* repairs to Pope *Urban* 5. at *Avenion*, whose stirtop he held, and followed him on foot. Then dedicated the rest of his life to works of charity and piety; To setling of *Bohemia*, where he instituted the University of *Prague*, and enriched divers Monasteries and Colledges of Canons. At last he laboured with the Pope and Cardinals, also with the Electors by great sums of mony, for his son *Wenceslaus* to be his successor, whom with much ado he got to be crowned, and then within two years after dyed, having reigned since the death of *Gunter* 28 years, in all 31.

1356.

1361.

1376.

About this time, the Dukedome of *Gelder* fell from *Reynold* for want of issue male, to *William* Earl of *Julia*, who married his daughter *Mary*. Afterward, for want of issue, *William* of *Monts* seised upon both *Gelder* and *Julia*; and because *Arnold* of *Egmont* laid claim to *Gelder*, *Gerard* the son of *William* gave up his right to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*. Not long after this, *Cleve* fell to the Earles of *Marca*, for want of issue male. *Burgundy* was then in the possession of *Philip* the Bold, brother to *Charles* the fifth of *France*, who bestowed *Burgundy* on him, that he might the more easily obtain the marriage of *Margaret* of *Flanders*. This Dutchy fell to *John* Father of *Philip*, by the death of *Otto* Duke of *Burgundy*. *Brabant* was in controversie between *Wenceslaus* of *Lucelburgh*, and *Lewis* Earle of *Flanders*, in right of their Wives; *Lewis* prevailed, and left to his daughter *Margaret*, who married with *Philip* the Bold, *Flanders*, *Artois*, the County of *Burgundy*, *Nivern*, *Rethelin*, *Salina*, and *Mechlin*. *Philip* left *Flanders*, *Burgundy*, and *Artois* to his son *John*; *Brabant* and *Lucelburgh* to his son *Antony*; to his third son *Philip*, *Nivern* and *Rethelin*. *Antonies* son *John* Duke of *Brabant*, founded the University of *Lovain*.

The

The Emperor *Charles* having ſold and given away ſo many Towns, lands and priviledges from the *Empire*, much weakned it; his chief care was to enrich and honour *Bohemia*; he carried to *Prague* (which he had beautified and enlarged) the Lance with which Chriſts ſide was pierced, the Nails, the ſponge, and part of the Croſs, with the ſword of *Charles* the Great, and a Tooth of *John Baptiſt*, which the Pope had honoured with a ſolemn Holy-day. He gave to the eldeſt of his Predeceſſors ſons the Principality of *Upper-Bavaria*, to his other ſon *Brandeburg*, to *William* the third ſon *Holland* and *Hannonia*, to *Margaret* the widow their mother a yearly penſion: but ſhe diſcontented for the loſs of *Holland*, requires it again from her ſon *William*, which he refuſed; upon this a war is raiſed, and a cruel battel fought between the Mother and Son; at laſt *Hannonia* is given to the Empreſs for her life, after whoſe death *William* grew diſtracted, and ſo continued many years. *Charles* before his death divided *Bohemia* into twelve Counties, and aboliſhed the new ſect of *Whippers*; he bought the Marquiſat of *Brandeburg* from the poſterity of *Bavare*, and beſtowed it on his ſonne *Sigiſmund*: when he ſent his ſonne *Wenceſlaus* to be chriſtened at *Aix*, he ſent with him his weight in gold, to make him the more welcome to the *Virgin-Mary*; at two yeares old he gave him the Crowne of *Bohemia*, at fifteen he made him *Auguſtus*; having promiſed to each Elector a hundred thouſand Crowns, for payment of which he made over to them the publike tributes of the Empire: he married his ſon *Sigiſmund* to *Mary* the daughter of *Hungary*, therefore ſent him thither to be educated in the langnage and cuſtome of the Country, in hope that he ſhould be King; he made *Lunenburg* a Dutchy, and puniſhed thoſe that impriſoned any Clergy-men. *An. Chriſti.*

About this time, the *Venetians* and the *Genuois* quarrelled, becauſe *Petrinus* King of *Cyprus* at his Coronation, had preferred the *Venetians* to the *Genuois*; whereupon *Cyprus* is waſted, and *Tamaguſta* taken by the *Genuois*. Shortly after the *Florentines* being offended with the Popes Legat, cauſed many Cities of *Italy* to fall off from the Pope, who in their Banners carried the word *Liberty*; with thoſe the *Bononians* joyned; Pope *Gregory* ſent an Army of *Britons* to reduce them to obedience, but in vain; wherefore being perſwaded by *Catherine* of *Sena*, and perceiving what loſſe *Italy* ſuſtained by his abſence, returns to *Rome*, and ſo much the rather, becauſe one day reproving a Biſhop for being ſo long abſent from his charge, who anſwered, *And why do you who ſhould give example to others, ſtay ſo long away from your Biſhoprick?* Divers Towns of *Germany* finding no favour or aſſiſtance from their Princes, enter into a mutual confederacie; theſe are called *Hanſ-towns*, whereof there be ſix in *Vandalia*, eight in *Pomerania*, ſix in *Prutenia*, four in *Livonia*, thirteen in *Saxony*, ten in *Weſtphalia*, ſix in *Clivia* and *Monts*, ſeven in *Geldria*, three in *Tranſilvania*, and three in *Friſia*, beſides fourteen other Towns that fell off afterward *an.* 1554. 1376.

To *Charles* ſucceeded his ſon *Wenceſlaus* in the Empire: when he was baptized he fouled the water with his dung, and ſo he did the Altar two years after when he was crowned King; this preſaged his foul and vicious life, for he was notorious in drunkenneſs, tyranny, cowardiſe, and letchery: In his time moſt Cities were infeſted with ſeditions, and the high-way with robbers, whilſt he lay wallowing in luſt and pleaſures; nor durſt any man admoniſh him, he was ſo cruel, that he ſpared not to murther them at his table; he carried about a Hangman with him, whom he called Goſſip, becauſe he chriſtened his childe; many times he would make him light from his horſe in the high-way, and murther ſome whom he met, when he had a minde to it: He was ſo offended with his wife the daughter of *Albert* of *Holland*, that becauſe ſhe reproved him for his whoredomes, he drowned her Confeſſor for that he refuſed to diſcover her ſins ſhe had confeſſed; and then he ſet his Maſtif-dog which he kept and fed in his chamber, upon her, and murthered her: He permitted many

An. Christi. thouſand *Jews* to be murthered in a tumult at *Prague*; for which cruelties that City was ſo viſited with the plague, that in one Pariſh in the ſpace of four months, there dyed three thouſand five hundred: about which time was found out by *Bertholdus Niger* a Monk, the diabolical art of ſhooting with Guns, worſe then the plague: The *Venetians* were the firſt that made uſe of them againſt the *Genuois*. The people being impatient of ſuch a Tyrant, notwithſtanding his ſtrong guards, which he was ſtil changing out of jealouſie and fear, ſeiſed upon him, and impriſoned him four months at *Prague*: at laſt, by much
1393. intreaty he was permitted by the Senate to bathe himſelf, and to waſh away the filth of his body; in the mean while having retired a little towards the bank of the River to cool himſelf, he ſpies a fiſherboat, into which he leaps, being naked, and his naked waſher, *Suſan* by name, with him, and ſo eſcapes to the new Tower on the River, where he is defended by his brother *John* Marqueſs of *Luſatia*, and *Procopius* the Moravian: but he was never a whit bettered by his impriſonment, for he made as much uſe of his Goſſip the Hangman as before, and was not aſhamed to uſe *Suſan* for his concubine; ſo that the people being enraged againſt him, ſent for his brother *Sigiſmund* who was now King of *Hungary*, his father in law being dead, and his Competitor *Charles* of *Naples* ſlain; but he was run ſo much in debt, that he was forced to mortgage the Marquiſat of *Brandeburg* to his Couſin-germans, *Jodocus* and *Procopius* Marquiſes of *Moravia*: this is that *Sigiſmund* whom *Bajazet* overthrew with the *French*; he upon the invitation of the *Bohemians*, enters the Country with an Army, ſeiſeth on his brother, and carrieth him to *Vienna* to *Albert* of *Auſtria*, notwithſtanding the oppoſition made by *John* his brother, and *Procopius* his Couſin-german: this *Albert* was ſon in law to *Sigiſmund*. *Ludovic* of *Auſtria* was ſlain by the *Switzers*.

Wenceſlaus willing to eſcape, promiſed great matters to a Fiſher-man, who uſed to bring the priſoners ſometimes ſmall Fiſhes, out of pity: this Fiſherman by the help of a long ſtring got him into his Boat, and brought him to *Vicegrad*, whence he got away in a Beggers habit to *Prague*, where having got within the Caſtle, cries out, He was the King, and wiſhed all Royaliſts to aſſiſt him; upon this, above twenty repaire to him, and ſeiſe upon the Governour, whom they put in irons: Then did *Wenceſlaus* force him to write Letters, and to ſeal them with his own Seal, inviting divers Magiſtrates into the Caſtle, who not dreaming of the Kings being there, were by his command apprehended and put to death: the Fiſherman was Knighted. Then to ſtrengthen himſelf, he marrieth with *Sophia* the daughter of *John* Duke of
1400. *Bavaria*: but the Electors perceiving that he grew rather worſe then better, did unanimouſly depoſe him from the Empire, having reigned two and twenty years after the death of his father *Charles*; he was fifty ſeven years old when he dyed, being taken with an Apoplexie at dinner, when news were brought him that the people were in Arms, had ſlain the Senate, and were now comming towards the Caſtle.

Among other wrongs done by him to the Empire, the ſelling away of the Principality of *Millan*, was not the leaſt; for whereas till now the Governours of *Millan* were the Emperours Lieutenants and Deputies, *John Galeacius* the Viſcount, for a ſum of money, is made Duke and abſolute Lord for him and his poſterity, and the Cap with the Scepter are ſent him from
1377. *Wenceſlaus*. Under his father *Charles* the Empire was weakned by great quarrels and wars between the Earles of *Wirtenberg*, and the Cities of *Suevia*: In the firſt combat three Earles, ſeventy two Knights, with divers Barons were ſlain by the Cities: but in the ſecond conflict the Cities upon the *Rhine*, and thoſe of *Suevia* who had joyned their forces, were defeated by the
1286. *Wirtenbergians* and *Bavarians*, but not without great loſſe on this ſide, for there were ſlain four Earls, ſixty Knights, and a multitude of common ſouldiers: the *Helvetians* had better ſucceſs againſt *Leopold* the third of *Auſtria*, whom in a

great

great battel they defeated and slew, so that the Princes were forced to yeeld to the *Switzers*. *An. Christi.*

The great quarrel between the *Venetians* and *Gennois* fell out upon this occasion. The two brothers *Andronicus* and *Manuel* strove for the Greek Empire; *Andronicus* the elder claimed it by right of primogeniture, *Manuel* the younger by his fathers last will, who bequeathed it to him: With *Andronicus* the *Gennois* sided, with *Manuel* the *Venetians*. The one bestows the Isle *Tenedos* on the *Gennois*, the other on the *Venetians*, who presently seised on it, lying in the mouth of the *Hellespont*, convenient for Trade. Upon this, Legats are sent from *Genua* to *Venice*, demanding restitution of the Island; the *Venetians* refused, affirming they had it of him who had most right to it: wherefore the *Gennois* sent a Fleet of ten Gallies under *Arnus Strupa* to *Tenedos*, which took some of the *Venetian* Ships and burned them, but could do no good upon the Fort, being strongly manned; therefore they went to infest the *Venetian* Islands in the *Ægæan* Sea; hereupon the *Venetians* rig out a Fleet, and the *Gennois* add ten Gallies more to their Fleet under *Lewis Fliscus*, who meeting the *Venetians*, fell unadvisedly with five of his Gallies upon them before the rest could come up; a cruel conflict ensues, in which many were killed on both sides; at last the five Genuoy Gallies were taken, the rest escaped save one which fell upon a rocke, and was sunke: The *Gennois* hearing of the overthrow, were solicitous for *Famangusta* in *Cyprus*, which they had taken from the King of that Island, fearing lest the *Venetians* would seise on it, or assist the King to recover it, therefore they send one of the Gallies that escaped thither with Arms and Men; the other three were committed to the charge of *Peter Picconus*, with command to repair to their other Fleet; with this *Peter* sails into the *Adriatic* sea, where he did much annoy the *Venetians*, who enter into a league with *Bernabos* Prince of *Millan*, knowing that he being a near neighbour to *Genua*, could much annoy them, and hinder provisions from them by land out of *Gallia*, and all commerce thence; they wisely also make a league with *Janus* King of *Cyprus*, angry with the *Gennois* for the losse of *Famangusta*: the *Gennois* being much troubled at this league of the *Venetians* with the *Millanois*, which would hinder all Trade with *Gallia*, *Cisalpina*, and besides force them to employ their men in Land-service, which they should send abroad to Sea; they resolve to make a league with *Henry* the *Emperour*, being offended with *Venice* for *Illiricum*, which they took from him: They also send Legats to the Patriarch of *Aquilæa*, from whom the *Venetians* had taken *Trioli*; and to *Francis Carraria* Prince of *Padua*, on whom *Venice* did still incroach.

The Legats of *Genua* complain to the Emperour of the wrongs done by the *Venetians* to the Empire; of their insolencies in maintaining the younger brother against the elder, and in seising upon *Tenedos*, and that their aim was to invade the Empire: *Henry* answers them, That the Turkish wars kept him off from punishing the *Venetians*, yet as soon as the season of the year permitted, he would either come or send an Army against hm. With this answer the *Gennois* were pleased; therefore they cause two and twenty great Ships to be built; and because the *Auriæ*, chiefly *Lambas* and *Pagnanus* had done good service heretofore against *Venice*; they pitch upon *Lucianus Auria*, whom they make Admiral of their Fleet, and call home all that had been proscribed or banished for robbing in the high-wayes. In the meane while, *Dominicus Fregosus* Governour of *Genua*, is removed by a contrary faction from his place, and *Nicolaus Goarcus* made Governour: shortly after, all the *Fregosan* family are banished the City; *Dominic Fregosus* and *Peter* imprisoned, but *Peter* escaped. The King of *Cyprus* who had lately married his daughter by the the *Venetians* means to *Bernabos* of *Millan*, attempted by the

help of five *Venetian* Gallies to take *Famagusta*, but the Garrison within had notice of the plot, and prevented it by their vigilancie. *Aruns Strupa* having returned with his ten Gallies from the *Ægean* Sea, *Lucianus Auria* is sent into the *Adriatic* with two and twenty Saile, which much annoyed the *Venetians*. In the interim, the Emperours Army enters into the Territory of *Frioli*; *Francis Carraria* besets *Tarvisium* with Horse and Foot, the Towne held out a while, but seeing no succour come from *Venice*, yeelded themselves to the Emperour, by the permission of *Francis*. The *Venetians*, upon this, began to despaire of their Townes in *Illiricum* and *Frioli*; but they were more solicitous after their Sea affaires; therefore having rigg'd out twenty Gallies fraighted with five hundred Souldiers, besides Mariners, under *Victor Pisanus*: *Lucianus* encounters with them near *Polla*; the fight continued long and doubtfull, the greatest slaughter was on the *Venetian* side, which so heartened *Lucian*, that he pull'd off his Helmet, hoping the victory had been got, and in the interim was shot through the head, and so dyed instantly: They that were next to him, for feare lest the Souldiers should be disheartned, or the Enemy encouraged, convey him aside, and place another in his Arms where he stood. *Victor* held out as long as he could, at length having lost fifteen Gallies, flyeth backe to *Venice* with the remainder of his Fleet.

The news of this victory wrought great joy in *Genua*, which was quickly quailed by the report of the Emperours death, to whom they appointed yearly supplications at the Altar of *John* the Evangelist in St. *Georges* Church, with yearly salaries out of the publike Treasure to his son and posterity. Then they make *Peter Auria* their Admiral, who repaires with one Galley onely to the Fleet in the *Adriatic*. The *Venetians* were much troubled for their losses, therefore they send to *Bernabos* to invade the *Gennois* by land, they might be forced to call home their Fleet out of the *Adriatic*. *Barnabos* raiseth an Army, invades the Territories of *Genua* with such celerity, that they plundered about the City before they had news of his comming; he seised also on divers Citizens, who were that time of the year in their Country houses. The City was in a great fear and uproar; *Nicolans* the governour fearing lest his adversaries would take occasion to thrust him out of his Principality, commands that none should take up Arms but those whom he trusted; and then having paid a great summe of money, easeth the State of the Enemy, and prevents sedition against himself: In the mean while the *Venetians* send nine Gallies to molest the coasts of *Genua*, which plundered some small Islands, and Sea-towns of the Enemy. The *Gennois* upon this rig out nine Gallies, because they would not call home their Fleet out of the *Adriatic*. The *Venetians* perceiving this, set sail presently to their Islands in the *Agæan* Sea; and the *Gennois* missing the Enemy, sail immediately to *Petrus Auria* in the *Adriatic*, so that now they make up thirty Gallies besides other vessels for carriage, by which *Venice* is shut up.

About a mile from *Venice* on the *Adriatic* shore, stands the Church of St. *Nicolas*, which fenced them with a strong wall, and a deep ditch; along the shore were divers forts: hither *Peter* came with his Fleet to straiten the Enemy; having landed his men, he falls on the wall before the Church, and with much losse gains it, and with it the Church. Then he comes to the Town called *Clodia Fossa*, at this day *Chiogia*, with his Fleet; *Francis* marched along the shore with his Land-forces. The *Venetians* had filled the Towne with hired Souldiers. *Peter* and *Francis* with all their Forces fall to storming of the Towne, which was strongly defended by the Souldiers, with much expence of blood on both sides; at last the Townes-men being wearied out, and over-powered with multitudes, delivered up the Town and Garrison.

The

The *Venetians* hearing of this loſs, and calling to mind the loſs of *Tarviſium*, and of their Fleets, the exhauſting of their Treaſure, the want of commerce and decay of trade, with the ſmall hopes they had in *Bernabos*, they ſend Letters to *Peter* in *Clodia*, to intreat for peace, alledging to him the inconſtancy of Fortune, the good that *Genua* ſhould get by this peace, and the glory that *Peter* had purchaſed to the *Gennois*, it making *Venice* ſue for peace, which had hitherto been ſo often victorious, and had never been forced in ſeven hundred yeares till now, to ſue for peace. *Peter* replies, that he was not ignorant either of the inconſtancie of Fortune, or of their ancient greatneſs, but that now they muſt conſider not what they have been, but what they are, and that the conquered muſt accept of ſuch a peace as pleaſeth the Conquerour to give; but the conditions were ſuch, that the Venetian Senate rejected them with ſcorne, preferring all extremities of warre to ſuch unjuſt conditions of peace; therefore they reſolve to ſend Legates to *Bernabos*, complaining of the miſeries they were driven to, and that they had no other hope left but in him, who by his Land-forces waſting the confines of *Genua*, might occaſion the calling home of their Fleet: So the *Romanes* by invading the *Carthaginians* drew *Halciar* out of *Sicily*, and *Annibal* out of *Italy*: Upon this *Bernabos* aſſures them, that he will not faile them in this their extremity, and therefore preſently hireth three thouſand horſemen, who had been high-way robbers, theſe ſuddenly make inroads upon the *Genuan* Territories, which ſo affrighted the Countrey-people, that ſome fled into the hills, ſome into the Cities; the *Gennois* preſently put themſelves in Armes, with a reſolution to aſſault theſe Robbers, which when they perceived, they reſolve to be gone, but ambuſhes are laid for them, and all by-wayes and Groves are intercepted, ſo that few of theſe Robbers eſcaped alive: In memory of this defeat an annual ſupplication is appointed at S. *Georges* Church. *An. Chriſti.*

In the mean while *Peter* ſhut up the Adriatick, ſo that *Venice* was in danger to be ſtarved for want of proviſion. *Manuel* the ſon of *Calciannes*, the *Venetians* friend, beſiegeth *Pera* the *Genuan* Colony by *Bizantium*; whereupon the *Gennois* ſend *Nicholaus Marcus* with three Gallies thither, but the ſiege was raiſed before they came; in the way *Nicholaus* meets with ſome *Greek* Gallies, and beats them. The *Venetians* underſtanding that the *Gennois* were careleſs and ſecure in *Clodia*, and that moſt of their Fleet were ſent abroad, they in the dead of the night go to *Clodia* in ſmal boats, and were ſcaling the walls, but were diſcovered by the claſhing of their armour, and ſo forced to return with ſome loſs. Upon the coming back of the Genuan Fleet to *Clodia*, one of their Gallies appproaching too neer Saint *Georges* Church, within halfe a mile of *Venice*, ſtuck faſt as the Sea ebbed, and was ſeiſed on by the Venetian Boats; they loſt alſo to the Venetians a great Ship richly laden, as ſhe was riding at Anchor neer *Rhodes*. The Venetians reſolve to try once more with *Genua*, for their lives and liberties; therefore privately they prepare a Fleet of three and thirty Gallies, within their Arſenal, with other Veſſels of burthen, intending if they could not maſter the enemy, to tranſport themſelves into *Candy* with their wealth and Families; for effecting of this work, becauſe the Treaſure was exhauſted, many private rich men cheerefully brought in their Gold and Silver to the Senate, for which piety they were made Senators. *Andrew Contarenus* then Duke of *Venice*, an expert Sea-man, with the greateſt part of the Senate, and four of the Nobility, arrive at *Clodia* in the night unexpectedly; the *Gennois* then had in the Harbor nine and twenty Gallies, the reſt were diſperſed in the *Adriatick*; the fight begins with exhortations, *Peter* wiſhing the

Gennois

An. Christi. *Gennois* to remember their former ſucceſſes. *Andrew* deſiring the *Venetians* to fight for their liberty, for their parents, wives, children and countrey: the skirmiſh was doubtful a great while; but the *Venetians* at laſt were worſted and forced to flie back to *Venice*: the *Gennois* ſuppoſing the enemy had been totally defeated and diſheartened, grew ſecure, and neglected to guard the Clodian Harbour; Upon this the *Venetians* finding that ſome Keels of their great Ships which the *Gennois* had burned, were ſunk in the mouth of the Harbour, reſolve to ſink ſome more filled with ſtones, in the ſame place, ſo that the Genuan Fleet could not get out: the *Venetians* having done this, they gave a great ſhout, at which the Genuans were amazed, not dreaming the Venetian Fleet had been ſo neer; therefore they get preſently on Ship-board, intending to fight the enemy; but as they were ſailing out of the Harbour, their Ships ſtuck on the ſunk veſſels, and could go no further; ſo they perceived their errour, of which they repented, but too late: thoſe in *Genua* not knowing of this ſtratagem in the *Adriatick*, had ſent thirteen more Gallies under *Math. Marrufius* to joyn with *Peter*, who finding his Fleet uſeleſs, that he could not get out, expoſeth his Forces on the ſhore, and made excurſions upon the enemies Territories; but as he was beſieging the Caſtle *Brondulum*, he was ſhot in the head, and ſo died; yet the Caſtle was taken by the *Gennois*, who underſtanding of their diſaſters in the *Adriatick*, were much grieved, knowing that their treaſury was exhauſted, and that the vigilant enemy would not reſt here; therefore they chooſe *Gaſper Spinola*, a brave man, for their Governour, who prepares to encounter the Venetians by land.

Venice having loſt almoſt three years the poſſeſſion of the upper Sea, which now they had recovered, reſolve to beſiege *Clodia*, being furthered by the Plebeians, and women, who brought in their Plate and Jewels; their Army ſits down between *Brondulum* and *Clodia*, to hinder all proviſion from the Clodians. *Spinola* who was now come to *Clodia*, fearing the loſs of *Brondulum*, made a bridge to relieve it, and perceiving the enemy advancing towards him, exhorts his Souldiers to be couragious, a bloody battel enſueth, in which the Genuans being defeated, flie diſorderly back to *Clodia*; in this flight many were drowned, the Bridge which they had lately made breaking under them with their weight. The *Venetians* having thus defeated the enemy, fall to the ſiege of *Brondulum*, which preſently yielded; then they beſiege *Clodia* by Sea and Land: The *Gennois* were much diſheartened, having no Land-Army, nor any by Sea, but their thirteen Gallies under *Marrufius*, who durſt not come neer to *Clodia*, for fear of the Venetian Fleet; and ſuſpecting that *Bernabos* with an Army would invade their Countrey, they build a Tower five miles off from the City in a narrow paſſage, to keep off *Bernabos*. *Marrufus* meets at *Sipontum* ſix Venetian Gallies, and twelve Ships of burthen, theſe he ſets upon and burnes, and takes the Admirall *Thadæus*, whom he ſends priſoner to *Genua*, and makes his way through fourty Venetian Gallies. *Janiſius* with five Gallies is ſent from *Genua* to joyne with *Matthew*, but they could not get to *Clodia*, by reaſon of the enemies Fleet; in the interim *Bernabos* had ſent ſome Troops of horſe to plunder the *Gennois* Countrey, but they were beat back with loſs.

1380. The Clodians having now ſuſtained ſix moneths ſiege, and being forced for want of food to eat dogs and cats, and finding all paſſages for their reliefe ſhut up by Sea and land, deliver up the Town to the Venetians, who ſent the chiefe priſoners to *Venice*; the *Gennois* were known from others by pronouncing *crapa* inſtead of *capra*, and were detained; the reſt were ſet free. After this the Venetians take in *Laurentum*, *Juſtinopolis*, *Pola*,

Pola, with other Towns and Caſtles they had loſt. The *Gennois* perceiving that they were all bent upon their Land-ſervice, and neglected the Sea, rig out thirteen new Gallies, appointing no Admiral, but that each Captain ſhould be Admiral by turns for ſome dayes. Theſe are commanded into the Adriatick to joyn with *Matthew*; they much annoyed the *Venetians*. But *Nicolaus Goarcus* Prince of *Genua*, underſtanding that *Peter Fregoſus* his enemy, who had eſcaped out of priſon, had raiſed Forces and joyned himſelf with *Bernabos* againſt him and the State, ſends for *Spinula* and *Marulus* to come home with ſome part of their Fleet: Theſe having ſet their Forces on ſhore, *Peter* with his Companies run away. After this, the *Venetians* by land, the *Gennois* by ſea, do much annoy each other. Vpon this, *Amatus* the Prince of *Savoy* endeavours to reconcile theſe two States; to this purpoſe Ambaſſadors are ſent to him from both, to whom the Prince makes a ſpeech in commendation of peace and concord, of the miſchief of war, and of the vanity in ſtriving for a barren Iſland with the expence of ſo much blood and treaſure. At laſt it was agreed that both States ſhould renounce their claim to the Iſle *Tenedos*, ſeeing there could be no peace ſo long as either of them poſſeſſed it; The Biſhop of *Aquileia* was to enjoy his right in *Friuli*: ſo the peace is concluded, the fourth year of this war. The Genuan Fleet is called home from the *Adriatick*: The Venetians ſend to the governour of *Tenedos*, to come away with his garriſon, and to ſlight the caſtle; which he refuſing to doe, the *Gennois* were permitted to ſtorm the caſtle, and to demoliſh it. *An. Chriſti.*

CHAP. VIII.

1. *The lives of the* Popes, *from the year* 1305. *till* 1389. 2. *The hiſtory of* Holland *and the next Provinces, from the year* 1298. *till* 1404. *The hiſtory of* Savoy, *from the beginning till the year* 1397.

WE will now ſpeak a little of the Popes of theſe times. To *Boniface* the 8. ſucceeded *Benedict* 10. ſome ſay 11. he ſate eight moneths and ſeventeen dayes; He excommunicated all thoſe who had a hand in the death of his Predeceſſor; he reconciled *James* and *Peter de Colona* (whom his Predeceſſor had degraded from their Cardinalſhip) to the Church again; he abſolved alſo the French king, whom *Boniface* had excommunicated, and his kingdome from the interdict. About this time *Ottoman* laid the foundation of the Turkiſh Empire; which Nation had been now five hundred years in *Aſia*, but without a Monarchy till now. About the ſame time alſo, *Flavius Melfenſis* in the Kingdome of *Naples*, found out the uſe of the Load-ſtone, and Mariners Compaſſe. To *Benedict* ſuccceded *Clemens* the fifth, of *Burdeaux*; he ſate eight years and ten moneths; he had been Archbiſhop of *Burdeaux*: This was he that tranſlated his ſeat to *Avenion*, where his ſucceſſors continued ſeventy years, till *Gregory* the 11. Jt was at his Coronation, that the wall fell down, which killed the Duke of *Britain* with many others; the Popes Crown fell from his head, by which he loſt a Carbuncle worth 6000 Florens. He made 26 Cardinals, among which were *James* and *Peter de Colona*, whom *Boniface* had degraded. He confirmed the King of *Arragon* in the kingdome of *Sardinia*. In the Councel of *Lions* (which was the 15 gen. Councel) he condemned the *Begards* & *Beguins*, who denyed the Popes power, and held that man might be more perfect in this life then Chriſt was, and that one may be without ſin. He aboliſhed the *Templars*, who had ſtood 144 years: in his time *Philip*

1305.

1312.

An. Christi. *Philip* the Fair banished the Jewes out of *France*; 7. years after *Lewis Utinus* received them again. *Rhodes* is taken after 4. years siege from the Turk. The painted Horse of *Constantinople*, to the great terrour of the people, neighed twice in one night. *John* King of *Armenia* left his Kingdom to his brother, and became a Minorite. *Clemens* confirms the Universitie of *Orleans*, which *Philip* erected. To *Clement* succeed *John* the 22. who sate nineteen years and four moneths; he erected the Arch-bishoprick of *Toledo*, under whom he appointed six Suffragans: He set up in *Portugal* a new Order of Knights, and also in *Algarbia*, called the Knights of Jesus Christ, on whom the Templars estates there were be-
1319. stowed, to resist the *Sarazens*: He set out the Constitutions called *Extravagantes*: He appointed the *Ave-Mary* Bel to be rung three times a day, towards the evening: He maintained that the departed souls rested in certain receptacles, in which they had not the vision of God, till the Resurrection; this opinion he retracted upon a Decree of the Facultie of *Paris*: He canonized *Thomas Aquinas*: He confirmed Burgundian Colledge in *Paris*, erected by *Joan* wife to *Philip*, the fifth daughter to the Earl of *Burgundy*: In his time *Alphonsus* the eleventh king of *Spain*, by the assistance of *Alphonsus* the fourth king of *Portugal*, his father-in-law, overthrew the king of *Morocco*, and five other barbarous Princes, besides 450000 Sarazens, with the loss of 20 Christians onely. The Plesiean Colledge at *Paris* is erected by *Godfrey Plessy*. The Earl of *Burbon* is made a Duke. *Uladislaus* receiveth the Crown at *Cracovia* from the Pope, whose predecessors, for the murther of *Stanilaus*, had lost it. Against this Pope was set up *Nicholaus* the fifth, by *Ludovic* the Emperour, who having sate three yeares and three moneths, died in prison at *Avenion*.

1335. To *John* succeeded in the Popedome *Benedict* the eleventh or twelfth; he sate seven years three moneths: He founded the Colledge and Temple of the Bernardines at *Paris*; he set out a Decretal, thwarting his Predecessors opinion concerning the departed souls; In his time two other Colledges were built at *Paris*, to wit, the Colledge of *Eduen* by *Bertrandus* Bishop of *Edua*, and the Colledge of *Turon* by *Burgolus* Archbishop of *Turon*. The Sultan of *Egypt*
1342. committed the custody of Christs Sepulchre in *Jerusalem* to eight Franciscan Friars. To *Benedict* succeeded *Clemens* the sixth, who sate ten years six months: He sent into *Germany* to have war proclaimed against the Turks, promising indulgences to all that should contribute towards that war, and besides, liberty to eat eggs and milk upon all fasting dayes, except Lent; this priviledge was procured by the Bishops of *Trevers* and *Colen*, to their Dioces; but because the Bishop of *Mentz* refused to give aide, his Dioces was denied this priviledge, so that to this time they eat no eggs on fasting dayes. *Clemens* reduced the Jubilee to each fiftieth year, and abolished the Whippers: In his time the Delphinat of *Venna* is sold to *Phil. Valois* for 40000 Crowns by Prince *Humbert* who became a Dominican, upon this condition, that the French kings eldest son should be called the *Delphin*, and that *Humbert* for his life should be allowed yearly 10000. Florens. About this time in *France* was instituted the knighthood of the Star, and in *England* the knighthood of the Garter. This *Clemens* was a great enemy to *Ludovic* the Emperor. To him succeeded *Inno-*
1352. *cent* the sixth, who sate nine years eight moneths; he reconciled the Kings of *France* and *England*: he ratifies the Universitie and Archbishopriek of *Prague* in *Bohemia*, erected by *Charles* the fourth. About this time *John Wickliff* began to broach his opinions in *England*.

1365. To *Innocent* succeeded *Urban* the fifth, who sate eight years four moneths; this Pope consecrated *Marans* the Nestorian Patriarch, who came purposely from *Mosul* or *Seleucia*, where the Patriarchs seat is, to be consecrated at *Rome*. He confirmed the Order of Saint *Briget*. At this time *John* the French king invaded *Burgundy*, and annexed it to *France*, which *Charles* of *Navar* claimed as his inheritance; this *Charles* the fifth afterward bestowed it on his brother

Philip

Philip the Bold. This Pope confirmed the Order of *Mount-Olivet*. To him succeeded *Gregory* the eleventh, who sate seven years two moneths; he brought back his Chair from *Avenion* to *Rome*, upon the revolting of his Towns in *Italy*. *Charles* the wise about this time ordained, that the sons and heirs of the French Kings, should be crowned and consecrated at fourteen years of age. *John Galleacius* having bought the Dukedome of *Millan* from *Wenceslaus*, took away *Verona* and *Vincentia* from the *Scaligers*; *Padua*, *Tarvisium*, and other Towns from the *Carrarians*, and subdued *Trent*, *Perusium*, and other places; he defeated also the *Florentines*, with their Auxiliaries the French. The Polanders for 900. years, even till the death of *Casimir* the Great, had enjoyed their own Kings and Princes, that is till the year 1370. except *Wenceslaus* the *Bohemian*; but now *Casimir* dying without issue male, *Ludovic* the *Hungarian*, and his son-in-law *Vladislaus Jagello* the *Lituanian* obtained that Crown, which his posterity enjoy till this day. After this *Gregory* had returned into *Italy*, there arose a great Schisme in the Church, for the *Italians* chose an Italian Pope, to wit, *Urban*; the French chose a Frenchman, *Clement* the seventh, who betook himself to *Avenion*; this schisme lasted 36. years, even till the Councel of *Constance*. To *Clement* succeeded *Benedict* the 13. of *Arragon*, who sate in *Avenion*. About thirty years after *Urban* the *Italian* Cardinal chose *Boniface* the ninth, *Innocent* the seventh, *Gregory* the twelfth; *France*, *Spain*, *England* and *Scotland* followed the French Pope, *Italy* and other places the Italian.

An. Christi. 1371. 1378.

To *Gregory* succeeded *Urban* the sixth a Neapolitane, who sate eleven years, he appointed the Feast of the Visitation of our Lady; In his time *Jagello* Prince of *Lituania*, after the death of *Ludovic* King of *Hungary* and *Polonia*, whose daughter he married; he imbraceth Christianity, and is crowned King of *Poland* in *Cracovia*, and is named *Vladislaus*; his Countrey *Lituania* was the last in *Europe* that received Christianity. Great contestation arose between *John* the first King of *Castile* and *Legian* who had married the daughter of *Ferdinand* King of *Portugal*, and *John* the bastard of this *Ferdinand*, about the Crown of *Portugal*; but *John* the Bastard in the end carried it, and of a Monk became a King. This Pope allowed and confirmed the Monkish Order of Jesuites, so called for often using the Name of JESUS. *John Columbanus* and *Francis Vincentius* of *Sena* were the first Authors of this Order, they wore a white coat, girt with a leather girdle, and a cloak of fine wooll over their coat; they went bare-footed, only they used wooden soles. *Charles* the sixth of *France* reduced the many Lillies in his Armes to three: In his minority the Clergy lost their Tithes, which were employed upon the wars. The University of *Cracovia* is instituted by King *Jagello*, and confirmed by the Pope. Professors were brought from *Prague*, they were maintained out of the Customes and Tole of Salt. Two Colledges were erected, one for Divines and Philosophers, the other for Lawyers and Physicians. To *Urban* succeeded *Boniface* the 9. fourteen years eleven moneths; this Pope injoyned the Anuates, or one years fruits of Benefices, to be paid into the Apostolical Treasure towards the wars against the Infidels. About this time *Emanuel Chrysoloras*, by the Popes allowance, brought back into *Italy* the Greek Tongue, which had been banished thence 700. years. The University of *Erfurd* is erected, and four Colledges more at *Paris*. At *Avenion* to *Clement* the 7. succeeded *Benedict* the 13. Antipope, who was deposed by the Synod of *Paris*.

1389.

We said before, that to *John* the fourth of *Holland* succeeded *John* the *Hanonian*, who descended from King *William* by his sister; this *Hanonian* was opposed by *John Renessius* heretofore condemned for Treason; he drew to his side most of the Nobility, and seised upon *Walachria*; the controversie is referred to *Charles* the French King, by the Earle of *Renessius*; but he perceiving *Charles* inclined to the Earl, appeals to *Albert* the Emperour, pretending that *Holland* did now fall to the Empire, the Earles Family having

An. Christi. failed; Upon this *Albert* raiseth an Army, whom the Earl meets with his Forces; when they were ready to fight, the Bishop of *Colen* interceded, and a peace concluded, conditionally that the Earl should hold *Holland* in fee of the Empire; so *Renessius* his hopes were frustrated, and commanded to forbear medling with *Zeland*; yet he raised some troubles afterward in *Holland*, but he was defeated and driven into *Brabant*. After this the Earl had wars with the Bishop of *Utricht*, in which the Bishop was killed, and another substituted in his place. At last the Earle desirous to live quiet, bestowed *Holland* upon his eldest son, and *Zeland* upon *William*, and so went back to *Hanonia* or *Nervia*, but his tranquility was interrupted by the wars of *Flanders* with *Philip* of *France*; for the Earl of *Artois*, son-in-law to this *Hanonian*, had involved himself in this war, in which he lost his life. The Flandrians having defeated the French, invaded *Hanonia*, because it sided with the French; whereupon *Holland*, to help the *Hanonian*, and to call back the Flandrian Forces thence, falls upon *Flanders*: under the conduct of *William*, the Flandrians in the interim invaded *Walachria*, *William* is forced to encounter them; but his success failed, for he was defeated, and hardly escaped to *Middleburgh*, which he was also forced to quit to the *Fleming*, who had now got all *Walachria*, onely *Zirizea* remained, which was a shelter for *William*; this Town held out a siege, and at last with a few resolute Souldiers slew and drowned 1500. of the enemies. *Guy* of *Flanders* upon this resolved to invade *Holland*, and first he defeats the Battavian Army; then takes in all the Towns of *North-Holland*, except *Harlem*. The Duke of *Brabant* claimes title to *South-Holland*, which submits to his Forces, except *Dort*; this Town not onely held out against him, but at length, with incredible success, drove him quite out of *Holland*. *Guy* returnes into *Zeland*, besiegeth again *Zirizea*, which stoutly resisted, though much oppressed by the enemy without, and famine within. A French Fleet is sent to joyn with the *Zelanders* against the *Flemings*; Four of the French Ships stuck upon the shelves, which the enemy intended to burn with some fire-ships; but the wind turning about, drove the fire upon the enemy; a great fight ensued, in which the Flandrians were defeated, and *Guy* carried prisoner into *France*: so *Zirizea* and all *Zeland* are now at liberty. *Renessius* the prime incendiary, who had fled to *Utricht*, not daring to trust the Town, was making an escape by boat, which in the River by the weight of the passengers was sunk, and so they were all drowned. *Hannonius* hearing of the great success of his son, fell sick with sudden joy, and died.

After this *Robert* Earle of *Flanders* intended to renew the warre with *Holland*, but is reconciled by the mediation of friends. About this time it rained for ten moneths together, upon which followed a general Plague and Famine.

William after this had some controversie with *Utricht* upon the death of *Guy* the Bishop, who held some Lands belonging to *Holland*; he joyned himself afterward to *Ludovic* the Emperour, against *Frederick* the Austrian, and then forces the rebellious Frislanders to pay tribute to *Holland*. At last this
1337. Earle died, and was buried in *Valenciens*. He was so just, that he put to death the Governour of *South-Holland*, for taking a Cow from a Countrey-man; this was *William* the third.

To him succeeded *William* the 4. he married the D. of *Brabants* daughter; by whom he had no children; he assisted *Edw.* of *England* against the French, the Borussians against *Casimir* of *Poland*, and the *Spaniard* against the Sarazens; he visited the Holy-Land; to him was offered the Empire, when *Ludovic* was cast out by the Pope, which he refused to accept; in his wars against *Utricht* he received a wound in the foot; and as he was fighting against the *Frislanders*, he was slain, and his head cut off in disgrace, and his whole Army defeated; he being dead without issue, his sister *Margaret*, wife to *Ludovic* the

the Emperour ſucceeded, who having ruled that Province one year returns to her husband *Ludovic*, and commits the care of the State to her ſon *William* of *Bavaria*, conditionally that he ſhould pay yearly to her 10000 Scutati; about which time *Utricht* and *Holland* fell out, and the *Hollanders* were beat; but by means of the Duke of *Brabant* and Earl of *Cleve*, the Biſhop was forced to make peace with *Holland*. About this time *Margaret* pretending that her ſon did not keep his Articles, demands her Earldome again, which he upon this forſook, to the great diſcontent of *Holland*, for they loved him better then the Mother: hereupon a Civil war ariſeth between thoſe who favoured the ſon, and them who adhered to the mother: *Leiden*, *Amſterdam*, and moſt of the Cities held with *William*, King *Edward* of *England* aſſiſted *Margaret*; there enſued a cruel Sea-fight between the *Brill* and *Graveſend* in the mouth of the *Moſa*. At laſt it was agreed upon, that *Margaret* ſhould have *Hanonia*, and *VVilliam* the reſt, who married with the Duke of *Lancaſters* daughter, of whom he had no children: The Biſhop of *Utricht* and he had wars, after which he fell mad, and killed one *Gerard* a Nobleman in his fury, wherefore he is impriſoned, and ſtrife aroſe about the Government of the State; ſome ſtanding for *Williams* wife, others for *Albert* his brother, who upon this is ſent for; the old civil quarrel burſts out again, which not without much blood and trouble, was appeaſed by *Albert*, who was Protector of *Holland* 19 years; at laſt *William* being dead, *Albert* ſucceeded.

An. Chriſti.

1351.

1377.

Earle *Albert* having buried his former wife, marrieth with *Margaret* the daughter of *Adolphus* of *Clive*, of whom he had no children; he doted upon *Alitha* a Strumpet, who was killed by the conſent of the Nobility; theſe the Earle threatned with death; the Earls ſonne interceding for them, was forced to flie into *France* from his fathers wrath; but *John* of *Bavaria* obtained pardon for them all. At length *Albert* died, and was buried at the *Hague*.

1404.

Savoy or *Sabandia*, of old *Allobroges*, from a King of that name, was in the *Romanes* time a Kingdome, whoſe king *Bitulto* was taken by *Fab. Max.* After the *Romanes*, the *Burgundians* obtained this kingdome, and was a part of *Gallia Narbonenſis*, and of the Kings of *Arles*; it was a member of the Empire till the year 999. when *Berald* of *Saxony*, brother to *Otho* the third, for killing *Mary* his Uncles wanton wife, fled from *Germany*, and ſeated himſelf here in the City *Morienna*, to whom ſucceeded his ſonne *Humbert* firſt Earle of this City, which title he obtained from *Conradus*, ſome ſay *Henry* the ſecond Emperour, becauſe his father *Berald* had recovered it with the kingdome of *Arles* to the Dukedome of *Burgundy* from his enemies, and had made the way through the *Alpes*, clear from Theeves and Robbers; he married the daughter of the Marqueſs of *Seguſia*, by which he with his wife became his Heirs. He died at fifty years of age, to whom ſucceeded his ſon *Amadeus*. *Humbert* was buried in S. *Johns* Church of *Morienna*, which he had beautified and inriched.

To *Humbert* ſucceeded his Sonne *Amadeus* Earle of *Maurienna*, and Marqueſs of *Suſa*; he was called *Candatus* by *Henry* the Third, Emperour, becauſe of his long Traine or Taile of young Gentlemen that alwayes followed him. He aſſiſted *William* Earle of *Burgundy* againſt the Prince of *Loraine*. After he had given good proofe of his valour in that war, he died, and is buried with his Father. To him ſucceeded *Humbert* the ſecond, who having ſubdued the petty King of *Brianconium*, that tyrannized over his Subjects and Neighbours: he went againſt the Sarazens, and in the Holy-Land did good ſervice in aſſiſting *Godfrey* of *Bulloign*; he contracted in his long journey, a diſeaſe, which at length killed him. In his time *Bruno* having drawn many ſchollers with him out of *Paris*, retired into a deſart neer *Gratianopolis* in *Narbon*, and there inſtituted the *Carthuſian* Order.

1080.

An. Christi. To *Humbert* succeeded his son *Amadeus* the second: for his valour and good service to the Empire, he is made by *Henry* the fifth Emperour, Earle of *Savoy*, which was held in fee of the Empire, of old it depended upon *Burgundy*; but when this was a part of the Empire, *Savoy* was governed by the Emperours officers, who abusing their power in oppressing the people, were put out, and this *Amadeus* made Earle. He subdued the Earle of *Geneva*, who out of spleen, because *Amadeus* would not marry his daughter, invaded his Territories with a great Army, which was defeated, and the *Genevan* himself killed. He had quarrels with *Lewis* the Grosse of *France*, which were taken up by St. *Bernard*: Afterward he went against the *Sarazens* in *Asia*, with the same *Lewis*, and *Conradus* the third, Emperour; but in his return home he died in *Cyprus*. He
1148. erected two Abbies.

To him succeeded his son *Humbert* the third, who so grieved for the death of his wife the Earle of *Flanders* daughter, that he could receive no comfort, till by the advice of the Bishop of *Geneva*, he went to two holy men who had retired themselves from the world, and professed a strict kinde of life, near the lake *Lemannus*; from these he received so much comfort, that in memory thereof, he erected a Monastery in the same place, called *Altacomba*, which he richly endowed, and furnished it with twenty Monks taken out of the *Cistercien* Abbey; there did the Earle himself live a monastical life with these Monks for one years space, and then returned to his government. By the earnest intreaty of his people, he was induced to marry again; his second wife dyed, and his daughter he had of her, which so renewed his grief, that he retired privately to his former course of life in a solitary place near the same
1193. lake, where he founded an Abbey to the *Virgin-Mary*, and having placed certain Monks there, resolves to live and die with them; but that he was again overcome with the importunate requests of his people, beseeching him to return to his government, and to marry again for procreations sake: of this third wife he had a son called *Thomas*, whereat he was so glad, that to testifie his gratitude to the blessed Virgin, he founds a Priory at the entry of the same lake to her, and to St. *Mauritius* the Martyr, and filled it with Monks out of the Society of St. *Peter* of *Clunie*. At last this devout Earle, after his return from *Ptolemais* with *Philip Augustus*, fell into a lingering disease, and then died: He was in-
1201. terred in the Monastery of *Altacomba* which he built to the Virgin. To him his son *Thomas* succeeded, being yet a childe.

The Earle of *Burgundy*, Uncle to this *Thomas*, undertook his tuition, which he performed faithfully, keeping off all the storms which use to fall upon States in the Princes minority. *Thomas* being now of years, suppresseth the forces of *Guy* Earle of *Geneva*, him he takes prisoner with his daughter, whom he was conveying to *Philip Augustus* the *French* King to be married; but the Maid was so in love with *Thomas*, that she married him against her fathers consent, therefore *Thomas* would not set *Guy* at liberty, because he refused to give his consent, till he had made the Earldome of *Geneva* a Fee-farm to *Savoy*. After *Thomas* had returned from his expedition against the *Albigenses*, whose doctrine was much spread through *Narbon*, he joyned the Principality of *Piemont* (which was fallen into divers factions for want of a successor, the Princes issue being extinct) to his Earledome of *Savoy*. In *Piemont* he built many Castles to keep the Country in obedience, and eased them of their heavy Taxes, and so prevented all occasions of rebellion. He subdued also the Marquess of *Montsferrat*, and the *Astenses*, who were confederate with *Piemont*. At last grieving for being forced to side with *Frederic* 2. Emperor against the
1233. Pope, fell sick, and died.

To *Thomas* succeeded his son *Amadeus* the third: he took divers places in *Lombardy* upon the civil quarrels of that people, and killed the governour for imprisoning his Ambassadours as they were going from *Amadeus* to *Rome*. He restored the Country of *Valesia* to the Church of *Sedun*: At last, returning from

from *Lions*, after he had saluted the Pope, and had conveyed his sisters daughter to be married to *Charles* Saint *Lewis* his brother, he died, and was buried with his Ancestors in the Monastery of *Altacumba*: whose son *Boniface* succeeded; his fortune was not answerable to that of his Predecessors, for as he was fighting against the Marquess of *Montsferrat*, the *Taurini* and *Astenses*, he is taken prisoner and carried to *Taurinum*, with his chief companion and counseller the Marquesse of *Salusia*, where he was unworthily used, notwithstanding Pope *Alexander* 4. had laboured for his liberty, which would not be granted, and therefore the *Taurinians* are excommunicated; in the interim Earl *Boniface* with grief, some think with poison died, never having married; his body being ransomed with a great sum of mony, was buried in S. *Johns* of *Maurienna*. At this time fell out the captivity of Saint *Lewis* and his brothers. *An. Christi.* 1246. 1256.

Though *Boniface* had a sister, yet she was not permitted to succeed, because of her sex; therefore his uncle *Peter* is made Earl of *Savoy*. *Henry* the third of *England*, who had married *Elianor* his sisters daughter, made him Earle of *Richmond*. For his fortitude and successe, this *Peter* was called *Junior Charles* the Great. He purposed to be revenged of *Taurinum* for the death of *Boniface*, therefore layes a strait siege to it; which was relieved with victuals strangely; two hundred Boat-men, for a great summe of money, chained certain barrels full of provision, which they sank into the river *Po*, so artificially, that neither did they sink to the bottom, nor appeare above the water; behind them certain Divers swimmed under water, which thrust the Casks forward; and before there dived others, who pulled the Casks into the town: but at last this trick being either found out or suspected, a bridge of boats is made over the river, and great peeces of timber driven into the ground, that nothing could passe that way; so the Town having spent her provision, was forced to surrender. The first thing *Peter* did, was the punishing of those who had a hand in the death of *Boniface*; afterward this City of *Turin* was bestowed by the Emperor upon *Peter*.

After this, *Peter* subdued many of the neighbouring places, took in divers Forts and towns upon the Lake of *Geneva*, and dismissed all his prisoners without ransome, having sworn fealty to him. So *Peter* quieted all about him, and takes a journey for *England* to see Queen *Elianor* his sisters daughter. The Earl of *Geneva* takes occasion by *Peters* absence to stir a rebellion against him, and therefore seiseth upon some of his castles, giving out he was dead. Vpon the report of these doings, *Peter* procures 4000. English foot, which he transported by sea to *Savoy*; his coming was so sudden, that none knew of it till he was there: He first takes in the Castles that were revolted, and puts the Governors to death; then falls upon the Territories of *Geneva*; but by the mediation of the Earl of *Burgundy* a peace is concluded between the *Savoyan* and *Genevan*, so that the *Genevan* should pay a great summe of mony to the *Savoyan* for the charges he had been at in this war, and withall *Amadeus* should keep the Castles which he had regained. Then he builds a Town called *Margasus*, upon the bank of the Lake, and four Castles in the Territories of *Vienna*; afterward he makes a journy into *Germany* to visit *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal*, who had married *Elianors* sister Queen of *England*, and was in competition with *Alphonsus* for the Empire. *Peter* having sworn fealty to *Richard*, obtains of him full power and right over the *Taurini*, *Veragri*, *Salassii*, and *Vadenses*, for him and his posterity; but at length *Peter* being returned from *Germany* into *Savoy*, fell into a lingring malady, of which he dyed, having made his brother *Philip* (being then at *Rome*) his heire and successor, in confirmation of which he caused his Ring to be delivered to him, as *Alexander* did to *Perdiccas*; this custome continued ever after in *Savoy*. 1268.

Philip having received the ring of S. *Maurice*, (which had been given to *Peter* by a certain Abbot) succeeds in the Earldome; he was a Church-man, and

An. Christi. and held the Bishopricks of *Lions* and *Valentium* in *Commendam*; but this Church-life he forsook, and married. Those of *Berne* and *Friburgh*, having made their peace with the Emperor *Ralph* of *Habspurgh*, who had made war upon the *Switzers*, he takes some towns and forts from this *Philip*, who complained thereof to the Pope, hoping he would have dealt with the Emperor for satisfaction; but finding none, he fell sick with discontent, and so for ten yeares
1285. together pined away, and died. He divided his estate before he died, among his Brothers sons: to *Thomas* the eldest he bequeathed *Piedmont*; to *Lewis* the youngest, the Barony of *Vaulxium*; but to *Amadeus* the middlemost, whom he had bred and loved best, he gave *Savoy*; for confirmation of which, lest his brothers afterward should quarrel with him, he bestowed on him S. *Maurice* his Ring, and caused mony to be stamped with his name on it; he also by his last will ordered, that if either of the other two brothers should repine at this division as being unjust, he should forfeit his legacie. Before his death, he caused proclamation to be made through *Savoy* and *Burgundy*, that if he had done wrong to any man, or was indebted to him, he would make satisfaction to the full. He bestowed the richest furniture of his house upon the Abby of *Altacomba*, where he would be buried with his Ancestors, and increased the revenues thereof.

To *Philip* succeeded *Amadeus* 4. his brothers second son. He had long war with the Earl of *Geneva*, and *Humbert* the Delphin of *Vienna*: the Genevan laboured to incense *Thomas*, under pretext of wrong done him by *Amadeus* his younger brother, for accepting *Savoy*; but *Thomas* was so faithful, that he would not stir against his brother; wherefore the Delphin got him with some of his forces which he had raised in defence of his brother, into an ambush, and slew him: but fearing lest *Amadeus* would be revenged upon his Country for this slaughter, he invites the Genevan to fall with fire and sword upon the lands of *Lewis* the youngest brother, hoping by this to keep off the Savoyan forces from his own land. *Amadeus* seeing that one of his brothers was killed, and the lands of the other wasted, fals suddenly with an army upon the Genevan territories, seiseth on the bridge which joyned *Savoy* with his brothers country, and guards it; the Genevan being amazed at this sudden coming of *Amadeus*, presently flies; the Savoyan takes in some forts and castles, which he furnisheth with men and provision to keep off any more incursions into his brothers country; the territories on both sides are miserably wasted with fire and sword, and the inhabitants with plague and famine, till peace was
1298. concluded by the Popes Legats, and the English and Burgundian Ambassadors: but this peace lasted not long; for when the Delphin understood that the *Friburgers* whom the Savoyan assisted, were overthrown by the *Bernens*, he took occasion upon this to invade the Savoyan territories, against his oath and promise. *Amadeus* was now forced to take arms, therefore invades the enemies country, takes the town *Bellocomba*, and puts all that made resistance to the sword; then he marcheth to *Goncellinum* whither the Delphin had fled; to him *Amadeus* sends an Herald, accusing him of his perjury, and challenging him either singly into the field, or to meet him with his army; the Delphin returned him this answer, That he would not contend with him in strength of body, in which mans glory consisted not, for Buls were stronger then men, but he would encounter his Army with another, when time served. *Amadeus* perceiving the siege would be long, and his provisions failed, marched back, and in the way took in a Castle, and seised upon great store of cattel; but the Rear of his Army was cut off by the *Delphins* souldiers who lay in ambush, and much of the cattel were regained. The *Savoyan* upon this resolves to raise more forces, but by the means of *Charles* King of *Sicily* a peace is made between the *Savoyan*, the *Genevan*, and the *Delphin*. The city *Jurea* upon the confines of *Piedmont*, being long oppressed by the factions of *Guelphs* and *Gibellines*, at last chose *Amadeus* for their Protector, who reconciled the factions,

and

and abolished their names. But in the absence of *Amadeus*, the Earle of *Geneva* builds a Castle near the Town, much offensive to the *Savoyen*. He again on the other side builds a Castle to offend the *Genevan*, and so the peace is broken again. The *Delphin* also, who still sided with the *Genevan* against *Savoy*, draws away some of the *Savoyen* Tenants from their allegiance, chiefly *Mombelius* Lord of *Entrementium*. Hereupon *Amadeus* besiegeth *Entremontium*, and takes it and in it the Lord, who falling on his knees begged pardon, and had it. *An. Christi.*

Whilst *Amadeus* was employed in besieging *Entremontium*, the Earle of *Geneva* by the help of a faction in the City, got possession of it, which did properly belong to the Bishop of *Geneva*, not to the Earle; but in a short time the City declaring for the *Savoyen*, drove out the faction, and the Earle was fain to flie: Many were laid in irons, and their houses pulled down, whom *Amadeus* put to death as soon as he came, and took the Castle which held out against him, putting all within it to the sword, except the women: shortly after the Bishop was banished for plotting to bring in the Earle of *Geneva* again, and his Castle pulled down: Not long after the Earle of *Geneva* dieth, and so doth the *Delphin*, whose sons conspired to continue their fathers quarrel against the *Savoyen*, who hereupon sends his son *Edward* with a puissant Army against them; *Edward* obtains a glorious victory, and returns to his father with great joy: At length the Countries being wasted with long war, a peace is concluded, and the *Savoyens* daughter is married to *William* Earle of *Geneva*; but this peace lasted not above two years; for the *Delphin* perceiving that he could not perswade the *Genevan* to break with his father in law, labours by treachery to get the Town and Abbey of *Ambrunaya*, for that purpose deals secretly with three wicked Monks of that Abbey, born in *Delphiny*, to betray the place, which they did, by letting in through a backgate the *Delphins* forces; this being done, the three Monks seise on the Abbot in the Church-porch betimes in the morning as he was going to Masse, and hanged him from a high window, because he was alwayes averse from their wicked courses; the *Savoyen* hearing of this wicked act, sends a considerable Army thither, who suddenly seised on *Ambrunaya*, puts all to the sword that were for the *Delphin*, and sends the three Monks to the Ecclesiastick Magistrate to be punished. The *Delphin* upon this, takes by treachery from the *Savoyen* the Castle *Mirebellum*, which he strongly garrisons, and returns to *Delphiny*, when he heard that the *Savoyen* was upon his march with a great Army, who sits down before the strong Town of St. *German* in the *Delphinat*; but perceiving the place was well provided of all things to endure a long siege, he useth this stratagem: He riseth with his Army pretending to besiege *Languienum*; when those of St. *German* seeing the danger *Langienum* was in, sent out their chief provisions and forces to relieve it: Upon this, the *Savoyen* returns with his Army to S. *German*, which he takes with ease, being destitute of their aid, which could not get in to them, yet the Towns-men fought till they were almost all slain; the Castle also at last yeelded: then *Amadeus* besiegeth and taketh the Town *Amberievum*. The loss of these two places so grieved the *Delphin*, that shortly after he fell sick and died. About which time was the war between *Philip* of *France* and the *Flemings*; *Philip* to make himself so much the stronger, got the *Savoyen* and *Delphin* to resign both their Armies to him, which they did; and after a long war peace is concluded. *Amadeus* made his son *Edward* General of the *Savoy* forces. 1304.

This *Amadeus* for his good service at *Rhodes* was honoured with the title of *Great*, and a silver Crosse (the Arms of the Knights of S. *John* of *Jerusalem*) was added to his Arms. He instituted a Colledge for six little children in the Monastery of *Cluny*, who were to pray for the Earles of *Savoy*; because the Earle and his wife both dreamed at one time, that they saw six little children pray to God to send the Earl and his Countess issue which hitherto they wanted: This Colledge was called the *Holy Covent*. At last, *Amadeus*, as he

was

An. Christi. was going to *Avenion* to procure aid for his son in law, the Emperour of *Byzantium*, against the Turks, died, and was buried in *Altacomba*.

1323. *Edward* the ninth, Earle of *Savoy*, received the Ring, and succeeded to his father; he was a good Prince and Souldier; but so wasteful in his expences, that he was forced to raise heavy Taxes from his people; he picked a quarrel with *Foucignius* who married his sister *Mary*, and without any cause at all, made war upon him, in which his Army was defeated, and had almost been taken prisoner himself, but that he was rescued by the Lord of *Entremontium*, whose life he had saved heretofore, when he was taken by his father *Amadeus*. This same *Edward* interceded for his life the second time, where being Ambassadour for the *Delphin* at *Paris*, he killed in the Kings own presence the governour of his Palace, for which he had suffered, if *Edward*, being then present, had not begged his pardon.

1329. This *Edward* died with grief at *Paris*, for the ill success he had in his former war, and is buried in *Altacomba*.

Amadeus the fifth, brother to *Edward* being at *Avenion* with Pope *John* 22. is called home against his will, and invested in the Earldome by the Ring; *Edwards* daughter, by the *Salique* law, is put by; but her husband the Duke of *Britan* would not suffer her to give up her right till she received a great summe of money for it. The *Delphin* growing insolent for the victory he got a while ago over *Edward*, began now with fire and sword to waste the borders of *Savoy*. Hereupon *Amadeus*, though otherwise a peaceable Prince, is forced to take Arms in his subjects right, having first made a league with the Earl of *Geneva*; he therefore first sets upon the Castle *Monthousium*, which he took with great resolution and courage, for he was the first that scaled the walls, and leapt down thence upon a Plain, keeping off the Enemy till his forces came to his assistance: after this he built and took in other Castles. The *Delphin* to requite *Amadeus*, besiegeth the Castle *Perrieria* in *Savoy*; but as he was coming too near to view the works, is killed with an arrow; whereupon the Castle was the more fiercely assaulted, and at last surrendered, upon condition that they should have their lives; but the Articles were presently broken by the besiegers, who put all the besieged to death, for the losse of their Commander, having no regard of sexe or age: the Castle also is totally demolished. But when *Humbert* the *Delphins* brother succeeded, *Philip Valoise* makes a firm peace between *Savoy* and the *Delphinat*: So *Amadeus* gives himself totally to building, repairing, and enriching of Religious houses; he gathered together all his Ancesters bones which had been buried abroad, and laid them up in the Chappel of *Altacomba*. At last he died, having left a young

1342. son *Amadeus* nine years old.

Amadeus 6. succeeded, surnamed the *Green*, because he and his Court did wear usually green cloaths. Upon the death of *Robert* King of *Sicily*, the Principality of *Piedmont* fell to this *Amadeus*, and to *James* Prince of *Morea*. *Roberts* Neece being rejected by the *Salique* law. The first act *Amadeus* did, was the restoring of the Bishop of *Sednunm* to his place, being wrongfully thrust out by the giddy multitude. After this, new quarrels arise between him and the *Delphin*, because *Hugh* of *Geneva* had got the Baronry of *Geisium*, which was given by *Hugard* Lord thereof to *Amadeus* the fifth of *Savoy*. *Amadeus* the sixth sends to *Hugh* that he should come and do his homage for that Baronry; this he refused, saying, that he was bound to do his homage to the *Delphin*, not to him. Whereupon the *Savoyen* takes the Castle of *Florimontum* by storm, and shortly after the strong Town *Geisium*. *Hugh* of *Geneva* to requite this, takes some Forts in *Savoy*, and puts all to the Sword. Great slaughter and spoil is done on both sides, till the *Delphin* resigned his interest in the *Delphinat* to *Philip Valoise* the *French* King. Upon this, the limits of *Savoy*, and the *Delphinat* are so setled, that all occasion of future quarels are taken away. The river of *Guyerus* is made the bounder of their Territories: But no sooner had *Amadeus* disbanded his forces, when the Archbishop of *Millan* took occasion to lay

claim

claim to *Piemont*, therefore entertains the disbanded Souldiers, with a multitude of high-way men, whom he employed to invade *Piemont*; yet in this action he would not be seen himself. But the *Savoyen* quickly suppressed these Robbers, and hanged up *David* and *Robert* their Captains, with many others whom they took alive. After this he bought the Baronry of *Vaulxium*, and made war upon the *Prince* of *Morea*, for killing the Earls messenger sent to summon the Prince: He took divers Forts and Castles from this Prince, which afterward he restored, being reconciled to him, having lost *Baumens* and *Chalantine*, his two chief friends in this war. *An. Christi.*

This Earle instituted the order of the *Annunciada*, in memory of the Annunciation of our Lady: He ordained fourteen of the prime Nobibity to be of this Colledge, on each of whom he bestowed a golden Collar, with the Virgins effigies hanging at it; within the links of the Collar, are engraven these four letters, *F. E. R. T.* which was the Motto of *Amadeus* the Great, who took *Rhodes*; for the meaning is, *Fortitudo ejus Rhodum tenuit.* The annual solemnity is held on our Lady-day in the Castle of S. *Peter* in *Turin*: this example was followed by *Lewis* the eleventh of *France*, who instituted the order of S. *Michael*; *Philip* the governour of *Burgundy*, author of the order of the Golden-Fleece; and *Edward* the third of *England*, who ordained the order of the Garter. This Earl erected a Monastery of *Carthusians* to pray for the safety of this order of the Annunciation. After this, the Earl goeth against the Marques of *Saluzzes*, who had conspired with the Archbishop of *Millan* against him, whom having besieged, he forced him to come into his Pavilion in an humble way, with a napkin bound about his neck, and publikely to beg pardon, and to take again the oath of Allegiance. Afterward peace being concluded in *France*, the English souldiers going to help the Marques of *Montsferrat* against the Vicount of *Milan*, were forced to march through *Piemont*; at which the Earl being offended takes up Arms against them: the *English* upon this take many of his Forts, and besiege the Earl in *Lansa*; but upon the payment of two thousand and four hundred pounds, the *English* are content to leave off the siege, to restore the Forts and prisoners, and to march peaceably through the Country. After this he raiseth a great Army, and so did *Lewis* Duke of *Burbon* against *Peter* K. of *Castil*, who to please his whore *Mary*, had stifled his own wife *Blanca* sister to the Duke of *Burbon*, and to the wife of *Amadeus*: but hearing that *Peter* was killed by *Henry* his bastard brother, they alter their resolution from invading *Castile*, and intend to set upon the Despot of *Bulgania*, who under pretence of friendship had imprisoned *John Paleologus* Emperour of *Constantinople*; he transports his men to *Callipolis*, which *Amurathes* had invaded: the Barbarians resisted his landing a while, but at last were forced to give way. As soon as the Christian Army was landed, they had divers skirmishes with the *Turks* and *Bulgarians*, whom *Amadeus* defeated, and took in divers of their Forts; afterwards he besiegeth *Varna*, which caused the *Bulgarian* to set the Emperor at liberty, who with *Amadeus* were received into *Byzantium* with great joy: But the *Savoyen* disliking divers of the *Greek* Ceremonies in their Divine-service, urgeth the Emperour to unite the *Greek* Church with the *Latine*, to which he condescended; and to let the Earle see he was reall, he sends to *Pera*, where *Amadeus* was, the sons of his chief Nobility as hostages, and withall the Imperial Diadem, and shortly after he goeth himself to *Rome* for that purpose; but being denied by the Pope a few Gallies against *Amurathes* the *Turk*, he returnes home without any thing done in the union, which might then have been easily effected.

Whilst *Amadeus* was absent in *Constantinople*, *Barnabas* Viscount of *Millan*, with his brother *Galeacius* invade *Piemont*, to whom joyned the Marques of *Saluzzia*, and *Philip* son of *James*, Prince of *Morea*; Earl *Amadeus* hearing of this, was forced to leave off prosecuting the union of the *Greeks* and

An. Christi. *Latine* Churches, and repair with all speed to *Savoy*, at whose comming the Enemy retreats back to *Lombardy*; but the *Saluſsian*, and *Philip* of *Morea* staying too long behinde, were cut off by the *Savoyen*. After this, the Marqueſs of *Montsferrat* with the *Savoyen* help, overthrew the Viſcounts Army, which had taken ſome Towns from the Marqueſs, and beſieged *Aſta*; upon this defeat, the ſiege is raiſed. After this, *Amadeus* is employed by *Charles* the fourth, Emperour, Pope *Gregory* the eleventh, and *Joan* Queen of *Naples*, all whoſe lands were invaded by *Barnabo* of *Millan*, and his brother *Galeacius*: againſt theſe the Earle marcheth, takes *Coma*, and reſtores it to the Queen; then takes divers Towns from the Enemy, and forceth *Galeacius* to make his peace, which was granted conditionally he ſhould not help his brother, and ſo all the forces joyn together againſt *Barnabo*, who upon this haſteneth to *Millan*, fearing the Enemy would beſiege it, which indeed the *Savoyen* intended, had the Popes forces come in time, which were now upon their march, but could not joyn with *Amadeus*, becauſe *Barnabo* had opened the ſluces, and drowned all the paſſages; yet afterward *Amadeus* made a ſhift, and got with great difficulty to the Popes Army at *Bononia*. Theſe together plundered the Countries of *Placentia* and *Parma*, and were preparing to ſit down before *Placentia*; but *Amadeus* fell ſuddenly ſick, ſo that he was forced to be carried in a Litter to *Murina*; and upon this the Army diſſolved. Afterward *Amadeus* being recovered, and now in the Kingdome of *Naples* with an Army againſt Pope *Urban* the ſixth, in defence of *Lewis* of *Andes*, fell
1383 ſuddenly ſick again, with the Duke of *Andes*, and a multitude of ſouldiers and horſes that had drunk of a water which the Enemy had poyſoned, all theſe died: *Amadeus* his body is carried to *Altacomba*. It is reported that *Barnabo* had poyſoned, before this expedition, all the bread and wine in the Town of *Vicomercat*, whither he knew *Amadeus* was to come with his forces; but the treachery being found out by ſome that fell ſick upon the eating and drinking of that poyſoned ſtuffe, they were all cured by St. *Maurice* his ring dipt in vinegar; though this is not likely, yet not impoſſible.

Amadeus the ſeventh, ſon to the former, having received the ring, ſucceeds: he was now three and twenty years of age, and had already given good teſtimony of his valour in his fathers time, by taking in ſome Towns and Forts upon the River *Araris*; his dominions were enlarged by the Iſle of *Tenedos*, which was given to his father by the *Venetians* and *Genuois*, between whom he made peace, after they had quarrelled long for this Iſland, as we have ſaid; the City *Coma* alſo was beſtowed upon the ſame *Amadeus* the father, by legacy from the Queen of *Naples*. This young Earle made war, with good ſucceſs, upon the Marqueſs of *Montsferrat*, for cauſing ſome of the *Savoyen* ſubjects to rebel. He took *Sedun* with their Forts, and made them receive again their Biſhop, *Edward* the Prince of *Morea's* ſon, whom they had thruſt out: he defeated the Marqueſs of *Saluzes* forces which had invaded his Country; the Seigniority of *Nicea* choſe him for their Prince, and ſo did ſome other Princes thereabout. But after *Amadeus* was returned home, one day as he was hunting the Bore, he fell from his horſe, and ſorely wounded his thigh, which a Montebank out of *Africa*, who then waited on the Duke of
1397 *Burbon*, undertook to cure, but it's thought he poyſoned him, for ſo the Earl as he was dying confeſſed: the Phyſitian is apprehended and impriſoned, who having cleared himſelf, is baniſhed out of *Savoy*, *France*, *Burgundy* and *Germany*, into *England*. The Earl is buried in *Altacomba*.

An. Christi.

Chap. IX.

The French *Story from the year* 1313. *till* 1380. *interwoven with divers passages of* England, Flanders, Spain, Germany, Italy, *&c.*

IN *France*, to *Philip* the Fair succeeded his son *Lewis Hutin*, who had before this time succeeded to the Crown of *Navarre*, by the death of his mother; he caused *Enguerrand* great General of the *Finances*, for imposing divers Tributes on the people, to be hanged, and his image to be flung down from the Palace stairs where it stood. This King resolves to make an expedition into the Holy-Land, being enjoyned thereto by his father *Philip*, who had for that purpose sequestred the Clergies tythes; but before he could accomplish his design, he died in the second year of his reign, having left his Queen great with childe, his name was *John*, and lived not above eight daies: so *Lewis* had now onely one daughter *Joan*, by *Margaret* daughter to *Robert* Duke of *Burgundy*, but she could not succeed, because of the *Salique* Law, which saith, Let not women succeed in the *Salique* Land, which was meant of *France*, because *Ammian Marcellin* writes, that in his time there were a people in *France* called *Salies*; therefore though the Duke of *Burgundy* uncle to this Princess stood for her right a while, yet at last yeelded to the other Peers of *France*, and acknowledged *Philip le Long*, the deceased Kings brother, lawful heir, who was crowned without contradiction; he bestowed his eldest daughter on this *Odon* Duke of *Burgundy*, and with her the Country of *Burgundy*: his second he gave to *Lewis* Count *Roberts* son of *Flanders*, who in right of his mother was Count of *Nivern*: the third was espoused to the *Délphin* of *Vienna*: *Jane* the defunct Kings daughter, was married to *Lewis* Count of *Evreux*, who by her obtained the Kingdome of *Navarre*. 1313.

In the mean while, the Pope confirms the peace between *France* and *Flanders*, by which it is agreed that the Earle of *Flanders* should pay to the *French* a million of Crowns in twenty years by equal portions. The design for the Holy-war is hindred, by the debate that was between *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, and *Frederic* of *Austria*; the *Gibellins* that were banished out of *Genua* procure *Mark* son to *Matthew* chief of the *Gibellin* faction, and Vicar of the Empire to besiege *Genua*, which sent to the Pope for his protection: the Pope commands *Mark* to cease from molesting those who sought his protection; *Mark* refused to obey, whereupon he is declared an heretick, and an enemy to the Church, and so denounceth war against him; for effecting of which he reconciles King *Robert* with the King of *Arragon*, whom he makes to resigne *Rhege* to *Robert*, who thereupon presents himself before *Genua* with fifteen Gallies of his own, and ten of the Popes, but these could not make *Mark* raise the siege, till an Army was sent against *Millan*, which caused the *Millanois* return home to save their City: *Philip* also, son to *Charles* of *Valois*, and to King *Roberts* sister, marcheth with an Army into *Italy*, upon whose approach *Galeas* Viscount, and son to *Matthew*, proffers to submit himself to the *French* Kings Arbitrator, which this young Prince believing, returned with his forces into *France*, where he found the King dangerously sick, and a great mortality every where caused by the *Jews*, who poysoned the waters, partly hired by the *Turks* and *Saracens*, and partly to be revenged for their banishment under *Philip* the Fair; the *Jews* are apprehended and imprisoned, who that they might not fall into the Christians hands did hang one another in the prison; the last man being left alone thought to escape by a rope, but the rope brake, and he was found maimed, but the next day was hanged. The King about this time died without issue male. 1321.

Anno Christi *Charles* the Fair, *Philips* brother succeeded: He falls presently to execution of justice, being omitted by reason of the great mortality, and the short lives of the late Kings. He caused one *Jordain*, a kinsman of Pope *John*, to be hanged for murther. *Lewis* Count of *Nevers* is imprisoned for his presumptuous behaviour toward the King. One *Hugh* occasioneth great troubles in *France*, for building a Fort in *Guien* without the Kings leave, pretending it was *English* ground; At last, it was after much debate demolished by *Charles Valoise*, who with an Army defeated *Hugh*, and his *English* forces. This *Charles* was he who caused *Enguerrannum* his special friend to be hanged; for which fact afterward he grew so discontented, that he fell sick, and died; but before his death, he procured of the King leave to take down the corps from the Gibbet, and to bury it magnificently. In the mean while, *Charles* the Fair having reigned seven years, died, and left his wife great with childe: King *Edward* of *England*, son to *Philip* the Fairs daughter, sister to the last King, claimed title to the Regency, as being next of kin; but the *French* told him that he was too young to govern such a Kingdome, and that he had need to have a governour himself. *Philip* son to *Charles* of *Valoise* told him plainly, that *France* was not to be governed by women, and that it was unreasonable for a daugher of *France* married in *England* to claim that right, which was denied to her that was married to the *Burgundian*, which was alwaies accounted *French*; much was debated to and fro about this business: In the interim, the Queen Dowager brought to bed of a daughter; upon which, *Philip* of *Valoise* is declared King, and consecrated at *Rhemes*, and crowned at *S. Dennis*, thence he rides in great state to
1328. *Paris*, where he is received by the Nobility, City, Clergy and University, in great pomp; and a match is made between this new Kings youngest son *Philip*, Duke of *Orleans*, with *Blanch* the former Kings daughter lately born.

Philip being setled, resolves to make wars upon *Flanders*, for not paying the million of Crowns agreed upon; Earle *Lewis* sent his collectors to raise the money, but they were slighted, and he forced to flye, because of a fire that happened at *Turney* whilst he was there, the people supposing that he had set the Town on fire. The French King raiseth an Army and besiegeth *Cassel*, upon the borders where he *Flemings* had put a Garrison; but he could not either take the Town, or draw the besieged to fight, wherefore he falls with fire and sword upon the Country all about, hoping to draw the besieged out of their strong hold, but could not: At length the Souldiers returning with great booties to their Tents, began to make merry, and be careless; the *Flemings* seeing this, issue so suddenly out of the Town upon the Camp, that they had almost surprised the King; but the alarm being made, and the King on horse-back, the *French* fall furiously on the *Flemings*, routs them, and kills eighteen thousand; so *Cassel* is taken, sackt and burned, and Count *Lewis* is resetled in his Country, where the authors of the rebellion are put to death; *William Canute* one of the chiefest, was fled to the Duke of *Brabant*, but he was forced to deliver him up to the King, who caused his head to be cut off at *Paris*. In the Kings absence the Clergy incroached much upon the secular Courts, of which complaint was made to the King; but he favouring the Clergy was content to let them go on in their judicatures. Shortly after there met at *Amiens* four Kings, to wit, of *France*, of *England*, of *Bohemia*, and of *Majorca*: King *Edward* came to do homage for the Dutchie of *Guien*. The French King prepares for his expedition into the Holy-Land, therefore goeth to *Avenion* to consult with the Pope about it, and withall makes his son *John*, now fourteen years old, Duke of *Normandy* and Regent of *France*. Then he sends to the King of *England* to joyn with him in this holy expedition, but he found that he was otherwaies bent, and intended to invade *France*, wherefore the expedition into *Palestine* is laid aside.

Robert Earl of *Artois*, who had been hot for the *Salique* law, in the right of King

King *Philip* against the *English* Ambassadours, is now quite changed, and al- *Anno Christi.*
together for the *English* Title; whereupon to secure himself from *Philip's* indignation, conveys his chief wealth to *Bandoine*, then in the *English* possession, and repairs himself to King *Edward* in *England*, who had already made war upon *David* King of *Scotland*, whereby the French King is ingaged in honour to assist his friend and allie, and now open acts of hostility are committed by the French and English on each other both by Sea and Land; in the interim king *Philip* to strengthen himself the more, bestowes his daughter upon the young Duke of *Brabant*, who was aimed at by *William* of *Henault*, for one of his daughters, and drawes in all his ancient Confederates to joyne with him in this war; for this purpose he reconciles the Savoyans and Delphinats; there is also alliance made by marriage between *France* and *Bohemia*; and for fear left the the *Flemings* should side with the *English*, the Pope confirmes a solemn league between the *French* and *Flemings*, they swearing fidelity to *France*, which they promise to keep, or to forfeit a million of Crownes; peace also is made between *Arragon* and *Navar*, both kings engaging themselves to stand for *France*; but *Lewis* of *Bavaire* the Emperour takes part with king *Edward* against the French, because he thought the French king kept off the Pope from absolving him; *William* of *Henault* also was against the French, because he intercepted the Duke of *Brabant*, with whom he meant to marry his daughter; the Duke of *Guelders*, the Marques of *Juliers*, and Bishop of *Colen* were also enemies to *France*; but the Earl of *Flanders* stood firm to the French, he beheaded *Le Courtisien* a French Lord at *Gaunt*, for keeping correspondency with the *English*, upon which the Commons fell to mutiny, and killed some of the Earls Officers, and the Earl himself, pretending he was going to hunt, fled to *France*; the *English* in the mean time take some Townes from the French; these invade *England*, and plunder and burn *Southampton*: *Cambray* is summoned to surrender to king *Edward*, as Vicar or Lieutenant of the Empire, alledging that the City belonged to the Empire, not to *France*, but the French Garrison within refused to obey.

The French Army consisted of four Kings, to wit, of *France*, *Scotland*, *Bohemia*, and *Navar*; of six Dukes, among which were the Duke of *Britany* and *Lorain*, six and twenty Earls, four thousand Knights or Cavaliers, in all 100000 Souldiers; the *English* and *German* Camp consisted of 60000. which by the advice of *Robert* of *Artois* was raised from the siege of *Cambray*, because he thought such a gallant Army would do better service in the Field, then to lie idle a whole Summer before so strong a place. The Count of *Henault*, upon the borders of *France*, took his leave of King *Edward*, shewing that he waited on him so long as he was within the limits of the Empire, being the Emperors Lieutenant, but he would not enter into *France* to make war against his Uncle: The two Armies being within two leagues of each other, prepare to fight; the Challenge is sent by an Herald from the English, and entertained by the French; but king *Philip* is advised by *Robert* king of *Sicily*, and his wise Councel, not to fight with the English, and hazard *France* upon the fortune of a Battel; the Dutch being weary of the French delayes, began to think of returning home; King *Edward* gave them leave, and retires to *Flanders* with his Army, purposely to draw the *Flemings* from the French to his side, which they were unwilling to do, because of their engagement and promise; Upon this King *Edward* takes the title of *France* upon him, and weares the Lillies in his Colours, by this telling the *Flemings*, that they did not violate their oath in submitting to him, being both King of *France* and *England*, and so got the *Flemings* to side with him, for which they are excommunicated by the Pope. After this, King *Edward* went over to *England* to raise money, having left his Queen at *Gaunt* ready to lye in; in his absence, King *Philip* by his Neece the Empress, got the Emperour *Lewis* of *Bavaria* to renounce the *English*, and to take away from *Edward* the Lieutenantship of the Empire, because he had not

paid

Aubert paid the subsidie he promised to the Emperour; in the mean while the French and Flemings made daily excursions upon each others borders; the Earle of Salisbury before Aisle is taken prisoner, and carried to Paris, two hundred of his men being cut off by the French, who took the Towns of Escandeux and Thin.

1340. The French sets a Fleet of 380 saile to lie before the Sluce in Flanders, which now sided with the English: King Edward encounters this Fleet with another of lesser ships, but taller and better manned; a terrible skirmish ensues of six hours, in which were killed 30000 on both sides; at last the English got the victory: King Edward received a hurt in the ancle, which was shortly after cured; then having recruits from England and Germany, with the help of upper Flanders, he besiegeth Tournay, and Robert of Artois with 30000 men sits down before Saint Omer, in which the Duke of Burgundy was with a strong Garison, who sallied out upon the besiegers; Count Artois drew the Duke as far as he could from the Town, hoping to have surprized him, but the Duke fell with such fury on the Flemings, that he made them retreat disorderly, having killed 3000 on the place; the Count retreats to the Camp before Tournay; many sallies were made out of the Town, but at last they were put to that straight, that the French Army under King Philip was forced to encamp within three leagues of the English; in the night time Philip relieves the Town with 2000 horse, which made King Edward out of hope to gain that place; therefore upon the intreaty of the Countess of Henault, his wives mother, and sister to king Philip, he makes a Truce with the French for three years; the Flemings are absolved by the Pope; the prisoners set free on both sides; the Scotch King is carried home in French ships; the King of Bohemia stayes in France; the Duke of Britain dieth by the way homeward: the King of Navar raiseth an Army against the Sarazens.

It fell out well for Spain, that this peace was made; otherwise the three African Kings who had joyned their Forces with the Sarazen King of Grenada, and had defeated the Spaniards divers times both by Sea and Land, were like totally to have subdued the Countrey, but that the two Alphonsus Kings of Castile and Portugal, with the French and Navar Forces in a great battel totally defeated the Barbarians, seised upon all their rich plunder, and carried the African Banners in triumph to the Pope at Avenion, where they were hung up in the chief Church. About this time Count Evreux king of Navar died; and immediately began the war of Britany, upon the death of Duke John, who died, as is said, going home from Tournay; he had married his onely daughter before to Charles son of the Count De Blois, and of Margaret sister to Philip the French king; but Duke Johns third brother Count de Montfort laid Title to the Dutchy of Brittany, and for that cause seised upon Nantes, Brest, Rhemes, Vennes, and the treasure of Limoges. Charles de Blois in right of his crooked wife, claimed the Dutchy, both appeal to the Peers of France and Parliament of Paris, who declare the Right to be in Charls: At which, John de Montfort in a discontent goeth into England, and entertaines a league with king Edward; but when he was returned into Brittany, he is accused for doing homage to king Edward for that Dutchy, this he denied; yet when the king had commanded him to stay in Paris, he stole away thence by night, which so exasperated the king, that presently he sent his sonne, Prince John Duke of Normandy with an Army to settle Charles de Blois in his possession of Brittany, who laid siege to Nantes, and took it upon composition, and in it John de Montfort, who is sent to Paris, and imprisoned in the Louviere.

Claude the masculine, wife of Montfort, took up Armes in her husbands quarrel, sends to England for aide, seiseth upon Hembont whilst Charles is besieging Rhemes, which being surrendred he brings his Army to Hembont, where as he was assaulting the wall, Claude slips out with a party at a gate,

and

and enters the enemies camp, which she plunders and sets on fire; but upon the comming of the English supplies, *Charles* raiseth the siege. Pope *Clement* the sixth being newly elected, procures a truce of two years between *Charles* and *Montfort*. *Claude* upon this goeth over to *England*, where a Match is proposed between her young son and the kings daughter: then she procures a fleet from *England*, under the conduct of *Robert* of *Artois*: the *English* being landed, seise upon *Vennes*; the *French* with an army besiege it; but as *Robert* was striving to raise the siege, he received a hurt, of which he shortly afterward died, at which king *Edward* was much grieved, and with an army passeth himself into *Britany*, where having taken some townes, upon the Popes desire a truce for three yeares is concluded between *France* and *England*; wherefore *Montfort* is set free, and shortly after died. *An. Christi.*

King *Philip* in the interim caused a strict search to be made for such as favoured the English in the former war; divers of the Nobility of *Normandy* and *Britany* are sent to *Paris* and beheaded, *Jeoffry de Harcourt* escapes into *England*. About this time, one *James de Arteuel* a Fleming, at *Gaunt*, made a speech against the French in favour of the English, and adviseth the people to drive out their Earl for favouring the French, and to choose a new one, or to admit of him whom king *Edward* should send. Upon this the *Flemings* were so enraged, that they tore him in peeces and flung his carkasse to the dogs. King *Edward* in the mean time with a thousand sail arrives in *Normandy*, takes divers towns, burieth honorably the heads of *Persi* and *Bacchon*, which were set up at *Carentan*, for their fidelity to him. Then he went to *Caen*, where he fought with *Raoul* the Constable of *France*, and the Citizens, whom he beat into the town, and the English entred pel-mel with them, about five hundred *English* were killed out of windowes and from the house-tops; the Constable having saved himself a while in the tower, yieldeth to king *Edward*, who commands *Jeoffry* to set the town on fire, because of their obstinacie; but he desired the town might be spared, because he had divers friends and kindred in it, which was assented to by the king. In the mean while a Herald is sent from king *Philip* to king *Edward*, to appoint a day and place for a battel; king *Edward* sent word, that he would fight neer *Paris*, in the view of that great city, which the *French* believing fitted themselves there for the battel; but the *English* having deluded the *French*, encamp themselves neer *Cresey* in *Ponteu*, by a great wood; in this battel the *English* were victorious, in which were killed thirty thousand men; Count *de Blois*, and *de Sancerre*, with the Earl of *Flanders*, and king of *Bohemia* with all his forces were slain, besides twelve hundred Chevaliers, all of antient families; the King himself had his horse shot under him, and being mounted again by Count *de Beaumont*, fled to *Broy*, and from thence to *Amiens*. *Jeoffry de Harcourt* hearing that his brother was killed, fell off from the English, came to king *Philip* with a rope about his neck, and cast himself at his feet craving mercy for his rebellion, for which the king pardoned him. 1346.

King *Edward* finding *Calice* a fit port for his passage into *England*, sate down before it with his Army, and having besieged it eleven moneths, at last took it upon composition; six of the chief Burghers were demanded by the king to be put to death, who willingly offered themselves; whose courage when the king perceived, he pardoned them all. The French king during the siege came with an Army hoping to raise it, and therefore presented battel, but the English would not leave their trenches, whereupon the French retreated. *Charles de Blois* and his two sonnes were prisoners in England; but he was set free upon the earnest request of his cousin-german the Queen of England. The same year died king *Philip* of *France*, who left two sons, *John* his successor, and *Philip* Duke of *Orleans*. Then a Truce was made with *England* for two years; in which time *Raoul* Constable of *France*, who was taken at *Caen*, initiated this young Kings reign with his blood, for he lost his head, being accused 1350.

of

An. Christi. of Treason, the Dolphin having left his son in this war, and being about to sell his Signiory to the Pope, the French so prevailed, that it should be annexed to *France*, conditionally the kings eldest son might be stiled the Delphin. *Charles d' Espagne* is made Constable, whom *Charles* king of *Navar* so hated, that he caused him to be murthered in the night time; and withall, gave out that he was forced to do it in his own defence, and that the Constable intended to murther him: Upon this King *Charles* is summoned to answer in person to his accusers, which he refused to do; but at last upon better advice he came to *Paris*, his fact was pleaded before the French King, and being found guilty he is seised upon by *James* brother to the Duke of *Burbon*, who was made Constable of *France* after the death of *d' Espagne*, and delivered to the Officers, who were to carry him to prison; but by the intercession of three Queens, to wit, of *Jane* widow to *Charles* the Fair, this King of *Navars* Aunt, *Blanch* the Kings mother-in-law, and *Jane* the King of *Navars* wife, and the French kings daughter, he was pardoned; but yet he took this accusation for an affront, and therefore carried a grudge ever after to his father-in-law, who when he was raising some Taxes on his Subjects, to suppress the *English*, who out of *Bourdeaux* and *Calice* did plunder the Countries, this King *Charles* did what he could to hinder the Taxes, which notwithstanding were raised, though with some difficulty and opposition, chiefly of *Arras*, which was quickly quieted.

King *Edward* understanding that an Army of 30000 French was raising, returnes to *England*; in the interim King *John* makes his eldest son the Delphin Duke of *Normandy*, whom he sends thither to take possession, where he is met at *Rouen* by the chief Nobility of that Countrey, and by the king of *Navar*, as being *Count D' Evreux*; King *John* hearing of *Navars* being there, makes haste to *Rouen*, seiseth upon him and *John de Harcourt*, who was of *Charles* his counsel, for which his head was there presently cut off, and King *Charles* sent prisoner to *Paris*: Upon this the Townes of *Evreux* and *Harcourt* stood out against king *John*, and all *Normandy* ready to mutiny. King *Edward* being advertised of this opportunity, sends the Earl of *Glouceſter* thither with a great Army; with whom joyned *Philip*, brother to *Navarre*, and *Geoffrey*
1356. *Harcourt* Uncle to *John* who was beheaded, these fall to taking and plundering of Townes, but the comming of the French king made them retreat; in the mean while *Edward* Prince of *Wales* went out of *Burdeaux* with 2000 horse, and 8000 *English* Archers, besides the chief men and Garrisons of *Gascoigny*, these overrun the Countries of *Poicton* and *Berry*, killing all the French that made opposition; which K. *John* understanding, left a flying Army in *Normandy*, and marcheth towards Prince *Edward*, who having done his work, which was to draw K. *John* out of *Normandy*, retreats to *Gascoigny*; where having met with the Popes Legat, who came to make peace, and finding the conditions unreasonable, intrenched himself within two leagues of *Poictiers*, a place by reason of large Ditches and Vineyards very disadvantageous for the French Horse, in which their strength consisted; these might have starved the *English*, had they been patient, but they would needs fall upon them in their trenches, 300 of their prime men were chosen to begin the battel, which were defeated by the *English* Archers; the French Army was divided into three battalions, the first under the Constable, the second was conducted by the Delphin, and the third by the king himself, all these three were defeated one after another, the king and his son *Philip* taken prisoners, and with them 1500 Gentlemen, 5000 were slain on the place; great debate arose among the Souldiers for their prisoners, so that divers Gentlemen were killed, for the Souldiers would rather kill their prisoners then part with them to others; *Poictiers* received some of the French that fled, but fearing that the *English* would enter pell-mell with them, shut their Gates; the king is honourably received into the Princes Tent, and feasted; thence he was carried to *Burdeaux*, but the *Gas-*

coigns

reign would not suffer the King to be carried into *England*, till they were ap- *An. Christi.*
peased by rich gifts and promises.

K. *John* is received in *England* with great magnificence; in the mean while the D. of *Normandy* assembles the chief men of *France* at *Paris*, out of which fifty Deputies are chosen to advise how the King should be set free: there it was proposed, that the King of *Navar* should be set at liberty; that six of the Clergy, six of the Nobility, and six of the third estate should govern the young Delphin; but he disliking this way, dissolved the Assembly. The Parisians murmure for raising the value of money. The king of *Navar* being let out of prison by some of his own faction, strives to raise new troubles in *France*, shewing that he had more right to the Crown then the k. of *England*, which made k. *Edward* backward in aiding the *Navarrois*. *David* k. of *Scotland*, who had been taken prisoner, was ransomed for 10000 Crowns. The French king was content to pay his ransome, but not to part with the right of his Crown. The Delphin went about from Town to Town, raising all the money he could for his fathers ransome. *Languidoc* and the *Champerois* were very forward, even the women to part with their rings and jewels, but the *Parisians* were hindred by the k. of *Navar*, who in all things opposed himself to the Delphin, who was in danger of his life whilst he was there, having some of his servants killed in his presence. The k. of *Navar* raised great Forces in *Normandy*, and sent for 10000 *Navarrois*, which took divers small Towns; the Pesants also began to mutiny and to take up Armes against the Gentry, which made the Delphin leave *Paris*, and having raised an Army of Gentlemen, defeated the Pesants; then he brings 30000 men neer to *Paris* to curb their Factions; the Provost-Marshal who stood for *Navar*, being demanded the keyes of the City-Gates by some of the Delphins friends, is presently slain for refusing, and the Gates are opened for the Delphin, who caused two chief men of the Faction to be hanged, and then prepares to suppress the k. of *Navar*. 1358.

The Truce between *France* and *England* being ended, king *Edward* passeth over to *Calice*, and from thence to *Rhemes*, a hundred thousand Crowns are sent him to forbear spoiling and plundring the Countrey; thence he marcheth to *Paris*, and offers battel to the Delphin, who will not hazard his strength, therefore king *Edward* burns and spoils all about *Paris*, intending to ruine all, or to bring *France* in subjection; but when he understood the difficulty of this work by the Duke of *Glouceſter*, and being also affrighted with Thunder and Lightning, which killed some of his men, he desisted from his enterprise, desiring pardon from God for what he had already done; so now a final peace is thought upon, which was concluded on these Articles, That k. *Edward* and his son should quit the right they claimed over *Anjou*, *Tourain*, *Mayne*, and *Normandy*, and that the French should render *Guien* to them, and that they should pay three millions of Crowns to the *English*, and so the Armies to be disbanded on both sides; which being performed, king *John* returns to *France* after four years captivity, where having saluted the Pope, he binds himself by a vow to make an Expedition against the Infidels, but first he means to settle his kingdome, and having occasion to go into *England* about some weighty Affairs, he died at *London*, and was buried at S. *Dennis*.

Charles the fifth son to king *John* succeeded: he made his chief abode at *Paris*, committing the managing of the war to his brothers, and other Lieutenants; he defeated the king of *Navar*, by *Bertrand du Gueſcow* a valiant Commander. King Peter of *Lusignan* came from the East into *France*, solliciting the King to further the Holy-war intended by king *John*; but he could not prevail, for the Souldiers were employed in the Civil wars of *Brittany*: at last peace being made between *Jane* the widow of *Charles de Blois*, who was slain, and *Mountfort*, he is declared Duke of *Brittany*. Peter of *Castile* having allied himself with *France*, by marrying the French Queens sister, daughter to the Duke of *Burbon*, fell off from the French, and sided with the English;

An. Christi. his wife he slighted and abused, accusing her that she had procured of a Jew that was a sorcerer, an inchanted Girdle, to bewitch him, whereby he might be made uncapable to govern, and so she might rule; shortly after she died; he in the mean time having stript *Henry* his Bastard-brother of all his Lands left him by his father, drove him out of his kingdome, and then makes war upon the king of *Arragon*, a friend to *France*. The Bastard is brought back by *Bertrand du Guesquin*, and crowned, having chased away king *Peter*. The Prince of *Wales* restores *Peter* to his kingdome. In the interim the king of *Navar* is surprised, as he was shewing the way to the English Army through the Spanish countrey, and brought prisoner to the king of *Arragon*. The English defeated *Guesquin*, and took him prisoner, then drove out *Henry*, and replaced *Peter* in his kingdome. *Navar* having given his son for Hostage, is set free, and so is *Guesquin* for a ransome. *Henry* being furnished with another Army from *France*, returnes into *Castile*, where finding *Peter* forsaken by the English for want of their pay, he defeats and kills him, and then made himself king by consent of the whole kingdome.

The Prince of *Wales* being necessitated, imposeth heavier Taxes on *Guien* then the French used to do, whereupon they complain to the French king and Parliament at *Paris*, who would not seem to countenance their complaint till their Hostages were returned from *England*; then did king *Charles* upon reiterated complaints send a summons to the Prince at *Burdeaux*, and open war is denounced against king *Edward*; hereupon divers Townes revolt from the English; king *Edward* to defend *Guien*, sends over an Army to *Burdeaux*, who took the Dutchess of *Burbon*, the French Queens Mother, with divers other Dames, prisoners, and let them not go without great ransomes; another English Army lands at *Calice*, burning and wasting all before them; they took and burnt *Limoges* for revolting to the French; but at this time the *English* Army had no great success at Land, and less at Sea, for their Fleet of five and thirty saile was overthrown by the French and Castilian Navy neer *Rochel*. *S. Severe* is taken by *Guesquin*. *Poictou* and *Saintonge* are given to the *Duke de Berry*. *Rochel* is surrendred to the French, and a part of the English Army under *Capral de Bus* is defeated. The D. of *Britany*, k. *Edwards* son-in-law, strives to draw
1356. the *Britains* to the *English* side, but is resisted by some great Lords, which made the D. retire to *England*, having left *Robert Canol* an Englishman Governour of *Britany*, whom the French besiege in the Castle of *Brest*, and his cousin *Hugh* in *Derval*; these both accorded to surrender their Forts, if they had not succors from *England* within two moneths, and so Hostages are given; in this mean time supplies come from *England*, which would not land, though invited by the French, but stayed on ship-board till the two months were expired, & then *Canol* received the English Army into *Brest*; the Fench threaten to kill their hostages; *Canol* replies, that then he would kil all the *French* prisoners in *Britany*.

The English Embassadors complain to the Pope, of the wrongs done them by the French, in breaking the peace, and falsifying their Oaths; the French defend themselves, clearing both King *Charles* and his father from perjury; the Pope would not take notice of their differences, but was content to hearken to the French touching the affairs of *Flanders*; for king *Edward* desirous to marry one of his sons to the Earle of *Flanders* onely daughter, sent to the Pope for a dispensation, which was denyed, because it would cause perpetuall warre between *France* and *England*; for *Flanders* had thitherto been a dependant of *France*; so this Match being broken, *Philip le Hardy* Duke of *Burgundy* married the Lady, whom if the French King had married, the addition of *Flanders* would have been a great strength to *France*. After this the King of *Navar* made his peace with *France*, who shortly after by some assasinates (who were put to death for this villany) intended to have poisoned the French King. *Navars* wife dieth about this time, and he is declared enemy to *France*, from whom they take the City *Evreux*. Shortly after

died

died Prince *Edward* of *Wales*, and the year following King *Edward* his father. *An. Christi.*
k. *Charles* remembring the insolencies that were acted in *Paris* during his mino- 1377.
rity and his fathers imprisonment, ordained that after the kings death his eldest son should immediately succeed, and that he should be crowned at the age of 14. and then should be out of his non-age, that the Princes Governors should not have too much time to make themselves great. *Guesquin* takes many towns from the *English* on one side, and D. *Philip le Hardy* on the other took all from them round about *Calice*, so that he hem'd them in from making excursions. For maintenance of the war, subsidies are laid upon salt and wine; all *Britany* except *Brest* is now under the French: hereupon Ambassadors are sent from *England* to the *German* Princes, complaining of the wrongs done by *France*; the French Ambassadors on the other side defend themselves, and complain of the wrongs they sustained from the *English*, chiefly that they exacted more for the ransom of k. *John* then the *Egyptians* did for S. *Lewis*, and withall they desire the *German* Princes to renew their alliance with *France*, which was urged also by *Charles* the Emperour, Uncle to the French king, and by *Wenceslaus* his son; who to make an agreement between the two kingdomes went themselves into *France*, where they were magnificently received in all places where they came, chiefly at *Paris*, where great joy and pomp was shewed, and all prison doors let open; but these joyes and the Treaty of peace were crossed by the Queens death and one of her daughters.

After this, the Emperors, French and English Embassadors, with the Archbish. of *Ravenna* the Popes Legat met at *Gaunt*, to advise about the same peace; but this meeting was also dissolved by the schisme of the Church, which lasted 30 years; for Pope *Gregory* who removed his seat from *Avenion* to *Rome*, being dead, great debate arose between the Italian and French Cardinals about the election of his successor, as we have already shewed, *Urban* the 6. being chosen by the one, and *Clement* by the other, who held his residence at *Avenion*. About this time D. *Thomas*, uncle to k. *Richard* of *England*, went over to *Calice* with 8000 *English*, who from thence passed into *Brittany* to assist the Duke in *Flanders*. The *Gantois* complain against their Earl for raising new Taxes upon their Merchandises, for infringing their liberties, and too much favouring of *Bruges* who cut a channel for the river *Lis* to flow through their Lands: this occasioned a war; for the *Gantois* taking Armes and white Caps, were met with by the Earl and his Army, who upon their Petition promised to take off their Taxes, and to maintain their ancient priviledges; and so they laid down their Armes and white Caps; but *John Leon* their Captain disswaded them from laying down their Caps, the badges of their liberty, whereupon they took up their Armes and Caps again, and killed the Earls Governour of *Gaunt*; this was done by the meaner sort, but the richer and wiser chose 12. men whom they sent to the Earl at *Bruges*, who faling at his feet beseech him to take pity on their Town, like to be ruined by factious people: *John Leon* hearing of this, and that his case was desperate, if he should be seised on by the Earl, assembleth his white-Caps together, and falls upon the Earls Palace full of wealth in the Suburbs of *Gaunt*, which they pillage and set on fire; the Earl highly displeased at this, resolves to raise an Army, and for that cause goeth to *Terremond*: *Leon* in his absence marcheth with his white-caps to *Bruges*, to whom the faint-hearted Towns-men surrender themselves, and opened their Gates; thence he marcheth to *Dam*, where he is received, and shortly after, as its thought, was poisoned: notwithstanding the death of their Captain, the White-caps labouring to draw all the Flemings to their side, went and besieged *Hypre*, where the Earle had some Companies of Foot, and Troops of Horse, which defended the Town a while, at last were forced by the Towns-men to yield, but *Audenard* held out against them. D. *Philip* of *Burgundy* fearing his own loss in these troubles of *Flanders*, if his father-in-law should be worsted by his people, goeth to his brother the French K. of whom he obtains leave to mediate a

An. Christ. peace between the Earle and his people, for this cause he goeth to *Tournay*, whence he sends to the White-Caps to lay down Arms, and then he would procure them a general pardon and act of oblivion, conditionally they would rebuild the Earles Palace at *Gaunt*; so Arms were laid down on both sides, and the Earle received with great joy into *Gaunt*.

In the mean while, *Olivier*, Cousin-german to *Roger* governour of *Gaunt*, who was killed, in revenge of his brothers death, took forty vessels of provisions going for *Gaunt*, which caused a war between the Gentry and commons of *Flanders*; the like commotion was beginning in *France*, for those of *Montpellier* killed the Kings receivers and collectors of Subsidies, and were taking up Arms, but the Duke of *Anjou* quickly suppressed them, and hanged up the chief mutiners, and laid a great fine upon the Town: then was Duke *de Berry*, the Kings brother removed from the government of *Languedoc*, and Count *de Foix* (to please the people) put in his place. This year died King
1380. *Charles*, having left three children, *Charles*, *Lewis*, and *Catherine*; Duke *d' Anjou* is made Protector, the young King being as yet but thirteen years old; the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Burbon* are made Tutors to the children.

Chap. X.

A prosecution of the French History from the year 1380. *till* 1407. *In which are interlaced divers passages of* Italy, Flanders, Navarre, Afric, Britany, England, Scotland, Spain *and* Hungary.

Charles the sixth is confirmed in his Kindome by the Peers assembled at *Paris*; so are the Dukes of *Burgundy*, the Kings uncle by the father, and of *Burbon* by the mother, established governours to the children. That day the King was crowned at *Rhemes*, being to dine (as the custome was) at the Archbishops house, a contestation arose between Duke *Anjou* and *Burgundy* about precedency; *Anjou* claiming it as governour of the Kingdome, but *Burgundy* in respect of his Dutchy, and being Dean of the Peers of *France*. The King, to avoid further disturbance of that solemnity, ordered that *Burgundy* for that time should sit next the King; wherefore *Anjou* being set down first, *Burgundy* thrusts himself between him and the King. At this time the *English* had laid siege to *Nantes* in *Britany*, but having lost before it some prime Commanders upon the sallying out of the Garrison, they raised the siege: the *Britons* being wearied with war, desire their Duke to make his peace with the *French* King, or else they would forsake him; whereupon he was forced to send Ambassadours to beg for peace, which he obtained, and swore fealty to the King, but would not acknowledge Pope *Clement*; so the *English* return home. *Anjou* the Regent of *France* did much favour Pope *Clement*, because he promised to give him the Kingdome of *Sicily*, which depended on the Church; for his adversary Pope *Urban* had sent for the *Hungarian* to seise on that Kingdome, and to revenge the death of his brother *Andrew*, murthered by his wife Queen *Jane*: but Pope *Clement* who had received *Avenion* from her, was willing to support her cause, therefore adviseth her to make Duke *d' Anjou* her son and heir, which she did: he to raise an Army, got the King to grant him Subsidies, which did much vex the people, so that at *Paris* they mutiny, yet are appeased by good words; but finding no deeds, they fall upon the *Jews*, whom they plunder; and then upon the Kings collectors and receivers of his rents, whom they rob of all their monies, and burn their books of accounts: by this example, other Towns deny to pay more Taxes. *Languedoc* refuseth to receive the Duke of *Kerry* for their governour, and caused Count *de Foix* to raise an Army against him, which defeated some of the

Dukes

Dukes companies, after which he adviseth them to submit to him for avoiding further troubles, which they did the more willingly, because he was the Kings uncle. An. Christi.

Pope *Clement* to strengthen *Anjou's* cause in *Sicily*, imposeth a tenth upon the *French* Clergy, at which they storm, protesting both against him and his Cardinals, chiefly the *Sorbon*: *John Gerson* declaimed in the University of *Paris* against this Popes proceedings, which so angred *Anjou*, that he sent to apprehend *Gerson*, but the Schollers rescued him, upon this he retires to *Rome*, where he is entertained by Pope *Urban*; a trap was also laid to apprehend the Rector of the University, but he escaped; the Schollers grew so discontent, that multitudes of them forsook that University. Divers Ambassadours came to *Paris* complaining against *Clement* for upholding a schisme to the great hurt of Christianity, seeing *Urbans* election was generally approved a more lawful then that of *Clement*: *Anjou* stood up, and maintained that *Urbans* election was forced by the *Romans*, whereas that of *Clement* was peaceable. In the mean time, *Charles* whom the King of *Hungary* had sent with an Army into *Italy* against the *Venetians*, having made peace with them, goeth to *Rome*, where he is by *Urban* crowned King of *Sicily*; this *Charles* was descended from *Charles* the Lame, and *Mary* his wife Queen of *Hungary*: he without great opposition, obtained *Sicily* and *Naples*, took Queen *Jane*, and Duke of *Brunswick* her husband prisoners. *Anjou* in the interim tries all means possible to raise money, and imposeth in the Kings name a gabel upon the twentieth part of Merchants goods, which is generally refused: At last, as he was endeavouring by other means to raise money, a dangerous mutiny arose in *Paris*; some of the collectours are killed, the City Magazine broke open, and the people having armed themselves, they chain all the streets, open the prison doors, and let loose all the prisoners: The Bishop being fled, they broke open his prisons, and let out one *Aubriot* whom they make their Commander; he had been Provost of *Paris*, and done much good in repairing and building some publike places, but being accused of heresie, he was imprisoned by the Bishop: being now delivered unexpectly, he promised the people that if they would return to their houses, he would the next day be ready to serve them; but knowing what danger there was in being Captain to a mutinous people, he stole away that night out of *Paris*: the like mutiny there was at *Rouen*, where the people made one *Grus* their King, commanding him to abolish all taxes and impositions whatsoever.

The *Parisians* seeing that *Aubriot* was gone, were advised by *John des Marais*, to send him with some others that were not criminals to the King to beg for pardon, which was assented to, and pardon granted conditionally that they paid sixty thousand Crowns, and that the authours of this sedition be put to death; *Marais* returns with this answer to *Paris*, onely he concealed the putting to death the incendiaries, some of which he caused in the night to be flung into the River, which made a new mutiny: hereupon the corporal punishment is put off, and the King is content with the sixty thousand Crowns. In this mean while Duke *d'Anjou* is crowned at *Avenion* by Pope *Clement*, King of *Sicily* and *Jerusalem*; then he goeth about the Towns of *Province*, desiring them to acknowledge him for their Lord, shewing that he was the adopted heir of Queen *Jane*, their lawful Countess; but when he saw them unwilling; he forced them, then marcheth into *Italy* with thirty thousand horse, not against Pope *Urban*, lest the Country should rise, but against King *Charles* at *Naples*, who forbore fighting with *Anjou*, purposely to weary his Army by delayes: in the mean while *Anjou* dieth, some say by poyson, so his Army without fighting returns with his corps to *France*. King *Charles* reigned four years at *Naples*; in the interim King *Lewis* of *Hungary* dieth: the Peers of that kingdome call home King *Charles*, notwithstanding *Sigismond* the Emperours son had married King *Lewis* his eldest daughter: King *Charles* having

An. Christ. having left at *Naples* his wife and two sons, hastes to *Hungary*, where he is crowned, and shortly after murthered in the house of the Queen, widow of *Hungary*, who stormed that her daughter should be deprived of her inheritance: upon this *Sigismund* is crowned in *Hungary*, and *Ladislaus* the son of King *Charles* at *Naples*.

About this time a new war began in *Flanders*, upon the taking of the forty ships of *Gaunt* by *Oliver* Cousin to *Roger* who was killed: One *John Prunean* gave out, that *Oliver* durst not seise on these ships without the Earles command, therefore assembleth the White-Caps, and marcheth to *Audenard*, and suddenly surpriseth it; the Earle hearing of this at *Lisle*, complains to the *Gantois*, that they had broken the peace made by the Duke of *Burgundy*; they answer, that he broke it first, by suffering *Oliver* to take their ships without reproof or punishment: the Earle willing to recover *Audenarde*, and to live quietly, agrees with the *Gantois*, that he would banish *Oliver*, conditionally that they banished *Prunean*, which was done, and *Audenarde* restored again to the Earle, who presently sent to rebuild the demolished walls, and placed a strong Garrison in it: after this *Prunean* is apprehended by the Earls Cousin the Duke of *Brabant*, whom he sends to *Lisle* in chains, where he is beheaded and his body broken on the wheel; the like end had divers others of *Bruges*, and elsewhere, who had animated the White-Caps: the *Gantois* fearing their turn would be next in these punishments, conspire unanimously against their Earle in defence of their lives and liberties; and to make sure work, they demolish the houses of the Gentry who favoured the Earle, they alter the form of government, and make new offices both for Civil and Military affairs; a war began, which lasted seven years, in which died above two hundred thousand men.

The *Gantois* understanding that the Earl was about to besiege *Hypre* which held with them, sent three thousand men thither, and withal nine thousand were armed to fall upon the rear of the Earls Army, who was on his march with twenty thousand against *Hypre*, whilst they within should sally out upon the Vantguard: but the Earle having laid many Ambuscadoes, defeated the *Hypreans*, of whom two thousand and foure hundred were slain, the rest fled, and so both *Hypre* and *Courtray*, are surrendred to him, who put to death seven hundred of the chief criminals in *Hypre*, and took two hundred hostages of *Courtray*: then he went to besiege *Gaunt*, which he could not so inclose, but two gates were free to receive supplies from *Liege* and *Bruxels*: the *Gantois* being no whit dismayed at the Earles strength, send out a party by one of their gates which was not besieged, and went immediately to *Terremunde* which they took, this made the Earl raise his siege: but the *Gantois* shortly after received some losse, for two Captains with their forces marched out upon some design, one of them was assaulted and defeated by the Earl, so that six thousand *Gantois* were partly slain, and partly burned in a Church, whither they fled; the other Captain not being able to help these by reason of the marish ground between them. Hereupon the *Gantois* chose one General who should have absolute power, his name was *Philip Artenel*, because many Generals did oftentimes crosse one another; this *Philip* by the mediation of the Bishop of *Liege*, the Duke of *Brabant*, and *Albert* Count of *Hainault*, endeavoured to make peace between the Earle and his subjects: *Philip* proffered to the Earle at *Tournay*, where the Assembly was kept, full power over the bodies and estates of his subjects to banish and fine whom he pleased, so that he would spare their lives; the Earl would not have his power confined, but would have all, both men and women above fifteen years of age, to come out of *Gaunt* onely with one garment apeece, and ropes about their necks, to be disposed as he pleased: *Artenel* acquaints the Citizens, that either they must suffer their throats to be cut, or else take up Arms to defend their liberties; for his part he was resolved to die in maintenance of their

cauſe; whereupon they all agreed to take Arms: with this he chuſeth out of the white Caps five thouſand of the ſtouteſt and ſtrongeſt, with theſe he marcheth toward *Bruges*; they that remained were reſolved, that if theſe five thouſand were cut off, they would burn themſelves and City, rather then yeeld to ſlavery: the Earl at *Bruges* underſtanding of *Artenels* marching thither, ſlighting his ſmall number, met him in a place diſadvantagious to him, with his Army, which was defeated and driven back into the Town, whither the *Gantois* entered pel mel with their enemies: *Artenel* makes diligent ſearch for the Earl, whom he meant to have uſed with all reſpect, and to have brought him to *Gaunt* with all poſſible honour, to induce him to ſhew mercy to his ſubjects; but the Earl hid himſelf in a poor houſe, and thence eſcaped to *Liſle*: *Artenel* gave charge that no hurt ſhould be done to any ſtrangers within *Bruges*, becauſe he would not provoke forreigne Princes againſt him. After this he pillaged *Hypre*, and ſeiſed on the Earls treaſure, and divers Towns yeelded to him; its thought that now he had above a hundred thouſand men in Arms, ſo that the Earl was forced to implore help from the *French* King, and acknowledgeth himſelf to be his vaſſal; the *French* were not unwilling to aſſiſt him (though he had hitherto befriended the *Engliſh*) becauſe the *Flemings* made excurſions upon the *French* borders; order therefore is given for taking out the ſacred Standard, called the *Auriflamme*: this was of red ſilke interwoven with flames, it was of old ſent from Heaven to King *Clouis*, to be carried in the wars againſt Infidels: this Standard was not to be uſed but in great neceſſity, and to be carried by ſome holy Knight, but afterward it was brought out upon all occaſions, and therefore at laſt in a battel againſt the *Flemings*, it was loſt, none knowing what became of it. This Standard being received by the King with great devotion from the Abbot, he gave it to one *Peter Villiers* to be carried; then having placed the reliques of the Martyrs on the Altar, he begins his march with a gallant Army through *Artois*. *An. Chriſti.*

The *Flemings* hearing of the *French* march, brake down preſently all their bridges upon the River *Lis*, except one which they ſtrongly fortified: the King ſends the Conſtable *Cliſſon* with the Vantguard to gain the bridge, the *Flemings* being hardly preſſed, were forced to break down this alſo; in the interim whilſt they were skirmiſhing, a party of *French* in boats get over the River who charged the enemy in the Rear, whom they utterly defeated, and killed three thouſand on the place; ſo the bridge was gained and repaired, and the whole Army got over. *Artenel* upon this, leaving a party to continue the ſiege of *Audenarde*, marcheth with ſixty thouſand againſt the *French*, and fights them; the fog was ſo thick that morning that ſcarce could any perfectly diſcern their next neighbours, till the *Auriflamme* was diſplayed, and then (if you will believe) the miſt vaniſhed: The *French* Army is divided into three battalions; that of the Kings is charged by the *Flemings*, hoping to take him priſoner, as the *Engliſh* did King *John*; but the other two battalions falling on the Flanks of the *Flemings*, did ſo preſſe them that their ranks were diſordered, who both hindred and hurt one another, and ſo at laſt they are totally routed by the *French*; thirty thouſand were killed on the place, and ten thouſand in the purſuit; the body of *Artenel* was found yet breathing, who refuſed to have his wounds dreſſed, not deſiring to live after the loſſe of his Fellow-citizens, ſo preſently died, and his body was hanged on a Gibbet.

The report of this defeat cauſed the ſiege before *Audenarde* to riſe in haſte; then *Dam*, *Bruges*, and other Towns yeelded to their Earl; but the *French* burned *Courtray*, becauſe they found in their great Church the golden Spurs of the *French* Gentry that were killed in that place eighty years before: There were alſo found ſome Letters written from the mutiners of *Paris* to the White-Caps, which haſtened the Kings return thither; by the way he ſtopped

at

An. Christi. at St. *Dennis*, to give thanks to God and the Martyrs for his victory, and then restored the *Auriflamme* to the Abbot; thence he marched through *Paris* with his Army, without taking notice of the Provoſt and Sheriffs that met him; having at laſt ſung *Te Deum*, in *Noſtre Dame*, he cauſed the Townſmen to aſſemble in one place, whom he environeth with his Army; then did the Chancellor upbraid them with their rebellions, and the King threatned to cut them all off, but his Uncles being there begged their pardons; the Townſmen on their knees cried for mercy, which they obtained, onely a fine was put upon them, and three hundred of the chief incendiaries were beheaded; the chains of the ſtreets were carried into the Loure, and the King ordered that henceforth they ſhould have no more Provoſt nor Sheriffs: but five years after, their priviledges were reſtored, with a Provoſt and Sheriffs.

Shortly after this, the *Gantois* and *Engliſh*, who held for Pope *Urban*, enter into a league againſt *France*, and Pope *Clement*: *Urban* had granted to the King of *England* the tithes of the benefices within his kingdome, towards this war; eight hundred Engliſh horſe, and ten thouſand foot are tranſported into *Flanders*, who made war with divers parts of *Flanders*, and yet pretended they came to aſſiſt the *Gantois*; complaint is made againſt them, but no redreſſes: having taken *Bourburg* and *Gravelin*, they ſit down before *Hypre*; but hearing the French Army was comming, ſet the Suburbs on fire, and went their way towards *Caſſel*, but could not ſtay to beſiege it, becauſe the Conſtable of *France* was drawing towards them with his Army, who purſues them to *Gravelin*, and thence to *Bourbourg*, where they are beſieged, and forced to ſurrender, having leave to depart with their baggage. At which time *Lewis* Earl of *Flanders* died at St. *Omer*, and is buried in *Liſle*; his daughter *Margaret*, wife to *Philip le Hardy* Duke of *Burgundy*, is his ſole heir, by which means *Philip* is now Lord of all *Flanders*, except *Gaunt*, which would not yet ſubmit. Shortly after *Dam* is ſurpriſed by one *Arteman* a Captain of the *Gantois*, whilſt the governour was gone to the Court. About *Limoſin* alſo and *Poictou* there was a great inſurrecton of malecontents under one *Peter Bruiers* their Captain; theſe did much miſchief till the Duke *de Berry* ſuppreſſed them in a battel, and hanged the chief incendiaries.

The French King having an intention a long time to invade *England*, prepared a great Fleet at the *Sluce*, which *Arteman* the *Gantois* Captain reſolved to burn, but the plot was diſcovered, divers of the plotters were impriſoned and eſcaped, ſome were hanged. Then the French beſieged *Dam* a whole month; at laſt *Arteman* within not able to hold out longer, got away with his forces in the night, the next morning the French enter, and having plundered the Town, utterly deſtroy it; then they fall upon *Zealand* with a Fleet, which they pillage for aiding *Gaunt*, ſo that they were forced to beg pardon and peace from the Duke of *Burgundy*, which was granted them. From the *Sluce*, where the French had built a Caſtle to guard the harbor, the King ſends *John de Vienne* his Admiral with ſixty great ſhips, to help the king of Scots againſt the Engliſh; this Fleet, with the Scots forces, burnt and ſpoiled many places in *England*; but upon a falling out between the French and Scots, the Admiral returned home, and told the King that he durſt not ſtay long in *Scotland*, becauſe the people banded againſt him, and that *England* was in a good condition to be conquered, becauſe the D. of *Lancaſter*, ſon in law to *Peter* k. of *Caſtile* (who was killed by his baſtard brother *Henry*) was gone into *Spain* with the beſt ſouldiers, to ſettle his wife in *Caſtile*: for, ſaith he, The Engliſh can eaſily be conquered at home, but hardly abroad: upon this the *French* king, with the Duke of *Burgundy*, prepare twelve hundred ſail to invade *England*; but Duke *de Berry* the kings other uncle was againſt this expedition, and diſſwaded the king from venturing his perſon, wealth, and Nobility, upon uncertain ſucceſs, beſides that the Engliſh were all in Arms to reſiſt his landing; upon this the voyage is put off, and the great Fleet diſperſed without action.

The

The next year *Lewis* Duke *Tourain* the Kings brother, married with *Valentine* daughter to *John Galeacius* Duke of *Millan*; and shortly after the King went to Pope *Clement* at *Avenion*, where *Lewis* of *Anjou* (son to that *Lewis* who died in *Italy*) is crowned K. of *Sicily* and *Jerusalem*, purposely to crosse Pope *Urban*, and King *Ladislaus* son to king *Charles* of *Naples*. *Languedoc* complains to the King against Duke *de Berry's* exactions, therefore Count *de Foix* is made their governor, who married the King of *Navars* sister, whom he slighted, because her brother owed him a great sum of money, which either he would not, or could not pay, therefore sent her with her son to him back again, because she took it ill that her husband should prefer his bastard son to his legitimate son by her; when she came to *Navar*, and had acquainted her brother of her husbands bad conditions, he gives her son a bag of powder, which he wished him to bestow on his father, and that he would mix it with wine, for it would procure his love to his wife again: the young man simply carried the powder to his father, who finding it to be poyson, caused him to be put to death in a prison. This King of *Navar* was also extreamly hated of his people whom he impoverished with continual exactions; hereupon he is one night burned in his bed, some say by accident, some say purposely; for being feeble with age and letchery, his body was anointed with certain unguents, and wrapt in a linnen cloth dipt in *Aqua vitæ*, which presently took fire by a candle that was in the hand of one of his servants then by his bed, and so he was burnt, and within two dayes died: Count *Armignac* also died about this time as he was on his journey from *Italy*, with an Army of French sent to help the Florentines, who were like to be suppressed by the Millanois. *Ao. Christi.* 1387.

After the two Kings of *France* and *England* had made peace, and disbanded their Armies; many French souldiers who could not live but by the sword, assembled together, and made to themselves Commanders, then in companies dispersed themselves into divers Countries, forcing the Inhabitants by paying contributions to buy their peace of them. Count *Armignac* having raised a great sum of money, procures fifteen thousand horse and ten thousand foot of the *Bandito's* to accompany him into *Piemont* against the Millanois: *James Verme* the Duke of *Millans* General, shut himself up in *Alexandria*, not finding it time yet to fight this fresh enemy; who perceiving he would not fight, falls to plundering, and so being laden with store of wealth were marching away securely: *Verme* being advertised of this, chargeth them in the Rear unexpectedly, kills six thousand, and puts the rest to flight; *Armignac* is taken prisoner, and died presently after of his wounds; so *France* was quieted by the defeat of these unruly souldiers; yet some of them returning made new troubles, till they were all surprised and hanged, and the Castle of *Vantadour* in *Limosin* (which they had taken) surrendered. About this time the *Gennois* being much molested by the *African* Pirats, which they could not of themselves suppresse, except they would neglect their trading with forreign Nations, wherein the greatnesse of their City consisted sends Ambassadors to the French king for aid against these Barbarians, alleadging many reasons for their assistance, as the vicinity of *Liguria* to *France*, the greatnesse and wealth, and ancient glory of the French in subduing the enemies of Christ, and the danger that Christendome is in by the greatnesse of the Barbarians, and that the Ports, ships and wealth of *Genua* was at the French service; besides, that the passage from *France* to *Afric* was short.

The motion was hearkned to by the French Gentry, the Duke of *Burbon* is chosen General; *England* is invited to joyn with the French in this honourable enterprise, which is willingly assented to by the *English* Gentry; great companies passe over to *France*, who being joyned together march over the Alpes; at *Genua* they finde a gallant Fleet of Ships and Gallies ready and well appointed, among which were divers Venetian vessels which they had sent thither for this expedition, joyning their forces against the common enemy, 1390.

An. Christi. though otherwayes these two Cities were mortal enemies. All things being ready, they set sail for *Afric*: when they came within sight of *Tunis*, the royal City of *Barbary*; they see the Barbarians in battel array, who strove to keep the Christians from landing; but the *English* Archers made the Barbarians give way, so that our Army landed: the Barbarous king sent some of his forces into the City, the rest entrenched themselves; who refused to fight, though often moved, some light skirmishes there were between us and the *Numidian* horse, but when we could not draw the King to fight, though we burned and ruined all the houses thereabout, at last we resolve to lay a strait siege to the Town, which stoutly held out, notwithstanding the King durst not adventure to relieve it, but kept himself close in his Camp. The Commander of the Towne perceiving his own danger desired a parly, which would not be granted, except he came out himself; this he would not yeeld to, fearing he might be kept as a prisoner; yet some *Genuois* who spoke the *African* tongue, are sent to parly with the Town-governour, who wondred that the *French* and *English* should come to vex *Afric* which had never done them hurt; it was answered, that the hurt *Afric* had done to *Genua*, and the Isles of *Italy*, was done to them, being all Christians and of the same faith. At last they come to an accommodation, the King sends to the Christian Army his Ambassadours, where it is agreed that the *Africans* shall not henceforth offer to molest any of the Christian Territories, that they should set at liberty all Christian prisoners, and pay ten thousand Ducats; and so the Christian Fleet returneth to *Genua*, and each man then to his own home.

France is now quiet, but in *Britain* begin new troubles: for the two sons of *John Montfort* being ransomed by the Constable of *France* a *Britain*, and the eldest of the two married to his daughter, gave occasion to the Duke to suspect that the Constable aimed at the Dutchy for his son in law; therefore one day invited the Constable to a feast, and after dinner pretending to shew him a new house that he had built, detained him there as a prisoner, at which the king was highly displeased; the Duke excused himself, that he did this to be revenged of some affronts done him by the Constable, being a *Britain* born: this answer did not content the king, but the Duke of *Burgundy* mediated for this Duke of *Britany*, who let the Constable go, after he had parted with a great summe for his ransome, and divers of his lands. After this, *Peter Craon* the kings favourite, is banished the Court, upon some discontent taken against him by the kings brother the Duke of *Orleans*. *Craon* suspecting the Constable, that this affront he received by his procuring, watched him one night as he came late from the kings lodgings, fell upon him, and so wounded him that he left him for dead, yet afterward recovered. The king was so enraged at this *Craon*, that he caused his goodly house at *Paris* to be pull'd down, and turned to a Church-yard; and suspecting that the Duke of *Britany* had animated *Craon*, he raiseth an Army against him; the Duke sent to excuse and clear himself, but could not be heard: therefore the 25. of *July*, in the extream heat of the year, he takes horse and marcheth before his Army with a thin cap on his head; his Physitians and Peers dissuade him from going in such dangerous weather, but in vaine: he was scarce gone a mile from the City *Mans*, the Metropolis of *Maine*, when he was taken with such a phrensie, that he killed two of those that were next him, and hurt divers others, laying about him, till he fainted and fell from his horse, and is carried back to *Mans*, where he at last was cured, but not totally: the Duke of *Britany* with his wife and children, and chiefest goods, had taken shipping at St. *Mallo* for *England*, but understanding of this accident, returns home again.

About this time the people began to murmure against the Constable, that he could not have gathered together so much wealth as he had, without robbing them: wherefore he to stop their mouths, reconciles himself to the D. and so all

former

former wrongs are forgot and forgiven. The King being returned to *Paris*, the government of *France* by general assent of the Peers is conferred upon the kings uncles, though the D. of *Orleans* the Kings brother laboured much for it, but he was too young for that employment. Many Playes and Masks were performed at Court to drive away the kings melancholy; in one of the Masks, the king with five others disguised themselves in the shape of *Lions*; their linnen covers were pitched, that the threds which resembled the hairs of wilde beasts might stick the faster; as these were dancing the round, and singing nuptial songs in honour of a great favourite lately married, the Duke of *Orleans* stood so near with his torch, that a spark fell on the king which set all on fire; every one running to save the king, left the others to shift for themselves, two of which were burned presently, and died with horrible shrinches, two others died the next day: the fifth was saved by water and wine flung upon him; the Dutchess of *Berry* instantly stayed the fire on the king by the long train of her gown which she flapt upon it; the Duke of *Orleans* excused himself, that what he did, was against his will: but this accident increased the kings disease, for whose recovery many vows and prayers are made to God. *An. Christi.* 1405. 1407.

Clement the Antipope being dead, Ambassadours are sent from the kings uncles to the Cardinals of *Avenion*, to desire that no Pope should be chosen till the schisme were first remedied; they all swore, that if he at *Rome* would lay down his Pontificat, he should do the like at *Avenion*, that was to be chosen: *Pierre de la Lune* a *Castilian* is chosen, to whom the kings uncles repair, beseeching him to make a peace in the Church, and that he would submit himself to a general Council; he answered, that he would not leave the helm of Christs ship, so long as he lived, and so the Princes returned without effecting any thing, which much discontented the king; but the Pope, to please him, authorizeth him to raise a tenth from the Clergy, this made him more odious; whereupon command is given that no Bulls shall be received from him, and that no Clergy man should acknowledge him, and withal an Army is sent to besiege him; whereupon he removes from *Avenion*, and returns home to *Spain*, having the Eucharist carried all the way before him, that none might hurt him. 1401.

Great debate arose about the kingdome of *Arragon*, between divers Princes descended from king *Peter* by differentbranches: Duke *de Anjou* laid claim to it in right of his wife *Jobant*, the daughter of *John* eldest son to king *Peter*; all parties were contented to submit themselves to the arbitration of some holy and learned men, these adjudged the kingdome to *Ferdinand* youngest son to the king of *Castile*, and *Leonar* daughter to *Peter* king of *Arragon*, whose eldest son was dead, having left one son named *John* of *Castile*. The kings of *England* and *France* meet near *Calis*, where a match is concluded between the daughter of *France*, and the king of *Englands* son.

After the Christians were defeated at *Nicapolis* by the *Turk*, young *Sigismund* king of *Hungary*, who had escaped, returned into his Country: he it was for whose cause king *Charles* of *Naples* was murthered by one *Nicon* at the command of the old Queen, both which were shortly after put to death by *Charles* his friends. This *Sigismund* returning, found that in his absence the people had been much wronged by the Nobility, wherefore he cut off the heads of two and thirty of his chief Lords; some think this execution was done before the battel of *Nicopolis*; but he was so hated for this, and slighted for his overthrow at *Nicopolis*, that two of the chief Lords of *Hungary* conspired against him, and took him prisoner, committing him to the custody of *Nicons* two sons, hoping they would keep him sure: then they sent to *Ladislaus* king of *Naples* to accept of the Crown, but he remembring the disaster of his father *Charles* made no haste thither; in the interim the widow of *Nicon* intreats her two sons to set free the king, lest *Ladislaus* obtaining the Crown might revenge his fathers death on them; so *Sigismund* is set free, who instantly cuts off the heads of those

An Christi. two Lords who apprehended him. About this time *Wenceslaus* the Emperour being deposed, *Robert* his successour made war with the Duke of *Millan*, by whom he was defeated and driven back to *Germany*: two years
1405. after the Duke of *Millan* died.

During the French kings indisposition, there arose a great debate between the Dukes of *Orleans* and *Burgundy* about the government of *France*: shortly after, *Philip le Hardy* Duke of *Burgundy* died; but the feud between these two houses grew hotter, so that *Paris* was much disturbed with the two factions, which came to that height, that one night the Duke of *Orleans* as he went late from the Queens lodgings, was murthered in the streets, by some that fled immediately into the Duke of *Burgundies* house; the Duke him-
1407. self fled to *Arras*, and from thence into his own Country, where he found an Army ready, which he conducted against the *Ligeois*, who would not receive their Bishop.

Chap. XI.

The History of England, *interwoven with some passages of* France *and* Scotland, *from the year* 1301. *till* 1350.

1301. A Peace being made between *France* and *England*, King *Edward* the first makes a third expedition into *Scotland*, where he did nothing but besiege *Sterling* three moneths, which in the end was surrendred upon composition; but the King kept not his promise: The Scots complain to the Pope of King *Edwards* usurpation over them, being hitherto a free Kingdome; the Pope writes to the King to forbear medling any way with *Scotland*, as belonging to the Church: The King desires his Holiness not to trouble himself in this matter, alleadging that *Scotland* appertained to the Crown of *England*. Then being furnished with men and money, he makes a fourth journey to *Scotland*, where he had fealty again sworn to him; then returns home, and removes the Exchequer from *York*. Sr. *Nicholas Segrave* being accused by Sr. *John Cromwel* for treason, offers to justifie himself in a duel, which the King denied him; whereupon he leaves the Kings camp, and goeth beyond sea to fight his enemy, for this he is adjudged guilty of death, but by the intercession of the Peers is pardoned: then the King makes inquisition for intruders on other mens lands (this writ was called *Trailbaston*) for batteries, ravishers, murtherers, *&c.* He terrifies divers of the Nobility for their former insolencies, and got great summes of them: He got the Pope to unty the Covenants made between him and his subjects, after he had sent him some golden vessels for his Chamber. But when he heard that *Bruce* was king of *Scotland*, he was startled, and begins to comply again with his people: *Pembrook*, *Clifford* and *Percy* are sent with an Army to relieve his Wardens of *Scotland*; he follows after with another Army: three hundred sons of Earls, Barons and Knights, assemble to wait upon the Prince in this expedition, all whom he girds with a Military belt, as the King did likewise the Prince, whom then he Knighted: then the King made a solemne vow to be revenged on *Bruce*
1307. for the death of *Cumin*.

The thirtieth penny of the Clergy and Laity, and the twentieth of all Merchants being granted, the King makes his last expedition into *Scotland*; before whose arrival, *Bruce* was defeated by the frauds and family of *Cumin*, assisted by the English forces that were sent before: *Bruce* escapes, his brother and some Lords are found out and executed; the wife of *Robert Bruce* is sent prisoner to *London*: the Countess of *Buchan* is put into a wodden Cage, and hung out upon the walls of *Barwick*. The King calls a Parliament at *Carlisle*, in which he yeelds to the Pope the first fruits of all Churches within his Dominions,

Dominions, and the Pope granted the King all the Tenths of thoſe Churches for two years. In the mean while King *Bruce* recovers new Forces, aſſailes the Earl of *Pembroke*, and defeats him; then three dayes after chaſes the Earle of *Glouceſter* into the Caſtle of *Ayer*, where he beſiegeth him; but the ſiege is raiſed by King *Edwards* forces, who at laſt, having ſhed ſo much blood, dieth of a Bloody-flux, upon the ſands of *Scotland* by *Burrough*, by which we may ſee, that the Kingdomes of this world are built upon ſandy foundations; he reigned four and thirty years ſeven moneths, his age was ſixty eight: his ſucceſſor was *Edward* the ſecond, on whom was conferred the Earldome of *Cornwall*, *Edmund* King *Richards* ſon of the *Romans* being dead without iſſue; but this Earldome young King *Edward* beſtowed on *Pierce Gaveſtone*, whom he recalled from his baniſhment, notwithſtanding his father had forbid him, being he had corrupted his youth, and cauſed this young Prince to commit divers riots, for which Prince *Edward* had been a while impriſoned by his Father. *An. Chriſti.*

King *Edward* the ſecond preſently upon his entring into his Government, diſpleaſed his people by recalling *Gaveſtone*, and beſtowing on him not onely *Cornwal*, but alſo the Biſhop of *Cheſters* goods, who had been his Fathers Treaſurer; him he arreſts, impriſons, and beſtowes all his eſtate upon this *Gaveſtone*, becauſe the Biſhop had complained againſt the Princes riots to his Father; then makes a new Treaſurer, and removes all his Fathers Officers without conſent of his Councel; he calls a Parliament at *Northampton*, in which a fifteenth of the Clergy, and a twentieth of the Laity are granted him. After his fathers Funerals, he is married to *Iſabel*, *Philip* the Fair's Daughter; the Nuptials are performed at *Bulloign* with great ſolemnity; in the ſecond year of his reign he is crowned, which was like to have been hindred by the Lords, becauſe he ſuffered himſelf to be totally ruled by *Gaveſtone*, who corrupted both him and his Court with all manner of exceſs and debauchery; but he promiſed the Lords, that he would perform their deſires the next Parliament. Shortly after his Coronation, all the Knights-Templars in *England* are arreſted and impriſoned. *Gaveſtone* is proſecuted by the Lords, whom he ſlights and nicknames. A Parliament is called, *Magna Charta* confirmed, ill Counſellors and ſtrangers are removed, the Kings power reſtrained, and *Gaveſtone* baniſhed into *Ireland*. Theſe Articles are ratified, and Excommunication denounced againſt ſuch as ſhould contradict them, by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, lately recalled from his baniſhment; but the King ſhortly after calls home his minion *Gaveſtone*, whom he marrieth to his Neece, ſiſter to *Gilbert de Clare* Earle of *Glouceſter*, and daughter to *John de Acres*, and beſtowes on him the Jewels of the Crown, which he ſold to ſtrangers, and conveyed away much treaſure. 1318.

The Barons threaten the King with a war, unleſs he put away his minion, who therefore is baniſhed again, and threatned with death, if ever hereafter he be found within the Kingdome; he ſhelters himſelf a while in *Flanders*; but finding no ſecurity there, nor elſewhere, returnes to the King, who joyfully receives him; the Lords upon this combine againſt him, an Army is raiſed, the King is beſought to deliver up *Gaveſtone*; but he conveyes him to *New-Caſtle*, where underſtanding of the Barons Army, they both remove by Sea to *Scarborough Caſtle*, where the King leaves him guarded, and goeth himſelf to *Warwickſhire*; *Scarborough* is beſieged, *Gaveſtone* is taken, whom the Lords (notwithſtanding the King ſollicited for his life) condemned him to the block, and beheaded. After this the Lords threaten the King, that unleſs he would ratifie the laſt Articles, they would force him: The Prelates, with the Earl of *Glouceſter*, and two Cardinals ſent from the Pope, labour to reconcile the King and Lords; the Cardinals are checked for intermedling with buſineſs concerned them not; yet the Lords yield to deliver up to the king the Treaſures and Jewels which they took from *Gaveſtone*, ſo that he would grant

An. Christi. grant their Petitions. About this time Queen *Isabel* at *Windsor* is delivered of a son named *Edward*; a Parliament shortly after is called, in which the King complaines against the Lords, and they against him; at last they are perswaded to crave pardon of the king, which they obtained, and their Articles are confirmed.

In this mean while king *Bruce* growes strong in *Scotland*, which he had almost totally regained, and with an Army invades *England*; king *Edward* raiseth an Army of one hundred thousand against him: Neer *Sterling* upon the River *Bannock*, *Bruce* with thirty thousand horse and foot encountred king *Edward*; the *Scots* had digged trenches which they pitched full of sharp stakes, and covered them over with hurdles and turfe, by which the *English* horse were confounded, and their whole Army utterly defeated; here were killed divers Lords and Earls of *England*, seven hundred knights, Esquires and Gentlemen, of common Souldiers ten thousand, many prime men taken
1315. prisoners, but the king escaped back to *York*, who desired to be revenged on the *Scots*, but could not; the *English* borderers run all away, leaving their countrey to the mercy of the enemy. This war was accompanied with Famine, Dearth, and Pestilence, so that a Parliament is called at *London* to abate the price of Victuals; the Dearth notwithstanding lasted three years, by reason of excessive raines, and a murrain among the Cattel, both the King and Lords were pinched in their diet. About this time the Earle of *Lancasters* wife is taken out of his house at *Canford* in *Dorsetshire*, by a deformed Dwarff, claiming her for his wife, and by her the Earldomes of *Lincoln* and *Salisbury*; it's thought the King was an actor herein, for which the King was taxed, even by a woman disguised on horse-back, who rode into *Westminster-Hall*, when the king was at dinner there on *Whitsunday*, and delivered him a Letter, wherein his evil courses were reproved; she confessed she was hired so to do by a knight, who likewise justified his fact.

Not only did *Robert Bruce* overthrow the king twice, and obtain the Crown of *Scotland*, but he sends over his brother also with an Army into *Ireland*, a great part whereof he conquered, and made himself king, which he held three years. K. *Edward* it seems intended to have had the Earl of *Lancaster* murthered by the *Scots*, as appeared by a Letter sent from him to the *Scots* k. which was intercepted, and the messenger executed. The *Scots* plunder as far as *York*: Hereupon a Parliament is called at *London*, money and men are raised, but the *English* Army mutined and came to nothing; *Barwick* is surrendred to the *Scots*; k. *Edward* beleaguers it; but the *Scots* to raise the siege, enter with new Forces upon *England*, and had almost surprised the Queen neer *York*; the Earl of *Lancaster* withdrawes himself from the siege of *Barwick*, because the king promised the Towne to *Hugh Spencer* his minion; this *Spencer* with his father so exasperated the Lords, that they took up Armes against the king, and forced him to banish them both. Ten thousand *English* are defeated again by the *Scots*, who killed 3000 of them; wherefore K. *Edward* concludes a Truce with them for two years, and returns with dishonour home. The Queen is denied lodging in the Castle of *Leeds*, belonging to the Lord *Badlesmore*, as she was going towards *Canterbury*, whereupon the King besiegeth and takes it, hangs up the Keeper, *Badlesmores* wife and children are sent to the Tower, and all his estate seised on; then the king raiseth an Army against the Barons, whereof divers submitted themselves to him, chiefly the two *Roger Mortimers*; The Lords that held out are discomfited by the kings Forces; the Earl of *Lancaster* with many other Lords are taken and executed. Presently upon this the King marcheth with a mighty Army into *Scotland*, whence he was forced for want to return without blowes; the *Scots* pursue him, and had almost taken him, as they did his treasure with the Earl of *Richmond*; so having wasted all as far as the walls of *York*, return richly laden into *Scotland*. Sir *Andrew Harkley*, who for taking *Lancaster* prisoner at *Borough-Brigs*, was made

made Earle of *Carlile*; upon ſuſpition for combining with the *Scots*, is drawn, hanged, and quartered for treaſon, at *London*. An. Chriſti. 1358. 1327.

And now the King and his Clergy fall aſunder about the Biſhop of *Hereford*, whom he arreſted and accuſed of high treaſon for aiding the rebellious Lords; he refuſed to anſwer without leave of the Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*; his fellow-Biſhops then took him from the Bar, and deliver'd him to *Canterbury*; afterward being taken and convented, the Biſhop with their Croſſes erected took him away again from the place of judgement, and excommunication denounced againſt thoſe that ſhould lay hands on him; but the king finding him guilty, ſeizeth on his eſtate. In the mean while the French king ſeiſeth on all the king of *England's* Territories there, for omitting to come over when he was ſummoned, to do his homage: The *Spencers* held it unſafe for him to go over in perſon, his kingdome being ſo diſtempered, therefore the Queen, after to the French K. is ſent, who negotiates ſo with her brother, that all quarrels ſhould end, if king *Edward* would give to his ſon *Edward* the Dutchy of *Aquitaine* and Earldome of *Pontheu*, and ſend him over to do homage, which was aſſented to; ſo the Prince is ſent over with the Biſhop of *Exeter*, who perceiving ſhortly after his arrival ſome plots between the Queen, the Prince, and *Roger Mortimer* lately eſcaped out of the Tower of *London*, acquaints the king therewith; he upon this ſends preſently for them; but they neglecting to come, are proclaimed enemies to the king, and order taken at all the Ports, that they ſhall not be ſuffered to land; The Queen, upon ſuſpition that her brother would betray her to the *Spencers*, who had bribed his Counſellors thereto, withdraws to the Earl of *Henault* and *Holland*, whoſe daughter *Philip* the contracts with her ſon the Prince; by the Earls means ſhe is tranſported over into *England*, lands at *Harwich*, with the Prince, the Earle of *Kent* the kings brother, *Pembroke*, *Mortimer*, *John* the the Earl of *Henaults* brother, and 2500 *Flemings*; ſhe is received by divers of the diſcontented Lords, and by the Biſhops of *Hereford* and *Lincoln*.

The king upon this craved aide of *London*, but found none; Death is proclaimed to thoſe that aſſiſted the Queen; all her adherents are commanded to be deſtroyed, except the Queen, Prince, and Earle of *Kent*; a thouſand pounds proffered for *Mortimers* head. So leaving the City, he departs towards the weſt, where he is ſlighted, without hope of any aide; the Queen marcheth with her increaſing Army to *Oxford*, the Biſhop of *Hereford* preached, and concluded from his Text, 2 *King.* 24. *My head aketh*, that the aking and ſick head of a kingdom was to be taken off. The Queen proffers 2000 pound for young *Spencers* head, and proclaims, that the Souldiers ſhould not take from the ſubject any thing without ready money, otherwiſe to be puniſhed with the loſs of a finger, hand, or head, if the value of the thing taken came to three pence, ſix pence, or twelve pence. The king finding no aide, and being perſecuted by the Queen, upon ſuſpition that he would have murthered her, ſecures old *Hugh Spencer* in the Caſtle of *Briſtol*, and commits himſelf to the Sea, lands in *Wales*, and is hid in the Abbey of *Neth*: the Queen is met at *Glouceſter* with aide from the North, then wins the Caſtle of *Briſtol*; *Hugh Spencer* Earle of *Winchester*, is taken, drawn, hanged in his Coat-Armour, headed and quartered; at *Hereford* ſhe proclaimes, that if the king would return and rule the State as he ſhould, he ſhould be reſtored to all again; but he came not, wherefore the Prince is made Guardian of the kingdome, hath fealty ſworn to him; a new Chancellor and Treaſurer are choſen.

The king is at laſt found, and by *Henry* Earl of *Lancaſter*, brother to the late *Thomas*, is conveyed to the Caſtle of *Kenelworth*; the younger *Spencer* now Earle of *Glouceſter*, is drawn and hanged on a Gallows fifty foot high, and had the like execution which his father had; the Earl of *Arundel*, with two Barons, and others that adhered to the king, were executed at *Hereford*; *Baldock* the Chancellor, being a Prieſt, was pined to death in *Newgate*. The *Londoners* forc'd

An. Christi. force the Maior, who held for the king, to take their part; all prisoners are let
out; the Tower is taken, and *John Weston* the Constable put to death; the
1327. Bishop of *Exeter*, the kings Treasurer, is murthered: the Queen returning
with the Prince to *London*, call a Parliament, in which the King is deposed as
unfit to govern, Prince *Edward* is elected; *Canterbury* preacheth on this Text,
Vox populi vox Dei; the Queen seems discontented at this election; the Prince
to comfort her, swore he would not accept of the Crown without his fathers
consent; wherefore three Bishops, two Earls, two Abbots, and four Barons,
three Knights of each Shire, and Burgesses of every City and Borough are sent
to the imprisoned King to require the renunciation of his Crown, which he 10
assented to, having excused his misgovernment, and thanked them for elect- 01
ing his son. After this he is removed to the Castle of *Corff*, where he was mur-
thered by his Keepers, who through a horn, which they put in his fundament,
pierced his guts with a burning spit, having reigned nineteen years and about
eight moneths: After his deposing he was the Founder of *Oriel* Colledge and
S. *Mary* Hall in *Oxford*; he had two sons, P. *Edward*, and *John* of *Eltham* Earl of
Cornwal, who died young in *Scotland*; his daughter *Joan* married to *David*
Prince of *Scotland*, and *Elianor* to the Duke of *Gelders*: Some write that he
was carried up and down from one Castle to another, that his friends might
not find him, and all plots disappointed, and that he was murthered in *Bark-* 20
ley Castle; but I will not strive about circumstances.

King *Edward* the third being but fourteen years old when he began his reign
was thought unfit as yet to manage the kingdome; therefore five Bishops
and seven Lords are chosen to govern the kingdome; but the Queen and *Ro-*
ger Lord *Mortimer* ruled all. The strangers that came over with the Queen un-
der the Earl of *Henaults* brother, are sent to joyn with the *English* Army at *York*
1328. against *Scotland*, but a quarrel arose between the *English* and the strangers, so
that nothing was effected, and the *Scots* Army returned. The next year the
Marriage with *Philippa* of *Henault* is solemnized, and a Parliament held at *Nor-*
thampton, in which a dishonourable peace is concluded with *Scotland*, and their 30
homage released; *Jane* the Kings sister is marred to *David* son to *Robert Bruce*;
Sr *Roger Mortimer* is made Earl of *March*, the Instrument or Charter of the *Scots*
fealty is restored: In the Parliament held shortly after at *Winchester*, *Edmund*
Earl of *Kent* this young Kings Uncle, for intending to restore the King his bro-
ther, is condemned; he stood four hours on the Scaffold for want of an Execu-
tioner, at last one was found.

The next year a Parliament is held at *Nottingham*, in which the Queen
loseth her great Joynture, being three parts of the kings Revenues, and is put
to a pension of a thousand pounds *per annum*. *Mortimer* is accused for procu-
ring the late kings death, for receiving a bribe of 20000 pounds from the *Scots* 40
by which the Army escaped at *Stanhop*-Park; for making a dishonourable
peace with *Scotland*, for being too familiar with the Queen, and for the death
of the kings Uncle; for these he is condemned, drawn, and hanged at *Tyburne*,
where his body hung two dayes as a spectacle. After this, king *Edward* being
summoned by *Philip Valois* now k. of *France*, goeth over to do his homage for
the Dutchy of *Guien*; by this he acknowledged the right of his Competitor
for that kingdome, because king *Charles* being dead without issue male, the
Crown by the Salique Law fell to *Philip Valois* the Cousin-german, and not
to king *Edward*, though neerer, and the Nephew of the said king *Charles*, as we
have already shewed in the History of *France*. King *Edward* then did his ho- 50
mage, by presenting himself in person in the great Church of *Amiens*, in a crim-
son Velvet Gown embroidered with Leopards, having his Crown on his
head, a sword by his side, and golden spurs on his heels; king *Philip* sate in
his Chair of estate in a violet-coloured Velvet Gown embroidered with gol-
den Lillies, his Crown on his head, and Scepter in his hand, in the midst of his
Peers; king *Edward* by command of the Chamberlain of *France* puts off his
Crown,

crown, ſword and ſpurs, then kneeling on a crimſon velvet cuſhion before king *Philip*, promiſeth to be loyal as Duke of *Guyen* and Peer of *France*, to King *Philip*; the Chamberlain pronouncing the words of homage before, and puting his hands together between the French kings hands; then king *Edward* riſeth, and kiſſeth the French king (as the Lord of the Fee) in the mouth. *An. Chriſti.*

After this, k. *Edward* returns to *England*, and aids *Edward Baliol* ſon to *John*, who 32 years before had uſurped the crown, and was depoſed. This *Edward Baliol*, whilſt the young k. *David Bruce* was in *France*, got himſelf to be crowned king at *Scone*, having firſt defeated the Bruceans, by the help of thoſe Scots that were for *Baliol*; yet this new King is driven out of *Scotland* by the Bruceans. King *Edward* comes with a great Army, and after three moneths ſiege takes *Berwick*, and defeats the Scots army at *Halidown-hill*, who came to raiſe the ſiege; here were ſlain 7 Earls, 900 Knights and Baronets, 400 Eſquires, and 32000 common ſouldiers, (the Scotiſh writers mention but 14000.) The Lord *Seaton*, who was governour of *Berwick*, conditions with king *Edward*, that if reſcue came not by ſuch a day, he would render him up the Town, in aſſurance of which he delivers him two of his ſons; but when king *Edward* ſaw the Scots forces come before the day, he ſummons *Seaton* to render the Town preſently, or elſe he ſhould ſee his two ſons executed: The Lord being doubtful what to doe, is encouraged by his wife rather to loſe their two ſons, then his faith to his Prince, charity to his Country, and dignity of his Family. And ſo the two young Gentlemen were hanged. 1313.

K. *Baliol* being ſetled in *Scotland*, at *Newcaſtle* doth homage to the king of *England*, for which the Nobility of *Scotland* are diſcontented, and threaten to drive him out: So that k. *Edward* was forced to raiſe vaſt ſums of mony upon the Engliſh to maintain the Scotiſh war, and three years together goeth thither in perſon with new Armies, being deſirous to ſubdue *Scotland* before he attempted *France*. A Parliament is held at *London*, wherein the *Flemings* are invited hither to make their Cloth, becauſe no Wooll was to be tranſported beyond ſeas; this was to draw the *Flemings* to ſide with him againſt the *French*: It was alſo enacted, that none ſhould wear other then Engliſh cloth, except the King, Queen, and their children: Tenths, Fifteenths, the Churches treaſure for the Holy war, Subſidies of wools, and the goods of *Lombards*, *Cluneaques*, and *Ciſtercians*, are given to the king towards this expedition into *France*; the Emperour and divers German Princes ſide with him. Then the King with his Queen and Children go over to *Flanders*, thence enter *France*; the two Armies look upon each other, nothing was acted, only a Hare ſtarted before the head of the French army, which occaſioned a new knighthood, call'd knights of the Hare: other particulars we have mentioned in the French ſtory. 1333.

K. *Edward* after a years abſence returns into *England*, leaving the Queen in *Brabant*: He lands about midnight at the Tower, which he found unguarded. He calls a Parliament, and receives great ſubſidies of Clergy & Laity, and hath loans of many wealthy men: For his mighty ſubſidies, divers pardons are granted, and the great Charter confirmed. The Engliſh are worſted at *Liſle*; but the French fleet is beat at ſea. *Tournay* is beſieged by the Engliſh; A challenge is ſent by k. *Edward* to k. *Philip*, but rejected. After *Tournay* is beſieged 3 months, by the mediation of *Philippa's* mother (a Nun) truce is concluded for one year. So Q. *Philippa* after 3 years abſence returns to England with the king: ſhe had two ſons in *Flanders*; *Lionel* D. of *Clarence*, and *John* (born at *Gaunt*) D. of *Lancaſter*. The king complains that he was forced to raiſe the ſiege from *Tournay*, for want of mony, for which he accuſeth *John Stratford* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*; he by his letters (for he durſt not come to the king in perſon) cleares himſelf, and accuſeth the king of tyrannie and oppreſſion, chiefly of the Clergy, divers of whom he had impriſon'd: the king is forc'd to collogue with his Parliament for more ſupplies of monies, & confirms divers grants, which when his turn was ſerved, he revoked. Shortly after this, *John of Montfort* being in competition

An. Christi. with *Charles de Blais* about the Dutchy of *Britany*, craves aid of king *Edward*, as we have shewed before. Many bickerings there were between the *French* and *English* in *Britany*, till a Truce of three years was conluded.

K. *Edward* after this drives k. *David* out of *Scotland* into the Islands. *William Montacute* Earl of *Salisbury* conquers the Isle of *Man*, whom k. *Edward* stiled king thereof. A Society of the knights of the Round-table, in imitation of k. *Arthur* is designed, and a chamber of 200 foot round erected at *Windsor* for the same:

1343. then began the Order of the Garter at *Windsor*, occasioned by the garter of the Countess of *Salisbury*, taken up by the king in dancing with her, the number of the knights are 26 besides the king; these held a yearly feast at *Windsor*, where the same king *Edward* founded a Church, and gave to certain Priests and Prebends large stipends to serve there; he ordain'd also 13 aged decayed Gentlemen to be there maintained, to pray for the prosperity of the Knights.

In a Parliament at *Westminster* complaint is made against the collation of Benefices on strangers, therefore a Letter is sent to Pope *Clement* the 6. from the Lords and Commons, seconded by the Kings Letters, by Sir *John Shordich* a civil Lawyer, desiring the Pope to recall all such collations and reservations; all Patrons also are prohibited to grant such collations under pain of imprisonment or death; in this Parliament Archbishop *Stratford* upon submission is reconciled to the King, and P. *Edward* about the age of 13. is created P. of *Wales*, a tenth is granted by the Clergy, and a fifteenth by the Laity, then general musters are taken through the whole kingdom; then k. *Edward* goeth over to *Flanders*, *James Artevile* is imployed by him to induce the *Flemings* to revolt from their Earl, but he had his brains beaten out at *Gaunt* for his labour, and so the kings design failed him. And now the wars break out again between *France* and *England*; K. *Edward* left the Lords *Piercy* and *Nevil* Wardens of *England*, and takes with him the young Prince being aged 18 years, and an Army of 4000 men at Armes, 10000 Archers, besides Welsh and Irish; he lands in *Normandy*, and divides his men into three battails, one to march on his left hand along the sea-coast, the other on the right conducted by the two Marshals, and himself in the midst with the main Army; the Earl of *Huntington* is Admiral of the Fleet, he first sacks *Caranton* and burns it, having found the heads of *Bacon*, *Piercy*, and others there massacred by K. *Philip*, then he takes *Lo*, *Cain*, and other Towns, then he goeth over the river *Some* and defeats the French which were sent to hinder his passage, being 1000 French horse and 6000 foot; the English Army consists of 30000. the Prince hath the Vantguard, wherein were 800 men at Armes, 2000 Archers and 1000 other; the second battel was committed to the Earls of *Arundel* and *Northampton*, the Lords *Rosse*, *Willoughby*, S. *Alban*, *Multon*, and others, wherein were 800 men at Armes, and 2000 Archers, the third battail was led by the K. having 700 men at Armes and 2000 Archers; the French Army consisted of 60000. wherof there were above 3000 Barons, Knights and Gentlemen, besides 1000 more of the Earle of *Savoys*, the Vantguard he commits to his brother *Count de Alanson*, the Rear to the Earle of *Savoy*, the main battel he leads himself; *Alanson* contrary to the k. of *Bohemia's* advice would not suffer the *Genoves* Infantry (which consisted of 1500 Cross-Bows) should make the first front, therefore by changing the seat of the Army he caused disorder and discontent, besides a sudden rain fell which dissolved their strings, and made their Bowes useless.

King *Edward* from a Windmill-hill perceiving the enemy disordered, sends to charge the *Genoves*, who presently recoil; *Alanson* with *Savoy*, *Lorain*, and the *Delphin de Vienois*, through the *Genoves* rush furiously upon the *English* battel where the Prince was; the French king seeing his brother like to be worsted by the *English*, makes up to dis-ingage him; the fight grew hot and doubtful; King *Edward* is sent for to come up with his aide, but refused, when he knew the Prince was alive, for he desired that the honour of the day should be his; the French Kings horse being slain, and he convey'd out of the field,

the

the reſt were diſheartned, and ſo the *Engliſh* got the day, 30000 were ſlain, of which were 15000 Earles, Barons, and Gentlemen; other particulars we have touched in the French ſtory: the next morning King *Edward* ſent out three hundred Lances, and two thouſand Archers, to diſcover what was become of the enemy, who found ſome Troops comming to the Army, being ignorant of what had hapned; theſe are alſo defeated. The *Engliſh* Forces ſent to aide *Monfort* againſt *Charles de Blois*, prevailed, and took *Charles* priſoner with ſome Lords and Knights. That year alſo King *David* of *Scotland* is overthrown by the Queen of *England* and her forces; fifteen thouſand *Scots* were ſlain, the Earles of *Fife*, *Menteth*, *Murrey*, *Sutherland*, with the Lord *Douglaſs*, the Arch-biſhop of Saint *Andrews*, and others are taken priſoners. *Henry* of *Lancaſter* with an Army of ſix thouſand pillageth the countrey of *Poitou*. King *Edward* beſiegeth *Calice*. The French King having puniſhed his Treaſurers and Collectors, raiſeth a great ſum of money, and with it an Army, but could not raiſe the ſiege from *Calice*, and ſo breaks up his Army and returnes to *Paris*; two Cardinals are ſent to make peace, but could not: *Calice* is ſurrendred, which continued with the *Engliſh* two hundred and ten years after; ſo a Truce being made for ſome moneths, King *Edward* returnes triumphing home. *An. Chriſti.*

These wars were accompanied with great plagues and famine, ſo that in a ſhort time half of the people died. King *Edward* goeth over again to *Calice*, underſtanding it was like to be betrayed by the Governour for 20000 crowns, Monſieur *de Charney* ſent the money before, and he comes after with ſome Forces, the money is received, and the King goeth out with his Forces to meet him; a ſharp encounter there was, the King was diſguiſed, and twice beaten down by one *Riboumont*, whom afterward he took priſoner, and for his valour rewarded, and ſet him free without ranſome. After this the King got the Caſtle of *Guiſnes* neer *Calice* for a ſum of money, and ſhortly after the French King died. 1350.

CHAP. XII.

A proſecution of the Engliſh *ſtory from the year* 1350. *till* 1399.

THe *Spaniards* had taken ſome *Engliſh* Ships laden with wines in the River *Garonne*, wherefore King *Edward* ſeiſed on ſome *Spaniſh* Ships laden with cloath, as they were paſſing from *Flanders*. The Monies here are abated in weight, and yet paſs according to the former value, which cauſed much murmuring among the people. The Staple of Woolls is withdrawn from *Flanders*, and ſet up in *England*, becauſe the young Earl *Lewis* on whom King *Edward* would have beſtowed his daughter, was got away and married to the Duke of *Brabants* daughter. A Parliament is held at *Weſtminſter*, in which Weares, Mills, and other ſtoppages of Rivers hindring boats, are commanded to be removed; all common Whores are injoyned to wear hoods ſtriped with divers colours, and the wrong ſides of their garments outward. *Henry* Lord *Derby* is made Duke of *Lancaſter*. *Charles de Blois* is ſet free to procure his ranſome of 40000 Florens. The Pope labours to make peace between the two Kings, but could not, becauſe the French king would not part with the Homage due for the Dutchy of *Aquitain*. The Prince of *Wales* ſets forth with 300 ſail for *Gaſcoign*, with 1000 men at Arms, 2000 Archers, beſides the Welch foot. Three moneths after K. *Edward* paſſes over to *Calice* with another Army, where he was met with 1000 *German* & *Flemiſh* Mercinaries, his Army conſiſted of 3000 men at Arms, 2000 horſe-Archers beſides the foot; *London* ſent 300 men at Armes and 500 Archers: but this Army returned without effecting any thing, for the French king would not fight.

An. Christi. After this, King *Edward* is invited over into *France* by the King of *Navar*, whom the French king had imprisoned, as we have shewed; for this expedition fifty shillings is granted to the king upon every sack of Wool for six years: but before he goeth to *France*, he marcheth with an Army to recover *Barwick*, which had been taken by the Scots whilst he was last at *Calis*; he regains the Town, and *Baliol* resigns his share of *Scotland* to him: In the interim Prince *Edward* wasteth much of the French Territories, so that the French king is forced to raise another Army, which encounters with the English near *Poytiers*, and is overthrown by them; the particulars we have set down in the French story: the *French* king is brought over to *England*, and lodged in the *Savoy*: King *David* of *Scotland* is ransomed: *Paris* rebels against the Dolphin, causeth him to release the king of *Navar*; the Provost assaults the Dolphins house with three thousand Artificers; he rusheth into his chamber, and slew two Marshals of *France*, and withall takes and puts on the Dolphins hat edged with gold on his own head, and sets his own party-coloured hat on the Dolphins head, and so he goeth out, causing the two dead bodies to be trailed along the streets for the people to gaze on: then he writes to the other Cities of *France* to joyn with him, and to take his livery as the Dolphin had done; but they refused: the Dolphin in the mean while escapes from *Paris*, raiseth an Army, and quels the *Parisians*. These troubles hindred the Kings ransome.

King *Edward* having kept the *French* king four years prisoner, and finding that there was no haste to ransome him, and that he would not yeeld to do homage for the kingdome of *France*, resolves to take possession by the sword; therefore he passeth over to *Calis* with a Fleet of eleven hundred sail; he divides his Army into three battalies, one he commits to the Prince, another to the Duke of *Lancaster*, the third he leads himself; he marcheth to *Paris*, and took divers Towns by the way; the Dutchie of *Burgoyne* redeems it self from spoil for two hundred thousand florins of gold: the Dolphin was now at *Paris* which he had mastered, king *Edward* could not get him to fight, where-
fore he returns to *Britany*, where having refreshed and increased his Army
returns to *Paris*, which he found so well fortified by the Dolphin that he could
do no good on it: at last, being terrified with thunder, vows to make his peace
1361. with *France*, which was done, and king *John* ransomed: king *Edward* calls a Parliament, in which the accord is ratified by the Estates. The Priors aliens have their land restored, which were held from them during these wars. Another great plague followed, in which with many other Noble-men, died the D. of *Lancaster* a good Patriot, whose daughter and heir was married to *John* of *Gaunt*, who thereby is made D. of *Lancaster*: the Prince marries the Countess of *Kent*, daughter to *Edmund* brother to *Ed.* 2. *Aquitain* is bestowed on the Prince, who with his wife and Court goeth over to live there; his son *Lionel* Earl of *Ulster* is sent into *Ireland* with fifteen hundred men, and is made Duke of *Clarence*; king *Edward* keeps the day of his birth, and fiftieth year of his age, as a Jubile, and pardons divers offences; he causeth the Common-pleas which before were in *French* to be turned into *English*; he makes many good Laws against gluttony, drunkenness, excess of apparrel; he makes Clergy-men his chief officers, because he relied upon their sanctity.

He was visited shortly after by *John* the *French* king, who died here, as likewise by the king of *Scots* and the king of *Cyprus*. Prince *Edward* after his going over to *Burdeaux*, assisted *Peter* of *Castile* against his brother *Henry*, whom the *French* aided; he beat the *French*, established *Peter* in his Throne, and returned victorious to *Burdeaux*; but not long after *Peter* is overthrown and killed by his brother, so the Prince is deceived of the great rewards promised by *Peter*; hence the souldiers murmure for want of their pay, to pacifie whom the Prince is forced to raise taxes on the Country of *Aquitain*; complaint is made to *Charles* the fifth the *French* king, who summons the Prince to appear

before

before him at *Paris*, contrary to the Articles of agreement between the two Kings, the Prince refuseth to come, hereupon most of his Country revolt to the *French*, so that what king *Edward* with much blood and treasure had been getting in two years, is lost in one. After this, the French king sends a Navy to trouble the coast of *England*: king *Edward* sends *John* of *Gaunt* with an Army unto *Calis*, which marched without any great opposition to *Burdeaux* to the Prince his brother, wasting the Country as he went: another *English* Army is sent unto St. *Omers* under Sir *Robert Knowles*, depopulating all in his way till he came to *Paris*; he took some Towns in the Earldome of *Anjou*, which again revolted to the French upon a defeat given to the *English* by king *Charles*. *An. Christi.*

King *Edward* upon this disorder, calls a Parliament, in which the Temporality grants him a Subsidie of fifteen thousand pounds, but refused by the Clergy, wherefore the king in anger removes them from their places of trust and profit: the Prince being sickly returns home to *England*, with his wife and son *Richard*, born at *Burdeaux*, and resigns the Dutchy of *Aquitain* to his father; the Duke of *Lancaster* being left behinde, and having buried his wife two years before in the great sickness, in which also Queen *Philippa* died, he marrieth *Constance*, eldest daughter to *Peter* king of *Castile*, by whom hee had the empty Title of King of *Castile* and *Leon*, but their daughter *Katherine* afterward became Queen of *Castile* and *Leon*, being married to *Henry* 3. who was in possession: her posterity were kings of *Spain*. *Edmund* Earl of *Cambridge* married *Isabel* king *Peters* youngest daughter; *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence* marrieth the Duke of *Millans* daughter, and shortly after died: the other two returned to *England* with their wives. *Rochel* is besieged by sea and land; the Earl of *Pembrook* is sent with forty ships well manned and monied, but he is defeated there by the *Spanish* Armado, and taken prisoner; King *Edward* sent forth an Army to recover these losses, but was beat back by contrary winds; nine hundred thousand marks spent in this expedition. Shortly after this the Duke of *Lancaster* lost his Army among the mountains of *France*, before he came to *Burdeaux*: the next year he returns, having effected nothing, but lost all the Towns of *Gascoigne*, except *Burdeaux* and *Bayon*.

King *Edward* being supplied with a new Subsidie, desires to end the quarrel with *France* by Treaty; two years are spent about this at *Bruges*, but nothing done; for the French demand *Calis*, and great sums of money, which could not be granted: In the mean time the Staple is removed from *Calis*, because of the danger of Merchants goods. Another Parliament is called at *Westminster*; the King calls for money, the people for redress of abuses in his officers, and that the Duke of *Lancaster*, Lord *Latimer* the Chamberlain, *Alice Pierce* the Kings Concubine, and some others might be removed from Court; to which the King assented. Another Jubilee is kept in this Parliament, being the fiftieth year of the Kings reign; another general pardon is granted, onely *William Wicham* Bishop of *Winchester* is excepted by procurement of the Duke of *Lancaster*; but this Jubilee is turned to sorrow by the death of the Prince, upon which the excluded parties return to Court; the Speaker of the House of Commons *la Mare* is committed to perpetual imprisonment at *Nottingham* at the suit of *Alice Pierce*, who now took upon her to sit and intermedle in the Courts of Justice; the Duke of *Lancaster* now manageth all: but to prevent mischief, *Richard* of *Burdeaux* in Parliament is created Earle of *Chester* and *Cornwall*, and then Prince of *Wales*; lest *John* of *Lancaster* should supplant him; the Earl of *March* is commanded by *Lancaster* over to guard *Calis*, which he refuseth, therefore his Office of Marshal is given to Sir *Henry Piercy*. Prince *Richard* is set in the Kings seat in Parliament by *Lancaster*, who demands of the people more Subsidies; which is denied till *la Mare* the Speaker be enlarged: then the Duke demands aid from the

Bishops,

An. Christi. Bishops, that is also refused till the Bishop of *Winchester* be restored.

At this time *John Wickliffe*, being deprived justly of his Benefice in *Oxford* by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, did begin to inveigh against the pride and wealth of the Clergy and Monks, which hath at most times been a pleasant doctrine to covetous mindes; he got presently store of disciples, afterward called *Lollards*, professing poverty, going bare-footed, and meanly apparelled; he taught, that in times of necessity Lay-men might seise on the Churches and Monks revenues. These opinions he preached boldly, being supported by *Lancaster* and *Piercy*; wherefore he is cited to answer in *Pauls* before the Bishops: at the day appointed he is accompanied by *Lancaster* and the Lord Marshal, who animated him against the Bishops; some harsh language fell out between the Bishop of *London* & *Piercy*, because he commanded *Wickliffe* to sit down before his Ordinary; *Lancaster* took the Marshals part, who threatned to pull down the pride of the Bishops, and to pull *London* out of the Church by the hair of his head; this so exasperated the Londoners, that they vowed rather to lose their lives, then suffer their Bishop to be thus used; the more incensed they were against the Duke, because he threatned to take away the Maior of *Londons* power. The next morning the Citizens assemble, and being animated by the Lord *Fitzwater* (whom at first they suspected to be their enemy) take Arms, assail the Marshals Inne, broke open the gates, and set a prisoner at liberty; but found not the Marshal, who with the Duke dined that day at the *Savoy*, which by the multitude is assailed; the Duke and *Piercy* escape by a boat, and complain to the Princess, who then was at *Hennington* near *Lambeth*, with the young Prince: a Priest for speaking against *Peter la Mare* was wounded to death; the people thinking he had been the Marshal disguised; the Bishop of *London* was fain to go himself and appease the people, who upon his exhortation, and being the time of Lent, forbare to assault the Dukes house, whose arms with the Marshals they hung up reversed in sign of treason: they also were perswaded by the Princess to make their peace with the Duke, which they assented to, if he would have permitted the Bishop of *Winchester*, and *la Mare* to come to their answer. They sent also to the sick King, excusing this tumult, and that it was raised upon information that the *Londoners* should lose their liberties, which the King assures them was never in his thoughts, but rather to enlarge them.

The Parliament considering the Kings wants, grants him a Subsidie, which was to be committed to certain Earls and Barons to see it issued; every one above the age of 14. years was to pay four pence, only Almesmen excepted; every beneficed Parson was to pay 12. pence, and other religious persons four pence the head. The Maior and Aldermen are brought to the King at *Shene*, and commanded to crave pardon of the Duke for their offences; they again excuse their innocency, and promise to bring in the malefactors who should make satisfaction, but for all this they were put out of their places, and others put in their room: in the interim, the Kings Concubine and other his attendants, perceiving him dying, snatcht what they could, even the rings from his fingers, and pack away, leaving him alone with a poor Priest, who willed him to ask mercy for his offences, and to remember his Saviour, which he did, and so died at *Shene* near *Richmond* the sixty fourth year of his age, having reigned fifty years and four months. He founded *East-minster* an Abbey near the Tower, a Nunnery at *Detford*, Kings-hall in *Cambridge*, an Hospital at *Calice*, St. *Stevens* Chappel at *Westminster*, with the endowment of three hundred pound *per annum* to that Church, besides his augmenting of *Windsor* Chappel, with provision for the Church-men and poor Knights; He enlarged also *Windsor* Castle, and that of *Queenborough*, with the Fortifications of *Calice*: his wife built Queens Colledge in *Oxford*, who bare him seven sons, five of them had issue; *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, *John* Duke of *Lancaster*, *Edmund* Earl of *Cambridge*, Duke of *York* afterward,

afterward, and *Thomas* of *Woodstock*; she had five daughters, four lived to be married; *Isabel* the eldest to *Ingelram* Earl of *Soissons* and *Bedford*, *Joan* to *Alphonso* 11. King of *Castile*, *Mary* to *Montfort* Duke of *Britany*, and *Margaret* to *Hastings* Earl of *Pembrook*. *An. Christi.*

Richard 2. son to the black Prince succeeded, being eleven years old. In the first year of his reign, King *Charles* of *France* assisted by the *Spaniard*, ransackt and burned *Plymouth*, *Dartmouth*, *Portsmouth*, *Rye*, and other Maritine Towns, but they were driven to their ships by the Earls of *Cambridge*, *Buckingham* and *Salisbury*. *Alexander Ramsey* in the night with forty other Scots, scaled the walls of *Berwick* Castle, and took it, intending also to surprise the Town, but were prevented by the Townesmen, who hewed away the stayes of Drawbridge, which fell into the ditch, and so the Scots were imprisoned; the *English* besiege the Castle with ten thousand men, at last it was with much difficulty yeelded, *Ramsey* onely was pardoned for his valour. Shortly after the *French* land again, who spoil *Dover*, *Winchelsay*, *Hastings*, and *Gravesend*, and return home with great booty: To be revenged of these wrongs, a Parliament is called, a Subsidie granted of four pence by every man and woman above fourteen years of age, (but the levying of this caused much trouble) eight thousand men are sent over into *France* who spoil all in their way till they come to *Britany*, where they were kindly received by the Duke *John Montfort*. Upon the payment of the foresaid Subsidie, a dangerous rebellion began, which was promoted by *John Wall* a factious Priest, who told the meaner sort of people that they were the sons of *Adam*, and had as great right to the wealth of the land as the chief Lords thereof; whereupon multitudes of the baser sort both in the City and Country flock together, who make *Wat Tyler* a Taylor their Captain; *Wall* the Priest, *Jack Straw*, *Jack Shepherd*, and others are made their directors; they march towards *London*, rifling and pulling down the Lawyers houses, and force the Gentry either to flye or joyn with them; they beheaded Sr *John Cavendish* chief Justice of the Kings-bench, and *John* of *Cambridge* the Prior, causing the Covent to surrender up their Charters granted to them by *Canutus* their Founder. They require of the king being then in the Tower, to come and speak with them, who went as far as *Gravesend* with his chief Lords; but fearing the unrulinesse of that mad rout, ventured no further, but returned to the Tower: the next day they came to *London*, and if the gates had not been opened to them, they threatned to burn *Southwark*, so they are let in, feasted, and rich gifts presented to them to pacifie their fury; they rifled and burned the *Savoy*, *John* of *Gaunts* house, killed all his officers, robbed the Innes of Court, burned their Law-books, and sacrilegiously rifled the Churches; they robbed all strangers about *London*, and open all the prisons. *Wat Tyler* caused the head of his old Master, a grave Citizen, to be struck off, for some correction he received of him for his offences when he served him, his head was born before *Wat* upon a Lance: they grew to be sixty thousand in number, and affrighted the king, as they lay at *St. Katherines* near the Tower. 1377.

The next morning the king goeth to *Mile-end Green* to speak with the Rebels; in the interim *Wat Tylar* enters the Tower with forty more, robs the kings mother and broke her head, and beheaded *Simon* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, because upon the beginning of this commotion he had imprisoned *John Wall*. At *Mile-end Green* they desire the King, that they and their posterity might be made Free-men, which the king granted, and gave them his Banners for their safe conduct, and withall pardons them; this promise the king performs by instruments in writing; but *Wat Tyler*, with twenty thousand, resolves first to ransack and burn *London*, and so they come to Smithfield, the king repairs thither promising them pardon and liberty; *Tyler* demands the kings sword from the Esquire that bare it; the Esquire told him, that the kings sword should not be given to a knave; whereupon *Tyler* swore to have his head off before he did

eat

An. Christi. ent and drink: *John Hadley* Maior of *London* then with the King, drew his sword and cut *Tyler* in the head, and felled him to the ground; upon this, the rest resolve to be revenged for their Captains death: the Londoners to save themselves and the King, sent him an Army of eight thousand men; before they gave the charge, the King desires the Rebels to submit, or else to redeliver his Banners, pardons and manumissions, which being in scorn redelivered, the king in their view caused them to be cancelled and torn, which so discouraged the rout, that they ran all away, the chief of which were by their companions delivered to justice afterward, who with fifteen hundred more were put to cruel deaths.

1385. After this, the king married *Anne* sister to *Wenceslaus* the Emperour; then calls a Parliament, in which his two uncles, *Edmund* of *Langley* is made Duke of *York*, and *Thomas* of *Woodstock* Duke of *Gloceſter*; *Henry* of *Bullingbrook* son to *John* of *Gaunt*, is made Earl of *Derby*; *Edward Plantagenet* son to *Edmund* of *Langley*, is created Earl of *Rutland*. At this time the king was misled by his favourites, *De la Pool* the Chancellour, whom he made Duke of *Suffolk*, and *De Vere* Earl of *Oxford*, and Marquess of *Dublin*, whom he would have made Duke of *Ireland*, if his Lords had consented thereunto: he caused his cousin Sir *Roger Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, son to the daughter of *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, to be proclaimed heir apparent to the Crown, but he was afterward slain in *Ireland* by the Rebels. The king now slights his Nobility and their counsel, and intended to surprise the Duke of *Gloceſter*, with the Earls of *Warwick* and *Arundel* at a banquet, but was prevented by the Maior of *London*; and afterward in Parliament, they were so strongly guarded, that he could not seise on them: *De la Pool* demands four fifteens for the king, which is denied by the Parliament, who declare, that as the king once a year may call a Parliament, so the Members thereof may break up and depart, if the king absent himself for forty dayes together; they demand also *la Pool* to prison for his wicked counsels, and require an account of the kings revenues how they were wasted; the king requires fifty of their choisest men to be sent him to consult with, which is refused, shewing that publike affairs must be handled publikely in Parliament: the king at this was so incensed, that he swore he would rather subject himself to *France* then to his own subjects; the two Lords which were sent to him, namely, the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and *Thomas Arundal* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, so qualified the king, that he returns to his Parliament, and then was *De la Pool* condemned, fined and imprisoned for cousening the King, to whom all his lands are given, and twenty thousand marks besides, his Chancellorship taken from him, and bestowed upon *Canterbury*; thirteen Commissioners are appointed to examine the Kings officers concerning their behaviour, this the King swears to allow; all that should perswade the King to the contrary, should be executed as Traitors: so a Subsidie of one half fifteen is granted.

The Parliament being ended, *La Pool*, and *De Vere* Duke of *Ireland*, with divers others are released by the King; and at *Notingham* the Kings uncle *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, and *Thomas Aryndel* Archbishop, are pronounced by the kings Judges guilty of High-treason: the Nobility petition the king that he would ratifie his former oath, and thrust his evil Counsellours from him, which he refused to do: hereupon the Lords raise a strong Army, which these evil Counsellours perceiving, perswade the king to surrender *Calice* to the *French*, whereby he shall reconcile himself to *France*, and shall master his Lords, who otherwaies will master him; but the king would not hearken unto this counsel, yet endeavours to curb his Lords, by commanding the Maior of *London* to raise him a speedy Army of fifty thousand men; but the wiser Londoners would not yeeld that they should take Arms against the kings faithful Lords, who advised him to nothing but what tended to his and his kingdomes happiness: hereupon the king relents, and sends to his Lords, acquainting them

them that he would call a Parliament, in which his favourites ſhould be brought to anſwer to their accuſers, and to be puniſhed, if guilty; upon this the Lords disband their Army, which the King perceiving, cauſed *Robert de Vere* to raiſe five thouſand men for his own defence; this made the Barons jealous, therefore they renew their ſtrength, and ſo encompaſſed the Duke, that he was forced to ſwim his horſe over the *Thames*, and ſo eſcaped into *France*, where five years after he was ſlain by a wilde Boar in hunting, whoſe dead body was by the kings command embalmed and brought over, his Funerals were ſolemnized with all magnificence fit for a Prince. The Lords executed ſome of his chief ſervants, and diſperſed the reſt of his guard, when he was gone over the *Thames*; then they conducted their Army to *London*, where they were bountifully entertained. Shortly after the Lords are admitted to confer with the King, a Parliament is ſummoned; the kings wicked Counſellours and Judges are condemned of High-treaſon, *John* Earl of *Salisbury* and Sir *Nicholas Brembre* loſt their heads, *Treſilian* the chief Juſtice was hanged at Tiburn; the other Judges were ſpared upon the Queens importunity, but baniſhed. *An. Chriſti.* 1388.

The truce between *England* and *France* being near an end, the French Admiral is ſent into *Scotland* with a thouſand of the French Gentry and Nobility, and two thouſand Arms; theſe were ſlighted by the Country people who loved not wars, but were entertained by the Scots Army, which conſiſted of thirty thouſand, theſe march into *England* waſting all before them; but hearing that the King was marching towards them with ſixty thouſand Archers, and eight thouſand men at Arms, they went over the mountains into *Wales* uſing there all kinde of hoſtility, as king *Richard* uſed the like in *Scotland*, having ſacked and burned ſome of their chief Towns. When the Scots Army returned home, the Country people were mad at the French for comming thither, knowing that *France* had engaged *Scotland* in theſe wars to ſerve their own turns, and not for the good of *Scotland*; whereupon they ſtrip the French of their horſes, arms and money, and ſo ſent them home; the Admiral and ſome other honourable Perſonages they kept as pawns, till ſatisfaction was made for their loſſes in this war. The French king ſent the money that was demanded, and ſo the Admiral, Barons, and Gentry are diſmiſſed.

The French king pretending to conquer *England*, rigs out twelve hundred ſhips with a formidable Army; king *Richard* prepares to welcome him with a hundred thouſand fighting men. The French Army is accurſed by their own Country-men for their plunderings as they marched; and when they came to the Low-countries, for want of food they ſold their arms, horſes and cloaths, for their numbers were ſo great, and the Duke of *Berry* the kings uncle, who liked not this expedition, was ſo ſlow in comming, and the French were grown ſo odious for their outrages in thoſe Countries, that this great Army diſſolved and came to nothing.

After this the Scots invade *England*, king *Richard* prepares to go againſt them; but by the mediation of forreign Princes, a truce for three years is concluded between *England*, *Scotland* and *France*, and afterward enlarged to four years more: and now king *Richard* having made peace with his neigbours, ſends *John* of *Gaunt* his uncle with an Army into *Spain*, to demand the kingdome of *Caſtile* in right of his wife *Conſtance* eldeſt daughter to king *Peter*; in this expedition the Duke of *Lancaſter* carried himſelf ſo bravely, that the king of *Spain* married the Dukes eldeſt daughter by his ſaid wife, and gave him eight waggons laden with gold, and a yearly penſion of ten thouſand marks; and then the Duke married his youngeſt daughter to the king of *Portugal*, who had aided him in theſe wars, and then returned home with wealth and honour. In this interim the king and Pope quarrelled, and then it was in Parliament enacted, that the Popes authority ſhould here ceaſe, and no more

An. Christi. appeals be made to *Rome* upon the penalty of a *Præmunire* extending to perpetual imprisonment, and forfeiture of lands and goods. Shortly after Queen *Anne* died, and two years after this the king married to *Isabel* daughter of *Charles* 6. of *France*, which caused a peace of thirty years; the two kings met between *Calice* and *Arde*, and then did the king surrender *Brest* to the Duke of *Britain*, a place which had cost much *English* blood. *Thomas* of *Woodstock* reproves the King for this, and so procures his anger, which set the King upon plotting his death, who also intends to destroy his Barons; for he was made believe, that if he did so, he should be made Emperour: upon this, *Gloucester*, *Arundel* and *Warwick* are apprehended, and then he calls a Parliament, in which *John Bush* Speaker in the lower House, in a flattering speech impeacheth the Lords, and chiefly *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury* of Treason, who was counselled by the King to absent himself, with an oath and promise that he should receive no prejudice, yet for want of his presence to answer for himself, is condemned and banished; *Arundel* is beheaded; *Warwick* upon his submission and repentance is confined to the Isle of *Wight*, where he died in great
1396. want and misery; the Duke of *Gloucester* is sent to *Calice*, though unsentenced, where by the Kings direction, *Mowbray* Earl of *Nottingham* caused him to be smothered between two Feather-beds, for which service he was made a Duke. Authority is granted by the Parliament to eight persons finally to determine all causes as were not ended there, who being named by the King, decreed such things as were hurtful to the kingdome; and because the Kings guard were *Cheshire* men, to please them, he would be called Prince of *Cheshire*: he made *Henry* of *Bullinbrook*, *John* of *Gaunts* son and heir, Duke of *Hartford*, his cousin *Ed. Plantagenet* Duke of *Aubemarle*, and *Thomas Mowbray* Marshal of *England*, with divers others, on whom he bestowed the lands belonging to his uncle *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, and to the two deceased Earls of *Arundel* and of *Warwick*; he granted also pardon to all except fifteen whom he would not nominate, to keep his Nobility in fear, lest any of them might be one of the fifteen.

Bullinbrook Duke of *Hartford* being grieved at the Kings mis-government, acquainted *Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolk* therewith, purposely that he might inform the King; with this he treacherously mis-informs the King, as if *Bullinbrook* aimed to dishonour the King, which was not his intention; wherefore *Hartford* is sent for, and confesseth to the king what he said, but denied the untrue suggestions which were added, and to clear himself challengeth the Duke of *Norfolk* to a duel, which was accepted, the king did not suffer them to fight, but exiled the Duke of *Hartford* for six years, and banished *Norfolk* for ever; *Hartford* is honourably received in *France* by king *Charles* 6. on whom for his excellent parts, he would have bestowed his uncles daughter the Duke of *Berry* in marriage, had not king *Richard* hindred it. Not long after this, Duke *Hartfords* father *John* of *Gaunt* died, whose lands and moveables the king seised on, and bestowed them on his sycophants; for which unjust dealing, his uncle the Duke of *York*, and the Duke of *Aubemarle* his cousin forsook the Court. Shortly after the king farmeth out his kingdome to his favourites, raiseth an Army and saileth into *Ireland*, which he subdued. In his absence, *Hartford*, with *Thomas* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, returns into *England* to make claim to his Dutchy of *Lancaster*; at his landing, both Lords and Commons flock to him in such numbers, that he had quickly a great Army, which he leads to *London*, where he is feasted, thence he marcheth Westward.

K. *Richard* being returned, and perceiving the Dukes strength, and that *Scrope*
1399. Earl of *Wiltshire*, with *Bush* and *Green* his three evil Counsellours had lost their heads, despairing to do any good by force, comes to his cousin, and proffers to surrender his kingdome to him, which the Duke seemingly refuses, desiring onely his own patrimony, and reformation of publike abuses; so he caused the

the king to be honourably guarded to the Tower, and then assembleth a Parliament, in which these Articles are proposed concerning the kings ill government: 1. That he hindred his duel with *Mowbray* his false accuser, and yet banished him unjustly for six years. 2. That he would not suffer any man to plead for him in his absence, though he had licensed it under the great Seal. 3. That he would suffer no man to be a suiter for the said Dukes return. 4. That he had seised upon his father *John* of *Gaunts* lands and moveables, and given them to his graceless Counsellours. 5. That he had counselled the Archbishop *Arundel* to absent himself from Parliament, that he might not answer to his accusers, and then unjustly banished him. 6. That he granted an unjust prohibition under his privy Seal, when the Chancellor refused to grant it under the great Seal. 7. That he caused *Mowbray* to smother the Duke of *Gloucester*, whom he unjustly banished, and then advanced this *Mowbray* to wealth and honours. 8. That the King unjustly robbed the Clergy and Monasteries to further his Irish expedition. 9. That he carried with him the plate and jewels of the Crown to *Ireland*. 10. In laying heavy Fines upon wrong information. 11. That he devised crafty oaths to undo his subjects. 12. That he caused desperate Ruffians to accuse rich men for their wealth. 13. That he enriched his wicked Counsellours with heavy taxes laid on the people. 14. That he cancelled all Records which testified his oppressions. 15. That he said, the Laws were in his own breast, and hereupon put many unjustly to death. 16. That he used to write craftily and ambiguously to forreign Princes. 17. That he permitted his *Cheshire* guard to rob and murther without punishment. 18. That he had dishonourably stiled himself the Prince of *Cheshire*. 19. That he threatned the Lords in Parliament, that offered to speak any thing of Reformation. 20. That he exacted great Fines of those whom he had pardoned. 21. That he placed and displaced Burgesses in Parliament as he pleased. 22. That he had exiled and executed divers Lords for procuring a commission in Parliament to enquire of abuses, which commission he had ratified by his oath and instrument in writing. 23. That he procured the Popes bulls to curse such as opposed his unjust laws, contrary to his own law made seven years before against the Popes authority. 24. That he had displaced good Sheriffs, and elected others that were for his turn.

The authentick copy of these Articles is sent to the King, who confessed them, and his own insufficiency in government, and withall under his hand and seal resigns his Crown to his cousin *Henry* of *Bullingbrook* Duke of *Lancaster*: which being read and approved by the Parliament, King *Richard* is deposed, and the said Duke made King, who was installed by *Arundel* Archbishop, his companion in banishment: then was king *Richard* sent to *Pomfret* Castle, but shortly after by the new kings command, who thought himself unsafe whilst *Richard* lived, he was treacherously murthered; Sir *Pierce Exton*, and eight other armed men more set upon him, from one of whom he wrested a brown-bill, and therewith slew four of them, then fought with all the rest, till the cowardly knight struck him in the hinder part of his head with a pole-axe, of which blow he presently died: king *Henry* caused to be proclaimed, that he was lawful king by conquest, by resignation, and by inheritance as next heir to king *Richard*: But indeed *Edmund Mortimer* Earl of *March*, son to that *Roger* who was slain in *Ireland*, and declared heir to the Crown by king *Richard*, had more right, as being descended from *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, eldest brother to *John* Duke of *Lancaster* king *Henries* father, and third son to *Edward* the third; but he perceiving that there was no contesting against the sword and possession, betook himself to a private life, wherein is lesse glory, but more security.

CHAP. XIII.

The history of Scotland *from the year* 1306. *till the year* 1377.

1306. *Robert Bruce* having made his peace with the Pope for killing *Cumin* in the Church, got himself to be crowned at *Scone*, but he had hard beginnings; for he was twice defeated by the *Cumins*, assisted by the *English*, so that he was forced to hide himself divers months together in the mountains and Islands, having onely one friend to accompany him; in the mean while his brothers and friends were searched after and betraied, most of them were put to death, his wife was apprehended by the Earl of *Ross*, and sent into *England*: but when all his enemies thought he had been dead, he suddenly appears with a considerable strength, and takes in *Carick* his own Castle, now possessed by the *English*, whom he puts all to death; from thence he goeth to *Ennernesse*, and takes that Castle also: The report of this made great commotions in *Scotland*, so that multitudes being discontented with the *English* government, flocked to him, and now he hath a considerable Army, with which he marcheth Northward, and demolisheth all the Castles there, that they might not be any more shelters for his enemies, and that he might not weaken his Army by putting garrisons there. *John Cumin* Earl of *Buchan* hearing of *Bruce* his successe, raiseth an Army of *Scots* and *English*, and marcheth towards *Bruce*; but finding how resolute the *Bruceans* were, and that he could not confide in his own Army, because many favoured *Bruce*, he makes a truce with him, in the interim sends for more forces out of *England*.

Shortly after king *Edward* dieth, and king *Bruce* falls desperately sick, whereupon *Cumin* raiseth an Army, hoping that either *Bruce* was dead, or unable to fight, and therefore a fit time to set upon his forces; but he knowing how needfull the presence of a Commander was in an Army, causeth himself to be set on horseback, though unable to sit but as he was upheld by two of his servants; this sight so encouraged his souldiers, that they fought desperately, and defeated *Cumins* Army near *Innerury*. Shortly after *Bruce* recovered his health, and led his Army into *Argile*, which he plundered, and drove *Alexander* Lord thereof into *England*, where he died in great want. *Galloway* also is subdued by King *Roberts* brother *Edward Bruce*. The report of *Bruce* his victories drew King *Edward* 2. of *England* with his Army into *Scotland*, which was increased by the *Scots* that adhered to *England*, but this great preparation came to nothings, for the *English* for want of provision were forced to retreat, King *Robert* having removed all the corn and cattel thereabouts to places of
1310. safety. The next year *Bruce* having regained the Forts which the *English* held in *Scotland*, he invades *England* with an Army, and returned without opposition laden with spoil; after this *Perth* is taken, and the walls demolished by King *Robert*, *Roxburgh*, *Edinburgh*-Castle, and other strong holds, with the Isle of *Man* are surrendred. The *English* that were in *Sterling* Castle, being besieged by *Edward Bruce*, capitulated to surrender within a year, if no supply came from *England* in that time, which was assented to by *Edward*, for which King *Robert* was angry, yet yeelded to the conditions that he might not dishearten his brother. In the mean time King *Edward* of *England* provides an Army of one hundred thousand men, consisting of *English*, *Scots*, *French*, *Flemings*, and *Hollanders*: The *Scots* Army under *Bruce* was thirty thousand, these pitch their camp near the *English* by *Bannocburn*, two miles from *Sterling*; before the battel the *English* send eight hundred horse towards *Sterling*, which were encountred and defeated by five hundred Scots horse under *James Douglasse*: the next morning is appointed for the main encounter, the Scots are divided into three battels, the right wing was led by the Kings brother, the left

by

by *Randolph*, and the main battel by the King himself; the particulars of this fight we have shewed in the English story, onely here is one passage not touched there, to wit, that the English perceiving afar off upon the mountains the Scotch Carriages with great store of cattel, and servants that attended on the Army, supposed fresh forces had been coming to assist the Scots; this conceit, after the overthrow they had in the ditches, so disheartned them, that they betook themselves to a disorderly flight, in which multitudes were killed and taken; so great was the loss, that for three years after the English were quiet, though provoked divers times by the *Scots* incursions upon *England*, 200 of the English Nobility and Gentry were slain, about as many more taken prisoners; the King escaped by means of the Earl of *March* into *Dunbar*, and from thence to *Barwick*, whom *Douglas* pursued with four hundred horse, but could not overtake him; in this battel four thousand *Scots* were slain, of the English fifty thousand; *Sterling*-Castle, according to promise, is surrendred. *An. Christi.*

About this time *John Manteth*, who for betraying *Wallis* was made Governour of *Dunbritton* Castle by the English, intended by surrendring that Castle to King *Robert*, to have surprised him, for he had had a great many English in a low wine-cellar, who should have suddenly seised on the King at dinner, and transported him to *England* in a ship which they had ready for that purpose; the plot was discovered to the King by a Lock-smith; at the day appointed the Castle is surrendred, and by *Manteth* the King is invited to dinner, who desired first to see what store of wine was in the Cellar; after some tergiversations used by *Manteth*, the cellar-door is broken open, and the English Souldiers brought out, who having confessed the plot, were put to death, and *Manteth* imprisoned, but his life spared, because he was allied to some great men, whom the King at that time would not offend. The next Spring *Barwick* is taken by the *Scots*, having been twenty years in the English possession: then a Parliament is called at *Ayr*, in which the Kingdom is confirmed upon *Robert*, and because he had but one daughter, to avoid more controversies about the title to the Kingdome, it was decreed that *Edward* the Kings brother, after his decease, should succeed, and his children; but if he should die childless, that then *Mary* the kings daughter and her posterity should inherit, therefore they think of providing a fit husband for her.

After this, *Edward Bruce* is sent over to *Ireland* with an Army, where he is made king, and presently subdueth *Ulster*, then marcheth with his Army through the West of *Ireland*; an Army is sent thither from *England*; king *Bruce* goeth himself into *Ireland* with another Army to aide his brother, who was already defeated and killed by the English before he could come to help him. King *Edward* of *England* understanding that king *Bruce* and much of the Scotish strength was in *Ireland*, sends an Army into *Scotland*, which was defeated by *Douglas*, Governour of the *Marches*; this Land-Army miscarrying, the English Fleet land their Sea forces, and infest the coast; the Earl of *Fife* with five hundred horse went to encounter them, but seeing the English stronger then he thought, was retreating, but being met by the Bishop of *Dunkel* with sixty horse, was encouraged by him to return against the English; and with that the Martial Bishop takes his Lance, puts spurs to his horse, and with his company falls furiously on the English, whom he routed, many of whom by pressing into the boats, were drowned about five hundred; this Bishop *Sinclar* ever after was called the Kings Bishop. That Summer the English besiege *Barwick*, and the *Scots* march as far as *York*, wasting all before them; the Archbishop of that place raiseth an Army of Priests, Artificers, and Husbandmen, all which were overthrown by the *Scots*, the Archbishop with a few more escaped; this was called the white battel, because in it so many Priests were slain. King *Edward* hearing of this defeat, raised his siege from *Barwick*, and returned with his Army into *England*, and then a short truce was made between the two Kings.

King

Anno Christi. King *Robert* after this calls a Parliament, in which he wills the Nobility and Gentry to shew by what evidences they held their Lands; at this they were much troubled, most of them having left their evidences in the late wars; therefore suddenly they all stood up in Parliament, and drew their swords, crying out that they had their evidences in their hands; the King at this was very angry, yet smothered it, till he found a time to revenge himself, which shortly after fell out, for many of the Lords being guilty, and fearing the Kings wrath, conspire to betray the kingdome to the English; the King hears of the plots, divers Letters are found to that purpose, whereupon the plotters are apprehended, a Parliament called, and the Letters produced, so all of them are condemned of High-treason, among whom was *David Brechen* the Kings sisters son; many were grieved at his punishment, because of his blood, youth, courage, and strength of body, who had done good service in the Holy-war, and because he was no actor in this plot, but onely concealed it.

About this time came the Popes Legats, upon king *Edwards* procurement, to mediate a peace between the two kingdomes, which when the *Scots* would not yield to, they are excommunicated, who to shew how little they regarded this excommunication, follow the Legats as they were returning into *England* with an Army, spoiling all in their way with fire and sword; King *Edward* in requital of this wrong, marcheth into *Scotland* with an Army, but provisions failing them, they were forced to return, for King *Robert* had conveyed all provision into Garrisons and the mountaines; the English in their return spoil and burn some Monasteries; the Scots follow and destroy all as far as *York*, so that K. *Edward* hardly escapes, his Army being defeated, so the Scots return with rich spoils, and king *Edwards* Treasure. After this, the Scots send away two Embassadours, one to the Pope to appease his anger, which was quickly effected, when he understood that without ground King *Edward* the 1. had begun this war in claiming superiority over *Scotland*, which was a free kingdome: the other Embassadour was sent to *France*, to renew the old League, which was also done, and withall it was agreed, that if any controversie should arise about the Title of the Crown, the Parliament should decide it, and whom they elected the French king would maintaine.

About this time, one *Hanton* an English Gentleman, for commending king *Robert Bruce*, was hurt by one *Spencer*, whom the next day he killed, and with that fled into *Scotland*, where he was rewarded by king *Robert* with large Territories, and made a Peer of the land, from him came the family of the *Hamiltons*. King *Edward* of *England* being murthered, and king *Robert* growing old, a Parliament is called, in which King *Roberts* young son is confirmed his successor, to whom *Robert Stuart* the kings Nephew by his sister was to succeed, if his own son should die without issue; and to avoid all future quarrels about the Crown, *James Douglas* is sent to *John Baliol* in *France* with some presents, to the end he might resign his title to the Crown, which he did willingly, acknowledging the wrong he had done in accepting that Crown; and withall highly commends king *Robert Bruce*.

1327. King *Edward* the third of *England* sends Embassadors into *Scotland* to conclude a peace; but the *Scots* perceiving some fraudulent dealing, instead of making peace, proclaimed war with *England*: *Thomas Randulph* and *James Douglas* are sent into *England* with twenty thousand horse without foot, that they might run through the Countrey without impediment; King *Edward* provides an Army of sixty thousand Dutch and English; *Carlile* and *Newcastle* are guarded to keep in the *Scots* from passing the river, but in vain, for they passed the river where it was fordable; the two Armies were within three miles of each other eight dayes together, before either knew of it, by reason of stormes, rain, and overflowing of the Rivers, onely the English were alarm'd divers times in the night by the Stags running in heards to and fro,

which

which they thought had been the enemy; at last the English found that the Scotch Army was pitched on the side of a hill, from which they could not perswade them to come down into even ground; but one night the *Scots*, perceiving the English Army careless, *Douglas* is sent with two hundred choise horse, which got through the Army even to the Kings Tent, and had cut two cords thereof; but the Alarm being suddenly given, the *Scots* returned safe to their own Camp, having killed three hundred of the enemy: the English expecting hourly when the Scots would give onset, at last they understood that *Douglas* with all his forces were marched back into *Scotland*, the English to resolve to return home likewise; and not long after Embassadours are sent from *England* to treat with the *Scots* for a perpetual peace; in the interim a truce is concluded for three years. *An. Christi.* 1328.

The next year, in a Parliament at *Northampton* peace is made with the *Scots*, the Articles we have mentioned in the English story. King *Robert* having celebrated the marriage of his son with the king of *England*s sister, and being now aged and sickly, he commits the Government of the kingdom to *Tho. Randulph* his sisters son, and *James Douglas*, and betakes himself to a private life, then he makes his will, in which he names *David* his son his successor, being now eight years old, and next to him *Robert Stuart*; he exhorted his Lords to mutual love, to and wished them rather to send yearly Governours unto the Islands called *Ebuda*, then to appoint one Lord over them, because there would be less corruption, and more quietness; likewise that they should not in their wars with *England* hazard all upon one battel, but rather tire them with alarms and skirmishes; and lastly he forbids them to make long peace with *England*, lest for want of Military exercise they grow either careless and effeminate, or else fall out into intestine quarrels; he recommends also to *James Douglas* his Vow which he had made for an Expedition into the Holy-Land, which by reason of his age and troubles he could not perform, therefore wisheth him to carry his Heart to *Jerusalem*, there to be interred, which *James* undertook the next 30 year with a company of resolute young Gallants, who joyn themselves with the king of *Arragon* being then ready for the same Expedition; in this war against the Sarazens he did good service, but at last rushing too desperately upon the enemy neer an Ambush, he lost his life; king *Robert* was dead a year before this Expedition, *Anno* 1329. the four and twentieth year of his Reign. 1330.

Randulph Earl of *Murrey* is made Protector, as the king had ordained; he so cleared the kingdome of theeves, High-way-robbers, and idle wanderers, that the country-people could securely keep open their doors, and leave their rural utensils all night in the open fields; if any goods were lost, the Country 40 Justices were to make reparation, and the king to satisfie them out of the goods of those that were found guilty; one cunning-fellow had stole his own goods, went to the Justice for reparation, which he had, but after being found to be stealer of his own goods, he was hanged for his labour, and all his estate confiscate; it was lawful for any publike Officer to kill him that made resistance. King *Edward* of *England* perceiving he could do no good upon *Scotland* so long as this wise and vigilant Viceroy was alive, sent a Monk who professed Physick thither, who understanding that *Randulph* was troubled with the Stone, got access to speak with him, and undertook the cure; Physick is given mixt with poison, which wrought gently; the Monk pretending he wanted some drugs, got money to buy them, and to defray his charges, he returns to 50 king *Edward*, assures him that by such a day *Randulph* would be dead; upon this an Army is levied, and sent into *Scotland*; king *Edward* sends spies to view the *Scots* posture, who finding they had an Army, and that the Viceroy was there yet alive, return and acquaint king *Edward* therewith, who causeth the lying Monk to be punished, and the Army to retreat, leaving some Garrisons on the borders to keep off excursions; *Randulph* not being able, because of his sickness

An. Christi. ſickneſs to purſue the enemy, diſbands his Forces, and preſently after died at *Muſſelburg*, having been Viceroy two years.

The King now being but ten years old, *Duncan* Earl of *Marre* is elected Protector: that very day newes is brought, that *Edward Baliol* was entred the *Forth* with a great Fleet of Ships; he had been encouraged by one *Laurence Twine* an Engliſh-man, who lived in *Scotland*, but for his miſdemeanors was forced to flie over to *France*; he acquaints *Baliol* of the diſtractions in *Scotland*, of the weakneſs of the King, and the ſickneſs of his Protector *Randulph*, of the aide which he ſhould have from King *Edward*, and of many friends he ſhould find in *Scotland*; upon theſe perſwaſions, *Baliol* obtains a Fleet of ſhips and ſix thouſand men from King *Edward*: As *Baliol* was landing his men at *Kinghorn*, *Alexander Seaton* a Nobleman of thoſe parts, with ſome Forces oppoſeth him, but *Seaton* was killed with a great part of his Forces; *Baliol* having refreſhed his Souldiers, which now were increaſed to ten thouſand, marcheth towards *Perth*, and ſits down neer the river, the *Scots* Army was divided into two bodies on each ſide of the river; *Baliol* fearing to be incloſed, reſolves to fight with one of thoſe bodies a part, and firſt on the Viceroy which was fartheſt off, and ſeemed moſt ſecure; one *Andrew Murrey* in the night guided *Baliol* over the river where it was fordable, who falling unexpectedly on the Viceroy's Army, routed them, though at firſt ſome reſiſtance was made, yet the diſorder in the *Scots* Camp was ſo great, that inſtead of oppoſing the Enemy, they fell foul among themſelves, three thouſand *Scots* were ſlain, the reſt fled to *Perth*, but ſhortly after yield the Town to the *Engliſh*, which *Dumbar* with the other Army reſolved to beſiege, but upon better advice they retreat; *Baliol* upon this good ſucceſs, and finding multitudes of *Scots* to flock to him, reſolves to declare himſelf King, to whom divers Lords whom he had taken priſoners, were forced to ſwear fealty.

1332. *Baliol* finding himſelf ſufficiently ſtrong, goeth to *Scone*, where he is crowned. Young King *David* with his wife, to be out of danger, are conveyed over to the French king; his party make *Andrew Murrey*, King *Robert Bruce* his ſiſters ſon, Viceroy, who preſently raiſeth an Army, and beſiegeth *Perth*, which after three moneths ſiege they took; the Earl of *Fife*, who held the town for *Baliol*, is ſent to priſon with his wife and children; *Murrey* of *Tilibardin*, for guiding *Baliol* over the river, is executed; the walls of *Perth* are demoliſhed; a thouſand horſe are ſent into *Anandel* (where *Baliol* was ſecure) by the Viceroy, theſe fell ſuddenly on his forces in the night, ſo that he was forced to flie away half cloathed upon a horſe without bridle or ſaddle, divers of whoſe friends were killed; *Alexander Bruce*, King *Davids* kinſman, who had taken part with *Baliol*, was taken, but pardoned: the Brucians knowing that *Baliol* acted all for and by the King of *England*, fortifie *Barwick*, where they put *Alexander Seaton* Governour; an Embaſſadour is ſent into *France*, to ſee the young king, and to require aide; but the the Brucians are twice defeated by the Baliolans; king *Edward* ſends Forces to aide *Baliol*, who otherwiſe could not ſubſiſt againſt the other faction, not regarding his affinity with *Bruce*, nor the peace that was made, nor the oath which he took; and to make ſhew of a juſt war, he demands *Barwick*, which *Bruce* had by right of Arms gained from the *Engliſh*; king *Edward* beſiegeth the Town by Sea and Land, *Douglas* brings an Army to raiſe the ſiege, he was adviſed to go with his Army into *England*; but he to be revenged on king *Edward* for hanging up *Seatons* two ſons, would needs fight upon unequal ground and tearms, and ſo loſt the day; in that conflict ten thouſand *Scots* were ſlain, the *Engliſh* alſo loſt many, beſides their Fleet, which was fired by the *Scots*.

After this, *Baliol* had divers bickerings with the Brucians, ſometimes prevailing, ſometimes yielding; in the interim a new Army from *England* enters *Scotland*, both by Sea and Land; in the *Forth*, the Engliſh Admiral, with moſt of the other ſhips, were battered againſt the Rocks with ſtormes; the Land-

army

army marcheth as far as *Glasco*, where an Englisſh Parliament is called, there *An. Christi.*
David Cumin Earl of *Athol* is made Governour of *Scotland*, and King *Edward*
carried with him *Baliol* into *England*, for he durſt not confide in him. *Cumin*
ſeiſeth upon all the Lands of the *Stuarts*, and having the Southern parts at his
devotion, he marcheth Northward, where the Counties of *Buchan* and *Mur-*
rey ſubmit to him. All Patents went under the ſtile of *Edward* and *Baliol*; but
whilſt *Cumin* was ſo far North, *Robert Stuart* who had hid himſelf in *Dumbrit-*
ton began to appear, and having raiſed four hundred of the *Cambels* in *Arguile*
went to take in ſome of the next Forts, which they did with good ſucceſs;
upon this ſome of the neighbour-Counties began to ſide with him, ſo that his
Army increaſed like a ſnow-ball, beſides *John Randulph* Earl of *Murrey* was
returned from *France* with aſſurance of aide from thence; ſo now having ta-
ken courage, they make two Viceroy's, to wit, this *Robert Stuart*, and *John*
Randulph; he with a conſiderable Army marched Northward, at whoſe ap-
proach *David Cumin* being forſaken by divers of his Souldiers fled to *Lochaber*,
where he was beſieged, and forced to yield, and withall to ſwear fealty to king
Bruce, and truſting to his promiſes left him there as his Lieutenant, then being
returned to *Lothien*, he with the other Viceroy calls a Parliament, in which
was great emulation between *Cumin* and *Douglas* lately returned from *Eng-*
land.

Shortly after King *Edward* with *Baliol* invades *Scotland* by Sea and Land; a
Fleet of a hundred and ſixty ſaile enters the *Forth*; King *Edward* by land mar-
cheth towards *Perth*; in the mean time *Robert*, one of the Viceroyes falls ſick,
ſo the whole burthen lay upon *Randulph*, who with a part of his Forces en-
counters the *Gelderlanders* neer *Edenburgh*, and defeated them, for they came
to aſſiſt the Engliſh, but he uſed them kindly for *Philip Valois* his ſake; but as
he was conveying of them, he was intercepted by the Engliſh Faction, and
brought to King *Edward* then beſieging *Perth*, which being ſurrendred, King
Edward returns to *England*, having had ſome loſs by ſtormes in his Fleet. *Da-*
vid Cumin is by him left Viceroy, for he carried *Baliol* with him. *Cumin* who
had found favour before, ſhews none now, but perſecutes the Brucians with
all cruelty; yet a party took head againſt him, under the Earl of *March*, *Mur-*
rey and *Douglas*, who never would yield to *Baliol*; theſe with conſiderable
Forces defeat the *Cuminians*; upon this Victory *Andrew Murrey* is made Vice-
roy, for *Stuart* was ſick, and *Randulph* a priſoner. New ſupplies are ſent of
Engliſh, to relieve *Cumins* wife, who was beſieged by the *Brucians*; they
march as far as *Elgin* in *Murrey*, burn *Aberden*, take divers Forts, and relieve
Cumins Lady; they enjoyn the ſix next Monaſteries to rebuild the walls of
Perth. No ſooner were the Engliſh gone home, but *Andrew Murrey* with new
ſupplies regaines all the Forts and Caſtles beyond *Forth*, except *Perth* and the
Caſtle of *Cupre*, then enters *England*, and returns with great booties: the Gar-
riſon of *Cupre*, for want of proviſion, was forced to be gone, who returning
homeward through *Lothian* over the ſands, were all drowned upon the com-
ming in of the tide.

The next year, *Dumbar*-Caſtle is beſieged by the Earles of *Arundel* 1337.
and *Saliſbury* ſix moneths together, and at laſt were faine to leave it,
having loſt many men before it by ſallies; after it was relieved by *Alexander*
Ramſey in the dark of the night.

Murrey having beaten out the Engliſh from moſt parts of *Scotland* in
two yeares and a half, died, whom *Stuart* ſucceeded as Viceroy, who by
the help of *Douglas* got divers Victories over the *Engliſh* and their parties
in *Scotland*.

Perth is beſieged above four months by the *Scots*, at laſt the Earl of *Roſſe*
takes it; the Engliſh are diſmiſſed with bag and baggage; *Sterling* alſo is ſur-

An. Christi. rendred by the Engliſh, and *Edenburgh*-Caſtle is taken by *Douglas*. *Fraſer* and twelve more, being diſguiſed in ſea-mens apparel, as if they had come lately from an Engliſh Ship then in the *Forth* with wine and other proviſion were let in, who preſently killed the Porter, took away the keyes, opened the Gates, and let in ſome companies who lay in ambuſh; after a great skirmiſh, the Engliſh were forced to yield: In the mean while *Alexander* Ramſey enters *Northumberland* with an Army, which plunders the Country, and returns with great booty; he is purſued by Engliſh Forces, which he defeats by drawing them into an ambuſh, where he had hid great ſtore of foot, and ſo brings home his plunder; then he takes in *Roxburg*; after this, he with *Randulph* and *Douglas* drive the Engliſh out of all their Holds in *Scotland*, leaving them nothing but *Barwick*. This year returns King *David Bruce* with his Queen, after nine years abſence. King *Edward* having made peace with *France* for three years, prepares all the ſtrength he can to invade *Scotland*; he had then in his Army 6000 horſe, and 40000 foot, beſides a great Fleet, which was ſo ſhattered with ſtormes, that it did him little ſervice.

1342.

Upon King *Davids* return, *Scotland* is divided into factions, cauſed by the murther of *Alexander Ramſey*, whom *Douglas* treacherouſly killed, becauſe he had got from him the government of *Teviot*: This much troubled King *David*, who made ſearch for *Douglas*, and found him, but by the mediation of *Robert Stuart*, and others, he was pardoned and made Governour of *Roxburg* and *Teviot*, for ſuch then was the power of *Douglas*, that the King durſt do no otherwiſe. Differences being thus compoſed, *David* contrary to the advice of his Lords raiſeth an Army againſt *England*, into which he made three ſeveral excurſions, and returned with great ſpoiles; At laſt a peace for two years is concluded with *England*, conditionally that King *Philip* of *France* would ratifie it, without whom King *David* could make no peace, nor King *Philip* with *England*, without the *Scots*; but the French being defeated by the Engliſh, ſtir up King *David* againſt *England*, who invades and ſpoiles all as far as *Durham*, in an unſeaſonable time, his own Countrey being diſtracted by civil broils between the Earl of *Roſſe* and the Lord of the Iſlands; the Engliſh Army come unexpectedly upon King *David*, a battel is fought, in which many of the *Scots* Lords were taken or killed; King *David* was taken priſoner by *Copland*, two of whoſe teeth he ſtrook out with his fiſt after he had loſt his weapons; upon this Victory divers of the South Countries of *Scotland* yielded to the Engliſh, the reſt being employed in civil broiles againſt each other; but the Engliſh ſhortly after loſt theſe Countries again. King *John* of *France* ſends money into *Scotland* to raiſe Souldiers, deſiring alſo that the *Scots* would make no peace with *England*, they receive the money, a few Souldiers are raiſed which make excurſions upon *England*; they take alſo *Barwick* and burn it; the Engliſh enter *Louthien* with fire and ſword; *Baliol* again ſwears fealty to king *Edward*.

The Engliſh being again driven out of *Scotland*, king *David* is ranſomed, who upon his return diſ-inherits *Robert Stuart*, his elder ſiſters ſon, and makes *Alexander* the Earl of *Sutherlands* ſon, and his Nephew by the younger ſiſter, his heir; but he dying ſhortly after, king *David* is reconciled to *Stuart*; after this *Scotland* is much afflicted with great inundations of water, and the Plague; king *David* wanting iſſue, in a Parliament propoſed, that for the good of both kingdomes, the king of *England* or his ſon ſhould ſucceed to the Crown of *Scotland*; this motion was ſo diſliked, that it was preſently huſhed: In the mean while the High-landers continue in arms amongſt themſelves, whom when the king could not reconcile, he increaſeth their quarrels, to the end they might deſtroy each other, and ſo the kingdom ſhould be quiet; At laſt the king dieth in *Edenburgh*-Caſtle, the nine and forty year of his life, and the ſeven and forty of his reign.

1377.

Chap.

An. Christi.

CHAP. XIV.

A profecution of the Scotiſh *Hiſtory, from the year* 1377. *till the year* 1409.

KIng *Robert Stuart* ſucceedeth to his uncle *David Bruce*: his Coronation was oppoſed by *William* Earl *Douglaſſe*, who claimed the Crown in right of *Baliol*, and the *Cumins*, of whom he was deſcended; but his claim was ſo diſtaſted by the Lords, that he was glad to give off and ſubmit to King *Robert*, and to confirm his allegiance; the King marrieth his daughter to Earl *Williams* ſon. This year, the fourteen years peace between the two kingdomes is broken by the Engliſh, who at a Fair killed a friend of *George Dumbar*; he being denied ſatisfaction, the next day with ſome forces he plunders the Fair, burns the Town and kills many in it: the Engliſh to be revenged, fall with fire and ſword upon the lands of Sir *John Gordon*, who in requital invades *England*, fights with *John Liburn*, whom he takes priſoner with many other, and carrieth them with great booties to *Scotland*. *Henry Pierce* Earl of *Northumberland* raiſeth ſeven thouſand men, and with them marcheth to *Dunce* in *Scotland*, where *Johannes Scotus ſubtilis* was born, this Village is ſix miles from *England*: the Country people thereabout in the night-time upon the hills made ſuch a noiſe with their rattles, which they uſe in driving away the Deer from their Corn, that the *Engliſh* horſe being affrighted, broke their halters, and ran away; the *Engliſh* alſo fearing more danger then there was, took their flight, and left their baggage behinde them; the ſame day *Gordon* by ambuſh took *Thomas Muſgrave* governour of *Berwick*, with ſome of his Troops which were going to joyn with *Piercy*.

Shortly after this Ambaſſadours arrive from *France*, to renew the old League with King *Robert*, and to perſwade him to invade *England*: In the mean while *Alexander Ramſey* takes *Berwick* Caſtle, and afterward ſurrendred it. *James* Earl *Douglaſſe* invades *England* with twenty thouſand horſe and foot, and returns with great booties: the Engliſh in requital enter *Scotland* with fifteen thouſand under *Talbot*, who as they were returning through a narrow valley with their ſpoil, in the night time were ſet upon by five hundred Scots; the *Engliſh* thinking the number of Scots had been far greater, fled diſorderly, many in the flight were ſlain, many more drowned in the River, two hundred and forty taken. *John* Duke of *Lancaſter* is ſent into *Scotland* to mediate a peace, which was concluded for three years; *Lancaſter* hearing of the civil broils in *England*, upon the publike Faith ſtayed in *Scotland* till the *Engliſh* ſtorm was over.

The three years Truce being ended, *Douglaſſe* Lord of *Galloway*, with the Earl of *March*, beſiege ſome *Engliſh* Forts and takes them: *Lancaſter* is ſent againſt *Scotland* with great forces both by ſea and land, who for the kinde uſage he had received a few years before at *Edinburgh*, would not ſuffer the ſouldiers to uſe any violence; the Sea-forces in the Iſle *Armona* burned down a Monaſtery; the like cruelty they uſed in ſome other places, till the Scots forces fell upon them, and having killed ſome, and taken others, drove the reſt on ſhip-board, forty of which were drowned as they held by a cable which was cut. Scarce was *Lancaſter* returned home, when *Douglaſſe* falls upon the Engliſh forts, and regains them: A peace in the mean while is made between *France* and *England*, in which *Scotland* was alſo included; but before the Scots knew of it, the Engliſh with ten thouſand horſe, and ſix thouſand Archers invade *Scotland*, and ſpoil the lands of the *Douglaſſes* and *Lindſey's*, which being done, they ſhew the Scots, that a peace was concluded, and withall the French Ambaſſadours come to aſſure them thereof; the Scots enraged at this perfidiouſneſs and mokery, reſolve to be revenged; king *Robert* labours 1384.

An. Christi. to pacifie them; in the interim *Douglasse*, *Lindsey* and *Dumbar* stole away privately from the Court, and unknown to the king, raise an Army of fifteen thousand, with which they enter *England*, wasting all with fire and sword to *Newcastle*; then having returned with great booties, and many prisoners, they cause a peace to be proclaimed.

About the end of the peace, the French Admiral with two thousand souldiers, and pay for six months, comes into *Scotland*; he brought also four hundred compleat Arms for so many Gentlemen; these with the Scots aid invade *Northumberland*, overthrow three Castles, but by reason of the great rains and floods, were fain to return with their booty: King *Richard* of *England*, in revenge of this wrong, enters *Scotland* with sixty thousand foot, and eight thousand horse, besides with a great Fleet by sea, these with fire and sword waste the Country of *Lothian*. The Scots unwilling to encounter so great an Army, resolve to draw King *Richard* out of *Scotland* by invading *England*, therefore they enter *Cumberland*, spoiling all the Country thereabout: King *Richard* would have pursued the Scots Army, but could not by reason of the rocky and mountainous waies between them, and the difficulty to finde the Scots Army, therefore he returns home the same way he came, and the Scots also retire out of *England*, who with the French resolve to take the Town and Castle of *Rosburgh*; but because the French would have had the Town to themselves if it had been taken, which the Scots would not yeeld too, they gave off their intended siege; the French souldiers being sent home, and the Admiral retained as a prisoner till satisfaction were made for the wrongs they had done to the Country people of *Scotland*. *William Douglasse* son to *Archibald* Lord of *Galloway*, sails over to *Ireland* with an Army to requite the wrongs he had suffered by the Irish, who had made excursions into *Galloway*.

Douglasse having landed his forces near *Kerlinford*, so affrighted the Town, that they sent to article with him: *Douglasse* accepts of a Treaty; in the interim the Town sends to *Dundalk* for aid, five hundred horse are procured, with these and their own forces they march out against *Douglasse*, hoping to subdue his Army, and to seise on his ships; but they were subdued themselves, their Town sacked and burned, fifteen ships then in the harbour are taken and laden with booty, so *Douglasse* returns victorious to *Galloway*, having plundered the Isle of *Man* by the way. At his return, when he understood that his father was marched upon an expedition into *England*, he follows him: the Scots being willing to be revenged on the English for the spoil done on *Lothian* the former year by King *Richard*, desire King *Robert* that an Army might be sent: he being now aged and willing to be quiet, would not yeeld to any invasion of *England*, therefore the Lords repair to the Earl of *Fife* he Kings second son, (for the eldest *John* was lamed by a horse, and unfit for action) these resolve to raise an Army without the knowledge of either King; but they could not carry the matter so close from King *Richard*, who by Spies was advertised of the Scots proceedings, and therefore wills the Northern Countries to be in readiness: the Scots Army consisted of thirty thousand; the *English* sent a Spie disguised in a Scots habit, to discover the Armies intention; he having found out all, and returning to his horse which he had tied to a tree, missed him being stoln, so that he was fain to foot it, which caused suspition, therefore he is pursued and brought back and forced to reveal the whole *English* plot, which made the *Scots* alter their resolutions.

Two Armies being raised, the bigger marcheth by the way of *Carlisle* under the Earls of *Fife*, *Jernia*, *Mar* and *Sutherland*, and *Douglasse* Lord of *Galloway*; the other enters *Northumberland* under the Earls of *Murrey* and *March*, this lesser Army wastes the Bishoprick of *Durham*; *Henry* and *Ralph Piercies*, the old Earl of *Northumberlands* two sons, are sent with some forces to secure *Newcastle*; thither the *Scots* march, some light skirmishes for two dayes

daies together they had with the *Engliſh*: At laſt *James Douglaſſe* and *Henry Piercy* fought a duel in ſight of both the Armies; *Piercy* is beat off from his horſe, and his ſpear taken by *Douglaſſe*, which he carried away with him: the *Scots* were marching away with their booties, with an intent to joyn with the bigger Army; but becauſe *Piercy* bragged, that *Douglaſſe* ſhould not carry his Lance to *Scotland*, therefore he reſolves to ſtay two or three dayes to ſee what *Piercy* would do, who was very eager to purſue the *Scots* to recover his Lance, but was adviſed not to do ſo, for fear of Ambuſhes, for they could not think that ſo ſmall an Army would have ventured upon *Newcaſtle*, but that they had greater forces at hand; yet finding there was no ambuſh, *Piercy* with ten thouſand horſe and foot purſues the Scots, which were ſcarce half ſo many; a cruel fight enſueth, which continued till it was dark, the dayes being then at longeſt; ſo having reſted a while, and the morning appearing, the conflict is renewed, in which *Douglaſſe* is ſlain, but his death concealed; at laſt both the *Piercies* being wounded and taken priſoners, the *Engliſh* are diſheartned and flie, of whom one thouſand and eight hundred are ſlaine, and a thouſand wounded, and one thouſand and forty taken priſoners; of the *Scots* one hundred are ſlaine, and two hundred taken. And now the Biſhop of *Durham* with his forces were come, they ſhould have joyned with *Piercy*, but he would not ſtay for them, ſo earneſt he was to regaine his Lance: The Biſhop underſtanding that *Piercies* Army was defeated, was in a doubt what to do: At laſt being encouraged by the Country, which made up his Army ten thouſand, hee purſues the *Scots*, hoping to finde them careleſſe upon their former ſucceſſe, or elſe wearied with fighting. *An. Chriſti.* 1390. 1400.

The Earl *Murrey*, who now had the charge of the Army, *Douglaſſe* being dead, underſtanding that the Biſhops Army was comming upon his forces, calls a Councel of war concerning the priſoners; ſome would have had them put to death, being dangerous to keep ſo many, but this was held cruelty, therefore an oath is taken of them that they ſhould not ſtir during the time of the fight; then they put themſelves in battel-array, each one is commanded to ſound a horn, which by the eccho of the neighbouring hills made a hideous noiſe, ſo that the *Engliſh* ſuppoſed the *Scots* to be more numerous then they were; this noiſe, and the ſight of ſo many dead bodies before them killed in the former conflict, the unskilfulneſs of the Commanders, and rawneſs of the ſouldiers, ſo diſheartned the *Engliſh*, that they retreated: Upon this the *Scots* return homeward, *Ralph Piercy* not being able to travel by reaſon of his wounds, got leave with ſix hundred of the other priſoners to return home upon their parol, the poorer priſoners were let go without ranſome; *Henry Piercy* with four hundred more are carried into *Scotland*, and ſhortly after ranſomed. The other Army which was in *Cumberland*, was not ſo glad for this victory, as ſad for the death of *Douglaſſe*, a man highly honoured and beloved for his valour, and ſo much the more becauſe he was killed in the prime of years. And ſo much of this battel fought at *Otterburn*, not far from *Newcaſtle*.

Upon the return of the *Scots*, King *Robert* by reaſon of his age finding himſelf ſlighted by his Lords, and unfit for action, calls a Parliament, in which *Robert* his younger ſonne is declared Lieutenant and Governour of *Scotland*. Not long after this King *Robert* died, the ſeventie fourth year of his life, and nineteenth of his reign; upon whoſe death *Alexander* Earl of *Buchan*, to revenge himſelf of the Biſhop of *Murrey*, who had angred him, ſets the *Cathedral* Church of *Elgin* on fire. To King *Robert* ſucceeded his ſon *John*, who by an Act of Parliament had his name changed to *Robert*, either becauſe the two *Johns* of *England* and *France* were unfortunate Princes, or elſe becauſe the two firſt *Roberts* of *Scotland* were brave men; there were two Families 1390.

of

An. Christi. of the *Highlanders*, whose feud was so great, that they could never be reconciled, till it was agreed that thirty of either family should fight hand to hand in the Kings presence, which was done accordingly in open field by
1396. *Perth*, whither multitudes came to see that horrid butchering spectacle; they were all killed except one of the one party, and eleven of the other, who were all grievously wounded; and so the fiercest of these families being slain, the rest remained quiet for many years after. Two years after this, the title of Duke came into *Scotland*, the first that was so called was *David* king *Roberts* son, being eighteen years old, whom the king in Parliament stiled Duke of *Rothsay*, and his brother Robert Duke of *Albanie*: This title of Duke was proffered to Earl *Douglasse*, but he refused it. Not long after, *George Dumbar* Earl of *March* had betrothed his daughter to *David* king *Roberts* son, and had already paid a great part of the portion; At this *Archibald* Earl *Douglasse* being offended, complained to the Parliament that the king had bestowed his son without their consent, and withall proffers his daughter with a greater portion, which if accepted: Upon this *Dumbar* with his family removes in great discontent into *England*, joynes himself with *Piercy*, raises forces, and invades *Douglasse* his lands: hereupon *Dumbar* is proclaimed Traitor, and his estate confiscate; a Herauld is sent to king *Henry* of *England* to demand *Dumbar*, and to complain that the peace was broken; king *Henry* having given no satisfaction to the Herauld, besides, because *Piercy* and *Dumbar* with two thousand horse and foot had entred *Scotland*, (but were driven out again with the losse of
1400. their booty by *Douglasse*) open wars are proclaimed against *England*.

THE

An. Christi.

THE SIXTH BOOK OF THE SECOND PART:

Intreating of the Histories of the World, from the Year, 1400.

CHAP. I.

1. *The Affairs of* Italy, Germany, Hungary *and* Bohemia *under* Wenceslaus, Rupert, Sigismund, *Emperours.* 2. *The Councels of* Constance *and* Basil, *with some other passages from the year,* 1400. *till the year,* 1439.

IN the time of *Wenceslaus* fell out the year of Jubilee, which should have been a year of rest and gladness, but proved the beginning of that miserable rent in Christendome, which is not yet made up; *John Husse*, or *Goose* (for so the word signifies) having read *Wickliffs* books sent him from *England*, began to preach openly in the University of *Prague* against Jubilees and Indulgences, against Purgatory, Image-worship, Transubstantiation, and other points held by the Church; this new Doctrine of his made such a distraction in the University, that most of the Schollers went away thence to *Erford* and *Lipsia*, where out of the ruines of *Prague* sprung up these two Universities. About a hundred years after out of this Goose's egg was hatched that Gosling, which did more hurt to new *Rome*, then the Goose of the Capitol did good to old *Rome*. 1406.

Husse being driven by the Bishop from *Prague*, retires to the Village where he was born, and preacheth there openly the same doctrine; complaint is made against him to *Wenceslaus*, but he neither could nor did any thing against him, for he was shortly after deposed by the Electors of *Mentz*, *Colen*, *Trevers*, and the *Palsgrave*. *Jodocus Barbatus* Marques of *Brandeburg*, is named Emperour by *Colen* and *Mentz*, which election was approved by *Wenceslaus* his Cousin-german; but he was never crowned, for within six moneths of his election he died; then was *Frederick* of *Brunswick* named by the Electors, but as he was coming to be crowned, the Bishop of *Mentz* set upon him in the way and murthered him; at length *Rupert* of *Bavaria* Elector Palatine is made *Cæsar*, and crowned at *Colen* by the Bishop, for *Aix* which favoured *Wenceslaus*, would not open their Gates; but them and other Towns which held with *Wenceslaus*, shortly after *Rupert* brought under; this *Rupert* was descended from *Ludovic* the Fourth.

The Pope upon the *Florentines* request, who were molested by *John Galeas* of *Millan*, gave way to *Rupert* to require from the Priests of *Germany* their

Tenths

An. Christi. Tenths for raising of an Army against *Galeacius*, whose wealth and power was become formidable both to the Pope and the other Italian Princes; but *Rupert* was resisted by the Bishop of *Millan*, who also made *Leopold* of *Austria* and the Bishop of *Colen* his enemies: *Trevers* likewise made resistance, yet he raised an Army, being promised by the *Florentines* two hundred thousand Florens; as soon as his forces had touched the Territories of *Galeacius*, he marcheth thence into the Country of *Brixia*, but was beaten back into *Trent* by the Dukes Army; thence he came to *Padua* upon the desire of the *Venetians*, where he was met by the *Florentine* Ambassadours with some forces and money to renew the war; but not finding the forces and money answerable to his expectation, and that neither the Pope nor *Venetians* would openly assist him, he returns into *Germany*: Whereupon *Galeacius* sends his forces against *Bononia*, assisted by the *Florentines*, he obtains the victory and the City withall, which had been the occasion of fifty years war; *Bentivolus* the tyrant of that City was slain. He besiegeth *Francis Gonzaga* at *Mantua*, and forceth him to yeeld the Town, being almost drowned by letting in the Rivers *Po* and *Athesis*; he took from *Scaliger*, *Verona* and *Vincentha*, and shortly after *Padua* from *Carrarius* whom at first he assisted against *Scaliger*. After he had taken in *Bononia*, he crossed the *Apinines* with his victorious Army, and struck a great terrour at *Florence*, but a violent feaver stopt the career of his victories, whereof he died in this expedition, having left behinde him *Johannes Maria*, and *Philip*, who were the last Dukes of *Millan* of that race of *Vicounts*, and one daughter *Valentina* married to *Lewis* Prince of *Orleans*, son to *Charles* 5. of *France*.

After the death of *Galeacius*, the *Guelphs* and *Gibellins* at *Millan* fell again to destroy each other with fire and sword; the Cities lately taken by *Galeacius*, fell off from his sons, and the jurisdiction of *Millan*, to their several governours; *Brixia* to *Pandulphus*, *Papia* to *Facinius Canis*, *Cremona* to *Benzones*, &c. Among the rest *Bononia* fell off to the Pope, so did *Assisinum* and *Perusia* Cities of *Umbria*. The *Florentines* with their money purchased *Pisa* from *Gabriel* the Bastard-son of *John Galeacius*. *Sena* having killed *Corregius* their Governour, reassumed their liberty, which was accompanied with many bloody seditions. The *Venetians* upon these changes, promoted their Territories as far as *Forum*, *Julij* and *Istria*, so they grew great by the ruines of the *Scaligers* and *Carrarii*; for *Novellus Carrarius* the son of *Francis*, having recovered *Padua* by the *Venetian* assistance, forgetting his benefactors, stirs up *William Scaliger* to recover *Verona*, which when *William* had obtained, *Carrarius* poysoneth him, and then murdereth his two sons, that without opposition he might enjoy the Empire of *Verona*; and not content with this, he assaied to take in *Vincentia*, which hating his tyranny, cast her self upon the *Venetians* patrocine, they being glad of this occasion, make open war against *Carrarius*, whose forces they subdue, and drive him within the walls of *Padua*, where being straitly besieged, he with his two sons were forced to yeeld to the *Venetians*, who caused them all there to be strangled, his other two sons escaped, but died shortly after in *Hetruria*: Upon this the *Venetians* obtain *Verona*, *Vincentia*, *Colonia*, *Feltrium*, *Bellunum* and *Padua*. And thus was the greatness of *Millan* which had swallowed up almost all *Italy* on this side of *Latium*, torn in peeces. *Johannes Maria* became a most bloody Tyrant, taking delight to fling to hungry Mastiffs condemned persons, or such as he hated; these dogs he used to feed with mens flesh, and then to keep them hungry that they might prove the more fierce and cruel; but he was at last by some Assassinates murthered in the Church, who cleft his skull close to his eyes, and cut off his right leg, a grateful spectacle to the people, who extreamly hated him: his brother and successour *Philip* revenged his death, and recovered *Brixia*, *Placentia*, *Comus*, *Cremona*, and some other places, but lost quite *Hetruria*, *Umbria*, *Æmylia* and *Picenum*; he beheaded *Fundulfus* the governour of *Cremona*, who being upon

the

the Scaffold, was exhorted to repent, answered, That he was so far from re- *An. Christi.*
penting, that he was sorry he had not broke the necks both of *Sigismund* the Emperour, and Pope *John* 23. when he entertained them with a banquet upon the battlements of his high Tower.

Rupert the Emperour seeing but little good to be done in *Italy*, returns, as we said, to *Germany*, permitting the Italians to decide their own quarrels, who were then distracted into Italian and French factions by means of the Antipopes. *Ladislaus* King of *Naples*, seeming to favour the faction of *Gregory* 12. came suddenly upon *Rome*, being then in great distractions, and took it, with some other Towns belonging to the Church; he threatned also the *Florentines*; but *Lewis* of *Anjou* being invited by the Popes letters, comes and joyns his Forces with those of *Florence* and *Seva*, upon hope to obtain the Kingdome of *Naples*; so he recovers the City for *Alexander* 5. and drives out *Ladislaus*, who not long after, with greater forces returns and takes *Rome*, having suppressed the Pontificans and French Auxiliaries; he killed many of the Citizens, overthrew the walls, took the Castle of S. *Angelo*, with divers Towns belonging to the Church, and kept them till his dying day, notwithstanding that he was anathematized by Pope *Alexander*; he left by will the Kingdome to his sister *Joan*, who as is said, repudiated her husband *James Burbon* Earle of *Marchia*, and adopted *Alphonsus* King of *Arragon*, thinking thereby to make her party strong against the Pope, and those of *Anjou*; *Alphonsus* having slighted her, was rejected by her, who sent for *Lewis* of *Anjou's* eldest son, after whose death she surrogated his brother *Renatus*, whence arose bloody wars between the houses of *Arragon* and *Anjou*, the Popes siding sometimes with the one, sometimes with the other. In the interim *Rupert* having reigned ten years died, and was buried at *Heidelberg*; he was married twice, and left divers children behinde him. In his time shined a terrible Comet which presaged the wars of *Bohemia* raised by *Husse*, the troubles of *Italy* by means of the Antipopes, and the defeat of the Christian Armies by the Turks. He built a Church and Colledge at *Heidelberg*. 1412.

To *Rupert* succeeded *Sigismund* the son of *Charles* 4. whom *Ludovic* King of *Hungary* had adopted for his son, intending to make him heir to the Crown, and husband to his daughter; but *Ludovic* being dead, and *Sigismund* as yet a childe, the Queen-mother governed the Kingdome; the Nobility disliking her government, send for *Charles* King of *Naples*, son to *Andrew* King *Ludovicks* brother, who being received with general applause, was by the Queen-widow poysoned, and the Italians driven out of *Hungary*; but his death was revenged by *John* governour of *Croatia*, who put to death the murtherers, and having dragged the young Queen with her mother by the hair upon the ground, caused the old Queen to be drowned, and her daughter he imprisoned; whom shortly after, fearing an insurrection, he set at liberty: *Sigismund* upon this comes out of *Bohemia* with a great Army, invades *Hungary* without opposition, and being now 20. years of age, is crowned and married to the young Queen. After this he repairs to *Croatia*, besiegeth the governour whom he took and beheaded, with 32. more that sided with him in his rebellion against the young Queen: the *Hungarians* repining at this severity imprisoned him, committing the charge of him to one of the widows of those whom he had beheaded; but upon great promises made to her, she dismissed him, who having again obtained the Kingdome, which he secured with garrisons in all places, he put to death *Steven Veivoda* the chief author of his imprisonment, by which he quieted the rest.

Concerning *Sigismunds* bad successe against *Bajazet* the Turk, we have already spoken, whose fortune was no better in a second Battel against *Celebin Bajazets* sonne, who had got over the Hellespont, and had fallen upon *Bulgaria* and *Macedonia*. *Sigismund* encountred with the Turks near *Samandria*, not farre from the Banks of *Danubius*;

An. Christi. but lost the battel by comming too late. Notwithstanding this bad successe, he is called to the Empire by the Electors; his chief care was to settle peace in Christendome now distracted by three Antipopes, to wit, *Benedict* 13. *Gregory* 12. and *John* 23. whose residence was at *Bononia*, *Gregories* at *Areminum*, and *Benedicts* at *Avenion*. *Sigismund* finding that a Synod was fitter then Armes to compose these distractions, procured by the consent of the Christian Princes, a Synod to be called at *Constance*, where were present all the Princes or their Legats, even from *Byzantium* and *Trapezund*. Here *Adolphus* 2. Earle of *Cleve*, and *Amadeus* Earle of *Savoy*, were created Dukes of the Empire; the Marquisiat of *Brandeburg*, with the Electoral dignity is sold to *Friderick Burgrave* of *Noriberg*, who had done good service for *Sigismund* against the Hungarians and Bohemians. *Albert* the *Septemvir* of *Saxony* died about this time, whose Dominion and Electorship *Sigismund* transferred upon *Frederic*, surnamed the *Stout*, Marqueese of *Mysnia* for his charges and good service in the Bohemian warres: he erected out of the ruines of the University of *Prague*, that of *Lipsia*.

The Synod being dissolved, *Sigismund* intended to make warre against the Turk, and to repaire his honour lost in the two former battels, but he was taken off from this designe by the commotions of *Bohemia*, therefore having made *Moravia* sure to him, and *Silesia*, he put to death the seditious Citizens of *Vratislavia* the Metropolis of that Country for invading the Government, and flinging downe the Senators from an high Tower. The Bohemian warre was hastened on by the violence of the *Hussits*, who were enraged for *Husse's* death; therefore they persecuted with all hostility the Priests and Monks, some of which they banished, others they murthered, having pulled downe and burned the Religious houses, and broken to peeces the Images and Statues in their Churches. Divers battels were fought, but the *Hussits* under the command of *Zisca* obtained the victory;

1420. the Emperour enters *Bohemia* with his forces to suppresse these tumults; and having taken *Prague*, was crowned and anointed King of *Bohemia*; then he falls upon the Bohemian forces, but was repulsed and beaten by them, and compelled to retreat into *Moravia* for a new leavy; In the meantime Pope *Martin* 5. by the Cardinal of *Winchester*, had stirred up all *Germany* against *Bohemia*; three Armies were raised, one of *Saxons* by their Duke, the other of *Francons* by the Marqueese of *Brandeburg*, and the third of *Bavarians*, *Snevians*, and others, by the Archbishop of *Trevers*: All these Forces by a sudden panick fear were dissipated; the like successe had that Army which was raised by *Julianus Cæsarinus* the Cardinal; divers other attempts were made upon the *Bohemian Hussits*, but with ill successe.

Upon this the Counceel of *Basil* is called; the Emperour with great promises is invited into *Italy* by *Philip Maria* Viscount of *Millan*, against

1431. whom the *Venetians* and *Florentines* made war both by Sea and Land; being received at *Millan*, he is crowned with the iron Crown; thence he went to *Parma* where he wintered. In the Spring he comes to *Rome*, and upon the day of Penticost is crowned by *Eugenius* the 4. Thence returning through *Ferraria* and *Mantua*, creates *John Francis Gonzaga* Lord of *Mantua*, Marqueese. Thence he returnes through *Basil* into *Hungarie*, and from thence into *Bohemia* which now was quieted by the Councel of *Basil*. Here having obtained of the Peers that *Albertus Austriacus* his sonne in law

1437. should succeed him to the Crowne, he retires to his daughter in *Moravia*, where he sickned and died the twentieth year of his Empire, the seventeenth of his Reign over *Bohemia*, and one and fifty over *Hungary*, the seventy seventh year of his age; He was buried at *Varadinum* or *Varasin*: He was a good Prince, a lover of Learning; He caused the History of *Arrianus* to be

translated

translated for him out of the Greek into the Latine. He hated flatterers, therefore one day he beat one of his Courtiers for flattering him to his face; at which the man repining cried out, Why dost thou beat me, said the flatterer? Why dost thou bite me, said the Emperour? He was very munificent; but one day riding through a water, his horse stopt and pissed in it; to which one of his Courtiers said, This horse is like his master; the Emperour dered to know his meaning, the Courtier tells him, That as his horse pissed there where there was too much already, so he bestowed his bounty on those that needed it not, and neglected those that were in want: The Emperour shortly after fills two boxes of the same bigness, the one with silver, the other with lead, which he presents to this Courtier, willing him to take his choice of either; he chose the leaden box, which when the Emperour saw, he told him that it was not for want of good will in the Emperour, but of good luck in the Courtier that he was not richer. *Sigismund* is commended for divers Apothegmes, and for his clemencie, saying, That others killed their enemies with swords, but he used to kill his enemies with favours. His first wife *Mary* King *Ludovic's* daughter of *Hungary*, died a year after their marriage: His other wife *Barbara* a lascivious woman, bare him one daughter *Elizabeth* heir of the Kingdome whom hee betroathed to *Albert* of *Austria*, he imprisoned his wife *Barbara* for treason against him, for she plotted with the Peers of *Bohemia* to seise on the Kingdome; but after his death shee was let free; her life after this she led infamously, and died miserably of the Venereal plague. *An. Christi.*

There was nothing more commendable in this Emperour, then the paines he took with the Christian Princes in calling the Synod of *Constance*, to settle the distracted estate of the Christians caused by the three Antipopes: The Cardinals at *Pisa* had conferred their Papacie on *John* 23. *Gregory* and *Benedict* being excluded, who slighted this act of the Cardinals; therefore to take all quarrels off, the Pontificat is conferred on *Otto Columnius*, and is named *Martin* 5. the other three being forced to yeeld; in this Synod *Petrus de Aliaco* Cardinal, and *Gerson* Chancellour of *Paris* laboured for a reformation of the Clergy and Court of *Rome*, but to no purpose: here *Wickliffs* doctrine is condemned, so are *John Husse* and *Hierome* of *Prague*; *Husse* was first degraded, and then delivered up to the Secular power; upon his head was put a paper-Miter, with the picture of three Divils, and this Inscription, [*This is the Arch-heretick:*] Some write, that he should say before his death, *That out of his ashes should arise a Swan which they should not burne as they did the Goose, and that a hundred years after they should answer to God and him.* Which words the Bohemians stamped upon some of their coin: he was burned in *July*, and *Hierome* of *Prague* the next *September* after. In this Synod was renewed the decree of Communicating under one kinde: It was also ordered, that the fifth year after the end of this Synod should be the beginning of another, and afterward every tenth year a Councel should be held; by virtue of this constitution a Synod was held at *Papia*, which from thence, because of the plague, was translated to *Sena*. This was dissolved by Pope *Martin* 5. because *Alphonsus* King of *Arragon*, who hated *Martin*, endeavoured to restore *Petrus Lunensus* to the Pontificat, which at *Constance* hee had lost: therefore *Basil* is designed for the next Synod. *Julianus* the Cardinal is sent into *Germany* to prosecute the Bohemian war, and to call the Synod. 1415.

In this Councel of *Basil*, at which divers learned Bohemians were present, it is decreed that the Synods authority was above the Popes: but *Eugenius* 4. successour to *Martin*, fearing lest the Synods power should crush the Papacie, commanded it to be translated to *Bononia*: 1431.

An. Christi. This was ſo diſtaſteful to *Sigiſmund* the Emperour, and the reſt there, that they cite *Eugenius* to appear at *Baſil*, or elſe to loſe his Pontificat; here-upon *Eugenius* was forced to ratifie the acts of the Synod, but taking advantage of the arrival of *John Palæologus* Emperour of *Conſtantinople*, who came for aid againſt the Turks, he enjoyned the Synod to be tranſlated to *Ferraria*, and from thence to *Florence*; this diſpleaſed the Fathers of *Baſil*, who deſired the Greeks to repair thither, if they meant to do any good towards their union with the Latine Church; but *Eugenius* hindred their comming, and now *Sigiſmund* being dead, he ſtirs up the Dolphin of *France*, who afterward was called *Lewis* the 11. to raiſe the Synod with a great Army; theſe committed great inſolencies in *Alſatia*, but in their journey to *Baſil* were worſted by the *Switzers*, who alſo loſt their lives there. This tumult drove away from *Baſil* the Princes Legats; the Greeks were perſwaded in
1439. this aſſembly at *Florence* to aſſent to the Proceſſion of the Holy Ghoſt, to celebrate the Euchariſt in unleavened bread, to acknowledge Purgatory, and the Popes power, which was ſo diſpleaſing to the Greek Churches, upon the return of the Emperour and Patriarch, that they denied Chriſtian burial to all ſuch as ſhould aſſent to theſe Articles: In the mean while the Synod of *Baſil* depoſeth Pope *Eugenius*, and ſubſtitutes in his place *Amadeus* Duke of *Savoy*, who ſtiled himſelf *Felix* 5. whence ſprung up a new ſchiſme, which was ended by the death of *Eugenius*, and the voluntary act of *Felix*, who ſurrendred again the Pontificat.

Chap. II.

The Hiſtory of Swethland *and* Denmark, *from the year* 1412. *till the year* 1587. *of* Denmark *and of* Swethland, *till* 1590.

1412. IN *Swethland* (as we have ſaid) to *Margaret* ſucceeded her nephew *Ericus* Duke of *Pomerania*, he was a great hater of the Nobility, whom he much weakned in forreign wars both by ſea and land; his government was oppoſed by *Engilbert* Prince of *Dalcarlia* whom the *Danes* ſlew, and by *Charles* ſon of *Canutus* governour of the Kingdome, who drove *Ericus* into *Denmark*, where finding no help or ſecurity, ſtrives to make his peace with his own ſubjects, and to return home, they upon his ſubmiſſion were contented to re-
1441 ceive him again; but as he was returning home, he ſeiſeth upon *Gothland*, intending to exerciſe Pyracie there upon all the Northern ſhips; but being beſet round by *Charles Canutus*, and fearing the Daniſh forces, ſurrenders himſelf to his people, amongſt whom afterward he reigned peaceably fourteen years from his Coronation: To him ſucceeded *Chriſtopher Palatin*, Duke of *Bavaria*, nephew to *Ericus* by his ſiſter; he had wars with *England*, but returning victorioully home, fell upon *Lubec* without any ſucceſſe; he loſt his Fleet by ſhipwrack upon the coaſt of *Suecia*; as he was ſtriving to ſurprife the *Vandalic* Cities: In his time the Kingdome was ruined with plague and famine. At laſt having loſt in the ſea all his wealth, dieth in *Denmark* childleſs.

Swethland being governed ſome years without a King, at length by
1458. the conſent of the Peers who were [illegible]ry to be ruled any longer by Forreigners, elected *Charles Canutus* for their King: He ſubdueth *Norway*, and layeth heavy Fines upon the *Danes* for making war againſt him; the people being irritated by the tyranny of their Governours, and animated by the Archbiſhop of *Upſalen*, a rebellion is raiſed, which to ſuppreſs, *Charles* removes to *Gedanum*, where he expected aide from *Poland*; in the interim the people

people obtrudes the Kingdome upon *Christiern* King of *Denmark* and crownes him. *Catillus* Bishop of *Lincopen*, and the Archbishops Nephew having raised an Army, drives out of the kingdome all that sided with *Christiern*, and in a memorable battel defeats *Christiern*; upon this *Charles* is called home out of *Prussia*, and by the popular breath re-established; he placed milder Governors over them; at last, being full of years and peace, died, to whom succeeded *Steno Sture*, Nephew to *Charles* by the sister; he defeated the Fleet which *Christiern* had sent against *Stockholm*, and overthrew his Army which had set down before the walls, so that after this he never made any attempt against *Sweden*; but his son *John*, by the assistance of the *Russians*, and taking occasion by the factions between *Steno* and *Suanto*, a great man, invaded *Swethland*, where by a Faction he was crowned; but shortly after suppressed by *Steno*, who brought back to *Smalanda* the Queen of *Denmark*, whom *John* had carried away and married; but shortly after at a feast he sickned and died the 30 year of his government; he was well beloved for his excellent parts, but chiefly for refusing the Crown when it was proffered him. *An. Christi.* 1470. 1493.

Suanto Prince of the *Ostrogothes*, and Chancellor of the Kingdome, is elected Prince of *Swethland*. *Gaddus* Bishop of *Lincopen* conveyed privately the body of *Steno* to *Stockholm*. *Suanto* having entred into a confederacy with the *Lubikers*, made war upon *Christiern* the 2. against whom whilst he was making preparations, he died the 8. year of his government, *Steno Sture* the younger *Suantons* son succeeded, who whilst he was fighting stoutly against *Christiern* which had invaded *Swethland* with a new Army, was killed by a cannon bullet; he being dead, and the *Swedish* Army defeated, *Christiern* was invited by the Danish faction, & is crowned: but the Peers whom he suspected on that very day of his Coronation are treacherously by him murthered at a feast, having caused first the Town gates of *Stockholm* to be shut, that none might escape, about 94 were massacred, whose bodies were left unburied three dayes on the ground, to the horror of the spectators; the body of *Steno* but lately buried, by the command of this new Tyrant is digged up, and burned with the rest; at length he plundred the widows and sons of the murthered Nobility; but hearing that thirty thousand of the people were up in arms against him, he stole out of *Stockholm*, and through woods and by-ways escaped to *Denmark*, the same moneth that he was crowned; neither was he quiet at home, for having embrewed his hands in the blood of his own people, was extreamly hated, so that *Frederick* his Uncle, Prince of *Holsatia*, with the *Lubikers*, raised an Army against him; whereupon being terrified in conscience he flies into *Zeland* with *Isabel* his wife, *Cæsars* sister, and his children, the third year after the massacre of *Stockholm*. 1512. 1520. 1523.

In the mean time *Gustavus* the son of *Ericus*, who had escaped out of the hands of the *Dane*, under pretence of negotiating for *Christina* the widow of *Steno*, marrieth with *Steno's* daughter, and by the consent of the Peers, and wealth of the *Lubikers*, enters upon the possession of the vacant kingdome; after this he aboliseth the old religion, and embraceth the doctrine of the *Augustine* confession; at last having governed the kingdome prudently eight and thirty years, he departs this life, leaving for his successor *Ericus* whom he begot of his wife *Katharine* the Duke of *Saxons* daughter; after he was crowned at *Stockholm*, he made wars upon the *Danes* and *Lubikers*, by which he encurred the hatred of his friends and neighbours; his brother *John* Duke of *Finland* was much displeased with his conditions; he having married *Katharine* a widow, and sister to *Sigismund* King of *Poland*, lent him a great sum of money, for which he received in mortgage from the King divers Castles and Garrison towns in *Livonia*; *Ericus* being suspitious, thought his brother had entred into league with the *Polonian* and *Dane* against him, therefore makes war upon him, and having apprehended him with his wife and whole family at *Abo* a Town in *Finland*, causeth him to be brought to *Holmia*, where being 1560.

pub-

An. Christi. publikely condemned, was impriſoned, and moſt of his chief friends put to death; after four years impriſonment he was ſet free; about a year after he ſeiſeth on his brother *Ericus*, deveſts him of his kingdome, and commits him
1568. to perpetual impriſonment: hereupon *John* is made king of *Swethland* by general conſent; he had war with the *Dane* and *Muſcovite* which laſted many years; he died and left one ſon, *Sigiſmund*, who was elected king of *Poland*; *John* was of his fathers religion, conſonant to the *Auguſtine* confeſſion, but he ſuffered his ſon *Sigiſmund* to be inſtructed privately by his mother *Katherine* in the *Catholick* faith, yet would not ſuffer any other profeſſion but *Lutheraniſme* publikely in his own kingdom; therefore he left his brother *Charles* Duke of *Finland*, a rigid Lutheran, as an hoſtage with his people, that no innovation
1590. ſhould be in their Religion, and withall in his ſons abſence appointed him executor of his will, and titular King of *Swethland*.

1412. In *Denmark*, *Margaret*, as is already ſaid, being dead, *Ericus* reigned alone, he was the Duke of *Pomerania's* ſon, and great grandchild of *Waldemar*; he learned his cruelty and perfidiouſneſs of *Margaret*, by whom he was educated. In his time the *Alemans* made irruptions into *Denmark*, but to their loſs, for they were defeated and repulſed by the Queen and Nobility, whoſe overthrow in theſe wars, *Ericus* that hated the Peers, did chiefly aime at; he being ſlighted for his perfidiouſneſs and injuſtice, is expelled out of both his Kingdoms into *Gothland*, an Iſland fit for his ſafety, and for exerciſing of pyracie; during his abode here, he much infeſted the *Swediſh* ſhips, but was favourable to the *Danes*, to whom he left all *Gothland* to be poſſeſſed and kept for him in his abſence; for not finding himſelf ſecure enough in that Iſland, he returns to *Pomerania*. This *Ericus* is infamous in the Hiſtories of *Swethland* and *Denmark*, for his adulteries, perjuries, plundrings, treacheries, injuſtice, and ſeven and twenty ſeveral treaſons; when he fled to *Gothland*, he carried with him the whole treaſures of his kingdome, and *Cæcil* his Concubine, who was the chief cauſe both
1438. of his wickedneſs and miſeries. To him ſucceeded *Chriſtopher* Duke of *Bavaria*, the great Grandchild alſo of *Waldemar*, he was choſen by the conſent of King *Ericus*; he was much offended with the inſolencies of the Hans-towns, which were grown ſo wealthy and ſtrong, that they ſlighted their neighbour Princes, chiefly *Lubec* which the *Danes* had built, and was hitherto ſubject to the Daniſh Kings, but now by treachery and cunning had ſhaken off their yoke, and aimed at the government of their Governours; therefore to reduce them to their former obedience, he raiſeth out of all parts of his kingdome great ſums of money, which ſo diſpleaſed the Northern Juitlanders that they rebelled, but were quickly ſuppreſſed by the King, and grievouſly fined: his wife was *Dorothy* daughter to *John* Marqueſs of *Brandeburg*; he died childleſs, the ſeventh year of his reign in the Caſtle of *Helſingor*; he was a Prince well beloved of the *Danes*, but hated of the *Swedes*, over whom notwithſtanding he reigned till his dying day.

1447. To him ſucceeded *Chriſtianus* the firſt, ſon of *Theodoricus* Earl of *Adenburg*, he was elected by the adviſe of *Adolphus* Duke of *Holſatia* his kinſman; he married *Dorothy* the widow of *Chriſtopher* his predeceſſor, of whom he begot a daughter, *Margaret* by name, (who was afterward married to the King of *Scotland*) and two ſons, *John* and *Frederick*; in his time the *Swedes* fell off totally from the Covenant of the three Kingdomes, having choſen and crowned a King of their own, to wit, *Charles* ſon of *Canutus*, and Lord Marſhal of that Kingdome, but he at laſt was expulſed for his tyranny and perfidiouſneſs, and *Chriſtianus* was by them accepted as their king, to whom they were not long ſubject, for divers of the *Swedes* rebelled againſt him, and called home again *Charles* from *Gaunt*, where he had lived in exile ſeven years; this *Chriſtianus* was a clement and bountiful Prince, whoſe government had been without blood, if his ſimplicity had not been abuſed by ſome ſycophants, to the great prejudice of *Swethland*, for *John* Archbiſhop of *Upſalia*, by the malice of ſome

falſe

false informers (by whom often-times Princes are abused) was apprehended by *Christianus*, and highly wronged, being sent into *Denmark*, where he lived in great misery, and yet it was by his means that the King obtained this Kingdome, for this Archbishop was the main man that opposed the tyranny, perfidiousness and cruelty of King *Charles*, that stood most for the peoples liberty, but King *Christianus* having found out the knavery of these mis-informers, sends the Archbishop home again to *Sweden* with much honour, and restores him to his former power and dignity; in requital of which favours, he remained faithful ever after to *Christianus*, forgetting the injury of his captivity: this King having redeemed *Holsatia* with a great sum of money, raised by way of taxes from his subjects; *Swethland* also being subdued by his Arms, and *Gothland* regained, having married his son *John*, and visited *Rome* for Religions sake; at last after three and thirty years reign he died, and was buried at *Roschild* in a Chappel which he had built and richly endowed, on the South side of the Cathedral Church of Saint *Lucius* the Martyr; this place he had inriched with divers ornaments and Reliques from *Rome*. *An. Christi.* 1481.

To him succeeded his son *John* the first; he married *Christina* daughter of *Ernestus* Duke of *Mysnia*, who bare him two sons *Christiernus* and *Frederick*, and one daughter, *Elizabeth*, who was married to *Joachim* Marquess of *Brandeburg*; this *John* almost reigned two and thirty years over *Denmark*; in the beginning of his reign, some of the prophane Peers stirred him up against the Clergy, but when he perceived that it was out of malice and covetousness these profane men desired the overthrow of the Church, which is still exposed to the hatred of the Laity, he took all Ecclesiastick persons into his protection ever after; but what these covetous wretches could not effect by this King against the Church, they afterward did perform by *Christiern* and *Frederick* the first. *John* intended war against *Steno Stura* Governour of *Swede*, which his mother *Dorothy* kept off whilst she lived, but after her death he fought and subdued the *Swedes*, yet scarce injoyed he that kingdome three years, for *Steno* and *Suanto* rebelled, to the hurt of both kingdomes. Queen *Christina* was besieged and taken in the Castle of *Holme*; he was unfortunate in the battel of *Ditmarse* which he lost, but had better success by Sea against the *Lubekers*, who were alwayes enemies to the kingdom of *Denmark*; he died of the Plague in the town of *Olburg*, and was buried at *Ottonia*; he was a Prince both prudent and religious, much lamented after his death even by those that hated him in his life, foreseeing the tyrannical government of his son *Christiern* the second, whom the Histories call worse then any *Phalaris*, *Nero*, or *Scylla*, for having found a peaceable and plentiful kingdom, he left it most calamitous, by his sacriledge, impieties, cruelties, and perfidiousness, sparing neither ecclesiastick nor secular persons, but raging on the dead as well as on the living, for which his Nobility were so offended, that by the help of his Uncle and *Lubekers*, they drove him out of his kingdome, the 9. yeare of his reign; ten years he lived an exiled man in *Germany*; afterward returning with an Army into his countrey, hoping to recover his kingdome, was taken prisoner, and detained in captivity till his death, which befell him at *Callenburg* having lived 77 years and some moneths, he was buried at *Ottonia* neer his father; his Concubine was the cause of all the miseries that fell on him and his kingdome; he married with *Isabel* daughter to *Philip* King of *Spain* and Arch-Duke of *Austria*, who lived ten years, and was buried at *Gaunt*; a most chaste and religious Lady, who bare him three sons, two of which died in their infancy, the third departed in the *Hungarian* warre under his Uncle *Charles* the fifth, Emperour, the same day that his father was taken prisoner; she bare him also two Daughters; *Dorothy* married to *Frederick* Count *Palatine*, and *Christina* the wife of *Francis Sfortia* Duke of *Millan*, and after him of *Francis* Duke of *Loraine*:

1483. 1501. 1513. 1532. 1559.

Frederick

An. Christi. *Frederick* the first succeeds King of *Denmark* and *Norway*; by his fathers last will he was made Duke of *Slesvic*, *Holsatia*, *Stormaria*, *Wagria*, and *Ditmarschia*; but being a child of nine years, his brother the king divides these Countries with him; when he came to mans estate, he demanded of his brother the Legacies his father left him, and complained for detaining his Dominions from him, but receiving an unpleasing answer, he was contented to sit quiet so long as his brother lived, whom he aided also in his wars against the *Ditmarshians*; at last entring into a confederacie with the Danish Nobility, drives him out of his kingdome for his tyranny, and undertakes the Government of *Denmark* and *Norway*; *Hafnia* surrendred to him, whither calling the Nobility togeth-
1524. er, he held a Parliament, in which *Christiern* for his tyranny and treachery is deposed, and *Frederick* elected, who presently confirmed the priviledges of the Nobility as soon as he was crowned; he commanded that the *Lutheran* doctrine should be publikely taught in the Churches; he died at *Gottorp*, and was buried at *Sleswig* in the Quier of the Cathedral Church, where he was honoured with a Monument of Alabaster; he lived six and fifty years and reigned ten; he had two wives, the first was *Anna* daughter to *John* Elector and Marquess of *Brandeburg*, who lived fourteen years with him, he had by her *Christian* the third, king of *Denmark*, and *Dorothy* 1. the wife of *Albert* Duke of *Borussia*, his other daughter was *Sophia* wife to *Bugislaus* the Tenth, Duke of *Stetin* in *Pomerania*; she had three sons, *John*, *Adolphus*, and *Frederick*, and three daughters, *Elizabeth* mother to *Sophia*, who was wife to *Frederick* the second, King of *Denmark*, *Anna* that died of the Plague, and *Dorothy* the second.

Christianus the third succeeded; he first of all took care to settle the Churches of his kingdom, committing the charge of a general visitation of Ecclesiastick persons to *Widenscius* Doctor in Divinity, whom he sent for out of *Magdeburg*, and to *Hermannus Tastius* Pastor of *Flensburg*, with whom were joyn-
1537. ed some of the Nobility; he was crowned by *John Bugenhagius* of *Pomerania*, and reigned four and twenty years in great moderation and prudence; at last the six and fiftieth year of his age he died; his Son honoured him with a magnificent Monument of Alabaster and Marble at *Roschild*, whither his body was transported with great solemnity; his wife *Dorothy* the Duke of Lower
1559. *Saxony's* Daughter lieth buried by him, she died twelve years after her husband, she bare to him *Frederick* the second King of *Denmark*, *Anna* wife to *Augustus* Elector of *Saxony* and Marquess of *Myssnia*, *Magnus* Duke of *Holsatia*,
1571. *Dorothy* wife to *William* Duke of *Brunswick*, and *John* the younger Duke of *Holsatia*.

Frederick the second succeeded; he had wars 7 years together with *Ericus* the 14. King of *Swethland*, till the year 1570. at length by the mediation of some Princes, peace is concluded between him and *John* brother to *Ericus* 14. all the rest of his reign he lived peaceably; at last he fell sick of a lingring dis-
1587. ease, *Octob.* 3. and died the 4. of *April* following, having first received the Sacrament, and prepared himself with confession of his faith and prayer; he reigned 29 years, and lived 54. he died in *Sitland* in his Princely house of *Anderschow*; he was much bewailed by the whole kingdome, chiefly by the Church and Schools, for he was a great freind to Schollers; by his wife *Sophia* he had *Elizabeth*, *Anna*, *Christianus*, *Ulricus*, *Augusta*, *Hedewiges*, and *John*; his Succesor was *Christianus* the Fourth, of whom we will speak hereafter.

CHAP.

An. Christi.

CHAP. III.

The History of Holland, *and the neighbouring places, from the year* 1404. *till* 1514. *with some passages of* Utricht *till* 1580.

IN *Holland*, Earl *Albert* being dead, his son *William* succeeded, commended for a good souldier, a just Prince, and a munificent benefactor to the poore; his first wife was *Mary* daughter to *Charles* the seventh of *France*, by whom he had no children; but of his second wife *Margaret*, the Prince of *Burgundies* daughter, he begot *Jacoba* his onely daughter and heir: He had some difference with *Arkelius* a Lord of that Country, who had seised upon the City *Worchom*, or *Gorcum*. The Bishop of *Utricht* assisted the Earl against this *Arkelius*, from whom he took some towns; *Gaspera* was burned to ashes, and the same fortune was like to fall upon *Gorcum*, if the Duke of *Gelder*, and *John* of *Bavaria* elected Prince of *Liege* had not mediated a Peace between them: There were also great troubles between this *John* the Bavarian and the Citizens of *Liege*, who despising the government of this Prince, elected another; but Earl *William* by the aide of *John* of *Burgundy* his kinsman, *Antony* of *Brabant*, and *Theodoricus* of *Namurs*, overthrew these rebellious Citizens in a bloody battel, and withall abolished all the priviledges of that City, imposing a heavy Tribute on it: This *William* also had some quatrels with *Renald* Duke of *Gelder*, but they were at last composed by the addition of *Arkelius* his dominions to *Williams*. After he had settled all at home, he made a journey to *Hannonia*, and shortly after dyed. 1504. 1417.

To him succeeded his onely daughter *Jacoba*, whose whole life was nothing else but a wrestling with bad fortune: for her first husband the Dolphin of *France*, *John* by name, son to *Charles* the sixth, shortly after her hasty marriage with him, died of poyson; she was then about sixteen years old, in the prime of her youth, when she gave her consent to marry with *John* of *Brabant*, though she was retarded from that by Religion and propinquity of blood; yet Pope *Martin* the fifth gave her a dispensation, which was revoked again by the authority of *Sigismund* the Emperour. This being unknown to *Jacoba*, she consummates the matrimony at the *Hague*: In the interim, *John* of *Bavaria* aiming at higher matters, resignes his Episcopal seat to the Pope, and marrieth with the widow of *Anthony* Duke of *Brabant*; besides, *Sigismund* the Emperour confers upon *John* of *Bavaria* the Arms of *Holland*, to whom that Earldome seemed to appertain, he being the next heir male, to whom the female sex was to give place: Upon this, he enters *Holland* with an Army, notwithstanding the Grandees resisted his claim, affirming that the woman was capable by their antient laws of the government of that Earledome: But *John* of *Burgundy* made peace between them upon these terms; that what the *Bavarian* did possesse, he should enjoy by the right of Fee: yet the next year, the war was renewed by the City of *Leyden*, which sided with *Iacoba*; but the inhabitants being pinched with a strait siege, were forced to yeeld; and submit their necks to a new Lord. *John* of *Brabant* was forced, though without his wives knowledge, to deliver up the whole government of the Country to the *Bavarian*; hereupon arose divers jealousies and quarrels between the married couple, so that she grew careless, out of indignation, both of her husband and of the government; besides, the sinistrous waies used in making up of this match stuck in her stomack, and so using this for a pretence, she marrieth the D. of *Gloceſter*, without the Popes dispensation; this exasperated her former husband, so that he having undertaken the government of *Holland* upon the death

An. Christi. of *John* of *Bavaria*, goeth into *Hannonia*, and being assisted by the Forces of *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, overthrew in several skirmishes the Army of *Jacoba*, whom he took prisoner and delivered her to the Burgundian, till the Popes opinion or judgement was known concerning this match; but she escaped to *Holland* in a mans habit, where she was joyfully received by those Cities of the *Hoecks* that sided with her, but many other Townes adhered to *Philip* the Burgundian: Hence followed a cruel war, the Duke of *Glouceſter* assisted *Jacoba*, but *Philip* at last got the better; After this the Popes sentence followed, making her divorce from her former husband unlawful, with a command that she should commit her self to the custody of *Amadeus* the Duke of *Savoy*, till things were peaceably composed. *Hunfred* of *Glouceſter* having repudiated his wife, marrieth with another: After this *Jacoba* laid siege to *Harlem*, which she was forced to raise again, and fight with *Philip* of *Burgundy*, whom at last in a long battel she overcame, and drove him into *Leydem*. In the mean while as she was making greater preparations, *John* of *Brabant*, from whom she had divorced her self, died, which now put her in great hopes of obtaining *Holland* again; but these hopes were quickly blasted by her overthrow she received neer *Wiringa* in a battel against *Philip*, with whom she Articles, that he should be Protector of *Holland*, but the dominion should remain in her, besides, she should never marry without the consent of *Philip*; and withall, if she died childless, he should be her sole Heir: so the Countrey enjoyed peace a while, which afterward broke out into new discords; for *Jacoba* being of a libidinous nature, fell in love with *Francon Borsalius*, which when *Philip* understood, suddenly he seiseth on him, and sends him prisoner to *Rupelmond*, with command that he should have his head cut off; but the Governour of the Castle being loath to meddle with the blood of so great a man, gave out that *Borsalius* was beheaded; *Philip* repenting of his rash sentence, when he heard of this, was much grieved, and wept, for he delighted not in blood; but when he heard that *Borsalius* was alive, he rejoyced exceedingly, and withall, ratified the marriage between him and *Jacoba*, on these conditions, that she should totally resign her right, that *Borsalius* should lay claim to the Earldome of *Osterband*; if they had children, they should enjoy their ancient Dominions, if they had none, that then all these Countries should devolve to the Heirs of *Philip* the Burgundian; and so she dying childless, the House of *Burgundy* became Lords of *Hannonia*, *Holland*, *Zeland*, and *West-Friesland*; and thus *Philip* became a most potent Prince, his first Marriage with *Michaelia* the daughter of *Charles* the sixth of *France* was sterile, and so was his second Matrimony; but by the third match with *Elizabeth* of *Portugal* he had three sons, one of whom, *Martin* by name (the rest being dead) succeeded him. *Philip* after this had long wars with the French, at last a peace is concluded upon this condition, that *Philip* should endeavour to recover amongst other territories the Earledome of *Gisen*, but from this he was hindred by the English out of *Calice*, which was then under them. At this time, the tumults of *Gaunt* and *Bruges* filled the whole Country with disorders: One day as *Philip* was passing through *Bruges*, the Citizens fell upon his Company, killed the chiefest of his Nobility, and if he had not broken open the gates, he had been murthered there himself, so that he narrowly escaped. This high indignity he could not digest, till he had besieged the town so closely, that it was pinched both with poverty and hunger, for want of trading and provision: whereupon the town is surrendred, eighteen of the chief plotters were put to death, and the rest forced to redeem their lives, and the Princes favour with a great sum of money: after this he suppresseth the *Gantois*, and other factions thereabout; he made his natural sonne *David* Bishop of *Utricht*, though the Citizens withstood him; he also assisted by his power *Lewis* to the Crown of France, at which time the solemnity and ceremonies of the golden Fleece were performed

at

at the *Hague*; this Order was first instituted at the Nuptials of *Philip* and *Isabel*. *An. Christi.*

In the mean time those of *Liege* offered divers wrongs to the Earls hereditary countries, and drove *Lewis Burbon* out of his Bishoprick. The Earls son *Charles*, sirnamed *Bellicous*, or *Hardy*, was sent with an Army to suppress them, which he did, but they presently rebelled again, whereupon the City *Dinantum*, a famous place then, is made the object of the Souldiers fury, who killed many of them with the sword, and drowned multitudes in the *Mose*; they overthrow the Towers and Walls of the City, and burned down the houses with fire; so at last the Citizens of *Liege* were forced by this exemplary punishment to submit, and beg the Princes favour. After these wars, this good Earl died with age and sickness at *Brugis* the 73 year of his age, to whom succeeded *Charles Mortin*, called the *Bellicous*; he was three times married, first with *Katherine* daughter to *Charles* the seventh, King of *France*; secondly, with *Elizabeth* of *Burbon*, by whom he had *Mary* the Heir of his Dominions; thirdly, with *Margaret* daughter to the Duke of *York*, and sister to *Edward* the 4. King of *England*; he fought divers battels with good success; he suppressed *Liege*, as we said; he began a war with *Lewis* the eleventh, King of *France*, which was upon agreement suppressed; he had some Sea-fights with the Duke of *Warwick*, against whom he aided King *Edward*, when he was driven out of his Kingdome into *Holland*, he had wars also with *Arnold* Duke of *Geldre*, who had sold *Geldre* and *Zutphania* to *Charles*; all this Countrey he added to his Dominion, and received it in fee from the Emperour; but *Cæsar* afterward gave aide to the Earls enemies at *Colen* and *Novesium*, a Town belonging to *Colen*, and there was like to be great trouble, if the Popes Legat had not taken up the quarrel: he had long wars also with the French, and was twice defeated by *Reinold* of *Lorain* the French General. After *Nancy* was taken by the French, *Charles* layes siege to it; a long and bloody battel was fought; at last the Earl being betrayed by *Campobassus* an Italian, was drowned with his horse in a Lake the 43 year of his age; he was a wise man, a just Prince, and a good Souldier; he set up a high Court of Justice at *Mechlin*, and in the great Hall at the *Hague* he used to administer Justice himself, sometimes every week; he beheaded the President of *Zeland* who had put to death an innocent man, that he might abuse his wife; this President having had his desire of the woman, sent her the dead body of her husband, which the Earl understanding, sent to the woman the dead body of this President or Governour, and made her heir to all his goods: This Earl was too greedy of glory and dominion.

1468.

1476.

To him succeeded his onely daughter *Mary*, the last of the house of *Burgundy*, from which the right of those Countries were translated to the House of *Austria*, and so to *Spain*; her tuition *John* of *Clive* undertook, till she was married to *Maximilian* son to *Frederick* the third, Emperour, which was the original of the House of *Austria's* greatness. *Lewis* the French King sought her for his son, but was rejected, for which he was highly incensed. The troubles arose again between the *Hoecks* who took *Leyden*, & the *Cabillans* who seised upon *Dort*. The Princess in hunting was flung from her horse, with which fall she broke a rib, and died of an Imposthume, she was buried at *Bruges*, to the great grief of her husband, to whom she bare *Philip* of *Austria*, *Francis* who died an infant, and *Margaret*. *Philip* the second, Heir of these Dominions, being scarce as yet four years old, had *Maximilian* his father for his Governour, by whose prudence the factions of the *Hoecks* and *Cabillans* were quieted, the rebellion of the *Geldrians* suppressed, the Townes of *Ruremund* and *Venlo* having submitted; he extinguished also the differences with *France*, by betrothing his daughter *Margaret* to the Dolphin, who was deluded by him, affecting rather the D. of *Britanies* onely daughter, whom he married. *Maximilian* had also wars with *Gaunt* and *Brugis*, whose stout stomack he at last sup-

An. Christi. 1506. suppreſſed; but after he was called to the Empire, he left the care of *Belgium* to his ſon *Philip*, now almoſt ſixteen years of age; he by *Johanna* daughter to *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* begot *Charles* the fifth, *Ferdinand* King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, and ſome daughters afterward married to the chief Princes of *Europe*, and by the death of *John* of *Caſtile* he became Heir of divers Kingdomes; he was a vertuous and peaceable Prince; at length being full of wealth and happineſs, died at *Burgis* a City of *Granado*, not without ſuſpition of poiſon; his heart, as he deſired, was buried at *Jeruſalem*: To him ſucceeded *Charles* the 5. ſcarce ſix years old, whoſe Aunt *Margaret* in the mean while governed the *Netherlands*; but after *Charles* attained the years of puberty, the whole countrey of *Belgium* ſolemnly acknowledged him for their Lord. After this, at *Valedolid* the chief City of old *Caſtile*, ſometime the reſidence of the kings of *Spain*, with great magnificence, *Charles* takes poſſeſſion of his fathers kingdomes.

Charles, by the death of *Maximilian* Emperour, his Grandfather, is choſen by the general ſuffrage of the Electors, Emperour of the *Romanes*; who was no ſooner gone into *Germany*, but the *Spaniards* rebelled, by meanes of the inſolent Government of *William Croijus Chierius*, whom *Charles* had left as Viceroy of *Spain*; the Nobility envied the government of a ſtranger. *Peter Gironius*, being aided by the Peers, under colour of vindicating the liberty of *Spaine*, goeth to *Valledolid*, where he ſeiſeth upon *Joan* Mother of *Charles*, and carried her away as his priſoner; but ſuddenly an Army of *Imperialiſts* being levied, they regained the Queen, ſet her at liberty, and put to death the chief rebels. *Charles* finding how requiſite his preſence was, to extinguiſh the fire of inteſtine ſeditions, makes a journey to *Spain*, where he ſtayed eight years; but whilſt his preſence quieted *Spaine*, his abſence occaſioned troubles in the *Netherlands*, raiſed by the *Geldrians*, and *Zutphanians*, who being at laſt ſubdued, were forced to ſubmit to the pleaſure of the Conquerour, which was, that *Gelderland* and *Zutphania* being eſcheated to the Emperour, they
1514. ſhould be held in fee from him; this *Zutphan* is a town in *Gelderland*, and hath been an ancient Earldome, and is ſeated on the River *Yſſe*. *Groyning* alſo a Towne of *Weſt-Frieſland*, which had been wreſted from the Duke of *Saxony* by the Earle of *Eaſt-Frieſland*, and ſold to *Charles* Duke of *Gelders*, was to be ſurrendred to *Charles* the Emperour; to whom alſo *Henry* of *Bavaria*, the laſt Biſhop of *Utricht*, being expelled by the Citizens thereof and Duke of *Gelders*, reſigned his juriſdiction; the firſt temporal Lord of it was *Charles*, who built a fair ſtrong Caſtle here; yet I finde in *Bell-Foreſt* upon
1529. *Guicciardin*, that *William Enckewort* Cardinal, and Biſhop of *Tortona* in *Spain*, took poſſeſſion of this Biſhoprick by a Deputy, he himſelf remaining then at *Rome*, whoſe Succeſſour was *George* of *Egmont* ſon to *John* the firſt Count of *Egmont*; he ruled this Biſhoprick five and twenty years, whoſe Succeſſor *Frederick* of *Tantenburg* was Biſhop of the place twenty yeares, after whom ſucceeded none but Titular Biſhops; Epiſcopacy with the Roman Religion
1580. being both driven out at the ſame time, not without great tumults, and almoſt the overthrow of that City.

CHAP.

Chap. IV.

Ann. Christi.

The History of Savoy, *and the neighbouring parts, from the year* 1397. *till the year* 1452.

IN *Savoy*, *Amadeus* the 8. ſucceeded to his father *Amadeus* the 7. There was great ſtrife who ſhould have the tuition of the childe; for *Bona Biturica* his mother, *Bona Borbonia* his grandmother, *Lewis* of *Savoy* Prince of *Morea* (who had married his ſiſter) the Earl of *Geneva*, and *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, did all claim an intereſt in this childs tuition, and government of his Earldome: this gave occaſion of great differences, which were not ended till *Amadeus* himſelf being now of age, and having married *Mary* of *Burgundy* (according to the deſire of both parents whilſt they lived) undertook the government: He was a Prince of great hopes, and one whoſe prudence and power his neighbours did much relie. *Italy* at this time was grievouſly afflicted with plagues, ſudden deaths, Civil wars, and ſchiſmes in the Church, all which were portended by a direful Comet, and other fearful meteors. For mitigating of Gods wrath, and removing of theſe judgements, ſupplication and proceſſions were made through all Towns and Villages, multitudes of people going about in white garments, and ſuch as did not wear this colour and go about with them, were counted prophane; this garment was of white linnen, which covered them all over head and foot: All ages, ſexes and conditions of people, from the meaneſt ſort to the Princes, undertook this Penance freely, chiefly the Clergy of all degrees, ſo that for three whole months there was no other publike exerciſe performed; neither during that time, were there any quarrels or Law-ſuits. 1397.

This *Amadeus* beſtowed upon the *Celeſtine* Order all that building called the *Savoy* at *Lions*, which heretofore had belonged to the Knights Templers, but after their abolition to the Knights of S. *John* of *Jeruſalem*, which buildings theſe Knights had beſtowed upon *Amadeus* 4. for his good ſervice in recovering the Iſle of *Rhodes* to the Chriſtians: The ſame *Amadeus* 8. gave order to his ſon *Lewis* to build a Chappel in that place, and to increaſe the revenew of thoſe few Monks which he had invited thither, having as yet no more but ſeventy five crowns *per annum* allowed them, which was performed by *Lewis* accordingly, who alſo enlarged the bounds of the Monaſtery; this was in honour of *Peter Celeſtin* not long before canonized. About this time *John* Biſhop of *Liege* was expelled his Biſhopprick by the Inhabitants, and purſued alſo in a hoſtile manner: this wrong *William* Earle of *Henault* did highly reſent (for this *John* was his brother) and preſently implores aid from the Duke of *Burgundy* who had married their ſiſter, againſt the *Liegers*; the *Burgundian* aſſents, and withall invites to the confederacie *Amadeus*, who had married his ſiſter: theſe raiſed a great Army, a cruel battel is fought, in which *Pierweiſius* the chief author of the Biſhops expulſion, and his ſon, who aſſumed the title of Biſhop of *Liege*, with eight and twenty thouſand *Liegers* were ſlain, and *John* the Bavarian reſtored again to his Biſhopprick: *Virius* General of the Savoyan forces, with the Gentry of *Savoy* that were with him, behaved themſelves ſo gallantly in this conflict, that the Burgundian invited three hundred of them allowing large ſtipends to be of his Life-guard, ſetting *Virius* over them as Captain; but not long after, ſome differences falling out between *Amadeus* and *Lewis* Duke of *Burbon* about the Principality of *Dumbar*, which the Savoyan claimed as a part of his dominon, *Virius* boldly by a Herauld denounces war againſt *Lewis* of *Burbon*, at which the Duke wondred that a private man durſt be ſo bold, therefore he ſuſpected that *Amadeus* had authorized him to do ſo, and the rather, becauſe *Virius* had ſeiſed upon ſome Caſtles in the Country of *Dumbar*: Some think that he was encouraged by *John*

Duke

An. Christi. Duke of *Burbon*; however it was, the Burbonian with an Army before *Virius* was aware, regained all the Caſtles which he had taken, and withall threatens to proclaim war againſt the Savoyan, if *Virius* be not delivered up to him: the Savoyan who diſclaimed altogether this raſhneſs and boldneſs of *Virius*, delivers him up to the Burbonian, conditionally that he ſhould be uſed as a priſoner of war, and diſmiſſed again after he had received ſatisfaction from him for the loſſes ſuſtained; this was agreed upon, and the difference about the right of homage which the Savoyan demanded of the Burbonian, was compoſed by the Duke of *Berry*; but this accord was not long-lived, for *Charles* 6. King of *France* being offended with the Dukes of *Orleans* and *Burbon* upon ſuſpicions and jealouſies, invites *John* Duke of *Burgundy*, and *Amadeus* to fall upon the lands of *Orleans* and *Burbon* with fire and ſword, which was done accordingly: *Amadeus* employes *Virius*, giving him the charge of five hundred Curiſers, *Fierbourgius* is ſent by the Burgundian, theſe make havock of all whither they went; *Berry*, *Burbon* and *Orleans* being highly incenſed at theſe wrongs, enter into a league both againſt the Burgundian, whoſe greatneſs they hated, and the rather becauſe his power was greater with the French King then all the other Princes; and likewiſe againſt the Savoyan, who had married the Burgundians ſiſter. What miſeries and deſolation fell upon *France* by this confederacie, may be ſeen at large in the French Hiſtories.

This *Amadeus* waited upon *Sigiſmund* the Emperour, as the ſecond Earle of the Empire, when he went to *France* about a Synod for removing of the Papal ſchiſme; the Emperours Ambaſſadours could do no good, therefore he was fain to go himſelf, being attended upon (according to the ancient cuſtome when the Emperour travels out of the Imperial bounds) by the Princes Electors, four Dukes, four Lantgraves, four Marqueſſes, and four Earles of the Empire: *Amadeus* in his journey fell ſick; ſome think truly, ſome think
1415. fainedly, as being unwilling to meet or converſe with *Orleans*, the Burgundians great enemy, and ſo returns home, where underſtanding that *Genua* was much diſtracted with inteſtine broils, he ſends one thither under colour of ſome other buſineſs to try ſome of the Citizens under-hand, if the Emperour by their help might obtain the City, which would be to him of great conſequence for entring into *Italy* upon all occaſions: this meſſenger not carrying his buſineſs cloſe enough was diſcovered, and by *Barnabas Guanon* the new elected governour of *Genua* (*George Adurinus* the ancient governour having freely laid down his office in theſe tumults) is apprehended and condemned of treaſon; but before the expiration of one year, this *Barnabas* was by
1417. *Thomas Fregoſius* thruſt out of his office, and baniſhed from *Genua*. Though this plot of *Amadeus* ſucceeded not, yet his good will was ſeen to the Emperour *Sigiſmund*, which he rewarded by making him of an Earle a Duke; and becauſe he doubted leſt *Geneva* and *Lauſanna* would unite themſelves with the confederated Switzers, as the Cities of the *Valtelin* had done, two years after he obtains of the Emperour full and ſole dominion over theſe Cities, which grant was approved by Pope *Martin*. After this *Amadeus* made peace between *Charles* the 7. of *France*, and *Philip* the Good Duke of *Burgundy*, whoſe father *John* was killed by the faction of *Orleans*, and procured that all who had a hand in that murther ſhould be expelled *France*. After this *Philip* D. of *Millan* made war upon *Savoy*, and ſeiſed upon *Novaria* and *Verſelli*, becauſe *Amadeus* had made a league with the Venetians the D. of *Millans* enemies, ſo that the Army which the *Millanois* had raiſed againſt the Venetians and Florentines, was emploied againſt the Savoyans; but *Amadeus* to be revenged, raiſeth a great Army, and by the aſſiſtance of the Burgundian, enters *Lombardy* with fire and ſword, ſpoiling all the Territories of *Millan*: but *Sigiſmund* the Emperour, who was now preparing to go for *Italy* to receive the Imperial Crown, obtains free paſſage through the Duke of *Millans* Country, and withall procures a peace between *Philip* and *Amadeus*, in which

Novaria

Novaria and *Vercelli* are restored by the Duke of *Millan*, who took to wife *Mary* daughter of *Amadeus*. In the mean while the French King had lost a great part of his Country, in his wars with *England* and *Burgundy*. The Prince of *Orange* intending to invade the Delphinat, sends to *Savoy* for help, which was promised on this condition, that the Savoyan if he obtained the victory should have that part of the Delphinat in which *Gratianopolis* was seated, and *Vienna*: but the event of this war proved otherwaies then they expected; for scarce had *Orange* entred the Delphinat, when *Gaucourtius* the Governour of that Country under the French King set upon him, and overthrew his Army, so that he was forced to save himself by flight, a great many Gentlemen were taken prisoners, and above three hundred slain. After this a great battel was fought between *Renatus* of *Anjou*, and *Anthony* the Loranger Earle of *Vaudementium*; this was of the French faction, the other of the Burgundian; the Savoyan assisted *Anthony*, who got the victory, and took *Renatus* prisoner. *An. Christi.* 1431.

Now *Amadeus* being sixty five years old, and growing weary of the world, reputing with himself the hazard, vanity, and uncertainty of humane affairs, resolves to change his course of life, and to perswade some of those Knights on whom he had alwayes most relied, to do the like; but first he picks out two of them, whom he took aside into a private place, and acquainted them [That he alwayes truly loved them, so that he still rejoyced in their company and presence when he was in all his glory; and now desirous to live a private and retired life from the tumults of the world, he was in good hope they would not forsake him, promising that he would never forget their kindnesse in this, and that for diet and cloathing they should do no worse then he.] These two Gentlemen wondring much at this resolution of the Duke, [gave him humble thanks for his good opinion of them, and his affection to them; but withall they wished him to consider, that God had inlarged his Dominions and Titles also, that now he was at peace with all his neighbours, that he had dutiful and obedient subjects, and a fair issue of children, and that nothing was wanting to make him truly happy; therefore humbly desired that he would not prefer a private life to the welfare of his people committed to his charge, whom he ought to rule and keep in peace, to advance the good, and punish the bad, to chuse out such men as might administer justice without partiality, that this was the high way to eternal happinesse; This they thought good, out of their duty, to put him in minde of, yet no wayes willing to crosse his designs.] To this the Duke replied, [That they were mistaken in placing true happinesse in outward splendor and dominion; for (saith he) There is no felicity but where is liberty, which is onely to be found in the private life, being secluded from the tumults and disquietnesse, cares and fears, the unseparable companions of greatnesse; for a private man enjoyes more happinesse in a day, then a Prince doth in a year; for the one can travel up and down the world securely, and satisfie his eyes and minde with those delights, which the other cannot without much fear and danger both to his own person and subjects; for how many Princes have been taken travelling out of their own dominions, imprisoned, and shamefully murthered, even to the hazarding of their people, who by this means have been exposed as a prey to their enemies; besides, Princes ears are still abused by flattering Parasites, so that they seldome hear the truth, and are made believe they are adorned with most vertues, and blessed with greater happinesse then all other men, which is most false, and meer mockery: Again, private men are for the most part longer-lived and healthier then Princes, as being contented with more simple fare, having better stomacks by reason of exercise, and the fresh air which they still enjoy; whereas we are cloyed with variety of dishes, sauces, and drinks, so that many times we loath our meat, and are oppressed with surfeitting and drunkennesse, and those bad effects which ensue from thence. Now if

An Christi. if you will look upon the actions of Princes, whatsoever good successe they have in wars and government, is ascribed to fortune, or to their Counsellours, or the courage of their souldiers; but if any thing falls out amisse, if a battel or City be lost, the fault is presently imputed to the Prince, as being either careless, or treacherous, or timorous: I will say nothing of the continual jealousies and suspitions of Princes; in time of war they are still fearful lest their counsels may be betraied, or their persons delivered up to the enemy, in time of peace they are afraid of insurrections; they are also still molested with the unbridled desire of domination, preferring that to all rights of affinity and consanguinity: it is also madness to count them happy because they possess much, for the greater their possessions are, the greater are their molestations, and the more they have, the more they covet; whereas private men are content with little, and their desires are comprehended within a narrow circumference. I will not deny, but there is some happiness in those Princes that can by their milde and just government procure the good will of their subjects, but this holds not long, for they are forced oftentimes to punish Delinquents, and to impose heavy taxes and payments on their subjects, by which they forfeit the love and good opinion they should have of their people, and so they live still in fears and jealousies, though they have about them strong guards; therefore if you duely consider the condition of Princes, you will finde much more felicity in rejecting then accepting of a Crown, which is stuft with so many cares and fears, that if you should finde it on the ground, you would scare stoop to take it up. These are the reasons (my friends) why I desire to withdraw my self out of the tempestuous sea of publike employments, into the safe and quiet harbour of a private life, hoping to injoy more happiness then heretofore, and the rather if I can have the fruition of your society: I will therefore commit the burthen of government to my son *Lewis*, yet reserving to my self the chiefest power and command.]

The two Knights hoping that the Duke would not continue long in this resolution, but that it was a sudden conceit, which upon more serious thoughts he would change, assented to his desires, professing they would never forsake, but follow him whithersoever he went, humbly thanking him for counting them worthy of so great honour as to impart to them his resolutions, and to chuse them as his companions. Upon this, the Duke about midnight accompanied onely with these two, and a few more of his domesticks, removes to *Ripallium*, where about a mile from the Town stood a large and pleasant building upon the bank of the lake *Lausanna*, which *Amadeus* in his younger years had built there for pleasure; there stood also a Monastery dedicated to S. *Maurice*, whom *Amadeus* his ancestours highly honoured as their titular Saint: Hither the Duke having entred, puts on the same Monastical habit which the Monks of that place wore; the garment was long, of an ash-colour, which was girt with a rich girdle, over this a cloak with a golden cross on it; the garment had a long hood, which when the Monks let fall on their shouldiers, they wore on their heads red hats like Cardinals; they used also to bear in their hand a writhed and knobbed staffe: *Æneas Sylvius*, afterward Pope *Pius* the 2. saw this Duke in this habit, attended upon by ten Knights in the same habit, and of the same order. But this sudden departure and resolution of the Duke did much amaze his Nobility, being no wayes acquainted with his counsels in this; all his subjects also were much troubled that he should forsake his glory and dominions to imbrace such a life, who sent to acquaint him how unpleasing this act of his was to his people of all sorts, and how unbeseeming his own greatness and wisdome; but he returns answer, That by this departure he had neither diminished his greatness nor judgement, nor his care of them, but would provide that the State of *Savoy* should receive no damage thereby, therefore wished them to persevere in

their

their wonted allegiance; In the interim he ſends for all the chief men of his dominions, deſiring his two ſons might be brought to him; then he declares *Lewis* his eldeſt ſon Prince of *Piemont*, and his younger Earl of *Geneva*, and ſo delivers over to *Lewis* the government of all his Provinces on both ſides of the Alpes, but reſerving to himſelf the ſupreme power, neither did he lay aſide the title of Duke, nor would he have any thing of concernment acted without his knowledge and approbation. At laſt he diſmiſſes the Aſſembly or Parliament, wiſhing them to retire to their homes, and to be obedient to his Sons; twenty of his domeſtick ſervants he retained with him, the reſt departed with great ſorrow. *An. Chriſti.*

The Duke took great pleaſure in conferring with the Prior of that Covent, telling him, That now his life did much reſemble the condition of thoſe who having eſcaped ſhipwrack, ſate ſecurely on the ſhore, beholding thoſe ſhips that were ſtrugling with the winds and waves, fearing every hour to be ſwallowed up by the impetuous billows of that angry element. To whom the Prior replied gravely; [There is nothing (ſaith he) Excellent Prince, that more reſembles the wretched life of man then Navigation; for we ſee that they who are not accuſtomed to the ſea-life, nauſeate and grow ſick with the agitation of the ſhip, who thinking to aleviate and eaſe themſelves, get into the Cock-boat, as if the cauſe of their nauſeating proceeded from the greatneſs of the ſhip, not the agitation thereof: juſt ſo are we, who being troubled and diſquieted in minde as it were with the aſſiduous waves and ſtorms of the tumultuous ſea of this world, think that the laying aſide our greatneſs, dignities, wealth and publike imployments will eaſe us, and that we ſhall live happily and ſecurely in ſolitudes, cloyſters, and retirements; but we delude our ſelves with ſhews and appearances, for ſtorms may as well attend on him who lives in a cottage, as in a Palace. Pardon me, moſt Illuſtrious Prince, if I ſpeak freely, for I am bound by my Allegiance and Order, to ſpeak truth without flattery, which is the bane of Princes, and doth more miſchiefe to them, then open enemies: It is no great matter to forſake your Palace, State and Honours, if you forſake not your ſelfe, for he that follows Chriſt muſt deny himſelfe; he that retires into a deſart, and carries with him his unſetled thoughts, and unruly affections, what benefit hath he more then they who remove out of one place or air into another? We muſt therefore above all things clear and purifie our mindes from all groſſe and terrene thoughts, before we can be fit for heavenly meditations: Chriſts ſouldiers muſt not be intangled with the affairs of the world, ſaith the Apoſtle; for as the eye cannot at the ſame time look upward and downward, neither can the ſoul elevate it ſelf to Heaven, whilſt it is depreſſed with the weight of earthly thoughts, as they are whom the delights, honours, and riches of this world have wholly poſſeſſed, whom the world forſakes before they forſake it. Married men are ſtill perpleked with cares for their family and children; ſingle men have a continual conflict with their unbridled luſts: ſome are inceſſantly troubled with deſire of wealth, others of revenge, ſome of honours, others are never ſatisfied with pleaſures; how many do we ſee expoſe their lives to the dangers of the ſea in their long Navigations to remote Countries, for a little gain? few dayes paſſe in which the ſerenity of our ſouls is not obnubilated with the clouds and fogs of terrene affections, ſo that ſometimes we are deprived of our nights reſt; our beſt courſe therefore is to bid adieu to the world, to deſpiſe her flatterings, to divorce the body from the ſoul, and not to ſuffer any commerce in ſpiritual things between them, and withal to account the ſtorms (which ſometimes ſeiſe on us, and which we cannot avoid in our Navigation through this tempeſtuous Ocean) ſent by God to drive us home the ſooner to the wiſhed for haven of happineſs: Let us ſo uſe the world as if we uſed it not; let us not ſo ſet our affections on friends, country, wealth, honours, and other mundane emoluments,

An. Christi. as to grieve or to be troubled when we are separated from them; let us part without repining with our wealth, lands and possessions, by which oftentimes the minde is clogged, Gods anger provoked, and much mischief procured; so shall we finde a new light shine in our souls; and we shall become new creatures, having put off the skin of our old natures, so shall our souls be fitted like wax to receive new impressions of grace, when the old characters of our froward and perverse dispositions are obliterated, which is effected by the benefit of a retired life, by which our exorbitant and boyling affections are cooled, and the unruly motions of our mindes, like so many wilde beasts are tamed; by this means the venomous weeds of pride, lust, hatred, covetousness, and such like will be eradicated, that the tender plants of grace and piety may prosper and flourish in us; our tongues shall be accustomed to praise God, our ears to hear his will, our eyes to behold his glory, wisdome and power in the Creation and Government of the Universe; our whole senses, faculties and imployments will be totally taken up in spiritual delights and comfortable fruition of our God, whose sweetness will make us account all things else bitter and unpleasant; to attain which happiness, the readiest way is to devote our selves to prayer, reading, and meditation on the writings and holy lives of those blessed souls, who by fighting the good fight, have now attained the Crown of righteousness: For as Painters who take the copy of a choice picture, look stedfastly on it, and take notice of the least lineament; so must we diligently observe and follow exactly the lives and behaviour of those holy men, conforming our selves as near as may be to their strictness of life; this course if we take, we shall doubtless obtain our desires, but if we give off and faint, our labours will be lost, and our end miserable. This was the summe of the Priors speech, with which the Duke was much delighted.

The Councel of *Basil* (a Town in *Helvetia* upon the *Rhine*) being called first by Pope *Martin*, then by Pope *Eugenius*, for setling the controversies of *Husse*, as we have already said; after the controverted points were determined by *Julian* the Cardinal, Pope *Eugenius* his Apostolical Legat, a reformation of the Hierarchie was urged: *Philip* Duke of *Millan* a great enemy to *Eugenius*, stirred up the Princes and Cardinals against him, accusing him of divers crimes; being cited, he refuseth to come, but sends his Legats, whereupon the Cardinals, with the rest of the Synod, depose *Eugenius*, and substitute in his place this *Amadeus*, who for his sanctity and piety was now grown famous; *Eugenius* in vain goeth about to dissolve the Synod, and calls another at *Ferraria*, which because of the plague was translated to *Florence*. *Amadeus*, now called *Felix* the 5. is sent unto by his son in law the Duke of *Millan*, and the Fathers of the Synod to acquaint him with his election; he modestly desired to be excused, in regard he was unfit for so great a burthen and honour, having now renounced the world, and being bred a souldier, he was altogether ignorant of Ecclesiastick affairs; that office is fittest for one (saith he) who hath spent his whole time in Church matters, otherwise it may prove as unfortunate as it did to *Peter Morronius*, *an.* 1294. who though a professed Anachorite of the Celestine Order, yet accepted of the Pontificat, being altogether ignorant what belonged to that high imployment, and so having sat six months, was deposed, and ended his life in prison: prosperity is more dangerous then adversity; this is oftentimes mastered, that is harder to be overcome: Thus he excused himself, but at last by the importunity of the Legats sent by Duke *Philip* of *Millan*, and the earnest intreaty of his other friends, and chiefly his sons, who thought this dignity conferred on the father for his worth, redounded to the childrens honour, he submitted himself to the pleasure of the Synod: so the election being ratified, he is honoured by the Pontificial habits which the Legats cloathed him with. Shortly after hee takes his journey for *Basil*, being

being accompanied with all his Nobility; when he came, all the Cardinals, Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, with the rest of the Clergy, Lawyers, and all that were there in the City flock in great multitudes to meet him, so that many were killed in the presse; he receiveth his sacred Orders by degrees and intervals of time; then being by the accustomed ceremonies made Bishop, he is brought between two Cardinal Deacons to a Theatre erected over against the Town-hall; after he was set down, the Cardinal on his left hand takes off his Episcopal Mitre, and the other Cardinal on his right hand sets upon his head the Pontifical; the rest of the Cardinals and Clergy in their Ecclesiastick habits stood round about him, the multitude in the interim with joyful shouts and acclamations wishing all happiness to the new Pope; then the two Cardinals that crowned him published the Popes indulgences, the one in Latine, the other in the vulgar tongue; thence he is conveyed to the Black-friars Monastery, after this manner: First, the Cardinals domestick servants and officers went on horseback, after them went the Popes servants, among which his Chamberlains carried each one a red bag like a shepherds pouch; after these went the Cardinals kindred, whom twelve grooms of the horse followed, every one holding his red banner, bearing in them the Popes Arms: after these the City Magistrates followed, with one of the *Teutonic* Knights carrying a banner with a black crosse in a silver field upon it, which are the Arms of that Order: after him went a Nobleman of *Savoy* carrying a banner, in which were the Pontifical and Savoyan Arms conjoyned: after him rode one who carried a banner, and in it the Arms of the Knights of *Jerusalem*: the horses of these Standard-bearers were in rich trapings, and themselves in compleat Armour (except their heads) covered with copes or rich robes of silk, on which were imbroidered their Arms: after these twelve milk-white horses richly traped with silk and gold were led, then four Gentlemen with Targets, every one carrying a red hat on a spear, these were followed by the Popes Chamberlains, after whom went the Princes Ambassadours, and Roman Nobility, whom the Apostolical Sub-deacon carrying the crosse followed, he was ushered by two Apparitors with their Maces; then went twelve of the Popes intimate friends in scarlet, each one bearing a white Taper, two others bore before the Host two silver candlesticks or lamps, with the lights burning, the Host it self was carried on a white horse under a Canopy, encompassed with rich Tapestry of silk and gold, with the Popes Arms on them: after the Host came the Sacrist, and after him the Scribes or Secretaries of the Synod, among whom was *Æneas Sylvius*, afterward Pope; after these followed the Advocates of the Consistory, the singing men, &c. and after them two Sub-deacons, a Greek and a Latine; then rode the Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, &c. next to them the Cardinals, and last of all, the Pope on a white horse richly adorned with gold and scarlet, eight Noblemen carrying a Canopy over him, with a numerous guard of Gentlemen in Arms: after these the Marshal flings money among the people to keep them off from pressing on the Popes guard. As soon as the Pope had entred the Black-friars Church, he blessed the people, and presented his foot to be kissed by the Cardinals and Nobility: after this he entertains them all with a most sumptuous feast in the Episcopal palace of *Basil*; then having named who should be the Officers and Ministers of his Court, he createth some eminent and learned men Cardinals, among the rest was *Panormitan* the great Doctor of the Decrees, who was imployed by Pope *Eugenius* to plead for his right in the Councel of *Basil*, but when he came thither he pleaded against him; he afterward was fain to lay down his Cardinalship, and live obscurely at home.

An. Christi.

Amadeus by accepting of the Pontificate, gave occasion to a new schisme, which is reckoned the 27. The *French*, *Switzers*, *Millanois*, *Neapolitans*, and those of *Piemont* sided with *Felix* and the *Savoyans*; but the *Venetians* favored *Eugenius*, being born there, so did the *Florentines* and *Thuscians*. Hence ensued a long

An. Christi. a long war between *Eugenius*, the King of *Spain*, and the Duke of *Millan*. *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy* adhered to *Eugenius*, though he was the son of *Felix* his wife. *Frederick* the Emperor first held with *Felix*, but afterward he sided with *Eugenius*, who was now become a new man, and by his clemency and bounty had got most mens affections from *Felix*. Upon this the Italian Princes enter into a confederacie, with whom joyned also the Duke of *Millan*, that he might not seem to be singular. About this time, *Balthasar Offida* Governor of *Bononia*, for his cruelties and injustice is apprehended by *Francis Sfortia*, (author of the confederacie between the *Venetians* and *Florentines*) and sewed within a Bears skin raw as yet and bloody, so that he had no use of hands or feet, whereby he was poysoned by the stench and vermine which that raw skin begot, and so dyed miserably. *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy* not only got most of the Princes to fall off from *Felix*, but likewise perswaded *Charles* the French king to do the same: hereupon *Charles* sends Ambassadors to *Rome*, 1446. *Basil* and *Savoy*, to mediate for an accord between the two Popes; in the mean time *Eugenius* fals sick and dieth, the 15. year of his Pontificate, and the 60. of his age, to whom succeeded *Nicolaus* the fifth. *Lewis* the sonne of *Felix* the Pope, labours much with the French king to stand for Pope *Nicholas*, that so peace may be established in Christendome; for he was sorry that the blame of this schisme should be laid on his father, who deserved it not, being as all his progenitors ever were, a stout champion of the Roman faith. *Charls* upon this sends his Ambassadors to *Lions*, wishing *Lewis* of *Savoy* to do the like, and to procure some Legats from *Basil*, that meeting together they may consult how peace might be setled in Christendome.

The next *July* after, there arrived at *Lions*, besides the Kings Ambassadors, the Archbishop of *Trevers*, and Legats from *Colen* and *Saxony*; Pope *Felix* sent *Lewis Alleman* the Cardinal: these consulted till *November*; at last it was agreed, they should give *Felix* a meeting at *Geneva*; thither when they came, they met with other Legats sent from *France*, *England*, *Sicily*, and other parts. *Felix*, who against his will accepted of the pontificate by the perswasion of *Panormitan* the Abbot, and some Cardinals who were unwilling to be deposed, doth resolve willingly to devest himself of it; therefore openly in the Synod of *Lausanna* (for that of *Basil* was dissolved by the Dolphin) *Felix* aiming more at the general good, then his own honour and emolument, renounceth the papacie, transferring all his right he had to it upon Pope *Nicholas*; which fact was highly commended and admired by the Synod, as may be seen by the testimony they gave him, and which they left upon record to all posterity, the summe of which was this: Having blessed him, and wished him all happiness, they commend him for his piety, modesty, love of peace, and liberality towards the Church, who in such a time of distraction would rather suffer himself then she should suffer, who by his humility hath advanced her peace and dignity; therefore they thought good to nominate and create him Bishop of *Sabinia*, Cardinal of the Church of *Rome*, perpetual Vicar and Apostolical Legat over *Savoy*, *Piemont*, *Montsferrat*, *Salusses*, *Asten*, the province of *Lions*, *Auspurgh*, *Lausanna*, *Basil*, *Strasburgh*, *Constance*, and some other neighbouring cities and dioceses, and withall to appoint him in the Church of God the second place after the Pope, who was to rise whensoever *Felix* came into his presence, and to present his mouth (not his foot) to be kissed: And because he preferred peace to the greatest honour on earth, they decree therefore that he shall wear the Pontifical habits and arms, except the Fishers ring, the Crosse on his Sandals, the Canopy, and the gestation of *Corpus Christi* must be left for the Pope; besides, whensoever he passeth beyond the borders of his own Legatship, he may use the Arms and power of a Legate; they exempt him also from his personal appearance in the Court of *Rome*, or at a General 1449. Councel. These honours and priviledges the Synod thought him worthy of, for his excellent parts, and chiefly for removing the schisme and causing peace

by

by his vnluntary resignation of the highest place on earth. After this he returns to his Cloyster, where he spent the rest of his life in devotion, and then resigned his soul to God, *anno* 1452. some write 1459. *An. Christi.*

Chap. V.

A prosecution of the Savoyan *History, from the yeare* 1452. *till the yeare* 1503.

TO *Amadeus* succeeded his son *Lewis*, a great follower of his fathers vertues. He performed exemplary justice upon *Bolomerius* the Chancellor of *Savoy*, a wicked and covetous man, who had made himself extream rich by oppression, who for his own ends and gain kept *Felix* longer in the Pontificate then he was willing, for had it not been for this wretch he had resigned it long before. *Lewis* commands him to be apprehended, who being convicted of high crimes, is condemned to be drowned in the lake with a great stone at his neck, to the great content of the Nobility, to whom he had been a main enemy. About this time, *Philip Maria* Duke of *Millan* died: He had beheaded his former wife, to marry with *Mary* the sister of this *Lewis*. But the people being weary of tyrannie, which they had suffered under him and his predecessors, resolve now to assert their liberty; therefore they choose a Government of twelve men in their city, overthrow the castle, and tear *Philips* last will in peeces; and withal they send to *Frederick* 3. Emperor a Cup of gold of great price, with promise to send him every year such another, that he would not suffer any to bear rule over them hereafter. The *Venetians* upon this took occasion with a great Army to seise upon *Placentia*, *Cremona*, and other cities belonging to the Dutchy of *Millan*. *Francis Sforti*a, *Philips* son in law, after their example fals upon some other places in the same Dutchy; which *Lewis* of *Savoy* perceiving, he seiseth upon *Valentia* a city neer to him, and some other places. About this time also a war was raised by *Charles* 7. of *France*, against this *Lewis* of *Savoy* and *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, because *Lewis* had betrothed his daughter *Carola* without his knowledge to the Dolphin his sonne, and because *Philip* had received and entertained the Dolphin when he fled out of *France*; and withall the King sends him this message, *That in entertaining his sonne, he cherished a Foxe in his bosome, which would hereafter devoure his Chickens*, which proved a true propheſie. The Dolphin being impatient of delayes, deals with the Burgundian to send to *Savoy*, that he might at last enjoy his wife, being now kept off from her full five yeares. When the Ambassador came to *Savoy*, Duke *Lewis* thought his message very just and reasonable, therefore sends his Daughter with a great train to the Dolphin at *Namurs*, where she was presently married to him.

The French king was much troubled at this match; therefore the Army which he had provided for taking in some Towns of *Picardy*, and some places from the Burgundian, he turns against the Savoyan; the rather, because he could do no good against the Burgundian, who had foreseen and prevented the French plots: besides, the King pretended that the Dutchy of *Millan* belonged to the French crown, therefore by a Herald demands from the Savoyan *Valentia* and other towns which he had taken there; he also accused the Savoyan for making incursions upon France, and some write that the Savoyan Nobility under-hand stirred up the French against *Lewis*; because he used them roughly for advising his father to retain his right to the Papacie: but at last the controversie was taken up by the Popes Legate at *Lions*, who was sent to make peace between *France* and *England*.

Lewis

An. Christi. *Lewis* the second son of this Duke *Lewis*, married with *Carola* the onely daughter of *Iohn* King of *Cyprus*, by whom he obtained that Kingdome: but *Iames* the bastard brother of *Carola*, being assisted by the *Sultan* of *Ægypt*, thrust *Lewis* out of his kingdome, and overthrew his army, which Duke *Lewis* and the Knights of *Rhodes* had sent thither; and so this wicked bastard obtained the kingdome. Queen *Carola* fled to *Rome*, where she was entertained by Pope *Pius* the second, who said, that justly her husband had lost that kingdome, whose father Duke *Lewis* had been so averse, and slow in sending aide against the *Turks* and *Sarazens*. *Amadeus* the eldest son of this Duke *Lewis*, resembling much his father and grandfathers qualities, delighting more in peace then wars, in a retired and monastick life then in publique employments, was slighted by the people, whose eyes and hopes were fixed upon the youngest sonne *Philip*, a youth of a comely presence and stature, and of an active heroick spirit: Duke *Lewis* the father understanding how his peoples affections were

1464. set upon *Philip*, began to be jealous of him, the rather because he himself was grown infirm and unweildy, his son young, active and lusty; therefore he undertakes a journey to *Lewis* the eleventh of *France* his son in law, with his eldest son *Amadeus*, and being highly incensed complains grievously of his youngest son: King *Lewis* wished his father in law not to trouble himself, he would take a course to secure his son *Philip*, to whom presently the King sends a young Noble-man, and one of his servants, upon pretence of imparting to him some matter of weight from the King, who was desirous to speak himself with him. *Philip* suspecting no hurt, goeth presently to the King, by whom (against his promise) he is detained, and sent to the Castle of *Lotbesia*, where he was kept as a prisoner two years together, to the great grief of the *Savoyan* Nobility, who loved him and hated the father: About the end of these two years Duke *Lewis* died at *Lions*, whether he came to speak with the *French* King, the twenty sixth year of his government; for he took not the stile of Duke till his father was created Pope: His heart was buried in the Church of the *Celestines*, which there he built by the command of his father; his body was transported to *Geneva*, where he lieth entombed with his wife *Anna*.

1466. His son *Amadeus* the ninth, and third Duke of *Savoy* succeeded, a prince in goodnesse and integrity nothing inferiour to his Father and Grandfather, but of an infirm body, and oftentimes subject to the falling-sickness: He delighted no way in war, but having settled all at home, he went to the French king with his Sister *Bona*, who was fled to him, being driven out of *Millan* by the tyranny of the *Sfortii*. The king entertained him courteously, and with so much respect, that his subjects of *Savoy* observing so great a king did thus honour him, were content to live quietly and obediently under him; he was so open-handed to the poore, and fed so many every day, that his Nobility complained of his prodigality, to whom he answered, that the prayers of the poore were the chief wals and bulwarks of his dominions: those poore men he used to call his fellow-souldiers, & to feed and cloath them sometimes with his own hand, to confer with them, and to sit among them. One day a certain Ambassadour asking him where his Hounds were, he caused all his poore men to be brought into a great Hall filled with tables and good meat, to which when they were set down, he brings in the Ambassadour, and told him, that these were his hounds with which he hunted after heaven, and that to feed these poore people was food to him more excellent then any Manna. He had a long and tedious sicknes which he bore patiently, comforting and confirming those Noble-men that came every day to comfort him, shewing them that God was never so neer to us as in afflictions, which were the safest remedies against our spirituall diseases; at length, after a long conflict with death, he delivered up his charitable soule to God.

1471. To him succeeded *Philbert* his Son, the first of that name, and fourth Duke of *Savoy*; he was but four years old when his father dyed: His mother *Jolanda* a wise

a wise Matron, and Sister to *Lewis* the eleventh the French King, undertook his tuition; at which *Lewis* of *France* and *Charles* of *Burgundy* aimed, being potent Princes both, and both having an interest in *Savoy* by divers affinities, but they were of different mindes and dispositions: *Iolanda* prudently kept them both off, by making fair weather with both, till *Charles* was overthrown in the battell at *Granson*, where he lost above thirty hundred thousand crowns; then she changed her minde, which had been till now more inclined to *Charls*, and sides altogether with her brother of *France*: This being observed by *Charls*, who lost another battel about three weeks after the former, and considering with himself how much he was now weakned, and what prejudice it would be to him, if *Iolanda* should make the French King Protector of *Savoy*; by the advice of the Bishop of *Geneva*, and of his brother the Earl of *Rhomontium*, he seizeth upon *Iolanda*, and commands her to be brought with al her family into *Burgundy*, where she was kept as a prisoner. But when *Charls* thought he had been sure of *Philbert* and his mother, he found that their keepers had deluded him by conveying the Childe to *Camerinum*, a place out of all danger, whither the Bishop of *Geneva* came, a wavering and covetous man, and who upon the incitements of a Knight of Rhodes, imployed by the *French* King to work upon the Bishop, forsakes the *Burgundian*, and withall delivers up to the King both the Childe *Philbert*, and his little brother *Charles*; with the Castles of *Camerinum* and *Montmelian*, then seiseth on the place where *Iolanda*'s Treasure and Wardrobe were, which he reserves for himself: This highly discontented the *Burgundian*, considering what losse he had sustained in the war which he undertook for the Earl of *Rhomontium* brother to this Bishop, which war at last cost him his life at *Nancy*, by the treachery of one *Campobachius*; and so he found that the *French* King had truly propheſied of his son, that he would prove a Fox. *An. Christi.*

In the mean while, *Iolanda* desirous of liberty, and to see her children, employes a Noblеman of *Piemont* in a message to her brother of *France*, for that purpose; who though he had no good correspondency with his Sister, yet sends her word, that ere long he would send for her into *France*, who accordingly sends *Charls Amboise* governour of *Campagnie* with some forces, who passing without resistance through the *Burgundians* country, enters the Castle of *Roveretia* which was carelesly kept, and brings away *Iolanda* with her family into *Savoy*, neer to the *French* Territories. King *Lewis* goeth from *Lions* to *Turon*, there to receive his Sister, where having provided fair lodgings for her, sends divers of his Nobility to meet her, and he himself with all his train at the town gates receives and salutes her merrily by the title of Lady of *Burgundy*. After some complements, he brings her to her lodging, giving order that she should be used with all respect and accommodations; yet for all this, they were jealous of each other, and she longed to be out of his claws; but a league at last was made between them, and confirmed by Oath; so after eight dayes entertainment, he dismisseth her with her children. After this he desires his Sister to permit her son *Philbert* to be instructed in the Delphinat by *Luisius* a Noble-man there, in the French tongue and manners, that so he might have the greater affection to *France*: To this the mother assented; but when the King perceived that the *Savoyan* Nobility intended to exclud *Luisius*, and to undertake the care of the Childe themselves, he causeth him to be removed from *Turin* (called of old *Taurinum*, a City in *Piemont*, and which anciently was the seat of the *Longobards*) to *Grenoble* or *Gratianopolis*, so called from the Emperour *Gratian* that enlarged and beautified it; now it is the chief City of the Delphinat, and honoured by *Lewis* 11 with a Parliament. There *Philbert* was married to *Blanca Maria* daughter to *Galeacius* Duke of *Millan*, being both young and of the same age: therefore *Galeacius* undertook the tuition of his young son in law, which he performed carefully, and with great commendations, in spight of *Iohannes Ludovicus* Bishop of *Geneva* the Childs Uncle,

An. Christi. Uncle, who by ſiniſtrous ends endeavoured to get him into his cuſtody; but *Galeacius* by a plot ſeized upon this turbulent Biſhop at *Vercellis*, and ſent him priſoner to *Turin*; ſo the Childe eſcaped this danger, which the year after he could not avoid: for having made a journey to ſee *Charles* the eighth of *France*, his Uncles ſon at *Lions*, he fell ſuddenly ſick, not without ſuſpition of Poyſon given him by ſome of the Biſhops friends, and ſo died the fourteenth
1481. year of his age, and the tenth of his Principality, to the great grief of his people; for he was a young Prince of great hopes, and of a ſweet diſpoſition. A blaſing Star about that time preſaged this fatality.

To *Philbert* ſucceeded his brother *Charles* the firſt, the fifth Duke of *Savoy*, a young Prince no leſſe eminent in vertues and naturall endowments then any of his predeceſſors; but in the flower of his age and fortunes, having ſcarce been Duke ſeven years, he was taken away by untimely
1488. death: It was ſuſpected that *Lewis* Marqueſſe of *Saluſſes* had ſecretly cauſed him to be poyſoned, becauſe he had got a great victory over him; for the Marqueſſe refuſed to doe the homage due from him according to the cuſtome of his predeceſſors to the Dukes of *Savoy*, therefore Duke *Charles* made war upon him, overthrew his Army, and confiſcated his whole eſtate as a Rebel; but three years after (*Charles* being now dead) he recovers by the Duke of *Millans* means his eſtate again. This young Prince alſo ſubdued the *Gabiens*, a people inhabiting the Alpes of *Liguria*: he left behinde him one ſon called *Charles* the ſecond, or *Johannes Carolus*, being yet ſcarce one year old; his mother *Blanca*, becauſe of the Dukes infancy, retained the government of *Savoy*, to the great content of the people; for ſhe was a vigilant, milde, and juſt Princeſſe, whoſe chief care was to breed her ſonne in vertue and piety, therefore ſuffered none to converſe with him in his minority, but ſuch as were eminently pious and prudent, knowing how dangerous it is for young Princes, being yet but tender plants, apt to receive any impreſſion, to be ill ſeaſoned; and how prone they are by nature to drink in the poyſon of evill counſell. About this time *Charles* the
1494. eighth of France undertook his Expedition into *Apulia*, againſt the kingdome of *Naples*; as he was paſſing through *Savoy*, *Blanca* in her beſt equipage met him, and preſented him with a goodly Horſe, which did him great ſervice in that war, and carried him out of many dangers; ſhe beſtowed alſo upon him towards his charges great ſummes of gold and ſilver. The year after Duke *Charles* died, the ſeventh year of his Dukedome.

To him ſucceeded *Philip* Earl of *Breſſa*, and governour of the *Delphinat* un-
1495. der King *Charles*; this was a wiſe man, whoſe counſell *Blanca* alwayes followed. He was the ſon of *Lewis*, and grandchilde to *Amadeus* the eighth Duke of *Savoy*; being now aged, he accepts the government of the Dutchy; he had been alwayes a great warriour and a wiſe counſellour, and very inward with the French King, who made him knight of the order of Saint *Michael*, and great Steward of *France*: having governed this Dutchy one year and ſix months, he died at *Camerinum*, and left for his ſucceſſor his ſon *Philbert* the
1497. ſecond, ſirnamed the Faire; he was bred in the Court of King *Lewis* of *France*, with his ſon *Charles* the eighth, for *Lewis* had married his Aunt *Carola*: he waited on King *Charles* in the Neapolitan war; he ruled his people with great moderation and wiſdome; he aſſiſted King *Lewis* the twelfth in the wars of *Millan* with two hundred Couriſſers, whileſt as yet he was but young. When *Philip* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria* returned out of *Spain*, and was come to *Lions*, where peace is concluded between the *French* and *Spainards*, between *Cæſar* and the Arch-Duke, and their confederates, He went to viſit *Margaret*
1503. his Siſter, wife to this *Philbert*, by them both he was entertained ſumptuouſly as he was returning to the Netherlands. At laſt this *Philbert* died, the twenty fifth year of his age, about the ſixth year of his government: this year wherein he died was fatal to multitudes of people, by reaſon of the great infection

of

of the aire; this was a rich prince, for besides the dominions and revenues of his Predecessors, he added a yearly revenue of twelve thousand Ducats, paid him by the *Millanois*: His vertuous wife *Margaret* erected a Chappel after his death, in which she entomb'd him. His successor was *Charles* the third, brother to *Philbert* by the father, but not by the mother, which was the occasion of great wars afterward. An. Christi.

CHAP. VI.

The Helvetian *History, from the beginning till the year* 1481.

THe *Switzers* in the Romans time were a warlike people, which they shewed by the overthrow they gave to L. *Cassius* the Consul; they intended to have forsaken their country, and to seat themselves elsewhere; but *Cæsar* then being Proconsul of *France*, puts a stop to their proceedings, by hewing down the Bridge of *Geneva*, and raising a Fort between the Lake and Mount *Jura*; first, by intreaties, then by their strength, they strove to move *Cæsar* for a passage; but when they saw they were still defeated by the *Romans*, they cast themselves at *Cæsars* feet, who upon delivery of Pledges, commanded them to return home, and rebuild their demolished Cities, which they did, and lived afterward in obedience, and within their own borders, till the comming of the *Sarazens* into *Italy*; then their aid was desired by the Pope (as we have already said) which was assented to, conditionally they might freely enjoy their laws and antient customes: To this the Pope willingly condescended, and withall sent them a red Banner with the Crucifix on it, in token of their valour and good service against the *Sarazens*. After this they lived quietly at home, imploying themselves in Husbandry, untill such time as their Nobility began to tyrannize over them; then being conscious of their antient valour and continued liberty, made resistance. About the year 1300. the Counts of *Ausperge* (afterward Dukes) had placed a debauched Gentleman in one of their Castles of *Urania* in *Valstreet*, who having done divers insolencies, and ravished a young Lady, was by her two brothers slain. The Count offering to doe justice on the murtherers, was resisted by the people, who overthrew three of his Castles in one day, and slew divers of his Officers. The *Underwaldians* by this example were animated to the like outrage, complaining also of their Nobility: Hereupon the *Suavi* with those of *Uro*, *Zurich* and *Underwald*, entred into confederacy: the Nobility, to suppresse in time this increasing power, raise all the forces they can, but with ill successe; *Leopold* Duke of *Austria* was defeated by them, and so not long after was *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*: Thus for their valour they were courted by divers Princes, chiefly by the *French*, for whom they did good service against the *Spaniard*, both in *Italy* and *France*; since *Lewis* 11. they have been pensioners to that Crown, receiving yearly thence forty thousand Florens, twenty thousand to the Cities, and twenty thousand to particular persons. These *Cantons* are now so divided, that eight of them are of the Catholick Faith, and in pension with the King of *Spain*, the other five are of the Protestant Religion, and serve the *French* King; who when he demandeth any forces, they call a Diet at the kings charges, who also defraieth the souldiers wages. *Albertus* of *Austria* had many bickerings with the *Switzers*, after they had Cantonized themselves, and was preparing a great army against them, but being murthered by some assassinates, and his children busie in revenging his death, there was nothing acted against the *Switzers*. *Henry* the seventh of *Lutrelburg* who succeeded, confirmed the priviledges of the three Cantons, who were so vigilant to prevent the plots of *Albertus* his sons, that they could do them no hurt. These three had first made a league for ten years, but upon a great victory over their enemies, they made a perpetual league, with which they acquainted *Lewis* the Emperour by their Agents, and with their late victory: Upon this, in a Diet at *Norinberg*, the Princes of *Austria* are condemned of treason, & their whole estate they had in these *Helvetian Cantons* are confiscated

1300.

1315.

An Christi. to the Emperour, and the *Cantons* liberties confirmed, and then they ſwear homage to him; who ſent *John Albergius* to be their governour: he promiſed to defend them from the power & claim of *Auſtria*, and that they ſhould have their own Courts of Judicature in their own Country, both in civil and criminal cauſes. The *Auſtrians* having received ſo great an overthrow by the *Switzers*, and finding the Emperour raiſing war againſt them, they were forced to make a Truce with theſe *Cantons*, whom ſhortly after the Pope and Biſhop of *Conſtance* excommunicated; and *Frederick* of *Auſtria*, who named himſelf Emperour, proſcribed them: but by command from *Ludovick* the Emperour, they
1327. were abſolved by the Arch-biſhop of *Mentz*. The Pope having excommunicated *Ludovick*, the *Switzers* make a league with thoſe Cities of the Empire which ſtood for *Ludovick* againſt *Frederick* of *Auſtria*; and upon this, *Lucerna* an ancient City upon the river *Ruſa*, entered into league with the three *Cantons*, which highly diſpleaſed the *Auſtrians*, under whoſe juriſdiction hitherto this City had been: In it were divers Citizens that favoured the *Auſtrians*, theſe had plotted to let in the *Auſtrian* horſe by night, but the vigilancy of the other party diſcovered and prevented the plot: divers skirmiſhes the *Lucernans* had after this with the *Auſtrians*, in which theſe were ſtill worſted; who ſeeing they could doe no good with open hoſtility, fall to perſwade the Townſmen to break off their league with the three *Cantons*, ſhewing there was more help to be had from a Prince ſo potent and neer, then could be expected from theſe towns. But when this way they could doe no good, they reſolve to murther the chief abettors of the *Canton* League; a ſolemn Oath is taken by the plotters, and they wore a badge of red upon their ſleeves to be known by; the maſſacre was to be acted the 29 of *June*, but was diſcovered by a Boy that very night it ſhould have been put in execution; for being aſſembled in the dark, the Boy paſſing by, over-heard their diſcourſe, and that they were to kill the Watch, and open the Gates to an Army of Horſe, that came to aſſiſt them: the Boy acquaints ſome Butchers with this, who were making merry together; they inform the Magiſtrates, who ſudenly with a ſtrong guard ſeiſe upon the plotters: a meſſenger is ſent to the three *Cantons* for aid, who diſpatch 300 ſouldiers for *Lucerna*, to guard the City; the plotters are brought to their tryal, but becauſe divers men of quality were among them, the three towns interceded for them, who ſolemnly ſware, never to ſtir againſt the *Helvetian* League: It was alſo ordered, no clandeſtin conventicles or private oaths ſhould be hereafter in that City. About this time, the *Auſtrians* were reconciled to *Frederick* the Emperour, to whom they complain againſt the confederate *Cantons*; theſe excuſe their revolt, as being thereto neceſſitated: at laſt, *Cæſar* orders that the Cities of *Tigurum*, *Berne*, and *Baſil*, ſhould make peace between them; who by their
1334. Legats made a Truce of thirty moneths, which after this was renewed: ſome hoſtilities were acted during this time, but no open war, till *Tigurum* confederated with theſe *Cantons*, and ſhortly after *Bern*, with ſome other towns.

Tigurum at firſt adhered to *Frederick* of *Auſtria*, againſt *Ludovick* of *Bavaria*, but after fell off to *Ludovick*, when the other had reſigned the Empire for a great ſum of mony, for payment of which *Tigurum* with three other towns were pawned by *Ludovick*. The *Tigurans* to free themſelves, promiſe to be no leſſe faithfull to the *Bavarian*, then they were to the *Auſtrian*: this ſo offended the *Auſtrians* and the Pope, that the town was excommunicated, and continued ſo 18 years together, the Prieſts having forſaken it, with the Monks, onely the Franciſcans went out at one gate, and entred at the other: In the mean while, they take and demoliſh ſome Caſtles that annoyed them; and the year after they alter their form of government, chooſing 12 chief men, and 12 inferiour Magiſtrates under them, to rule their City, which occaſioned much trouble; for the Commons diſliked their government, and accuſed them of oppreſſion and briberies; wherefore ſome of them being guilty, fled out of the City; others laid down their offices; theſe were fined and baniſhed for ſome time, and Magiſtrates choſen out of each Tribe. And becauſe the town

Raperſwila

Raperſvila who had a harbour for all *Tigurin* fugitives, who there being but twenty miles diſtant, did much annoy the Magiſtrates of *Tigurum*, therefore they raiſe an Army and lay ſiege to *Raperſvila*, which they were forced to raiſe again, becauſe their proviſion failed, and hearing that the Earl of *Habeſpurg* a great Patron of the fugitives was gone to *Grindvium* a Caſtle at the head of the *Tigurin* lake, they haſtened thither under the conduct of Earle *Toggius*; in the firſt encounter the *Tigurins* were worſted, and *Toggius* taken priſoner; but after they had better manned and fitted their ſhips, they fell again upon the enemy, and gave them a great defeat, in which Earle *Habeſpurg* was ſlain, with divers Gentlemen; in revenge of whoſe death, *Toggius* at *Raperſvil* is cut in peeces: the next year a peace was concludeded between the *Tigurins* and the enemy, that the baniſhed Citizens ſhould pay ſix hundred marks of ſilver, and ſhould continue in exile five years; but this peace held not long, for the baniſhed performed not the Articles, therefore by the Emperours leave, their houſes and eſtates are confiſcate; the year after, by the mediation of *Agnes* Queen of *Hungary*, daughter of *Albert* 1. of *Auſtria*, the peace is renewed, but ſoon after broken, becauſe divers of the Nobility of *Germany* diſliking the *Tigurin* popular government, aſſiſted and encouraged the baniſhed Citizens, therefore the *Tigurins* to make themſelves the ſtronger made a league with the Citizens of *Conſtantia* and S. *Gall*, as likewiſe with the Biſhop and City of *Baſil*, they made alſo divers Knights of the *Rhodes* free of their City, to indeer the Nobility more to them, becauſe moſt of that Order were Gentlemen; this much diſheartned the exiles who deſpairing now to recover the City by ſtrength, plot with Earle *Habeſpurg* (his ſon whom the *Tigurins* ſlew not long before) and ſome other of the Nobility, and with thoſe of their own faction within the Town; and ſuch as were diſcontented, and delighted in innovation, to ſurpriſe ſuddenly the Conſul and his adherents in the night, and ſo to ſeiſe on the City, but the plot was diſcovered the ſame night it ſhould have been acted, by a ſervant which acquainted the Conſul; whereupon preſently the great Bell of the City is rung out, a ſign alwayes of danger, the people ran preſently to Arms, great execution is made, partly with weapons, partly with ſtones and bricks upon the houſes, the Butchers with their axes did good ſervice, in memory of which a brazen Lion as a badge of their valour is beſtowed on them; this they uſed afterward in their anual ſolemnity to carry about the ſtreets.

An. Chriſti. 1337.

The Inhabitants of the leſſer Town upon the left ſide of the River, fought ſtoutly againſt the enemy upon the bridge, which they had prepoſſeſſed by means of a Fiſher-man who diſcovered the plot to them; this Fiſher-man carried ſome of the plotters in his boat, and having overheard a whiſpering that they meant to kill him leſt he ſhould betray them, overturned the boat and ſo left them in the River, he got on ſhore and alarms the people; the enemies after a hot diſpute were worſted, fifteen of them were ſlain, 37. taken, among whom was Earle *Habeſpurg*, the reſt by means of the darkneſs eſcaped, the dead bodies were kicked and trod upon three dayes together; the day after, ſeventeen of the prime plotters were broken on the wheel, ſome beheaded, the Earl was impriſoned, and his Army without the Town in fear and confuſion ran home. Shortly after the Conſul *Brunius* with an Army beſiegeth *Raperſvil*, the neſt and harbour of the plotters, the Town on the third day yeelded, ſome of the plotters in it were killed, ſome eſcaped; the Townſmen ſwear the ſame fealty to *Tigurum*, which they uſed to give to their Earl: after this they fall upon *Marchia* the Earls Country with fire and ſword, ſo that the Inhabitants were forced to ſwear fealty to the *Tigurins*; but when they heard that *Albert* of *Auſtria* was raiſing forces to aid the *Habeſpurgians*, and to keep their Rendevouz at *Raperſvil*, they burn the Town to the ground. Some Towns of *Alſatia* made league with *Frederick* of *Auſtria* againſt the *Tigurins*, who had taken an hundred and ſeventy Townſmen of that Country

An. Christi. prisoners, the *Alsatians* to recover their prisoners raised an Army by the help of their neighbours, the *Tigurins* wisely declined this war, being already exhausted, and therefore restored the prisoners: After this the *Tigurins* send a petition to *Charles* the 4. Emperour, complaining of the wrongs done them by Earl *Habespurg* and his confederates, excusing their own actions, shewing their innocency, and desiring his assistance for the maintenance of their liberty, being willing to submit to his Imperial commands, if so be the *Austrian* would be quiet; the Emperour answers that he would endeavour to pacifie the *Austrian*, and their other enemies, but could not force them, being their power was greater then his, therefore wishes them to use some moderate transaction with their enemies; upon this the *Tigurins* send Legats with presents to *Albert* of *Austria*, who at first gave them good words, but at the second meeting was rough with them, being incensed by the Nobility, accusing them for destroying both the old and new *Rapersvil*, for wasting *Marchia* which belonged to him as supreme Lord, therefore wishes them to restore what they had taken, to rebuild what they had demolished, and to make pecuniary satisfaction for what they had wasted, and so he would pardon them; the Legats replied, that their City had suffered much wrong by these places in harbouring and aiding the fugitives and rebels, therefore they humbly beseech him, that he would not urge them to such inconveniences; the Prince in anger told them, that if the *Tigurins* did not make reparation for these wrongs willingly, they should be forced to do it.

The *Tigurins* understanding by their Legats the Princes resolution; of his forces now raising, of their great danger and weakness, and that there was no hope of help from *Cæsar*; they resolve to enter into a confederacy with the *Helvetian* Towns, seeing they all had the same common enemy the *Austrian*; and *Tigurum*, by reason of the Lake lay so fit for commerce with those Towns; upon this Legats are sent who are kindly entertained, and the league ratified, in which the first place in all publike actions is given to *Tigurum*, (though it was the fifth that entered into the *Helvetian* league) because of the dignity of that City: The report of this new league, hasteneth on the *Austrian* to besiege the Town, fearing lest by their example more Towns would combine against him, therefore with an Army of 2000. horse, and 20000. foot, he sits down before the City, which the four confederate Towns had sufficiently manned and filled with provision; after some light velitations, they came to a parly by the mediation of some friends, in which it was agreed they both should refer their cause to the Queen of *Hungary*, this was not liked by the four confederate Towns, because the Queen was the *Austrians* sister; yet the *Tigurins* confiding in her integrity, perswaded the four Towns to assent, which was done, and pledges given by the City; with the Queen are joyned two Assessors or Judges, these gave sentence in behalf of the *Austrian*, wishing the *Tigurins* to give him satisfaction for his losses, they also laid fines upon the other confederate Towns for revolting from *Austria*: this sentence was ratified by Queen *Agnes*, the *Switzers* promise to stand to the verdict, though it was unjust; but the Duke not content with this, demands *John* of *Habespurg* of the *Tigurins* without ransome, which was denied by them, wherefore against his promise he imprisons the *Tigurin* hostages, and renews the war.

1351.

The *Switzers* finding no hope of peace, resolve with joynt forces to seise upon *Glarona* a Town and valley of twelve miles in length, encompassed with the Alpes except in one place, which after this expedition was fortified with a wall and trench: the people here being weary of the *Austrian* government, submit themselves without resistance to the confederate Towns, and swear to be firm in their league with them; mean while the *Tigurins* send an Army against *Bada* a garrison of the *Austrians*, which had done them much hurt, they fire the Suburbs, and plunder the Country thereabout; but as they were returning with the booty, they were encountred by 4000. *Austrians*, whom they

they overthrew, being themselves not above 1300. strong, they slew 700. of the enemy. The next year the *Austrian* in hope to recover *Glarona*, is defeated by the Inhabitants, the like success he had in *Suitia*; divers places on both sides are spoiled: about this time also the City of *Tugium* made league with the *Switzers*: this Town stands between the *Tigurins* and *Switians*, and used to do them much hurt; at last being weary of the *Austrian* government, after fifteen dayes siege surrendered, conditionally swearing that if the *Austrian* within so many dayes should send relief, they might return again to his obedience, therefore they send to the Duke for help, but the Legats found him more careful in providing food for his hawks, then aid for his people; therefore having obtained his good will to surrender the Town to the *Switzers*, they made league with them: presently upon this *Tigurum* is besieged again by the *Austrian*; but a month after by the Marquess of *Brandchurg* means a peace is made on these Articles, That *John* of *Habespurg* now three years a prisoner should be released without ransome; and that the *Austrian* should freely dismisse the imprisoned hostages; that *Glarona* and *Tugium* should be released from their oath, and return to the obedience of *Austria*, in other things the *Switzers* league should stand: *Habespurgius* is released without ransome, but so were not the hostages, who were forced to pay 1600. crowns; *Rapersyil* is fortified with a garrison which invaded the *Tigurin* Teritories, and killed fifty of their men; this bred a new war, *Tugium* is again taken by the *Switzers*, and *Bern* sides with them. An. Christi.

Bern built by *Berchtold* Duke of *Zeringia*, who meeting with a Bear in that place, called it *Bern* in *Dutch*; this City he bestowed upon the Empire, which *Frederick* the 2. Emperour endowed with divers priviledges; afterward it being oppressed by Earl *Kyburgius*, it took the Earl of *Savoy* for its protector; he restored to this City her former liberty for the good service the *Bernats* had done the *Savoyan* against the *Burgundian*: After this they had divers wars with *Godofrid* and *Rodolph* of *Habespurg*, with the *Turks*, *Austrians*, and others of their neigbours, they beat the *Underwalds* in a battel: afterward they both made a league with the confederate Towns of *Switzerland*, upon which *Tigurum* is the third time besieged by *Charles* the 4. Emperour, and *Albert* of *Austria*: the *Tigurins* petition *Charles* that he would not persecute them being an Imperial City, desiring nothing but the conservation of their liberties, and willing to yeeld to any reasonable demands; *Charles* upon this deals with the *Austrian* for an accord, which being by him refused, the siege was raised without doing any thing, and five years after peace was concluded between the *Austrian* and *Tigurins*, on these Articles: 1. That restitution be made on both sides. 2. That none of the *Austrian* subjects be made free of *Tigurum*. 3. That none meddle with the Fee-lands of others. 4. That the *Tigurins* hereafter make no leagues with the *Austrian* subjects. 5. That the *Switzers* injoy their own confederacies. Some controversies after this arose about *Tugium* whether that was the *Austrians*, or included within the *Switzers* confederacie: *Charles* his opinion was, that *Tugium* was not in the confederacie, the *Switi* were of the contrary minde; the matter was long debated, at last a Truce of a 11. years was made, during which time, *Tugium* and *Glarona* remained in the *Helvetian* league, yet they yeelded subjection and fealty to the *Austrian*, who placed governours over them yearly; this Truce was continued for more years after: *Albert* being dead, his son *Leopold* who hated the *Switzers*, and durst not himself make war, set the *English* of *Angles* upon them; these wasted both the *Austrian* and *Helvetian* Territories, but were at length beaten and driven home: After this Earl *Kyburgius* made war upon *Berus*, but being worsted, was glad to make his peace with him. Some years after the *Austrian* fell out with the *Lucernats*, and hanged their Legats which they sent for reparation of wrongs done by the Governours; upon this they desire the help of the confederate Towns, who joyning their forces, seise upon 1376.

An. Christi. upon *Rottenburg* belonging to the *Austrian*, and demolish the walls and forts thereof.

1385. The *Austrian* Governours willing to fish in troubled waters, forced the confederate *Switzers* to rise again in Arms, for great massacres and outrages committed upon some neighbouring Towns and Castles of the Confederates; a great battel is fought, in which Duke *Leopold* son to *Albert* is slain, and with him 676. of his Gentry; the *Helvetians* elated with this victory, fall upon the enemies Forts and Castles, divers of which they demolish, and take some of their Towns; upon this a Truce is made for one year, which being ended, the *Austrian* with 8000. men falls upon the *Helvetian* Territories with fire and sword, but were by the Confederates again defeated, who slew 2000. of the enemy, besides 500. that were drowned in the River, the bridge over which they were flying being broke down with their weight; after this fight the Confederates took divers Towns and Forts from the *Austrian*: at last a Truce of seven years was concluded, which was afterwards continued for twenty years; and at last a peace of fifty years was agreed upon. The Abbot of S. *Gall* made

1401. wars upon *Abbatiscella*, a Town under his jurisdiction, now one of the confederate Towns of *Switzerland*: the controversies between the Abbot and the Town, were often debated, but at last tried by the sword; the Abbot was overthrown; upon this the *Austrian* takes his part, but still the Town prevailed, and made a league with the *Suitii*, who took in divers Towns and Forts; at length the Abbot was fain to sue for peace, and leave the Townsmen to enjoy their liberty. Seven years after this war, the *Austrians* and *Helvetians* renew their old quarrels, and withall the wars; for *Frederick* of *Austria* having conveyed Pope *John* 22. from the Councel of *Constance*, he was prosoribed by the Emperour, and excommunicated by the Councel: hereupon the Confederates are by the Emperour and Councel absolved from their oath, and willed to break off the fifty years peace. *Verbigenum*, *Bada*, and some other places of *Austria* were taken by the *Switzers*.

1425. In the year 1422. the *Switzers* sent an Army over the Alpes to recover the Town *Lepontium* taken from them by the Duke of *Millan*; so they did in the year 1425. and the year after, but could not recover the Town,

1436. yet they wasted the vallies belonging to the Duke. In the year 1436. a grievous Civil war by the *Austrians* procurement arose among the *Switzers*, first between *Tigurum* and *Suitium*; this was assisted by the Confederates: but in

1444. the year 1444. that memorable battel was fought near *Basil* between the *French* under the Dolphin, afterward *Lewis* the 11. and the *Switzers*, who beat the *French* that came to raise the Councel of *Basil*, as we have said;

1450. after this a peace is made. Not long after, the *Austrian* war followed against Duke *Sigismund*, whom Pope *Pius* excommunicated, and stirred up the *Switzers* against him; but after many skirmishes, by the means of *Ludovic* of

1460. *Bavaria*, a peace is concluded, and six years after the Duke of *Millan* makes

1466. peace with the *Switzers*; two years after this, the *Austrian* war is renewed,

1474. and eight years after began the *Burgundian* war, which continued three years,

1477. and ended with the death of the Duke: this war was caused by the *Austrian*; for *Sigismund* Duke of *Austria*, being forced by bad success to make dishonourable peace with the *Helvetians*, morgageth the lands which he had near them, to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*, a proud and potent Prince in those dayes, purposely that occasion of quarrels might be given between him and the *Switzers*, who sent for a renovation of friendship, and the old league between the *Burgundian* and *Switzers*; but *Hagenbachus* governour under the *Burgundian* of those morgaged Provinces, hindered the *Helvetian* Legats from having access to the Duke, besides many affronts were put by him and others of the Nobility upon the *Helvetians*; the people under his government, being wearied with oppression, petition *Sigismund* of *Austria* their ancient Lord, to redeem his lands again, which was obtained easily from the Duke, being of a

gentle

gentle and easie nature: but the *Burgundian* would not part with the hold he had of these lands, besides that *Hagenbachius* did still more and more oppresse his people; divers wrongs were done by the *Burgundians* to the *Switzers*. *An. Christi.*

In the mean time *Lewis* 11. of *France*, who hated the *Burgundian*, underhand stirs them up against him, and furnisheth them with mony; to this end he makes a league with them, and by his means also *Sigismund* is reconciled to the *Switzers*; *Renatus* Duke of *Lorain*, the Cities of *Strasburgh* and *Basil*, with their Bishops, enter into a league with them, and so doe many other Towns. Mean while *Hagenbachius* is taken prisoner, and beheaded; The *Austrian* having paid the mony he borrowed, recovers again his lands. In the interim *Charles* makes war upon the Bishop of *Colen*, claiming a title to that Bishopriek; against him *Frederick* the Emperor raiseth an army, and commands the *Switzers* to hold the *Burgundian* play at home; but no sooner had they entred *Burgundy* and defeated the *Burgundians*, but the *Austrian* makes peace with the *Burgundian*, out of which the *Helvetians* were excepted. Upon this, *Charles* turns all his forces against the Confederates; in the first battel the Duke was beaten, who a little before had against his promise hanged the souldiers in the garison of *Gramson*, who upon quarter had surrendred to him: In a second battel the Duke was again defeated, having lost 26000 men: In the third conflict at *Nancy* in *Lorain*, which was then besieged by the *Burgundian*, (against whom *Renatus* D. of *Lorain* was assisted by the *Helvetians*) *Charles* was killed in the flight, and so by his death the war ended. The next year after this Burgundian war, the Duke of *Millan* and the *Helvetians* fell at odds, about some wrongs done by his subjects to the inhabitants of the Valley of *Lepontium*; in this battel the *Millanois* were defeated, but the next year by means of the French king were reconciled to the *Switzers*, with whom the same year Pope *Sixtus* made a league, and granted them large indulgences and priviledges. About three years after this, *Tigurum*, *Bern*, *Lucerna*, *Friburgh*, and *Salodorum* made a private league among themselves, because in the last Burgundian war they thought they were partially dealt with by their fellows, who took an equal share in the booty, but were not at half the charges and trouble that these forenamed Towns were: At this league the other Towns were offended, shewing that the *Lucernates* and their fellowes had not power to make a league without the general consent of all the confederates: The matter after much debate is referred to *Nicholas Underwald* an Eremite of great esteem among them, who disannulled the new league, and perswaded them in a free Assembly or Parliament to end the controversie, and withal that *Friburgh* and *Salodor* should be received among the Canton towns; and so by this means there are now ten confederate towns of *Switzerland*, and so this Commonwealth of ten Cantons continued for twenty years, till *Basil* & *Scaphusium*, and after these *Abbatiscella* were added; The former eight, called the old Cantons, had continued before this addition of *Friburgh* and *Salodor*, 125 years, so that all that time the *Switzers* commonwealth consisted of eight Canton-towns only. 1481.

CHAP.

An Christi.

CHAP. VII.

A profecution of the Helvetian *Hiſtory, till the yeare* 1521.

Friburg was built by *Berchtold* 4. Duke of *Zeringium*, ſome few years before *Bern*: after his death, *Bern* fell to the Empire; and *Friburg* to the Earls of *Kyburg*, by whom afterward this Town was ſold to *Ralph* the Emperor, and ſince it hath continued under the houſe of *Auſtria* almoſt two hundred years: yet in the year 1403. being oppreſſed by the Auſtrian Nobility, they made a perpetual league with *Bern*, but yet continued under the Auſtrian dominion: for though the Helvetian Cantons made a league among themſelves for one anothers aid and ſupportation againſt their enemies, yet they did not abridge or abrogate the juſt and old rights of their ancient Lords: this league of *Friburg* with *Bern* laſted 45 years; but afterward in the wars between *Savoy* and *Friburg*, the *Bernats* adhered to the *Savoyans*, with whom they had been a long time in league; but a year after the war began, the *Friburgers* being worſted, were reconciled to *Savoy*, by the mediation of the *French*, *Burgundian*, and *Helvetians*. The next year after this peace was made, the *Auſtrian* comes to *Friburg*, to ſee if he could perſwade them to make war upon *Bern*; which when he could not do, but perceived that they began to incline to the Helvetian league, and fearing he ſhould not long retain them in his obedience, he ſends thither the High-Steward of his houſe, to acquaint them that he was to be there ſhortly himſelf; therefore all the gold and ſilver-Plate, with rich Hangings and other Ornaments, were borrowed of the Townſmen, to adorn the State-houſe where the Prince was to be entertained: All this wealth privately the Steward conveyed out of the town, and on the day named for the Princes coming, he with his attendants and chiefeſt of the town went out on horſeback to meet him; the Prince came not, but ſent ſome horſe-men, who having met the Steward and his train, a ſtop was made, and a ſpeech by him to the Townſmen, ſhewing, That ſince their affections were more inclined to the Bernan and Helvetian league then to their antient Lord, he thought good to reap ſome benefit by them; And ſo he departed to the Prince with his plunder. Upon this the *Friburgers* made a league with *Bern*, and the *Switzers*; therefore theſe in the Burgundian war ſent a garriſon of a thouſand men to guard *Friburg*. After which, *Salodor* entred into a confederacie with the *Cantons*.

Salodor, an antient City, as appears by the Roman monuments in it, was upon the incurſions of the *Huns* and *Francons* into *France* demoliſhed; but when the French grew great, this Town was rebuilt, and placed under the Biſhop of *Geneva*; Under the German Emperors, this hath alwayes been one of the Imperial cities. When *Ludovick* the Bavarian, and *Frederick* the Auſtrian were in competition for the Empire, *Salodor* adhered to the Bavarian, whereupon they were excommunicate by the Pope, and beſieged by the Auſtrian; in that war the Bernats ſent them a garriſon of four hundred ſouldiers: they had war alſo with Earl *Kyburgius*, and were by him defeated: at laſt in the year 1351. they made a perpetual league with *Bern*; there the *Auſtrian* war being ended, in which *Leopold* was ſlain, they were reconciled to the Auſtrians. Laſtly, after the Burgundian war, they were with the Friburgers admitted into the Helvetian league; after which the Helvetian Army was overthrown by the
1487. Millanois upon the Alpes: the next year after they aided *Sigiſmund* Duke of *Auſtria* againſt the Venetians; after this they ſerved the French King in his wars againſt the Duke of Britany, and in *Italy* againſt the Neapolitans and the confederate Italian Princes.

1490. About three years after this, a Civil war aroſe among the Switzers by means of the Abbot of S. *Gall*, who had begun to erect a new Covent; at which the ſubjects of the Abbot were offended, as fearing that the reliques of S. *Gallus* would

would be removed from the place where they had continued ſo long, beſides *An. Chriſti.*
they doubted the trade of Linnen-cloath which was made there, would be
tranſlated to *Roſacum* where the new Covent was begun; therefore ſuddenly
having conſpired together, they fall upon the new building, and overthrow
it; at this the Abbot being incenſed, deſires the aid of the four Towns which
were in league with him, with whom ſome other Towns alſo joyned; but this
war ended without blood, for the *Abbatiſcellans* made peace with the *Switzers*;
after this the City of S. *Gall* being beſieged, they alſo made their peace with
the *Helvetians*, a fine was laid upon the Abbots ſubjects, and ſo they were re-
ceived into favour. The laſt *Auſtrian* or *Suevic* war followed, begun by *Frederick*
the Emperour, but purſued by his ſon *Maximilian* after his fathers death:
Frederick had cauſed a great league to be made among the Princes, Cities, and
many of the chief Nobility, purpoſely to overthrow the *Helvetian* liberty,
he was the head of this league himſelf: *Lewis* 12. of *France*, claiming
title to the Dutchy of *Millan*, did earneſtly deſire to be in league with the
Switzers, which they willingly imbraced. All means of accord being tried,
but to no purpoſe, a battel is fought near *Conſtantia*, in which the *Switzers*
were worſted, but the fight being renewed the ſame day they beat their
enemies, and ſo they did afterward in eight ſeveral battels; the Auſtrians
being broken with ſo many defeats, at length by the mediation of
Lewis Sfortia Duke of *Millan*, a peace is made, in which the Helvetian
liberty, and poſſeſſion of their places taken from the Auſtrian is confirmed.
This was the laſt great war which they made againſt forreign Princes in de-
fence of their liberty, except that they made againſt *James Medices* Lord of
Muſſium.

As ſoon as the peace was made, *Galeacius* Viſcount of *Millan* raiſed five
thouſand *Switzers* againſt the Magiſtrates will, who told them they were
bound by league to aid the *French*, but by the help of theſe *Switzers* Duke
Lewis recovered *Millan*; yet afterward the *Switzers* not being able to reſiſt the
great forces of the *French* before *Novaria* a Town of no ſtrength, they made
their peace and went home; Duke *Lewis* thought to eſcape in the habit of an
Helvetian common ſouldier, but he was diſcovered, taken, and carried away
priſoner into *France*: the ſame year *Ulricus*, Duke of *Wirtenberg*, makes a
league of twelve years with the *Switzers*: *Maximilian* alſo the Emperour
makes an hereditary peace, or renews rather that which was made before by
his father Duke *Sigiſmund*, with the four *Cantons* of *Tigurum*, *Bern*, *Urania*,
and *Underwald*. The next year after, *Baſil* and *Scaphuſa* were taken into the 1501.
Helvetian confederacie, both theſe Cities are upon the *Rhene*; *Baſil* is the
biggeſt of all the confederate Towns, and very ancient, for we read of it in
Ammianus Marcellinus; it was honoured with divers priviledges by the
German Emperours, alſo with a Biſhoprick and Univerſity; it firſt was in
league with *Tigur*, *Bern*, and the three firſt *Cantons*, in the *German* troubles
when *Ludovic* the *Bavarian* was excommunicated by the Pope 1327. then
afterward with the *Tigurins* particularly, 1347. When the *Engliſh* plundered
Alſatia under *Leopold* of *Auſtria*, and were preparing to beſiege *Baſil*, the *Can-
tons* ſent a ſtrong garriſon to defend it, ſo that the *Engliſh* were fain to leave off
their enterpriſe, and the rather becauſe *Charles* 4. was marching with his
Army againſt them. In the *Auſtrian* war, which *Katherine* of *Burgundy* the
wife of *Leopold* made againſt them, they received aid from *Bern* and *Salodor*,
an. 1409. (in the Councel of *Baſil*) with ſixteen hundred men they defeated the
whole French Army; they aſſiſted alſo the *Switzers* againſt *Charles* of *Bur-
gundy*; but in the war between *Maximilian* and the *Switzers*, *Baſil* ſtood neuter,
in which City at laſt peace was concluded between the Emperor and *Switzers*
by the mediation of *Lewis Maria* Duke of *Mantua*; in fine, being hated and
wronged by the *Auſtrian*, and the Nobility, they made a perpetual league
with the *Switzers*; *anno* 1501. *Scaphuſa* ſo called from *Scapha* a boat,

An. Christi. becauſe the boats that come from the lake of *Conſtance* along the *Rhene*, do unload here, by reaſon of the great precipice of the River from high rocks; the Town receiveth by this means great cuſtomes: at firſt the Abbot of that place was the chief governour, afterward obtaining divers priviledges from the Emperours, they ſhook off the Abbots power, but it was ſold afterward by *Lewis* of *Bavaria* to the *Auſtrian*, under whom it remained eighty five years, till the Councel of *Conſtance*, where *Frederick* of *Auſtria* for conveying away pope *John* 22. was proſcribed by *Sigiſmund* the Emperour, and his eſtate confiſcated, and ſo this Town was added to the Empire: afterward *Frederick* 3. of the *Auſtrian* family, being Emperour, beſtowed it upon Duke *Sigiſmund* of *Auſtria*, who ſent his Legats to take the oath of Allegiance to the *Auſtrian*, which they refuſed, except they might retain their priviledges; this would not be granted; whereupon they made a league with the *Switzers*, *an.* 1454. which they conſtantly obſerved after, wherefore they were divers times aſſaulted and moleſted by the *Auſtrian*, and at laſt proſcribed for aſſiſting the *Helvetians* againſt *Sigiſmund* of *Auſtria*, by the command of Pope *Pius*, but they were afterward releaſed from this proſcription at the *Auſtrians* charges: About the year 1479. the league between the *Switzers* and *Scaphuſia* was renewed for 25. years, in which the *Urii* and *Undermaldins* were comprehended: At laſt having aſſiſted the *Helvetians* both in the *Burgundian* and *Suevian* war, a league between them and the 11. *Cantons* is concluded for ever, *an.* 1501.

After the *Switzers* had made a league with *France*, they aſſiſted *Charles* 8. and *Lewis* in the *Neapolitan* wars, which proved unfortunate to *Helvetia*; for in the firſt war they loſt their health, being infected with the *Neapolitan* diſeaſe or *French* pox, and in the ſecond they loſt their lives by the ſword of the enemy, who in two great battels overthrew them. *An.* 1507. they aſſiſted the *French* againſt the *Ligurians*, and refuſed to aid the Emperour *Maximilian* againſt the *French*. *An.* 1509. they aided the *French* in the confederacy they made with *Spain*, Pope *Julius* and the Emperor, againſt the *Venetians*. The next year after, Pope *Julius* 2. made a league with the *Switzers*, who ſent him 6000. men into *Italy* againſt the Duke of *Ferraria*, who had ſeiſed on ſome Church-lands, but indeed his aim was to drive the *French* out of *Millan*, which the *Switzers* perceiving forſook the Pope, and returned home without their pay: next year 1511. a perpetual league is made between the *Switzers*, and the houſes of *Auſtria* and *Burgundy*; the *French* upon the expiration of their league deſired to renew it again with the *Switzers*, who were unwilling becauſe they feared the Popes anger, for the *French* then were his enemies; beſides, the *French* had refuſed to continue the *Switzers* pay, after the league was expired; they drowned alſo the *Suitens* Poſt with his letters, and ſold in open Market the *Cantons* Badge, which the Poſts uſe to wear.

The *French* having beaten Pope *Julius* at *Ravenna*, the *Switzers* ſend into *Italy* for his aid twenty thouſand men, who joyning with the *Venetians* (then recontiled to the Pope) took *Cremona* and *Ticinum*, and drove the *French* quite out of *Millan*, ſo that they had nothing left them but the Caſtle; upon this, Pope *Julius* honours the *Switzers* with the title of [*Defenders of the Church:*] Then ſent to them Banners adorned with certain Images, with a ſword and Cap of maintenance, the Enſigns of liberty: *Maximilian Sforția* by them being reſtored to his fathers dominion, makes a league with them, and withall beſtows on them *Lugano*, *Locarne*, *Mendriſe*, and the valley of *Madie*; he gave alſo to the Confederate *Rheti* or *Griſons* the *Val-Telin*, or *Volturene*. *Charles* alſo Duke of *Savoy*, whoſe Anceſtors had made a private league with ſome of the *Cantons*, makes now a new league for five and twenty years, with the twelve *Cantons*: The *French* alſo deſired their amity, which was refuſed, becauſe they kept ſtill the Caſtle of *Millan*, and were found to corrupt ſome of them with bribes; wherefore the *French* Legats are commanded to depart out of their Territories: Hence the war is renewed, the *French* beſiege *Sforția* in

Novaria

Novaria with a great Army, in which Town were four thousand *Switzers*, and eight thousand more were sent to them; these obtained a great victory over the *French*, whom they drove out of *Italy*; in this battel fourteen hundred *Switzers* were lost: after this victory *Maximilian* Emperour falling off from the *French* Covenant, raised an Army of sixteen thousand *Switzers*, with whom as many more voluntaries joyned, these were conducted into *Burgundy* against the *French*, to them *Cæsar* added some Regiments of horse under the Prince of *Wirtenberge*; these besieged *Divio* or *Dijon*, the capital City of *Burgundy*; *Trimonil* the Governour not being able to hold out, made his peace with the *Switzers* on these conditions, that the King should quit his claim to the Dutchy of *Millan*, and should at certain times pay them six hundred thousand crowns; for performance of this four Noblemen are given for Hostages, yet the King would not ratifie this agreement, because he would not part with his claim to *Millan*; whereupon the *Switzers* resolve to put the Hostages to death, if the King did not the sooner confirm the agreement, and withall intended the next winter to invade *France*; the King upon this sends Legats to conclude a perpetual peace with the *Switzers*, but the Kings conditions were so unreasonable that nothing was done, save onely that he gained time, and hindred the invasion of *France*: in these meetings *Abbatiscella* or *Appenzel* was added as the thirteenth *Canton*. *An. Christi.*

Abbatiscella is the name of the Country, and chief Town thereof; the Country is seated above the Town of S. *Gall*, among high mountains upon the frontiers of the *Grisons*, it hath eight principal Towns or Parishes, the chief is *Abbatiscella*, that is the Abbots Cel or Chamber; for the Abbots of S. *Gall*, Lords of this Country, made their chief residence in this Town: these of *Appenzel* made themselves free first by the sword, then by their money to the Abbot; they had seven years war with *Cuno* Abbot of S. *Gall*, who was aided by the Inhabitants about the lake *Acronium* or of *Constance*, as also by *Frederick* Duke of *Austria*, the Bishop of *Constance*, the Earl of *Wirtenberg*, with divers others of the Nobility: these were defeated by *Appenzel*, which at last the Inhabitants of S. *Gall* assisted against the Abbot; they took five Towns, and above sixty Castles, some of which they demolished; in this war the *Abbatiscellans* joyned league with the *Helvetians*: at last *Rupert* the Emperour made peace between the *Abbatiscillans* and their enemies, at *Constance*, *an.* 1408. after which they became a Commonwealth, the form whereof they retain till this day; before this every Town had their peculiar Ensign, and Assembly or Parliament, now they have but one Ensign, and one Assembly for all. Three years after this peace, the Abbot of S. *Gall* began to trouble the *Appenzellians* with new process, whereupon they make a league with six of the *Cantons*; therefore upon complaint made by the Abbot, they are proscribed by the Emperour, and excommunicated by the Pope, for which they cared not, being naturally fenced with mountains, and having little commerce with strangers; the Priests that refused to do their office, in obedience to the Popes command, were some banished, and some put to death by them. The Abbot complains again to the Imperial Electors, who wrote letters to the *German* Princes, and *Helvetian Cantons*, to force the *Appenzellians* to their duty: the *Switzers* utterly refused to make war upon their confederates, but they mediated for a peace, which was concluded the fourth year of their excommunication, after the Earl of *Toggenburg* had defeated them in two several battels: this peace held not long, for the Gentry that were their neighbours about the lake *Acronium*, or of *Constance*, intended to invade the *Abbatiscellians* with their Cavalry, but they could do no good this way, for the *Abbatiscellians* seised upon *Rineck*, and the valley of *Regusce*, *an.* 1445. the Lords of these places got them again to be proscribed, but gaining nothing by this, they sold them their rights for six thousand Crowns: after this *an.* 1452. they made a league with the seven *Helvetian Cantons* against the *Austrians*, *Burgundians*, and 1445. 1452.

An. Christi. the *Suevians* or *Suaubeans*: At last *an.* 1513. they were received in the number of the Cantons. Now the five last Cantons, except *Basil*, were long before their admission into this rank, confederate with the old Cantons; and this priviledge the Cantons have above their confederates, that they can give their advice and suffrages in all publike assemblies, they govern with equal authority those that are under them, and are equal sharers in all booties got in the wars.

Francis of *Valois* son-in-law to *Lewis* 12. of *France*, having succeeded to that crown, resolves to prosecute the war against *Millan*, begun by *Lewis*. Against him *Maximilian* the Emperor, *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, *Sfortia* Duke of *Millan*, with the *Switzers*, enter into a league, to whom was joyned Pope *Leo* 10.

1515. The *Switzers* Army consisted of 30000 foot; the French unwilling to encounter with them, labour to draw them to a peace, which was easily obtained, because they doubted the confederate Princes were not sincere to them, seeing they received not their promised pay, besides the Emperor sent not the horse to guard the foot, as he was bound to doe, he suffered also divers of the German foot to serve the French king; the Popes and Spanish armies would not passe over *Po*, nor joyn themselves with the *Switzers*: therefore being destitute of help and pay, they made peace with the French, upon which twelve thousand went home, the rest prepared to follow the next day: but *Sfortia* disliked the conditions of peace, therefore with the *Switzers* that were of his guard and some others he fals upon the French about the evening, and withall the *Switzers* send to call back their fellows that were marching homeward, shewing them in what danger they were; upon this they return, a cruel encounter ensues, in which divers of the French Nobility lost their lives; at the first the *Switzers* had the better, but in the next encounter were defeated, and so retreated to *Millan*, where they left for the Duke a garrison of 1500 in the castle, and then return home. Upon this defeat of the Switzers, the French seise upon the Dutchy of *Millan*, which the Emperor sought by force to recover the year following, but could not. In the interim, the French make peace with the Switzers for ever, which was confirmed, *an.* 1521. All the

1521. Cantons joyned in this league, except the *Tigurins*, who could never be induced to assent to it: for *Matthew* Cardinal of *Sedun* or *Sion* had diverted their minds from the French: *Zuinglius* also their Preacher told them, how base it was for them to be mercenary souldiers, and for pay to shed innocent blood; how far this was against the mind of Christ, and the practise of their ancestors, and that this mercenary way was an exposing of their liberty to sale; besides, that this new league abridged them of their power, for not they, but the King was to choose his officers, and these to raise the souldiers at their pleasure; again, this league was in divers things destructive of former leagues; moreover they had no reason to assist the French with souldiers, having refused to assist *Maximilian* the Emperor; and for any benefit which by this league would accrue the State, they could find none, only some private persons might be enriched by the French pensions, the love of which, and the wickednesse which attends upon a military life, might occasion much mischief in their country, as effeminateness, covetousness, dissoluteness, neglect of husbandry & good arts, idleness, luxury, drunkenness, whoredoms, blasphemies, which are the fruits of wars, and weeds that grow in military camps; it was urged also, that the French assistance could do them little good, that the relying upon pay and pensions was a distrusting of Gods providence, and that most of the former leagues they had made with foraign Princes did turn to their prejudice, losse of their men, and intestine discords. For these and other reasons the *Tigurins* could not be drawn into this league: But the other confederates were of a contrary mind, affirming, that all war is not condemned in Scripture, for divers holy men have been souldiers, and have assisted their friends; that the Helvetian souldiery is not mercenary, seeing they are to

serve

ſerve but one King, and that by covenant; if the King enjoin an unlawful war, it was in the Magiſtrates power to deny him aid; if the cauſe was doubtful, the common ſouldier was not to enquire into it; beſides, the *Switzers* Country is populous and barren, and obnoxious to many enemies haters of their liberty; therefore they ſtand in need of forreign employments and aſſiſtants; neither was it a rejection of divine providence to make uſe of ſecundary means; their youth alſo by this employment ſhould be trained up in military diſcipline, ſo needful for defence of the Country; and though ſome forreign leagues have not proved ſucceſſeful, yet their leagues with *Lewis* 11. *Charles* 8. and *Lewis* 12. of *France*, have been advantagious to them. Upon theſe reaſons the *Cantons* grounded their perpetual peace with *France*. *An. Chriſti.*

Chap. VIII.

Of the Helvetian *Confederates, till the year* 1602.

HAving ſpoken of the *Helvetian Cantons*, we will now briefly relate the Confederates and Allies of *Switzerland*: And 1. of the Abbot of S. *Gall*. *Gallus* was a Gentleman of *Scotland*, diſciple to *Columbanus* the Abbot, with whom he travelled into *France*, and thence into *Germany*; he preached the Goſpel, and converted many from Idolatry, at a place called *Tuggen* near the head of the Lake of *Zurich*, and then at *Bregents* at the head of the Lake of *Conſtance*, and in other places of *Switzerland* ſixteen years: being invited to the Biſhoprick of *Conſtance*, he refuſed it, recommending one of his diſciples to it, and ſo he retired himſelf to an Hermitical life, *an.* 630. on the mountains above the Lake of *Conſtance*, where now is the Town and Covent of S. *Gall*; there with ſome of his diſciples, he built a Cell, and in holy meditations ſpent his dayes; there did his diſciples remain, whoſe piety was rewarded with rich gifts from the French Kings, and Dukes of *Aleman* or *Suaube*: at laſt the fraternity increaſing in number and wealth, S. *Galls* Cell is turned into a Monaſtery, eighty years after his death. *Pipinus* the ſon of *Charles Martel* made *Othomar* a Prieſt, the firſt Abbot of S. *Gall*, who with his brethren began to profeſſe the rule of S. *Benedict*. The wealth and power of this Monaſtery did ſo increaſe, that the Abbot thereof was reckoned among the Princes, and was of old under the protection of the Emperors, who out of the Gentry of *Suaube* or *Aleman* uſed to ſend governours of that Abbey; but afterward being neglected in the troubles between the Popes and Emperors, and quarrels ariſing between the Abbot and Appenzel, to which the Town of S. *Gall* was joyned, and ſome of the Abbots own vaſſals, and therefore ſtood in need of ſome powerful protector, *Caſpar Landenberg* the 52. Abbot deſired to be joyned in league with the four *Helvetian Cantons* of *Tigurum* or *Zurich*, *Lucern*, *Suits*, and *Glaris* or *Glarona*, whom they choſe for their protectors and defenders their liberties, rights, cuſtomes, and poſſeſſions: This power alſo is given to theſe *Cantons*, that all places in that ſeigniory belonging to the Abbot, ſhall give free acceſſe to the *Cantons* when they pleaſe, and that in all controverſies the Abbot ſhall ſtand to their verdict: Abbot *Ubricus*, *Landenbergs* ſucceſſour, ordered that each of the four *Cantons* in their order, ſhould ſend one of their Councel to ſtay with the Abbot two years, and to be Captain of all his Country, and to be preſent at all pleadings, and that the half of all mulcts and fines ſhould belong to the *Switzers*, likewiſe that all the Abbots ſubjects ſhould aſſiſt the *Cantons* in their wars; this league was renewed by *Ulricus*, when the Townſmen of S. *Gall* and *Appenzel* had pulled down the begun Monaſtery of *Roſac*, who by the *Cantons* were ſuppreſſed, and reduced to the Abbots obedience, this league continues yet; and though the Abbot and Cantons be of different Religions, yet they ſend according to their league a Captain to govern his ſubjects in civil affairs, and to maintain the Abbies rights.

The

An. Christi. The town of S. *Gall* oweth her original to the Abby, and her privileges to the Emperors her protectors, though the Abbots subjects, with whom sometimes the Townsmen use to quarrel about their privileges and liberties, which they were forced for sums of money to redeem of the Abbot. Afterward the town of S. *Gall*, in imitation of Abbot *Landenberg*, united themselves in league to six Cantons, namely *Zurich*, *Bern*, *Lucerne*, *Suitz*, *Tugium* or *Zug*, and *Glaris*. This league was made perpetual and confirmed by oath, *an.* 1454. They had made leagues before this time with some of these Cantons, which was only for some years.

The *Rheti* or *Grisons* are antient: for before Christ, the *Tuscans* being driven from their homes by the *Gauls* under the conduct of their Captain *Rhetus*, they possessed the Alpes, and from his name they called themselves *Rhetians*; in the *Romans* time there were two Countries called *Rhetia*, the first and second; and not onely the Alpes, but a great part of *Suevia* or *Suabe* and *Bavaria* were called *Rhetia*; the first and old *Rhetia* containing the springs of *Rhene*, a great part of the Alpes, with the neighbouring valleys on both sides, is called now *Grisons*, and of old *Cani*: there are three leagues of the *Grisons*, the first is called the High-league, and it contains nineteen Commonalties, ten of which are lost; the second is called the League or Covenant of Gods house, because of the Bishop of *Curia* or *Coire* who is comprehended within it, this contains nineteen Commonalties, two of which speak *Dutch*, the rest broken *Italian*; the third is called the League of the ten Jurisdictions, because of the ten Commonalties in it; these people have divers times made leagues with their neighbour *Switzers*; the two former have made a perpetual league with seven of the *Cantons*; the third entertains constant friendship, though not a solemn league with them: the upper League or *Grison*, entred into a confederacie with the seven old *Cantons* for ever; the next year after, the
1497. league of Gods house joyned themselves to the same *Cantons*; these had long controversies with those of the County of *Tyrol*, by whom they were much wronged, and finding no redress, though the Emperour *Maximilian* had appointed first the Bishop of *Constance*, then the Bishop of *Auspurg* to arbitrate the business, yet nothing was done, but were still put off with delayes till the *Austrians* had put themselves in Arms with intent to invade the *Grisons* unexpectedly; whereupon they send Legats to *Tigurum* where the *Switzers* were then assembled, to have a perpetual league confirmed between them, which was gladly entertained by the *Cantons* and ratified: the next year after this
1498. followed the *Suevian* war, in which the *Grisons* stoutly defended their borders against the *Austrians*, whom they oftentimes defeated by the *Switzers* help; at last having got the better, both the *Switzers* and *Grisons* made their peace with *Maximilian*; ever after the *Grisons* helped the *Switzers* in their wars in *Italy*, when *John James* of *Medices*, afterward Marquess of *Marignan*, had taken the Castle of *Musse* upon the lake *Larius* or *Come*, and *Clavenne* from the *Grisons*; the *Switzers* sent them aid, by which the enemy was driven out of their Territories: at this day the *Grisons* as well as the *Cantons* are in league with the *French*, and serve him in his wars, but they have their Commanders and Regiments apart from those of the *Switzers*.

The *Valesians* are three distinct people, inclosed with high mountains, and inhabiting the valley between the springs of *Rhene* and lake *Leman*; these were called anciently *Viberi* or *Juberi*, *Seduni*, and *Veragri*; the two former are now called the high *Valesians*, & are divided into seven Dioceses; the *Veragri* or lower *Valesians* are subject to the other; but the Bishop of *Sedun* or *Syon* is their chief both in Church and State-affairs, he is called Count and Governor of *Valais*; they made their first league with the three *Cantons* of *Uri*, *Lucerne* and *Underwald*, *an.* 1417. when they had wars with *William Raromus* the Bishop, and his father *Guiscard* whom they had banished, *Bern* helped the Bishop; the other *Cantons* who were neuters, fearing lest this siding of *Bern* with the *Valesians* might

cause

cause a quarrel between *Bern* and the three above-named *Cantons*, they with much adoe made up a peace, in which the *Baronii* were restored: after this war the *Valesians* made a temporary league with *Bern*, which in the year 1475 was made perpetual; two years before this, they joyned themselves to the three above-named Cantons, *ann.* 1533. At *Friburg* a league is concluded between *Adrian* Bishop of *Sion*, and seven Dioceses of the *Valetians*, with seven Cantons, to wit *Lucerne*, *Uri*, *Suits*, *Underwald*, *Zug*, *Friburg*, and *Salodor* or *Saleurre*, to defend the Roman Religion against all opposers. *An. Christi*

Rotvil is seated beyond *Danube* in *Germany*, on the left side of the river *Nicre*: It is an Imperial Chamber or place of judicature, whither the neighbouring countries make their appeals; which if any contumaciously do resist, they are liable to the Imperial Ban or proscription. The first league these of *Rotvil* made with the *Switzers*, was for fifteen years, under *Frederick* the third Emperour, *ann.* 1463. which afterward they renewed upon occasions: at last, the league is made perpetual with all the Cantons, *ann.* 1519. Now because *Rotvil* is seated far from the borders of *Helvetia*, so that an Army cannot be conducted to them; they are tied not to make any war, but upon urgent necessity, and that not without the *Switzers* consent, without whom they are to make no league. 1519.

Mulhouse a City in the County of *Ferrat* or *Sequana*, is thought to be the same that *Aridbinum* of old; it was anciently an Imperial City, yet governed by the Bishop of *Strasburg*; but in the wars between *Ralph* of *Habspurg* and the Bishop of *Strasburg*, *Mulhouse* was taken from the Bishop, and his Castle in the City demolished; since which time it hath been one of the Cities of the Empire: Their first league they made with the *Switzers*, was in the year 1464. for this City being infested by the Nobility, to be freed of their tyranny, they make a league of fifteen years with *Friburg*, *Bern*, and *Salodor*; and by the mediation of *Bern*, the other seven *Helvetian* Cantons receive them into protection. This so incensed the Gentry thereabouts, that they took up arms against this City; but the Cantons so aided them with garrisons within, and forces abroad, and so straitly besieged *Waldshout* a town of *Austria*, that the Gentry were glad to make their peace. Then in year 1506. the Mulhousians were united to *Basil*; nine years after they made a league with the whole thirteen Cantons.

Bienna stands pleasantly, upon a Lake full of Fish, and beset with Vines, and is under the Bishop of *Basils* jurisdiction, but enjoys her own priviledges. In the year 1303. this City made league with *Bern*, *Strasburg*, *Basil*, *Friburg*, and *Soluerre*, to suppresse the highway-robbers which infested all that country; three years after, they made a particular confederacy with *Bern*; their third league was made *ann.* 1532. and fifteen years after they renewed it, when *John* of *Viana* Bishop of *Basil*, a man of an unquiet spirit, made war upon his neighbours, and being offended at this Union of *Bienna* with *Bern*, falls suddenly upon the Town, and imprisoneth the *Bernois* that were authors of this society; but the *Bernois* in revenge, fall upon the Bishops Castle in the Town, and freed their Citizens: then they made war upon the Bishop and his confederates the *Salodorians*, wasting many places of his bishoprick.

Geneva the last City of the *Allobroges*, of which *Cæsar* speaks, lieth neer the *Switzers* upon Lake *Leman*, at the head of *Rhon*; it hath been subject often times to Fire; in the time of *Heliogabalus* it was burnt down: *Aurelian* repaired it, and endowed it with divers priviledges, and called it by his name *Aurelian*; it was wasted by the barbarous Nations that made irruption into *France*: About two hundred & seventy years ago, it was twice burned. The Bishoprick had great immunities, and so had the City; yet they kept good correspondency with the Bishop: The Earls of *Geneva* were great enemies to her liberty, who notwithstanding were the Bishops Vassals, and held their Earldome from him in Fee: She was also often troubled by the Earls of *Savoy*, so that

An. Christi. that *ann.* 1420. *Amadeus* Duke of *Savoy* strove to obtain of Pope *Martin* the right of superiority over *Geneva* by way of exchange; but *John* who was then Bishop, agreed with the Citizens for himself and successors, that the liberties of *Geneva* should never be exchanged or alienated; if any should endeavour an exchange, that he be accounted a traitour. Afterward, when the Emperour *Maximilian* had made *Philbert* Duke of *Savoy* and his son in law, Lieutenant of the Empire in those parts, he and his brother *Charls* endeavoured upon this title, to subject *Geneva* to them, pretending that the priviledges of Lieutenantship were granted to the Princes of *Savoy* by *Charls* the fourth; who notwithstanding had taken away from *Amadeus* their Earl, all power over *Geneva*: These troubles made the City enter into league with *Bern*, and *Friburg*, which was renewed and made more firm *ann.* 1536. at which time, the Duke of *Savoy* and Bishop of *Geneva* raised war against the Town, for changing their Religion. There hath been oftentimes intentions to confederate *Geneva* with the Cantons, which hath not yet been effected. 1519.

Neocomum or *Neufchastel* is in the Country of *Avanches*; on the Lake bearing the towns name. In the war between *Lewis* the twelfth of *France* and the *Switzers*, *Bern* in behalf of all the Cantons seised upon the town and the whole County, placing a governour there, which the other Cantons did in order, except those of *Zurich*; at last *Joan Hoochbergia* Duke *Longovils* widow, upon certain conditions procured the County to be restored to her (for it belonged anciently to the Earls of *Hoochberg*) which was done in the year 1529. before this time it was annexed to the Cantons of *Bern*, *Lucerne*, *Friburg*, and *Solieurre*, on certain articles, which upon this rendition were confirmed. At this day the Lords of this County are by a peculiar league allied to *Bern*.

Besides these confederate Towns, there be others belonging to the *Helvetian* common-wealth, which may be called stipendiary, because they serve the *Switzers* in their wars upon their own charges; these have their own laws and Magistrates, but the soveraignty remains in the Cantons, whose publique Edicts they are bound to obey; these towns anciently belonged to the *Austrian*, but the *Switzers* in their wars with *Austria* obtained them, upon certain conditions, that they should enjoy under the Cantons the same priviledges they had under the *Austrian*; these are five in number, namely *Bada*, *Bremgartan*, *Frauenfeld*, *Mellingen*, and *Rapersvil*.

Bada on the river *Limag* is so called from the hot baths there, it is therefore called *Thermopolis*; this town is mentioned in *Cor. Tacitus*, it had anciently two castles, the one upon a high rock, demolished by the *Switzers*, the other is garrisoned by them; it had also Earls of old, who are now extinct, to whom succeeded the Lords of *Habspurg*, who joyned this and other things to the House of *Austria*; at last it fell from them to the *Switzers*, in the council of *Constance*, because *Frederick* of *Austria* maintained Pope *John* 22. against the Emperour and Council; therefore he is excommunicate, and proscribed. *Sigismund* the Emperour with the Prince of *Bavaria* made war against him: the *Switzers* are commanded to war against him also, notwithstanding the fifty years peace they had lately made with him, because he was excommunicate and an enemy to the Church and state; if they refuse to break the peace, they should be excommunicated also with the *Austrian*: the breach of this peace was also warranted by the Princes Legats at the council, and the Jurisconsults, because the Emperours subjects, in all their actions, must except either expresly or tacitly the Emperours Majesty and Rights. The copy of this Decree was sent them, and withall is shewed them, that whatever they have pawned to the *Austrian* heretofore, doth now belong to the Empire, and that the Emperour will make no peace with the *Austrian*, except he confirm the *Helvetian* peace: to this war at last they assented; but withall they desired pay, because they were poor; the Emperour told them his money was short, but he would bestow on them whatever goods of the *Austrians* they possessed, or should obtain in this

war

war till they had their pay; he exhorts also *Zurich* to take arms, promising them that Austrian Country beyond Mount *Albius* in perpetuall Fee: Upon this the *Tigurins* in the year 1415. besiege *Mellinga*, and the third day take it: thence they went to *Bremgarten*, where the Cantons of *Suits* and *Zug* joyned with them, to whom this Town also surrendred it self, under the protection of the Empire; divers other Towns the *Switzers* took from the *Austrian*. Then the *Tigurins* by the help of the other Cantons, except *Bern*, besiege *Bada* the strongest place belonging to the *Austrian*, and which had often done them much hurt by excursions: after three weeks siege, the Town surrenders; the Castle held out some time after, till all necessaries began to fail them: at last, they capitulate to surrender if the *Austrian* do not relieve them at such a time; mean while, the *Austrian* makes his peace with the Emperour, and command is sent to the *Switzers* to disband their Army, but they would not give off the siege of this Castle till they took and burned it, because of the much mischiefe they had heretofore suffered by it; the Gentry stormed at this, but could not now tell how to help it. Now the Emperour intending for *Spain*, to bring from thence *Peter de Luna*, otherwayes *Benedict* the ninth, to be Pope; and his treasure being exhausted both on the Council and on his wars, he ingaged *Bada* with some other Towns and Lands to them belonging, for a summe of mony to *Zurich*; likewise to *Bern* he pawned the Country of *Ergow*, which they at this day doe solely possesse. The next year after, *Zurich* made the Cantons of *Lucerne*, *Suits*, *Underwald*, *Zug*, and *Glaris*, sharers of this Pawn or Mortgage: but those of *Uri* at first refused to share, thinking it a breach of the peace; but being better informed of the lawfulnesse thereof, grounded on the Emperours and Councils authority, were content to pay their money and share with the rest, and so did *Bern* also. *An. Christi.*

Bremgarten one of the mortgaged towns, is seated on the river *Russe*, two German miles below *Lucern*; it was first under the Empire, then it came to the *Habspurgs*, from them to the *Austrian* Princes, who derive their beginning from them. *Mellingen* another of these pawned Towns on the same river, one German mile below *Bremgarten*, it belonged to the Earls of *Habspurg*; these two Towns with *Bada* were taken by the *Switzers* for the Emperour: Now they are under the eight Cantons, who suffer them to retain their ancient priviledges. *Rapersvil* stands on the Lake of *Zurich* or *Tigurum*; it first belonged to the Earls of *Rapersvil*, then to the *Habspurgs*; it fell to the *Switzers ann.* 1458. Here were two factions, the one *Austrian*, the other *Helvetian*; of these Duke *Sigismund* carried away some prisoners to *Oenipont* or *Inspruc*, which made the other joyn with the *Switzers*; but the prisoners were restored by the *Switzers* threatnings and intercession: After, the *Switzers* war against *Constance*; those of *Uri*, *Suits*, *Underwald*, and *Glaris*, obtained leave to march with their Army through *Rapersvil*; who when they came, seised on the Town; which by reason of the *Helvetian* prevailing faction there, swore Allegiance to those foure Cantons, under whom they are yet, and enjoy their ancient priviledges which they had under the *Austrian*. Two years after the taking of *Rapersvil*, the seven Cantons seised on *Frawenfield*, the chief City of *Turgea* or *Turgow*, in their war against *Sigismund* of *Austria*; to this war the Cantons were incited by Pope *Pius* or *Æneas Silvius*, who excommunicated *Sigismund* for imprisoning Cardinal *Cusan*, Bishop of *Brixia* or *Bresse*. *Vitodurum* or *Winterdur*, is a town in *Kyburg* belonging to the Canton of *Zurich*, it was then under the *Austrian*; this town suspecting that the *Tigurins* would surprise them, shut their Gates on the Fare-day of S. *Gall* against the Country people, and would not open them upon any intreaties of the Governour of *Zurich*: Hereupon *Zurich* forbids all commerce with this Town, and the *Austrian* strengthens it with a garrison: The *Tigurins* with the other Cantons besiege *Vitodurum*; so at last the *Switzers* obtain, *ann.* 1460. the Country of *Turgow* with the Towns of

An. Christi. *Dieſſenhow* on the *Rhine*, and *Frawenfield*: this war alſo of the Cantons with the *Auſtrian* was haſtned on by two brothers, *Vigil* and *Bernard Gradlers*, who being oppreſſed by *Sigiſmund*, appealed for juſtice to the Cantons.

There are alſo under the *Switzers* nine Bailiages or governments, to wit, the County of *Bade*, the free Provinces, *Turgow*, *Sarunetes* or *Sargaris*, *Rheguſci* or the Valley of *Rhin*, *Lugano*, *Locarne*, *Mendriſe*, and the Valley of *Madie*; the laſt four are beyond the Alpes in *Italy*, and ſpeak Italian, the reſt ſpeak Dutch. *Bada* is ſubject to the Cantons of *Zurich*, *Lucern*, *Uri*, *Suits*, *Underwald*, *Zug*, *Glaris*, and *Bern*; theſe are alſo Lords of *Turgow*, except *Bern*: the judicature of criminal cauſes was taken from *Frederick* of *Auſtria* in the Council of *Conſtance*, and pawned by *Sigiſmund* the Emperour to the City of *Conſtance*; but *ann.* 1490. *Maximilian* Emperour beſtowed it on the Switzers; the free Provinces are theſe Caſtles and Villages upon the left ſide of the river *Ruſs*, above and beneath *Bregmarten*; theſe are called free Provinces, becauſe the three Villages of *Megenberg*, *Richenfer*, and *Ergow* or *Villa Verbigena* had their ſeveral juriſdictions and officers, as diſtinct provinces, but now are made one. This part anciently was called the County of *Rore*, it is now under the Cantons, namely *Zurich*, *Lucerne*, *Uri*, *Suits*, *Underwald*, *Zug*, and *Glaris*; it was taken by *Lucern* in the war between the *Helvetian* and *Frederick* of *Auſtria*; but the other Cantons claimed an equal ſhare in the government with *Lucerna*, according to their ancient agreement, that all ſhould be common, whatſoever was taken in that war; the matter was referred to *Bern*, whoſe verdict was for the equal ſharing of the juriſdiction by the other Cantons: The Country is ſmal, therefore the governour who comes hither ſome times in the year hath his reſidence in the Abbey of *Muren*. *Sarnuetes* or *Sargans*, ſo called from the river *Sara* hard by them; this Town and Country belonged anciently to the Earls of *Werdenberg*, then to the *Auſtrian*; who ſold it to the Earls of *Tog*, from whom the Earls of *Sargans* or *Werdenberg* redeemed it: At laſt, *ann.* 1483. *George* of *Werdenberg* ſold it to the ſeven ancient Cantons, who ſend thither governours by turn, under whom the Town enjoys its old priviledges. *Rheguſci* on the *Rhene*, are a part of the *Griſons*, they that dwell on the right ſide of the *Rhene*, are under the *Auſtrian*; but the inhabitants on the left ſide belong to the *Switzers*. *Frederick Togg* took all this Country from the *Auſtrian* by the Emperours commahd, at the Council of *Conſtance*. Afterward this country was diyers times pawned and ſold, till at laſt the Cantons of *Zurich*, *Lucerne*, *Suits*, *Glaris*, *Uri*, *Underwald*, *Zug*, having aided the Abbot of S. *Gall* againſt *Appenzel*, obtained for their pay this country: afterward they admit the Abbatiſcellans the ancient Lords thereof to a ſhare in the government, ſo that now it is under eight Cantons.

Beyond the Alpes, the Cantons have four Bailiages or Governments in *Italy*; the firſt is *Lugano*, upon the Lake; the ſecond is *Locarne*, where was a ſtrong
1513. Caſtle, not inferiour to that of *Millain*; the third is *Mendriſi*; and the four is the Valley of *Madia*; *Maximilian Sfortia* Duke of *Millain* beſtowed theſe upon the Cantons, for their ſervice in beating the *French* out of *Italy*, by the command of Pope *Julius*: he beſtowed alſo on the *Griſons* the *Val-Telin*: but three years after, when *Francis* the French King had defeated the *Switzers* at *Marignan*, and driven the Duke out of *Millain*, he confirmed this gift, and ſo have the ſucceeding Dukes of *Millain* done: All the Cantons ſend Governours thither, except *Appenzel*, becauſe this was not then one of the Cantons, when the *Switzers* obtained this gift. *Bilitonium* is under the three Cantons of *Uri*, *Suits*, and *Underwald*: this town belonged to the Earls of *Miſairk*, till the Duke of *Millain* took it by force; but being retaken by the Earl, he ſold it to *Uri* and *Underwald*; from whom the Duke recovered it by treachery: Since which time the *Switzers* have had many battels for regaining this place, the poſſeſſion of which at laſt they obtained, almoſt eighty years after they had
1500. loſt it: For whileſt the French and Millainois were in continuall wars, the

Townſ-

Townsmen for quietnesse sake surrender themselves to the Cantons of *Vri*, from whom the French have often attempted to recover it, but in vain, it is now divided into three governments under the three Cantons. *An. Christi.*

The *Switzers* have made divers leagues with their neighbours: with *Millain ann.* 1466. between *Galeacius* and *Blanca Maria* his wife, and the eight Cantons; then between *Galeacius Maria Sfortia*, and those of *Vri* about the Valley of *Leontia* or *Liviner*: the Duke grants to *Vri* the civil jurisdiction of that Valley, who were for this to pay the Duke a yearly tribute, four Hawks and a cross-Bow. *Ferdinand Gonzaga ann.* 1552. governour of *Millain*, in the name of *Charls* the fifth Emperour, renews the league with the *Switzers*, which was to continue four years: after the death of *Charls* the fifth, this league hath not been renewed by the Kings of *Spain*, now Lords of *Millain*, with the *Helvetian*, though amity is carefully entertained between them; yet *Philip* the second of *Spain* made a confederacy with the six Catholick Cantons, to wit, *Lucern*, *Urania*, *Suits*, *Silvania*, *Zug*, and *Fribung*, for maintenance of the old Faith; this was confirmed at *Millain*, *ann.* 1588. the Catholicks of *Appenzel* were admitted into the same society, *ann.* 1597.

Sigismund of *Austria* made a perpetual league with the *Switzers*, which was confirmed by the Emperours *Maximilian*, *Charles* the fifth, and *Ferdinand*. This *Sigismund* was the son of *Frederick*, who carried away Pope *John* from the council of *Constance*: he had many battles with the *Switzers*, by whom being often beat, he labours to draw aid from King *Lewis* of *France*; but he who had felt the Switzers valour at the council of *Basil*, would not meddle in the busines: then he implores the Burgundian, to whom he mortgageth some countries neer *Helvetia*, that he might purposely quarrel with the Switzers; but the Burgundian governour was so tyrannical, that *Sigismund* was glad upon the earnest entreaty of his oppressed subjects to redeem again the mortgage, and to make a league, that was to be renewed every ten years with the Switzer against the Burgundian, whose power was too great for either of them apart. *Ann.* 1474. not onely *Sigismund* of *Austria*, but also *Renatus* of *Lorrain*, with the Bishops of *Strasburg*, *Basil*, and divers cities, entred into confederacy with *Helvetia* against the *Burgundian*: but after he was slain, *Sigismund* being childlesse, resignes his principality to *Maximilian* the Emperour, reserving onely to himself an annual pension; this Emperour renews the *Austrian* league with *Helvetia*, *ann.* 1511. in which was comprehended the house of *Burgundy*, and his Nephew *Charles* now under his tuition, with the twelve Cantons, *Appenzel*, the Abbot and Town of S. *Gall*. *Maximilian* also promiseth for his Nephew *Charles*, that he will yearly pay to each Canton two hundred crowns as a present in *Zurich*; to the Abbot and Town of S. *Gall*, and to *Appenzel*, to each of them 100. crowns, till *Charls* be of years that he can manage his Dominions himself, who was also to confirm this League, which he did, *ann.* 1543. so far as concerned the house of *Burgundy*, for *Austria* was then under the government of his brother *Ferdinand*.

The Dukes of *Savoy* did anciently entertain amity with *Bern*, *Friburg*, and *Soluerre*; and *Charls* father to *Philbert* made a league of twenty five years with all the *Cantons*, *ann.* 1512. during which, the Duke was to pay yearly to each *Canton* at *Bern* two hundred crowns: about the end of this league, Duke *Charls* lost the greatest part of his Dutchie to King *Francis* of *France*; in this war *Bern* in defence of their confederats of *Geneva*, seised upon some part of the Dutchy: the renewing of this league was interrupted by the wars of *Charls* 5. now protector of *Savoy*, against the *French* in *Piemont*; but afterward *Philbert* son to Duke *Charles* being restored to his Dominions by the *French*, made a perpetual league with six Cantons of *Lucern*, *Suits*, *Vri*, *Vnderwald*, *Zug*, and *Soluerre*; and after this, the other *Cantons* joyned in this confederacy.

Of the French kings, *Lewis* 11. was the first that made a league with, and paid to the *Switzers* an annual pension: this was after he had tried their va-

An. Christi. lour at *Basil*, where he lost 6000 men by 1600 *Switzers*; In hatred also of the *Burgundian*, by whom he had been lately beaten, he makes this league for ten years, promising to each Canton a stipend of 7000 Franks. *Charles* 8. sonne to this *Lewis*, renewed the league *an.* 1483. and imployed the *Switzers* in his war against the Duke of *Britany*, whom he overcame, and also in the Neapolitan war. *Lewis* 12. his successor made a league of twelve years with them, that by their help he might again recover *Millan*. This war being ended, *Lewis* refuseth to pay any more the *Switzers* pension, wherefore they in anger make a league with Pope *Julius* 2. *an.* 1510. by this means *Sfortia* is repossessed of *Millan*, and the *French* beat out. *Francis Valois* son-in-law to *Lewis* succeeded, who beat the *Switzers*, and carried the Duke of *Millan* prisoner into *France*; but shortly after he made a stable league with the Cantons, considering how conducible their amity was to *France*, and promiseth to pay yearly to each Canton 2000 franks, and as much to the *Valestans*; to the *Grisons* as much as *Lewis* 12. paid them, and 2000 franks over and above; to the Abbot of *S. Gall* and to his subjects, and to those of *Toggenburg*, 600 franks; to the City of *S. Gall*, 400. to *Mulhouse*, 400. to those of the County of *Gruer*, 600. and it is agreed, that the places heretofore under the protection of *Millan* shall enjoy now under *France* their ancient privileges: many other articles were concluded between them, and ratified at *Friburg*, in the yeare 1516. It was further agreed five years after, That the French king might at his pleasure, when he was threatned with war, raise six thousand *Switzers* at least, and not above sixteen thousand without the Magistrates permission; these levies the Cantons must not hinder or call back, except they be in danger themselves of invasion; but the French king is not to imploy the *Switzers* in any sea-service, but on the land onely; if the *Switzers* be invaded, the French king is to furnish them on his own charges with two hundred men compleatly armed, or else two thousand crowns every three moneths, besides twelve peeces of ordnance, and a thousand franks yearly to each Canton during this league, which was to continue three yeares after the death of King *Francis*: his son *Henry* who succeeded made a new league with the *Switzers*, on the same articles which were agreed upon by his father; this continued five yeares after his death; in this the *Switzers* were not to aid the *French* in recovering their lost dominions in *Italy*, but were to help him in regaining the town and province of *Bolon* in *Picardy*: this league was made at *Salodor*, *an.* 1549. in which all the Cantons were included except the *Tigurins* and *Bernois*. Lastly, *Charles* 9. sonne to King *Henry*, renewed the former league; so did *Henry* 4. who promised to pay the *Switzers* for their
1622. arrears due to them, a million of gold. The sixe Catholike Cantons are allowed to continue their league with *Millan* and *Savoy*.

CHAP.

An. Christi.

CHAP. IX.

The Swediſh *Hiſtory, from the year* 1590. *till the year* 1631.

Sigiſmund ſon to *John* is declared King of *Swethland*, *an.* 1590. He returns from his kingdom of *Poland*, and is crowned at *Upſalia* king of *Swethland*. *Francis Malaſpina* Biſhop of *Urbin* and the Popes Legat, was earneſt to inaugurate the King after the Pontifician manner, hoping thereby to reduce the Roman religion into that kingdome; but he was oppoſed by the Parliament, chiefly by *Adam Andracan* Archbiſhop of *Upſalia*, who told the Legat, that it was againſt the cuſtome and lawes of that kingdom, for any except the Archbiſhop of *Upſalia* to ſet the Crown on the Kings head, beſides (ſaith he) the King muſt ſwear to maintain the Auguſtine Confeſſion exhibited to *Charls* 5. ſixty four years ago, and no other Religion in that kingdom but that which was eſtabliſhed by *Guſtavus* and *John* 3. the Kings late predeceſſors, in the Parliament of *Upſalia*. The King perceiving that all the Aſſembly ſided with *Adam*, he was content to receive his inauguration from him; his Coronation-oath was given him by the Chancellor of *Swethland*, by which he promiſeth to maintain juſtice and truth, to ſuppreſſe vice, to govern the kingdome with *P. Charles* and the Swediſh parliament, to admit no ſtrangers into his counſels or chief offices of his kingdom; that he will lay no taxes on his people except he be thereto neceſſitated by wars, or the marriages of his children, or reparation of decayed caſtles; that he will maintain the priviledges of the Nobility, Clergy and people, and their peace and welfare. Then in the Parliament ſome lawes were enacted for governing of the kingdom in the Kings abſence, who the next *June* after returned to *Poland*. But within few years after, in the Parliament held at *Stockholm* he was depoſed by the States of *Swethland*; and the next year 1600. in the Parliament at *Lincophen*, he with his children and poſterity are totally excluded from the kingdom of *Sweden*, becauſe contrary to the will and admonition of his Grandfather he fell off from the Proteſtant to the Roman religion, and invaded *Sweden* his native ſoile with an army of ſtrangers, to the great danger of undoing his Uncle *Charles*, the Nobility, Clergy, and whole Kingdome, which is grieved for that his Majeſty hath in this violated his promiſes and Coronation-oath, for which cauſe they were forced to renounce all fealty and allegiance to him: yet in regard of their love to him, they are content that his ſon ſhall ſit upon his throne, if ſo be his Majeſty will reſolve within ſix moneths to ſend him hither to be inſtructed in the Proteſtant faith, under D. *Charles* his Majeſties uncle, and the other Peers of *Swethland*; but if the King refuſe to perform this within the prefixed time, they muſt diſinherit him and his poſterity; therefore they beſeech his Majeſty not to ſlight the humble petition of his Kingdom, nor welfare of his poſterity.

1599.

The ſix moneths prefixed for the Kings reſolution being paſt, and no anſwer from him, a Parliament is called, in which Duke *Charles* is deſired to undertake the kingdom, which he refuſed, till the other ſix moneths were expired, in which the young Prince was to be ſent to be inſtructed in the new religion and laws of the kingdome, that when he ſhould attain the full age of 24 years, he might be crowned, and not before. In the mean time they deſire Duke *Charls* to manage the State-affairs during the Princes minority, whether he come or not; and withall they are reſolved, if D. *Charls* die before this time, to chooſe three eminent men to govern the State, and to breed the young Princes in the Proteſtant faith; it is alſo enacted, that if *Sigiſmunds* ſon ſucceeds to the crown, he ſhall provide an honorable maintenance for his Uncle Duke *John*, in his Dutchy of *Oſtrogoth*, and that he ſhall permit D. *Guſtavus Adolphus* ſon to D. *Charles* to inherit without moleſtation his fathers Dukedome in as ample manner as his father poſſeſſed it; it is likewiſe ordered, that

if

An. Christi. if the King ſuffers himſelf to be dethroned, that Duke *Charles* ſhall ſucceed; and if he die before any of the young Princes be fit for government, he ſhall be governour whom Duke *Charles* ſhall name in his laſt will and teſtament; but if he neglect to name any, then the State will chuſe two or three faithful governours, till the young Princes deſcended of Prince *John*, or of Duke *Guſtavus Adolphus* ſhall be of years, it being in the power of the State to chuſe which of them they ſhall think fitteſt for government. In the mean while, becauſe King *Sigiſmund* had falſified his oath, departed twice out of the Kingdome without leave, ſent Armies of aliens againſt his native Country, and hath refuſed to give any anſwer to their petition, therefore they diſ- 10
inherit him and his poſterity; they alſo order that Prince *John* ſhall have for his maintenance the Dutchy in *Othrogoth*, which once was poſſeſſed by Duke *Magnus*, except ſuch Territories as belong to Duke *Charles* by patent, inſtead of which Duke *John* ſhall have other lands of the ſame value, ſo that Duke *John* ſhall content himſelf with theſe, expecting nothing elſe in this Kingdome, except what he can claim by right of inheritance: It is alſo ordered that the Duke ſhall entertain none that goeth about to ſow diſcord between the Regal and Ducal families, but ſuch only as ſtudy the peace and welfare of both families ſo nearly linked in blood; withall they humbly beſeech Duke *Charles* for the preſent to accept of the Crown, as being moſt worthy thereof 20
by reaſon of his many good offices he hath done to this Kingdome, eſpecially in promoting the Proteſtant faith againſt all oppoſition, to the hazard of his life and eſtate; and this they make known by their Legats to foreign Princes, that Duke *Charles* uſed not any ſiniſtrous means to attain this Crown, but was again and again urged and preſſed by the joynt importunity of Peers and people to accept the ſame, and therefore they reſolve to admit of none other for their King, but Duke *Charles*, to whom they ſwear allegiance, and reſolve to give him all the rights and honours belonging to the Crown of *Sweden*, though he ſhould refuſe the ceremony of Coronation: They alſo enact, that after the death of Duke *Charles*, his ſonne *Guſtavus Adolphus* ſhall 30
ſucceed to the Crown, and after him his lawful heirs male ſucceſſively; but if Duke *Charles* his heirs male ſhould fail, then Duke *John* and his heirs ſhall ſucceed ſo long as that line ſhall remain; which *John* and his ſucceſſours ſhall ſwear never to make any league or union with King *Sigiſmund*, or his heirs, tending to their obtaining any foot again in the government of this Kingdome: *John* alſo muſt take heed that he never go about to promote Papacie, except he with his whole progeny will loſe their intereſt for ever in this Kingdome: They alſo adviſe Duke *Charles*, that during his ſonnes minority, he would nominate a faithful and prudent Governour and Tutor, who after his death might wiſely adminiſter the Kingdome, till 40
his ſonne attain the age of four and twenty, and that this governour ſhall be a *Swede*, and no alien.

After the States had ſworn fealty and allegiance to Duke *Charles* the ſon of *Guſtavus* Duke of *Suderman*, *Nericia*, and *Wermeland*; he undertook the government of the Kingdome, but without the name or title of King, and ſo continued till the year 1607. when by the joynt conſent of the States, he was crowned King of *Sweden*, to whom, and to his ſon *Guſtavus* after him, and to his ſucceſſours the inheritance of the Crown is confirmed by a ſolemn oath of Parliament. He had before this taken from the *Polonian* a great part of *Livonia*. Upon his ſecond ſon Duke *Charles Philip* they confer his fathers Dutchy 50
of *Suderman*, *Nericia* and *Wermeland*, with other ſpiritual and ſecular juriſdictions poſſeſſed by Duke *Charles* his father, before he attained the Crown; Duke *John* ſhall inherit the Dutchy of Duke *Magnus*: If Duke *Guſtavus Adolphus* dye without iſſue male, then his brother Duke *Charles Philip*, and the males of his body lawfully begotten, ſhall ſucceed to the Crown; if theſe fail, then Duke *John* and his heirs male ſhall inherit the Kingdome; in default

of

of these, he shall succeed that is next to them in blood; but if the whole *Gustavian* masculine race fail, then the females shall possesse the Crown in as ample manner as the males, and it shall be lawful for them to chuse their own husbands, so that they are not Papists, nor enemies to the State, nor strangers, but of some Noble family of *Sweden*, or some *German* Prince descended from *Gustavus*, of the *Augustan* faith; if the Queen shall do otherwise, she must look to be dethroned: they promise also to provide honourable maintenance for the other Royal or Ducal daughters, who must not marry without consent of Parliament; neither must any of the Kings or Dukes sons take to themselves wives of another Religion, or marry of their own head, without acquainting the States, and if any shall perswade or counsel them to do otherwise, or to change his Religion, he shall be guilty of High-treason; and whosoever refuses to imbrace the *Augustan* confession, shall forfeit his estate to the next of blood, and shall be banished the Kingdome: It is also enacted, that none of the Blood-royal of *Sweden* shall inherit this Crown, if he accepts of any forreign Kingdome, except he make his perpetual residence in the Kingdome of *Sweden*; seeing *Sigismunds* accepting of the Kingdome of *Poland*, and residing out of this his native Kingdome, hath occasioned so much mischief, as hath almost ruined it. *An. Christi.*

The Kingdome being established in King *Charles* and his heirs, he reigned four years, in which time he had war with the *Danes*; in this he fell into a disease which killed him, the 61. year of his life; he left behinde him two sons, *Gustavus Adolphus*, and *Carolus Philippus*, with one daughter; he had wars with the *Polonian* in *Livonia*, where he was defeated: He had better success before he was King, when he killed two thousand of *Sigismunds* Army, seised on his camp and money, and caused him to deliver up the Chancellour, and other incendiaries to punishment: nor was he successeful in his wars against the *Danes*, for *Christianus* 9. of *Denmark*, having sent a Herauld to *Charles* for restoring of the Danish ships he took, was slighted, and no answer at all returned; whereupon the *Dane* besiegeth *Calmaria* a strong Town in *Swethland*, and at last takes it by storm, in which men women and children were put to the sword by the inraged souldier; though the Town was taken, yet the Castle held out. In the interim the *Swedes* took *Christianopolis* from the *Danes* by a stratagem: for this Town had sent letters to the King for some Auxiliaries; these letters being intercepted by the *Swede*, a garrison is sent with Danish colours lately taken; so the Town is surprised, burnt, and most of the Inhabitants slain; the *Dane* takes divers ships from the *Swede*, and beats him again out of *Calmaria*, after he had retaken it: upon this the governour of the Castle surrenders that also to the *Dane*, where were a hundred and eight brasse Guns, and six war-ships, with all their furniture; divers other Castles also surrendred to the *Dane*, which so incensed *Charles*, that he sends a challenge to *Christianus* for a duel, which was rejected and laughed at by the *Dane*, wherefore King *Charles* with grief and age fell sick and died the next moneth; about the end of that year most of the Swedish ships were taken by the *Danes* at *Elsburg*, the other Key as it were of *Sweden*, and five months after the Castle is surrendred. 1611.

To *Charles* succeeded his son *Gustavus Adolphus*, he was crowned at four and twenty years of age; three years after he married with *Mary Eleonor* sister to *George William* Elector of *Brandenburg*, she bare him a daughter *Christiana* by name, who died the same year she was born in; then she bare him another daughter called also *Christiana*, who now reigns, she was declared heir to the Crown in the Diet at *Stockholm*; for Duke *Charles Philip* hereditary Prince of *Swethland*, and Duke of *Suderman*, died childlesse in *Livonia*. The *Danes* having taken *Calmaria* and *Elsburg*, the two chief Forts of *Sweden* upon the *Baltic*, and *Hesperian* sea, divers cruel battels being also fought, and the plague raging among them, a peace is concluded, in which the *Swede* was to leave 1617. 1627.

An-Christi. leave off the title and claim he had to *Lapponia*; he was also by Articles to pay to the Dane towards the charges of this war 12 Tuns of gold, till which be paid *Elsburg* shall be left in pawn. *Gustavus* after divers hot disputes with his uncle of *Poland*, whom many times he foiled, at last made an honourable Truce for six years; he took in *Newburg* and *Strasburg*, being aided by Leather-guns, invented then by one *Elias Tripus*; the *Polander* recovered again *Newburg*, who laid siege also to *Strasburg*, but was beaten off by *Oxenstern* the Chancellor; from *Meva* he was driven back by the King of Swede, notwithstanding the Polander was assisted by the Imperial forces, therefore he was forced to make peace with *Gustavus*, who restored to him *Strausburg*, *Dirsavia*, and *Fraeberg*, but retained what he took in *Livonia* and *Borussia*, some Towns were sequestred into the hands of *Brandenburg*; the two Kings promise mutual assistance to each other against any third party that shall make war upon either of them.

1628.

Gustavus being angry that the Emperour *Ferdinand* 2. had sent aid to the Polander against him in *Borussia*, and had rejected his Ambassadours at the Treaty of *Lubec*; he complains by his Legat to General *Walstein*, of the Army sent against him under *Arnheim*: *Walstein* answers the King scornfully, that because *Cæsar* had so many Armies, he was forced for want of other employment to send this to his friend the King of *Poland* against the Swede; besides *Gustavus* was earnestly invited by the banished Princes of *Germany*, and chiefly by the Protestants who daily complained of the wrongs they suffered, to come to their assistance; he was also jealous of some plots intended against his Kingdome, when Duke *Albert* of *Fridland*, in the Emperours right, arrogated to himself the title of High-admiral of the Ocean and Baltick seas, which title never any Emperour had before usurped; the pyracies also exercised upon the Swedish ships did much afflict and grieve him, therefore he complains to the Imperial Electors (who in right of the Empire were to take notice of the differences between Princes) but when he saw no redresse, nor hopes of peace, he sends abroad his Declarations, that all might take notice how he was necessitated to take Arms; therefore having prepared a Navy, he enters the

1630. Isle of *Rugia* on Midsummer-day, where as soon as he came on shore, he fell on his knees, giving thanks to God for so happy a beginning of his expedition, praying for a happy successe in his counsels and actions; and then presently he falls upon *Wolgast*, which he took, having driven thence the Imperialists; they who were in *Caminum* and *Julinum*, set fire on their Towns, and went their way; then he makes *Stetinum* the other Metropolis of *Pomerania* to side with him, shewing that he meant not to withdraw *Pomerania* from the Empire, or to bring it under the Scepter of Sweden, but rather to defend it against unjust violence and tyranny; upon this Duke *Bogislaus* enters into a league with him: this Country at that time was in a woful condition, being worse used by the souldiers that quartered amongst them, then by an open enemy. *Stargand* was seised upon by the Swedes in the night, who drove thence the Cæsarians. *Pasevalcum* being exhausted with contributions, and robbed of all her prime men, receives gladly two troops of Swedish horse or Dragoons; upon this *Gotzius* sends thither such a multitude of Imperial souldiers, that the unarmed and fearful Town was not able to resist, and so the Swedes saved themselves by flight, the Townsmen were massacred, the women abused, their wealth plundered, and the Town with the Churches, notwithstanding the intreaties of the Clergy, were consumed to ashes; this was in *September*: the *July* before, *Pecunum* received the same measure from the Imperialists, though it was not tainted with rebellion.

About this time a Diet is called at *Ratisbone*; the Protestant Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg* refuse to be there in person, but send their Ambassadours; the Popes Legats were there, by whom the league is renewed; and it is ordered that a great Army shall be raised to force the Princes to make

restitution

restitution of the Church-goods; the Emperor by his Edict complaining of the wrongs done him by the *Swede*, whom he never offended, in making an hostile invasion upon *Germany*, threatneth proscription of all those who shall any wayes assist him; he commands also that all shall be ready with men, money and provision against the *Swedes*: The King on the other side protests, that he desires nothing more then the peace of the Church, and that the Emperor would admit a Treaty to that purpose; but in the mean while he prosecutes the war, for he takes in the Castle of *Wolgasten*, and by that means got a great part of *Pomerania* to side with him; then he falls upon divers other places which made resistance, as *Tratsund*, *Barth*, and the Castle of *Damgart*, which he took by storm, and put the Garrison to the sword; upon this *Ribbenitza* a Town in the Dutchy of *Megapolis* on the confines of *Pomerania*, opened her gates to him: then the King by his Edict wisheth the *Megapolitans* to forsake the *Fridlanders*, and to receive again their lawful Dukes *Adolphus Frederick*, and *John Albert*, unjustly driven out, otherwayes he will proceed against them as Rebels with fire and sword, this his demand being grounded on Justice, Consanguinity and Religion: The same Edict he sends to *Rostock* three miles off, but there he was prevented by a thousand Imperial horse, who desiring leave to passe through the City staid there, and seised on it for the Duke of *Fridland*, and furnished it with all kinde of provision; but *Francis Charles* Duke of *Lavenberg*, having raised some forces about *Albis*, took in *Bousenburg*, *Winsheim* and other places for the *Swede*; but the sudden comming of *Remacrus* Colonel of a thousand Imperialists, made him retreat to *Raceburg*, where being denied entrance into the Castle, is taken prisoner by Count *Tappenheim*, who pursued him with some troops. *Colberg* mean while, a Sea-port in *Pomerania*, is besieged by the *Swedes*; *Torquatus* General of the Cæsarian forces in those parts did what he could to raise the siege, which continued all that bitter Winter till the end of *February*, during which time there was great execution on both sides, but at last the King took it by *Gustavus Horn*, and put to flight the Imperialists: in the interim the Diocesse of *Magdeburg* which *Christian William* governour thereof had recovered, is again invaded by the Imperialists, who with their multitudes over-ran many places thereabouts, and at length laid siege to *Magdeburg* Metropolis of *Saxony*; thither the King sent *Theodoricus Falkenberg* to assist the governour; all the provision and Arms that were in *Alensleb* lately taken, were transported to *Magdeburg*; but being besieged by *Pappenhem*, he is forced to give up the Town, who with his souldiers swear never to bear Arms thenceforth against the Emperor. *An. Christi.*

The ruine of this City was presaged by the fall of one of the Towers of S. *Katharines* Church, and shortly after, *Novem.* 26. by the overthrow of the other Tower caused by a violent wind; about the same time the Tower of S. *Johns* Church fell, and with its weight beat down the roof of the Church; the same ruine befel the Churches of S. *Ann*, *Gertrudis*, and *Sudenburg*; the arched Gallery or Cloyster from the Bishops Palace to the Cathedral Church fell down at the same time; five Wind-mils, and six Water-mils were overthrown by the winds, besides great hurt done to divers houses: Thus God doth use to shew his sword before he strikes, that he may excite us to repentance, prepare us with patience, or make us inexcusable if we slight his warnings. *Germany* at this time was in a sad condition, being torn in peeces by so many Armies. About the end of this year, the King of *Swede* had twelve thousand horse, and four and thirty thousand foot, his Army then consisted of *Germans*, *Swedes*, *Finlanders*, besides three Troops of *Laplanders* who in the midst of Winter came to him in skins, these were all Archers; the Emperors Armies were far more numerous, but lesser disciplined, and more rapacious. *George* Elector of *Brandeburg*, being pressed on the one side by the Emperor, 1630.

An. Christi. on the other by the King who married his sister, within his Provinces molested by theeves and robbers, without affrighted with the Northern guests who sought to quarter with him; to save his Country from ruine, he commands his subjects to be in Arms, and to seise upon all high-way men, though in souldiers apparrel. On Christmasse-day the same year, the King takes by storm *Griffenhage* of *Pomerania*, so that this Country is now cleared from the Imperialists, who were all killed or fled, and forced to leave their plunderings behinde them: the King upon this giveth solemne thanks to God at *Stetin*, and causeth his Army in their camp to do the like, to whom he prescribed certain forms of prayer, all praising God for this former years succesſe.

1631. About the beginning of the next year, *Lewis* 13. of *France* sends *Hercules de Charnace* Ambassador, to take up the difference between the Kings of *Poland* and *Swede*, and to make a league of five years between *France* and *Swethland*, for defence of the Ocean and Baltick-seas, for restitution of the afflicted and banished Princes of *Germany*, and for demolishing the Forts which have been built among the *Grisons* since the beginning of this *German* war; for this end the *Swede* shall maintain thirty thousand foot, and six thousand horse, towards the charges of which the *French* will pay him yearly forty thousand Imperials; that levies of men shall be permitted in either Kingdome, and that the Religion in *Germany* shall be exercised as hitherto it was by the Imperial Edicts; King *Charles* also of *Britain* sends some Forces under the conduct of Marquesse *Hamilton* into *Pomerania*. About this time the charge of the Imperial Army is taken from *Albert* Duke of *Fridland*, because the Catholick Princes did suspect him, and is conferred upon Count *Tilly*, who is made Generalissimo of all, both Cæsarian and confederate Armies; he presently views the Armies, reforms the Military discipline now grown loose, buyes up all kinde of provision, and furnisheth such places as he found weak with Men and Arms: the King sends some Regiments to *Gustavus Horne* for taking in of *Landsberg*, hee marcheth himself with sixteen thousand to *Demmin*, and in his way takes upon surrender *New-Brandenburg*, with some Castles: *Treptovia* is forsaken by the Imperialists: *Malchin* is surrendred to the *Swedes*. About the midst of *February*, *Demmin* is besieged, seated in the confines of *Merchlenberg*; so is *Colberg* in *Pomerania*, and *Landsberg* in *Merchia*, all three at the same time by the Kings Forces: *Demmin* not being able to hold out, is surrendred by the Governour with the Castle, where was good store of ordnance and victuals; the Governour with the Garrison is permitted to march whither they will. About the end of *February*, *Colberg* yeeldeth, the Governour with nine companies of foot, and six of horse, have leave to march away, but without their colours, to *Landsberg*; in *Colberg* was great store of Ammunition, but no victuals, so that the Garrison was forced by famine to yeeld; five dayes after the surrender, some Forces were comming with provision to relieve the Towne, these narrowly escaped from being taken by the *Swedes*: *Landsberg* held out the siege till the end of *April*. A strange thing fell out at *Rostock*; for one *Karmeier* a Townsman killed *Hatzfield* the Governour with a blow of an axe in the neck, affirming he was induced thereto by an Angel; neither would he acknowledge any fault he had done in this, though he was tortured with divers torments to death.

Count *Tilly*, to retaliate these losses, takes *New-Brandeburg* by storm, and puts the Garrison to the sword; he takes *Kniphus* the Governour with his wife and daughters prisoners; in the very Church was the Consul with the Townsmen murthered, nine Colours were taken, the Town exposed to plunder, and then forsaken; he lost in this siege and storm about two thousand of his men: thence *Tilly* returnes to *Magdeburg*, because hee could

could not set upon the King being intrenched; in his march he lost some of his men by the Swedish horse, which took *Liebenwald* and *New-Brandeburg* disarmed by the *Tillians*; the *Magdeburgers* in *Tillys* absence had made some excursions, and furnished their City with Arms and Victuals; but when he returned about the end of *March*, they were quickly driven out of their works which they had made without the Town, therefore finding they were not strong enough to oppose *Tilly's* forces, they set fire on *Sudenburg*, and the new City, which were their Suburbs; mean while the Swedish King besiegeth *Francofurt* upon the river *Viadrus*, whose Suburbs also the Garrison burned down, but the King unexpectedly taketh the City by force upon Palmsunday, where he found much provision and wealth, two thousand Imperialists were here killed, and eight hundred taken prisoners, *Scaumburg*, *Tieffenbath*, and *Monticaculus* the chief Commanders, with the common souldiers fled; the City was so miserably plundered, that the enemy was sorry to see it, who with much ado made the souldiers give off; seventeen dayes after, *Landsberg* is surrendred to the King, five and twenty companies of foot, and twelve of horse, went out with their colours flying: *Silesia* is now laid open to the Swedish souldiery; *Old-Brandeburg* about the end of *April* is forsaken by the *Tillians*, the Elector of *Brandeburg* is summoned by the King to deliver up the two chief holds of his Electorate *Gustrinum* and *Spandavia* to the *Swede*, who promiseth to restore them as soon as he shall raise the siege from *Magdeburg*; to this the Elector would not assent till he saw *Berlinum* besieged, and then he was content to give up *Spandavia*, where the Garrison took the oath of Allegiance to both Princes; the Elector of *Saxony* *John George* is desired by the King to let him have free passage through his Country, and to joyn his forces with him in raising the siege from *Magdeburg*; the Elector would yeeld to neith demand, fearing to make his Country the seat of warre, which hitherto had been quiet, nor did he think it either safe or warrantable to maintain the *Magdeburgers* against the Emperor, though they complained of the wrongs offered them by *Cæsar*, notwithstanding they shewed all obedience to him; therefore now they were in hope to be assisted by their own Prince, and the Swedish victorious Army, but their security deceived them, for whilst the King was doubting whether he might safely relieve the *Magdeburgers* or not, Count *Pappenhem* comes with more forces to the siege; if the Town had foreseen this, they would have strengthened their Garrison with more men, for now they had not above two thousand foot that were sound, and two hundred and fifty horse, yet they made divers sallies out of the Town, even three in one day, to the losse of the besiegers: *Tilly* summons them to surrender, or else they should look for no mercy; their answer was, that they would submit if so be they could have liberty to send to the Electors and confederate Cities for their advice herein; mean while the Imperialists draw nearer with their works to the City, and prepare to storm; at the first the Townsmen and Garrison stoutly beat them off, but their power failing them, they could make no use of their great Guns: the Cæsarians on the tenth of *May*, the fatal day of that City, perceiving the works towards the new Town, low, and the watch asleep, who did not think the enemy would have stormed so great a Town; that day, being already past seven of the clock, resolve to fall first on there; then was the Bishop with *Falkenberg* and the Senate in the Councel-house, conferring about sending of a Trumpeter to *Tilly*, who proffered to save the Town, and procure their pardon, if they would deliver up their Bishop and Ministers to him, and receive thirty Roman Catholick Doctors, pay a hundred thousand Dollers, and admit a garrison; but this was rejected, whereupon *Pappenhem* with his forces falls upon that part of the works which was weakest; his word was *Jesus Maria*, their mark or badge a white-ribbon about the arm; in the very first encounter, *Falkenberg* who came to make

An. Christi.

An. Christi. good that place which *Pappenhem* had assaulted, was slain, and so that part of the City is lost; the Garrison and Townsmen fought stoutly so long as they were able, till the Cæsarians to quiet them set the City on fire, which proved as prejudicial to the besiegers, who thereby lost their plunder, as to the Townsmen who lost their habitations; for the fire was so violent by reason of the wind, that this great and stately City was in the space of four and twenty hours burnt down to the ground, in which six Parish Churches were consumed in the same fire, all the Churches, streets and high-wayes were covered with dead bodies, in the Cathedral of *S. Catherine* were found three and fifty murthered, the Governour being wounded in his head and thigh is carried away prisoner, with most of the chief men and Ministers; the barbarous souldier spares neither sex nor age, abusing even young girles to death; yet the High-church, and the Monastery of *S. Mary* were saved from the fire, and so were 139. houses, but all the inhabitants were either slain or taken, the number of the slain is not certain, but it is reported that two and twenty thousand were flung into the river *Albis* which flows by the City; six hundred Townsmen were chained, though they were able to ransome themselves; some made an escape by a sudden fire in the enemies camp, a great many being stript of all were forced to beg, most of the Ministers were preserved and provided for by their Fellow-protestants; the destruction of this City (which had now stood, and been a Metropolitan about seven hundred years since *Otho* the first, who fenced, adorned, and honoured it with this dignity) was presaged by a Throne set in *Cassiopæa*, by sounds in the air like the discharging of Ordnance, by strange obscurity in the air, by the fall of divers Towers, and by a monstrous birth which was taken out of the dead mother, the childs head was covered with a peece of flesh like a helmet which could be easily taken off, he was cloathed with a skin like a souldiers jacquet, with round kernels like bullets in it, he had also boots on his legs: God by this would let us see, that as the birth of this Monster was the death of the mother, so that Town or Country which breeds armed souldiers within them, are at last destroyed by them.

Chap. X.

The prosecution of the Swedish *History under* Gustavus, *from* 1631. *till the midst of* 1633.

THe same day that *Magdeburg* was buried in her own ashes, the Cæsarians burnt down the bridge of *Dessavia*, with the Fort joyning to it, to hinder the *Swedes* passage that way, who were much perplexed for the estate of that City which they neglected to relieve, the King being busie upon a Treaty with the two Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg*, whose confederacie he desired; a great part of his Army took up their quarters about *Crosna* and *Glogove* in *Silesia*: *Gustavus Horn* was raising new forces in *Marchia*, therefore *Spandavia* is again demanded by the King, *Custrinum* is delivered up to him; upon *Marchia* is laid a monthly taxe of thirty Dollers towards the charges of the war. In *June* news was brought to the King that *Ghryphiswald* which he meant to take in, was already subdued by the *Swedish* horse who were riding up and down the Country, about the Town, for fodder: *Perusius* the governour, Knight of the Golden-fleece, hearing some Musquets shot off, runs out to know what the matter was, and was suddenly killed with a Musquet bullet, not thinking he had been so near the enemy; upon this the Town is presently besieged by the *Swedes*, who send a summons to the Townsmen and Garrison to surrender; the Souldiers within, though they had lost their Captain, yet venture to sally out upon the enemy, but are beat back again into

into the Town, who despairing of any succour, resolve to preserve themselves; therefore *June* 16. they deliver up the Town to the Swedes, who found in it great store of military provision. So now the Imperialists are quite driven out of *Pomerania*. *An. Christi.*

This Country being now secured, the Swedes march into *Marchia*, where they seise upon *Werbena*, a place fit for their encamping, and for all sorts of provision. The Imperialists under *Gotzius* invade the Town *Cotbus* in the dark which they take and plunder. *Tilly*'s Army quarters at *Mansfield*, and plunders the neighbour country of *Thuringia*. The Elector of *Saxony* cals a Diet at *Lipsick*, of both the Saxonies, *Marchia*, *Hassia*, *Franconia*, & *Suevia*, wherein was proposed, what was the best and next expedient for restoring peace into *Germany*: There were present the Legats of the two Dukes of *Megapolis*, *Adolphus Frederick*, and *John Albertus*, whom *Cæsar* had driven out of their ancient possessions; these raised an Army, and being assisted by the Swedes, resolve to retake their possessions again. *Albert* took in *Severin*, *Adolphus Frederick Butzovium* a Bishops seat being forsaken by the *VVallensteinians* who as they were going to *Rostoch* with their booty, were stript of all. The King himself did accompany the two Dukes his kinsmen, in great state to *Gustrovia*, where he gave them possession of their ancient inheritance: thence he marcheth to *Magdenberg*, and by the way seiseth on *Tangermund*; then he pitches his Camp neer *Werben*, and gives charge to some Commanders to take in *Haverberg*, and resolves to be revenged for the losse of *Magdenberg*, with all the strength he hath; in the mean time, Queen *Maria Elenor* arrives at *Wolgast* with some young souldiers out of Swethland; Marquesse *Hambleton*, and *Alexander Lesly* bring eight hundred Scots and English into *Pomerania*. At *Lipsick* it is ordered that the Imperial Army, which made but a prey of Germany, should not be admitted within any of their Towns, Castles, or Towers; and withall, they resolve not to part with any of the Church-lands now in possession of the Evangelical Princes, because the Pope claimed them not by way of justce and law, but by violence and the sword; besides, it was a businesse to be decided in a full Diet of Princes, and not by the Emperour alone; therefore, *VVilliam* Lantgrave of *Hassia* raiseth an forces for the defence of his borders: to hinder this levy, *Tilly* hastneth to *Erford*, which he so affrighted, that the town presently openeth the gates to him; then he draws neerer to the borders of *Cattie* to hinder the raising of the *Hassians*; but *Pappenhem*, who did yet remain about *Magdeburg*, got him to divert his army elsewhere, for the King had marched over old Marchia, where he took divers Towns, and was come to *VVolmarstad* to seise upon the strengths of *Magdenburg*, but that he was kept off by a greater power.

Tilly perceiving there was no other way but with his whole Army to fall upon the King, sends a part of his Horse before, he follows after with the body of his Army; *Gustavus* having intelligence of his march, and not being able to encounter with so vast an Army, intends to weaken some part of it; therefore he sends *Rheingravius*, with some other Cornets of Horse, who fell upon and discomfited three Imperial regiments, and return with rich booty; but *Charls Ludovick* the Palatine, who in this war served under the King, was shot, to the said Kings great grief. *Tilly*, to recover his losse, began to draw neer the Swedish Camp, but could not draw the King to fight; yet for three dayes together there was discharging of Ordinance, and divers sharp velitations: at last, *Tilly* recedes with some losse. In *Mansfield*, *Eggo Furstenbergius* with his Italian forces joyns himself to *Tilly*; he compels *Suevia*, and *Franconia*, to renounce the League of *Lipsic*, and to pay tribute to the Emperour. The Swedish Kings army is increased by the addition of these forces under *Horn* and *Tottus*: He gives two regiments to *William* the Lantgrave for *Hassia*, which was courted by the Imperialists to side with them. But to my purpose; at *Franckfort* on the *Main* an assembly was held of both parties for an accommodation, which proved

An. Christi. proved fruitleſſe. *Tilly* to incourage his drooping ſouldiers, fals upon the Duke of *Saxony*, whoſe aſſiſtance he demands, and requires alſo an abolition of the decrees of *Lipſick*; this being denied by the Duke, *Tilly* fals upon *Meresburg*, ſets *Frebrug* on fire, and plunders *Miſnia* far and neer, to the undoing of the inhabitants. The Elector accuſeth *Tilly* for theſe wrongs; ſhewing how he had violated the Imperial Laws: he commemorates alſo his good ſervices to the Emperour, and manifeſts that he hath been faithfull to him hitherto in every thing that belonged to him as Emperor, who therefore ought not to do any thing contrary to juſtice and his oath, which if he doe, he ſhall not eſcape the hand of a revenging God; but when the Duke ſaw that this way he could not prevaile, he makes a firm league with the King of *Sweden*, and lets him enter his provinces; he openeth the gates *Wittenberg* for him about the beginning of *September*: The Elector of *Brandeberg* having his Country exhauſted with contributions and plunders, promiſeth to aid him with all the proviſion and money he can raiſe; in this interim *Tilly* loſes no time, but encompaſſes *Lipſick* waſting all the Country about it, and ſummons the City to open the gates to him; which returned anſwer, they could not without the conſent of their Prince; whereupon *Tilly* prepares to ſtorm, the Townſmen burn down their Suburbs, and make all things ready for defence: but the freſh example of *Magdeburgs* deſtruction, which was threatned to *Lipſick*, ſo terrified them, that they yeelded; the publique Faith is given to preſerve Religion and the Commonwealth; new garriſons are put in the City and Caſtle, the Electoral garriſon is diſcharged: But Fortune which hitherto fawned upon *Tilly*, begins now to frown, for the *Saxon* perceiving that he had loſt a great part of his juriſdiction, held it needfull for him to fight; for he thought with himſelf that if *Saxony*, *Thuringia*, and *Miſnia* ſhould maintain three Armies all the Winter, they ſhould be undone; he knew his cauſe was juſt, and reſolves to rely on Gods Providence.

But the King thought it not ſafe to hazard upon one battel two Electorats, nor to venture the new and raw ſouldiers of *Saxony* againſt the old and beaten Imperial Troops; therefore held it better to procraſtinate: yet at laſt, being overcome by the Dukes importunity, prepares to fight, and firſt having ſolemnly called upon God in his prayer, he exhorts his Souldiers to piety and fortitude; his word was (God with us) his bage or mark, a green bough faſtned in their Helmets; he undertakes the leading of the right wing himſelf, the charge of the left, he commits to the Duke; neer *Podelvitza* a Village, foure miles from *Lipſick*, is the place deſigned for the Battle; the Imperialiſts took the advantage of the ground, ſun and wind, which the Sweds by degrees gained of them by wheeling about; the King mingled his Horſe and Musketiers ſo, that they galled the *Ceſarians* and beat them off; the Swediſh left-Wing, conſiſting moſt of the new levied forces of *Saxony*, began to give ground, and to put *Tilly* in hope of victory; but they were opportunely aided by *Horns* foot, which lay in ambuſh in a little wood, that upon the encouragement of *Axruheim* the fight is renewed, and the *Ceſarian* horſe put to flight, ſo that in a ſhort time, the whole Army was routed: the night comming on, and the ayre being obſcured with duſt, and the ſmoak of powder, made the king forbear purſuing of the enemy, fearing leaſt there might be ſome treachery or ambuſh, therefore reſolves the next day to fight again; but when the morning came, they found the enemy was totally defeated, by his Ordnance, bag, and baggage left behinde, there were found about fifteen thouſand ſlain body's; *Tilly* himſelf was wounded, both Armies were almoſt equall in number, in all ſixty thouſand; the moſt of *Tilly's* force were old ſouldiers. This victory was prefaged by a white-Dove that lighted upon one of the Saxon colours: ſome report that before the fight, water was turned into blood at *Hall* and *Merſeburg*; above one hundred Imperial Colours were taken; *Tilly* ſhot with a Bullet, which onely bruiſed his skin, but could not peirce it, being made impenitrable

penitrable, as the Chyrurgion thought, by diabolical art; he escaped, not without great pain of his bruise, to *Hanelia*. The King seised presently after this upon divers towns, and the Duke upon *Lipsick*, who gave publique thanks to God for recovering so soon again his lost territories: then it was agreed, that the King should march into upper Germany, the Duke into *Silesia* and *Behemia*. *An. Christi.*

The King in his march takes in divers Towns and Castles, as *Swinfurt*, *Herbipolis*, forsaken by the Bishop, with the Tower well furnished with all things; the garrison were all killed for resisting so long, but the women by the Kings Proclamation were preserved both from death and abuse: the Bishop of *Bamberg* out of fear, shakes of his catholique confederacy, and bindes himself by oath to the King, and to keep off plundring pays a great summe of money: divers other places also were taken by the Swedes and Hassians, most towns of *Francony* sware allegiance to the King, who permitted to the subjects liberty of Conscience. In *November* also *Hanovia* is taken in for the King by *Christopher Haubaldus*. The *Cesarian* forces of lower Saxony are much dejected upon the report of the *Lipsick* victory; *Rostock* is delivered up to the *Megapolitans*; there were five hundred horse, and fourteen foot companies, which made their peace, and marched away: *VViſmaria* held out a while, and made some sallies upon the Swedes; but at last, on St. *Thomas* day, *Crabwinges* the governour was forced to surrender, who marched out with three thousand souldiers towards *Gryphiswald*, divers of which swear allegiance to the Swede. The Imperialists every where take their flight, supposing *Tilly* had been dead of his wounds, of whom there was no news a long time; at length it is reported, that he was recovered, and had raised a new Army. At *Rotwnberg* another battel is fought, in which the Imperialists are again worsted; hereupon divers other towns submit to the Swedes; even *Frankfort*, famous for its Mart, and the Emperours Inauguration, opened her gates for the Swedish Army to passe. Upon the uniting of the *Hassian* forces, divers other places surrender, the Bishops of *Mentz* and *VVorms*, with *Anshelm*, *Casimire*, retire to *Colen*. About the 7 of *December* the King sends his army over the *Rhene*; five hundred of the first that got over, set upon fourteen troops of Spanish horse and chased them, which made the King thank God for the danger his men had escaped: Having passed the *Rhene*, he takes in *Oppenhem*; *Stenio* is forsook by the *Spaniards*, and *VVorms* by the *Lorrenois*. *Mentz* after a fierce storm for divers dayes is surrendred to the King, with the Tower and Fortifications, *December* 23. where he kept his Christmasse with great solemnity, and heard a Sermon in the Castle-Church: many other towns also shortly after the surrender of *Mentz*, submitted to the King, whose victorious Army over-run almost all *Germany* from the Baltick Sea to *Mentz* in one year; in which also fell out a great Earthquake in the kingdome of *Naples*, the eruption of *Vesuvius*, flinging great stones twenty miles off, and the ruine of the towers on the Jesuits Church in *Vienna* by the wind, even in the Emperours presence.

The next year, Ambassadours are sent to the Swedish king, from *France*, *England*, and *Ragotzius* the new Prince of *Transilvania*; the *French* Embassie was for a truce between the *Swede* and *Maximilian* Duke of *Bavaria*, with the Catholick confederats, which was granted; for these made shew, as if they meant to stand neuters; but Pope *Urban* was against this neutrality, therefore he raiseth great sums of money upon the Clergy of *Italy*, which he sent to the Emperour, and makes a league between the Elector of *Bavaria* and the German Prelats. What the English Embassie was, we know not; but shortly after *Frederick* the fifth, Palsgrave, was furnished with Gold out of *England*, and Souldiers out of *Holland* for the recovering of his Patrimony; for which end, he joyns himself with *Gustavus*. *Ragotzius* had discovered a plot intended against him by the *Cesarians*, which made him fall off and to seek occasion of excursion upon *Hungary* and *Silesia*, if he could have found any aide from the confederate

An. Christi. federate Protestants. In *Bohemia*, the *Saxon* Army under *Arnhem* takes *Prague* and divers other Towns thereabout; the Elector himself repaires thither and sets up again the Protestant religion; the heads of those which were set upon the bridge at *Prague*, he caused to be taken down, and decently buried; the banished *Bohemians* return to their homes again, and great joy every where there was, but of short continuance; for *Albert VVallensten* Duke of *Fridland*, whom the Emperour had laid aside upon the Petition of the confederate Catholiques, is now made Generalissimo, and suddenly furnished with a great Army; *Jacobus Galla* and Count *Saltzen* joyn their forces with him, waste and plunder all the Country about *Prague*, which caused great dearth and scarcity of Victuals: so sudden a fear seised on *Bohemia* and *Silesia*, that both Countries became a prey to the Imperialists, who could not for the Snow doe any great hurt in *Misnia*: the cold winter could not refrigerate the souldiers courage; the *Swediss* forces brak in upon *Alsatia*; the *Cæsarians* plunder the country about *Strasburg*, whom a party of Horse from the City defeated and plundered; the fear of the conquerour over-ran the Dukedome of *VVirtenberg*, and the Marquisat of *Bada*: the Imperialists are killed and chased every where; *Frankindal* in the Lower Palatinate is besieged, and sundry other places are taken by the Swedes.

In lower Saxony, the people rise against the Romanists. *John Frederick* storming that he should have the title of Archbishop of *Breme*, and all the revenews of his Diocesse to be taken from him by the *Cæsarians*, raiseth some forces, fals upon *Verda* and *Burg* which he took, and shortly after he lost, and again recovered them; so miserably were those places tossed to and fro, like tennis-bals. *Pappenhem* also raiseth new forces, and takes in divers places. The ruines of *Magdeburg* are left to the Swedes, who place a garrison there: many parts of *Germany* are laid waste by the rapacious souldiers on both sides, many towns taken and retaken; A peace in the mean while is in agitation at *Torgave*, but to no purpose: the Duke of *Saxonies* daughter is betrothed to *Christianus* 5. Prince of *Denmark*; her eldest sister was married to the Lantgrave of *Hessen*; and *Mary* the second, to the Duke of *Holsatia*: *Ulricus* brother to this *Christianus* the second, conducted a regiment to the assistance of the Electoral provinces. *Tilly* is now again recruited, and marcheth towards *Bavaria*. *Noriberg* had received within their gates five troopes of Protestants, *Ulm* also joyns with the Swede: at *Ausburg Tilly* is furnished with Ammunition, Victuals and Money, by which he is made able to rage with fire and sword upon *Northgavia*, and the higher Palatinate. *Horn* takes *Bamburg*, the Bishop escapes to *Bavaria*, thither *Tilly* marcheth: whereupon *Horn* withdraws his forces in the night, but not without some losse to the *Tillians*, and marcheth to *Sueinfurt*; whither also the King comes with his whole Army, and is royally entertainted at *Noriberg*: His comming hither made *Tilly* remove back to the upper *Palatinate*, wasting all the Countryes and Towns through which he marched. The King goeth to the *Danow*, and taketh by storm *Donaverd*; *Tilly* follows him at the heels, and takes the strong Tower *Raina* on the river *Lycus*, over which the King makes a bridge: the Tillians took possession of a wood hard by, whence they discharged their great Ordnance on the Swedes, to hinder their making of the bridge; but they were so intrenched, that they did more hurt then received; for in letting play their Cannon against the wood, so tore the Trees, that the boughs and splinters of them spoiled many of the enemy; so that *Tilly* received a hurt in the thigh, and *Altringer* in the head; therefore in the night, they flie to *Newburg* and *Ingoldstad*, having lost one thousand men.

The King having finished the bridge, and transported his Army, sent a party to take possession of *Newburg*, forsaken by *Maximilian* of *Bavaria* and *Tilly*. Then summons *Auspurg* to open their gates, where were eighteen Companies of foot, and two of horse, placed there by *Cæsar* and the *Bavarian*, to keep

under

under the Proteſtants, whom they had diſarmed, and forced to leave off their publike exerciſes; the Citizens deſire the King to propoſe honourable tearms to the Garriſon, otherwayes it was not in their power to force them, nor to open their gates to him; four dayes after, Articles being concluded between the King and the Garriſon, they march away with bag and baggage, with their Arms and Colours flying: As ſoon as the King had entred, he removes all the Pontifician Magiſtrates, and commits the government of the City to the Proteſtants, having taken of them the oath of allegiance: from thence he marcheth towards *Ingolſtad*, where *Tilly* lay ſick, and by the way takes in ſome Towns: mean while the *Danes* and *Swedes* were like to break out into an open war, by reaſon of ſome inſolencies committed by ſome Swediſh ſouldiers in *Holſatia*, as well upon the Kings as the Dukes ſubjects; but the Swediſh Commanders making it appear, that theſe wrongs were offered by ſome private ſouldiers without the knowledge of their Captains, or of the King, the former league between theſe two Crowns was renewed by their Ambaſſadors. In lower *Saxony*, *Tottus* the Kings Lieutenant there took in *Buxtehud*, and intended to fall upon *Stada*, but that he was hindred by *Pappenhem*, who with his flying Army over-runs all *Saxony* and *Weſtphalia*, with the Dioceſſe of *Breme*, waſting all with fire and ſword, who having received ſome oppoſition and loſſe by *Tottus*, returns into higher *Germany*: *Tottus* is ſent for by the King. *Arnheim* General of the Electoral Armies in higher *Germany*, was almoſt intrapped by *Wallenſten*, under pretence of making peace; for he had recovered *Prague* about the beginning of *May*, whence he diſmiſſed the garriſon with their ſwords by their ſides, being two and twenty companies of foot, and two troops of horſe, they marched to *Leutmeritz* where the ſtrength of the *Saxon* Army lay; but if *Arnheim* had not departed the ſooner thence, he had been encompaſſed by Duke *Fridlands* Army, therefore he eſcapes over the bridge of *Leutmeritz* in the night, and comes to *Pirna*. *An. Chriſti.*

Whilſt theſe doings were at *Albis*, there was much action upon the *Danow* between the Swediſh King, and the Elector of *Bavaria*, who having left *Tilly* at *Ingolſtad*, cunningly encompaſſeth *Ratisbone*: he makes ſhew of muſtering one of the Garriſon troops without the gate; but whilſt the Citizens were going to Church, that Garriſon ſeiſed on the gate, and ſuddenly nine troops of horſe enter the Town, who plundered the Townſmen of their beſt goods and money: the *Bavarian* afterward made this his chief ſeat; in the interim Count *Tilly* dieth at *Ingolſtad* of the wound he received at *Lycus*: the King begins to lay ſiege to *Ingolſtad*, but as he was viewing of the works, his white horſe was ſhot under him; *Chriſtopher Durlacenus*, a Marqueſſe, was killed with a bullet, and one of the Kings chief Commanders was mortally wounded, wherefore the *Swedes* held it beſt to give off their enterpriſe, ſo they march from thence to *Monachium*, the *Bavarians* chief ſeat, which with ſome other Towns ſubmitted to the *Swede*; in *Monachium* were found a hundered and forty braſſe Ordnance, and other great Guns, in one of which were hid thirty thouſand Crowns; the Country people were ſo inraged againſt the *Swedes*, that they cut off the noſes and ears of divers ſtraglers, and killed many of them; the Boors riſe in great numbers and kill divers garriſons, but they were quickly ſuppreſſed by the ſouldiers, and their chief incendiaries put to death: but when the King underſtood that the *Ratisbonians* made divers excurſions, and had taken *Weiſſenburg*, he leaves *Bavaria*, and returns to *Donaverd*, into which he puts a ſtrong garriſon, the like he did in *Ausburg* and *Raina*. And now the Imperialiſts being ſtrong, all *Germany* is in a flame; *Oſſa* the Emperors Lieutenant rageth with fire and ſword through *Alſatia*, ſome Towns he burns down to the ground; *Spire* is taken, and plundered: *Oxenſtern* at *Newſtad* falls upon a party of the Cæſarians, from whom he took three colours and ſome part of their plunder; Duke *Fridland* having taken in *Egra*

An. Christi. and *Ellenbog*, prepares to unite his forces with the *Bavarians*; *Pappenhem* having wasted the borders of *Hassia*, threatens *Thuringia*; *Strasburg* which now sided with the *Swede*, sends to King *Gustavus* three troops of horse, and six hundred Musquetiers: the *Bavarian* having left a garrison in *Ratisbone*, marcheth with an hundred thirty four Cornets of horse, and eight and fifty companies of foot, which he joyned to the *Walestine* forces; this made the King, being now near *Noriberg*, to intrench, and to send for all his dispersed forces; in the mean time *Tupatelius* one of the Swedish Colonels was intercepted by the *Wallasten* forces, who took him prisoner, and cut in peeces his whole Regiment, at which the King grieved exceedingly; at length in *July*, upon the drawing near of both Armies, divers skirmishes and light encounters were made, neither of the Commanders being willing to hazard the whole Army; *Fridland* endeavoured to keep off provision from the *Swedes*, but the Swedish Auxiliaries who were comming to joyn with their main body intercepted the Cæsarian provisions.

About the end of *July*, the Cæsarians had laid up great store of corn and other provision in *Freistad*, which when the King knew by a Captain whom he took prisoner, he sends *Tupatelius* lately dismissed by *Wallestine* with some Dragoons thither, he breaking open the gates with petards, enters the town in the night, burnt all the corn, and drove away the cattel; the King comming to aid *Tupatelius* with more forces, makes an ambush for the Cæsarians who were comming to revenge their losses, out of which he suddenly sallies, and put the enemy to flight, having killed divers. About the midst of *August*, the King of *Sweden* was fifty thousand strong, so that they dared the Cæsarians who were entrenched; after the Armies had thundered three dayes together with their ordnance against each other, the *Wallestenians* began to march away; the King therefore *August* 24. falls upon the Imperialists, all that day they fought till the night parted them; of the Imperialists were slain a thousand, of the *Swedes* seven hundred: *Fridlands* own horse was shot under him: at last about the eight of *September*, *Gustavus* for want of victuals was forced to rise first and march away to *Newstad*; at *Noriberg* were left three hundred horse and eight Regiments of foot: *Fridland* being out of hope to recover *Noriberg*, sets fire on the neighbouring villages, and marcheth to *Forcheim*, whose rear was set upon by the garrison of *Noriberg*.

Out of the Diocesse of *Trevers* issueth a new Army, which *Ossa* and *Monticuculus* joyn to their own forces, with these they waste and spoil all the Country about, but they were resisted by *Horne*, who pursues them into upper *Alsatia*, where he took *Benfeld* and other places; the Duke of *Saxonies* forces had been sent away, some to *Silesia*, others to the Swedish camp: hereupon *Holkius* one of the Cæsarian commanders, with 8000. resolute men, falls with fire and sword upon *Saxony*, *Misnia* and *Naristi*, burning and plundring as far as *Dresda* the Dukes seat; he exacteth great sums of money from the Town of *Anneberg*, and puts a garrison in *Zuiccavia*; *Walstein* divides his Army, and sends the *Bavarian* forces into *Bavaria*, *Gallas* with a party is sent into *Bohemia*, and *Franconia Walstein* retains to himself; *Gallas* subdues all the places he went through to the Emperor, and wastes *Noricum*; *Walstein* takes in *Columbac* and *Coburg*, but the Castle held out for the Duke of *Saxony*: the King also divides his Army, a part whereof he sends to attend the motions of *Fridland*: *Reina* was delivered up to the *Bavarians* by *Mutsefall* the Swedish governour, wherefore by the Kings command he loseth his head, and the Town is retaken by the *Swedes* in *October*; *Bernhard* of *Vinaria* falls suddenly on the Cæsarian Croats, defeats them, and takes ten colours from them, which made *Fridland* change his resolution, who thought to break in upon *Thuringia*; the King cuts off the *Bavarian* Auxiliaries that were going to relieve *Lausena*, which at length *Kniphusius* took for the *Swede*: in *Saxony*, *Gallas* and *Holk* waste all, who take in *Freiberg* for the Emperor, the Citizens were forced

to

to pay 100000. Dollers to keep off the ſouldiers from plundering; and the Elector redeemed his Chappel and Tombs of his Anceſtors from ſpoiling for eighty thouſand Dollers. *Arnhem* ſubdues the lower *Alſatia* for the *Swedes*; *Fridland* doth the like in *Saxony* for the Emperor. *Lipſic*, *Octob.* 22. is ſurrendred to *Holk*, the Inhabitants are diſarmed and pay to the Empetor 50000. Dollers. *Voppelius* delivers up *Pleiſſenburg* to the Cæſarians, for which afterward he loſt his head. Many other Towns, to avoid preſent ruine, ſubmitted to the Imperial yoke in *Saxony*; which *Pappenhem* alſo threatens with fire and ſword, being now returned from his fruitleſſe expedition to *Utricht*; the King perceiving that his confederate Duke of *Saxony* was in danger to loſe all his Country, makes haſte to relieve it before the two Armies of *Walſtein* and *Pappenhem* were conjoyned. *Anno Chriſti.*

The fatal battel was fought at *Lutzen* the 6. of *November*; after ſome light skirmiſhes, the next day as ſoon as the Sunne had diſperſed the clouds, the King having called upon God, and refuſing to eat any thing, leads out his Army, which the enemy encounters with great fury; the heat of the battel was about ten of the clock; the left wing of the Cæſarian Army began to give ground, which the King obſerving, preſſeth on them the more eagerly, and purſueth them ſo far in their flight, that he received divers wounds, of which he died immediately the eight and thirtieth year of his life, to the great grief of his Army, but to the encouragement of the Croats, who wheeling about the Kings victorious wing, fell upon the Swediſh carriage, but were beat back with loſſe: *Bernehard* who had the charge of the left wing, behaved himſelf ſo bravely, that he put the enemy to flight: and now the battel ſeemed to be at an end; but *Pappenhem*, to his owne ruine, makes haſte from *Hall*, rallies again the diſordered and running Cæſarian Troops, with whom he joyns his owne forces, and begins a more furious conflict in the darke, then that which was fought by day-light, in which he loſt his life honourably; the fight continued till eight of the clock, and then the Cæſarians gave ground, retreating to *Lipſic*, they left behinde them ſome part of their Ordnance and baggage; about nine thouſand of both ſides were killed, and two of the beſt ſouldiers of their time, King *Guſtavus* and *Pappenhem*; the King preſaged his own death, and wiſhed his friends not to truſt in him, whoſe breath was in his noſtrils, but rather in *Chriſt Jeſus*, who ſpromiſed he would be with his Church to the end of the world.

Duke *Fridland* the next day after the battel left *Lipſic*, and being highly diſpleaſed that ſome of his officers had forſaken their colours, and plundred their fellow-ſouldiers, he afterward at *Prague* condemned them to death by a Councel of war. *Holk* delivers up the City-keyes to the Senate of *Lipſic*, of which the *Saxons*, *Novem.* 10. took poſſeſſion, being ſurrendred to them. The Kings Army, though their head was gone, yet reſolve to proſecute the work, they take *Chemnitz*, *Pleiſſenburg* and *Zuiccavia*, under the command of *Bernhard*, *Kniphus* and *Horne*; the ſame *Horne* took alſo the Imperial City *Colmaria*, which had been taken five years before by the Imperialiſts, the Proteſtant Religion is there ſet up again, and their liberties confirmed by Articles. *Haggenove* admits a Swediſh garriſon. *Frankendale* is reſtored *Novem.* 26. to the *Palſgrave*; the Spaniſh garriſon is thence tranſported to *Lucemberg*. *Frederick* the *Palſgrave*, having by the Swediſh aid recovered a great part of his Patrimony, departeth this life at *Mentz*, *November* 19. hee left tenne Children behinde him, begot of the Lady *Elizabeth* daughter to King *James*; his brother *Ludovic Philip*, who had alſo loſt his eſtate, undertakes the adminiſtration of the Electorate lands: *Oxenſtern* Chancellour of *Swethland*, is made Protector of that Kingdome, and of *Chriſtiana* the Kings only daughter and heir, being now ſeven years old. About this time the Dioceſſe of *Colen*

An. Christi. which had been the ſanctuary of the exiled Prelates, is now much moleſted by *William* of *Naſſaw*, and *Henry Baudir*, who took divers Towns there; a certain ſouldier being a priſoner in St. *Urbans* Church, ſets fire to ſome barrels of Gunpowder there, which was the death of 300. perſons; the Duke of *Luneburg* having an Army of 16000. falls ſuddenly upon the Imperialiſts, of
1633. which he takes 400. priſoners, the reſt being above a 1000. he puts to flight, whom the *Swede* and *Saxons* purſue, killing and plundering many of them; *Anderac* is beſieged by Count *Iſenburg*, and his Cæſarian forces, who were ſtoutly repulſed by *Rantzovius* the *Holſtatian* governour, who ſallied out three times upon them; at laſt *Baudis* comming with new ſupplies forced the Imperialiſts to raiſe their ſiege after they had made breaches in the walls by their ordnance, and were ready to enter the Town: *Hamelia* is beſieged by *Luneburg*, but the Town had within it ſix foot companies, and two troops of horſe, with all ſort of proviſions which made the ſiege longer then was expected; *William Landgrave* of *Haſſia* defeats the Cæſarians that were comming to the relief of the Town, of theſe 7000. were killed, the reſt fled, and *Hamelia* at length is taken. *Horn* this year did great ſervice for the Crown of *Swede* by taking in divers Towns in *Germany*, but in *Alſatia* the Boors made another inſurrection, in which divers ſouldiers were killed and tortured by them, but *Rheingravius* ſuppreſſed 4000. of them, and hanged up 130. At *Bibrac* were ſeen two ſwords in the Aire, the one was bloody, and the other fiery; ſo the year before in *Germany*, the Lakes were ſeen all bloody; in their bread, and on their trees blood was ſeen; a two-headed calfe, and a two-headed childe were ingendered in *March*. *Raina* is by the treachery of the Townſmen delivered up to the *Bavarians* again. *Horns* and the *Vinarian* forces being joyned make up 28. thouſand foot, and 12000. horſe, with theſe they fall upon *Bavaria*, they defeat *John de Werds* horſes, and take in divers Towns; mean while the Cæſarian and Bavarian forces do joyn near *Ratisbone*: *Fridland* with a great Army enters *Sileſia*; the *Polonian* forces are overthrown by the *Swedes*: *Ubricus* the Daniſh Prince defeats 2000. Cæſarian horſe, and takes *Braura* from them; the King of *Denmark*, and the new elected King of *Poland* *Uladiſlaus* 4. ſon to *Sigiſmund* labour much for a general peace in Chriſtendome; fearing leſt the Turk having defeated the Perſian, ſhould fall upon them; but the French and Proteſtant party in *Germany* would not hearken to any till the liberty of *Germany* ſhould be reſtored; *Oxenſtern* is made Preſident of the Councel of war: the French renew their league with the Swediſh party. *Heidelberg* with the Caſtle is retaken by the Proteſtants. In *Swethland* the act is renewed for diſ-inheriting *Sigiſmunds* heirs from that Crown, and the *Auguſtan* confeſſion is again confirmed; the care of the young Queen is committed to the chief officers of that Kingdome, and the war againſt the Cæſarians is continued till a firm peace be concluded, for this purpoſe the taxes on the mills and houſes are eſtabliſhed; the Kings corps is ſent home to be interred in his Anceſtors tombe.

Chap. XI.

The Savoyan *Hiſtory from the year* 1504. *till the year* 1580.

1504. *Charles* the third, the ninth Duke of *Savoy*, ſucceeded to his brother *Philbert*, he was ſon to Duke *Philip* the ſecond: the firſt year of his government was accompained with ſuch a plague through all *Savoy*, that there wanted men to bury the dead, and Till the ground: the firſt ten years of this Duke, *Savoy* enjoyed much peace; till he made uſe of the *French* army againſt the *Switzers*, which had made excurſions upon Savoy, and plundred ſome parts of the Delphinat: this army *Francis* the French king and Nephew to this

Charles

Charls by his ſiſter, had raiſed for recovering of the Dukedome of *Millan*; the *Switzers* were angry with *Charls* for permitting the French Army to paſſe thorow his Territories, and aſſiſting them with neceſſaries, which favour the Switzers had denied them by the Duke, though they were beaten, and *Millan* ſurrendered; yet they ſtill hated the Duke, ſtorming that their Cities in Savoy and Piemont were open to the French, and ſhut againſt them; and that the Duke had furniſhed the French with Victuals and great Ordnance. *Francis* returning from *Millan*, walks on foot with all his train to *Cumerinum* in performance of his Vow, and is magnificently entertained by the Duke in his houſe divers daies together, after many complements and thanks given by the king to his Uncle, he returns to *Lions*; but theſe courteſies were afterward forgotten by king *Francis*, when he ſent againſt *Savoy* a great army, under *Philip Chabot* Admiral of France, who ſtript the Duke of a great part of his Dutchie, notwithſtanding he had the help of the Emperour *Charls* 5. the cauſe of this quarrel proceeded from the claime which *Francis* laid to the Dutchie of Savoy by his mother, the daughter of *Margaret* of *Burbon*, firſt wife to *Philip*, father of this Duke *Charls*; to his ſaid mother *Francis* alledged the Dutchy belonged, and not to *Charls*, becauſe ſhe was the eldeſt; and upon the Articles of marriage between *Philip* their father, and the friends of *Margaret*, it was agreed, that without difference of ſex, the children of their bodies ſhould ſucceed. Whereupon, for ten years together, Ambaſſadours were ſent to demand that Dutchy, which *Francis* ſaid belonged to him in right of his mother, notwithſtanding the woman was excluded by the Salique law among the Savoyens: at laſt, he deſired ſo much of it as lay in *France*, on this ſide of the river of *Rohan*, being given to his grandmother *Margaret* of *Burbon*, in right of her marriage: He demands alſo *Breſſa*, and forty years arrears, amounting to 180000 crowns with all the intereſt; beſides, ſome part of *Piemont* as belonging to Province: he complains likewiſe that *Taurinum* and other towns beyond the *Po*, were annexed to the Dutchy of Savoy, during the heat of this war, and after the death of *Robert* king of *Sicily*, Count of Province, and Prince of Piemont; beſides, he ſaith, that the county of *Nice*, and Haven of *Ville Franc*, did alwaies appertain to the county of Province, but now by the treachery of the inhabitants, under the power of Savoy; that divers places alſo of the Marquiſat of *Saluſſes* were violently taken away from the Dolphin by the Savoyen; moreover, that the Duke had ſcornfully rejected the badge of St. *Michael*, ſent to him by the French king, with the Captainſhip of 100 Courtizers, and a penſion of twelve thouſand crowns; and laſtly, that in hatred of the French D. *Charls* had aſſiſted the *Spainard* and *Burgundian*, and had alwaies been in league with the Emperour *Charls* 5. and at that time too when he was unfortunately taken priſoner by him, at the battel of *Papia*: For theſe reaſons, *Savoy* is made a prey to the *French*, who ſeiſe upon the high countries thereof; to the *Bernois* who invade the low and fruitfulleſt parts; and to *Charls* the Emperour, who takes poſſeſſion of the chief Cities.

An. Chriſti. 1516.

Others doe give theſe reaſons, why *Francis* was ſo offended with D. *Charls*. 1. Becauſe he pawned his Plate to aſſiſt *Charles* of *Burbon*, then a Rebel and enemy to the crown of *France*. 2. Becauſe he preferred the counſels of his wife, a Luſitanian, and ſiſter to *Charles* the fifth the wife, before *Francis* his uncle. 3. For ſending gratulatory letters to *Cæſar*, after his victory at *Papia*. 4. For endeavouring to break off the league between *France* and *Helvetia*. 5. Becauſe he received the city of *Aſta*, the French patrimony above a hundred years, in *Italy*: this *Cæſar* gave to the Duke, to keep out the French from evolutring again into *Italy*. 6. Becauſe he would not part with the city *Nivola*, a Colony of the *Maſſilians* in *Provence*, which the French had pawned to him for a ſum of money, though the money was tendred by the King, who was not willing to part with that town, both becauſe of its ſtrength, harbour, and ſituation, as parting *Italy* from *France*. 7. Becauſe upon intreaty he would not give way

that

An. Christi. that the Pope should give the French king a meeting there. 8. For denying passage through his country to the King, when he was hastening to *Millan* to be revenged on the Duke of that place, for causing his Ambassador to be put to death.

For these causes the Duke so incensed the French king, that he ruined his country. His policie had been better (say some) to have held in with *France*, both by reason of its vicinity, of its power, and also of the neerness of blood between the King and Duke, then to hearken so much to the Emperor, and to be led away by him, who was too far off to do him either hurt or good. The *Switzers* also, upon the request of *Geneva*, threaten war against *Savoy*, if the Duke offer to trouble that city, which was in league with them. *Charles* having sent a crabbed answer to the *Switzers*, and perceiving what danger he was in, sends privately to *Charles* the Emperor, being then at *Panormum* after his victory at *Tunis*, for aid: but the matter was not carried so closely, as to conceale it from the French king, who was the more enraged against D. *Charles*, because he demanded of the Emperor some places in *Italy*, promising him in lieu thereof all that he possessed in *France* behind the *Alps*, with the city of *Geneva*; so that he might have easie accesse to the confederate countries. If this had succeeded, *France* had been undone, the Emperor having an entrance made for him: but the King a while took no notice of this, till he had answer from the Savoyan to his demands, which were, That he might have a free passage to *Millan*. This being denied, he claimed the Dutchy of *Savoy* as his due; and the rather, because he could not trust the Duke with such places, as might let in his enemies upon him when he pleased. Mean while, because the King suspected he should receive no good answer from the Duke, he makes ready a strong army under *Philip Chabotius* his Admiral; he first seised on the trans-alpin towns, then having passed the Alps he takes in some of the sub-alpin places. But the French victories had a check given them by the *Millanois*, who staid his progresse; otherwise *Vercellis* and a great part of the subalpin territories had been brought under the French yoke; besides, *Philip* was stopt by *John* Cardinal of *Lorain*, whom the Emperor had sent with propositions of peace, and therefore wished *Philip* to go no further then the river *Duria*, and that he should not offer any act of hostility to hinder the peace, least he incur the Emperors displeasure. *Philip* did as he was counselled, thinking the Emperor thereby would be the more tractable, and that he would not act any thing dishonorable to him: but a little while after, the war broke out again, and in a short time, by the valour of Count *Fanus Paulinus*, *Francis* obtained almost all *Savoy*.

The *French* writers strive to excuse king *Francis* his invasion of *Savoy*, and to blame the Duke; but indeed, the kings reasons were but specious pretences, and the true reason was his unbridled desire of domination; otherwayes he would have preferred that neernesse of blood with the Duke to any title; but indeed it seems he had none; for it's unlikely that either Duke *Philip* would have acted any thing against the Salique law; or that his people would have assented thereto, being carefully from the beginning observed by them; so that with much adoe would they suffer at any time the mother, during the nonage of the Duke, to rule that Dutchie: neither can Duke *Charls* be blamed for entertaining a league with the Emperor, considering his power and greatnes, as also the many and long leagues between the Houses of *Burgundy* and *Savoy*, and that faithfull correspondency between the Empire and Savoy; besides, Duke *Charls* thought there needed no other league with king *Francis* then that which nature had already made, to wit, consanguinity. The losse therefore of *Savoy* cannot be imputed to the Dukes want of policy, or any negligence, but rather to that all-ruling Providence which hath prescribed certain periods of time to all powers and principalities, which are no lesse subject to change and mortality then the men themselves of which they are composed.

poſed. And although King *Francis* was a good Prince, yet in this he was no good man, to invade and challenge anothers right; and much leſſe could he be a good Chriſtian, who would make a league with that great Antichriſt, and call in the Turk upon Chriſtendome, becauſe he could not otherwayes be revenged on the Emperor; this was an act ill-beſeeming the moſt Chriſtian King. *An. Chriſti.*

Duke *Charles* made no reſiſtance to the French forces, for indeed he could not, having exhauſted all his treaſury on the Genevan war; for that City took occaſion to rebel upon this diſcord between *France* and *Savoy*, therefore the Duke did what he could to reduce them to obedience, which he could not becauſe of *Berne* which took the Genevans part; beſides the Duke relied on the Emperors power and authority, thinking the French would have ſubmitted to what agreement he ſhould make: the Emperor indeed was much incenſed againſt the French, of whom he complained to the Pope in the aſſembly of the Cardinals, that *Francis* had invaded the Territories of a Prince joyned ſo nearly to the Empire by affinity, and under the protection of the Empire, yea the Empires Lieutenant; the hainouſneſſe of which act he aggravates, in that it was againſt the Kings own Uncle: having complained, he marcheth towards *France* with his Army, whence enſued a long war between the two great Monarchs of Chriſtendome, to the great deſtruction of *Piemont*; the ſucceſſe of this war was various; at laſt the French King having recruited his Army, and raiſed the ſiege from *Taurinum* and *Pignerol*, a truce for three moneths is concluded, and after them for three moneths longer, which being expired, and all hopes of peace blaſted, the war is renewed. 1536.

Charles the Emperor had called a Diet at *Ratisbone* (anciently *Auguſta Tiberia*) for compoſing the differences of Religion; in this the Duke of *Savoy* complained of the wrongs done him by the French King without any ground: the French Ambaſſador there, anſwers by a writing, which cauſed great debate and different opinions among the Princes, ſo that nothing was concluded, whereupon the war (as is ſaid) was renewed; mean while the Turkiſh fleet of 150. Gallies which the French king ſent for, arrives into the harbour of *Marſiles*, under the conduct of *Hariaden Aenobarb* a notorious Pyrat; theſe having ſpent moſt part of the Summer in that harbour, upon the French kings deſire, for whom *Solyman* had ſent them, beſiege *Nicæa* a haven Town in *Province* both by ſea and land; hither the Biſhop of *Geneva* being driven out, tranſlated his ſeat: this Town, after the great ordnance had battered down the walls and forts, fought ſtoutly againſt the Turks, whoſe ſtandard they took, the ſtandard-bearer being killed; but at laſt the Town is taken, plundered and burned, yet the Caſtle ſtanding on a high cliffe, held out by the valour of *Paul Simeon* the governour thereof, and one of the Knights of *Rhodes*. *Alphonſus Guſtavus* hearing that the Town was beſieged, but not taken, (he was the Emperors Lieutenant in *Italy*, and Vice-roy of *Millan*) makes haſte to relieve it, with him were joyned D. *Charls* his forces, theſe ſeeing the Town deſtroyed, relieve the Caſtle with all neceſſaries for a long ſiege, commending the valour of *Simeon* and the ſouldiers that held out, and preſerved the Townſmen; *Aenobarb*, now out of all hope to gain the Caſtle, returns to *Marſiles*: *Guaſtius* mean while layeth ſiege to *Montevic* one of the chief ſub-alpin Cities, whoſe defection from the Empire had drawn many others after it; at laſt after a long ſiege the Town yeelds, and ſhortly after 85. Caſtles ſubmitted to the Imperial yoke. 1541.

Aenobarb ſends out of the Port of *Tholon* (of old *Tarenta*, which is towards *Marſiles*) two paſſage-Barks to *Solyman* at *Conſtantinople* laden with captives, among which were divers boyes and handſome maids, theſe had been perpetual ſlaves to the Turk and Devil, had not *Garcias Toletanus* the Vice-roy of *Naples* his ſon with ſome Gallies fallen upon the Turkiſh convoy, which he overcame, and ſo reſcued the two Barks; theſe he ſent home with a ſtrong convoy, and ſo *Solyman* came ſhort of this booty, as alſo of the rich preſents which *Aenobarb* had appointed

Anchiſi. appointed for him, all which were taken by *Garcias* : About this time *Luxenburg* which *Charles* D. of *Orleans*, and ſon to King *Francis* had taken two years before, was retaken by the Cæſarians, with divers other Towns. The French lay ſiege to *Carigna* which *Guaſtus* endeavoured to raiſe; a hot skirmiſh laſted an hour, in which the Marqueſs was worſted, and hardly eſcaped with his life; in this fight 9000. were ſlain, and almoſt 2000. were taken; the Town being
1544. tired out with continual duty and famine, at laſt ſurrenders. The ſame year *Cæſar* calls a Diet at *Spire*, thither King *Francis* ſends his Ambaſſadors with ſome inſtructions in Print, but they were not permitted to enter; and withall *Francis* is declared an enemy to the Empire, for invading the Duke of *Savoy's* Country, and for calling in the Turks upon Chriſtendome, who had taken from the Savoyan the Town and haven of *Nicea* or *Niſſa*, therefore they order that war be denounced againſt him, and that the Duke be reſtored to all his goods and eſtate; An act alſo paſſed for ſix months pay towards the maintenance of of *Cæſars* Army, conſiſting of 24000. foot and 4000. horſe; All French ſouldiers are baniſhed out of *Germany*, and puniſhment threatned againſt thoſe that ſhall harbour or relieve any : Thus a great Army being raiſed, the Emperor invades *France* on the one ſide, and the *Engliſh* on the other; many Towns are taken, much blood ſhed, and a great fear at *Paris*, but an unexpected peace is concluded; yet ſome years after the war was renewed, ſome Towns are taken
1551. by the French in *Piemont*, but they are forced to forſake *Vercellæ* after they had taken it, upon the report of *Cæſars* Army that was marching thither : At laſt Duke *Charles* ended his troubles, which he bore with ſingular patience, by departing out of this turbulent life into a more peaceable and calm, and was
1554. buried at *Vercellæ*.

To Duke *Charls* ſucceeded his ſon *Emanuel Philbert*: he was bred from his childhood in the Court of *Charles* 5. Emperor, who loved him exceedingly for his eminent parts, and made him Captain of his Life-guard, conſiſting of 4000. horſe : afterward when the Emperor *Charls* transferred all his Kingdomes and power upon his ſon *Philip*, the ſame *Emanuel* was by *Philip* made
1555. governour of the Low-countries, in which office he ſo behaved himſelf for the time he was in it, which was four years, till he returned to his own dominion, that he left behinde him a good name; he bare his fathers loſſes ſo patiently, that God at laſt reſtored him to his inheritance: King *Philip* made him Generaliſſimo of his whole forces, by whoſe valour he obtained that memorable victory over the French at S. *Quintin*, and withall took the City it ſelf. Two years after, peace being made between king *Philip* and king *Henry* of *France*, *Emanuel* was reſtored to his full eſtate, and withall married with *Margaret Henries* ſiſter; but the French retained a while in their hands *Turin*, *Villanova*, *Aſten*, *Gnierſe* and *Chivali*, which at laſt he demands by his Legats from King *Charls* 9. of *France*, who ſucceeded his brother *Francis*; but the French loth to part with them, put off the Duke with long delayes and excuſes, alleadging that *Nicea* and *Villafranca*, with their dependances, were anciently annexed to the County of *Province*, and ſubject alwayes to the Counts of *Province*, and that Queen *Joan* Neece to *Robert* king of *Naples* and Earl of *Province*, and after her *Lewis* the firſt Duke of *Amdes* whom ſhe had made her heir, did poſſeſſe theſe now when the houſes of *Amdes* and *Arragon* fell at variance for the kingdome of *Naples*, the Savoyan upon this took occaſion to ſeiſe on *Nicea* and *Villafranca*, having no title to them, and would never ſince that time be induced to part with them; but the French kings have right to them by the laſt will of *Charles* Duke of *Amdes*, Earl of *Province*, and king of *Naples*, the laſt of that family: This *Charles* bequeaths his whole eſtate to *Lewis* 11. of *France*, and to his ſon *Charles*, whom with all the ſucceeding kings of *France* he makes his heirs; therefore the Savoyan muſt part with theſe places to the French, before he can have poſſeſſion of the Towns which the king holds from him; ſo likewiſe the Principality of *Piemont* did of old belong to *Province*, and was poſſeſſed by

the

the above named Q. *Ioan.* The French alſo prove the County of *Aſten* belongs to them, becauſe *John Galeacius* Viſcount of *Millan* gave it in Dowry with his daughter *Valentine*, when ſhe married with *Lewis* D. of *Orleans*, great grand-father to K. *Charls*; this County *Charls* 5. Emperor injuriouſly ſeiſed upon, and the *Savoyen* againſt all right hath hitherto enjoyed it; they ſhew alſo that there have been many debates between the *French* and *Savoyen*, about the Marquiſat of *Saluſſes*, that the Counties of *Geneva* and *Foucignium* depend upon the Delphinat; and are held in fee of the *French*, therefore the *Savoyen* ought to do homage to K. *Charls* for them, as his anceſtors had done heretofore. Laſtly, the *French* Ambaſſadors ſhew, that whereas *Philip* of *Savoy* having married with *Margaret* of *Burbon*, and that *Ludovica* mother to K. *Francis* was the daughter of this *Margaret*, and that it was agreed upon articles of marriage, that the children of *Philip* and *Margaret* ſhould have ſhares in their eſtate; that therefore the *French* king had reaſon to lay claim to ſome parts of *Savoy*. *An. Chriſti.*

Theſe and other reaſons were alledged why the *French* king might retain theſe controverted towns; yet for quietneſſe ſake, becauſe *France* then had many enmies, both inteſtine and forraign, King *Francis* the ſecond brother to King *Charls* ſends to *Burdiloun* Governour of *Piemont* to deliver theſe towns to the Savoyen, conditionally that he will part with *Savillianum*, and *Pignerol* with the adjacent Abbey *Burdillonius*; upon this he cals together the chief Captains and Governours of thoſe places, acquainting them with the kings pleaſure, it was at laſt agreed, not to obey preſently the kings command, but to ſtay for further order, ſeeing he was as yet under age, not fit to meddle with the affaires of the kingdom, and that this was a matter of great concernment, chiefly ſeeing it was agreed upon in the laſt meeting at Lions between the Kings and Dukes Ambaſſadors, that *Nicea* with the tower and ſubjacent places ſhould be reſtored to the King, and that *Foſſanum* with the adjacent places, as likewiſe the County of *Auſten*, and whatſoever by right of inheritance belonged to *Francis* the firſt's mother, likewiſe the Marquiſat of *Saluſſes*, and all places appertaining thereto, which the Savoyen heretofore took away injuriouſly from the Earls of Province, whileſt they were imployed in the holy war; all theſe they held fit ſhould be reſtored to the King. As for *Turin*, when the inhabitants ſaw themſelves forſaken by D. *Charls*, they of their own accord ſubmited to the French king *Francis*, petitioning earneſtly they might hereafter be under the protection of France, which was aſſented to by king *Francis*: Upon theſe conſiderations, *Burdillonus* thought it fit to acquaint king *Charls* his mother, the king of *Navar* then Lieutenant over all *France*, the Princes of the Blood, the Conſtables, the Marſhals, and Chancellor, and the kings Counſellours with theſe paſſages, And humbly beſeecheth them that the kings Patent might be mended, and all their names added to it, that the blame may not lie on him, if hereafter any thing ſhould fall out amiſſe; withall he deſires, that what ſhall be concluded by them concerning this buſineſſe, may be confirmed alſo by all the Parliaments of *France*, chiefly that of *Paris*: This was the ſum of his Petition, which to moſt of the kings Councel ſeemed unreaſonable, ſeeing the reſtitution of thoſe controverted Places to the Savoyen was agreed upon at the laſt meeting of the Spaniſh and French Ambaſſadours at *Lions*: therefore the French king had ſent an expreſſe Mandate for their reſtitution; and to this purpoſe, *Margaret* king *Charls* his Aunt was married to *Emanuel Philbert* Duke of *Savoy*, by which marriage they have children to inherit theſe lands. Therefore the opinion of the Councel was, that reſtitution ſhould be preſently made to the Duke without any further delays; for this cauſe a new Order is ſent, which confirmed the former, ſhewing withall that what was concluded by the Councel of State, alwayes attending on the king, was not to be ratified or queſtioned by any Parliament of *France*, ſeeing by the cuſtom of that kingdom, the kings Councel is of greater dignity and authority then any French parliament. 1562

An. Christi. The king to satisfie *Burdillon*, caused the king of *Navar* and the rest of the Senators to put their Hands and Seals to the kings order, though without president or custome; he is commanded therefore presently to restore the controverted places, conditionally that the king be put in possession by the Duke of the places, agreed on in the last conference at *Lions*, to wit, *Savillan*, *Petrousie*, *Pyneroll*, and *Ginoll*; but the two former were restored by *Henry* 3. at *Turin*, where he was magnificently entertained by the D. *Emanuel* in his journy from *Poland*, when he was comming to receive the Crown of *France*, his brother *Charls* being dead; this he gave as a gift to his Aunt, the Dukes wife, and her son *Charls*.

1574. About six years after, *Emanuel Philbert* departed this life at *Turin*, whose body was buried at *Vercelles*, in his fathers tomb.

To him succeeded his son *Charls* 4. sirnamed *Emanuel*, he was born the 61.

1580. year of this Century, and in the 80. year succeeded. In the 8 year of his government, he invades and takes the towns of *Carmaniola* and *Salusium*, which were injuriously detained by the *French* from him; for in the conference at *Lions* the *French* King promised the *Spainard*, that the *Savoyen* should have restitution of all places taken from him by the *French* in the last war between them, which lasted 23 years, except some towns, among which were these two now named; these the king would retain till *Margaret* should bring forth children to her husband, and then would restore them: But he did not, though often sollicited after the birth of D. *Charls*; Wherefore he takes them by force, being thereto animated by *Philip* 2. of *Spain* his father in law; and finding a fit opportunity thereto by reason of the distraction of *France*, by their civil wars.

Chap. XII.

The History of Hungary *from the beginning till the year* 1532.

THe *Huns* a people of *Scythia*, transported themselves into this part of *Panonia*, which from them is called *Hungary*; it was inhabited by the *Goths*, who by the *Huns* were driven out thence: Many of the *Ostrogoths* joyned with the *Huns*, and so made up one Nation: the *Vestrogoths* went into *Mysia* and *Thracia*, by the consent of *Valence* the Emperour, conditionally that they should defend the borders of the Empire from the *Huns*; but the covetousnesse and negligence of the Roman Governours gave occasion both to *Goths* and *Huns* to invade the Empire, so that after divers battels, the Romans were forced to let the *Huns* enjoy all *Panonia* quietly; where as soon as they were setled, they chose themselves a King, *Attila* by name, who much molested the Romans: in his absence he left his brother *Buda* to govern his kingdome, whom after his return from the wars of *Mysia*, *Thrace*, *Macedon*, and *Illyricum*, he caused to be strangled, upon suspicion that he affected the kingdom. After this, he invadeth *Germany* and *France*, with a numerous Army, spoiling all before him with fire and sword, but was met and overthrown by *Ætius*, in this battel 180000 *Huns* were slain, *Attila* fled by night into his Camp, commanding those that were about him to burn him, if the enemy should obtain the Camp, because he would not fall into their hands alive: But when he saw the enemy was retreated, he fals furiously upon all the neighbouring countries, sparing neither sex nor age; then he goeth to *Sicambria*, now called *Buda*, where he gave himself to his delights; but he could not be long without action; therefore aiming at the Empire of the world, he invades *Italy* with a hugh Army, which struck such a terrour there, that after he had taken *Aquileia* after three years siege, many out of all parts of *Italy* fled to the Islands of the *Adriatick* sea, where they built them a City, now the Queen of the Sea: many other Cities of *Italy* submitted to him; he abstained from *Rome* upon the intreaty

treaty of Pope *Leo*. Being returned to *Panonia*, he died of an Apoplexie, and sudden erruption of blood. After his death, his children striving for his Dominions, loſt all: ſo that the *Goths* ſeiſed upon *Panonia*, whoſe power after this grew ſo great, that they had got almoſt the whole Empire of *Italy*. *Odoacer* the Gothiſh king made *Auguſtulus* reſigne the Empire; ſo that he, and eight Gothiſh kings that ſucceeded to him, enjoyed the Weſtern Empire with *Panonia*, whom the *Lombards* drove out of *Panonia* firſt, then out of *Italy*: Theſe being wholly addicted to *Italy*, left *Panonia* to the remainder of the *Huns*, conditionally, that if their affairs ſhould not ſucceed in *Italy*, they might be received again into *Panonia*; they under their King *Albonius* erected a kingdome in *Italy*. The *Huns* make eruptions upon divers parts of *Germany*, with great loſſe to both Countries. *An. Chriſti.*

In this mean time, two hundred and ſixteen thouſand *Scythians* breake in upon *Panonia* through *Muſcovia* and *Sarmatia*. In *Dacia*, *Almus* deſcended of *Attila*, did reign: to him being ſlain ſucceeded *Arpadius*, who ſends to *Suates* then Prince of *Sarmatia*, a horſe richly trapped, and a requeſt, that he would ſpare ſome of his waſte lands to his people, who wanted ground; *Suates* at firſt aſſented, but hearing of the rapacity and multitude of that people, refuſed; whereupon he raiſeth an Army: but the ſtrangers challenging that land as due to them, and bought by the horſe that was ſent, march out againſt *Suates*, whom they defeated and drove into the *Danow*, where he was drowned. *Arpadius* ſeiſeth on the Country, and divides it among his Captains: theſe being ſetled, and the *Stythian* yoke caſt off, they call themſelves *Hungarians*, and had divers wars with the *Polonians Bohemians*, and *Moravians*. *Charls* the great being moleſted by the *Hungarians* invades their Country, and by his ſon *Pipin* drives them out of all the higher *Hungary*. *Gaba* their King, at *Buda*, in the midſt of his jollity and pleaſures is taken and impriſoned, where he killed himſelf. *Charls* cauſeth the idols of *Mars* and *Hercules* there to be deſtroyed, and Chriſt to be preached; he diſarmed the people, diſmantled the towns, and laid heavy taxes on them. When *Charls* was dead *Lindentus* a potent and factious man, endeavoured to ſhake off the yoke, and to reſtore *Hungary* to its ancient liberty; therefore *Lewis* the Pious, to whom *Hungary* and the adjacent Countries were bequeathed by his fathers Will, raiſeth an Army againſt him; *Lindentus* marcheth with his forces, having waſted *Carinthia*, *Dalmatia*, and *Bavaria*: but he was defeated and driven to the mountains by *Lewis*, to whom at laſt he ſubmitted, and was pardoned. After this, the *Hungarians* were quiet for ſome years; but they break out again, invade *Italy*, and made *Berengarius* who came againſt them, to buy his peace. After them the *Sarazens* fall upon *Italy*, whom *Albert* Duke of *Etruria* defeated; but being ſlighted for his good ſervice, he cals the *Hungarians* again into *Italy*, which they miſerably afflicted, and made *Berengarius* tributary the ſecond time; thence they fell upon *Germany*, and having defeated the *German* forces, they plunder *Bavaria* and *Franconia*; the havock and waſte they made in *Germany*, broke the heart of *Lewis* the Emperour: *Conradus* his ſucceſſor became tributary to *Hungary*; *Henry* his ſucceſſour denyed to pay this tribute, wherefore they lay waſte many parts of *Germany*; but at laſt they are overthrown, and their Captain taken, whoſe life they would have redeemed, but could not. Then a peace of nine years is agreed on; but before theſe were expired, they demand their tribute of the Emperour, who inſtead thereof ſent them a lame and mangie Dog: they to be revenged, ſend three hundred thouſand men, whoſe cruelty in *Germany* was unſpeakable; at length *Henry* defeats the, mone hundred & fifty thouſand are ſlain, & fifty thouſand of them taken priſoners: thus *Germany* reſted a while; then they return into *Italy*, and are quieted by a ſilver ſop from *Berengarius* 3. *Toxis* their K. not forgetful of their overthrow in *Germany*, & hearing that *Henry* was dead, reſolves to fall upon *Saxony*, but *Otho* the Emperor kept them out thence: ſome years after, when *Otho* was diſtracted with

An. Christi. civil wars, *Toxis* invades *Germany* in divers places; but when the Princes were reconciled, *Otho* raiseth a great army, and overtakes the *Hungarians* laden with spoile neer *Ausspurg*, where a cruel battel is fought, and the Hungarian army quite routed, multitudes of them were drowned in the river, some that had escaped were burned in the houses where they hid themselves; king *Toxis* is taken with four other Princes, who all afterwards lost their heads.

969. The kings of *Hungary*, after they received the Christian faith, were these: *Gaysca*, who was baptized by *Adolbert* Bishop of *Prague*; *Steven* his son was baptized by the same Bishop, and afterward canonized; the Emperor *Henry* married his sister to this *Steven*, and so all *Hungary* became Christian. This king lived a holy life; he built a fair Church on the hill *Strigon*, and endowed it he erected also the Monastery of S. *Martin*, and another goodly Church, the burying place of the Polonian kings, with divers other monuments of his pie-

1039. ty; he was buried in his temple at *Strigon*. To him succeeded his sisters son *Peter*, who for his tyranny is deposed. His successor was *Abba*, who having reigned three years, was deposed for his tyranny, and *Peter* restored again; in his time *Hungary* began to fall off from Christianity; he reigned five years and

1047. six moneths. *Andrew* K. *Stevens* kinsman set up again the Christian faith; he had two sons, *Solomon* and *David*; he caused *Solomon* to be crowned at five years old, which occasioned a war between *Andrew* and his brother *Bela*, in which *Andrew* is killed, and buried in the monastery of S. *Amian*, which he

1062. built himself. *Bela* his brother succeeded, who had 3 sons, *Geicza*, *Ladislaus*, and *Lampertus*: He was the first there that used silver-coyn, weights and measures, and set prices upon wares; he built a Monastery in *Zewkzare*, in which he was buried; he defeated *Henry* the Emperors forces, which were sent to aid

1065. his brother; he died in the year 1065. *Solomon* K. *Andrews* son succeeded, but is driven out of the kingdome by *Geicza* and *Ladislaus* the sons of *Bela*; therefore he lived an Eremitical life in *Istria*, where he died. *Geicza Bela's*

1077. eldest son succeeded; in his time *Hungary* was visited with a great famine. His successor was his brother *Ladislaus*, called the Saint, for his innocencie; he added *Dalmatia* and *Croatia* to *Hungary*; he had many wars with the Scythians;

1095. he died childlesse. *Colomannus Geicza's* son succeeded; he was first a Bishop, and while he was king a cruel tyrant, he put out the eyes both of his brother and his brothers son, his brother *Almus* afterward was by him murthered in the church; he had two sons, *Ladislaus* and *Steven* who succeeded to his fa-

1114. ther, being as yet young; he was called the *Lightning* by his subjects, because

1131. his actions were sudden and rash; having no children, and weary of government, he betook himself to a Monastery, where he died.

Bela 2. called the blind, because *Colmannus* had blinded both him and his father *Almus*, succeeded; he was a good, though a blind King: he had four

1141. sons: He overthrew and put to flight *Colmannus* his bastard, who had raised forces against him: He died *an.* 1141. and was buried at *Alba regalis* or *Stuluneissenburg*, the place where the Hungarian kings are usually crowned and buried. His son *Geicza* 2. succeeded: he suppressed the *Saxons*, *Austrians*, and *Bavarians*, who had invaded *Hungary*; he was a pious Prince, and built divers

1161. Churches, leaving four sons behind him; he died *an.* 1161. his eldest son *Steven* 3 succeeded; he had wars with the *Venetians* in *Dalmatia*, with *Emanuel* the Greek Emperor, and with *Ladislaus* and *Steven* his kinsmen, by whom at last he was expelled the kingdom; he died childlesse, and is buried at *Strigon*.

1173. His throne was usurped by *Ladislaus* 2. son to blind *Bela*; he reigned 6 months, and after him his brother *Ladislaus* 5 moneths; him K. *Steven* 3. overthrew, they died both the same year. *Bela* 3. brother to *Steven* 3. succeeded, who cleared *Hungary* of Highway-men; his successor was *Emericus* the eldest of

1196. his two sons, who died shortly after his father; he left one son, *Ladislaus* 3. who reigned but 6 moneths. *Andrew* 2d son to *Bela* 3. succeeded: he made an expedition into the Holy-land, where for his good service against the Sultan

of

of Babylon, he was honored with the ſirname of *Jeruſalem*: his wife *Gertruda*, of whom he had four ſons, was wounded mortally by the Palatine or Viceroy of *Hungary*, for ſolliciting the Palatines wife to uncleanneſſe with her brother. After K. *Andrews* return from *Jeruſalem*, he married again; he beſtowed on the Nobility of *Hungary* divers priviledges. His ſon *Bela* 4. ſucceeded; in his time 500000 Scythians waſte all *Ruſſia* and *Podolia*, thence they fall upon *Hungary*, where a battel was fought, and the King with much ado eſcaped in a ſervile habit, many prime men of *Hungary* were then ſlain; Great cruelties on all ſexes and ages were exerciſed for three years together by theſe Barbarians, who returning to *Mæotis* the Lake, imbrace Mahumetaniſme. King *Bela* by the aſſiſtance of the Knights of *Rhodes* was reſtored to his kingdom; he was buried in the Gray-Friars at *Strigon*. To him ſucceeded *Steven* 5. his ſon; he overcame *Othocar* king of *Bohemia*, and the king of *Bulgaria* alſo, and made all *Myſia* tributary to him; he left a ſon behind him *Ladiſlaus*, and *Mary* who married with *Charles* king of *Sicily*, by whom he had *Charles Martel* father of that *Charles* who afterward was king of *Hungary*. *Steven* was buried in the Iſle *Buda*; his ſon *Ladiſlaus* 4. ſucceeded; in his time the Scythians again invade *Hungary*, waſting all with fire and ſword, and two years after returned home with great booty. This king was murthered by the *Cumani*. *Andrew* 4. ſucceeded; he was the ſon of *Steven Venetus*, and grandchild of *Andrew* 2. father of this *Steven*; he ſubdued *Auſtria*, and died at *Buda*, where in the Church of S. *John* the Evangeliſt he was buried. He being dead, the Pope declares the ſon of *Charles Martel* king of *Hungary*; but the Hungarians choſe *Wenceſlaus* or *Ladiſlaus* the king of *Bohemia's* ſon for their King, whom afterward his father called home into *Bohemia*. *Hungary* at this time was divided into three factions; ſome were for *Charls*, ſome for *Wenceſlaus*, and a third party for *Otho* D. of *Bavaria*, who was crowned at *Alba regalis*, and reigned almoſt three years; but *Ladiſlaus Vayroda* carried him away priſoner to *Jazygum* or *Tranſilvania*, and ſpoiled him of his kingdom. *Charles Robert* ſon of *Charles Martel* and *Mary* daughter of K. *Steven* 5. is crowned: He was a great ſouldier, and amplified the kingdom of *Hungary* by addition of *Bulgaria* and divers other places; he married the ſiſter of *Caſimir* king of *Poland*, of whom he had *Ludovic*: He was in danger to be murthered by a Gentleman of his Court, on *Eaſter*-day, who ran at him with his ſword; but he was ſaved, and the Courtier executed.

An. Chriſti.

1235.

1275.

1291.

1301.

1310.

Caſimir king of *Poland* made a journey to viſit this king *Charles* his kinſman, and becauſe he was childleſſe, he names *Ludovic* (ſon to K. *Charles* who married his ſiſter) to the kingdom of *Poland*, ſo that this *Ludovic* became king of both kingdoms; He had two daughters only, to wit *Mary* who married with *Sigiſmund* king of *Bohemia*, who by her obtained the kingdom of *Hungary*, and *Hedwiga* Queen of *Poland*. This *Ludovic* was a great warriour, he drove all the *Jewes* out of *Hungary*; he was buried at *Alba Regalis*, in the Chappel which he built. To *Ludovic* ſucceeded his daughter *Mary*, who married with *Sigiſmund* king of *Bohemia*, and afterward Emperor; ſhe with her mother *Elizabeth* governed the kingdom, becauſe *Sigiſmund* was as yet too young, and ſuffered herſelf to be totally ruled by ſome Peers of the Empire; which being ill reſented by the Nobility of *Hungary*, they invite *Charles* king of *Naples* to the crown of *Hungary*: Not long after, this *Charles* was murthered by the two Queens, as he was at a conference with them; ſo the *Italians* were driven out of *Hungary*, and the Queen recovers her kingdom. *John* governour of *Croatia*, to revenge k. *Charles* his death, ſeiſeth on the Queen when ſhe was in progreſs with her mother and Peers; he cuts off the head of the Regicide, drags the Queen with her mother by their hair upon the ground, then drowns the mother, and impriſons the Queen, and withal abuſes all her maids of honour; but afterward out of fear he ſets the Queen at liberty, who having returned home is met by her husband *Sigiſmund* with a great army out of *Bohemia*, he without oppoſition is crowned king of *Hungary*, the 20. year of his age; then he makes

1342.

1382.

an

An. Christi. an expedition into *Croatia*, where he besets the governour, takes him, and cuts off his head. *Charles* 2. sirnamed the *Lesse*, King of *Naples*, son to *Andrew*,
1385. brother of King *Ludovic*, is chosen King of *Hungary*, in opposition to *Sigismund* and *Mary*; but he was murthered at *Buda* in the Castle, at the instigation of Queen *Elisabeth* by one *Blasius*. Queen *Mary* dying childless, leaves the Kingdome wholly to *Sigismund*, which he enjoyeth, and marrieth with the Countess of *Cilia*, by whom he had one daughter *Elisabeth*. Not long after this, the
1396. Turks invade *Bulgaria*, a Province of *Hungary*, a part whereof *Sigismund* recovered, but not without much blood; in that cruel war there fell 20000. Christians, and 60000. Turks, the Christians were beaten, and the King escaped by flight: after this overthrow the Hungarians imprisoned king *Sigismund*, who afterwards was restored to his liberty and kingdom; this king in a second
1409. battel is beaten by the Turks, and the next year after is chosen Emperor; twice in his time the Boors of *Hungary* rose up in Arms against him, and twice he suppressed them. He reigned with his wife in *Hungary* 51. years, and died the
1437. 71. year of his age.

Albert Arch-duke of *Austria*, by marrying King *Sigismunds* onely daughter, obtained both the Crown of *Hungaria* and *Bohemia*, and besides is chosen Emperor; he had two daughters, *Elisabeth* wife to *Casimir* King of *Poland*, and *Anna* who married with *William* Duke of *Saxony*: The year after *Sigismunds* death, *Amurath* the Turk invaded *Hungary*; *Albert* intending to give him battel, pitched his camp beyond *Danubius*, where being taken with a loosness,
1439. hasteneth for *Vienna*, but he died by the way thither; he left his wife with childe, who intended to marry with *Vladislaus* the King of *Polands* brother and Duke of *Lituania*; mean while she is delivered of a boy called *Ladislaus* heir of *Hungary*, whereupon she alters her minde concerning her intended marriage, and resolves (now having an heir) not to marry the Duke, which bred great quarrels and troubles in *Hungary*; the childe is crowned the fourth month after his birth; notwithstanding *Vladislaus* enters *Hungary* with an Army, and by some is saluted King, he besiegeth and taketh *Strigon*; the Queen with her childe flies into *Austria* to his Protector *Frederick* the Emperor, and carried with her the Crown of *Hungary*, which 23. years after king *Matthias* was fain to redeem with a sum of money; mean while *Vladislaus* is crowned with some of the reliques taken from the head of S. *Stephen*. The Turk took occasion by these jars to seise upon *Rascia*: four years after, *Vladislaus* is defeated in a great battel by *Amurath*, in which besides the king, there were slain many Princes and Prelates, and 30000. Christians. At this time king *Ladislaus Alberts* son was five years old, then at *Vienna*. *John Hunniades* or *Corvinus* is made Viceroy, and by *Ladislaus* for his valour deputed Vayvod of *Transilvania*, for he had beaten *Amurath*; when the young king, being twelve years old, came to
1455. *Hungary*, he made the same *John*, for his good service, Earl of *Bistria*. After this *John* put again Mahumet to flight, took from him a hundred great field-pieces; but he died the next year after, to the great losse of *Hungary*, which by the factions of the Nobility was much afflicted. *Ulricus* Earl of *Cilia* is killed by *Ladislaus* and *Matthias*, the two sons of *Hunniades*; whereupon *Ladislaus* is beheaded, and *Matthias* who was King afterward, is imprisoned at *Prague*; King *Ladislaus* after this beat the Sultan, and kills many thousand Turks: In the nineteenth year of his age, at the very nuptial solemnities with *Magdalen* the daughter of King *Charles* of *France*, he died.

Matthias Corvinus son to *John Hunniades* is ransomed out of prison by the Bishop of *Waraden* for 60000 *Scrutati*, and withall is elected King of *Hungary*. *Frederick* 3. Emperor layeth claim to the Kingdome, as being next heir to the defunct King: *Matthias* now was 17. years old, and capitulated with *Frederick*, that the house of *Austria* should by his last will inherit the Crown of *Hungary*
1462. if he died childless; his first marriage was with the King of *Bohemia's* daughter. This *Matthias* was fortunate in his wars against the Turk, which lasted two years;

after he had redeemed the Crown, it was put upon his head with great ſolemnity *an.* 1464. whilſt he again is imployed in his wars againſt the Turk, the Bohemians beſiege *Tyrnavia* on the borders of *Moravia*, but were fain to raiſe the ſiege again. The next year after *Matthias* calls a Diet for aid againſt the Turk and Bohemian; then he marcheth to *Poſonia*, and ſubdues almoſt all *Moravia* and *Sileſia*. Not long after *Caſimir* ſon of *Caſimir* K. of *Poland*, is invited into *Hungary* by ſome of the Prieſts: but when he was come to *Nitria*, there *Mathias* beſiegeth him; *Caſimir* perceiving his danger eſcapes by night and returns to *Poland*, againſt him and the Bohemian *Matthias* makes war, which at laſt was compoſed in the year 1476. *Beatrix* the k. of *Sicilies* daughter is crowned at *Alba regalis*, the marriage is kept at *Buda*; in the interim the Turk ſubdues *Dalmatia*, makes inrodes upon *Hungary*, and carries away above 30000. captives, he waſtes alſo with fire and ſword *Dacia*, by which name *Malachia*, *Moldavia*, *Bulgaria*, or the lower *Myſia*, *Servia* or the higher *Miſia*, and *Tranſilvania* were meant of old: when the nuptial ſolemnities were expired, *Matthias* invades *Auſtria*, becauſe he was ſlighted by *Frederick* the Emperor when he was a Suiter to his daughter *Kunegund*; here he takes in ſome Towns and Forts: the Cæſarians are overthrown at *Haymburg* by *Matthias*, which preſently after he beſiegeth; the Emperor *Frederick* ſends 3000. horſe to raiſe the ſiege, a battel is fought, in which the Cæſarians had the better; *Stephen Bathor* one of *Matthias* his Captains being carried away priſoner by two ſouldiers, watching an opportunity, pulls out the ſword which was hanging at one of his keepers ſide, with which he runs them both through, and ſo eſcapes to his fellows: *Haymburg* on the confines of *Hungary* and *Auſtria* is ſurrendred to *Matthias*, and ſo is the Caſtle for a ſum of money: after this he takes *Pruck* a ſtrong Town on the river of *Leythe*; having taken in many Towns and Forts about *Vienna*, he forceth it at laſt by famine to ſurrender; after 7. months ſiege he takes *Neuſtad*. At laſt betaking himſelf to his reſt a while, and to be merry, upon Palmſunday at table after his mirth, he fell into ſuch a paſſion of anger, becauſe the figs which he called for were not ſo choiſe as he expected, that he fell ſuddenly into an Apoplexy, tumbling and roaring like a beaſt on the ground ſpeechleſs, and ſo died: He was buried at *Alba regalis*; he was both a good ſcholler, and a lover of ſchollers, with which he furniſhed his kingdome; he erected a great Library, and took much delight in the company of *Regi-Montanus*.

An. Chriſti.

1467.

1476.

1490.

Ladiſlaus 2. who was K. of *Bohemia*, marrieth with *Matthias* his widow, and ſo becomes K. of *Hungary*. About theſe times *Maximilian* 1. recovers *Vienna*, *Neuſtad* and *Pruck*, with almoſt all *Auſtria*; then he takes *Alba*, with ſome other Towns and Caſtles, which afterward he reſtored to *Ladiſlaus*, whoſe former wife being dead, he marrieth a French Lady, of whom he had *Ludovic* and *Anna*; it was agreed between *Maximilian* and him, that if the K. ſhould die childleſs, *Maximilian* and his poſterity ſhould ſucceſſively enjoy the Crowns of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*. After this a great ſedition was raiſed in *Hungary*; for whilſt the Cardinal of *Strigon* was preaching the Croſs for raiſing of Forces againſt the Turk, the Ambaſſador of *Ladiſlaus* at that time was making peace with *Solyman*: many had taken Arms againſt the Turk, which they would not lay down again, but elected for their King, Captain *George Zeck*, who had heretofore given ſome defeats to the Turk; theſe like mad men run through *Hungary*, demoliſhing divers Forts and Monaſteries, murthering the Gentry with their wives and children, plundring their goods, and deflouring of virgins; they hale the Biſhop of *Chona*, with which death they threaten the Archbiſh. of *Strigon* and others; but ſhortly after, this new K. *George*, with his Captains, were apprehended by Count *John* the Vayvod, who uſed them with deſerved rigor, he cauſeth a burning iron Crown to be ſet on his head, then two of his veins to be opened, the blood whereof he preſents to his brother *Luke* to drink; beſides he cauſed 30. Boors who had been kept from food three daies, to fall upon their yet living king with their teeth; whoſe fleſh they tore and eat; but the king ſeemed to be no waies dejected or afraid;

1516.

An. Christi. afraid, he only desired his brother might be excused, being by him compelled to this war; at length when all his limbs were torn, they bowelled him, and having cut his body in pieces, they rost some parts, and boil the rest, which they present to his souldiers to eat, who having filled themselves were tortured to death
1516. with *Luke Zeck*. King *Ladislaus* died at *Buda*, and was buried in *Alba regalis*.

To hm succeeded his son *Ludovic* 2. in the Kingdoms of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*; in his time *Solyman* the Turk invadeth *Hungary* with a great Army, wasting all before him; the place that lay first open to his fury was the Archbishoprick of *Colonza*, therefore the King by the Popes aid makes *Paul Tomori* (now a Franciscan, but heretofore a publike and stout Champion against the Turk) Archbishop of that place, for those times required such a man there. King *Ludovic* married with *Mary*, *Maximilian* the Emperors kinswoman, who afterwards was governess in *Belgium*: King *Ludovicks* sister
1526. *Anna* was bestowed on *Ferdinand*, who afterward was King of *Hungary*. King *Ludovic* understanding that the Turk was again comming upon *Hungary* with another Army, he meets him in person with strong forces, being urged thereto by the Nobility, whose priviledge was, as they said, not to go to war without the Kings own presence; in this unhappy encounter there fell on the Christian side nineteen thousand, besides divers Princes and Prelates, among which were the Archbishop of *Strigon*, *Paul Tomori* the Monk; the king having escaped, fell with his horse into a bog, where he died miserably; two months after his body in armour, with his horse were found; he was carried and buried in *Alba regalis*: the Turk pursues his victory, raging with fire & sword till he came to *Buda* the Metropolis, which was quickly surrendred to him, the Queen with the chief of the City being fled to *Vienna*: the Castle held out, in which was a garrison of *Germans*, who perceiving that the *Turks* went about to spring mines, articuled that they might depart with their baggage; this was assented to, but promise not kept, for all of them were cut in peeces by the Turks cimiters, onely the Captain escaped, because the souldiers against his will, had delivered up the Castle to the enemy; into the woods were fled above 25 thousand Christians, besides women and children, against whom the Turks discharged their great ordnance, and almost destroyed them all. After the Turk had wasted higher *Panonia*, he returns unto *Constantinople*. After the death of *Ludovic*, *John* the Vayvod of *Transilvania* is by some elected king, against the will of the Palatine of *Hungary*, and the chief Prelates, who had called in *Ferdinand* brother to *Charles* 5. Emperor, so that now there were two kings elected: the Vayvod sent to the French king for aid against king *Ferdinand*, of whose injustice he complained by his letters to the Emperor *Charles* and the Electors, protesting that if he should be forced to seek for aid elsewhere, that he was not to be blamed; wherefore when he saw no help, he swore allegiance to *Solyman*, desiring his protection, which he had long since proposed, if *Ferdinands* power should be too great for him.

Ferdinand Archduke of *Austria* and king of *Bohemia* is elected king of *Hungary*, he with a strong Army marcheth to *Buda*, which he taketh, with the greatest part of the kingdome; after this he is crowned at *Alba*. *Casimir* Marques of *Brandeburg* his General, in this expedition dieth at *Buda*, where he is
1529. honourably interred. The Vayvod invites *Solyman* the Turk into *Hungary*, who takes by storm the Town and Castle of *Buda* after eleven attempts: *John* the Vayvod, whom the Turks call *Erdelban*, meets the Turk with rich presents, and kisseth his hand, by whom he is confirmed in the kingdome of *Hungary*, and receiveth from him *Buda* the royal seat, which he held till his death, *an.* 1540. After this *Solyman* takes in divers Towns upon the Danow: the 26. of *Septemb.* he sate down before *Vienna* in *Austria* with 200000. Turks, for twenty dayes together he playeth upon the City with his ordnance, and oftentimes assaulted it, but in vain; he lost in that siege above 80000. at last being forced with cold, he raiseth his siege, and returns by *Buda* to *Byzantium*.

Chap.

CHAP. XIII.

1. *A prosecution of the* Hungarian *Historie, from the year,* 1532. *till* 1629.

Solyman being enraged for his great loss at *Vienna*, and that he was forced to raise his siege, returns with a great power, to wit, 300000 men, and 120 great Canon. He first besiegeth the little Fort and Castle of *Gunta*; which he assaulted thirteen times, and thirteen times was beat off with great losse At last perceiving the courage of *Nicholas Jurith*, an *Hungarian*, and Governour, who would not yeild, though the Town was almott battered to the ground with great Guns, invites him to a surrender upon fair tearms; That he should remain Governour as he was; and that all the Inhabitants shall stay and enjoy all that they ow without any hurt. The *Hungarian* accepts of the conditions: Then the Turk removes to the borders of *Stiria*: He permits his chief Bashai, with fifteen thousand, to wast and plunder the Countrey before him; but as he was returning to the Army with his spoiles, he was so circumvented between the Mountains by some *Cæsarian* Horse going for *Vienna*, that scarse two hundred of fifteen thousand Turks escaped. The Emperor in a short time raiseth an Army of thirty thousand Horse, and two hundred thousand foot, which when the Turk understood, he retreats with all speed to his own confines. About five years after, *Ferdinand* raiseth an other Army of eight thousand Horse, and sixteen thousand foot, under the conduct of *Catrian*, who perfidiously betrayed the Army to the Turk. Not long after, this Traytor labours to perswade Count *Nicholas* of *Serinum*, with whom he was intimate, to side with the Turks; But *Nicholas* caused his head to be cut off, which he sent to King *Ferdinand* as a present, for which, he was rewarded with all *Catrians* Estate. *An. Christi* 1532.

John, the *Vayvod* of *Transylvania*, dyeth at *Buda*: he left behinde him a young son, in whose Non age, his Mother undertook the Government. *Ferdinand* lieth Siedge to *Buda*, which the Turks understanding, they make hast thither with a great Army, under one of the Basha's. *Ferdinand's* Forces beat day and night against the City with their Ordnance, but to no end; for they were forced to raise the Seige, with great loss. The Turk enters *Buda*, and *Pesth*; the Government of both places he commits to the Bellerbeg, and sends away the Widdow and her son to *Transylvania*. About two years after, a numerous Army is sent by *Ferdinand* into *Hungaria*, under *Joachim* Elector of *Braudeburg*; with whom the Pope joyns three thousand Horse; these besiege *Pesth*, playing continually with their Ordnance on it; but to no purpose, for the Plague so raged in the Army, that it swept away many thousands in a short time. That same year there died at *Vienna* eighteen thousand of the sickness. The next year *Soliman* takes in *Hungaria*, the City and Castle of *Strigon*, after many assaules. Then three months after, he takes *Alba Regalis* upon surrender: It was Articled, That the Inhabitants should be dismissed without hurt: but *Soliman* causeth them all to repair to the Castle, where he disarms them; then picks out the strongest bodied of them, the rest he commanded to be hewed in pieces. Then he makes *Mahomet Zaoglis* Governour of all *Hungaria*. Four years after, *Anna*, Queen of *Hungaria*, King *Ferdinand's* wife, died in Child-bed. The next year after King *Ferdinand* took *Agria*, and divers Forts: Shortly after, in upper *Panonia*, 1540. 1543.

An. Christi *Panonia*, by the Earl of *Salm*, *Anno*, 1550. *Teufel*, *Ferdinands* Gene-
ral is defeated by the Turk, who takes divers places this year from the
1550 King, and besiegeth *Agria*, an Episcopal Seat, with all the strength he could make: But the Inhabitants united themselves by a solemn Covenant, subscribed with their own bloud: so that the Turks Army was forced with shame to raise the siege, having discharged against it twelve thousand bullets out of their Ordnance: Not long after a peace is made at *Constantinople*, between *Ferdinand* and the Turk. About six years after, the *Transylvanians* revolt from *Ferdinand* their King, to *John Sigismund*, son of the abovenamed *Vayvod*: and two years after, *Ferdinand* is chosen Emperor of the Romans.

1560 After the Turk had taken *Felica*, a strong Town in the higher *Panonia*; a peace is concluded between *Ferdinand* and *Soliman*. Four years after *Ferdinand* died at *Vienna*, and was buried at *Prague*. His son *Maximilian* the second, succeeded in *Bohemia*, and *Hungaria*, and likewise in the Empire. He was crowned King of *Hungaria*, with *Mary* his wife, before his Fathers death. The next year after, *Sigismund* the *Vayvod*, and Vassall of *Solyman*, violates the peace, and takes *Zatmar*, which shortly after way recovered by *Maximilian*, with divers other adjacent places. After this, the *Vayvod* solicits *Solyman* to make an expedition
1565 into *Hungaria*: upon this, a command is sent to the Bashai of *Buda*, to be in Arms, and to begin the War. Mean while the *Vayvod*, who called himself King of *Hungaria*, summons a Diet of his people, telling them that his most Clement Patron, *Solyman*, had enjoyned all the people of *Hungaria* to subject themselves to the Scepter of his Vassal, the *Vayvod*: and not long after, *Solymon* enters *Hungaria*, whom the *Vayvod* met with rich presents, in hope to obtain from him that Kingdom: but he was deceived. The Bashai of *Buda* besiegeth *Palota*, which is stoutly defended by *George Thurin*, and relieved by *George* of *Helfenstein*. The Turks seeing new Forces comming, run all away, leaving behind them their Ordnance, and all their Provision, after they had full eight days together battered the walls, which are now again repaired. The Christians shortly after take *Vesprin*, and put all the Turks, except five, to the sword: they take also some Castles. The same year the *Scythians* upon *Solymans* invitation and the Vayvods, fall with fire and sword on the higher *Panonia*, carrying thence many Christians; but *Lazarus* of *Schwend* with some small Forces defeated ten thousand of them, and then takes divers places from *George Bebec* an *Hungarian* Peer, who had revolted to the Turk. Mean while the Emperor makes an expedition into *Hungaria*, to relieve the lower *Panonia* which the Turk was now wasting: he fortifieth some places which were in danger to be surprised at *Taurinum*, where the Emperor was: there happened such a fire, that the whole city was almost burned down; the souldiers instead of quenching the fire, carryed away the Merchants goods: but the Emperor raised a great summe to rebuild the town again.

Anno 1567. At *Constantinople*, a peace for eight years is concluded between *Maximilian* the second, and *Solymus Sultan*. One of the Articles
1571 was, That each one should keep quietly what he had gotten: this pacification was afterwards prolonged. *John Sigismund* the Vayvod dyed without issue, but not without suspition of poyson. To him succeeded *Stephen Bathori*, who was to continue the annual tribute to the Turk. This is he who afterward by the *Sultans* recommendation, was elected K. of *Poland*.

1574 The Turk before the peace was expired, fell upon *Hungaria*, where he killed above one thousand Christians, and returned with great booty

About.

About the end of this year died *Selymus* at *Byzantium*: and two years after *Maximilian* at *Ratisbon*. To him succeeded *Ralph* the second, his sonne: he was King of *Hungaria* and *Bohemia* before, and afterward was elected Emperor. *An. Christi*

Anno 1579. The Turks fall upon a great many unarmed Christians, being at a fair in *Sixo*: Some they hacked and hewed with their Cimiters, others they led away captive, with their goods: they tyed two thousand of them together like Horses, whom as they were carrying away, the *Hungarian* Rusticks in great companies pursued, delivered the Captives, and killed many of the Turks, carrying away the rest prisoners. The like cruelty in higher *Panonia* was exercised by the Turk, and the like measure they received from the Christians near *Agria*. The Emperor had a conference with the *Hungarian* Peers at *Posonium*, about securing the Kingdom from the Turks. 1579 1580

Anno 1582. During the peace, an Army of sixty thousand Turks, under *Sanzacus*, broke in upon the higher *Panonia*, wasting with fire and sword all that lay in their way: but as they were returning home with their spoiles and plunder, the *Cæsarian* Forces set upon them near *Agria*, killed most of them, and recovered the Plunder. The news of this overthrow did highly move and incense the great Turk at *Byzantium*: but when he understood how the Turks without any ground or provocation began the quarrel, he was satisfied and appeased, and of his own accord desired a continuation of the peace, which was effected between *Rodolph* the second, Emperor, and *Amurath* the third, for eight years, beginning the first of *January*, *Anno* 1584. Yet three years after the Turks robbed fifteen Villages, and carried away many Christians; but *George Serin* recovered the bootie, with the losse of two thousand Turks. 1587

Some few years after, *Mathias*, the Emperors brother, with a great Army out of *Germany*, fell upon the truce-breaking Turks of *Hungaria*: *Novigrad* is surrendred to *Mathias*. *Serin*, takes divers castles. *Tiefenbach*, having slaughterd divers Turks, took *Fasprin* by assault. *Mathias* fell upon *Strigon*, and took the old town; but whilst he was beleaguering the new town, and hearing that *Sinan* the Turk was coming, he riseth with his Army against the *Germans* will. 1594

This *Sinan*, with one hundred thousand Turks, and sixty thousand Tartars, besiegeth *Javernum*. A terrible battle is fought, in which *Sinan* lost one hundred thousand men. But *Hardeckins*, notwithstanding he was promised by *Mathias* to be relieved within two days, delivers up *Faurin* to the Turk: For which fact, afterward he lost his head. In this strong town were one hundred fifty great guns, six thousand of the Garrison were killed, three thousand dismissed. The Island *Comora*, over against the town was stoutly defended by the *Germans*. *Sinan* being dead with griefe for his many losses, *Mahumet* the *Sultan* prepares to invade *Panonia* with a great army. Mean while the Christians take *Hatuana*, using there all manner of cruelty, which upon the coming of the Turk, they plunder and burn. But the *Sultan* revenged himselfe upon the *Agrians*, whom he put all to the sword. *Pappa* is delivered up to the Turk by the Christian Garrison, for want of pay: which town, whilst *Swartzemburg* afterward besieged, he is killed with a musket bullet. *Rederus* pursueth the Traytors, some of which he tortured and put to death. *Philip Emanuel* of *Lorrain* imployeth his army against the Turks, from whom he took by force *Alba Regalis*, but the souldiers defaced and ransacked the town, not sparing the ancient Regal bones and Monuments of *Hungary*. The Turks striving to regain the City, were beat back with great loss, but the next year the Conqueror being dead, they retake the place. 1596

An. Christi

1602 *George Basta*, growing bold upon the Turks weakneſs, (for the Sultan was yet a childe, and the *Perſians* had over-run his Dominions as far as *Babylon*) raiſeth an inteſtine War between *Hungaria*, and *Dacia*. He forceth the Proteſtants to hear Maſſe, Plundering thoſe that refuſed: but the Turks took courage, and withall, *Peſta*, being forſaken by the Chriſtians, out of fear: afterward they take *Strigonium*, after it had been ten years under *Rodolphus*. *Bethleem Gabor*, having married the Widow of *Moyſes*, the *Ciculian*, was in hope to become maſter of *Tranſylvania*, but his hopes were blaſted by the victory which *Tampirius* had over him. *Sthephen Botſcatus*, a kinſeman of *Battors*, ſtood up for liberty of Conſcience, in defence of the Proteſtants: acknowledgeing *Caſars* right no otherways, then upon this liberty. But the inteſtin Wars cauſed ſuch ſterility and devaſtation, that for want of other food, parents did eat their children; which was

1610 preſaged by a new ſtar, as *Kepler* obſerves. *Mathias* being eſtabliſhed in *Hungaria*, makes peace with the *Turk*, and enters *Bohemia* vvith a great Army, vvhere he is Proclaimed King, and by the conſent of his brother the Emperor, is Crovvned. *Forgatzias* the Palatin of *Hungaria*, marcheth into *Dacia*; where he brings *Claudiopolis*, and other towns into the obedience of King *Mathias*: but ſhortly after he is beaten by *Battorius*, and hardly eſ-

1611 caped with his life through the woods. *Battorius* in *Tranſylvania*, attempting to take *Cronſtad* by ſtorm, ſends *Andrew Gietzius* to the great *Turk* for aid; but *Andrew* promiſeth to the Sultan ſome Caſtles, if he would confer the Principality on him: order preſently upon this motion, is given to *Mahumet* Baſſai, that he ſhould turn out *Battorius*, and ſettle *Gietzius* in his place: Which *Battorius* perceiving deſires aſſiſtance from the Palatine of

1612 *Hungaria*, and Protection from King *Mathias*; at which the *Turk* was offended, and expoſtulated with *Mathias*, yet was not in capacity to make War againſt him, becauſe of the *Arabian* Rebellion. *Gabriel Bator*, willing to retain *Dacia*, halted ſo long between the Emperor, and *Turk*, that *Bethleem*

1613 *Gabor* rebels againſt him, and at laſt by the *Turks* aid, utterly defeats him, who the year following was murthered by his own ſervants. *Gabor* alſo to keep what he had got, ſwears fealty both to *Cæſar*, and the Sultan. The *Turks* break the peace, and burn ſome towns in *Hungaria*. *Gabor* in *Hungaria* and *Dacia*, ſubjected *Lippa*, and ſome other places to the *Turk*; and would alſo have delivered up *Waradin* to the Sultan for a reward of his

1616 protection; about which, he and *Humanoius* fell at variance. Near *Agria*, the *Turks* making excurſions, are defeated by the *Heiducci*; but in *Polonia* they have better ſucceſs being aſſiſted by the *Tartars*, whom the *Coſſacks* had provoked by their dayly plunderings.

1617 *Mathias*, King of *Hungaria*, and *Bohemia*, who was alſo Emperor, cauſed his Coſin Jerman, *Ferdinand*, to be declared King of *Hungaria*. *Bethleem Gabor*, the *Turks* Vaſſal, having by letters imparted his reſolutions to the *Bohemians*, and gaping after the Crown of *Hungaria*, enters that Kingdom with a great Army, and takes *Caſſovia*, *Poſon*, and other places, ſome by ſtorm, ſome by ſurrender: he aſſumes the title of Prince of *Hungaria*, and

1619 ſeizeth on the Crown, which was uſually kept at *Poſon*, and uſeth the Papiſts with all extremity. Not long after, he calls a Diet of his Faction (the Clergie, and chief Peers of the Kingdom, being abſent; and divers Cities whoſe Legates were there proteſting againſt it) by which he is proclaimed King of *Hungaria*: then he makes an incurſion upon *Auſtria*, and ſends

1620 aid to the Palſegrave. *Dampier*, attempting to take *Poſon*, is killed. The Emperor ſends out his Declarations againſt *Gabor*, for invading the Kingdome of *Bohemia*, for delivering to the *Turk* ſome Forts of that Kingdom, and for aſſuming the title of King. Notwithſtanding *Gabor* had poſſeſſion of the Crown, which he removed from *Poſon*, to a more ſecure place, yet

refuſeth

refuseth to be Crowned. And the rather because *Bucquoi* was entered *Hungaria* with an Imperiall Army, with which many of the Princes and Cities joyned and fell off from *Gabor*. Besides that, *Bucquoi* had taken *Poson*, with divers other towns. So that now *Gabor* was in danger of losing *Hungaria* totally: but the untimely death of *Bucquoi* put him in fresh hopes again, therefore he recovers some lost places, besiegeth *Poson*, but is repulsed with great loss: at last, he is reconciled to *Cæsar*, and is enjoyned to restore the Regall Crown, and to govern those places now in his possession, in *Cæsars* name. The next year after this, the Crown is restored to *Cæsar*, and *Gabor* sends an extraordinary Ambassador to the Port, to acquaint the *Turk* with the reasons why he made peace with *Cæsar*, shewing he was necessitated thereto by the desolation, famine, and sickness of *Hungaria*, his souldiers not being longer able to subsist there: besides, he feared a revolt of his own people in *Dacia*, by the instigation of *Cæsar*, and the *Polander*. Lastly, seeing the *Sultan* had concluded a sudden Peace with the *Poles*, he was afraid the burthen of the War would be left upon him alone, but withall he saith, that his Master meant not to keep the peace long, therefore desires full power from the *Sultan* that he, with the Bashai of *Buda*, might when they saw cause invade the Empire or *Poland*. This motion was sleighted by the *Sultan*, who now was unfit for a War abrode, and perceived that *Gabor* aimed holy at his own ends. Yet the next year an Army was granted by the *Turk* to *Gabor*, for subduing of *Hungaria*, to the wonder of those who knew the *Turks* weakness at this time. *Gabor* being then at *Cassovia*, receives the Turkish Forces, which he joyns with his own, but he wanted Artillery and other necessaries: his chief hope was in a generall revolt of *Hungaria*, and assistance from the United Princes of *Germany*: but the States of *Dacia*, assembling at *Alba Julia* shewed how unwilling they wear to break with the Emperor; therefore they send to him, who at *Vienna* receiveth the Commissioners kindly, and sends the Bishop of *Nitria* to *Dacia*, where a new peace is concluded between *Cæsar*, and *Transylvania*.

An. Christi

1621

1622

1623

But not long after, *Gabor* with an Army of 60000. over-runns *Hungaria*, at last he makes a truce of ten monthes with the Imperialists. The next year, *Cæsar* raiseth an Army of 50000. to invade *Hungaria*, which made the *Turk* jealous, but *Cæsars* Ambassador assured him, that the Emperor intended no hurt to the Port, but onely to recover what *Gabor* had taken from him. Yet some supplies were sent to *Gabor* by the *Turk*: mean while, the Prince fearing *Cæsars* greatness, makes an absolute peace with him, disclaiming all title to *Hungaria*, and consenting that *Cæsars* Sonne should be presently chosen King thereof; that the Prince of *Transylvania*, should serve him in all his occasions; that *Gabor* should remain quietly, Prince of *Dacia*, Earl of the *Ciculi*, and Lord of *Cassovia*, which after his life should return to the Crown of *Hungaria*. This Article much troubled the *Sultan*, who desired not that *Dacia* should depend on the Empire. After this *Gabor* sends to the Port for a confirmation of his Lady in the succession to the Principality of *Dacia*, which the *Turk* put off, because of his troubles with the *Persian*. Yet fearing least the Prince should take a confirmation of the Emperor, the grant is dispatched.

1624

1626

The Prince joyns his Forces with the Bashai of *Buda*. *Walstein* endeavored to keep them from joyning vvith Count *Mansfelt*, but could not: so after divers skirmishes, the Imperialists are beaten. But shortly after, *Gabor* sends to *Cæsar*, to excuse his taking up Armes, because some Articles were not observed.

Then he sends to the Port, to excuse his making of peace vvith *Cæsar*; because the Bashai of *Buda* was called avvay from him by the *Sultan*. So

Janus

An. Christi Janus like, he looks both ways. Yet underhand he aids the confederate Princes, and ſtirs up the *Turk* againſt *Cæſar*, fearing too much his greatneſſe.

For this cauſe, the Baſha of *Buda* is continued in his place, and order
1627 given, that when occaſion ſerved he ſhould aid *Gabor*. *Cæſar* ſends a private Agent to the Port, complaining againſt *Gabor*, and that he was the chiefe diſturber of the peace: theſe Letters were intercepted by the *Viſier*, and not ſuffered to come to the *Sultan*, but ſent to the Baſhai of *Buda*, to manage things as he thought good. The *Turk* at laſt, upon *Cæſars* ſecond complaint, checks *Gabor* for his double dealing. At laſt, after all his jug-
1629 gling tricks, death, which cannot be deluded ſeizeth on him.

CHAP. XIV.

The affaires of Germany, Hungaria, Poland, Turky, Bohemia, Auſtria, Millan, Naples, Cyprus, *and* Boruſſia, *under* Albert *and* Frederick, *Emperors, from the year one thouſand four hundred thirty eight, till the year one thouſand four hundred eighty.*

1438 ALbert, ſon in Law to *Sigiſmund*, in the ſpace of a few months, being but Duke of *Auſtria*, became Duke of *Lucemburge*, Marqueſs of *Moravia*, King of *Hungaria*, and *Bohemia*, and withall, *Emperor* of the *Romans*. He ſcarce ſate two full years in this dignity: for the ſecond year of his Empire, he was taken with a dyſenterie, by a ſurfet of Musk-millions, and dyed in *Hungaria*, near *Strigon*.

He was fain to fight for the Kingdom of *Bohemia*; For ſome of the Nobility had called in the *Polander*, againſt whom, the Emperor imployed *Albert*, Marquiſs of *Brandenburge*, who defeated the *Polander*, and made him ſue for peace, and leave *Bohemia*: to which Kingdom, *Albert* had a twofold Title; one by his Wife *Elizabeth*, of the Royall blood; the other, by vertue of a Covenant between the *Auſtrians*, and *Bohemians*; That when in either Houſe the iſſue Male did fail, the other ſhould enjoy the Crown. The *Hungarians* were not content that their King ſhould meddle with the Empire, becauſe that whileſt *Sigiſmund* was buſie about the Imperial affairs, *Hungaria* was expoſed to the fury of the *Turks*. The reaſon why *Ptarſco*, Chief of the *Huſsites*, called into *Bohemia*, *Caſimir*, Brother to *Ladiſlaus* of *Poland*, was, for that *Albert* was much addicted to the Roman faith, and a bitter enemy to *Huſſe*: therefore he fortified all the Cities of the *Huſsits*, and joyned the *Thaborits* with the *Polanders*, but they were (as we have ſaid) defeated, and divers *Huſsits* carried away priſoners by *Frederick*, Elector of *Saxony*.

Cæſar having left a Vice-roy in *Bohemia*, falls upon *Poland* with Fire and Sword: but his ſickneſs cauſed a peace. He left two daughters behinde him; *Anna*, who married *William*, Duke of *Saxonie*; and *Elizabeth*, wife of *Caſimir*, King of *Poland*: he had alſo a Poſt-humus ſon, *Ladiſlaus*, whom his Mother Crowned the 4. month of his age, which Crovvn ſhe had ſecretly conveyed, and hid for that purpoſe.

But the Coronation of this young King, could not keep *Hungaria* from troubles; For *Amurath*, vvho lately had deprived *George Deſpot* of *Servia*, (vvhoſe daughter he married) both of his Principality, and tvvo ſonnes, vvhom he left at *Sanderovia*, vvhich tovvn the *Turk* took, and the tvvo ſons he cauſed to be both emaſculated, and exoculated, pretending they vvere about to raiſe nevv Forces for their Father: I ſay, this *Amurath* invades

Hungaria,

Hungaria, with Fire and ſword: the *Hungarians* to encreaſe their ſtrength, propoſe a Treaty between their Queen and *Ladiſlaus* of *Poland*. The Q. willing to preſerve the Crown entire for her ſon, refuſeth to marry, which occaſioned a great War; For divers of the Hungarian Peers ſided with *Ladiſlaus*, others with the *Poſt-humus* King. *An. Chriſti*

The *Polander* by the help of the *Hungarian* Peers, take many places in *Hungaria*: the Queen on the other ſide was buſie in retaking the ſame places. Mean while *Amurath* was not idle, but brings his Army through *Myſia*, and *Triballiæ*, and ſits down before *Belgrade* of old *Taurunum*, the chief Fort of that Kingdom

Ladiſlaus gave the charge of *Tranſylvania*, to *John Huniades*, to keep off the *Turks* on that ſide. *George*, he ſends to the borders, to keep the *Turks* at *Belgrade* from excurſions. The Chriſtian Princes underſtanding their danger, ſtrove to take up the difference between *Ladiſlaus* and the *Queen Mother*; and withall, to beſtow her two daughters on the two brothers, *Caſimer* and *Ladiſlaus*: in the interim, *Huniades* defeats the Turks, recovers all *Moldavia*, and a part of *Servia*, with *Bulgaria*, by the help of *Ladiſlaus*. *Huniades* in one day, defeated the Turks in five ſeveral Battels, and towards night, he utterly routed the *Baſhai* of *Anatolia*, *Amurath*s his kinſman. 30000 *Turks* were here loſt.

Amurath, to repair this loſs, ſends *Carambeius* the Baſha of *Phrygia*, with a great Army, which *Ladiſlaus* by the prudence of *Huniades*, totally diſcomfited in the Valley of *Hemus*. This ſo affrighted *Amurath*, that he was about to have killed himſelf had not *Halibæus Baſha*, who ſucceeded *Carambeius* encouraged him to raiſe a new army, and to elude, *Fabius* like, with long delays, the courage of *Huniades*, by ſhutting up the Streights of Mount *Rodope*, which *Ladiſlaus* perceiving, returns in a tryumphing way, but againſt the will of *Huniades*, to *Belgrade*, ſhewing his booties to the people, and with them, captive *Carambeius*.

Upon the reporte of theſe Victories, *Caramannus*, Prince of *Cilicia* is encouraged to invade *Pontus*, and *Bithynia*, the Turks Provinces in *Aſia*, *Amurath*s being unable to undertake two Wars at once, and fearing the greatneſs of the Europæan enemy, ſends Ambaſſadors to treat with *Ladiſlaus* for peace, upon what conditions he pleaſeth. It was agreed, that *Amurath*s ſhould depart out of *Servia*; deliver up all the Towns and Garriſons he had taken there, and reſtore to *George*, the *Deſpot*, his ſonnes, and whole Eſtate, and for the time to come, ſhould offer him no wrong: and that he ſhould not meddle with *Moldavia*, and that part of *Bulgaria* which was loſt.

*Amurath*s defired, that he might onely retain *Bulgaria*, to which *Ladiſlaus* aſſented, and ſo the peace was concluded for ten years, and ratified by a ſolemn Oath. But *Ladiſlaus*, a fiery ſpirited young Prince, more Ambitious of War-like glory, then of peaceable ſecurity, ſoon after *Amurath*s was gone into *Aſia*, breaks the League by the inſtigation of Pope *Eugenius*, and *Julian* the Cardinal, who perſwaded him he might lawfully violate the Oath he took to an enemy of *Chriſt*, and that he ſhould have Abſolution, and withall the aſſiſtance of the Pope, *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, and the *Venetian* Fleet, which ſhould ſtop *Amurath*s from conveying aid by the *Helleſpont*, out of *Aſia* into Europe. Upon theſe perſwaſions and hopes, that *Ladiſlaus* ſhould recover again the Greek Empire, and preſuming on his former fortunes, marcheth with his Army through *Walachia*, and *Bulgaria*, till he ſtayed at *Varna*, of old *Dionyſiopolis*, a town in *Bulgaria*, where he fell ſick,

*Amurath*s upon theſe news, leaves *Caramannus*, and returns to the *Helleſpont* with all ſpeed, and at *Calliopolis*, tranſmits his Army into Europe, in the fight

An. Christi ſight of the Italian Fleet, which perfiduouſly ſufferd them to paſs. The ſhips that tranſported them, were theſe of *Genua*. The *Turks* with an incredible celerity, march towards *Adrianopolis*, and before *Ladiſlaus* knew of any thing, lying yet at *Varna*; They pitch their Camp cloſe by him: the Chriſtian Army was ſo ordered by *Huniades*, that one ſide of it was defended by a Lake, the other by Waggons and Chariots, chained together like a Wall: the hills behind them guarded the Rear: the fight continued three days and nights together with ſuch violence, that the fields run with bloud. The Victory was inclining to the Chriſtians, for the Turks began to give ground, and to fly away diſorderedly: the Prelates too raſhly drew the reſt of the Army to purſue farther then was ſafe; for the *Turk* perceiving that now the Chriſtians lay open, who before were in a manner encloſed with Fences, he cauſeth all his Archers to let flie at them, by which means they were preſently diſordered, and incloſed by the Turks Legions.

The young King having got into the Turks Life-guard, had his Horſe ſhot under him, and he himſelf was ſlain, with many wounds. The Prelates in their flight fell into Bogges, and were drowned. *Huniades*, with much difficulty eſcaped, and that part of the Army that fled, dyed miſerably: ſome with cold and hunger in the Woods: ſome with toyl and watching, and many drowned in Lakes and Pools. *Julian*, the Author of breaking the Oath, was found dead in the way, of many wounds: ſome think he was murthered of his own party. *Huniades*, the ſcourge of Turky, the defendor of *Hungaria*, and Bulwark of Chriſtendom, was preſerved by God for more work: He after this defeated *Mahumet*, *Amuraths* ſucceſſor at the ſiedge of *Belgrade*, where forty thouſand *Turks* were ſlain; but having overwearied himſelf, with two days fight, he fell ſick, who commen-in gthe care of his Countrey to *Christ*, and exhorting his ſons to virtue, departed this life.

Ladiſlaus, *Albertus* his *Poſt-hume*, was educated by *Frederick* the Emperor, who would not ſuffer the *Hungarians* to enjoy him, though they had often Petitioned, till he was of years and underſtanding, fit for Government; in which he was altogether ruled by *Ulricus* his kinſman, Earl of *Cilia*, which encreaſed the peoples ill opinion of the King, and their old hatred againſt *Ulricus*, who alwaies envied *Huniades* for his valor and happineſs, and uſed all opportunities he could, to diſgrace and murther him: and being neither ſatisfied with his virtues, nor content with his death, he perſecutes his Children, *Ladiſlaus* and *Matthias*, whom by falſe calumnies he thought to oppreſs.

Therefore one day *Ladiſlaus* coming to expoſtulate with the Earl, from words, they fell to blows: *Ulricus*, that began the quarrel, and drew firſt, was killed by *Ladiſlaus*, who cleared himſelf to the King, and upon that received the publique faith, and a pardon, with a purple garment: yet afterward upon new calumniations, the King cauſeth both the Brothers to be apprehended: He put *Ladiſlaus* to death, cauſing his head to be cut off in that purple Garment he gave him. He was three times ſtruck by the Executioner, and three times he lifts himſelf up, though his hands were bound, calling upon God, and pleading his innocency, but the fourth ſtroke cut off his head.

The King perceiving how he was hated of the people for this murther, and finding no ſecurity for his abode in *Hungaria*, goeth to *Bohemia*, whither he carried with him *Matthias*, the other ſon of *Huniades*; fearing leaſt the people might have in the Kings abſence tumultuouſly ſet him free; beſides he could put him to death more ſafely in *Bohemia*, then in *Hungaria*, where he was ſo well known. But before the King had pronounced

ſentence

sentence of death againſt *Matthias*, as he was celebrating his Nuptials with *Margaret*, King *Charles* the ſevenths daughter of *Thrace*, at *Prague*, he was poyſoned, of which he died within few hours. *Boiebracius*, one of the greateſt men in that Kingdome, ſeized on the Crown: who reſtored upon the deſire of the *Hungarians*, *Matthias* to his Liberty, and beſtowed his daughter on him, with many rich gifts, by which he was fitted to receive the Crown of *Hungaria*, which was ſet on his head by the general conſent of the people, who had not forgot what his Father had done for them. *An. Chriſti*

But though *Matthias* was thus Honourably dealt with, by the *Bohemian*, yet he ſufferd himſelf to be perſwaded by the Pope, to take up Arms againſt him, to the great prejudice of Chriſtianity.

To *Albert* in the Empire ſucceeded *Frederick* the third, of *Auſtria*, whoſe inaugurationwas accompanied with ſome *Auſtrian* troubles: for he had after the death of *Albert*, undertaken the tuition of *Ladiſlaus* King of *Hungaria*, and *Bohemia*, and Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*. But *Ulricus*, Earl of *Cilia*, great Uncle to the Childe, challengeth the right of Tuition: with him *Albert* ſides: He was *Fredericks* Brother who demanded a ſhare of his Fathers inheritance; but the two brothers were reconciled by the German Princes, and *Vlricus* is commanded to lay down his Arms. After this *Frederick* endeavors to compoſe the ſchiſm raiſed by Pope *Eugenius*, in calling a Synod at *Florence*, againſt that of *Baſil*; but when the *Dolphin* brought his *Armeniac* Forces, (ſo called from the Earl of *Armenia* in *Gaſcoin*, who was their Leader) againſt *Baſil*, he did not ſtir, becauſe he hated the *Switzers*, whom he ſuffers to be all cut off, being 1600. in number, by the French. Nor did ſtir in that War which was between *Albert* the Marquiſs, and the *Noribergers*. In 8. battels, *Albert* had the better, in the 9. he was beaten, and then he made peace with the confederat Cities.

Frederick having perſwaded *Fælix*, to reſigne the Pontificat to *Nicholas*, and him to confirm the decrees of *Baſil*, he repairs to Rome for his Coronation, with *Albert* his brother, and *Ladiſlaus* the young King. In his journey he beſtowed many Dignities, and titles of Honour upon the Italians, by which he procured much love among them. He entertained his Spouſe, *Lonora*, King *Edwards* daughter of Portugal, at *Cenæ*; thither ſhe came by ſea, and from thence he conveys her to Rome, where he was Crowned firſt King of the *Lombards*. (For *Millan* was fallen to *Francis Sfortia* upon the death of *Philip Maria Viſecount*, which ſucceſſion *Frederick* would not allow.) Two days after, with his new Bride, He was Crowned Emperor of the Romans. Upon his return homeward, the *Venetians*, and *Ferrarians* did Royally entertain him: for which he made the Marquiſs of *Ferraria*, Duke; and with the *Venetians* he made a league. Mean while, there were no ſmall troubles at home by the plottings of *Cilian*, and the *Auſtrians*, who demand the young King *Ladiſlaus* to govern them: ſo that he was foreced, being ſuddainly beſet with an Army, to diſmiſſe *Ladiſlaus*.

Frederick alſo had much trouble with *Albert* his brother, and *Sigiſmund Exerch* of *Auſtria*, about the Principality of that Countrey: for theſe were Coſin Jermans, or ſons of two brothers, and claimed an equal right: but after a long War, the Emperor at laſt obtained all *Auſtria*. After this he had troubles with *Matthias Huniades*, about the Kingdom of *Hungaria*: this was like to break out into open War, had not the differences been compoſed by the *German* Princes. For though ſome of the *Hungarian* Peers deſired *Frederick* to be their King, *Ladiſlaus* being dead, yet the major part were for their Countreyman *Huniades*, who yet could not obtain the Crown, which was delivered to *Frederick* with the tuition of the child, by

An. Christi *Elizabeth* the Mother, till he had redeemed it for 80000 Crowns. Mean while, *Pius* the second, the *Pope*, who had been Secretary to *Frederick* the Emperor, had deposed *Isebergius*, Bishop of *Mints*, for resisting the Levies of Money in *Germany*, enjoyned by the Pope for the Turkish War: and because he refused to take the Oath imposed on him, which was, That he, nor his successors should not without the Popes leave assemble the Princes for election of a new Emperor, or for any thing that concerned the state of the Empire: this occasioned matter for a new War. *Frederick* Count Palatin of the *Rhene*, and *Ludovic* of *Bavaria*, both hated by the Emperor, side with the Bishop against the Pope: but *Albert*, Marquis of *Brandeburg* with divers other Princes, take part with *Adolphus*, the new elected Bishop: who in a battel were defeated by the old Bishops faction, which was lesse
1461 numerous then the other.

This War was scarse ended, when a more dangerous ariseth between the Emperor, and *Matthias Corvinus*, King of Hungaria, about the Kingdom of *Bohemia*, which the Pope had bestowed on *Matthias* against *Boiebracius*, the *Hussits* Patron.

But the Emperor would not assent to this grant; whereupon *Matthias* is highly displeased, and the rather because the *Bohemians* and Emperor, had chosen *Ladislaus*, son to *Casimer*, King of Poland, by *Elizabeth*, daughter to *Albert* of *Austria*. In this War *Matthias* had got almost all *Austria* from *Frederick*. But *Albert*, Duke of *Saxony*, recovered it all again to the Empire, except *Vienna*, which *Albert* was loth to meddle with, because of the strength and power of that City.

In these troubles of *Germany*, *Frederick*, makes a journey to Rome, that he might perform his vow: but Pope *Pius* was dead, and had for his successor, *Paul* the second, a man of an evil report. After this, *Frederick* had troubles with *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*, that high spirited and turbulent Prince, who was much incensed because the Emperor would not confer on him, the Title, Crown, and dignity of a King: nor would he consent that *Charles* should be Lieutenant, or Vicar of the Empire. Upon this, *Charles* raiseth an Army, with which he besiegeth *Novesium*, or *Neuiss*, a confederate City four miles below *Colen*. *Frederick* on the other side Levieth 80000 men, among which were most of the Imperial Princes. The Duke of *Saxony* was Standerd bearer. But whilst both armies were preparing to fight, *Frederick* and *Charls* having had privat conference by the mediation of the Belgic Princes, peace is proclaimed in both Armys; and
1475 it is agreed, That *Charles* his onely daughter, should marry with *Maximilian*, the Emperors son, who was to enjoy all the Provinces belonging to *Charles*, if he should dye without issue male. But out of this peace were excluded, *Lewis*, King of *France*, *Sigismund Exarch* of *Austria*, the Emperors Cosin Jerman, *Renatus*, Duke of Lorrain, and the Switzers, who had broke in upon Burgundy by the instigation of King *Lewis*, and had taken two Towns.

Charles then removing his Camp from *Nuiss*, fell upon the *Lorrainer*, whom he drove out of most part of his countrey. Then he falls upon the *Switzers*, *Lorrains* Confederates, and takes from them the town and Castle of *Granson*; but at last his Army is totally routed by them, so that he hardly escaped himself.

The next year he was overthrown again by the *Switzers*: and the year after that, being the 3. Warre he had with the *Helvetians*, he both lost his Army and life by them. The perfidiousnes of *Campobassus*, the *Neapolitan*,
1477 who forsook him, was the cause of his overthrow, thus revenging himself for the cuff the Duke gave him on the ear heretofore. These troubles were accompanied by two Commets, the one appeared five years before

before the death of *Charles*, and the other, in the same year hee dyed. *An. Christi*

The death of *Charles* bred a new War between *Maximilian*, and the *French*. He claimed the marriage of *Mary*, *Charles* his Daughter, according to the Articles of pacification: and withall, the Provinces belonging to her.

The *French* on the contrary, assisted by some *Belgic* Princes, whose Chief was *Philip Ravesten*, wasted *Burgundy* and *Flanders*, and changed the Dukes Provinces: but at last *Maximilian* prevailed, though often times in danger by his seditious Subjects, chiefly at *Brugis*, where they had beset him. In 8. years space he recovered all his Father in law's Countries, chiefly by the help of *Albert*, Duke of *Saxony*. *Ravesten* is driven into *France*, where he was made Admiral of a Fleet, which he lost in a Seafight with the Turks near the Isle of *Lesbos*.

Frederick, after the death of *Mathias*, returns to *Austria*, where he suppressed the High-way-men. He was much troubled with a running Canker in the Foot, called by Physitians, *Phagedena*, and having overthrown his stomack with Musk-Millions, he fell into a loosenes that killed him the 78. year of his life, and of his Empire, the 54. He left onely two Children behinde him, *Maximilian*, who succeeded, and *Cunigunda*, that married with *Albert* of *Bavaria*. 1493

In *Bohemia*, *Bolebracius*, against whom the Pope had incensed *Mathias* of *Hungaria*, being dead, *Ladislaus* is made King, who makes War with the *Hungarian* for *Moravia*, and *Silesia*, which in hatred of the *Bohemian* Religion, submitted themselves to the *Hungarian*. But the controversie was taken up by the Princes, without effusion of bloud: and it was agreed that a part of *Silesia*, lying next to *Bohemia*, with both *Lusatia's*, should belong to *Ladislaus*, but *Matthias* should possesse the rest of *Silesia*, with *Moravia*, conditionally, That if he died without an Heir Male, it should return to *Ladislaus*; if he had an Heir, That then it should be free both to him, and to *Ladislaus*, either to leave, or buy these Provinces for 200000 Crowns.

In *Italy*, the differences about the Principalities of Millan, made way for *Francis Sfortia*, a Mercenary Souldier, to invade it. For *Philip* being dead, in whom the ancient Race of Viscounts, from *Matthew* the great, failed; so that none of that race was remaining, except *Valentina*, *Philips* sister, whom *John Galeatius* the Father, had married to *Lewis* of *Orleans*, son to *Charles* the fift of *France*; with whom he gave the Citie *Asta* for her portion, with this condition, That if her Brothers should die childeless, her children should be lawfull Heirs to the Principality of *Insubria*. This grant was not Confirmed by the Emperor, but by the Pope. Duke *Philip* had another Daughter, *Blance*, named by his Concubin, whom he bestows upon *Francis Sfortia*, and withall, *Cremona* for her portion: many laid claim to this Dukedom.

Frederick the Emperor by the Law of Feuds, which gives Title of Lands to the Lords, when there is no Heir; *Charles* of *Orleans*, by the right of his mother *Valentina*, to whose Heirs that *Dutchie* belonged by the will of *Galeatius*, Confirmed by the Pope; *Alphonsus* of *Arragon*, who seised on *Naples*, layeth claim by the last will of Duke *Philip*, vvho named him Heir for assisting him against the *Venetians*, vvhen they threatened *Millan*. *Francis Sfortia* in the right of his Wife, the Bastard of *Philip*, and by his last Will challenges the *Dutchie*. Mean while, the *Millanois* aimed at liberty. *Frederick*, being troubled vvith Domestick broiles, sleights his Title. *Charles* of *Orleans* sends an Army into Italy, under the command of *Reinaldus*, but he vvas taken, and his Army overthrovvn by the *Millanois* and so he lost that

An. Christi Principalily. *Alphonſus*, finding it too far from him, and beſet with ſo many Competitors, lets fall his claim. Mean while, the *Venetians* finding divers Cities of that *Dutchie*, unwilling to be under *Millan*, begin to fiſh in theſe troubled Waters.

Placentia and *Lauden*, freely ſubmit to *Venice*. *Papia* and *Derthona*, receive *F. Sfortia*. *Navarr*, lying next to *Vercelle*, come under the *Savoyen*: but *Sfortia* being hired by the *Millanois*, took *Placentia* and *Lauden* from the *Venetians*, whom he overthrows in a great Battel: then they make peace with him, and aſſiſt him againſt the *Millanois*, and afterward they help the *Millanois* againſt him, aiming at that Principality themſelves: but *Sfortia* deceived their hopes, for by his Arms and Fame, he made all the Cities of that Principality ſubmit to him. Then he called in *Bajazet* the Turk, againſt the *Venetians*: but at laſt, the *French* King apprehended him at *Novaria*, as he was raiſing of Forces out of *Germany*, *Switſerland*, and the *Griſons* Countrey. He carried him into France, where he impriſoned him: he died miſerably, and was juſtly puniſhed for his parricid and ambition, the 5. year of his impriſonment.

Frances, alſo, Grand-childe of *John Galeacies*, was brought into *France*, and there ſhut up within a Monaſtery. So *Lewis* the 12. obtained the Principality of *Inſubria*; and to corroborat his Title, he bribed ſome about the Emperor *Maximilian* with gold, to get his approbation, That *Lewis* with his poſterity, and Succeſſors, ſhould hold the *Dutchie* of *Millan* in Fee of the Emperor.

Lewis obtained to this purpoſe, the Emperors Patent, but with this clauſe, That he ſhould hold this *Dutchie* in Fee, ſo it might not prejudice anothers Title: upon this, Pope *Julius* (that he might drive the *French* quite out of Italy, who had already overthrown the *Ligurian*, & *Venetian* power by land) joyns his Forces with the *Venetians* and Switzers, and reſtores *Maximilian* to his Fathers Principality. which he held til the coming of King *Francis*, who having taken *Proſperus Columnus*, at the foot of the Alpes, and beaten the *Switzers* near *Millan*, he takes the City, and by a ſtrict Siege, forces *Maximilian* to ſurrender, who by poyſon loſt the uſe of his underſtanding. He was carried to *France*, where he dyed of Melancholy and a Fever.

There now remains his Brother *Francis*, whom *Charles* the 5. Emperor, brought back; having in two ſeveral battels defeated the *French*, and taken King *Francis* priſoner. But after *Charles* had put *Francis* of *Millan* in poſſeſſion of his principality, he diſpoſſeſſeth him again upon ſuſpition of Treaſon: Pope *Clement*, the *Venetians*, and the *French* alſo, upon this are made friends; for they thought it not ſafe, that *Charles* the Emperor ſhould have too much footing in Italy: therefore they reſolve to maintain *Sfortias* cauſe, but finding that *Charles* was too potent to be forced by Arms to this, they work upon him by intreaties to reſtore *Sfortia* to his principality, to which *Charles* aſſented. *Sfortia* is invited to *Benona*, upon the publick faith, where he receives his *Dutchie*, and withall the Emperor betroths to him his Neece by his Siſter, to wit, the Daughter of *Chriſtiern*, King of *Denmark*. By this double knot, *Sfortia* was tyed to the Emperor againſt the *French*: but the Duke dyed ſhortly after his marriage; then, when *Cæſar* having taken *Tunis*, was returning to *Naples*, and from thence, in a triumphant manner to *Rome*: the *Sfortian* race being extinct in this *Francis* of *Millan*, King *Francis* demands from *Cæſar*, the principality of *Millan* for him and his Heirs, being his right by inheritance, and *Maximilians* grant. This was denyed by *Charles*, except *Francis* would reſtore the D. of *Savoy* to his Lands which were violently taken from him by the *French*, moſt of which Lands were reſtored; but *Cæſar* in the mean time

parts

parts not with his Hold of *Millan*, which he enjoyed whileſt he lived, and then transfers it upon his ſon *Philip*. *An. Chriſti*

About theſe times *Apulia* is in great trouble, by reaſon of the Wars between *Arragon* and *Anjou*, which laſted twenty years, occaſioned at firſt by the impudent lechery of Queen *Joan*, whom Pope *Martin*, and *Lewis* of *Anjou*, did purſue with all Hoſtility. Hereupon *Joan* implores the aid of *Alphonſus*, King of *Arragon*, now in *Corſica*: he upon her intreaties arives at *Naples*, with a Fleet of twenty ſail, and beats the Forces of *France*, and thoſe of *Sforzia*; for which ſervice, ſhe adopts *Alphonſus*: he was the Son of *Ferdinand*, and Grand-childe of *John*, King of *Caſtile*, *Arragon*, and *Sicily*. This *Alphonſus* being the wiſeſt, and learnedſt Prince of his time could not endure the inſolence and impudence of Queen *Joan*, therefore he forceably drives her out of *Naples*, who preſently repairs to the Pope, accuſing *Alphonſus* of his ingratitude, and impiety; therefore ſhee cuts of her former Adoption, and makes *Lewis* of *Anjou* her Heir, whence aroſe great Wars; in which ſometimes the *Arragonian*, ſomtimes the *Andegeven*, was maſter of *Naples*.

Upon the death of *Lewis*, his brother *Renatus* undertook the War; but he was ſo employed in the Wars of *Britany*, that he left the *Neapolitan* War to his ſon *John*, who for divers years, but with ill ſucceſs, had Wars with *Ferdinand*, the Baſtard ſon of *Alphonſus*, whom he made Heir of *Naples* by his laſt will. At length near Troy *John* was quite defeated, having loſt both the Kingdom, and the Iſland *Aenaria*, now *Iſcla*. Not long after, being conveyed to *France* in a ſhip, he dyed of a Fever; his Father *Renatus* dyed ſhortly after, childeleſs; his Heir was *Charles Main*, his brothers ſon, who being alſo childeleſs, made *Lewis* the 11. of *France*, *Charles* the 8. Father, his Heir, who could never be perſwaded to recover his right of *Naples* by Arms, affirming, that he would firſt quiet all at home, pull down the greatneſs of the Princes of the bloud, and leave the Kingdom to his ſon, free from trouble and fear.

Alphonſus dyed at *Naples* the 65. year of his age: he left the Kingdom of *Sicily* and *Arragon* to his Brother *John*, then King of *Navar*, for his Wife *Blanca*, againſt his Baſtard ſon *Ferdinand*, King of *Naples*. *Charles* the 8. made War, but before any action, *Ferdinand* dyed, having left two ſons, *Alphonſus* his ſucceſſor, and *Frederick*, and a Grand-childe, *Ferdinand* of *Alphonſus*. 1458 1492

John of *Arragon*, Brother to *Alphonſus*, the elder, left *Sicily* to his ſon *Ferdinand*, of a ſecond venter, and married him to the ſiſter of *Henry*, King of *Caſtile*, by whom he had afterward, upon the the death of *Henry*, and his ſon *Alphonſus*, the Kingdom of *Caſtile*, *Henrys* daughter being excluded, becauſe ſhe was born in Adultery. So *Ferdinand* is now King of *Sicily*, and of both *Spains*. Shortly after by his conquering Arms, he added the Kingdom of *Granado* and *Naples*, all which he transferred upon *Charles* the 5. his Grand-child by his daughter.

This is that *Ferdinand* who ſubdued and drove out the *Moors*, by the advice of *Couſalvus* the great, after they had inhabited *Spain* almoſt 700. years, from the time that *Miramolinus*, King of the *Moors*, was called in againſt *Roderick*, King of the *Goths*. For this Service, and for cauſing the *Moors* that remained in *Spain*, to imbrace the Chriſtian faith, he obtained the title of *Catholick*. The diſſention of two Kings in *Granado*, on of which ſubmitted himſelf as Vaſſal to *Ferdinand*, the other fled into *Mauritania*, made this Conqueſt eaſie to *Ferdinand*, who had both the aſſiſtance and councel of *Couſalvus* in obtaining this, and recovering the Kingdom of *Naples* from the *French*. Theſe great changes and troubles of Europe were accompanied with 3. great Comets, which appeard in the ſpace of 16. years.

About

An. christi About the year 1454. the *Borussians* fell off from the *Marian* Knights, to *Casimir*, King of *Poland*, who some years before had much weakned the power of these knights by divers victories he had over them: the cause of their defection, was the Tyrannical Government of the *Marians*, occasioned by their often Wars, [*of which when people grow weary, they kick off their Governors.*]

The *Borussians* joyn themselves to the *Polander*, on these conditions, That they shall be equally capable of all Honours, Offices, and places in the Kingdom: they shall have the suffrages in Parliaments, and in election of the King; That their Merchants shall traffick in *Poland* safely; That all Customes and imposts imposed by the *Marians*, shall be abolished; That no strangers be admitted to be Governors in their Towns or Castles: they shall enjoy their own goods, as heretofore, and shall be ruled by their own laws. But the *Borussians* cunningly to cut of all occasion, either in the *Polonian* to set up, or in the *Marian*, to renew their Tyranny, discharge all their Garrisons, and destroy all their Forts, Castles, and Cittadels, before they made this union with *Poland*. This defection of the *Borussians*, was the occasion of 12. years War, between the *Marians*, and *Polonians*; at last a peace is concluded between *Casimir* of *Poland* and *Lewis Erlings* *huss* Master of the *Marian* Family, on these Articles, That the Castles and Towns of *Marieburg*, *Stuma*, and *Christeburg*; with some other places and Towns lying upon *Pomerania*, should be delivered up to the *Polander*, the *Marians* should retain the rest so long as they would be faithfull and subject to *Poland*.

This was the 250. year since first the *Marians* under *Hermannus Salcensis*, were called in by *Conradus Masovius*, against the rebelious *Borussians*, on this condition, That what they did subdue by force of Arms, should be their own. Since that time then that they began to destroy the inhabitants, and their Idolatry, and to repleniſh the Countrey with *Germans*, it became a part of the Empire under *Frederick*, till now the *Polander* hath obtained it.

About this time, *John*, King of *Cyprus*, married his daughter *Carolota*, to *Lewis* of *Savoy*, to whom he promised that Kingdom for her portion: after King *Johns* death, *James*, his Bastard son seizeth on the Kingdom: shortly after, upon the invitation of the *Cyprians*, *Lewis* arrives, and *James* avoyds the Island. But shortly after he returns with an Army out of *Egypt*, and drives *Lewis*, with his wife, and *Rhodian* forces, out of the Island: to make his Title the surer, he marrieth with *Aecatarina*, daughter to *Mark Cornelius* the *Venetian*, to which the Senate assented, and withall, adopted her for their daughter, that by her they might have the easier access to that Kingdom. Not long after the marriage, *James* dyeth, and leaves his wife great with childe to the Senat; this childe dyed also shorly after his birth, whereupon the mother returns home, and delivers the possession of *Cyprus* to the Senat.

In the year 1440. when *Frederick* began his Empire, the Art of Printing was found out at *Mintz* in *Germany*. In the year 1477. *Eberhard*, Earl of *Wirteberg*, whom afterwards *Maximilian* made Duke, erected the University of *Tubinga*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

The prosecution of the affaires of Germany, Italy, France, Spain, *and the other neighboring places, under* Maximilian *the Emperor, with the Coronation of* Charles *the fifth, from the year one thousand four hundred eighty six, till one thousand five hundred twenty.*

MAximilian was made Coleagu with his Father *Frederick* in the Empire by the Electoral suffrages. He was a wise Prince, a great Scholar, and a good man. In his time the University of *Witteberg* was erected by *Frederick* of *Saxony*: and that of *Franckfort* on *Viadrus*, by *Ioachim* of *Brandeburg*. He had 8. years War with the *Belgians*, who had rebelled. These at last he forced to submit to the Imperial yoak, by the Valor and councel of that brave Commander, *Albert*, Duke of *Saxony*, who having subdued *Gelderland*, falls upon *Frisia*, which *Maximilian* by the consent of the Imperial Princes, bestowed on him, for a recompence of his valor and charges. Some part of this Countrey he subjugated, but being prevented by death, he leaves an imperfect Victory to his Sons, who though they mastered them a while, yet could not long retain *Friesland* in subjection: for not long after, the Cities and Nobility conspire together, and shake off the *Saxon* yoak. *An. Christi* 1486

In the begining of these Belgick Wars, *Maximilian* found much difficulty for two years after his election: he was taken and kept a close prisoner in *Brugis*, where he was disgracefully used, and forced to look upon the tortures, and cruel deaths of his servants, till he was set at liberty by his Father, and the whole strength of the Empire: after the death of *Matthias*, *Maximilian* makes War upon *Hungaria*, but at last is contented to give way to the Election of *Ladislaus*, King of *Bohemia*, reserving the right of succession to himself, and successors, if *Ladislaus* should die without issue, male.

After this, he makes War in Italy, but with ill succes, so that he lost all he possessed there. First, he Warred in *Hetruria* in defence of *Pisa*, against the *French* and *Florentins*; being invited thither by the Pope, *Lewis Sfortia*, and the *Venetians*. He was carried to that expedition in a Fleet of *Genua*, but finding that he could not take the Town and Port of *Liburnum*, though he attempted it to the loss of many of his men, he sent away his Army to *Lombardy*, and he followed after, and so returned into *Germany*: But greater wars were kindled by *Charls* the 8. of *France*, a high spirited and hot young prince. He hoped to gain all Italy by his right he had to *Naples*. *Lewis Sfortia* had oportunely implored his aid against the *Arragonians*. *Charles*, to make all sure at home, makes a League with two of his enemies, to wit, with *Maximilian*, whom he had incensed by repudiating his daughter *Margaret*, and by carrying away *Ann* of *Britany* (his Spouse) by *Lewis Sfortia*, who betrothed *Blance Mary* (sister of *John Galeacius*) to him, after he was defeated of his *British* marriage: then he ingratiated *Ferdinand* of Spain, by restoring the rich City of *Perpennian*, in the very entry of Spain; and those lands which his Father *John* in the *Celtiberian* War had mortgaged for money to *Lewis* the 11.

Charles then enters Italy with a formidable army, and sets at liberty *Pisa*, from the power of the *Florentins*; and these from the *Medices*, and *Sena* from *Pandolphus Petrutius*. He also brought his Army into Rome, and caused the Pope enter into League with him, and to deliver up *Gemes*, the brother of *Bajazet*: thence he marched with unexpected celerity to *Naples*, upon whose approach, *Alphonsus*, with his son *Ferdinand*, and his Uncle

Fre-

An. Christi *Frederick*, retreated; ſo that he without great difficulty obtained the kingdom, and entered *Naples* in Triumph the firſt of *Ianuary*.

The neighbouring Princes, aſtoniſhed at this unexpected ſucceſſe, enter into a league againſt the *French*: chiefly the Pope, *Maximilian Cæſar*, the Senate of *Venice*, *Lewis Sfortia*, with *Ferdinand* of *Spain*; which made *Charles* retreat; and perceiving that the way by which he was to return, was ſhut up by the *Venetians* and *Sfortia*, (whom *Lewis* of *Orleans* in the interim had invaded, and ſeized on *Novaria*) he makes his paſſage by the ſword, and ſo having overthrown them in a bloudy battel, near the River *Tarrus*, he returns ſafe into *France*.

But *Charles* continued not long maſter of *Naples*, for *Ferdinand*, ſon of *Alphonſus*, renews the War, being aſſiſted by *Conſalvus*, whom *Ferdinand* of Spain had ſent with a ſtrong Fleet to defend *Sicily*: but in the middeſt of his victories, about two years after the Victory of *Charles*, he dyed of a Fever, the right to that Kingdom being transferred upon his Unckle *Frederick*. Againſt him a league is made between *Lewis Sfortia*, Pope *Alexander*, *Lewis* the 12. of *France*, ſon to *Charles* of *Orleans*, ſucceſſor to *Charles* lately dead, *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, the *Venetians*, and *Florentines*, on this condition, That *Millan* ſhould be reſtored to King *Lewis*, who claimed it by right of inheritance; and *Cremona* to the *Venetians*: That *Cæſar Borgia*, Pope *Alexanders* ſon, ſhould be aſſiſted to deſtroy the Flaminian, Æmilian, and Umbrian Noblity, by which ſlaughter he aimed at the Principality of *Ciſalpin Gallia*, and that *Ferdinand* and *Lewis* ſhould divide the Kingdom of *Naples* between them. *Ferdinand* preferred a Kingdom to Conſanguinity, in reſpect of which, he ſhould have aſſiſted *Frederick*. The hatred of the *Venetians* againſt *Sfortia*, cauſed this League: for the Pope a little before, with *Sfortia*, and *Venice*, were in league againſt *France* and *Florence*, in defence of *Piſa*: for which cauſe they drew in *Maximilian* the Emperor; but when ſucceſs failed them, and the *Venetians* aimed at the ſuperiority of *Piſa*, *Sfortia* fell off, and oppoſed himſelf to the *Venetians*; which incenſed them, and made them enter into league with the Princes againſt him. *Sfortia* being now in a great ſtrait, and finding no help from *Maximilian*, whom the *Switzers* and *Griſons* had made War upon, he moſt wickedly incited *Bajazet* againſt *Venice*, which was his ruin: For when he returned into *Lombardy*, having the aſſiſtance of the *Switzers* Foot, and *Burgundian* Horſe, he was betrayed to *Tramulius* the *French* General, and by him conveyed into *France* to perpetual impriſonment. His brother alſo, *Aſcanius*, the Cardinal, as he was flying to *Placentia*, was intercepted by the *Venetians*, and delivered up to the *French*; and ſo *Millan* within one year changed her Lords thrice.

Frederick of *Arragon*, who was now in the Kingdom of *Naples*, being ignorant of the league between the two Kings of Spain, and France, and that they had parted this Kingdom between them, ſent to *Conſalvus* for aid; but in vain, for he was ſuddenly ſurpriſed by the *French*, who were come down into *Campania*, ſo that he was forced with his wife and children to get over into the Caſtle of *Aenaria* for ſafety: *Naples* being ſurrendered, he obtains leave of *Mamurcius* and *Obegnius*, the *French* Generals, to repair by ſea unto King *Lewis* of France, hoping to finde ſome favor from him. This requeſt was quickly granted, for they knew that he ſhould be there impriſoned. He left his young ſone *Ferdinand* at *Tarentum*, to keep it with a ſtrong Garriſon, who ſurrendered both the town and himſelf to *Conſalvus*, who ſent him into Spain to partake of his Fathers fortune.

According to the agreement, the kingdome of *Naples* was divided between the two Kings: the two Provences of *Campania*, or *Terra laboria*, *Apru-*

Aprutia, or *Praecutina*, fell to the *French*, with the City of *Naples*, the Regall ſeat of *Campania*. The other two, namely *Bruij*, and *Apulia*, to the Spaniard. But afterwards, becauſe one kingdome could not ſatisfie two Kings, the *French* and *Spaniard* fell out about the diviſion, and ſo the *Spaniard* having quite expelled the *French*, obtaind the whole kingdom. *Cæſar Borgia*, having nefariouſly murtherd the Italian Nobility, and poyſoned his Father *Alexander* by a Cup, which he had prepared for the Cardinals, but by the miſtake of the Cup-bearer, was preſented to the Pope, by command from *Ferdinand* of Spain was apprehended, and there impriſoned 3. years in the Caſtle of *Medina*, whence he eſcaped by ropes, out of a window, and fled to *John*, King of *Cantabria*, in whoſe Wars, with *Alarinus*, he was ſhot with a musket bullet, and ſo dyed. Upon the irruption of the *French* into Italy, *Maximilian* calls a Dyet of the Princes at *Worms*, for making War againſt the Turks; but he could not effect any thing: ſhorly after he makes War againſt the *Helvetians*, in which 20000 men were conſumed. Eight battels were fought, in which *Maximilian* had the worſt, whoſe aim was to ſuppreſs the growing greatneſs of the *Switzers*, to recover the Territories taken from *Auſtria* by the *Switzers*, and to reduce them to the obedience of the Empire. At laſt a pacification is made at *Baſil*. Then began the *Bavarian* War, occaſioned by *Rupert* the *Palatin*, ſonne to *Philip* the Elector, who married *Rupert* to *George*, Duke of *Bavaria*'s Daughter, with whom he obtained from *George*, a part of the *Dutchy* of *Bavaria* for her portion. *Cæſar* would not ratifie this grant of *Bavaria*, becauſe it was againſt the Cuſtom of the Empire, and Laws of Fees, and prejudical to *Albert*, Duke of *Bavaria*; yet the Pope approved it. After the death of *George*, *Maximilian* would have a 3. part of the lands granted to be aſſigned over to *Albert* of *Bavaria*, another 3. to *Rupert* for his Wifes portion, and the reſt to the Palatines Family for the loſſes they had received from *Lewis* of *Bavaria*. *Philip* refuſed theſe conditions, therefore he takes up Arms: *Maximilian* proſcribes him, and raiſeth an Army which much weakened the Palatine Family: *Rupert* was aſſiſted by the *Bohemians*, 2000 of whom were ſlain. At laſt, the Palſgrave being worſted, *Frederick*, Elector of *Saxony*, reconciles him to *Cæſar*, cauſing him at the Dyet of *Colen* to make his ſubmiſſion to *Maximilian*, for which he incurred a while the Emperors diſpleaſure, in that he would mediate for ſuch an enemy of the Empire: yet *Cæſar* pardoned the Palatin, and gave to *Ruperts* ſons, a part of that controverted countrey. *An. Chriſti*

The *Venetian* War was undertaken by almoſt all the Kings of Chriſtendum, at the inſtigation of Pope *Iulius*, who had lately driven out of *Bonomia*, *Iohn Bentivolus*, being now 70. years old. Their power began to be formidable to the other Princes: but after they had puniſhed the *Venetians* ſufficiently, the ſame *Iulius* raiſeth another War in defence of them. 1508

Two years before this, *Phylip* the ſon of *Maximilian*, Prince of *Belgium*, is invited to Spain by the Nobility, to undertake the Kingdome of *Iſabella* his Mother in law: *Ferdinand* perceiving his peoples affections more inclined to *Phylip* then to himſelf, in anger he ſailes to *Naples*: but *Phylip* being unacquainted with that hot climat, fed too plentifully, and ſo fell into a fever and dyed the 28. year of his age. He left by his wife two ſons, *Charles* and *Ferdinand*, and four daughters. Before his death, a Commet was ſeen.

When *Ferdinand* underſtood his ſon in law was dead, having ſetled Naples, he returns into Spain, and by the way meets with the *French* King, with whom he conſults about the Venetian War, which the Princes were willing to undertake, that they might curb the growing eſtate of that City, which uſed to raiſe her ſelfe by the fall of others, and aimed at the Do-

1504

An. Christi minion of all Italy. Therefore *Maximilian Cæsar*, Pope *Julius*, *Lewis* of France, *Ferdinand* of Spain, and *Alphonsus* of *Ferraria*, enter into a Confederacy against them. *Cæsar* was willing to be revenged on Venice, for stopping his passage into Italy, when he was travelling to *Rome* for his Inauguration. He took from the Venetians by *Ralph* Prince of *Anhalt*, his General, Vincentia, Verona, and Padua, and defeated the Venetian Army, whereof 9000. were slain. But shortly after they poysoned him at
1513 *Verona*, and so the Cities revolted to the Venetians again. *Lewis* of France took from them, *Cremona*, with some other Cities: *Alphonsus* of Ferraria seized upon divers of their Territories: Pope *Iulius* took Ariminum, Ravenna, and other Towns: and they were Fleeced also by *Ferdinand*. Thus being exhausted of their mony by this War, and robbed of their Cities, and Territories, they humbly beg peace from *Julius*, which he granted them, but could not perswade the *French* and *Germans*, nor the Ferrarian to lay down Armes, which occasioned a new War, in which the *French* take *Bononia*, from the Pope; whereupon he excommunicates *Lewis*, the *French* King, and pretends to bring back *Maximilian Sfortia* unto his Fathers principality, whence he was unjustly expelled. The *French* King on the other side, sleighting the Popes curses, calls a Synod at *Pisa*, in which, after the example of the Synods of *Constance* and *Basill*, he desires the Popes actions may be questioned: to this the *Florentines* at first assented, but shortly after they recanted; whereby the Cardinals and *French* Garrison by a popular tumult are expelled the City, so that they repair to *Millan*.

The Pope was assisted by the *Venetians*, *Switzers*, and *Ferdinand* of Spain, who expelled out of *Cantabria*, *John*, King of *Navar*, being of the *French* Faction. Behinde, *France* was invaded by King *Henry* of *England*. The *French* and *German* Army defeat the *Venetians* near *Athesis*, then they march to *Ravenna*, where they totally rout the Popes army, of whose men there were slain sixteen thousand the rest flung down their Armes and submitted.

After this, the Emperor calls home his forces, and makes a league with Spain and England, which furnished the French with work at home: wherefore the *French* Army is called out of *Italy*, but as they were marching, they are set upon by the *Switzers* and *Venetians* upon the Popes instigation, and driven quite out of *Lombardy*. So the Pope recovers again *Bononia*, and casts out the Bnetivoli. *Genua* asserts her own liberty: *Maximilian Sfortia* is restored to the principality of *Millan*, and so are the *Medices* brought back into *Florence*, whom the *French* had driven out: and so endeth the Confederacie against the *Venetians*. After this, *Leo* 10. takes from *Sfortia*: *Placencia*, and *Parma*, extending the Churches Territories as far as *Po*.

Lewis of *France*, and *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, secretly make a league, confirming *Cantabria* upon the *Spaniard*, and *Millan* upon the *French*: but the *French* King dyeth not long after, and the year ensuing, the Spanish followed: in whom ended the race of the *Arragonian* Kings, which had reigned from the *Berengary* Earls of *Barcelona*, 370 years, and 230 in *Sicily*. His death was portended by a Commet. To *Ferdinand* succeeded
1515 *Charles* the fift, his Grandchild by his daughter. To *Lewis* succeeded, *Fran-*
1516 *cis*, Duke of *Angoulesme*, his son in law: he began his reign with the *Italian* War, in which, breaking through the Alpes, he defeates the *Switzers*, fighting for *Maximilian Sfortia* at *Millan*: the battel lasted two days; of 25000 men, scarse one halfe escaped. He takes from the Pope *Parma* and *Placentia*, restoring them to the ancient jurisdiction of the *Insubrians*: the Castle of *Millan* is surrendered to him, and *Maximilian* conveyed into

France.

France. Upon this ſucceſs, *Francis* intends to invade the kingdome of *Naples*, had not *Maximilian Caſar* called him out of *Italy*, by ſtirring up the *Switzers* and *Engliſh* againſt him. The Venetian War begun by *Maximilian*, was ended by *Charles*, in the league between him and *Francis*, on theſe Articles; That *Charles* ſhould reſtore the kingdom of *Navar* to his ſon *John*, if the Arbitrators ſhould think fit, and withall 100000 crowns yearly to the French King out of the Kingdom of *Naples*, for confirming of his right to that Crown: alſo that *Verona* ſhould be reſtored to Venice upon the payment of 200000 crowns to *Caſar* at two times. *Maximilian* being now old, confirmed theſe Articles, and the rather, becauſe he had no hope of aid from *Switzerland*. But when *Charles* was elected Emperor, which *Francis* aimed at, this league was broke, and great Wars fell out between *Charls* and *Francis*, in which the poſſeſſion of *Naples*, and *Millan* was recovered by *Charles*. About this time, *Charles* Duke of *Gelderland*, upon the inſtigation and charges of the French, made Wars againſt the *Brabantins*, in hatred of the houſe of Burgundy. *An. Chriſti*

About theſe times in the Dioceſs of *Spire*, the people began to mutiny for their liberties, after the example of the *Switzers*: but this ſparkle hid 25 years under the Cinders, brake out into a flame through all Germany. At Vienna there was a meeting between *Maximilian Caſar*, *Ladiſlaus*, King of Hungaria and Bohemia, and *Sigiſmund*, King of Poland, who renew the old league, which they confirm by mutual marriages, That *Mary*, Neece to *Maximilian*, ſhould marry with *Lewis*, the ſon of *Ladiſlaus*: *Anna* the daughter of *Ladiſlaus* ſhould chuſe either of his Nephews for her Husband, with hope of ſucceſſion to the Kingdom of Hungaria, if *Lewis* ſhould dye without iſſue male: That after the death of *Ladiſlaus*, *Maximilian* and *Sigiſmund* ſhould have the protection of the children and kingdom, but the Hungarian Nobility, after the death of *Ladiſlaus*, which followed ſhortly, neglected both theſe Guardians, and fell into Factions about the Tuition of the young King, ſcarſe yet ten years old; dividing his Revenews and power among them, which gave occaſion to the Turk (*Maximilian* being dead, and the Polonian involved in a three-fold War, to wit, the Tartarian, the Ruſſian, and Boruſnacetu) to invade Hungaria, and take Belgrade, the chief ſtrength of that kingdom. *Maximilian* held his laſt Dyet at *Auſpurg*, in which a conſultation is had about the Turkiſh Warre; for *Selymus* having overthrown the Sultans kingdom, did threaten Chriſtendom. He recommended his Nephew *Charles* to the Princes to take care of him after his death, which followed ſhortly after, having fallen into a Fever, and looſneſs the 59. year of his age, and the 32. of his Empire. 1519
He had two wives, the firſt was *Mary* of Burgundy, by whom he had *Philip*, who by marriage added the kingdoms of Spain, Sicily, and Naples to the Houſe of Auſtria: His other two ſons dyed young; his Daughter *Margaret* was betrothed to *Charles* the 8. of France, but by him repudiated, having taken by force *Ann* of Britany, the onely Heir of that *Dutchy*, after ſhe was promiſed to *Maximilian*. Then *Margaret* was betrothed to the Prince of Arragon, who dyed before the marriage; at laſt ſhe married with that unfortunate Prince, *Philbert* of Savoy. *Caſars* other wife was *Blanca Maria*, Daughter to *Galleacius* of Millan, and ſiſter of *John Galeas*, by whom he had no iſſue.

Some few years before *Caſars* death, *Sigiſmund*, King of Poland, and *Conſtantine*, Duke of Roſs, or Roſſia, defeated the great Army of the Muſcovits, having killed about 40000 of the enemies near Boryſthenes. About this time aroſe the quarrel between the *Franciſcans*, holding the Virgin *Mary* to be conceived without ſin, and the *Dominicans*, who held the contrary: which troubled the world, till ſome Monks were burned for ſpeaking

An. Christi ing through hollow Images of the Virgin, and deluding the people. *An.* 1517. *Martin Luther* began to oppose the Popes indulgences: 100 years after, the burning of *John Husse* at the Councel of *Constance*, being encouraged thereto by *Frederick*, Duke of *Saxony*, and seconded by *Erasmus*, *Melanchon*, *Bugenhagius*, and others. His intention at first, was onely to oppose the abuse of Pardons, but being exasperated by *Tecelius* the Dominican, who burned his papers, and stirred up other Monks to write invectives against him: he writes to Pope *Leo*, and *Albert*, Arch-bishop of Magdeburg, Primat of Germany, that he would submit his Theses to the Judgement and Censure of the Roman Church; and at the last Dyet of *Maximilian*, held at Ausburg, he promiseth to Cardinal *Cajetan* that he would be silent, if his adversaries would be quiet: but they still incensed his fiery spirit, with more oyle, so that now he proceeds further in opposing Image worship, Purgatory, Transubstantiation, and other controverted points.

After the death of *Maximilian*, the Turk having setled Syria and Egypt, prepares to invade Panonia: the *French* King having beat the Swizzers, and possessed himself of Millan, aims at Naples, and strives to translate the Empire from Germany to France: Therefore he raiseth an Army, makes way with Pope *Leo* the tenth: desires the Title of Emperor of Constantinople, and promiseth to make War against the Turk. For this purpose, the Venetians are invited to joyn with him: Ambassadors are sent into Germany to treat with the Electors for the Empire. The Arch-Bishop of Mints sends to acquaint the Electors that the Emperor was dead, and that they should meet at Franckfort about his successor, who all met at the day appointed, and place, in the Church of S. *Bartholemew*, where the Patent called the *Golden bull*, was read, the Decrees of which, the Electors standing at the Altar, swear to observe. After this, they go from the Altar to the Chappel, where the Election useth to be; there the Arch-Bishop of Mints having prayed for direction from God, and a blessing on their proceedings, he makes a speech to them, shewing the weight and necessity of that business they were now about; of that concord which ought to be amongst them: how dissenting suffrages have heretofore caused much civil War: how much bloud had been shed about the succession of the Emperor, till *Otho* the 3. by the Popes approbation established this Electoral Colledge, by which these 500 years, the Imperial possession hath remained in this Nation: He alleadgeth many examples of misery and destruction in Germany, by disagreeing Elections; and how needful at this time concord is, when Germany hath so many enemies, and the Turk is threatning Christendom: when the eyes of all Nations are now fixed upon this Election: When the Bishop had ended his speech, the Electors commended him for his wisdom and eloquence, and promise to follow his directions. Mean while the Ambassadors of *Charles*, King of Spain, Arch-Duke of Austria and Burgundy, with some German Princes, come to Mints, recommending to the Electors, the wisdom, courage, moderation, and other virtues of this Prince; likewise his power and ability above othe Christian Kings, which *Maximilian* perceiving, recommended him to the Electors: this so wise a Prince, so loving to Germany would not have done had he known the contrary. But the French Legates at Confluence, with great promises, strive to procure the Electors suffrages, shewing that they should not prejudice the Laws if they Elected *Francis* for their Emperor, if they consider the great union heretofore of the German and French Nation, under the Family of *Pipin* and *Charles*, almost 100 years: how by their united strength they suppressed the *Lombards*, *Saracens* in Italy and France: how needful their union is now to suppress

the

the Turks greatnes; how much *Francis* was affected to the well-fare of *Italy*, whereof he had now a good part, which being united with *France*, and *Germany*, would master the Turk both by Land and Sea. Besides that, no Prince in Christendom was so fit to be Emperor as *Francis*, both in respect of his power, as of his Militarie skil, valor, and happines, whereof he hath given good experience in recovering of *Insubria*; and that the Germans should lose nothing of their Liberties by this Election, but rather increase them by obtained offices and places of Command in *France*, promising that no *French* Garrisons should be kept in *Germany*, but the natives of *Germany* onely. *An. Christi.*

The Electors thanked the King for his good will to *Germany*, promising to proceed in the Election according to their Laws, and Oath which they had taken. Not long before this, the *French* King had sent Legates to the *Switzers*, shewing them how needfull it would be to the peace of Christendome, and destruction of the Turk, if *Francis* were chosen Emperor, that therefore they would be no hinderance to this Election, which was so much desired by the Christian Princes, and the Pope himself for suppressing of the Turk who was aiming at the total subversion of Christian laws, and religion. He promiseth also that the *Switzers* shall be great gainers by this Union. To this the *Switzers* answer, That they would not hinder or molest the liberty of the Electors in their choise. They send Letters also to the German Princes, shewing how the *French* were busie to procure suffrages, and withall disswade them from Electing *Francis*, for that would cause much trouble in *Germany*, and that there was no need to chuse strangers, having so many able men of their own Nation fit for that high imployment. They write also to Pope *Leo* the 10. That he would not perswade the Electors to chuse *Francis*, for that would cause great Wars between *France* and *Germany*, to the great prejudice of *Italy*. The Pope by his answer seems to be inclined rather to *Charles*, then *Francis*, though he nameth neither.

Mean while the Electors proceed to the Election, the Bishop of *Mintz* speaks first, shewing that it was against their Oath, the liberty, Honour, and safety of *Germany* to chuse *Francis* being a stranger, & whose aim was to transferre the Empire into *France*, which could not be possessed in *Germany* heretofore by *Charles* the Grosse, and the *Otho's*, without great Wars. If then *Francis* be chosen, the *French* will domineer in *Germany*, and will set it all on fire of Civil Wars: for he hath already denounced War against *Charles*, and hath broken the old league between *France* and *Burgundy*; and threatened War against *Naples*; besides, the *Austrians* and *Belgians* have already refused to be under the *French* yoak: and there is no more reason for *France* to demand the *German* Empire, because they derive the Originall of their Kings from the *Germani*, then they have to demand Troy from the Turk, because they derive themselves from *Hectors* son. If *Francis* (saith he) be chosen, then must the Electors make war against *Austria*, so well deserving of *Germany*, and violate the Will of *Maximilian*. They will arm *Francis*, who is too ambitious of domination, with power to raise War in the bowels of the Empire. As for his suppressing of the Turks, in that he can do nothing, except first he suppres the *Belgians* at home, and the *Neopolitans* in *Italy*. He concludes then Negatively, against the Election of *Francis*: as for *Charles* he is doubtfull, because *Spain* is so remote from *Germany*, which by reason of the Turks, or of civill dissentions, requires the Emperors presence. Besides, it is to be feared that *Spain* having once got the Empire, will not part with it again, nor will they ever suffer *Germany* to enjoy *Millan*, which they have conquered by their bloud. Therefore he thinks it might be safer to chuse one of their own *German*

Princes

An. Chriſti Princes, if any one had power enough to buckle with Spain or France; but if theſe two Kingdoms fall out, *Germany* will be wronged for want of a potent Emperor: which was the cauſe that in *Frederick* the 3. time, the *Burgundians* marched without controle through a great part of *Germany*: *Philip Maria* domineered in *Italy*; and the Emperor himſelfe was beſet even in *Auſtria*, who was beholding to *Bohemia* for his liberty: and laſtly he was driven out of *Auſtria* by the *Hungarians*; beſides the late controverſies in Religion are like to make great broiles in *Germany*, which cannot be ſuppreſſed without a generall Councel, and a prince more potent then any of the German Peers, who muſt both aſſemble and defend the Councel: and no ſmall power is required againſt the Turk; therefore he concludes in the Affirmative, that in reſpect of power, *Charls* is the fitteſt for the Empire; and the rather becauſe he is a German prince, as Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and not a ſtranger: and beſides, a prince of excellent parts and temper for government, whereof he hath given ample teſtimony in ſetling Spain, and compoſing the differences thereof: diſcended alſo of brave princes, if you look upon the virtues either of *Philip* his Father, or of *Maximilian* his Grand-Father: He is alſo of an age fit for Action and Government; not a childe, nor an old decrepit man. As for his remoteneſs from *Germany*, he may be ſo dealt with, (in reſpect of many urgent occaſions, and of his large principalities in *Germany*, and *Belgium*) to make his oftneſt reſidence there, ſeeing he will finde employment enough in driving the *French* out of *Italy*, in keeping off the Turks from *Auſtria*, and in ſetling Religion.

Having finiſhed, the other Electors deſire the Biſhop of Trevers to ſpeak, being a man of learning, judgement, and experience, as one accuſtomed to publick employments both in *Rome* and *Germany*, and well acquainted with the eſtate of *France*. He therefore having commended the Biſhop of *Mints* for his wiſe ſpeech, ſheweth, That if his opinion be followed, the old propheſie will be fulfilled, which was, That *Maximilian* ſhould be the laſt German Emperor. But ſaith he, there ſhould be no need of a forreign prince, if the princes of Germany were not idle and laſie, but would imitate the valor of their progenitors: Yet if there muſt be a forreign Emperor, he prefers *Francis* to *Charles*, becauſe Spain is farther off, which having got once the Empire, will hardly part with it again; beſides, if *Charls* ſhould be elected, becauſe of his principalities in Germany, then *Francis* may be choſen, who hath the *Dutchy* of *Millan*, and Kingdom of *Arles*, anciently belonging to the German Emperors. Again, the benefit that will redownd to all Europ, by the Union of France with Germany is very great; for ſo *Italy* will be quieted, the pope ſatisfied, and the Turks ſuppreſſed: the French alſo, and German natures do ſympathiſe in love, manners and opinions; but Spain as it is more diſtant in place, ſo it is more different in qualities, and in reſpect of longinquity, leſs able to help Germany at a pinch, and to endure our cold climat: beſides, That Spain will have the glorie of all our Victories, and make us their ſlaves; whereas the French will ſhare with us: if *Francis* be Emperor, *Millan* will be as well ours as theirs, and the *Belgians* will be leſs able to ſtir againſt him, and he will have the leſs cauſe to War againſt them, or to trouble *Italy* ſeeing *Francis* enjoyeth *Millan* quietly; ſo that he will have no thing to hinder him from falling on the Turk. But if we chuſe the Spaniard, troubles will ariſe in *Italy*, and ſo the Turkiſh War will be hindred. The French will fall upon Naples, and if he prevail, will force the Pope to annihilate our Election, which will cauſe unſpeakable troubles; beſides, how hard it will be to get the Empire out of the Spaniards hands having once hold of it, may be conjectured by the Carthaginians, who having

once

once got footing in *Sicily*, could not in many years be driven out thence, nor the *Spaniards* out of *Naples*, nor can the Turks yet be expelled Europe. *An. Christi*

If we compare these two Kings together, we will finde that *Francis* is the better Scholar, the wiser man, and more experienced, because more aged: in *Charles* there is but an inclination and disposition as yet, to princely and military arts; but in *Francis* there is a habit who hath with such felicity managed his Wars in *Italy*, as to overthrow the *Switzers*, and subdue *Millan*: Therefore he concludes in the affirmative, for *Francis*, shewing what inconveniences will arise to *Germany*, by the remotenes of *Charles*: but he prefers to both a Native Prince of *Germany*, who is such in Habitation, Language, Manners and Original: such a man may be potent enough, saith he, if there be but worth and courage in him, and unity among us: for when one told *Lewis* of *France*, That *Maximilian* was but Consul of *Auspurbg* signifying his weakness, true, saith the King, but when he beats his Drum all *France* trembles; intimating the Emperors power, which is formidable to the neighbouring Nations, for (saith he) inferior Princes, such as *Albert* Duke of *Saxony*, *Albert* Marquiss of *Brandeburg*, the *Bavarian* and others, have upon occasion raised great Forces, why then should we mistrust the Emperors power, or prefer a stranger to a Native.

After he had spoken, the Electors sat silent a while, musing what was best to be done: at last *Frederick*, Duke of *Saxony*, delivered his opinion, That *Francis* by their law could not be chosen: that *Charles* was a *German* prince, and that they stood in need of a powerfull Emperor in those turbulent times, and that *Charles* was in this respect to be preferred before all others: but yet that certain conditions for the liberty and safety of *Germany*, must be proposed to him. To this the other Electors assented. The Bishop of *Trevers* told them, that he foresaw the Fate of *Germany*, and change of the Empire, therefore wished them seriously to consider, but withall for quietnes sake, he would joyn his suffrage with them, so that day was spent in debates. The next day they meet to consult about the conditions to be proposed to *Charles* his Ambassadors then at *Mints*, which being accepted, a day for the election is set in S. *Bartholemews* chappel: *Mints* is first asked whom he thought fit should be Emperor, answers *Charles* Arch-Duke of Austria; then he asks the rest, they all answer the same. These suffrages were indorsed and sealed, and then publikely proclaimed: whereupon the Arch-Bishop of M[illegible] made a speech to the Nobility and people, thanking God for chusing a Prince so eminent in Virtue, so excellent in power, so sweet in his own nature and disposition, who being now of the same age with *Alexander* when he began his Empire, was fit for great Actions, and Heroick exploits. He thanked God also for the unanimous assent of the Electors; whereas heretofore their disagreeing Elections have been the cause of much bloudshed and Civil Wars in Germany; therefore he wisheth the people to be thankful, joyful, dutiful, and obedient to such a Prince, who is no stranger to them but of the Austrian Family, which for above 80. years had deserved so well of Germany, who hath given already testimonies of his princely Virtues, by setling and uniting the factions and warlike spirits of Spain, which now was to be united to the German Empire. When the speech was ended, all gave a shoot, and with joyful acclamations allowed the Election, and prayed for the prosperity of the Emperor.

The Embassadors of *Charles* are sent for, and their advice is required about setling of the Empire in quietnes from the French Factions, till *Charles* should be ready to come himself: upon this *Casimir*, Marquiss of

Bran-

An. Christi *Brandeburg* is appointed to place Garrisons where there was suspition, and to have an Army ready if need should require: some Electors were joyned with him as his councellors: the Ambassadors are accompanied by the Electors to Mintz, who returning to *Franckford*, send *Frederick*, Palatine of the *Rhen*, with some other Princes, as their Ambassadors to *Charles*, one of whom made such hast that he came to *Barcinum*, or *Barellona* from *Franckford* in nine days: He found the King in Bed, in the morning, whom he acquaints with the glad news of his Election, for which he is rewarded with good store of Gold: the Palatin is met with by the King almost three miles without the town, to whom he delivers his letters, in which the Princes express their good will to, and great hopes they have of him, whom they humbly desire to accept of the Empire, and to hasten his coming into *Germany*.

Charles, by his Orator *Mercurinus*, answers the Ambassadors, That he was very joyfull for the good will of his Countrey towards him, and their good opinion in conceiving him onely worthy of that high employment, and honour, therefore promiseth to return mutual love to his countrey, and perpetual good will to the Princes his Cosins. In the mean while, *Charles* was perplexed within himself, when he considered the great weight that lay on him if he accepted the Empire, to wit, Wars both with *France* and the Turks, and the offence he should give Spain in forsaking them: on the other side, he thought it hard to refuse what God, and the free Election of his Countrey had cast upon him, tending so much to the honour of his Family, and well-fare of Christendom: Therefore he wisheth *Frederick* to acquaint the German Princes, that he would accept the Empire: then he calleth to God for wisdom, with *Solomon* to rule his people, Grace to imitate the virtues of *Trajan* and *Theodosius*, two Spanish Princes called to be Emperors: then having writ his Letters to the Princes, promises to act nothing without them, and to be with what speed he can in Germany. He dismisseth the Palatine, after he had bestowed rich gifts on him.

In the begining of the spring, *Cæsar* set sail, and arrives in *England*, where he is Royally entertained by King *Henry* the 8. who promised to wait on him at his Coronation: so a league is confirmed between them. Then he comes into *Belgium*, where he is received with joyful acclamations, finding him now a man, who went from them a childe. He made some stay there to settle the Countrey, and to receive King *Henry* who came not, being hindred by the *French*, with whom he enters into a league. At last *Charles* comes to *Aix*, attended by the flower of the *Burgundian*, and *Belgian* Nobility. He was met by the Electors, and rest of the German Princes: by the Priests also, carrying the Monuments of *Charles* the great. The next day, being the 12 of *October*, he was crowned, though the plague was in the town. *Mints* and *Colen* put on his Robe, and led him to the Altar, the Palatine carrying before him the Globe of the world; *Saxony*, the Sword, and *Brandeburg*, the Scepter: *Trevers* Annoynted him: *Colon* and *Mints* Crowns him. After he had sworn at the Altar, then the Sword and Scepter were delivered to him: after this, the great Feast is prepared, in which *Mints* standeth with the great Seal in his hand; *Brandeburg* with the Scepter; the King of *Bohemia's* Ambassador is Cup-bearer; and the Palatine, Sewer. Mean while, the Duke of *Saxon* distributes Hay in the Market place to the Horses: a whole Ox, stuffed with all sorts of Birds, is rosted, of which the first dish is presented to the new Crowned King of the Romans: after the Coronation, *Cæsar*, with the Princes go to *Colen*, to confer about the next Dyet, which was

1520

appoynted

appoynted to be held at *Worms*, the firſt of *January*: this being done, *Charles* returnes too into *Belgium*, and the Princes to their ovvn homes. *An. Chriſti*

CHAP. XVI.

The affairs of Italy, Germany, Netherlands, *with the actions of the Popes of thoſe times, and the Councel of* Trent, *&c. under* Charles the 5. Ferdinand *and* Maximilian, *from the year one thouſand five hundred twenty, till one thouſand five hundred ſeventy ſix.*

Charles the fifth being Crowned (as is ſaid) in his firſt Dyet held at *Wormes*, proſcribes *Luther* to ingratiate himſelf with Pope *Leo*: but *Frederick* the Elector hid him at *Wartberg* till the troubles were paſt over, raiſed by *Caroloſtadius* for breaking dovvn the Images; then *Luther* returns to *Viteberg*. Mean while the Pope makes a League vvith *Charles* to drive the French out of *Inſubria*, and all *Italy*, vvhich vvas eaſie to be done, by reaſon the Svvitzers had fallen off from the *French* for vvant of pay. *Millan* is reſtored by *Cæſar* to *Francis Sfortia*, brother of *Maximilian*; *Parma* and *Placentia* to the *Pope*, vvho ſhortly after dyed not vvithout ſuſpition of poyſon given him by his Chamberlain, in vvhoſe place vvas ſet up *Hadrian*, Biſhop of *Utricht*, ſometimes *Cæſars* School-maſter, but then Governor of *Spain*: He gave way for a general Synod to ſuppreſs the differences in Religion, and to correct the corruptions of the Clergie. He made a League between *Charles Cæſar*, *Henry* of England, *Lewis* of Hungaria, and ſome of the Italian Princes, having excluded the French, from whom the Venetians fell off: in the interim, *Adrian* dyeth the ſecond year of his Pontificate. In his time the Inquiſition begins to burn *Lutherans* as Hereticks: two Monks were burned at *Bruxels*. *Luther* rageth at *Henry* the 8. for writing againſt him, and aſſuming from the Pope the Title of Defendor of the Faith. *Zuinglius*, a Canon of *Tigurum*, cauſed the Senate of that City to caſt off the Roman Religion. King *Francis* of France taking occaſion upon the Commotions of *Spain*, ſeiſeth almoſt all *Navar*, and ſends a great Army againſt *Millan*: but *Cæſar* drives the French again out of Italy, and ſends *Charles* of *Burbon* into Province, who in vain attempted *Maſſyles*. *Francis* retakes *Millan*, being forſaken by *Sforſia*, but in the ſiege of *Papia* is taken himſelf priſoner, having ſeperated his Army by the advice of *Clements* 7. who ſucceeded *Adrian*. Hereupon *Clements* fearing that *Cæſar* would be too great in Italy, makes a League with the French & Venetians, to reſtore *Sforſia*. *Cæſar* lets *Francis* again at liberty on ſuch conditions as he would not perform, and being angry with the Pope aboliſhes his power throughout all Spain. He takes the Caſtle of *Millan*, and the Columnii invade Rome, where they beſiege the Pope in his Caſtle of *S. Angelo*, and plunder his Palace of the Vatican. The Churches are ſpoiled, the prieſts abuſed, the rich men plundered, the Pope forced to yeild upon *Cæſars* conditions, and the Cardinals Caps are openly ſold. Thus was *Clement* puniſhed for breaking his League with the Emperor. 1527

Mean while the *Florentines* turn out the *Medices*, and ſet themſelves free: *Genua* is forced to ſubmit to the French power, which after this layeth ſiege to Naples, but the ſickneſs ſo raged in his Army, that it conſumed 20000

An, Christi 20000. the reſt were diſperſed. Neither was their *French* Fortune better in *Inſubria*, for they loſe *Genua* again with the Caſtle, and are driven out of *Savona*, and *Burbon* taken priſoner, ſo that the Confederates are now forced to think of Peace with *Cæſar*: but *Germany* is much troubled now with Controverſies of Religion: the Proteſtants are divided among themſelves; *Caroloſtadius*, with *Zuinglius*, and *Oecolampadius*, in poynts of the Euchariſt oppoſe themſelves to *Luther*: many *Lutherans* are burned for Hereticks: the Ruſticks and ſervants, under ſhew of Evangelical liberty, rebel againſt their Lords and Maſters: *Luther* with all his preaching and writing, could not reclaim them, but they in great flocks drive out the Gentry, pull down their Caſtles, kill and butcher all that make reſiſtance. At laſt by the confederat *Swevians* are overthrown near *Ulme*, *Franconie*, and other place. About 50000 of them are ſlain, and their Ringleader is roſted alive at a gentle fire: yet ſhortly after they fly out again by the inſtigation of one *Thomas Munzerus*, a mad Preacher, but are utterly defeated by *Philip*, the Landgrave: *Munzerus* preaching is ſpoiled by the loſs of his head. Another Rebellion againſt the Biſhop of Trevers, is quieted by the puniſhment and death of their Captain *Siccingus*.

Mean while *Luther* goeth on boldly in his Reformation. He ſets out the New Teſtament, and Pſalms in *Dutch*, and cauſeth Divine ſervice to be performed in the Vulgar tongue, whoſe labor in this is commended by *John* Duke of *Saxony*, who ſuceeded his brother *Frederick* by George of *Brandeburg*, by *Erneſtus* and *Francis* of *Luneburg*, by *Philip* the Landgrave, *Philip* of *Pomerania*, and ſome others. Theſe proteſted againſt the de-
1529 crees of *Ratiſbon*, and *Spire*, in prejudice to religion: hence came the name of Proteſtants. Albert, Maſter of the *Teutonick* order, and Duke of *Boruſſia*, marrieth with *Dorothy*, Daughter to *Frederick*, the firſt King of *Denmark*; then did the *Rhodian* Knights obtain the Iſle of *Malta*, and at the ſame time the ſweating ſickneſs brake out in *England*.

Charles preparing againſt the Turk, makes a League with the Pope at *Barcellona*, wherein it was agreed, That *Cæſars* Daughter *Margaret*, ſhould marry with *Alexander* of Medices, and that he may be reſtored to his ancient Dominion of *Florence*. The Venetians alſo joyn in this League, and delivered up the towns they had among the *Sammites*, in *Picenum*, and *Apulia*.

It is alſo agreed, That *Francis* paying 200000 Crowns, ſhould receive his Children again which were his Hoſtages. Then after *Cæſar* had beaten *Solyman*, he is Crowned at *Bononia* with great ſtate by the Pope, to whom he ſwore to deſtroy the *Lutherans*, who at *Marpurg* tryed to be reconciled to *Zuinglius*, but could not. Shortly after in the Dyet at *Auſpurg*, they exhibited the confeſſion of their faith, from the place called *Auguſtana*, which was openly read, but then rejected by *Cæſar*. The *Lutheran* Princes are enjoyned to reſtore all to the Church again, under pain of proſcription, and not to write or ſpeak againſt the Roman Doctrine. But *Luther* publiſheth a book, exhorting the Germans to reject that impious Edict of the Dyet, and to oppoſe the Roman Tenets, and to defend the Proteſtant Princes by the ſword. *Cæſar*, to retain the Empire in his Family, cauſed his Brother *Ferdinand*, at *Colen* to be proclaimed King of the Romans. The ſame year *Florence*, after a long ſiege is ſurrendered to *Cæſar*, and according to the Agreement between *Cæſar* and the Pope, *Alexander* of *Medices*, the Baſtard ſon of *Laurence*, is made Duke of *Florence*; but *Charles* finding the Turk preparing againſt him, makes peace with the *Lutherans*, by the mediation of *Albert*, Arch-Biſhop of *Mints*, and *Ludovick*, the *Palſgrave*. In his Army aroſe a great mutiny for want of pay, which made him alter his reſolu-

resolution, and return by *Italy* into Spain. The Turks wast and plunder all where they came; but in their return lose both their spoiles and lives in *Helvetia*. *An. Christi*

The *Bernois* after the Example of *Zurich* and *Basil*, shake off the Roman religion: whereupon by the instigation of *Ferdinand* and *Clement*, great troubles are raised, which the *French* endeavoured to compose, but could not. At last they come to a Battel, in which *Zuinglius* is killed, and his body burned. *Oecolampadius* grieving for the loss of his friend, dyed. The *Tigurins* recruit again, and try another Battel, in which there was such loss on both sides, that they agreed to live peaceably one with another, notwithstanding their differences in religion. In *Westphalia* a War is raised by *John* of *Leyden*, the Taylor, who being infected with the madness of *Muntzer*, and back'd by *Bernard Rotman*, Minister of *Monaster*, cavilled against Baptisme of Infants, braging much of Enthusiasmes and the Spirit: A great part of *Monaster* sided with him. No disputation nor councel could work on these men; but to strengthen themselves they call in many strangers, they thrust out the old Senate, and choose new Senators; they call the City *Jerusalem*, and dream of new Apostles, Kings, and Judges: but the Bishop by the German forces so besieged their new *Jerusalem*, that it was vexed with as great a Famine as the old, and all kinde of calamities and outrages. At length after sixteen months siege the Town is taken; the Souldiers are put to the sword, King *John*, *Knipperdolling*, *Beruh*, and their Minister *Kretchting*, are nipped with hot burning pincers, and hanged upon a high tower. 1531

Pope *Clement* confirms a new Order of Capuchins, and procrastinates the promised Synod, leaving that burthen by his death to *Alexander Farnesius* his successor, whose pontifical name was *Paul* the third: he seemed very desirous to have a general councel: He makes his Nephewes Cardinals: *Mantua* is the place first named for a Councel, then *Vicentia*. Fifteen of the protestant Princes, and 30 Cities do remonstrate to his Embassador *Vergerius*: That a general Synod is the Tribunall of the whole Church, not of the *Pope* alone; and that the *Pope* was a party, therefore no competent Judge: that he ought not first of himself to condemn *Luther*, and then force the Synod to do the like. *Luther* at *Smalcald*, frames some Articles, subscribed by certain Divines, which he exhibits to the Synod at Mantua.

Mean while *Cæsar* makes an expedition into *Africa*, to restore *Muleasses* to his Kingdom of *Tunis*, being turned out by *Barbaross*, the pyrate of *Mitylene*, whom *Solyman* had furnished with a fleet, himself being employed in the *Persian* War. *Barbaross* is overthrown, the Moor restored to his Kingdom, and the Castle *Guleta* built by *Charles*, which made the Christians Navigation the more secure. The Turk took *Seleucia*, but in his return lost the most part of his Army by Famin and Want. When *Cæsar* was returned from *Afric*, he seizeth on *Millan*, (now void by the death of *Sforsia*) as being Lord of the Fee. The French King on the other side claims it as his inheritance, and because the Duke of *Savoy* adhered to the Emperor, he drives him out of a great part of his Territories, which so moved *Cæsar*, that he made a great complaint to the *Pope* at *Rome* against the French, and withall sends an Army into France: but *Pope Paul*, understanding that the Turk had taken *Cliffa* in *Dalmatia*, *Corcyra* from the *Venetians*, and subdued *Moldavia*, makes a peace of ten years between *Cæsar* and the French at *Nicæa*, a town of *Province*, where he procures for his Nephew *Octavius*, the Widow of *Alexander Medices*, who for his intemperate Letchery, was murthered by his Cosin Jermin, *Lawrence*. *Cosmus Medices*, is by *Cæsar* made Duke of *Florence*, but against the *Popes* will. The

An. Christi fleet which the Emperor, Pope and *Venesian* sent against the *Turk*, is over-
1538 thrown by *Barbarossa* and stormy weather. *Luther* translates the Bible into *Dutch*, and prints it; whose example in this, was followed by divers other Nations: At *Straisburg* a Colledg is erected, the Iesuits societie is instituted by *Loiola* a *Spaniard*; the Protestant Princes make a league among themselves, to whom is joyned the *Dane*, who had lately changed his Religion: *Cæsar* upon the intreatie of his brother *Ferdinand*, calls a Dyet at *Francford*, for reconciling the differences in Religion, where a truce is given the Protestants.

Cæsar not long after this, having buried his Empereſs *Isabel*, King *John* of *Portugall*'s sister, makes a journey into *France*, where he is royally received by King *Francis* at *Paris*, and *Eleanor* his sister, King *Francis* his wife; he sends Ambassadors to *Venice* to incite them against the *Turk*, whose metropolis *Constantinople* was almost burned down; but the Castle of *Galata* was recovered by *Barbarossa*; then *Cæsar* hastneth to *Belgium* to suppress the rebellion of *Gaunt*, whose old Priviledges he took away, and put to death the seditious Authors, he appoints a conference at *Wormes*, between the Catholicks and Protestants, which was interrupted by the Pope fearing a Schisme. After this *Charls* growing more milde towards the Protestants, indeavoured to have a conference of moderate Divines at *Ratisbon*, for reconciling some controvered points; but *Catarenus* the Cardinall fearing the Popes displeasure, averted the Emperors minde, who referrs it to the general Synod, for he was then preparing of a fleet for *Algier* in *Africk* against the *Turks*, which came to nothing, for the winds and storms so spoiled the ships before *Algier*, that they were forced to return into *Spain* with great loss; so likewise *Ferdinand*'s preparation in *Germany* against the *Turks* did miscarry, by the sickness in the Army, and for want of discipline: About this time also, *Francis* finding that *Charls* deluded him about the restitution of *Millan*, and that he had put to death his Legats going to the *Turks*, breaks off the league, and drawes *William* of *Cleveland*, to whom *Charls* had denied the possession of *Gelderland*, to side with him, who therefore endeavoured to seise upon *Antwerp*; for *Charls* of *Egmund* heir of his fathers quarrell with the house of *Burgundy*, left *Gelderland* by his last will to *William* of *Juliers*, and to his onely daughter *Mary* his wife; whose son *William* became heir of *Juliers*, *Cleveland*, *Gelderland*, and other places; this wealth, that he might the more easily enjoy and retain, against the great power of *Cæsar*, he thought it his safest way to enter into a league with *France*, which caused afterwards great warrs. *Charls* to strengthen his cause against *France*, strives to make the Pope on his side, therefore he labours to suppress the Protestants; yet he would not part with *Parma* and *Placentia*, parcels of the Dutchie of *Millan*, to *Octavius*, *Farnesius*, *Pauls* Nephew. He prepares then to make warr upon *France* and *Cleveland*, for this purpose he restores to *Cosmus Medices* his Castles for two hundred thousand crowns: The *French* are assisted by *Christian* 3^d. of *Denmark*, and *Gustavus* the *Swede*, for some wrong they had received from *Charls*; But *Francis* unwisely divides his Army into 5. parts, and falls upon 5. several Imperiall Territories, by which he weakned his power, and lost quickly the places he took; *Cleveland* lost so many of his Townes, that he was forced to submit to *Cæsar*, and to content himself with the loss of *Gelderland*: But the
1544 *French* take *Laudress* and *Luceburg*, and assist the *Turk* in the siege of *Nicea*, and defeat the *Cesarians* in *Piemont*; wherefore *Cæsar* at *Spire* gives peace to the Protestants till the next Dyet: Shortly after he recovers *Luceburg*, and takes divers Townes from the *French*, wasting all his Countrey almost to *Paris*, so that *Francis* was glad to sue for peace, and to restore *Savoy*.

During the quietness which the Protestants had under *Charls*, they erect in divers places Colledges, and Schools for learning; but those Halcyonian days held not long; for *Cæsar* and *Francis* combine together to restore the old

Religion,

Religion, and to ſuppreſs all gainſayers: Therefore Proclamations are made through all their dominions againſt Proteſtaniſme: One *Peter Brulius* for oppoſing the *Roman* Faith, is burned at *Turnay*; The *Waldenſes* are maſſacred in *Provence*: Their extirpation was urged in the Dyet at *Wormes*. *Paul* aſſembleth the Synod at *Trent*; with him *Cæſar*, the *French*, and *Polonian* joyn in league, *Cæſar* is reproved and threatned in a ſharp Letter, which *Luther* anſwered, for conniving ſo long at the Proteſtants. *Henry* of *Brunſwig*, for raiſing new troubles, is taken priſoner with his ſon by the Land-grave; the next year after this *Luther* died, 29. years after he began this fatall quarrell. *An. Chriſti* 1546

The conference at *Ratisbon* is diſſolved, the Proteſtants complaining of their hard uſage; and refuſing to ſtand to the decrees of *Trent*. *Mints* and *Trevers* fall off from *Herman* of *Colen*, and *Frederick* Palatine, who were lately turned *Lutherians*: *Cæſar* raiſeth an Army, *Colen* is proſcribed by the Pope, a truce is made with *Solyman*, leſt he ſhould hinder the warr intended againſt the Proteſtants: The Pope promiſeth to aſſiſt *Cæſar* with 12 thouſand Foot, 500 Horſe, and good ſtore of gold. *Charls* declares that his raiſing of Forces was not againſt the Cities, but ſome Princes who obſtructed juſtice and the peace: The *Saxon* and Landgrave, whom *Cæſar* aimed at, remonſtrate that they were free from all crimes except Hereſie, which was the onely cauſe of the Popes warr: moſt of the Princes ſide with the Emperor. *Denmark* was now in league with *Charls*, and the houſe of *Burgundy*; therefore to avoid offence, *Chriſtian* the third, would not aſſiſt the Proteſtants. The *Saxon* and Landgrave are proſcribed by *Cæſar*, who hath now a great Army of *Pontificians*, *Spaniards*, and *Germans*, with which, great Forces of the *Belgians* do joyn near *Ingolſta* notwithſtanding the Proteſtants endeavoured to hinder this conjunction: *Cæſar* to diſtract the Proteſtant Army, aſſiſts *Maurice* the *Saxons* Coſin German, with Forces againſt the Elector, with whom before he had a quarrell: Hereupon the Proteſtants are neceſſitated to tranſferr their Army into *Saxony*, and to leave a Gariſon in *Suevia*: The Land-grave returns home with his Forces, unwilling to fight againſt *Maurice* his ſon in Law; So it was eaſie for *Cæſar* to ſubdue the *Sueves* and *Noricks*. *Frederick* Palatine, a friend but lately to the Proteſtants, now reconciles himſelf to the Emperor, ſo many others ſubmit to him: In the mean while the Proteſtant doctrins of traditions, Apochripha books, originall ſin, juſtification by faith alone, and their opinions of the Sacraments are condemned in the Councell of *Trent*.

The *Saxon* recovers what *Maurice* had taken from him, and withall ſurpriſeth divers of his Towns, he drawes to his ſide the Biſhopricks of *Halberſtad* and *Magdeburg*, *Cæſar* puts a mulct upon *Ausburg* and *Strasburg*, and receives them into favour; But *Herman* Biſhop of *Colen*, upon perſwaſion of his friends, reſignes his Biſhoprick: His ſucceſſor *Adulphus* preſently aboliſhed the begun reformation: *Cæſar* takes in divers Towns in *Saxony*, in the interim his great Enemy King *Francis* dies, a friend to the Proteſtants, not out of love to them, but of hatred to *Charls*, therefore he uſed ſometimes underhand to furniſh them with money: *Saxon* being now deſtitute of the friendſhip of *France*, is expoſed to the Emperors fury, who with the Forces of his brother *Ferdinand* and *Maurice*, falls upon his Countrey; the Duke had ſent moſt part of his Army into the Cities, therefore makes haſte to ſhelter himſelf in *Witteberg*, but *Cæſar* foording over *Albis*, overtakes him, and forceth him to fight: In this conflict the Duke is wounded and taken, and by a Councell of Warr condemned to die, but he redeems his life by reſignation of his Electorſhip, and by ſurrendring *Witteberg* and *Gotha* to *Cæſar*; his eſtate was confiſcate, and beſtowed upon *Ferdinand* and *Maurice*; a yearly penſion was allowed him. At *Dracenburg*, though the Proteſtants had the better of the day from the *Ceſarians*, yet they were much dejected for the

An. Christi affliction of the *Saxon*. The Landgrave by perſwaſion of *Maurice* his ſon in Law, and *Brandeburg* humbly ſubmits himſelf to *Cæſar*, who detained him priſoner: *Cæſar* carried away out of *Germany* into his Provinces, about 500. piece of Ordnance, and exacted of the Proteſtant 160000 thouſand crowns; *Ferdinand* alſo puniſhed the *Bohemians*, for not invading, but rather defending the *Saxons* Territories: The Proteſtants are forced to ſubmit to the Counſell of *Trent* in many places; but ſome jarrs ariſe between the Pope
1548 and *Cæſar*, for indeavouring to moderate the Counſell upon the Proteſtants requeſt, and for ſlighting the Papall dignity. Pope *Paul* being told by his Phyſitians, that the aire of *Trent* was not wholſome, transfers the Synod to *Bononia*, againſt which, *Cæſar* by his Ambaſſadors complains.

Maurice, for his fidelity to *Cæſar*, is made Elector of *Saxony*, he repairs the Univerſity of *Witteburg*; in all other places of his Juriſdiction he cauſeth the Proteſtant Miniſters, to be either depoſed, baniſhed, or killed: The example of *Francis Spier*, who falling off from Proteſtaniſme, fell into diſpair at *Padua*, was the occaſion that divers were converted. *Bucer*, *Fagius*, and *Martyr*, paſſe over into *England*: *Brentius*, *Muſculus*, aud others, are ſtrangely preſerved. The Captive *Saxon*, *Brandeburg* and the Palatine, favour the Proteſtants. *Magdeburg*, *Brem*, and ſome other places of *Saxony*, ſtand upon their libertie: *Flaccus Illyricus* leaves *Witteburg*, where he condemned *Melanæthens* Faith, and goeth to *Magdeburg*; which City *Cæſar* proſcribed,
1550 and commanded the Elector *Maurice* to beſiege it. The Electors are wrought upon to transfer the Title of King of the *Romans* upon *Philip*, *Cæſars* ſon, by *Mary* of *Portugall*, but they would not recede from their firſt Act. The *Magdeburgers* overthrow ſome Forces of their enemies, among which were 200 Gentlemen. Mean while *Paul* 3d dieth with grief; his ſon *Peter Loiſius* being ſlain before by *Ferdinand Gonzaga*. After three months alteration, to *Paul* ſucceeded *Julius* 3d whoſe name before was *Johannes Maria Montanus*, he had been Preſident or Moderator of the Counſell. *Henry* 2d of *France*, ſon to *Francis*, ſtrives to ſtir up the *German* Princes againſt *Charls*, chiefly *Maurice*, who was offended for the impriſonment of his Father in Law the Landgrave; *Maurice* combines with *Albert* of *Brandeburg*, and the Megapolitans with *France*; for the *German* liberty, he is leader of the *Magdeburg* Army, who having made his peace, leaves the *Magdeburgers* to *Cæſars* mercy, who layeth a heavy fine on them, leaving them to their Religion and Liberty. The Proteſtant Divines exhibit their Poſitions to the Counſell of *Trent*, but they were rejected. The Elector *Maurice* having often Petitioned *Cæſar* for the Landgraves libertie, but ſtill in vain, makes war againſt *Charls*, ſeiſeth upon *Auſpurg*; and having affrighted the *Trent* Fathers, with the report of his coming thither, they all fled. *Creſcentius* the Cardinall, Preſident of the Counſell, was affrighted in the night by a black dog. The *French* take ſome Townes of the Empire, and by *Lorrain* break in upon *Alſatia*, and extorts proviſion from *Straisburg*. *Maurice* propounds a league with *Ferdinand* and the *Bavarian*.

The *French* King underſtanding that the *Ceſarians* out of *Belgium*, were got into *Champany*, waſting all with fire and ſword, turns aſide to *Lucemburg*. The *Saxon* having taken the *Alpin* Straits, kills and takes about 3000. of the *Cæſarians*, which ſo affrighted *Charls* and *Ferdinand*, that by the light of their matches, they ſtole away from *Oenipont* to *Villacum* by night: *Oenipont* being taken, all goods belonging to *Cæſar* or the *Spaniards*, were plundered, but the goods of *Ferdinand* and *Germans*, were not touched. A truce is made at laſt, and then peace. The Landgrave is diſmiſſed from his *Belgick* priſon. A free and perpetuall exerciſe of Proteſtaniſme in *Germany* is granted, and all proſcriptions are aboliſhed. Before this tranſaction, *Ulme*, *Noriberg*, with the Biſhops of *Bamberg*, *Herbipolis*, and *Mints*, had ſuffered

much

much loſs and dammage by *Albert*, who had alſo ſubdued *Wormes* and *Spire*, *An. Chriſti* and taken *Trivers* by ſurpriſall. *Maurice* ſends his Army into *Hungary* againſt the *Turks*, who had taken there divers Towns in revenge of *Cæſars* taking of *Lephs* in *Affrick* againſt the peace. *Ferdinands* loſſes were ſo great, that he was forced to buy his peace from *Solyman* for an yearly penſion of 30000. crowns. *Cæſar* goeth againſt the *French*, but loſeth moſt part of his Army by ſickneſs, and his fortune began ſtill to decline, he made war againſt *Parma* and *Mirandula*, being aſſiſted by the Pope, where he loſt many men, but did no good. *Sena* fell off from *Cæſar* to the *French*, becauſe the *Cæſarians* built a Caſtle in that Town. The Territories of *Sena* with long War was laid waſte, and at laſt ſubdued by *Coſmus Medices*, who by Famin took *Sena*, and added it to his Principallitieby *Cæſars* permiſſion. *Henry*, by the *Turks* aſſiſtance, took the Iſle of *Corſica* from the *Germois*, and wafts with fire and ſword, *Cæſars* Territories, who on the other ſide deſtroyeth ſome *French* Towns.

About the beginning of the year 51 of this Century, the Pope dieth, to whom ſucceeded *Marcellus* 2^d^ he alſo the two and twentieth day of his Pontificate, is ſuddenly taken away by an Apoplexie, in whoſe place came *John Peter Caraffa*, now called *Paul* 4^th^ a great Antilutherian and promoter of the Inquiſition, the conſumer of 150 thouſand Proteſtants in 30. years ſpace: he impoſed heavy tributes on the *Jewes*, and cauſed them for diſtinction ſake, to wear yellow caps, being angry with *Cæſar* for oppoſing his Election, he raiſeth an Army againſt *Naples*, his own Country, but *Charls* being weary of the world, after the Example of *Diocleſian*, layeth down his imperiall dignitie, leaveth his hereditary Kingdoms to *Philip* his ſon, and the Empire to *Ferdinand* his brother, then retires himſelf into the Monaſtery of S. *Hieroms* Order, dedicated to S. *Laurence* by his ſon *Philip*, in memory of the great Victory he had over the *French* at S. *Quintins*; this Covent is in the Eſcuriel near *Madrid*. Here *Charls* ſpent two years in devotion, and then died the 38 year, or as ſome ſay, the 40 of his Empire, and the 54 of his life. his death was preſaged by a Commet: Mean while the Pope aſſiſted by the *French*, makes war againſt *Philip*, who in revenge, ſtrips the Pope of almoſt all *Latium* wherefore he finding *Philip* too potent to buckle with; now the *French* being defeated, and the moſt of their Nobility taken at S. *Quintins* and that *Octavius Ferneſius* was in favour with *Philip* from whom he had received *Placentia*, admits of peace which was accompanied with the innundation of *Tibris* that did more hurt then the war. In *Charls* his time, *Ferdinand Magellan* found out the Strait, ſo called from his name, and in two years ſpace ſailed about the world, and returned again to *Sivill*. In the ſpace of 20 years *Ferdinand Cortes*, took multitudes of Towns the chief whereof is *Mexico*, with many Provinces: The Country alſo of *Peru* is ſubjugated by *Varga* and *Pizzarus*, in which is the great City *Cuſco*: The *Portugalls* alſo take many places in the Eaſt *Indies*. *Caſtrius* obtains a great Victory againſt the King of *Cambaia*, and withall takes *Dio*, the rich and great City of that Country which became the chief Seat of the *Portugalls* under King *Emanuel*, and King *John* who looked more ſtrictly to the Government of that place then *Charls* did to the Government of *America*, being intangled with the wars of *Europ*, which occaſioned the *Spaniards* to Tyrannize over the poor *Americans*. 1551

To *Charls* ſucceeded his brother *Ferdinand*, King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*. He confirms the peace of *Germany*, advanceth the Univerſity of *Sena*, erected before, by *John Frederick* the Elector, appoints a conference at *Wormes* between the Papiſts and Proteſtants, which took no effect becauſe *Melanæthon* and other *Lutherans* would not condemn (as the *Romaniſts* deſired) *Calvin*, *Oſiander* and the reſt who had receded from the *Auguſtan* confeſſion

An. Christi 1559

feſſion; Yet the peace of *Germany* was not by this interrupted: But *Livonia*, a Province of the *German* Empire, is much ſhaken by *John Baſilides* D. of *Muſcovia*, becauſe upon their civill Warrs they had neglected to pay the tribute, they owed by promiſe to the *Muſcovit*; therefore he takes *Narva* by ſurpriſall, layeth waſte the Countrey of *Derbat*, and threatens the ruine of *Livonia*, which at laſt paid the gold, but yet could not pacifie the Tyrant. Therefore the *Rivaliens* deſired *Chriſtian* 3 of *Denmark* to be their protector againſt the *Ruſſian* by reaſon *Eſtonic* had anciently been ſubject to *Denmark*; but he wiſely refuſed, affirming he had more land then he could well govern; yet he helps them with money and arms, and the next year died: after he had cauſed the Bible to be tranſlated into *Daniſh*, and had ſet up preaching Miniſters in his Kingdome: This year alſo was fatall to Queen *Mary* of *England*, King *Henry* of *France*, the D. of *Venice*, and Pope *Paul* 4th whoſe Marble ſtatue the *Romans* contumeliouſly uſed, by cutting off his hands and head; they deface all the Scutchions, or Arms of the Family of *Caraffa*, they open the Inquiſition priſon, and let out the priſoners, and then ſet the houſe on fire. This year alſo *Adolphus* D. of *Holſt* ſubdued *Dithmars* by the help of *Frederick* 2d King of *Denmark*, ſon to *Chriſtian* 3d: This Duke having utterly defeated the *Dithmarſians*, they were forced to ſend their Prieſts with white ſtaves to beg pardon for their rebellions, which was granted conditionally they would give up their arms, and ſubmit to his Government; which was aſſented to: and withall, they were contented to pay yearly a *Florens* for every acre of land they enjoyed. The *Livonians* by reaſon of their continuall oppreſſions, were forced to deſire the King of *Poland's* protection, who made *Gothard* Maſter of the Knights, Duke of *Curland*, when that *Livonian* order had continued 358 years.

After 4 months debate, *Pius* 4th called before *John Angel* of the houſe of *Medices*, is made Pope. At his Inauguration 18 men were killed, as they were ſcrambling for the money flung that day among the people, and about 40 hurt, an ominous initiation to his Pontificate: he pardoned thoſe that abuſed his predeceſſors, but was very rigid againſt his friends and nephews. He put Cardinall *Caraffa* to death, and divers other prime men, upon ſuſpition of Treaſon. He confirmed *Ferdinand* in the Empire, abſolves *Charls* 5th and his ſon *Philip* from Pope *Pauls* criminations. *Abdiſu* Patriarch of the Eaſtern Chriſtians came to him, with a reſolution to imbrace the *Roman* Faith, which he did, and was ſent back into *Affrica* with rich preſents. He ordereth the general Counſell to ſit again at *Trent*, and ſent his Legats to invite the Proteſtants thither; but the *Palſgrave* and *Saxon* with ſome other *Teutonick* Princes, meet at *Naumburg*, and return this anſwer to *Ferdinand Cæſar*; that they would willingly yeild to a nationall or generall Counſell if it were free, which they could not acknowledge this to be: And they tell the *Popes* Legats, that he had no power over Princes, nor authority to call a Synod. When they came to *Lubeck*, they were rejected by the King of *Denmark*, becauſe the *Pope* had accounted him an Heretick: But *Philip* King of *Spain*, and *Francis* 2d of *France*, perſecute the Proteſtants; under whoſe ſucceſſor *Charls* 9th they had ſome reſt, and withall a new name, for they are now called *Hugonits*, from one *Hugo*, in whoſe houſe they uſed to have their meetings. In the Counſell of *Trent* there is ſome debate between the *Pope* and *Spaniſh* Biſhops, who would ſcarce yeild that their dependance ſhould be from him. The Kings alſo of *Spain* and *France*, did ſtrive there for precedencie, the one preferring the Title of Catholick, the other of moſt Chriſtian: The matter being referred to the *Pope*, he gives the precedencie to *France*. There was alſo much altercation about the reſidence of Biſhops, and the peculiar care of their Flocks, which they ſhould have; but nothing in that point was determined:

1563 At laſt the Synod is concluded. 27 Years after it was called by *Paul* 3d at *Mantua*;

Mantua; and 18 years from the first session at *Trent*: It sate without interruptions 5 years - to wit, two under *Paul* 3^d, one under *Julius* 3^d, and two under *Pius* 4^th; it was subscribed by 255 Fathers, most of the Canons were made by the *Italian* and *Spanish* Clergy, the *French* came not till about the end of the Counsell: Few of other Nations were there present. A strict Oath is imposed on the Clergy and Magistrates, to adhere to, and maintain the determinations of that Synod. For this purpose divers Bishopricks and Archbishopricks are erected in the *Belgian* Provinces, as at *Mechlin*, *Cameray*, *Utrecht*, *Harlem*, *Middelburg*, *Antwerp*, *Brugis*, and elsewhere, which promoted not, but hindred the Pontifican cause, and raised a rebellion against *Philip*; which shook off the *Spanish* Yoke. *An. Christi*

About these times, King *Philip* was beat at Sea by *Solyman* the *Turk*, who took the Isle *Mazinges* on the coast of *Affrick*, in which the Viceroy of *Sicily*, the Duke of *Medina* had strongly fortified the Castle. For *Pialis* the *Bassai* that defeated the *Spanish* fleet which had besieged *Tripolis*, takes in the Castle being weakly manned and victualled, killed and carried away 18000 Christians, therefore *Cosmus* Duke of *Florence* erects a new Order of Knights, called *Stephanits* against the *Turks*, & assignes for their habitation the Isle *Ebusa*: Upon the Petition of *William* of *Orange*, *Egmund* and *Horn*. K. *Philip* removes from the Government of *Belgium*, *Antony Perenot*, and *Atrelacius* the Cardinall, and gives a fuller power to his sister *Margaret* of *Parma*. *Ferdinand* having ruled the Empire 6 years in peace, died, leaving his son *Maximilian* to succeed. *David George* his heresie is detected at *Basil*, who taught he was the promised son of *David*, and his body is burned to ashes; about that time *Francis Xaverius* the Jesuit is sent to *Japan* and other Eastern parts, to convert the *Indians*.

Maximilian 2^d succeeded to his Father *Ferdinand*, both in the Kingdoms of *Hungary* and Bohemia, as also in the Empire, when *John Sigismund* of *Trasilvania*, relying on the protection of *Solyman*, gave himself out to be King of *Hungary*, he was by *Maximilian* suppressed; by reason *Solyman* was then before *Malta* with a fleet of 205 sail; so that the aid he sent to the *Transilvanians* came too late. The *Turk* upon that enterprise lost 22 thousand, *Malta* holding out all the while stoutly against him, under the command of *John Valet* great master of the *Rhodian* Knights. The *Turks* after six months siege, being repulsed, convert their tottered & torn forces, upon the Isle *Chias*, which had been under the *Genuois* above 2 0 years, but now by *Pialis Bassai* is brought under the *Turkish* Yoke, at which time *Paul* 4^th died, who having exhausted his treasures on the Counsell of *Trent*, and magnificent buildings, was necessitated to exact upon his subjects, and to wink at *Symone*. To him succeeded *Michael Chisserius*, who called himself *Pius* 5^th. In *Belgium* the seeds of a long lasting war are cast by the *Spanish* harsh severity, a mitigation whereof was Petitioned for by *Henry Bredenrod*, and the rest of the Gentry; these Petitioners were called *Geuses*, that is, beggers from their mean apparel which nickname they retained afterward. When they had entred into a confederacie for Libertie of conscience; this wise course of the Gentry was marred by the inconsiderate zeal of the *Calvinian* multitude, who setting up Pulpits every where, of their own privat motion threw down the Images; But *William* of *Orange* caused a form of rites and doctrin to be compiled for the Protestants to follow; to whom he gave power to preach in publick: at which *Margaret* of *Parma* did connive presently. *Philip* abolishing all Liberty, and taking the Government from *Parma*. *Ferdinand Alvares* Duke of *Alba*, a fierce natured man, is by him made Governor. *William* being affrighted at his comming, departs thence to his Teutons: *Egmund* and *Horne* are cunningly apprehended and beheaded. A Garrison and Castle are forced upon the *Antwerpians*. *Orange* wanting help, obtained *Conde*'s Army, who had lately ex- 1567

An. Chriſti torted peace to his *Hugonots* from *Charls*, By the aſſiſtance of *John Caſimer*. *Alba* proſcribes *Orange* as a Traitor, and puts many of the Nobility to death; he alſo overthrew in a battell *Lewis* of *Naſſau Orange* his brother. An Army is ſuddenly raiſed by this *William*, intending to win or looſe all. *Alba* an old beaten Soldier knowing ſo great an Army could not be ſuſtained without pay, avoided fighting; ſo that *William* is forced to lead his Army into *France* for pay, which in the interim mouldred away. The *Belgians* having paid in Taxes twentie hundred thouſand crowns, labour to eaſe themſelves of this burthen, and to avoid the Tyrants crueltie; therefore divers undertook a voluntary exile; where conſulting with *Orange*, who was alſo baniſhed, they firſt ſeiſe upon *Briel* in *Holland*, then they make *Uluſhing*, *Enchuſen*, and other Townes to take their part. *Lewis* of *Naſſau* by a Stratagem, takes *Mons* in *Henault*. *William* obtains *Ruremund*, *Lovan*, and *Mechlin*, whilſt *Alba* was beſieging of *Mons*: But *William* not being able to raiſe the ſiege and relieve his brother, finding alſo that the *French*, wholly intent in perſecuting of the Proteſtants, were about to deſert and betray him, he removes preſently to *Holland*, which with *Zeland* he makes his own: So *Mons* is reſtored to *Alba*. Mean while the *Uluſhingers* and *Encuſers* beat the *Spaniard* by Sea. *Harlem* is beſieged 7 months; at laſt being forced by Famin yeilds to the *Spaniard*. In the midſt of theſe troubles, *Alba* is called into *Spain*, after his arrivall into *Belgium* 6 years. *Lewis Requieſenſius* ſucceeded him; who ſhortly after loſt *Middleburg*, the Metropolis of *Zeland*; but by *Avila* and *Mandragon* he defeats the *Belgian* Auxiliaries at *Neomag*, and beſiegeth *Leyden*, which being almoſt famiſhed, *Orange* relieved by opening the banks, and letting in the water, by which alſo proviſion was brought; after this, he honors the Town with an Univerſity.

Requeſenſius being dead, and a Commonwealth to be guided by States, is ſetled, till the coming of *John* of *Auſtria*, the *Belgians* reſolve unanimouſly, by force of Arms to drive out the *Spaniard*: *Alba's* Statues are aboliſhed; the *Gantois* perceiving how the *Spaniards* out of the Cittadel had plundred *Antwerp*, caſt out their Garriſon, and make themſelves free, whoſe example the other Towns follow. Not long after died Pope *Pius* 5th and *Sigiſmund* King of *Poland*, in whom ended the race of the *Jagellons*, though he married two ſiſters. *Cyprus* is loſt by the Chriſtians, but the battell of *Lepanto* is won by them: the Proteſtants are maſſacred at *Paris*, *Poland* being
1572 forſaken by *Henry*, who preferred the Crown of *France*, is divided about a new election. Some are for *Maximilian Cæſar*, ſome for *John Bator* Prince of *Tranſylvania* after *John Sigiſmund* was dead. *Cæſar* by ſtaying too long in ſuſpence, and doubting whether he ſhould ſwear or not to the *Polonian* Laws brought to him by the Legats, was prevented by *Bator*, who marrying with *Ann* the ſiſter of King *Sigiſmund*, obtained the Kingdom. *Maximilian* ſhortly after died, the 12th year of his Empire, a moderate and juſt Prince, he beſtowed divers priviledges on the Univerſitie of *Helmeſtad*, his ſaying was wont to be: [*To compell the conſcience is to force heaven*] About this time *John* of *Auſtria*, *Charls* the 5th's Baſtard, reſtored *Amidas* to his Kingdome of *Tunis*, after he had been flung out by the *Turks*, and built a new Fort; but perceiving that there was little truſt to be given to *Amidas*, he makes his brother *Fiduciarie* King of *Affrick*, but to no purpoſe, for the *Turk* by *Sinan Baſſi* ſupriſed *Golet* and the new Fort, takes 5[illegible] pieces of Ordnance, with other rich ſpoiles, kills and beats the *Spaniards* out of *Affrica*. 40. Years after *Charls* 5th had added *Tunis* to his dominions. The ſame year *Coſmus* to whom the Pope gave the Title of great Duke of *Etruria*, died, to him ſucceeded his ſon *Francis*: The *Veneſians* fortifie *Corcyra* againſt the *Turks*. *Charls* Prince of *Spain* for pitying the hard uſage of the *Netherlanders*, is by his father *Philip*, pretending Treaſon, impriſoned, where he died. *John Frede-*
[illegible]

rick the younger, Duke of *Saxony*, for aiding ſome whom *Cæſar* had proſcribed, was proſcribed himſelf, and impriſoned, where he ended his life: *Hamburg* is fined in 100 thouſand Jochims to King *Frederick* for ſpoiling the Freedom of *Trade*. *Roſtoch* by their inteſtin diſcords, is ſubjected to the Megapolitan Dukes; But upon acknowledgement of their fault, is reſtored to their freedom: In *Maximilian*'s time the Proteſtant Faith is propagated through *France*, *England*, *Scotland*, *Hungary*, *Poland*, and *Belgium*, in the Biſhopricks alſo of *Magdeburg*, *Halberſtad*, *Verdava*, and Dukedom of *Brunſwick*: But as they began to increaſe in wealth and eaſe, they fell into divers Factions cauſed by needleſs diſputes and controverſies, with which the world hath been too long troubled; at which the Elector of *Saxony* was ſo vexed, that he thruſt out of his Univerſity of *Witteberg* divers profeſſors, and impriſoned *Caſpar Pencerus* his Phyſitian, with *Cracovius* his Secretary. *Valentine Gentilis* for Blaſphemy againſt the Son of God, is burned at *Bern*. *An. Chriſti* 1576

CHAP. XVII.

The Affairs of Portugall, Affrick, Germany, *the* Netherlands, Spain, Poland, Hungary, Tranſylvania, Bohemia, Ruſſia, Venice, *&c. under* Rodolphus 2^d *Emperor, from the year* 1576. *till* 1612.

Rodolphus 2^d ſucceeded to his Father *Maximilian*, both in his Kingdome and Vertues. About the beginning of his time, *Sebaſtian* King of *Portugall* having made an unluckie expedition into *Affrica*, to reſtore *Mahumed* King of *Mauritania*, (whilſt he warreth with *Abdelmelech* Uncle to the baniſhed *Mahumed*) he loſt both his life and Kingdome: In this battell three Kings fell, and the Chriſtian Army was defeated. *Abdelmelech* in the fight died ſuddenly of an Apoplexie, *Mahumed* was drowned in the bogs, and *Sebaſtian* ſlain. *Hameth* the other Uncle of *Mahumed* enjoyed the Fruit of the victory, with the Kingdome of *Feſſe*: *Portugall* fell to *Henry* the Cardinall, an aged man; and *Sebaſtians* great Uncle, who died about a year after, on whoſe Kingdom *Philip* King of *Spain*, *Henry*'s ſiſters ſon ſeiſed by the Duke of *Alba*; *Anthony* being driven away, whom *Lewis*, *Henry*'s brother begot in Fornication: *Lisbon* proclaimed him King, but he was forced to flie, and as he was purſued, flung money behind him, to hinder his purſuers: He by the help of *France* and *England*, hoped to recover his loſt Kingdom, but could not; for he was beaten both by land and ſea; and with *Portugall* he loſt alſo the Iſlands *Azores*: The *Lowcountrey* wars under *John* of *Auſtria*, and *William* of *Naſſau*, was portended by a Commet: *John* had deluded the *Gantois* with hopes of peace; but they being impatient of Tyrannie and mock'ry, reject the *Spaniards*, ſend for *French* and *Germans*, and reſolve to make a Commonwealth of their own; they invite into *Belgium*, *Mathias* brother to *Ralph* the 2^d Emperor, and who afterward was Emperor himſelf, to be their Governor, hoping thereby to finde the Emperor *Ralph* more favourable towards them; till he came *William* diſcharged his place, who took in *Amſterdam*, *Mechlin*, *Deventry*, and other Sconces, whilſt the *Auſtrian* was buſie in ſubduing *Brabant*, ſhortly after they ſend for *John Caſimir* the Palatine with an Army, and then fall upon robbing and defacing of Churches, and invading the Clergies Revenues: but ſhortly after peace is proclaimed between the Catholicks and Proteſtants throughout *Belgium*, with Liberty of Conſcience; but the people of *Henault* and *Artois*, upon this were offended, and therefore called themſelves Malecontents, for they would admit no other Religon then the *Roman*. 1579

An. Chriſti The *Auſtrian* being dead of a Feaver, his Nephew *Alexander Farneſius*, Duke of *Parma* and *Placentia* ſucceeded in the Government, whoſe beginning was accompanied with an Epidemicall diſeaſe in his Army, which by a looſneſs ſwept away 12 thouſand: He reduced *Utricht* to the *Spaniard*, and laboured what he could to foment the inteſtin diſcords among the *Belgians* in the mean while *Cæſar* ſends into *Colen* 3 Biſhops, and 2 Princes to treat with the States Ambaſſadors about a peace between the *Spaniard* and them, but
1582 to no purpoſe; for *Orange* would not hearken to any peace without the enjoyment of Liberty and Religion; Wherefore he is proſcribed by the *Spaniard*. Mean while *Francis Alanſon* the *French* King's brother is invited into *Belgium*, 10
who gaping long for that imployment, haſtneth thither, but whilſt *Orange* and he were together at *Antwerp*, a deſperat young fellow ſet on by the *Spaniard*, ſhoots *Orange* with a bullet through the cheeks, ſo that he hardly eſcaped with his life. *Alanſon* having got ſupplies from *England*, promiſed much in defence of *Belgium*, but performed nothing, having more regard of his *French*, then of thoſe whoſe defence he undertook, and ſwore to; which appeared in *Brabant* and *Flanders*, where at *Antwerp* he received a notable defeat; by means of the *French*, his jugling was much more detected at *Newport*, *Dunkirk*, and other places, which give occaſion to *Parma* to recover *Newport*, and divers other Towns for the *Spaniard*. Hereupon the Go- 20
vernment is taken from him by the States, and he returns into *France* with his *French* Forces; but not long after, *Orange* and the States were neceſſitated to ſend for him again, who died before he had done any thing for the Commonwealth; 'tis thought he was poyſoned, becauſe they found he was ſorry for his former double dealing with the States. About a month after, the Prince of *Orange* is murthered by a *Burgundian*, *Balthaſar Gerard*, who had been lately received into *Orange* his ſervice, he ſhot him with a muſket at *Delph*, not without the knowledg (as 'tis thought) of *Parma*, the murtherer was cruelly put to death: Shortly after this, *Brugis*, *Gaunt*, and all *Flanders* almoſt is reduced to the *Spaniard*. 30

In *Germany* the Proteſtant Princes and Cities, ſtrive by Conferences and Synods, to take up the controverſies among themſelves: *Gebhard* Biſhop of *Colen*, profeſſing himſelf of the *Auguſtan* confeſſion, permitted freedom of the Goſpel to his people, and falls in love with *Agnes Mansfield*, whom he intends to marrie; but he is upon this depoſed by the Pope, and forſaken by moſt of his Dioceſſe; *Erneſt* of *Bavaria* being ſet up in his room: *Gebhard* in maintenance of his right, and *Erneſt* on the other ſide, raiſed oppoſit Forces. They fight upon doubtfull terms divers battels, in one Skirmiſh *Erneſt* loſt 2000 old Soldiers, at length *Gebhard* is worſted, and upon the taking of *Bonna*, totally defeated of his Biſhoprick by *Erneſtus*. A nationall Synod of 40
Proteſtants is deſired in *Germany*, but hindred by factious ſpirits. *Steven*
1583 *Bator* the new *Polonian* King makes war againſt *Dantſick*, for refuſing to ſwear Fealtie to him, till firſt he confirmed their Priviledges: after much ſlaughter on both ſides, at laſt by a friendly tranſaction, their differences were compoſed: The *Polander* to requite the *Muſcovits* waſting of *Livonia*, falls with fire
1584 and ſword upon his Territories, and takes from him many Towns; ſo that the *Muſcovit* is forced to renounce all he had taken in *Livonia*: The *Swedes* alſo take divers places in *Livonia* from the *Muſcovit*, which *Batorius* deſired might be reſtored to the *Polander*, but could not prevail; about this time an Epide- 50
micall infection run through all *Europ*, accompanied with a colde, and a cough, called the weathers maladie, becauſe ſheep are moſt troubled with it: Few died of this diſeaſe. A little before this, the *Muſcovits* having had ſome conteſtations with the *Swede* in *Livonia*, whoſe Officers he put to death, for cauſing ſome Towns ſwear Fealtie to *Magnus*, not to the *Ruſſian*, died the ſame year that the Jeſuits were obtruded upon *Livonia*. Then it was

that *George Frederick*, Duke of *Borussia* having paid a sum of money to the *Dane*, possessed himself of the Diocess of *Curion* as a *Polonian* fee. The next year *John Basilides* the *Russian* Tyrant, having knockt his son on the head with his Cudgell, of which wound he died, and after 25 years war with *Livonia*, he died also, exhorting his son *Theodor* to live peaceably with his neighbours. *An. Christi*

The same year the Præcopit *Tartars*, of the *Turks* confedrates becom their slaves. Pope *Gregory* the 17th about this time reformed the *Calendar*, by thrusting 10 days out of the month of *October*: *Amurath* the *Turk*, began to suspect some plot upon compliance between the Pope and *Byzantin* Patriarch, therefore banisheth the Patriarch, and takes away from the Christians two of their Temples in *Constantinople*; for approving this reformation of the *Calendar*; which caused some troubles at *Auspurg* in *Germany*, and *Riga* in *Livonia*; divers Protestants, rather out of pride, then Judgement rejected it: This *Gregory* erected divers Colledges of Jesuits, whose learning and holyness began to be held in admiration: In *Rome* is instituted a Colledg or Seminary of all Nations, to propagate the *Roman* Faith. 3. Ambassadors of *Japon* sent by the Jesuits, arrive at *Rome*, after 3 years travel, offering their service to the Pope who having royally entertained them, died within the space of two hours of a Squinzee; who all his time could not suppress the insolencies and robberies committed daily by his Soldiers, and those that had been proscribed; But *Batorius* King of *Poland*, by putting to death some of his Nobility, curbed the insolencies of the great men in his Kingdome. So *Frederick* 2d of *Denmark* brought the *Rostokers* to submit to *Ulricus* the Megapolitan. The *Farnesian* Family of the Dukes of *Parma*, grew famous by the happie succes of *Alexander* Governor of *Belgium*, who after he had besieged *Antwerp* one whole year, at last upon composition, took it; 4 years were granted to the Protestants, to settle there, or to depart, whereof many went and setled in *Hamburg*. *Mechlin* and divers other Towns submit to the *Spaniard*: A great storm hung over *Riga*, for resisting King *Stevens* edicts of *Poland*, who threatened it with fire and sword for opposing the *Roman* Religion, and putting to death some of his Legats: About this time showres of *Locusts* fell in *Thracia*; of geese and ducks in *Croatia*, on which many people did feed. *Maximilian* of *Austria*, *Cæsar*'s brother, who by his Father was named King of *Poland*, marcheth to *Cracovia* with an Army; but he was defeated and driven back towards *Silesia*, where he was besieged and taken, and forced to redeem his freedom with the loss of his Kingdom; which *Sigismund* obtains in the right of his Mother, being descended from the Kings of *Poland*. 1585 1586 1587

The year ensuing was fatall to many Princes. *Maximilian* was thrust out of *Poland* by *Sigismund*, *Frederick* the second of *Denmark* died, *Maurice* son to *William* (murthered at *Delph*) and grand-child by the mother to *Maurice* of *Saxony* is by the united States of *Holland*, made their Governor. The *Spanish* Armado consisting of 125 great ships, 20000 Soldiers, 10000 marriners 2000 Ordnance is defeated: Henry 3d King of *France* is murthered by *James Clements*, a *Dominican*; the *Polander* is molested by the *Muscovit*, who took some Forts from him; and by the *Tartarian*, who with fire and sword invaded his borders; so that he was fain to buy his peace of the *Tartar* with a great summe of Money. *Gregory* the 13th being dead, *Felix Montalt* is made Pope, and cals himself *Sixtus* the 5th. a mean man of Parentage; but a rich Pope; for he left 5 Millions behinde him, and yet in his Life-time very profuse upon Obelisks, High-wayes Churches, Pallaces, Aqueducts; upon Hospitals also, and the *Vatican* Bibliothec; He spent 38 thousand Crowns in removing one Obelisk alone. He incurred the King of *Spaine*'s displeasure by denying to aide the *Parisians* when they were besieged by King *Henry*'s 1588 1589

Army

An.Christi Army; whereupon he dyed with grief. *John Baptista Castaneus* succeeded, called *Urban* 7th his inauguration was accompanied with an Earthquake through *Austria*, *Moravia*, and Bohemia, and a great siccitie with heat, by which some rivers were dried up; he died within 14 days of a burning fea-
1590 ver: To whom succeeded *Michelas*. *Sfondrat* called *Gregory* 14th: he was born the 7th month, and therefore had a weak sickly body, he died the 10th month of his Pontificat, in his time the plague and famin so raged in *Italy*, that in one year at *Rome* there died sixty thousand people: He spent upon the *French* War 500000 crowns out of the publick treasure, besides 40000 out of his privat Coffers. *Grave Maurice* mean while seiseth upon *Breda* his na- 1
tive towne in *Brabant*, by a turf boat, within which lay hid many armed men. And shortly after he takes divers other Towns. To *Gregory* 14th succeeded *John Antonius* or Piemont, who assumed the name of *Gregory* 9th; he was of
1591 the *Spanish* Faction against *France*, and lived but two months in the Pontificate. To him succeeded *Hippolytus Aldabrandinus* or *Clement* 8th: *Grave Maurice* attempteth to take the Sluice and *Utricht*, but could not; yet he takes *Steinvick*, and *Covord*, and divers other places upon the death of *Parma*. To
1592 whom succeeded *Peter Ernest* of *Mansfield*, who sent his son *Charls* into *France*; to assist the *Spanish* faction there.

About this time *Sigismund Bator* the *Transylvanian* denies to pay the promised tribute to the *Turk*, and so by the Jesuits perswasion incurs the displeasure of a potent enemy, to the grief of his friends; some of which he kills for disswading him. The *Despots* of *Walachia* and *Moldavia* revolt to him: The *Walachians* fight the *Turks* and beat them, *Strigon* and *Vicegrad* are taken by the Christians: *Lippa* also submits to the *Transylvanian*, and in a battell *Sinan* looseth 10000 of his men. *Bator* being now allied to the Emperor, is aided by him to take *Tergovistia*, the seat of the Princes of *Walachia*. After many defeats given to *Sinan*, he chaseth him beyond the river *Agrius*, where he died with age and grief. *Albert* Arch Duke of *Austria*, *Cæsars* brother, of a Cardinall becomes husband to *Isabella Clara Eugenia*, *Philips* daughter, and enters *Belgium* in great state. Upon the death of *Ernestus* he besiegeth *Callis*, and takes it: A league is made between *England*, *France* and *Holland*, against *Spain*, and confirmed by a victory obtained by the *English* and *Holland* Fleet, against the *Spaniard* at *Cadiz*. The *Hollanders* send a fleet to *Bentam*, a Town in *Java* the less: And another to finde out the North-east passage; to no purpose, except to their own hurt, having lost the most of their men with cold. In the mean time *Albert* takes *Hulst* from the confederates, and they beat his Forces at *Torvahut*, having taken 38 Colours of foot, and two of horse with their baggage and money: About this time died *Philip* the 2d of *Spain*, as they write of the lowsie disease: To whom succeeded *Philip* 3d, who married *Margaret* daughter to *Charls* the Arch Duke; and then also died *Theodor* Prince of *Russia* in whom ended the *Basilidan* race. *Boris Federovitzius* the Queen of *Russia's* brother; dealt so with the people; that they preferred him to the Nobility in competition for that Scepter, which by their favour he obtained, and after this confirmed it by his succesfull expedition against the *Tartars*; but afterward his government proved Tyrannicall: *Palfias* and *Barnestein*; Imperiall Commanders defeat the *Tartars* in *Panonia*, and besiege *Javarin*, but upon the coming of the *Turks*, the siege is raised. The Popes Forces which were levied against the *Turks* in *Panonia*, were imployed against *Cæsar Atestinus* barstard, son to *Alphonsus* of *Ferraria*, who by the sword sought to obtain the antient Titles of that Dutchie, though he was Anathematized by the Pope, yet he fights the *Romans* and beats them: but at last finding his friends fall off from him, he resignes *Ferraria* to the Pope; so the war is continued against the *Turk*, and *Javerin* taken by *Swartzemburg*, with the loss of 1600. *Turks*.

Sigismund

Sigismund Batorius for fear of the *Turks*, delivers up *Ducia* or *Transylvania* to *Cæsar*, afterward his minde changed, upon the perswasion of *Andrew Bator* Cardinall, his kinsman, on whom he confers this Principality, and the rather, because the promised pension was not paid him. Hence arose wars between him, and *Maximilian*, *Cæsar*'s brother, which incouraged the *Turks*, who with 60000 men beleaguer *Varadin*, but are beat off again; and so is *Andrew Bator* driven out of *Transylvania* by the *Austrians*, who took *Alba Julia*, or *Wasisngburg*, with divers other Towns. *Francis Mendoza* the *Spanish* Generall under *Albert*, takes divers Towns upon the *Rhen*, which exasperated the *Germans*, and caused *Cæsar* to send expostulatorry Letters to *Mendoza*: On the other side, Grave *Maurice* takes divers places from the *Spaniard*: About this time a Monster was seen at *Paris* like a Satyre, with a horn on his head. Some maids, both in *France* and *Germany*, fasted 3 years or more A strange disease called *Plica*, or *Cirragra*, invaded *Poland* and *Hungary*. *Ferdinand* Arch Duke, son of *Charls* that was *Ralphs* Uncle, at this time was Governor of *Styria*: He goeth to *Rome*, being the year of *Jubilee*, and sweares to the Pope, to extirpate the Protestants within his jurisdiction; which upon the Jesuits instigation, he did accordingly, by pillaging and banishing all of the *Augustin* confession throughout *Styria*, *Carinthia* and *Carniola*, though they had paid for their freedome of conscience a great sum of money: *Canisa* the chief Fort of *Styria* is besieged by the Catholicks, who were forced by reason of the cold frost, (which in one night killed one thousand horsemen) to raise their siege, to leave their Artilery and baggage behinde them. *An. Christi* 1600

In *Belgium* *Albert* the Arch Duke having brought his wife *Isabel* to *Bruxels*, is sollicited by the Confederates to send away all the *Spaniards* out of the *Netherlands*, if he would have peace setled there. To this he would not assent, as being neither safe for him nor honorable, he purposeth to besiege *Ostend*. *Maurice* strives to prevent him: At *Newport* a battel is fought, in the beginning of which, *Albert* had the better; till the Confederates by their danger grew desperate; for being almost inclosed by the Sea, they fell so furiously on their enemies, that the vanquished put the vanquishers to flight, having killed above 4000, with the loss of 2000 of their own; one hundred Colours were taken from the enemy. In *Transylvania* *Michael Valachus* *Cæsars* Generall, in a long and doubtfull battel, defeats *Bators* Forces, and subdues also a great part of *Moldavia*: He was much envied by *George Basta*, who accused him to *Cæsar* as one that was ambidexter, and who aimed at the principality of *Transylvania* himself: upon this, the chief command over the army is committed to *Basta*, whom *Valachus* scorns to be under, therefore he goeth to the Emperor to clear himself, in the interim *Sigismund* is again received by his people, and acknowledged for Duke of *Transylvania*; hereupon *Valachus* is sent back with more Forces, who falls on the *Batorians* as they were carelesly marching down a hill, and with his great Ordnance so galled them, that they were forced to run; ten thousand of them at least were killed, and so being incouraged by this Victory, thrusts *Basta* out of his command, by whom not long after he was murthered: and *Dacia* now swears allegeance to *Cæsar*. *Batorius* is driven into the Town *Bistricia*, where he is taken; and contenting himself with a yearly allowance for his maintenance, lives obscurely among the *Bohemian* Barrons. shortly after one *Moyses* Generall of the *Ciculi*, who had been driven to the hills, takes upon him now to be the deliverer of *Transylvania*; therefore having gathered together a considerable army, seiseth upon *Wessenburg*, or *Alba Julia*. But at last in a Battel he is killed, and his army having lost 128 Colours, quite defeated: Mean while *Mars* rageth at *Ostend* for almost 40 months together; all which time the besieged behaved themselves gallantly, by often sallies, and bringing in Provision through the mid'st of their enemies. by digging a new 1601 1602

harbour

An. Christi harbour, when the old was obſtructed, by building a new town, whilſt the old is aſſaulted; by their many conflicts they had, not only with the enemy, but alſo with famin and ſickneſs, during which ſiege, one huudred and 44 thouſand men loſt their lives; at laſt it was taken by the art and induſtry of *Ambroſe Spinola*: For which one Town, *Maurice* took *Grave* the Sluice, and di-
1604 vers other places. After this the *Hollanders*, and the other confederate provinces impoſe an Exciſe upon their victuals, to have ready pay ſtill for the Soldiers: The Indian Navigation is advanced, and the adventurers united in a Corporation: They beat the *Portugalls* out of *Bantam*, they ſail about the world, and return rich with *Spaniſh* money.

About this time almoſt all *Livonia* is made ſubject to *Charls Suderman*, except a few Towns on the borders of *Muſcovia*, which acknowledged ſtill the *Polonian* Scepter. Such devaſtation was every where in the fields, that thirty thouſand people died with cold and famin, which perſwaded ſome of them to eat their on children. *Charls* at laſt returns to *Swede*, and accepts of that Scep-
1605 ter he had before refuſed. King *Henry* 4th of *France* makes a Law againſt Duels. The *Savoyen* attempted in the night time to ſurpriſe *Geneva*, two hundred Soldiers had already ſcal'd the walls, and killed the watch; but a boy with a Lanthorn raiſed the Town, who armed themſelves, and apprehended the Conſpirators, whom they put to death. Pope *Clement* diſpenceth with *Sigiſmund* of *Poland*, for marying two ſiſters of the *Auſtrian* Family, and perſwades King *Henry* of *France* to call home again the baniſhed Jeſuites. *Chriſtian* 4th of *Denmark*, viſits in his own perſon the remoteſt parts of *Norway*, giving Order for ſetling of Miniſters in thoſe ignorant and remote corners. *Hamburg*, the moſt flouriſhing City of the *Saxons*, doeth homage to him, as Duke of *Holſatia*, with great ſolemnity and magnificence: He erecteth a new Town from the foundation, which by his name he calls *Chriſtianopolis*, upon the borders of *Swedland*. To which he added upon the ſame borders afterward, two ſtronger Fortifications; to wit; *Tychopolis* and *Chriſtiana*: In *Belgium* there is great joy for the birth of *Philip* the 4th, heir to the Kingdoms of *Spain*: *Frieſland* is now made the ſeat of the war: Command is given to Count *Bucquoi*, to raiſe Forces about the *Rhene*, which being paſſed over by *Spinola*, divers Towns are taken for the *Spaniard*: *Maurice* attempts *Antwerp*, and *Spinola Berg* upon *Som*, but in vain: *Bucquoi* alſo takes ſome places. Peace again is propoſed by the *Auſtrians*, but rejected by the *Hollanders*, as not daring to truſt the *Spaniard*. The antient City of *Aix*, as alſo *Marpurg* of *Heſſia*, were much ſhaken and weakned upon the change of Religion, and admittance of *Calviniſme*. *Brunſwig* was at firſt like to be betrayed, but the Plot was diſcovered and prevented: Then *Henricus Julius*, the neighbouring Prince, thought to have ſurpriſed it by hiding of armed men in Waggons within the works, but the Townſmen defeated and ſlew them: at laſt this broke out into an open war. The Duke beſiegeth *Brunſwig*, dams up the river that it had almoſt drowned the Town, till a ſtrong winde broke down the banks, and gave way for the water to return into its old channel: At laſt by *Cæſars* command, a truce is made, and the differences referred to Arbitration: In *Rome* Pope *Clement* 8th being dead, great conteſtation ariſeth about the election of a new Pope; The *French* faction ſtood for *Cæſar Baronius* the great Annaliſt; but the *Spaniard* oppoſed him, becauſe he had no good opinion of his claim, and Title to *Scicily*: Some were for *Bellarmin* the great Catholick Champion, but he was withſtood by the *Montaltan* Faction: At length *Alexander Medices* being 70 years old, is choſen, who calls himſelf *Leo*, but he died the 25 day after; whoſe ſucceſſor was *Camillus Burgeſius*, afterward called *Paul* 5th.

In *Ruſſia* great commotions were raiſed by one *Demetrius*, who gave out he was the ſon of *Johannes Baſilides*, who was thought to have been murthered

thered by *Boris Fedrovitzius* long agoe: He appearing on the Scene, gave out that he was hid in Monasteries, and educated by the Jesuits, that he might be the more inabled for Government: The King of *Poland* believed this had been the true heir, therefore assists him with an Army, and bestowes his daughter on him. Shortly after he marcheth with his Forces into *Russia*, gets the *Cossacks* to side with him. Many Towns and Castles fall off to him, in hatred of *Fedrovitzius* his Tyranny: In his first Incounter with *Boris* he was worsted, but in the second he got the Victory, and withall the life of *Boris*, who was slain and his children poysoned. *Demetrius* with the great acclamations of the people, enters *Mosqua*, where he is Crowned; then he makes a league with the *Polander*, whose daughter he brings in great state from *Poland* and married her: But the *Russian* Nobility storming at the *Polonian* insolencies and pride, conspire against them, and the rather, because they are perswaded that this *Demetrius* is a counterfeit: The people also siding with the Peers, fall to murthering of the *Polonians*, whereof 1200 were massacred, besides 400 *Russians* disguised in *Polonian* habits. *Demetrius* is wounded in many places of his body, and disgracefully used; his Bride stript of all her wealth and ornaments, and sent back to *Poland* in a poor habit. *Basilius Johanides*, the chief man of the Conspirators, is by the consent of all the Peers, proclaimed Prince. And *Demetrius* his carcass drawn naked up and down by a rope tied to his privities. *An. Christi*

At *Venice* some antient Laws were renewed; among the rest, that none should erect Churches or Monasteries, nor bestow lands or houses on the Clergy, without the Senats approbation; they had also imprisoned some scandalous Priests. The Jesuits acquaint *Claudius Aquavia* the Generall of their Order, with these proceedings. Pope *Clement* 8th being a moderate man, winks at the business; But *Paul* 5th of a more violent spirit, Commands the *Venetians* to abrogate those Laws, which they refusing to do, were excommunicated, and their whole Territories put under an interdict: Yet most of the Clergy took no notice of the Pope's anger, but officiated as before. The Jesuits offended at this, remove thence to other places, and write bitterly, (chiefly *Bellarmin* and *Baronius*) against the *Venetians*, whose cause is maintained by *Francis Paulis Servita*, and *Johannes Marsilius*: At last they fell from words to blowes, Armies are raised on both sides, the *Spaniards* assist the Pope, and the *Hollanders* the *Venetian*; at length the controversie is taken up by the *French* King: The *Venetians* are injoyned to set free the prisoners, and not to stretch the execution of their Lawes, further then their Ancestors intent and meaning; So the Pope's curse was revoked, and the Jesuits banished out of the *Venetian* Territories.

In *Poland*, *John Samoiscius* had thrown the Jesuits out of his Colledge; after whose death they grew very great with the King, stopping his ears against the Protestants complaints, whose Church at *Posomium* they burned; upon this, the Nobility calls a Parliament, and shortly after these Parliamentier s, or Rachosians (for so they were called) take up arms against the King; one thousand of whose men they killed, and put the rest to flight, and had not most of the Parliaments Army fallen off to the King, they had been absolutely victorious. Then arms being laid down on both sides, the differences are referred to a free Parliament; meanwhile the people tumultuously thrust the Jesuits out of their Monastery of S^t^ *Briget* at *Gedanum*; and at *Thorun* they take the great Church from them, and the Nobility urgeth their banishment: Words are also cast abroad about election of a new King; but whilst the Parliamentieres (called in their language *Rachosians*) were too secure and confident; the Kings party falls suddenly upon them, kills many, disheartens the rest, and dissolves the Parliament: These troubles of *Poland* were for the *Swedes* advantage, who in the interim strengthneth himself against *Sigismund*, 1607

An. Christi whose esteem was daily lessened in *Swedland*. These troubles of *Poland* moved *Mathias* the Arch Duke, to settle with all speed the commotions of *Hungaria*, by assigning over *Transylvania* to *Botscadus*, and giving Liberty of Conscience: The *Prosultan* upon the defection of *Alepo*, *Damascus*, and *Tripolis*, was willing to make peace with the Christians, therefore it is resolved there should be peace for 20 years, during which time, *Achmet Sultan* should call *Cæsar* Father; and he *Achmet* his son: That likewise both *Cæsars* should every third year entertain friendship, by saluting each other with presents: *Botscadus* the chief promoter of this transaction, shortly after died. *Ragotscius* is elected, whose help the *Rachokans* of *Poland* required, but he refused, holding it unlawfull for them to rise against their Prince: And to shew how little he regarded dominion, he laid down again his Principalitie, and trasmitted it to *Gabriel Batorius*; at which time the *Persian* Ambassador at *Prague*, highly commending the power of his Master, and shewing how resolved he was to overthrow the *Ottoman* Family, made *Rudolph* slow in entring into league with the *Turk*. Mean while *Mathias* grew gracious with the *Hungarians*, and makes way with the Nobility for his election.

This same year was seen a Commet over *Germany*, portending ensuing troubles there; for at *Donaverd*, a Town in *Suevia* upon the *Danow*, the Towns people contumeliously abused the Abbot, as he was carrying the Banner and Cross in procession: For which cause they are proscribed by *Cæsar*, and subdued by *Maximilian* of *Bavaria*, though they had proferred satisfaction to the Abbot. This occasioned some differences among the Princes of the Empire; the Protestants desiring the Town to be restored again to its liberty, which the Catholicks would not hearken to. Mean while, in *Belgium* the War continues, and divers Towns are taken and re-taken; A military sedition is raised in *Alberts* Army, which could not bee appeased, till *Diesta* was pawned to them for their pay, which they received shortly after. Divers of the Mutineers were banished, and some that stay'd behinde executed. The *Hollanders* prepare a Fleet for the *West-Indies*, which made the *Spaniard* and
1608 Archduke propose a peace, to which the united States were inclined, if they could have been secured of their Liberty; but that they may not be surprised with expectatiou of peace, a fleet is sent to *Calz* under *Hemskirk*, which infested the *Spanish* Coast, and spoiled the Kings Navie, 2000 *Spaniards* were killed, and so was *Hemskirk* himself; a truce then is resolved upon, and the united Provinces declared to be free from all claim or title, either of the King or Archduke; but withall its required that the *West-Indies* shall not be medled with by the *Hollander*, or *Zelander*: This disceptation held out some
1609 months, at last *John Naius* a *Franciscan*, is sent to King *Philip*, but he staid so long, that the *French* and *Danish* Agents went away; and so the peace came to nothing; yet at last a truce of 12 years was concluded, by the mediation of the *French*, *English*, and other Princes Ambassadors, in which libertie of commerce was left to the pleasure of the *Spaniard* in his dominions without *Europe*; Yet he was not to debar the *Hollanders* that were imployed by Forraign Princes, in their commerce to the *Indies*. In *Germany*, *Mathias Cæsar's* brother comes with an Army into *Bohemia*, to disappoint (as it was given out) the *Spanish* intent, who had resolved to settle *Ferdinand* the Archduke in *Hungary*, and the other Principalities of *Austria*, because he was more addicted to the Pope then the rest. The *Bohemians* promise to maintain *Cæsar's* Title with their arms, if he would after the example of *Maximilian*, permit them to injoy their conscience, this their Petition was deferred, therefore *Mathias* was to receive *Hungary* and *Austria*, vvho presently forbids the exercise of the Protestant Religion: The *Bohemians* take arms vvith intent to defend themselves, but vvithall, they humbly petition that they might have the same liberty in Religion which *Hungary* and *Austria* injoyed: To this

the

the Prince assented, and the Emperor by his Letters Pattents confirmed; who also committed to them the ordering of the Universitie of *Prague*. The not observing of this Grant, was the occasion of future warrs. *An. Christi*

Shortly after followed the troubles of *Juliers*, for *Johannes Gulielmus* dying childless, The Elector of *Brandeburg*, the Palatine of *Newburg*, and divers others laid claim to it in right of their marriages with the sisters of *John* defunct; but the Emperor pretending that it was in his power to decide the controversie, sends *Leopolde* of *Austria*, to rule *Juliers* in his right, and in the name of the Empire. *Leopold's* part is maintained by the Catholick Princes, but *Brandeburg*, and *Newburg*, by the Protestants: Hence were divers meetings of Catholicks and Protestants, a part; at *Hala* in *Suevia* the Protestants meet, at *Herlipolis* the Catholicks: hence confederacies with forraign Princes to the ruine of *Germany*. *Brandeburg* and the *Palatine* raise Forces, and take in most Towns of that Dutchie, except *Juliers*, the City which *Leopold* held; but this also was taken by *Grave Maurice*, after two months siege; at length both sides lay down arms, who choose certain Judges at *Colen* to decide the controversie, but to no purpose. 1610

About this time *Gambalot* the *Satrapa* of *Alepo* being defeated by the *Turks*, and deserted by his friends, obtains pardon from *Achmet*, upon promise that he would turn his Forces against the *Persian*; who notwithstanding continues his expeditions, and desires the Pope's aid, by promising him power over all the Christians within his Dominions: He sollicites *Cæsars* assistance by shewing what advantage it will be for him to joyn with so potent a friend as the *Persian*, against the *Turk*: For this cause the Pope injoynes the Religious houses to maintain some professers of the *Hebrew* and *Arabick* tongues, that he may imploy them among the Eastern Christians. The *Polander* having composed his differences with the *Rackosians*, prepares to be revenged, both on the *Russian* and *Swede*, for the wrongs received from them; and with prosperous succes he defeats the *Sweds* in *Livonia*, and the *Russians* in *Lituania*. He besiegeth also *Smolenscum*, the Metropolis of *Lituania*, and after two years siege, takes it, where 200 thousand *Muscovits* lost their lives. *Novograd* submits to *Sigismund*, and so doth the Cham of *Tartar*. *Vilna* is burned by the *Muscovits*.

In *Holland* *Arminius* being called from his Ministeriall charge in *Amsterdam*, to be Divinity professor in *Leyden*, conferred with *Iunius* by Letters, about the point of Predestination, and some other Articles, he was opposed by *Gomarus* the other Divinity professor, who with *Iunius* stood stifly to *Calvin's* doctrine: Divers disputes and conferences were held about these points, so that Schollars, Magistrates, and inferior people fell out into factions, *Arminius's* Disciples were called *Remonstrantes*; *Calvin's Contraremonstrantes*. This controversie was like to have ruined these Provinces, so violent was the contestation between them. *Arminius* mean while died, the 9^{ch} year of this last century. About whose successor *Vorstius*, there was no small trouble, some stifly maintaining him, others accusing him as a Schismatick and Heretick in his opinions of the divine attributes, but at length King *Iames* got him to be removed from *Leyden*; threatning to renounce all friendship and league with them, if he were not deposed; So he was sent to *Gauda*, and *Arminianisme* by degrees suppressed. This year 1612, died *Cæsar Rodolphus*, in whose life-time *Mathias* his brother cunningly obtained *Austria*, and *Hungary*, to which he added *Bohemia* a few months before his death; for *Leopold's* Soldidiers who were raised for defence of *Iuliers*, consisting of 9000 foot, and 4000 horse, invade *Bohemia*, *Buduise* is taken by Stratagem, and the lesser *Prague* by storm. *Mathias* comming to aid the *Bohemians*, obtains that Kingdome from *Cæsar*, upon promise of payment of a yearly pension. *Leopold's* army fearing the power of *Mathias*, having received their pay, remove from thence. 1612

An. Christ. *Rodolphus* died as the Civill wars of *Germany* were beginning to break out, having reigned 35 years, he left behinde him a rich treasure; he was a good Prince, but too much addicted to women, yet without Legittimate children: His 3 brothers *Mathias*, *Maximilian*, and *Albert*, were also childless; Therefore his cousin *German* was his heir: So the estate of *Maximilian* is devolved upon the children of his brother *Charls*, who by Mary of *Bavaria* had 5
1612 sons, and 10 daughters, the eldest son *Ferdinand*, after *Matthias*, obtained the Imperiall Crown. In *Trantsylvania* *Batorius* lost the greatest part of *Valachia*; but he overthrew *Thorgascius*, who strove to make King *Matthias* Master of *Transylvania*, but he was defeated by *Batorius*, and driven into the woods, there he lived in great misery, till he went to *Poland*; where he expected preferment, *Sutscius* being sent thence with an army against *Muscovia*, which was overthrown by the *Russians*, and withall the *Polander* lost *Smolenscum*: *Batorius* in hatred to the *Turks*, applies himself to the *Austrians*, so that *Gabor* by the *Sultans* assistance, makes way to invade that Principalitie. A conference between the *Roman* Catholicks and Protestants was held at *Ratisbon*, but to no purpose, for the one would have the Church, the other the Scripture, to be judge; the one would have traditions with Scripture, the other Scripture alone, to be the rule of controversies. About this time, the brothers of the Rosie Cross, bragging much of their perfection and knowledge appeared awhile, and then vanished. In *Affrica*, *Fesse* and *Maroco* being worne out with mutuall wars, are both subdued by *Mule Sidan* King of *Fesse*, who had been driven out of his Kingdome by his brothers. This mans Uncle *Schequus*, in recompence of the money and aid he had from *Spain*, delivers over to the King of *Spain*, the strong Fort *Alarachia* on the *African* shore, near *Hercules* his Pillars. *Philip* drives out of *Spain* the *Moores*, who had been ancient Inhabitants, upon pretence that they had invited the *Affricans*, and *Turks* into *Spain*. These being stript of all except a little Viaticum, are shipped at sundry times (for there were 900 thousand of them) and exposed on the *African* shore to hunger, cold, and the sword.

CHAP. XVIII.

The affairs of Germany, Denmark, Swedland, Holland, Russia, Italy, Hungary, Bohemia, Transylvania, Poland, Grisons, France, Switzers, *&c. under* Matthias *and* Ferdinand 2d, *Emperors; from the yeare* 1612. *till* 1626.

Matthias succeeded to his brother *Rodolphus* in the Empire: He calls a Diet at *Ratisbon*, at which were present all the
1612 Protestant Princes, except the Elector of *Saxony*, who had lost the possession of *Juliers*: And *Lodowick* of *Hassia*, who by his cousin *German*, *Maurice* was stript of the Government of *Marpurg*; therefore were both discontented. Here the protestants complain, that in *Spire*, *Vienna*, and other places of Judicature, the Judges were all, or most of them Catholicks, and that therefore the protestants
1613 were subject to all inconveniences, having no other Judges but their enemies. They desire then, there might be the same number of protestants as of Catholick Judges and votes; but in this point nothing was concluded; the protestants depart in anger, and nothing done but onely a decree to raise arms in defence of *Transylvania* against the *Tuk*; for complaint was made to *Achmat Sultan*, against *Batorius*, for siding with *Cæsar*, and indeavouring to deliver the possession of *Dacia* to him. Upon this the *Turk* strives to make *Bethleem Gabor Fiduciarie* Prince of *Transylvania* under him. *Batorius* having weakned

weakned himself by his cruelty upon the *Saxons* in *Dacia*, putting to death promiscuously every one that was but suspected of treachery, was for want of strength defeated by *Gabor*, assisted with the *Turks* Forces, and at last was killed at *Varadinum*, by the treachery of his servants. *Gabor* satisfieth the *Turk* by giving him *Lippa* with some other Forts, and pacified *Cesar* by swearing fealty to him. *Achmet* had a great mind to pick a quarrel with the *Panonians*, but was hindred by the *Arabian* sedition; in which the *Sultan* lost *Aden*: the Govenour also of *Damascus* was overthrown in a great battel, by the son of *Emeris Saida*, who derived his pedigree from *Godfred* of Bullion. *An. Christi*

After *Christian* of *Denmark*, had taken *Calmaria* and *Elsburg*, the *Swedes* two chief Forts, upon the *Baltic* and the *Hesperian* sea, a great mortality by the plague ensued, which occasioned a peace; wherein was articled that the *Swede* should relinquish his title of *Lapponia*, and should pay 12 Tuns of gold to the *Dane*, for his expences on the last war; till the payment of which sum, *Elsburg* should be left in pawn.

The *Hollanders* at *Constantinople*, make a League with the *Turk* for commerce. At *Aix* and *Colen*, a sedition is raised against the Catholicks; at *Francfort*, and *Wormes* against the *Jews*. At *Aix* the Protestants had been along time debarred the exercise of their religion, and punished for the same, which the Townsmen thought was a great oppression, therefore in a popular tumult they seize on the City, and turn out the Jesuits: but by the *French* Agents, and those of *Juliers*, a patcht peace is made up, to which the Catholick Senators would not assent. 1614

At *Colen* many who were forbid the exercise of their religion, remove to *Mulheim* two miles from the City; they of *Colen* fearing lest that new Town of *Mulheim* should out-run in wealth, inhabitants, and priviledges, their ancient City, they labour to hinder the building and increase thereof. *Brandeburg* and *Newburg*, are inhibited by *Cesar* from the building of that place, and the inhabitants are threatned with destruction. Mean while, *Wolfgangus Gulielmus* of *Newburg*, and *Georgius Gulielmus* Marques, the Electors son, Princes near of kin, fell out about the possession of their mothers lands; and withall differed in religion: for *Newburg* having married *Magdalen* of *Bavaria*, becomes Catholick, the other a Calvanist, who by the assistance of *Holland*, fortifies *Juliers*, as *Newburg* had done the same at *Dusseldorp*. *Cesar* proscribes *Aix* for turning out their ancient Senators, and the execution of this Edict is committed to *Albert Cesars* brother. *Newburg* puts *Cesars* sentence in execution concerning *Mulheim*, which he destroyeth; the Elector of *Brandeburg* complains of these Edicts, as being against law; in the interim, *Spinola* seizeth upon *Aix*, and restores the Senators; the Protestants fly, they that remained, were punished; he overthrows the remainders of *Mulheim*, and brings under the subjection of *Newburg*, *Vesalia*, upon the *Rhen*, and other Towns of the Principality of *Juliers*. *Maurice* being called upon by *Brandeburg*, takes in *Emerec* and some other places. *Newburg* upon the death of his Father *Philip Ludovick*, sets up the Roman Religion in his Dominions, and *Brandeburg* advanceth Calvinism in his Lands; that he might remove as much in opinion, as he was in affection from *Newburg*. At *Berlin* the people mutiny for changing *Lutheranism* into *Calvanism*, which they hated. The *Jews* for their great extortion are driven out of *Francfort*, but brought back again in great pomp. At *Wormes* also some *Jews* are banished: at *Salina* in *Thuringia*, one *Ezekiel Meth*, gave himself out to be the great *Michael*, and Immortal Word of God; but by experience, he found himself to be mortal and miserable. *Smalcius* a *Socinian*, denyeth Christs Divinity, which blasphemy is entertained in *Sarmatia* and *Dacia*, at this day.

About this time *Russia* is much infested by the *Polander* and *Swedes*, many *Russians* did now serve the *Polander* in this war, in hope his son *Ladislaus* should be

An. Christi be Prince of *Muscovia*: but those mutinying for want of pay, gave occasion to the *Tartars* to invade *Podolia*. But these *Muscovites* being pacified by gold and large promises, overthrew three several Armies of their Countrey-men.

1615 *Neuda*, *Plescovia*, and other *Russian* Towns, are taken by the *Polander* and *Swede*. *Mosqua* is burned by the *Polonians*, the *Russians* resenting these losses, begin to lay aside all private grudges, and the Nobility chose a Prince of their own rank, *Michael Federovitius*, who sends Embassadors to *Cesar* and the *Polander* for peace; to which both assented. The death of *Francis Duke* of *Mantua*, caused a war in *Italy*; for Cardinal *Ferdinand Gonzaga*, the defuncts brother, puts aside his hat, thinks of marriage, and layeth hold upon his Ancestors Principality; from him *Charles Emanuel*, of *Savoy*, demands his daughters Dowry, who had been married to *Francis*: and withall the Marchionat of *Montferrat* the *Mantuan*, being assisted by the vice Duke of *Millan*, who was a *Spaniard*, did claim *Montferrat* for himself; and having raised an Army of *Spaniards*, opposeth the *Savoyen*, who stoutly made resistance, till a peace was made, and the *Mantuan* promised to pay the Dowry or portion to *Margaret*; the other differences were referred to arbitration. But when the *Spaniard* proposed hard conditions to the *Savoyen*, the war broke out more violently then before, to the great effusion of bloud; the *French* and *Switzers* held with the *Savoyen*, the *Italians* and *Spaniards*, with the *Mantuan*. The Vice Duke gains *Vercellæ* for the *Spaniard*, when in the interim the *Savoyen* wasts many places in the Dutchy of *Millan*. At last, the eighteenth year of this Century, restitution was made on both sides, and a peace concluded in *Germany*. *Henry* of *Juliers*, offended with *Brunswick*, obtains a proscription against that City, from *Ralph* the Emperor; the Dukes son *Frederick* had made peace with them, if they would have delivered him a key to open their city gate at his pleasure; this being denyed, he besiegeth them. During which time, 12000 of the besiegers, and 3000 of the besieged, were slain. At length about the fourth moneth after the siege began, a peace is made, in which it was agreed, that the City, as their Ancestors had done, should swear Allegeance to the Duke. The proscription should be cancelled, the old commerce between the Duke and City should be renued; and that future controversies shall be decided by Law, not by the sword.

1616 The *Venetians* were infested both on sea and land, by the *Croats* plundring oftentimes with small Boats, the *Venetian* great Vessels. Complaint is made to *Ferdinand* the Arch-Duke, against these Pirats, but nothing done, wherefore a cruel war ensued. In which *Cesar* and the *Spaniard* stood for *Ferdinand*, the *Hollander* under *John* of *Nassau*, for *Venice*; but they being unacquainted with the *Italian* way of fighting, returned dishonourably home, without doing any thing. Mean while *Ferdinand*, as it were adopted by *Matthias Cesar*, is made King of *Bohemia*, by the consent of his two brothers *Albert* and *Maximilian*, on this condition, that whilst the Emperour lived, he should not meddle with the government. Hereupon he is crowned, nobly entertained by the *Saxon*, and fealty sworn to him by the *Moravians*. *Silesians*, and *Lusatians*. After a bloudy war between him and *Venice*, a peace is concluded; and the mercenary *Croats*, thieves rather then soldiers, must avoid *Senga*, in which Town *Ferdinand* was to place a Garison of *Germans*. The confederate *Belgians* had now redeemed from the *English Flissing* and *Briel*, which were pawned to Queen *Elizabeth*. At *Amsterdam* and *Delph* great troubles about *Arminianism*. The Excise of Wine being diminished, and of Corn encreased, so enraged the people, that they brake in upon the State, or Councel-House flung the Excise money up and down, and forced the Senate to take off that Excise. In this scuffle, the women there plaid the Amazons, and no wonder when one of them had been married successively to twenty five husbands.

The *Arminians* finding their adversaries too strong, and that a Synod was called

called against them, were advised by *Barnevilde*, *Grotius* and others, to raise forces at *Utricht*, *Leyden* and *Harlem*, for their defence, alledging that each Congregation had power to choose their own Pastor: but *Grave Maurice* sooner then was expected, came upon *Utricht*, seizeth on the watch, disarms the Citizens, imprisons the conspirators, and placeth there *Calvinian* ministers, which much disheartned the Remonstrants. In this mean while, the *Holland* ships finde out another passage to the *Moluccas* beyond the Strait of *Magellan*: in two years space they pass the Line five times. In *Russia* before the peace was made, the *Polonians* out of *Smolenscum*, made an irruption on the *Russians*, of whom they slew eight thousand, and took two thousand prisoners. By the mediation of King *James*, a peace is concluded between the *Russian* and *Swede*. It was agreed that *Novograd* and some other Towns taken from the *Russian*, should be restored to *Michael* the *Exarch*; and that *Gustavus Adolphus* King of *Swede*, should retain five Towns: that neither of them should assist the *Polander* with arms. In *Livonia* some Towns are taken by the *Swede*, but by the treachery of *Furnesbec* they are surprised by the *Polander*.

An. Christi 1517

The protestants in *Germany* celebrate a Jubilee this year 1617, being a full Century since *Luther* began to oppose indulgences. At this the Roman Catholicks did much storm, and indeed this Evangelical Jubilee (as they call it) hath occasioned much sorrow in *Germany* ever since: for then the Pope and Princes began to consult about suppressing of Lutheranism; the brand was set on fire in *Bohemia*, which caused that woful conflagration in *Germany*, presaged by the fatal comet seen that year, by the fall of a hill among the *Grisons*, on the Town of *Plura*, which was suddenly overwhelmed, so that neither the place, nor face of a Town, could there be any more seen, but a Lake where the Castle stood. This Earthquake fell out the 25 of *August*, that same year. The palace at *Paris* was set on fire by Lightning from Heaven, which consumed the ancient Monuments and Statues of the *French* Kings. About that time I being then at *Salisbury*, in the Deanry, was called out into the Court to behold (with multitudes of people, being then nine of the clock at night) divers Moons or Meteors like Moons, within a bright cloud beset with divers crosses.

1618

The Papists in *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, taking offence at some Churches lately erected by the Protestants, shuts them up, or defaceth them. The Protestants complain to the Bishop of *Prague* and Abbot of *Brunonia*, that this was against the Laws of *Rodolphus* and *Matthias*; it was answered that none had power to build Churches in their Territories, without their consent, and that therefore the protestants were justly punished. Then they appeal to *Cesar*, who gave them no satisfaction: he being now gone from *Vienna*, to be neerer *Ferdinands* Coronation in *Hungary*, the protestant Princes call a Diet, to consult about preserving of their religion: upon this, *Cesar* is made believe that such conventicles as they called them, were of dangerous consequence, tending to the Emperors overthrow; and that therefore under pain of his highest displeasure, they should be dissolved. At this they were so exasperated, that they flung their Scribe, and two more out of the Castle window, accusing them as betrayers of their countries liberties, in appealing to *Cesar*, yet their lives were saved. They set a guard of soldiers upon *Sternberg*, the Governor of the Castle and Kingdom; they secure *Prague*, and throw the Iesuits out of *Bohemia*; and presently by their letters to *Cesar*, and their publick declarations, they justifie what they had done. But *Cesar* condemns their proceedings as seditious, exhorts the Princes not to countenance them, and forbids levying of soldiers, promising that if the *Bohemians* would be quiet, he would not stir, otherwise he would raise such an army as should chastise their contumacy. With this the people were contented, promising to be peaceable, and desiring no force might be raised. Nor was *Cesar* averse to peace, but

some

An. Christi ſome turbulent ſpirits who could place no ſecurity in peace, being guilty of the breach thereof, and fearful of *Ceſars* diſpleaſure, reſolve to make war. Hereupon *Ceſar* by *Tampir* and *Bucquoi*, raiſeth an army, *Bohemia* draws the *Sileſians* and *Luſatians* to joyn with them; they beſiege *Budviſe* a Town wholly *Ceſarian*, and place a Gariſon in *Crumavia*. *Tampir* takes in *Biſtricium*, and being repulſed from *Newhouſe*, plunders the Suburbs, then takes *Pilgron*: *Count Bucquoi* comes with a bigger army to *Saſlavia*, where a doubtfull battell is fought, many ſlain on both ſides; the *Palatin* and *Saxon* Electors would fain have hid the ſparkles under the aſhes. But it was now too late, for the fire was broke out into a flame. *Mansfield* takes *Pilſna* for the *Bohemians*, *Bucquoi* fights him; and comes to *Budviſe*, takes *Crumavia*: *Tampir* returning with great plunder to *Vienna*, is met by the enemy, and plundred of his plunder. *Turren* makes excurſions upon *Auſtria*; the proteſtants there being angry with *Ceſar*, for undertaking ſo raſh a war, without their knowledge. The *Saxon* Elector laboureth for a ceſſation, till peace be concluded: the *Bohemians* 1619 doubt of *Ceſars* fidelity in keeping the peace. Divers Commanders at *Vienna* undertake a new order of Militia againſt Hereticks. *Ceſar* proſcribes *Mansfield*, and in the mean while fals ſick of a lingring diſeaſe, whereof he died the 62 year of his life, and the 7 of his Empire. The *Griſons* ſhortly after the Earthquake, fall into diviſions, proſcribing and killing all that were againſt their democracy, the exiles require forain aid, and make way for ſtrangers, to invade that countrey. The *Venetians* found out the plot intended againſt them, and puniſhed the plotters.

Ferdinand 2d, ſucceeded in the Empire, he was grandchild to *Ferdinand* firſt by his ſon *Charls*. In his firſt Letters Patents he eſtabliſheth the priviledges of *Bohemia*, and the publick Officers of the kingdom, ſetting by *Matthias*, but now thruſt out by the Peers. This was diſliked by the *Bohemians*, therefore they reſolve to ſtand upon their guard. The inhabitants whom *Bucquoi* affrighted with divers irruptions, are commanded to be in arms. *Turren* breaks in upon *Moravia*, and forceth them to ſide with *Bohemia*. *Wallenſtein* goeth to *Hungary* for aid from thence. *Turren* having over-run *Auſtria*, faces *Vienna*, and takes the Suburbs, where he quartered ſome days as it were in the Kings preſence. But whilſt he is drawing the *Hungarian*, and *Auſtrian* proteſtants to confederate with him, *Bucquois* army increaſeth by new ſupplies from *Italy*, *Hungary*, and *Belgium*: With theſe he fights *Mansfield*, and defeats him. Upon this divers Towns open their gates to him, who laden with ſpoil enters triumphantly *Budveiſa*; this cauſed *Turren* to haſten his return into *Bohemia*. *Bucquois* army now conſiſting of 17000, takes divers Towns upon ſurrender. *Tampir* is ſent againſt *Moravia*. *Turren* being beaten back from *Vienna*, King *Ferdinand* comes to *Francfort*, where the Elector of *Mintz*, calls a Diet for inſtalling of the Emperour. This troubled the *Bohemians*, that *Ferdinand* whom they went about to un-King, ſhould ſit among the Electors as King of *Bohemia*: therefore they ſend Agents and Letters, to keep him off from voting, whom they held to be no King. But their labour was in vain, for not only was he acknowledged one of the Electors, but alſo was choſen and conſecrated Emperor. The *Bohemians* on the contrary, kill the *Tampirians* in *Moravia*, and throw the Jeſuits out of *Sileſia*, *Moravia*, and *Hungary*. Beſides, the very next day that *Ferdinand* was made *Ceſar*, they depoſe him at *Prague*, and in his place choſe *Frederic* the *Palatin*. When as the Electors had cited them to *Ratisbon*, for deciding of the differences; the *Palatin* though he was diſſwaded by the Electors, yet unadviſedly accepts of the *Bohemian* Crown. *Bucquoi* being inraged, beleaguers *Piſſeca*, ſtorms it, and puts all the Townſmen to the ſword. *Mansfield* is proſcribed by the new *Ceſar*, who rageth up and down the Country, doing more hurt to innocent people, then good to his new king *Frederic* that employed him. *Gabriel Bethlem*, or *Beth-*

lem

leem Gabor Pr.of *Transylvania* did moſt hurt to *Ferdinand*, who conſpiring with the *Bohemians*, and gaping after the Kingdome of *Hungary*, took *Laſſovia*, *Poſonium*, and other places; he uſed the Catholicks barbarouſly, and tranſferring the Crown of *Hungary* to himſelf, took upon him the title of Prince of *Hungary*: Afterwards meetings were held among the Correſpondents (for ſo they were called who ſided with the Palatin and *Bohemia*) at *Norimberg*, and of the Catholicks at *Herbipolis*, about the way of promoting, their ſeverall intereſts and religions. *Bucquoi* being pinched with want, and forſaken of the *Hungarian* robbers, went aſide into *Auſtria*, where the Proteſtants ſeperating themſelves from the Papiſts, had an eie on the fortune of *Bohemia*. *An. Chriſti*

In *Holland* a Synod is called at *Dort*, at which were preſent Divines out of Great *Britain*, *Switzerland*, *Palatinat*, *Haſſia*, *Geneva*, *Brem*, and *Embden*; In which theſe 5 controverted Articles were debated. 1. Whether Election and reprobation were abſolute, or had reſpect to faith and infidelitie. 2d. If Chriſt died for all. 3d. If in God there are two contrary wills; to wit, revealed and ſecret. 4th. If effectuall Grace can be reſiſted. 5th. If the faithfull can finally, and totally fall from Grace. The Remonſtrants refuſed to ſtand to their verdict, who were both Judges and Parties, exhibiting a confeſſion of their Faith with a proteſtation, would not recant their opinion, therefore they were condemned of error, divers of them impriſoned, and moſt baniſhed. *John Bernevild* above 70 years of age, and who had been a good patriot, looſeth his head, for favouring the *Arminian* doctrin and plots, for violating the *Belgick* Laws; for accuſing *Maurice* as if he aſpired at the ſole dominion of *Belgium*. *Ledenboroius* one of the plotters killed himſelf: *Grotius* and *Hogerbetius* condemned to perpetuall impriſonment; and their goods confiſcate; but *Grotius* by his wife was conveyed out of priſon in a cheſt. *Cæſar* by his declarations doth nullifie the *Palatins* Coronation, becauſe it was not done by them, who had the power to do it, nor was it done [*ſolio vacante*] much leſs did it become the *Palatin* to take his Crown, whom he had acknowledged to be lawfull King of *Bohemia*, and had with the other Electors choſen him *Cæſar*: He ſhewed alſo that the *Auſtrians* had an hereditary right over *Bohemia*, which the *Bohemians* in their printed books refuted. But *Frederick* the new King by aboliſhing the *Roman* Faith in the Caſtle of *Prague*, and the *Lutheran* in other places, procured on himſelf mueh hatred; the beginning of his reigne was ominous, for he ſent one *Slavata* to take poſſeſſion of the Town *Gutſcinum* with the Caſtle, which was blown up with gun-powder by *Smirſitzia* the wife of *Baron Wartenburgius*, there periſhed ſhee, and *Slavata*, with certain Judges, in all about one hundred perſons: Whilſt *Frederick* is buſie in making the *Moravians*, *Cileſians*, and *Luſatians* ſwear Fealty to him. *Maradas* conducts from *Cæſar* new Forces into *Bohemia*, *Bucquoi* falls upon the *Mansfieldians* out of order, for want of pay in the night, and makes a great ſlaughter amongſt them. The *Tranſylvanian* makes truce with *Cæſar* for ſome months. *Bucquoi* is forced by the *Bohemians* to retreat to *Cremſa*: The *Coſſacks* which were the *Polonian* Auxiliaries, ſpoyle all the *Lutheran* Countries with fire and ſword, multitudes of people are driven into the woods, where they are killed with cold and hunger, or the mercileſs enemie. Theſe alſo were ſometimes beaten by the *Sileſians* and *Moravians*. *Baron Felſius* as he was purſuing thoſe *Coſſacks*, fell unwarily into *Bucquoi*'s quarters, where he loſt his life, with many of his Soldiers. The Elector's pittying the miſery of *Germany* labor (except *Brandeburg*) to perſwade the Palatine to renounce his Title of *Bohemia*, otherwiſe they threaten to take arms againſt him. *Frederick* replies that the cognizance of the *Bohemian* cauſe was not in a few Electors, nor in *Ferdinand* Archduke of *Auſtria*, but in the Kingdome of *Bohemia*, or rather the whole Empire: Neither had he any quarrel with *Cæſar*, but with the Archduke; therefore ſaith he, forraign 1620

An. Christi Princes desire the matter may be heard in a full Diet: But the *Bohemians* were so little moved with the Electors threatnings, that they named *Henry Fredericks* eldest son now six years old, successor to his Father in the Kingdome of *Bohemia*.

Cæsar to vindicate this wrong offered to his Family, sollicites the Pope to furnish him with money, *Spain* and *Poland* with Forces. The Palatine finds not that supply from *England* which he expected, The *French* King thought it best to reconcile the differences, therefore sends Ambassadors to desire them to be reconciled: *Maximilian* of *Bavaria*, who had a great army of Papists, agrees with the Protestant army under *Joachim Ernest*, that the seat of the war should be contained within the borders of *Bohemia*, and the Provinces unite to it; presently the *Bavarian* marcheth against the *Austrians* that were in league with *Bohemia*, and forceth them to renounce their league. *John George* Elector of *Saxony*, who had exhorted before *Bohemia* and the Palatin to submit to *Cæsar*; is by him imployed against the upper and lower *Lusatia*, both of which he subjugates to the Emperor, which greatly advanced *Cæsar's* cause. At the same time *Spinola* with an army out of *Belgium*, by the King of *Spain's* command invades the Palatinat. The Prince of *Orange* with a strong army marcheth into *Vesalia*, his brother *Henry Frederick* into the Palatinate. In *Hungary*, *Gabor* is proclaimed King by a Diet of his own Faction: Thence he falls upon *Austria*, and sends aid to *Bohemia*, he shoots *Tampire* dead, as he was attempting to take in *Posonium*. *Bavare* having quieted *Austria*, joynes his whole Forces with *Bucquoi's*; many towns by them are taken, multitudes of the inhabitants slain, many of the countrey-people take arms against their land-lords, wasting their Mannors, and plundring their houses: the *Bohemian* army conducted by the King, did somewhat retard the enemies proceedings, some light velitations there were, but the Soldiers were unruly for want of pay, whereas the Imperial army by reason of their great plunders, and the wealth of *Maximilian* the *Bavarian*, was duely payed: The Palatine then marcheth with all his Forces towards *Prague*, and encampeth but in a tumultuary way on a hill not farr off, with a purpose to fight the Enemy, and to drive him out of *Prague*; but most of his army put more confidence in their heels then hands, for whilst they were intrenching themselves, Count *Tilly*, with the *Bavarian* and *Cæsarian* army hastneth towards them: presently about 9000 *Hungarians* laden with plunder, run away; in the very first incounter of the two armies, the Regiments of *Turrin* and *Hollach* are cut off, which so disheartned the rest, that they began to grow disordred, and in a confused way being struck with a panick terror, run towards the City. *Anhalden* and Count *Hollach*, prevent the rest, and bring sad newes to the King that the day was lost, and that his chief safety consisted in his horse-heels. He procures with much difficulty truce for 8 hours, either to renounce his claim of *Bohemia*, or to fight again: He found it unsafe to put all on the hazard of another incounter, therefore having put his wife, children, and best things in coaches and waggons, he hastneth into *Silesia*: The Crown and Records of the Kingdom being left behinde. This victory fell out the 8th of *November* after the *Roman* account; the Gospell for which day is, *Give to Cæsar the things that are Cæsars*. The next day, the Imperialists enter *Prague* in a triumphant way; so in a short time *Bohemia* submits to *Cæsar*: In this battell were killed of the *Bohemians* 8000. and 2000. *Cæsarians*. The Palatin Soldiers being destitute of their pay, and forsaken by their Commanders, curse *Bohemia* that ever they saw it, and so by slight every one shifts for himself.

1620

Shortly after this, *Maximilian* of *Bavaria*, returns home, the charge of the army, is Committed to *Tillie*, and of the Kingdom to *Lichtenstein*. Of the Protestant side, *Mansfield* had some Soldiers in *Pilsna*, *Hermanus Frawus* in

in *Thabor*, and old *Turren* in *Moravia*, in *Valachia* and *Moldavia*, *Gratian*, at this time was *Vaivod*, whom the *Polonians* protected, the *Turks* and *Tartars* opposed, because he had conspired with the *Polander* against the *Turk*; two battels were fought; in the first the *Polanders*, in the second the *Turks* had the better, in which *Gratian* with his Auxiliaries were cut off. Hereupon *Osman* having made peace with the *Parthian*, turns out of his Court the *Poland* Ambassador, and denounceth war against the King, who hardly escaped with his life, being assaulted by an *Assasin*, as he was going into the Church; by providence the blow was averted, the *Assasin* tortured, and open war against the *Turk* is proclaimed. *An. Christi*

In the *Valtelin*, *Ralph Plant* being proscribed by the *Grisons*, enters into a secret plot with the Catholicks, to kill all the Protestants there, as well strangers, as natives, which massacre was effected accordingly: Then being assisted by the Duke of *Feria*, Governor of *Millan* with 4000 Soldiers, seiseth on the whole valley from *Lake Comon* to *Tirol*, and beats off the *Grisons* united with the *Valtebinois*: The Duke of *Feria* mean while builds in fit places strong Forts. The *Venetians* could not endure that the gate of *Italy* should be shut up against the *Freneh* and *Switzers*; The *French* King by his Ambassadors, desires the King of *Spain* to open the passage again. Upon this, divers consultations were held, but diversly interrupted: In the interim *Pompy Plant* with his friends are murthered in his own Castle.

1621

In the beginning of the next year *Frederick* the Palsgrave is proscribed by *Cæsar* for accepting the Crown of *Bohemia*; and so are all those that aided him. *Turren* who could not perswade the *Moravians* to constancie, flieth to *Bethleem Gabor*, whose election to the Crown of *Hungary*, *Cæsar* maketh nul. The Palatin of *Segeberg* sueth for aid from the *Dane* and *Saxon*, but in vain; for *Cæsar* having declared he would maintain the peace and liberty of *Germany*; neither the *Dane* nor *Saxon* would stir, onely *Christian* of *Brunswick*, Bishop of *Halberstad* raiseth an Army, which he conducted into the Countrey of *Mintz*, the Pallatin now was gon for *Holland*. *Bucquoi* had subdued *Moravia*, the *Saxon Silesia*, which was pardoned upon acknowledging of their errors, the *Moravians* were left to *Cæsar's* mercy: *Spinola* broke the league thar was between the Princes of *Onolzbac*, *Wirtenburg*, *Durlacen*, and *Hasse* with some others that were united; these procured peace for their own Territories, and truce for the Palatinat, till means was used for a transaction. Mean while *Tilly* in *Bohemia* fights with *Mansfield*, who had yet the possession of some Towns there, and of the upper Palatinat. But for want of money, the Captains sold their Towns to *Tilly*: *Mansfield* being reduced to great streights, upon promise of pardon, money and honours, submits to *Cæsar*; but having strengthned himself, he revolts and violates his faith, and so through the *Bavarian* Territories, he breaks in upon the lower Palatinat, and raiseth the siege of *Frankenthal*; then he plunders the Territories of *Spire* and *Straisburg*, and possesseth himself of *Hagenoa*: The Palsgrave publisheth a declaration, wherein he sheweth the causes why he accepted the Crown of *Bohemia*, and withall, how desirous he was of peace, if it could be obtained upon terms of honor and safety.

Count *Bucquoi* having subdued *Moravia*, marcheth towards *Hungary*, where *Gabor* cunningly refuseth to be Crowned. *Presburg*, *Posonium*, and other Towns, are taken in by *Bucquoi*, who perswades *Seastin George* to fall off from *Gabor*, he under-hand reconciles himself to *Cæsar*, and doth a great deal of mischief to *Gabor*, whilst he was expecting aid from the *Turk*; for he intercepted the Auxiliaries that were sent to him: *Gabor* at this time was in a low condition, when *Bucquoi* besieging *Neusolum* was killed with 16 wounds, the recovering of his body from the *Hungarians*, cost the *Cæsarians* much blood; his death gave occasion to *Gabor* to regain many of his lost Towns and forts:

An. Christi But about the end of this year, at the Diet of *Niclasburg*, an accord is made between *Cesar* and him, and the Crown of *Hungary* is restored to *Ferdinand*. Divers Towns are left to *Gabor*, to be governed by him under *Cesar*. He obtains also some places in *Silesia*, and the title of a Prince of the Empire. Religion is left in the same condition it was, when *Ferdinand* undertook the Government of that kingdom. In the interim *Silesia* is much infested by *Fegerndorff*, who layeth heavy Taxes on them, and fights the *Saxon* with divers success. Twenty five Incendiaries are apprehended by the *Saxon*, and for Treason are condemned at *Prague*. Whilest the *Polonian* is at war with the Turk, the *Swedes* take *Riga* in *Livonia*, and *Mitovia*, which afterward was re-taken by the *Polander*, and then a Truce was made.

The twelve years peace between *Spain* and *Holland*, is this year 21, expired in *April*. The Arch-Duke by his Agent, wisheth the *Hollanders* to return to the obedience of *Spain*, they answer, that it was too late to expect obedience of them, whom *Spain* had confessed to be free States. Hereupon *Spinola* in *September* sits down before *Fuliers*, and takes it the next *February*, notwithstanding *Orange* did what he could to help the besieged. Whilst the *Grisons* strive to defend, the *Valtelin* are beaten themselves by the *Spaniard*; by which means *Leopold* of *Austria* on the one side, and the Duke of *Feria* on the other, took occasion to plant the Roman faith there. The King of *Morocco* in *Africa*, about to take the Fort, built by the *Spaniard* neer *Alarachia*, is beaten off with the loss of his army, by the *Spanish* Fleet, which in the Straits of *Cadiz*, took 32 *Holland* ships. Out of the *Molucca* Islands the *Spaniards* and *English* beat the *Hollander*. This year died Pope *Paul* 5th, of an Apoplexy, the 69 year of his life, and of his Pontificat the 16. To him succeeded *Alexander Ludovisius* of *Bononia*, who made the peace between *Spain* and *Savoy*,
1622 whom after a few days *Cosmus Exarch* of *Hetruria*, followed; he left many children behind him, his eldest son *Ferdinand*, yet a child, succeeded; he was under the tuition of his Grand-mother of *Lorrain*, his Mother of *Austria*, and his Uncle the Cardinal. The last of *March* died King *Philip* 3d of *Spain*, the 43 year of his life, and of his reign 23. *Philip* the 4th, being 16 years of age succeeded, who thrust out of his Court such as had abused his Fathers lenity; some he imprisoned, and some he put to death.

In *July* after died *Albert* the Arch-Duke, and in *September* following, *Bellarmine* that famous Divine, being almost 80 years of age: he was sisters son to Pope *Marcellus* 2d. *Gregory* 15 made a Law that the Pope should be chosen by the Cardinals only, without any respect had to the Letters of Kings and Princes. *Brunswic* did much mischief this year in *Westphalia*, he took in many Towns, persecuted the Roman Catholicks, abused the Clergy, defaced Churches, and made mony of consecrated Ornaments; thence he goeth into *Eisfeldia* and *Watteravia*, and other places thereabout, spoiling all with fire and sword. Mean while the *Palatin* returns into his own country disguised. *Mansfield* and the *Marquis* of *Baden*, defeat *Tilly* near *Wisloch*: but afterward the same *Tilly* did totally rout the *Mansfeldians*, and took all their Artillery, Baggage and Mony. Shortly after, *Mansfield* takes *Ladenburg*, and defeats the *Leopoldians*, as they were besieging *Hagenoa*. Then he hasteneth to joyn with *Brunswic*, but *Tilly* did so hotly pursue him, that he retreats to *Manheim*. Then *Tilly* seeks out *Brunswick*, where he finds him with a great Army, but without Ordnance, neat the River *Moen*, where he forceth them all to fly. The Duke escapes over the Bridge, and was so eagerly pursued by the *Tillians*, that with the weight of the soldiers the Bridge broke, and many were drowned in the River. *Brunswicks* other Troops were cut in pieces by the *Cesarians*: Besides those that were drowned, three thousand were killed; *Hochst* was regained presently.

The *Palatin* wanting mony to furnish *Mansfield* and *Brunswick*, and finding

that

that his condition was deplorable, he supports his hopes with the agreement at *Brussels*, then in agitation by *Digby* Embassador for King *James*; he cashiered *Mansfield*, being desirous of the same, many Towns & forts submit to *Cesar*; *Wormes* and *Spire* admit Garisons; *Heidelberg* is besieged; the *Palatin* is conveyed to *Sedan* by the *Mansfieldians*, who joining with *Brunswicks* Forces, brake in through *France* upon *Henault*, where they had a sharp encounter with *Consalvus* of *Corduba*, in which *Brunswicks* arm was so torn and shattered, that the Chirurgions were fain to cut it off. Thence they make their way towards *Breda* in *Brabant*; sharp Skirmishes there were, and many slain on both sides. *Brunswick* was like to cary the Victory, had not the *Mansfieldians* for want of pay, refused to fight. Not long after on the sixt of *September Heidelberg* after a stout defence, was taken by *Tilly*, the Garison all put to the sword, the Town miserably defaced and plundred, so that *Tilly* was fain to command the soldiers to give off. The King of *Denmark* sends an Embassador to the Emperor, desiring him to pardon the *Palatins* temerity, for publick peace sake, and to restore him to his Electorat, upon his renunciation of the *Bohemian* Crown. But *Cesar* refers the Embassador to the agreement of *Brussels*, which went on with so slow a pace, that in the mean while the *Palatin* lost all his Country; for Sir *Horace Vere* dispairing of any aid, delivers up *Manheim* to *Tilly*, upon honourable tearms. In *October* following, *Leopold* subdues the Territory of *Spire*, and other parts. The Lands of the Marquisat of *Baden* suffered all kind of hostility by the *Bavarian* soldiers, chiefly the *Croats* and *Cossacks*. These *Cossacks* for their cruelty are cashiered by *Cesar*; for whersoever they went, like mad dogs, they raged on all sorts of people, sex and ages, their cruelties, rapacity, and leachery, which *Germany* suffered is unspeakable. But they were met sometimes by the *Silesians*, and rewarded according to their merits. The *Mansfieldians* were little better in *Westphalia*, and East *Friesland*: plundring and spoiling all places as they came, and imposing Taxes at their pleasure; whereupon the lower *Saxony* by *Cesars* consent, take arms for their own defence. All the Protestant Ministers are banished out of *Bohemia*, and *Moravia*. In *France* the Pacification is broken by the King, who not without great slaughter takes *Montpelier*, and other Protestant Towns, with which afterwards he makes an agreement. *An. Christi*

The same year the Pope Canonizeth *Isidor*, *Ignatius Loyola*, *Francis Tresa*, Foundress of the bare-footed *Carmelites*, and one *Philip* Author of the Congregation of the Oratory. He decrees it a sin, to say, the Virgin Mary was conceived in sin. He erects a new Colledge for propagating the faith. He sends into *Denmark* some Parsonated Divines, to season the Schools and Pulpits with their Doctrine of *Rome*, but vvith small succes; two *Danish* ships richly loaden, return that year home from *Ceilan* in the East-*Indies*. *Spinola* before *Bergen ap Zom*, loseth 8000 men, and at last is forced to break up his siege. *Maximilian* of *Bavaria* is honoured with the *Palatin* Electorat, against the will of *Mints*, *Saxon*, and *Brandeburg*, but with this caution, that hereby the *Palatins* sons and kindred should not be prejudiced. This vvas done at *Ratisbon* the 15 of *February*. The Popish Doctors are detected in *Denmark*, and banished. A silver Mine is found in *Norway*, and a new Academy erected in *Seland*. In *Holland* a Treasonous plot is discovered against *Maurice*, and the Anti-*Arminians*; the Ring-leaders, were *Barnfelds* two sons, one of which escaped, the other with his complices vvas executed. The King of *Denmark* and the *Saxon* Princes drove *Brunswick* out of their Territories into *Friesland*, where *Tilly* falls upon his Rear, and by an ambush suddenly surrounds his Army, which was very numerous; the *Tillians* were but 5000, who put to flight the *Brunswickians*, killed seven hundred on the place, took most of the chief men prisoners, with all the Ordnance, Baggage and Provision. *Brunswick* himself escaped, with some Troups to *Brevord*. *Meppens* is surrendred to *Tilly* 1623

An. Christi *Tilly*. *Frisia* is still molested by the *Manssfildians*, till Count *Oldenburg* obtained their pardon from *Cæsar*: For *Tilly* did not meddle with these cunning *Harpies*, yet some of them return to the Province of *Munster* in *Westphalia* where they loose 15 Colours. *Limbaus* with most of his Commanders surrender themselves: From that time the *Manssfieldians* fell off daily, their Commander accompanied with a few, flies back to *Holland*, and *Brunswick* to *Saxony*. This year died *Gregory* 15th of the Palsie at *Rome*: His successor was Cardinall *Maphæus Barberinus*, who took the name of *Urban* 8h. Old *Turren* assisted by the *Turks*, did much mischief in *Moravia*, so did *Gabor*, till the *Turks* fell off from him, and his *German* aid not appearing, he was forced to make peace with the Emperor, who afterward took from the title of Princes of the Empire. The *Turks* returning heavy with plunder, are killed every where by the *Cæsarians*, and stript of their spoyles: The next year peace is renewed betweeen *Cæsar* and *Transylvania*; so at last *Jegerndorff* is turned out of *Silesia*, *Turren* out of *Moravia*, and *Gabor* out of *Hungary*.

This year strange things were seen in *Germany*, portending yet more troubles. For in divers Poles water was congealed into blood, drops of blood fell from the beams and rafters of some houses, the bread, the tables, and books in some places sweat blood: Armies fighting were seen and heard in
1624 the aire, and corn grew upon trees. Shortly after this the sparkles of war begin to break out in *Denmark* and *Saxony*. Count *Tilly* places some Garrisons in *Saxony*, though *Brunswick* was fled into *Denmark*, and had disbanded the remainder of his Army: These Garrisons so oppressed the *Saxons* with exactions, and want of provision, that they complain to the *Dane*, and he to the Emperor, that *Saxony* his neighbour Countrey was much oppressed, though they were no enemies either to *Cæsar* or *Bavare*: It was answered, that those forces in *Saxony* belonged to the *Bavarian*, who could not with safety disband them, because he feared the *Saxon* strength; yet if there were any within the King's Territories, they should be removed. This answer was sent by the King to *Tilly*, who returns him this scoff, That his Soldiers had no wings to flye in the aire, therefore must have some ground and earth for their feet to stand upon. This highly incensed the King, who was now invited by the Kings of great *Brittan*, *France*, *Swethland*, and the *Netherlands*, to stand up in defence of Kingly right. The *Hollanders* send a great fleet this year into *America*, which seising upon some *Spanish* Vessels, take the Bay or port of All Saints, with the Town, where they met with rich booties: *Spinola* about the end of *August*, sits down before *Baieda*. *Maurice* takes the antient Town of *Clive*, with some other places; he aimed also at the Cittadell of *Antwerp*, but his Stratagem failed. *Breda* having held out siege 9 months, in which time *Justin* of *Nassau* made many eruptions, and *Henry Frederick* with a great army strove to raise the siege, but could not, therefore the Town was forced by sickness and famin, to yeild *May* 26. the Soldiers marched out with their arms, and the Townesmen had their liberties granted, but not their Religion, after such a day. A little before, *Frederick* of *Toledo*, recovered again their Bay of *Brasil* to the *Spaniards*. *Philip* 4th inhibited commerce between the *Spaniards*, and his subjects of *Belgium*.

1625 About the beginning of the 25th year, the storms and windes were so violent in *Denmark* and *Golsatia*, that not onely trees were rooted up, but also many houses, towers and Churches blown down, bulwarks, banks, and rampires overthrown by the sea, and land-floods, fore-runners of the ensuing troubles. About the end of *March* at *Lavenberg*, a meeting was between the Princes of lower *Saxony*, the King of *Denmark*, as Duke of *Holsatia*, the administrator of *Magdeburg*, the Bishop of *Brem*, the Duke of *Brunswick*, the *Megapolitans*; where it is agreed, that the Regiments raised awhile ago for defence of *Saxony* be increased, and a strong Army levied, over which the

King

King ſhould be Generall. The *Griſons* war in the *Valtelin* is renewed. For *An. Chriſti*
France, *Venice*, and *Savoy* vexed that a Province, ſo convenient for them, ſhould be wholly ſubject to any other: Therefore they enter into a Confederacy for regaining it: To whom 4 Towns and 2 Counties come in and ſubmit. Many that had betrayed their Countrey were put to death, but the Catholick *Switzers* put themſelves under the protection of *Auſtria*. Preſently *Cleve* being taken, the whole *Valtelin* falls off to the confederates. There is alſo war made againſt *Genua*, for furniſhing the *Spaniard* with money and proviſions: This War was eagerly perſued in the beginning by the *French*, and *Savoyen*, in which the *Ligurians* were ſometimes worſted: *Preton* and *Albinga* are ſurrendred, but the *French* were diverted by an inteſtin War at home, between the Papiſts and *Hugonots*; in vvhich Duke *Sonliz* beat the King's ſhips at ſea, and ſhortly after is beaten himſelf, and driven into *England*. *Rochel* is beſieged both by Sea and Land: Pope *Urban* confirms the new Militia, which began the 19th year of his age at *Vienna*, and gives it the name of Saint *Marie's Conception*. In *Auſtria*, *Bohemia*, *Moravia*, and elſewhere, the Proteſtant books are burned, their Church-ſervice diſturbed, and the profeſſors of Reformation baniſhed. In *France*, books were caſt abroad that the *Hugonots* intended to kill the King, and to recover their Liberty. *Marcus Antonius de Dominis*, who had wrote againſt the Church of *Rome*, whilſt he was in *England*, is inticed over to *Bruſſels* by the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſador, upon great promiſes, but from thence he is ſent to *Rome* where he died; ſome ſay he was ſtrangled in priſon, and in the beginning of *December* was burned. Shortly after the Pope began his *Jubilee*, at which was preſent *Uladiſlaus* the Prince of *Poland*.

Ferdinand the Emperor having made truce with the *Turk* for 12 years, ſends *Tilly* and *Fridland* with their Armies to invade the lower *Saxony*, although the King of *Denmark* had conducted an Army of 24 thouſand to *Viſurgis* without hurting any man; but declaring that his intent was onely to defend the *Saxon* Liberties. Till the 10th of *July* there paſſed no Act of hoſtility on either ſide: The *Tillians* made the firſt breach by ſeiſing upon a Fort of *Saxony*, built near *Huxaria*. 10 Days after the King riding careleſly upon the Rampire, fell with his horſe into a cave 29 foot deep, where powder was kept, onely covered over with deal-boards, where after two houres he was found alive, but for three daies together he was accounted no better then a dead man; wherefore the Enemy drawing near, the *Danes* retreat towards the Dioceſs of *Verdana*: Mean while *Tilly* with all his Forces breaks in upon *Brunſwick*, notwithſtanding the *Saxons* by their Agents deprecated the contrary: He placeth Garriſons in divers Towns, and makes havock of the Inhabitants of *Brunſwick*, who therefore take Arms in their own defence; The King alſo requires in *Caſar*'s name, that he would remove his Army out of *Saxony*, but in vain; for *Tilly* beſiegeth *Niemburg*, which the King being well now recovered defended ſo ſtoutly, that *Tilly* was fain to give off the ſiege with the loſs of 4000 of his men: Yet *Stolzenavia* revolted to him, by means of a certain Captain who was bribed. In the interim *Manſfield* gets recruits from *England*, which now was fallen out with *Spain* for not reſtoring the Palatinat. Theſe Forces (but much diminiſhed by the way) with ſome *French* and *Flemins*, he conducts into *Saxony*, where he takes up his quarters at *Lavemburg* upon *Albis*, when a little before, *Brunſwick* with good ſupply of horſe, joynes with the King. In this mean time *Fridland* enters the Dioceſs of *Magdeburg*, where he ſeiſeth upon *Hall*, his Soldiers alſo make inroads upon the Territories of *Halberſtad* without reſiſtance; but that the flame of this war might ſpread no further, by the mediation of the Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandeburg*, a Treaty for peace was held in *October* at *Brunſwick*, after 4 months diſceptation, the Treaty broke off without effecting any thing; for *Tilly* would not part 1626
with

An. Chriſti vvith *Minda*, and *Huxaria*, neither vvould he nor *Fridland* confirm the rights vvhich the Nobility of *Saxony* had purchaſed over the Church-lands. So the War brake out more fiercely then before; in vvhich *Brunſwick* overthrew a Regiment of High-vvay Robbers, vvith 800 of *Fridlands* men. But *Mansfield* plundring ſome Villages of the *Lubekers*, vvas ſet upon by the Townſmen vvho ſallied out, killed divers of his Horſe, and ſtript him of his plunder. *John Erneſt* of *Vinaria*, the Kings Lieutenant, takes in divers Towns.

Leopold upon the death of his brother *Charles* in *Spain*, reſignes his Biſhopricks of *Strasburg*, and *Padua*, and marries with *Claudia* of *Medices*, the Duke of *Urbins* Widow; the younger ſon of *Sigiſmund*, King of *Poland*, obtains the Biſhoprick of *Uratiſlavia*. About this time died King *James* in *March*, and *Maurice* Prince of *Orange*, the next *April* after, both of a Feaver, whoſe deaths was accompanied with a great plague and mortality through Great *Britain*, and many other places of *Europe*. The King of *Sweden* falls upon *Livonia* ſuddenly, and takes divers Towns from the *Polander*, who laboured to recover *Riga*, with the loſs of 600 Citizens, by *Turren* the yonger; the *Swede* alſo alarms *Boruſſia* in *July* with a Fleet of eighty Sail. He takes in there divers Towns; he injoins the *Dantiſcans* to put away the *Polonian* ſhips, and to pay him the Tribute due to the *Polander*, but this City reſiſted him ſtoutly, and retarded his proceedings.

CHAP. XIX.

A Continuation of the Hiſtory of Germany, Denmark, Swedland, Holland, Poland, Italy, &c. *under* Ferdinand 2d, *from the year* 1626. *till the end of* 1630.

1626 THE flame of the *Saxon* war did this year break out into a great conflagration. The *Ceſarian* Army being too numerous to be encountred with, the *Saxons* ſtrive to keep off proviſions from them. The *Mansfieldians* therefore the 15 of *April* aſſault a Fort of *Fridlands* upon the *Albis*, by which he had proviſions brought him by water. The attempt was deſperate and raſh; for the *Mansfieldians* were but 8000, vvhereas there was above 30000 *Ceſarians*. The *Mansfieldian* Horſe fainting, left the Foot to the mercy of the Enemy, vvho cut off the *Holland* Auxiliaries, which were about 4000, the reſt fled. Thirty colours vvere taken, yet they write that of the *Mansfieldians* not many above 1500 were ſlain. In *Haſſia* the Country people riſe in Arms againſt the ſoldiers, many whereof they killed and plundred. *Brunſwick* fals upon the Province of *Grubenhag*, in the abſence of *George Lunebarge* poſſeſſor thereof, who vvas raiſing Forces for *Ceſar*, and fortifieth divers places with Gariſons; beſides, he beats in *Haſſia George* his new Levies. The Emperor by a Herauld proclaims at *Magdeburg* proſcription againſt all of the Roman Empire, that ſhall aſſiſt the *Dane*. *Tilly* takes *Munda* the key of *Brunonia*, and puts all to the ſword, except a few that hid themſelves in Vaults or on the Houſe tops, who after the fury of the ſoldiers was paſt, ranſomed their lives for mony. This vvas in the end of *May*; and about the ſixt of *June* *Brunſwick* died, ſome think he was poiſoned: the 19 of *July* his mother followed him, the *Dane* Gariſons, the Caſtle of *Vorda*. *Tilly* delivers *Haſſia* to *William* the *Land-grave*, and marcheth to *Gottinga*, vvhich was ſurrendred to him, though the *Dane* vvas coming with all his Forces to raiſe the ſiege. The two Armies meet; the Kings firſt velitations were ſucceſsful, *Tilly* having loſt above ſix hundred of his men, vvith ſome Colours. The King purſues *Tillies* Reare, and had now at *Lottera* found a fit place for defence, where he was adviſed to hault, and not to follow the Enemy, who had got the vvinde and advan-

advantage of the ground. But he would go on, with a resolution to fight the Enemy. The *Avant* Guard advanceth so couragiously towards *Tillies* Artillery, put him in some fear, till he was strengthned with *George Luneburgs* Auxiliaries; then falling with all his Forces upon the Kings Foot, so gals them, that the Horse pretending want of pay, wheeled about, and refused to fight, notwithstanding they had received their pay not long before. The King did what he could to make them fight, but in vain, for they shamefully rid away, and left the Foot naked; whereof 1200 were slain by the Enemy, and 1800 taken prisoners, with 28 Colours. Many prime men were slain, *Lottera* forced to surrender; many also of the *Tillians* were slain: the King escaped narrowly from being taken; this Battel was fought *August* 1. *Tillies* Victory was greater then his Booty, for he durst not venture too far in the pursuit, because he feared Ambuscadoes. Two days after Duke *Brunswick* renounceth the Association of *Saxony*, and surrenders all *Brunonia* to *Cesar*. *Tilly* understanding that *Wolferbyt*, whither the King retreated in his flight, was strongly fortified, would not besiege it, for fear of losing too much time, but falls to taking in of other places. In the interim the King recollects his dispersed Forces, and provides another Army for a fresh encounter with *Tilly*. The *Vinarien* and *Mansfield* having joyned their Forces, which consisted of 16000, brake in upon *Silesia*, whom *Bechman* followed, but could doe no good, because the *Silesians* by reason of his violence, were alienated from him; therefore divers places submit to the *Vinarien*: and now *Mansfield* being encouraged by the addition of *Gabors* Forces, and the marriage of *Katherin* of *Brandeburg*, marcheth into *Moravia*; and trusting to the Turks aid, being animated by one of the *Bassais*, enters *Hungary*. Thither *Fridland* being sent with an Army, is repulsed at *Neutra*, by the Turks, and hath divers doubtful encounters with *Mansfield*; who fearing some colluſion between *Fridland* and the *Transylvanian*, resolves to go for *Venice*, with the choicest of his men; the rest of his Army he delivers to the *Vinarien*. But in his journey he fell sick of the bloudy flux, at *Bosnia*, (its thought he was poisoned) and there died. The *Vinarien* also grieving that the *Transylvanian* had saln off to *Cesar*, died suddenly, the 32 year of his age. In *Moravia* the Bores rise against Count *Herbersdorff*, for abusing them; they first flung stones at him, then they fall upon his guard of 1500 men, and killed most of them; then they take in divers Towns, and the mean while Petition *Cesar* for a free enjoyment of the Gospel. At last they grew so strong by the confluence thither, of the banished Gentry, and others that had suffered in these Wars, that they became Masters of all *Austria*, above *Oenus*. But their Victories made a stop at *Lintzium*, for they could not keep off either provision or men from the *Bavarian* Army. At length they were so pressed upon by *Herbersdorff*, *Brenner*, and *Lobel*, and encompassed by their Forces, that they submitted and flung down their Arms. But shortly after being incensed by the cruel punishments, which many of them suffered, and the burning of their Houses by the Duke of *Holsatia's* Regiments, they fall upon them betimes in the morning, dispersed, and kill above 4000. They defeat the *Bavarians* divers times, some of whose Captains they killed. *Lobel* and *Brenner* are beat to pieces by the *Boores* iron cudgels, and above 2000 men were destroyed. *Cesar* being much troubled at these disasters, promiseth liberty of Religion to the *Austrians*, and by his Proclamations at *Prague*, calls home the *Bohemians* that were banished for their conscience. Afterward whilst these *Boores* labour to bring others into their society, they fall to quarrelling and destroying each other, till *Poppenheim* came upon them with a Brigade of 8000, dispersed, kils, and destroys them;

An. Christi

An. Christi them; ſome eſcaped, and ſome were taken and reſerved for publick puniſhment.

Mean while the Wars remove from the *Griſons* to the *French*, who fall out among themſelves about matters of Religion. *Barbarinus* the Cardinal perſwades the *French* King to make Peace with *Spain*, and that the *Valtelin* be left in *depoſito* with the *Pope*, and that a Paſſage in the *Griſons* Straits, be opened for both Kings. But the *Venetians* and *Savoyen* were at enmity with the *Genuois*. The *French* and *Engliſh* fall out about ſending away Queen *Maries* Prieſts, which hindred the pay promiſed to the King of *Denmark*; to wit, 140000 Joachims monethly from the *Engliſh*, and 100 thouſand Crowns from the *French*; yet the King not willing to be a meer ſpectator of the *German* miſery, gathered again 6000 Foot, and 4000 Horſe, and ſuddenly aſſaults *Hoia*, which he took, though he was ſhot through the arm with a Bullet. *Chriſtian* 5. Prince of *Denmark*, haſtneth proviſion into *Niemburg*; then the King goeth into *Holſatia*, where he calls a Diet at *Redensburg*, about continuing the War. *Rantzovius* the Vice-Duke, promiſeth his beſt aſſiſtance. *Chriſtianus Thomans*, is ſent Embaſſador into *Belgium* and *France*, but is taken by the way, and ſet at liberty again by *Iſabella*. He obtains from the confederate *Belgians* ſome Forces for the *Dane*. The King had exhauſted a great Treaſure, and borrowed large ſums of his people, in maintenance of this war, which tended both to the defence of *Denmark* and *Saxony*. Mean while the Vice-Duke died, whoſe Funeral the King in his own perſon honoured; Then he builds Forts upon *Viſurgis* and *Albis*, to keep off proviſions from *Tilly*, whoſe men offering to take the *Rampiers*, are beaten off with loſs. *George Luneburg* takes *Brandeberg* by ſtorm. *Slamersdorff* poſſeſſeth the Black Friars Church in *Havelberg*, and fortifieth it; from thence he killed with Muſquet ſhot above 4000. The Marqueſs of *Dunlac*, and old *Turren*, whom the *Venetians* honourably diſcharged, now the *Italian* War being almoſt ended, are entertained by the King; the Country of *Lunaburg* is pitifully waſted by the royal & *Ceſarian* parties, burning each others Corn; and almoſt through all *Germany*, there was nothing but waſting, plundring, and murthering; ſo that the three Eccleſiaſtick Electors deſired peace, before *Germany* be totally ruined. The *Boors* of *Brunſwick*, rob and deſtroy about the *Hyrcinian* Woods, whom the *Ceſarians* defeated. *Northeim* is ſurrendred *June* 17. Mean while the *Tillians* are pinched for want of proviſions, by reaſon the Rivers *Albis*, *Viſurgis*, and *Havila* were guarded by the *Danes*: Therefore *Tilly* to open a way, marcheth towards *Albis*, takes in ſome places by the way. About the end of *July*, whilſt the King is at the Diet of *Redensburg*, *Tilly* obſerving the neglect and paucity of the Watch upon *Albis*, before break of day, Ferries over a Company of ſoldiers, with as great ſilence and privacy, as could be, when he perceived the Watch did not ſtir. He ſends over another Company, the Watch awaked; which ſeeing one Company coming, and another already Landed, they out of fear run away, and withall affright *Beuzenburg*, near to which Town were divers prætorian cohorts, who in ſtead of encountring with the Enemy, falls to plundring of their friends, ſo that without reſiſtance, *Tilly* paſſeth over with his whole Army, and withall ſeizeth upon the Bridge, which the *Dane* had built; ſo all that Country on this ſide of *Albis*, becomes a prey to the *Ceſarians*. In *Holſatia* alſo a controverſie aroſe between the King and his ſiſters ſon Duke *Frederick*, who fearing the ſtorm that was coming on his Country, and underſtanding that *Tillies* Army was got over, repairs ſpeedily to him to make his peace. All that he could obtain, was this, that if he would forſake the K. his Country & friends ſhould fare the better, which promiſe was ſcarce performed.

1627

In

In *Sileſia Ceſar* having pacified *Bethleem Gabor*, the *Danes* could look for no aid thence, but what they ſhould get by the ſword. Therefore *Fridland* ſeizeth upon divers Towns and Forts. Him Count *Merodius*, and *Bechman* follow, with 7000. A hot skirmiſh enſueth, in which the *Danes* had the better, but when the *Polonian* Foot, and *Croats* were come to aid the *Ceſarians*, *Baudiſius* with his Regiments, betake them to their heels, upon which the priſoners are releaſed. *Brandeburg* wiſheth the *Danes* to be gone, who having got the Iſle *Pœla*, took ſhipping at *Grotenbrod*: and now about the end of *Auguſt*, *Fridland* joyns with *Tilly*, and *Luneberg*, who by the River *Alſtria* brake in upon *Stormaria*; the *Holſatians* who had ſeated themſelves near *Hamburg* upon the confines of *Albis*, return home. *Hamburg* victualleth the *Ceſarian* Camp. From *Hamburg* they march to *Pippenberg*, a Caſtle in *Stormaria*, where *Tilly* was dangerouſly wounded with a Muſquet bullet, yet took the Caſtle, by reaſon its powder was ſpent. There were not in *Stormaria* above 3 Towns that could hold out a while, and in *Holſatia* only *Redensburg*; ſo that the ſtrength of *Holſatia* conſiſted in the *Marchian* and *Sileſian* Troops, moſt of which were gone from their own homes to *Denmark*, *Holland*, *Friſland*, *Lubec*, *Hamburg*, and thoſe of other places. Thoſe of *Merchia* had neither powder, nor ſhot, nor hearts to fight; yet the *Holſatian* Horſe, and the *Scots* Foot, fought ſtoutly, till they were cut off. The K. of *Denmark* finding Gods judgments ſo heavy againſt him, and his people, cauſed a faſt for 3 days; beſides daily prayers and ſupplications to be had through his two Kingdoms. In the interim at *Rendensburg* the Enemy received ſome loſs; the K. being forſaken by moſt, betook himſelf into *Fionia*, he permits the town to make an honorable ſurrender. The Caſtle of *Bredenberg* held out a great while, to the loſs of 4000 of the Enemies; at laſt its taken by ſtorm, and the whole Gariſon put to the ſword by *Fridland*. *Marſia* and *Futia* are expoſed to pillage, not only of the Enemy, but even of their own Country men, which made moſt of the Gentry take ſhipping, and remove farther into *Denmark*, or elſe to *Norway*; thinking it ſafer and more honorable to forſake their houſes and lands, then their Allegiance and conſcience. They only grieved at this, that they were conquered before they fought, and baniſhed before they took arms. The country thereabouts with the Dioceſs of *Brem*, ſubmit and deliver up their Colours to *Tilly*, whoſe victories are ſtopt upon the ſhoar of *Fionia*: *Stada* which was ſtoutly defended by Sir *Charles Morgan*, was for want of food delivered up to *Tilly* the 25 of *April*. *Niemburg* by the Kings permiſſion is delivered up to the D. of *Lunæburg*. The *Ceſarians* labour to perſwade the Hans Towns to joyn with *Ceſar* and the *Spaniard*, againſt *Denmark*; but they knowing how powerful the K. of *Denmark* was by Sea, did wiſely decline ſuch an union, yet ſhewed their readineſs to ſerve *Ceſar* againſt *Denmark* and *Holſatia*, by carying to them all kind of proviſion, and performing ſuch offices as they were injoined: yet ſome Hans Towns, either inveigled by promiſes, or affrighted with threatnings, ſubmit their necks to the Imperial yoak; ſuch were *Roſtok*, *Wiſmaria*, and all the Towns of *Pomerania*, except *Stralſound*, and *Stetin*, which with thoſe mighty cities of *Saxony*, *Lubec*, *Hamburg*, *Brunſwick*, *Magdeburg*, and *Brem*, retain their ancient priviledges. *Pomerania*, *Marchia*, and Eaſt *Friſland*, with all the lower *Saxony*, are ſubject to heavy Taxes, and domineering ſoldiers. *Hamburg* was careful to give all content poſſible to the *Ceſarian* Army.

An. Chriſti 1628

The King in the Month of *April*, recovers by a ſtrong Fleet *Femaria*, a rich Iſland in the *Baltick* Sea, having ſlain or taken the Gariſon conſiſting of ſeven hundred. He takes alſo ſome Towns, and faces *Wagria*; but upon the coming of the *Ceſarian* Army, he returns with his Fleet into *Denmark*, having put a Gariſon in *Femaria*. The Imperialiſts impoſe a heavy Tax upon *Stralſound*; whereof though they offered a part, yet a Gariſon is put upon them by *Arnheim* an Imperial Commander. He under pretence of Peace, labours under-hand to ſeize upon *Denholm*, but the Townſmen perceiving his treachery,

An. Christi preſently ſeize themſelves of the place, and inſiſt upon a new agreement. At laſt, not being able of themſelves to reſiſt his ſtrength, they admit into their Town the *Daniſh* Auxiliaries; by theſe they ſtoutly reſiſted all his aſſaults, and ſlew many of his men. *Holk* the Commander of the *Daniſh* Auxiliaries, underſtanding, that *Arnheim* had been tampering with ſome to betray the town to him, he cauſeth Letters to be ſent, intimating to *Arnheim* what hower, and into what place he ſhould come. *Arnheim* not knowing his plot, was detected, came at the hower appointed, when the Townſmen broke out upon him, and drove him back to his great loſs. They alſo ſprung a Mine under his works, which they blew up with many of his men. *Holk* being one day abſent at a Wedding, the Senate had almoſt yeilded to ſurrender the Town; which he underſtanding, returns and breaks off the Treaty, as ſoon as it began; which the Town was the more willing to break off, becauſe a Fleet of *Danes* was now in ſight of them. In one night during this ſiege, there were 5 ſeveral aſſaults upon the Town-works, by *Fridlands* whole Forces, and ſo many repulſes; preſently the King with his two ſons, Prince *Chriſtian* and Duke *Frederick*, came to relieve *Holk*. Whereupon *Fridland* broke off the ſiege, leaving his Works for the *Danes* to poſſeſs; who in a ſhort time took divers places, ſo that *Pomerania* now was in hope of liberty, till the 22 of *Auguſt*, when *Fridland* routed the Kings Army, and ſlew 400 of them. Upon this the King, with the remainder of his Army, takes ſhipping and returns to *Denmark*, and *Fridland* to the ſiege; this being the third year ſince it began. At laſt a Gariſon of the *Swedes* is admitted into the Town by the perſwaſion of *Oxinſtern* Chancelour of *Swedland*, who for that end was ſent into *Denmark*. *Tychopolis* is ſtoutly defended by *RantZovius*; but the Forts on the River *Store*, which the *French* careleſly loſt to the *Ceſarians*, ſo kept off all proviſions, that the Town *Cremus* after 13 months ſiege, was ſurrendred by *Aleſeldius* the Governour, to *Fridland*, upon tearms of ſafety for himſelf, the townſmen and Gariſon. But *Tychopolis* notwithſtanding the plague was in it, held out ſo long, that in a ſhort time *Fridland* loſt above three thouſand of his men, and was fain at laſt to burn his Huts, and raiſe the ſiege.

The *Ceſarians Auguſt* 18. are beaten at *Colmaria*, where they loſt many men, beſides a thouſand wounded. In *Stormaria*, and *Dithmarſia*, all places far and near, are waſted by the Imperial Gariſons there. A ſtrange thing fell out at *Itzeho*; the Gate of the Monaſtery which the *Ceſarians* took, flew open, with a terrible noiſe and clamour in the night. The plundred Oxen kept there, were ſuddenly ſtrangled, their necks being turned round, their horns faſtned in the ground.

1629 In the 29 year of this Century, the *Daniſh* King held a Diet at *Hafnia*, about reforming the Church Diſcipline, and making Peace with the Emperour. For this cauſe Embaſſadors are ſent to *Lubec*. The *Ceſarians* at firſt would treat with them no other ways, then with a conquered people, but the Embaſſadors ſtood upon the honor of the King and Kingdom. Five months were ſpent in Debates; in which time the *Danes* had raiſed an Army, and rigged out a ſtrong Fleet, with which they took the Iſle *Stranda*, with ſome other places. Hereupon *Fridland* and *Tilly* ſend to their Deputies, who were at the Treaties of *Lubec*, to haſten the Peace, for feare of greater miſchiefe. A Peace then is concluded, in which *Cimbria*, *Sleſvigia*, *Holſatia*, and all Hereditary places, belonging to the *Holſatian*, taken from him in theſe laſt Wars, are reſtored to the *Dane*. The King renounceth all the other Provinces of the *Saxons*. The day before the Peace was made, *Wilſtria* is taken by the *Danes*, who by a meſſenger ſent from the King, are commanded to lay down Arms. The news of Peace was joyfully welcomed by the people, and ſolemn thanks given to God; eſpecially by the *Dithmarſians*, who the year before, ſtrove to vindicate their liberty, but could

could not; for finding no end of their exactions, and other preſſures, in a rage took Arms, broke in upon ſome Gariſons, and killed above an hundred of them. The Country people riſing, ſlew many of the *Ceſarians*, which brought greater miſery and ſervitude upon them; for the inraged ſoldier hackt ſome, drowned others, and ſhot divers with poiſoned bullets, by which they vvere tortured to death. They were glad then to be eaſed of ſuch cruel Maſters, but ſorry that the *Saxons*, *Pomeranians*, and *Megapolitans*, for whoſe defence they took Arms, did not enjoy the ſame happineſs of Peace; for the *Megapolitan* Lands were taken from *Adolphus*, *Frederick*, and *John Albert*, brothers, and depoſited in the hands of *Fridland* at firſt; but now their inheritance is taken away, as if thoſe brothers had been guilty of Treaſon, for joyning their Forces and Councel with the *Dane* againſt *Ceſar*: but they made it appear, they entred into League vvith the *Dane*, for defence of *Saxony* only, and withall that they ſhewed their obedience to *Ceſar*, by leaving the *Dane*, when by the Emperours Letters, they were called away. The Proteſtants vvere much troubled about *Ceſars* Edict, whereby he reſtores to the Roman Catholicks all Lands vvithheld and taken from them, ſince the tranſaction of *Paſſavia*, that is 75 years. *An. Chriſti*

The *Hollanders* ſeized upon 22 *Spaniſh* ſhips belonging to the Plate Fleet, and loaden with *American* wealth; theſe they ſpoiled, and brought with them into *Holland* ſo much plate and other things, as was eſteemed worth 200 talents of Gold. This loſs diſheartned the *Spaniſh* ſoldiers, as much as it encouraged the *Hollander*. The Prince of *Orange* layeth ſiege to *Sylva Ducis*, or *Hertogenboſch*, by the *French* called *Bulduc*, vvhich had been often heretofore attempted in vain; but now after 4 months ſiege, it vvas fain to yeild to the Prince, but not till ſome of the Gates were blown up by Mines. It was ſurrendred upon honourable tearms about the beginning of *September*. A little before this, *Veſalia* a rich and potent Town upon the *Rhene*, was taken by the *Hollander*, with one thouſand two hundred Foot, and eight hundred Horſe in the night. Some bold ſpirits ſwimmed over the Moat, get into the Fort not yet finiſhed, and kill the watch; then they broke open the Gates, and let in the ſoldiers. *Loſanus* the Governour, being ſuddenly ſurpriſed, was fain to deliver up the keys. The Townſmen who had been diſ-armed before, and were angry vvith the *Spaniards* for abridging their liberty of conſcience; did not at all aſſiſt the Gariſon. There was taken much wealth; the ſoldiers were diſmiſſed, but the chief Commanders detained priſoners. In *June*, *Hein* who ſeized on the Plate Fleet, had a Sea fight with the *Dunkarkers*, in which he loſt his life by a Bullet, but got the Victory, which not he, but his Country injoyed.

The *Magdeburgers* having ſtudied to pleaſe the *Ceſarians* in the *Saxon* War, and permitted the bones of *Norbert* an ancient Arch-Biſhop, to be taken out of his Tomb, and caried to *Prague*; yet they were wronged by the *Ceſarian* ſoldiers, who ſeized on their Farms and Villages near the Town, and are kept off from all proviſion, even from the benefit of the River *Albis*. Hereupon ſome of the Townſmen in a rage bring away into the Town ſome Veſſels laden vvith Corn, and put to flight the *Croat* Thieves, vvhich vvere driving away the Town-Cattle. Hence aroſe a War, though unknown to *Ceſar*, as that vvas of *Stralſound*: *Magdeburg* is beſieged, *Fridland* commands them to receive a Gariſon, adding high threatnings; but they behaved themſelves ſo ſtoutly, and killed ſo many *Ceſarian* by ſallies, that by the intervening of ſome Princes and Cities, the Duke was quickly pacified, and the City reſtored to her liberty. *Stralſound* ſtrives alſo to defend her freedom, though ſhe was much weakned by ſickneſs. *Hatzfield* makes an attempt upon the City, but is beat off again with loſs. The King of *Swedes* having obtained divers Victories againſt the *Polander*, at laſt concludes a Peace for ſix years with his Uncle,

he

An. Chriſti he had the year before ſubdued *Newburg*, and *Straisburg*, with Leather Ordnance, the invention of one *Elias Tripus*. The *Polander* recovered *Newburg*, but was beat from the ſiege of *Straisburg* by *Oxenſtern* the Chanceller, and from *Meve* by the King himſelf: For peace-ſake the *Swede* reſtores to *Poland*, *Straisburg*, *Dirſavia*, and *Frauberg*, but retains what he had got in *Livonia*, and *Boruſſia*; ſome Towns were left in the hands of *Brandeburg*, as it were in *depoſito*; ſo an offenſive and defenſive peace is made about the end of this year 1629. The *Hollanders* take divers places from the enemy, and drive the *Spaniards* out of *Velavia*: They take alſo *Farnambuck* in *Braſil*, with much bootie, and defeat the *Spaniards* at *Mulheim*, whoſe Commander *Johannes Naſſovius* was mortally wounded.

Charls Duke of *Nivern* about this time, by the death of *Vincentius* his couſin *German*, takes poſſeſſion of *Mantua*, by right of conſanguinitie, and by will alſo, but without *Ceſar's* knowledge, who is Lord of the Fee. The *Spaniard* and *Savoyen* Storm at this, who have had old quarrels with the Dukes of *Mantua* about *Monsferrat*; ſo the old Factions between *France* and *Spain* are renewed. The *Savoyen* takes the *Spaniards* part. *Genua* in the interim is full of inteſtin plots and treacheries, which lighted heavy at laſt upon the contrivers: To *Mantua's* ſide are joyned the *Venetians*, the Viceroy of *Sicily* and *Naples*, with the Vice Duke of *Millan*; theſe troubles were attended on by terrible Earth-quakes in *Apulia*, which devoured above 17000 people, there were alſo prodigious innundations and blood guſhing out of ſprings. *Gaſall* the chief City of the Marquiſat of *Monsferrat* was by *Conſalvus* Vice Duke of *Millan* ſtreightly beſieged, till he was forced to riſe thence by the innundation of *Po*, having loſt above 6000 of his men; the *Mantuan* is content to refer his cauſe to *Ceſar*, conditionally arms be laid down on both ſides: This was rejected by the *Spaniard*, who could not endure that the *French* ſhould have any footing in *Italy*: And by the *Savoyen* alſo, who had obtained almoſt all *Monsferrat*. Upon this *Nivern* ſupported by *France*, goeth on more coragiouſly: Mean while the *Griſons* ſubmit to the *Auſtrians*, ſlighting the *Switzers* friendſhip, at which they were offended; but afterward pacified by the *Griſons* Agents, ſhewing that *Cæſar* acted nothing that was prejudicial to the ancient league. *Merodius* was Generall of the Imperial forces, which went from the *Griſons* to *Monsferrat*, but the Plague conſumed a
1630 third part of them; yet recruits came daily out of *Germany*, by which they ſubdued a great part of *Mantua*, and beſieged the City it ſelf; but the Citizens being ſtrengthned by the *Venetian* Auxiliaries, made a ſally upon the *Cæſarians*, of whom they killed about 3000, ſo for that time the ſieg was raiſed. But returning afterward in *July*, they took *Mantua* for the Emperor, after that the *French* King had ſubdued *Savoy*: The Plague at this time raging throughout all *Italy*.

Tranſylvania upon the death of *Gabor*, ſeemes to be more inclined to the *Sultan*, then to *Cæſar*. The *French*, *Engliſh*, and *Hallander*, urge earneſtly for the reſtitution of the Palatin. The *Belgian* Forces increas ſtill, and incroach more and more upon *Germany*. The *Swede* is angry with the *Cæſarians*, for making war upon him; therefore by his Manifeſto ſhews, he hath juſt cauſe to invade *Germany*: He inhibits all importation of victuals into the Sea-Towns of *Pomerania* and *Megapolis*, being poſſeſſed by the *Cæſarian* Soldiers. At *Dantſick*, a Treaty for peace was begun, but before the Ambaſſadors could meet, it was broke off: The Famin in *Pomerania* and *Rugia*, was alſo great, that ſome like Caniballs fed on mens fleſh. Whilſt things were in this condition, the *Swediſh* King enters upon *Rugia*, having defeated in ſome battels the *Cæſarian* Forces, and Garriſons: Then having ſeiſed on ſome Ports, with his fleet comes to *Stetin*; the Governor delivers up the Town to him, complaining how *Pomerania* had ſuffered by the *Ceſarian* Soldiers, taking

king no care of the safety of those that were under them. *Cesar* drove Protestanisme out of *Bohemia*, *Austria*, *Moravia*, *Glogovia*, many Principalities of *Silesia*, *Stiria*, *Carinthia*, *Croatia*, *Juliers*, *Cleve*, *Grisons*; *Bavare* doth the like in both Palatinats. The *Spaniard* having deluded King *James*, retains *Frankinthal* to himself, which was depositat in the hands of *Isabel*, Archdutchesse; thence Calvinisme is banished, and Manheim destroyed. The Towns of *Juliers*, *Westphalia*, and the *Grisons* under the *Spaniard*, receive Poperie; The *Lutheran* Cities are spoyled and plundred by *Cesar*. Episcopall rights possessed by the Protestant Princes many years, are demanded by the first owners: A way is making for creating *Ferdinand* 3^d, King of the *Romans*, he being *Cesar's* eldest son by his Lady *Mary* of *Bavaria*; and two years before this was Crowned King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*. *Cesar's* other son *Leopold* is made Bishop of *Magdeburg*, *Christianus Gulielmus* being thrust out. In this distempered condition was *Germany*, when the King of *Sweden* came into it. *An. Christi*

The King of *Denmark* had 3 ships in the River *Albis*, or *Elve*, which with the great Ferrie-Boat, were seised upon by the *Hamburgers*, pretending that the King had begun to exact a new Custom at *Tychopolis* from the Sea-men, trading in that River, which they held to be theirs by ancient right; whereas indeed the Dukes of *Holsatia* are Masters of that River, as Princes of the Empire, and Lords of *Hamburg*: The King also declares that he imposed no Tribute or Custom upon Ships. but required satisfaction for the hurt done by the *Hamburgers* against all right, upon the *Holsatians*, by exacting a new Excise for vendible commodities and victuals. Shortly after this, the King foughts 3 battels on *Albis* with the *Hamburgers*, in which he had the victory, and drove them out of that River; the benefit whereof they had kept 4 months from the *Tychopolitans*.

CHAP. XX.

A continuation of the Affairs of Turky, Persia, Ægypt, Greece, Armenia, *and other adjacent parts under* Mahumet 1^st, Amurath 2^d. Mahumet 2^d, Baiazet *and* Selymus, *from the year* 1412, *till* 1520.

WE have clearly shewed that *Baiazet* the *Turk*, whom *Tamerlan* overthrew, had 5 sons, some say 6; and some but two: However, the Histories record they destroyed one another, the last surviver was *Mahumet* 1^st, who in a battel defeated his brother *Moyses* or *Musa*, drove him into a bogg, where he hid himself awhile, at last found him out and strangled him; this *Mahumet* made a perpetuall peace with the *Greeks*, by whose assistance he obtained the Empire. He imposed a Tribute on the *Transylvanian*, in his war with the *Venetians* for the Islands of the *Jonian* Sea, he was worsted, and forced to part with *Lampsacum*. The *Walachians* were defeated by him, he regained many places taken by *Tamerlan*. *Adriannoclis* the chief City of *Thracia* was his seat. 1412

To him succeeded *Amurath* the 2^d, son to *Mahumet*: His chief care was to suppress the Christians; but the *Byzantins* to hinder his proceedings, take *Mustapha* his Uncle out of prison in *Lemnos*, where he had been kept by the *Greeks*, after his escape out of his brothers prison, and furnish him with an Army: But in his incounter with *Amurath*, he was deserted by the Turks, who revolted to *Amurath*; so he fell alive into his enemies hand, by whom he was strangled, the 3^d year after he had raised this war: Upon this bad success the *Greeks* Petition for peace, which being refused by *Amurath*, they send for 1418

Mustapha

An. Christi *Muſtapha* his brother, now 13 years old, and an exile in *Cilicia* under the tuition of *Alibeus Baſſa*, to whoſe care he was committed by his father *Mahumet*. The *Greeks* having furniſhed him with an Army, he takes *Nicea* of *Bithynia*, where he was betrayed to *Amurath* by his Guardian, and then ſtrangled: Theſe competitors being gone, *Amurath* reſolves to be revenged on the *Greeks* their abettors; having therefore overrun *Thracia*, and taken the remainder of thoſe Towes which belonged to the *Greek* Emperor, he layeth ſiege to *Theſſalonica* committed to the *Venetian* care and protection, which he takes by ſtorm and utterly defaces; preſently upon this, he ſubdues with incredible celerity, *Phocis*, *Attina*, *Boeotia*, *Aetolia*, *Acannania*, and the whole Countrey from *Peloponneſus* to *Corinth*. *John Caſtriot* did then reigne in that part of *Macedon* which lieth upon the *Adriatick*, at this day known by the name of *Albania*; he conſidering his own weakneſs, and the *Turks* greatneſs, makes his peace, by delivering up the Town *Croia*, and giving for hoſtages his 3 ſons, *Conſtantin*, *Repoſius*, and *George*, who for his comely perſonage, and other excellent parts, was in high account with *Amurath*, who gave him the beſt breeding *Turky* could afford, and called him *Scandorbei*, or *Scanderbeg*, that is, *Alexander* the great; before he was ſcarce fit to bear Arms, he is imployed againſt *Carmannus* the *Cilician*, which war he managed with great dexterity, and withall, killed two of the chief Combattants, who provoked him to a Duell: The one was a *Scythian* Foot-man, the other a *Perſian* Horſe-man, relying on the *Turks* favour, upon the newes of his Fathers death, he Petitions *Amurath* for his ancient Inheritance, which was granted him. But *George* doubting the *Turk* was not reall, makes an eſcape into *Epirus*, where by counterfeit Letters he gets *Croia*, with other places of *Epirus* and *Macedon*. For many years together he ſo defended his Dominions againſt *Amurath*, and *Mahumet*, that ſtill he defeated the *Turkiſh* Armies. *Amurath* having ſubdued partly, and partly waſted *Illyrus*, *Albania*, and *Boſna*, marcheth againſt the *Bulgarians*, *Walachians*, and *Servians*, upon hopes to ſubdue *Hungary*. *George Deſpot* of *Servia* humbly Petitions *Amurath* for peace, proffering his daughter to him in marriage, which he accepts, and makes peace; which ſhortly after he breaks, and drives him out of his Kingdome, taking from him his chief towns, and his two ſons, whoſe eye-ſight he barbarouſly put out; by holding near them a hot burning braſs baſon: *George* flyeth into *Hungary* to *Albert* of *Auſtria*, who having raiſed an Army died of a diſſenterie: *Hungary* being full of inteſtin broyls, calls in *Laudiſlaus* of *Poland*. The *Turk* ſets upon *Belgrada*, but is beat off with great loſſe.

Amurath by his two Baſſais waſts the places about *Belgrada*, and makes incurſions into *Tranſylvania*; both theſe were defeated and cut off by *John Hunniades*, who recovered a good part of *Servia* and all *Moldavia*. The *Turk* alſo is beat in *Panonia*, ſo that he is forced to ſue for peace, and to reſtore *George Deſpot* of *Servia*. Then he marcheth againſt *Carmannus* in *Cilicia*, but is called back into *Europ* upon the breach of the 10 years peace by *Ladiſlaus*, who by the perſwaſion of *Julian* the Cardinall, in the *Turks* abſence had invaded his *Europian* Dominions: The Chriſtian Army was defeated, and *Ladiſlaus* ſlain, as we have already ſaid. *Amurath* puft up with this Victory, marcheth into *Peloponneſus*, to be revenged on the *Greeks* who animated *Ladiſlaus* againſt him, there he breaks down the ſtrong wall *Hexamilium*, built by the *Greeks* and *Venetians*, with 5 Caſtles on it, to divide this *Iſthmus* (6 miles of length between the two ſeas) from the main land of *Greece*. The Emperors brother of *Byzantium*, with his whole Army appointed to guard this wall, are overthrown by the *Turk*. After this *Conſtantin Paleologus* the *Greek* Emperor, repaired this wall, which ſhortly by command from *Amurath*, he pulls down again. Here divers Forts and Towns are taken by the *Turk*, who upon a Petition for peace, made the Countrey tributary, and withdrew his Army

Army thence to their winter-quarters. *George Caſtriot* ſo manfully maintained the *Epirotick* war and his fathers patrimony againſt *Amurath*, that during this ſpace, he overthrew ſeaven ſeverall armies ſent thither under the command of ſo many Baſſaies, and at laſt forced *Amurath* himſelf, who had Beleaguered *Croia* with a formidable army, to raiſe his ſiege, having loſt multitudes of his *Turks*. After this diſaſter they write that *Amurath* vowed a ſolitary life, with a few Prieſts in a Cave of *Bithynia*, where he gave himſelf to Contemplation, committing the care of his Dominions to *Hali* Baſſai. But he was quickly called off from his Contemplation by *Huniades* and *Scanderbeg*; The one having raiſed a vaſt Army of *Hungarians*, *Bohemians*, and *Germans* to repay the loſs of *Chriſtians* at *Varna*; The other had ſubdued all *Macedonia*, and reſtored to *Boſna*, *Raſcia*, and *Illyris*, their *Deſpots*, and thrown out the *Turk's* Garriſons, which Plunder *Illyricum* and *Iſtria*, to the affrighting of *Venice*. *George* that perfideous *Deſpot* of *Servia*, forgetfull of the help *Hungary* afforded him, betrays all the Counſells of *Huniades* to the Enemy, ſo that by this means he loſt two battels, yet was ſtrangely preſerved himſelf; for being taken by two *Turks*, he killed one, and made the other fly; and when he was interrupted by the ſame *George*, he was reſtored by him to the *Hungarians*, which occaſioned a new war between the *Turk* and him; but *Huniades* to ſhew his gratitude, came and aſſiſted him when he was almoſt defeated, and obtained a ſignall victory over the *Turks*. Afterward in *Epirus*, *Amurath* received ſo many loſſes, that he fell melancholy and ſick, then being removed from the Camp to *Adrianopolis*, he became mad, and ſo died, having reigned thirty two years, and lived ſeventy five. He was the firſt of the *Ottomans* that inſtituted the *Prætorian* Guard after the example of the *Macedonion Phalanx*: This Militia as the *Mamalucks* of *Egypt*, was made up of Chriſtian children taken violently from their parents, brought up in the *Turkiſh* diſcipline and ſuperſtition, and forced to renounce Chriſtianity, by receiving circucmiſion; theſe the *Turks* call Janizaries, they guard the *Sultans* perſon: At firſt they were but 8000 armed with arrows and ſpears, now they are almoſt double that number, and their arms are muſquets.

An. Chriſti 1450

He left behind him three ſons, *Mahumet*, *Turſin*, and *Calepin*, *Mahumet* being ſpectator himſelf, made *Moyſes* Baſſai choak *Turſin* (being but 18 months old) in the water, when the child's mother cried out upon the barbarous Tyrant, uttering many curſes againſt him, he to pleaſe this his ſtep-mother, delivers into her hand the author of this paricide bound; ſhe in the preſence of the Tyrant, thruſt a knife into his heart, and ripping up his body, pulls out his liver, which ſhe flung to the doggs: *Amurathes* had committed *Calepin* his third ſon, to *Hali* Baſſai, a man of great eſteem with him: *Mahumet* cauſed the childe delivered up to him by *Hali*, to be ſtrangled. Afterward *Hali* himſelf was ſtranged, being firſt tortured by *Mahumet*, upon pretence that he held coreſpondencie with the Chriſtians; but indeed he was exceſſively rich, which is crime enough to a covetous Prince. Some think that this *Calepin* whom *Mahumet* killed, was ſuppoſititious, and not the ſon of *Amurath*, who was conveyed to *Byzantium*, and from thence where it was taken, to *Venice*, thence to *Rome* by the Order of Pope *Calixtus*, who cauſed him to be baptized, to take a Chriſtian name, and to be inſtructed in Chriſtian doctrin; afterward he went to Frederick the Emperor, who uſed him honorably: The reſt of his life he ſpent in *Auſtria*.

Mahumet then the ſecond, began his reigne with parricid, after the example of his Anceſtors, and continued in his barbarous cruelties; his mother who was the Deſpot of *Servia's* daughter; had inſtructed him in the Chriſtian faith, but he adhered more to *Mahumetaniſme*, at laſt turned plain Atheiſt, ſcoffing at providence, and acknowledging no other deitie but good luck: He

An.Chriſti was moſt addicted to Militarie parts; and firſt of the *Ottomans* that made uſe of ſea-fights, and ſhips of war, by which he ſtrove with *Venice* for command of the ſea; his firſt and moſt terrible warlick exploit was that againſt *Conſtantinople*, which after fifty four days ſiege he took the 29 of *May*: Within the walls beſides the Townes-people, there were but ſix thouſand *Greek* Soldiers, and three thouſand *Venetian* and *Genuan* Auxiliaries; whereas *Mahumets* army conſiſted of four hundred thouſand men, moſt of which were gathered out of the Chriſtian Territories, he aſſaulted the City
1453 both by land and ſea, he made three ſeverall breaches in the walls, where the *Turks* gave furious aſſaults, but were ſtoutly reſiſted by the Chriſtians, till they were overpowred with multitudes: The *Turk* had brought out of the *Aegæan* and *Euxin* ſeas two hundred and fifty ſhips, to block up the harbour againſt theſe ſeaven ſhips of *Genua*, three of *Crete*, and ſome of *Chios* were imployed: The Harbour alſo was chained againſt the Turkiſh Fleet; which the Chriſtians ſet on fire and ſo ſpoyled, that it was uſeleſs a great while, till by main ſtrength the chain was burſt, and ſo the *Turks* got within the Harbour, and battered the walls on all ſides. The Tyrant ſtood upon a hill hard by, exhorting his men to be couragious; and ſending ſome Troops of his own Guard to ſlay ſuch as were faint-hearted, promiſing that he who did firſt venture upon the breaches, ſhould have command of the greateſt Province in *Europe*, and if the City be taken, the Soldiers ſhould have the pillaging of it for three days: And withall he threatens death to any that did turn their backs: *Mahumet* had provided great battering pieces of braſs, one whereof was ſo big, that it could not be drawn but by 70 yoke of Oxen, and 2000 men: With theſe Ordnance he played againſt the walls forty days together; then having injoyned a faſt for three days, he bids them all be ready to live or die together: *Conſtantin* perceiving ſmall hopes of defending the City againſt ſo great a power, deſires a parly, which was granted, and peace proffered, if he would pay yearly to the *Turk* one hundred thouſand crowns, or elſe preſently ſurrender, and depart with their goods. Theſe conditions were diſliked; therefore they fall to battering again: *Juſtinian* of *Genua*, who with three hundred ſtout men ſuſtained the firſt brunt, was ſorely wounded, ſo that he gave back, and with him the reſt alſo; notwithſtanding *Conſtantin* earneſtly laboured to have him hold out, his wound not being mortall: Upon his going away, (by vvhich that Tower vvhere he ſtood vvas left naked, *Conſtantin* and thoſe about him began to fly; The *Turks* perceiving this) ruſht furiouſly into thoſe places; the gates vvere ſo barricadoed vvith dead bodies, and the, keyes purpoſly flung away, that fevv or none could eſcape: *Paleologus* vvas ſlain, or troad upon in the preſſe, ſtriving to get out at one gate, vvhere vvere found eight hundred dead bodies. *Juſtinian* eſcaped to *Pera*, and thence to *Chios*, vvhere he died of his vvounds and grief together: The Victorious *Turks* rage like bloudy Wolves through the City, ſparing neither age nor ſex. The murthers, rapes, plunderings, and inſolencies committed, both againſt the living and dead, againſt the Pictures and Images of our Saviour, and his Saints, and other Monuments of Chriſtianitie, are inexpreſſable. Above ſixty thouſand Gentle-women, Matrons, and virgins, vvere carried away for ſlaves. *Iſidor* the Cardinall vvho had been ſent thither by the Pope, to reconcile the *Greeks* to the *Roman* Church, vvhich he had effected but too late, vvas taken and ſolde; yet diſguiſing himſelf ſhortly after made an eſcape.

Pera over againſt *Byzantium*, vvhich the *Lattins* had in poſſeſſion, is ſurrendred to the *Turks*. Three days after, *Mahumet* enters the City, and pacifieth all Tumults: Hee made ſearch for ſome Prime men who had concealed themſeves, theſe he commanded to be cut in pieces,

pieces. In their feasts, they abused divers matrons and virgins, and then barbarously murthered them: This end had that famous City wherein the Gospel flourished from the first, to the last *Constantin*, about eleven hundred and twenty years; that light went out, being overwhelmed with *Mahumetan* darkness, which was presaged by that flame from heaven, shining one night over the City, and the next vanishing away, as the *Turks* in their siege observed. Yet *Mahumet* invited the Christians to dwell there, and to use their Religion, for that cause he confirmed their Patriarch which they had chosen, by delivering to him the Pastorall staff openly: This he did that so great a City might not lie desolate for want of Inhabitants. *An. Christi*

Three years after, *Mahumet* (but not with the like success) attempted *Belgrade*, where after two days fight he received a wound under the left pap, and was carried for dead out of the camp, which the *Turks* lost with all their baggage and Ordnances, besides 40000 of their men slain there; when he came to himself, he was so inraged at this loss and disgrace, that he would have murthered himsef: After this he provides to invade the *Aegæan* Islands, but he was taken off by *Ussumcassanes* of the *Assimbeian* Family of the *Turks*, Lord of *Cappadocia* and *Armenia*, who having lately killed *Demorus* the *Persian* King, and seised on his Kingdome; puft up with this success, he sends rich *Persian* presents, to shew the fruits of his Victory, to *Mahumet*, and by his Ambassadors, desires that the *Turk* would not meddle with *Trapezund* and *Cappadocia*, which he had in marriage by his wife, *Despina* daughter of *David Comuenus*. The Tyrant offended that an inferior Lord should give him the Law, and envying his new obtained happiness, provides an Army both by land and sea against him: A part of his fleet he sends before to *Pontus*, and *Synope* towards *Trapezund*, and follows himself by land; he overruns a great part of *Asia* with wonderfull celerity, and before he was dreamed of, pitcheth his camp near *Usumcassanes*: Two great battels are fought near *Euphrates*, *Amurath Bassai* the *Turks* Generall, a *Greek* born, was here killed, and the *Turks* Forces much weakned; but the third battel that *Mahumet* fought, was more successfull, for in it the *Persians*, with the unacquainted noyse of the Ordnance were dispersed, and *Usumcassanes* forced to flye, having lost his son *Zeinald* who was shot there: Shortly after this Victory *Mahumet* subdues *Synope*, and all *Paphlagonia*, then he besiegeth both by Sea and Land, *Trapezund* the Royall City, and takes it, with the Kings Treasure; King *David* himself, his two sons, and Cousin *German Calo Johannes*, whom he sent before to *Byzantium*, and there in his triumph cruelly murthered, and with them the whole race of the *Comueni*: Then having of these Kingdomes made Provinces, he subdues *Caramannus*, and takes *Cilicia* from him, thence returned to *Byzantium*; by his fleet he takes the Islands of *Lemnus* and *Lesbes*, destroys the City *Mytilene*, and transplants the *Islanders*. *Catalusius* Prince of *Lesbos* a *German*, was by his command cruelly put to death: Then by his Land Forces, he invades *Dracula*, Prince of *Walachia*, by whom he was like to have been surprised and his Army, but that *Mahumet Bassai*, who succeeded to *Hali Bassai* in Office and dignity, got off the Army, but with great loss. Then having recruited his Army, he falls upon the upper *Mysia*, and *Illyricum*, and drives *Steeven* King of *Bosua* out of his Kingdome, and kills him: But this Kingdome was shortly after recovered by *Mathias Corvinus*, with divers other places in *Dalmatia* and *Croatia*, possessed by the *Turks*. Before his *Asiatin* expedition, he entred *Peloponnesus*, where he took away the Principalitie of the *Paleologi* from the two brothers, *Thomas* and *Demetrius*, being then at variance: *Demetrius* complied with the Enemy, to whom he married his daughter: *Thomas* having lost all, fled to *Rome*; In the interim the *Venetians* repair the wall *Hexamilium*, to keep their possessions in *Peloponnesus* from the *Turks* incursions; which he perceiving, breaks in upon them with 80 thousand men, wasts all 1456 1459

An. Christi the Countrey about defeats the *Venetians*, takes in the whole *Peleponneſe*, and throwes down the wall; ſhortly after he caſts the *Venetians* out of *Lesbos*, having ſlain 5000 men, for they had lately recovered it with *Lemnus*. He takes alſo the Iſle *Eubæo* from them, having made a bridge over *Eurypus*, then takes *Chalis* the 30 day after it was beſieged, the *Venetian* Gallies not daring to give aſſiſtance, who having the winde favourable, might have ſeiſed on, or demoliſhed the bridg; the Tyrant being enraged at the loſs of 40000 of his army ſlain this ſiege in divers skirmiſhes, commanded that all in the Town above 20 years old, ſhould be put to the Sword.

This Tyrant not yet glutted enough with bloud, ſends *Homaris* and *Malrecius*, 2 armies into *Dalmatia*, *Homaris* being a *Genuan* by his father, naturally hated the *Venetians*. In this invaſion *Novellus* the *Venetian* General was ſlain: *Stiria* and *Corinthia* are not free from the *Turks* fury. The truce being ended between *Mahumet* and *Scanderbeg*; he ſits down before *Croia* and *Scodra*, and after a long ſiege, takes them both. *Scodra* was ſurrendred by the *Venetians*, at which time *Solyman Baſſa* takes *Capha* the head City of *Boſphorus*, and a Colony of the *Genuois* in *Tauraca Chemſoneſus*, he makes alſo the Præcopit *Tartars* (who had thence driven out the *Goths*) tributarys to *Mahumet*: He cut off the heads of two *Gothiſh* Princes that were brothers; the reſt of that Nation afterward *Baiazet* ſubdued. *Scanderbeg* being driven out of his Countrey, went to *Italy*, where he took part with *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* againſt the *French*: After this he died of a Feaver, as he was conſulting with the *Venetians* about renewing the war againſt the *Turk*; he died the 63[d] year of his life:

1467 On his death-bed he commended the care of his young ſon *John* to the Senat of *Venice*. It's recorded of this *Scanderbeg*, that out of the vehemency of his Spirit, ſtill when he was going to fight, his lips would cleave and burſt out with blood, he never turned his back, never was wounded, but once in the foot with an arrow: His army never conſiſted of above 3000 foot, and 6000 horſe; he killed with his own hand above 2000 men, his ſtrength was ſuch, that with one blow, he could cleave a man to the Navil. *Machmet* being freed from the fear of *Huniades* and *Scanderbeg*, having alſo ſubdued his neighbour Princes of *Peloponneſus*, *Myſia* and *Illyricum*, makes peace with the *Venetians* on theſe conditions; that they ſhould deliver up to him *Scodra*, *Fenarus* a promontorie of *Laconia*, with *Lemnus*, and pay yearly 8 thouſand crowns, for their trading in the black Sea. After this he undertakes three expeditions at the ſame time, gaping at an univerſal Monarchy; to wit, againſt *Rhodes* by *Meſithes Baſſai* of the race of the *Palæolegi*, by *Acomathes* *Baſsai*, againſt *Italy* and *Rome*, he himſelf marched into *Aſia*. *Meſithes* after many and bloody attempts (but in vain) upon *Rhodes*, returned with the loſs of 30000 and diſgrace: *Acomathes* onely affrighted *Italy*, and made the people flye out of *Rome*. *Mahumet* himſelf at *Nicomedia*, fell into tormenting fits of the

1481 Colick, which in three days put an end both to his life and victories, the 53[d] year of his age, and of his reigne 31: He ſubdued the two Royal Seats of *Byzantium* and *Trapezund*; 4 Kingdomes, *Syria*, *Peloponneſus*, *Armenia*, and *Sclavonia*. He took from the Chriſtians 20 Provinces, and two hundred Towns, he was a moſt cruel and bloody Tyrant; For when he took *Hydruntum* in *Apulia*, he cauſed the Arch-Biſhop of that place to be cut with a wooden ſaw; and tortured many to death; he was a notorious whore-monger, and Sodomit; it's thought he cauſed above twenty thouſand to be put to death at times, beſides thoſe that were killed in the wars; at laſt he was poyſoned, who himſelf was the greateſt poyſon of mankinde, chiefly of Chriſtians and Chriſtianity. The *Turkiſh* Gariſon in *Hydruntum*, underſtanding *Mahumet* was dead, delivered up the Town to *Matthias Corvinus* and the *Italians* that beſieged it, upon condition they might have their lives; though they knew *Acomathis* was returning with 25 thouſands Turks: The *Greek* Muſes which were

were baniſhed by theſe barbarous *Scythians*, found an habitation for them in *Italy*, and other Weſtern Countries, being tranſplanted thither by *Chryſoloras*, *Trapezuntius*, *Gaza*, *Argyropilus*, *Chalcondyles*, *Laſcaras*, *&c.* *An. Chriſt*

To *Mahomet* ſucceeded his ſon *Bajazet*, who was when his Father died, at his charge in *Cappadocia*, being their Governour. His Brother *Gemes* alſo was then at *Iconium*, the chief City of *Lacaonia*, that Province being under his command. The elder brother *Muſtapha*, who had been employed by his Father againſt *Vſumcaſſanes*, and had put to flight *Joſeph* the *Perſian* General, the great ſupporter of King *Carmannus*, was dead at *Iconium*, by intemperance and letchery. Some difference aroſe among the *Baſſaies* and *Janiſares*, about the ſucceſſion, ſo that the quarrel broke out into blowes: at laſt the *Janiſares* or *Prætorians* proclaimed *Bajazet* Emperour, by means of the *Beglerbeg* of *Græcia*, and the *Aga* or Captain of the *Prætorians*, *Bajazets* ſons in Law. Some of the prime Commanders of the Horſe ſet up *Corchatus Bajazets* ſon, by placing him in the Throne, and delivering to him the Treaſures and Caſtles of the Empire. *Achmet Baſſa*, who lately took *Hydruntum*, joined with theſe. *Bajazet* rides poſt from *Cappadocia*, complaining with tears, of the wrong done him, by debarring him of his right. But he could not prevail till his young ſon of his own accord ſubmitted the Government to his Father. The *Janiſares* whom the *Baſſais* out of malice had ſtirred up, were pacified by large bribes.

Gemes alſo makes haſte out of *Lycaonia*, a neer Province, but being prevented by *Bajazet*, is kept out of *Bizantium*; wherefore he makes War, being aſſiſted by *Carmannus*, and the *Egyptian Sultan*, againſt his brother; who overthrew him in three Battels: whereupon out of deſpaire, he fled to *Rhodes*, leaving at *Carræ* his mother, and his ſon and daughter, that were Twins, whom *Bajazet* put to death. The Knights of *Rhodes* ſent *Gemes* to *Rome*, upon the deſire of Pope *Innocent* 4. *Lewis* 11. of *France*, and *Matthias* King of *Hungary*, in hope of ſome great Victory againſt *Bajazet*. He lodged in the *Vatican*, and was given as an Hoſtage to *Charles* 8. of *France*, with *Valentin Borgias*, the Popes ſon, by *Alexander* 6. when *Charles* marched out of *Rome* to the ſiege of *Naples*. But *Gemes* died by the way, being poiſoned by Pope *Alexander*, fearing leſt *Charles* in delivering him up to his brother, ſhould thereby obtain *Bajazets* favour. *Achmet Baſſa*, who had preſerved the Empire for *Bajazet* againſt his brother, was for his good ſervice ſtrangled by the ſame *Bajazet*, pretending that he meant to advance *Gemes* to the Throne: but indeed *Achmet* had great Treaſures, which cauſed his ruine, but to the good of Chriſtians, whoſe mortal Enemy he was.

This *Bajazet* delighted more in Scholarſhip, then Arms; yet to maintain the power he had got, makes war firſt againſt the Chriſtians, and in the third year of his reign ſubdued *Walachia*. Afterward transfers his War into *Aſia*, to puniſh the *Sultan* of *Egypt*, for aiding his brother *Gemes* with Victuals, Men, and Money, againſt him. For *Carmannus* of *Cilicia* was already ſubdued, and his Country made a Province. *Caithbæius* at this time was *Sultan* of *Egypt*, by birth a *Circaſſian*, and by condition a ſervant. From his childhood he was inſtructed in the Arts, and Manners of the *Mamalucs*, and by the Law of *Mahomet* was made free. Theſe *Mamalucs* were Chriſtians of the *Muſcovite*, or *Roxalan* profeſſion. Out of them the *Sultans* were choſen out of the *Circaſſian* ſlaves, who dwelt upon the *Euxin* Sea, and were choſen after the extirpation of *Saladius* poſterity. Now, theſe *Mamalucs* are the children of Chriſtians, and muſt be baptized, and educated in Chriſtian Religion, which they are to abandon and forſwear, before they can be *Mamalucs*. This *Caithbæius* was made *Sultan* for his Valour; the *Egyptians* ſtanding in need of ſuch a man, for ſuppreſſing the *Arabian* Thieves, and curbing the *Perſians*, who made divers irruptions upon *Comagene* and *Syria*; and keeping the Turks from breaking out of *Cilicia* upon the *Egyptian* Territories. All theſe Wars he happily undertook

An. Chriſti dertook; for he ſubdued the *Arabians*, and made them Tributaries. Then in two battels drove back the *Perſians* beyond *Euphrates*, and maſtered the Turks twice in *Cilicia* by the help and councel of two *Italian Mamalucs*, the two chief Turkiſh Commanders, *Meſithes Palæologus*, and *Cherſeogles*, were taken. This was the ſon of *Chetſechius*, Prince of *Illyricum*, who took away his ſons wife from him, which ſo exaſperated his ſon, that he renounced Chriſtianity, and betook himſelf to *Bajazet*, whoſe daughter he married. In this Battel of *Tharſis*, ſcaree the third part of an hundred thouſand Turks eſcaped. *Bajazet* being weary of the *Aſian* wars, returns back into *Europe*,
1493 where he takes *Dyrrachium*, and in the large fields of *Liburnis*, in *Croatia*, overthrew the united Forces of *Illyrium*, *Panonia*, and *Croatia*. Then he made War againſt the *Venetians*, for defending the cauſe of *John Caſtriot*, *Scanderbegs* ſon, who had defeated the Gariſon ſoldiers of *Bajazet* in *Croatia*, and driven the Turks out of his Territories. Beſides, the *Venetians* had prohibited *Bajazets* ſhips in his *Syrian* Expedition, to harbour in *Cyprus*, though he earneſtly intreated them. Alſo *Lewis Sforſia*, a great Enemy of the *Venetians*, egged him on. The beginnings of this war ſucceeded well to the Turk; for *Schenderus Baſſa*, by Land made excurſions as far as *Tarviſium*, and *Deuches* the Turks Admiral, by Sea, entred even to *Jadra* in *Dalmatia*, and
1498 caried thence a great multitude of captives. He was once in danger to have been taken by the *Venetian* Fleet, about *Peloponneſus*, among the *Sporade* Iſles, but *Grimannus*, the *Venetian* Admiral, either for want of courage, or skill, ſuffered him to eſcape to the Bay of *Corinth*, where he took the Town *Naupactum*, or *Lepanto*, within the Bay of *Aetolia*, having a little before taken from them *Dyrrachium* in *Epirus*.

Two years after *Bajazet* with an hundred and fifty thouſand men, brake in upon *Peloponneſus*; he divided his Army into three parts about *Methon*. After divers Skirmiſhes on both ſides, he gets within the Town, when unhappily the Townſmen ſpying three *Venetian* Gallies, coming towards them with Arms, Men, and Proviſion, forſook their ſtation, and went down to the ſhoar, to receive the Supplies ſent them. They were all taken priſoners, being above a thouſand of them, and in the preſence of the Tyrant maſſacred, except ſome patricii, whoſe lives were begged by *Cherſeogles*, *Bajazets* ſon in Law. Sóme other places being affrighted at this cruelty, yeilded to the Tyrant, one of thoſe was *Pilus*, where *Neſtor* of old lived. *Bajazet* after this, returns as a Conquerour to *Byzantium*, but *Spain* and *France* reſolve to aid *Venice*. *Piſaurius* the *Venetian* Admiral, by the advice and courage of *Conſalvus* the *Spaniard*, took *Cephalonia*, in the *Ionian* Sea, having a double Harbour, and a rich Soil. He took alſo by ſtorm *Leucade*, and *Nericum*, and put the whole Turkiſh Gariſon to the Sword. But the *French* Fleet at *Lesbos*, attempting *Mitylene*, had not the like ſucceſs, for the ſhips were ſo torn, ſcattered, and wrackt by a ſtorm, that much adoe they had to eſcape to *Tarentum*. At laſt a Peace is concluded on theſe conditions, that *Cephalonia* ſhould continue in the *Venetian* juriſdiction, as it was before the Turkiſh Empire. *Leucas* and *Nericum* ſhould be reſtored to the Turk. This Peace was the more eaſily obtained, becauſe in *Perſia Iſmael* the *Sophi*, deſcended from *Uſumcaſſanes* by the mother, had made himſelf King upon the death of *Jacuppus*, the ſon of *Uſumcaſſanes*, whom his libidinous wife perfidiouſly murthered. This change of the State came in with the change of *Mahometan* ſuperſtition, which by the wavering and credulous multitude, was greedily embraced. Theſe new Sectaries, with great ſucceſs, over-run *Cappadocia*, and *Lycaonia*, kills *Bajazets* two Nephews, *Orchanes* and *Mahumet*, two *Baſſais*, the *Beglerbeg* of *Aſia*, and *Hali*, and overthrows two Armies, before *Bajazet* knew of the danger. *Iſmael* was the ſon of *Harduellis*, a *Perſian* Prince, and of *Martha* the daughter of *Uſumcaſſanes*, who was the firſt of the *Aſsimbæan* Turks, that

after

after the murther of *Malaonches*, the *Persian* King possessed himself of that Kingdom. *Harduelles* the Father, would have the *Mahumetan* Law expounded after the mind of *Hali*, that was *Mahumets* Interpreter, and Companion; and not after the way of *Homer*, whom the other Turks followed. *Harduelles* by his affected holiness and strictness of life, above all other men, drew admiration, and innumerable Disciples after him, which eagerly maintained his Dictates, rejecting the ancient Rites. *Usumcassanes* being yet scarce warm in his Kingdom, began to suspect those great Meetings, and Assemblies of people, who many times under pretence of Religion, plot Innovasion; when therefore he finds, that by force he could not suppress *Harduelles*, he makes him his son in Law, by marying him to his daughter; of which mariage came this son *Ismael*: but *Jacuppus Usumcassanus* his son, after his Fathers death, by some *Assasins* murthered *Harduellis*, and banished or killed his followers, thinking this way to free himself of fear and danger. *Ismael* being yet a child, got out of his Uncles reach, into *Hircania*; and one of the chief Disciples *Techelles*, (called from his red Cap, or Turban Cuselbas, which he wore for distinctions sake) escaped over *Euphrates* unto the lesser *Armenia*. *An. Christi*

These two overthrew the posterity of *Usumcassanes*, and so busied the Turks, that they could have no leisure to prosecute their Victories in *Europe*. *Ismael* by maintaining his Fathers Doctrine, obtained no less love and admiration, then he; so that *Jacuppus* being poisoned by his wife, he resolves to recover his Fathers patrimony, and his Mothers Dowry; to this purpose, he arms his Followers, and procured Auxiliaries from *Pyrchales*, a Prince of *Hircania*, to whom he had fled. So in a short time he recovered his Fathers Estate, and daily increasing in strength, took by storm *Symachia*, on the borders of *Media*. Then upon hopes of obtaining the Kingdom of *Persia*, marcheth with his Army to *Taurisium*, or *Taura*, a flourishing City of the *Persians* in the greater *Armenia*, where *Alvantes* the son of *Jacuppus* (who drove his brother *Miratchamus* out of *Armenia* and *Persia*) dwelt. He was hated by the Citizens, because he murthered many of them for adhering to his brother. This City upon the flight of *Alvantes* thence, yeilded without blowes to *Ismael*, with the Kings whole Treasure. Then hearing that *Alvantes* had raised an Army, he fights him. *Alvantes* lost both his life and his Army. Upon the fame of this Victory, the neighbouring places and people submit to his Law and Government. Thence he marcheth into *Mesopotamia* against *Moratchamus*, the other brother, who had an Army at *Babylon*, but he fearing *Ismaels* power, and his own weakness, flies with his wife and children, and all the wealth he could convay, into *Arabia*. *Ismael* having with his conquering Army over-run a great part of the East, he marcheth out of *Assyria* into *Media*, where he takes in some Garisons of *Alvantes*, and returns into *Armenia*. The *Albanians*, *Iberians*, and *Scythians*, beyond the *Caspian* Sea, being Tributaries to the *Persian*, had not paid their Tributes in four years, nor had they sent all this while any Embassador to congratulate the *Sophies* Victories, therefore he reduced them to their duty by force of Arms.

1499

In this mean while *Techelles* by Preaching and Prophecying, drew *Cappadocia* to join both in Arms and Doctrine with him; and by the *Persian* help, he breaks in upon *Lycaonia*, a rich and populous Country, where he overthrew *Orchanes* and *Mahumet*, *Bajazets* Nephews; then he marcheth through lesser *Asia*, where *Corchutus*, *Bajazets* son, was with an Army, but refused to fight: then through *Galatia*, he breaks in upon *Bithynia*, where he met with *Caragius Bassa*, Commander of the Asiatick Horse, whom they call *Belerbei*, him *Techelles* put to flight, and pursues him to *Cauthia*, a town in the midst of *Asia minor*, and there beleaguered him. At last he takes the town, and *Caragius* alive in it, with his wife. From thence he intended to take in *Prusia*, the Metropolis of *Bithynia*, but was hindred by

An.Christ by *Bajazets* new Forces under *Hali Bassa*, the *Macedonian* Eunuch, whom *Techelles* unexpectedly meets, and to keep him off from fighting, took *Caragius* the *Beglerbeg*, whom he caried about in chains, and paled him in the High-way, that they might be affrighted at this sad spectacle; but indeed *Hali Bassa* was so inraged at this sight, that because he could not overtake him with his whole Army, pursues him eagerly with eight thousand Horse, and fights him. In the first encounter, *Techelles* was worsted, but shortly after, he got the Victory, and killed *Hali Bassa*. To whom succeeded *Junus Bassa*, of *Epirus*, whom *Achmet*, *Bajazets* son, furnished with Forces. He at last drove *Techelles* out of *Asia*: Thus doe the Enemies of Christ destroy each other. *Bajazet* being much troubled with the disasters of this War, with the Gout, and old Age, likewise with the great calamities of that time, caused by Earth-quakes, and the plague, began to consult with his *Bassats* about his successor, which occasioned Civil Wars; for *Bajazet* had three sons alive, *Achmet*, *Corchut*, and *Selymus*, besides divers grandchildren. *Achmet* was beloved of his Father, but the *Bassais* and *Janizaries* inclined in their affections most to *Selymus*, by their incitation and assistance of the *Præcopit Tartar*, (whose daughter *Selymus* had already maried against his Father *Bajazets* will) *Selymus* takes Arms most unnaturally against his Father, but was defeated, and by the *Bassais* interceſſion, reconciled again to him: yet afterward in spight of his Father, he was proclaimed Emperour by the soldiers, who swore Allegiance to him: He began his Government from Paricide; for having thrust his Father out of his Empire, poisoned him by one *Haman* a *Jew*, the 66 year of his life, and of his reign 32. he was a better Philosopher then Soldier.

1512

Selymus began his Reign, not only from the murther of his Father, but of his two Brothers also, and their children. He strangled *Achmet* and *Corchut*, his two Brothers, having first overthrown *Achmet* in a battel, and treacherously seized upon *Corchut*, thinking no hurt, but following his privat study; onely when he heard that his life was sought after, he endeavoured to escape into *Rhodes*. *Mustuphus Bassa*, by whose help *Selymus* had got the Empire, was for this his good service, first strangled, and then flung to the dogs; his crime was, that his affections seemed to incline more to *Achmet*, then to himself. *Achmets* two sons, *Amurath* and *Aladin*, both fled; *Amurath* to *Ismael* the *Sophi*, and *Aladin* to *Campso Caurius* the *Egyptian Sultan*; whence arose new Wars, which kept *Selymus* off from invading Christendom. *Amurath* with a *Persian* Army, breaks in upon *Cappadocia*; *Ismael* coming softly after, and was like to have caried all this Country, the people came in so fast to him, had not *Chendemus Bassa*, Governour of *Asia*, suppressed them with a great power. Whereupon *Selymus* passeth over into *Asia*, where he fell upon the united Forces of *Amurath*, the Turk, and *Ustaogle* the *Persian* Commanders, with whom also *Ismael* joins his Army. When he heard that *Selymus* was come, a bloudy battel is fought, in which *Ismael* was shot in the shoulders, and so was forced to withdraw himself out of the Army, whom the soldiers followed; by which the Turk obtained the Victory, but to

1514

the loss of thirty thousand of his men, whereof many of them were of great accompt with him; the *Persian* Army consisted but of thirty thousand Horse, whereas the Turks were an hundred and fifty thousand Horse and Foot. After this Victory, *Selymus* besiegeth *Taurisia*, the *Persians* Regal Seat, which being by the Citizens surrendred, he wasted and plundred. Shortly after, he brings back his Army into *Cappadocia*, fearing that *Ismael* was returning with a fresh Army of *Iberian*, and *Albanian* Horse men, who at this day are called *Georgians* and *Mangrellians*,

in

In *Cappadocia* the Turk takes up his Winter Quarters, at *Trapezund*, and *Amasia*. The next year understanding that *Ismael* is troubled with inteſtine Wars, and that he was gone againſt the *Hyrcanians*, and *Bactrians*, and ſome other places upon the *Caſpian* Sea; though he was willing to weaken the *Perſian*, yet he intends to act nothing in *Armenia*, till he have firſt droven King *Aladolus* out of that Country, for the wrongs he ſuffered by him in his former Expedition againſt *Ismael*. The Kingdome of *Aladolus* bordered upon the *Egyptian Sultan* at *Alepo*, on *Ismael* the *Sophi* by *Armenia* the leſs, on the Turks by *Orpha*, or *Edeſſa*, famous for its Springs againſt Leproſies, and for the Tombe of *Baldwin*, *Godfry* of Bullions Brother. Firſt, then *Selymus* takes the Town *Cyammaſſus*, the Key of *Armenia*, on the farther Bank of *Euphrates*. After that, he ſubdues the Garriſons that kept the narrow paſſages between the Hils, then he fights *Aladolus*, who being affrighted with the multitude of Muſqueteers, flies with his Forces into the next Woods. *Aladolus* was betrayed by his neighbours, and a kinſman of his to *Selymus*, who cauſed him to bee drawn out of the Cave where he hid himſelf, and his head to be chopped off, which he caried about upon a long Pole, through *Aſia*, in oſtentation of his Victory, then tranſmits it to the Senate of *Venice*. *Aladolus* his eldeſt ſon eſcaped to *Egypt*. *Selymus* divided his Kingdom into three Lieutenantſhips. Then he returns into *Europe*, to defend the borders of his Dominions from the *Hungarians*, whom he quickly ſuppreſſed, in two incurſions he made upon them. The fame of his Victories, and preparations he was making for ſubduing of Chriſtendom, cauſed *Maximilian*, *Ceſar*, *Ladiſlaus* of *Hungary*, and *Sigiſmund* of *Polonia*, to call a Diet for raiſing an Army through all their Dominions for the defence of Chriſtianity. But the Turk underſtanding, that the Chriſtians meant only to ſtand upon their own defence, and not to invade, returns to his Army in *Lycaonia*, with a reſolution to proſecute the *Perſian* Wars, and utterly to overthrow *Ismael*. *An. Chriſti*

The *Egyptian Sultan* being ſollicited by the daily prayers and tears of the exiled Princes, chiefly of *Aladin*, the ſon of *Achomat*, and *Aladols* eldeſt ſon, had raiſed a great Army of *Egyptians* and *Jews*, and was now on his March neer the River *Orontes*, ready to join with the *Perſian*. The Turk ſends Embaſſadors to deſire either his amity, or at leaſt neutrality. At this time *Campſon Gaurus* was *Sultan* by the Votes of the *Mamalucks*, after divers tumults and ſlaughters raiſed by *Caithbei* and his *Arabian* wife *Dultiba*, who would have had the Kingdom confirmed on their ſon, againſt the *Mamaluc* Laws, which made the *Sultans* Elective, not Hereditary; this Law *Caithbei* abrogated, after whoſe death his ſon *Mahumet* invaded the Kingdom, whileſt two prime men *Achbardin* and *Campſo*, diſputed for it. The *Mamalucs* being offended that their Law and Priviledge was thus infringed, cauſed *Mahumet* at a Feaſt to be murthered. Upon this divers ſlaughters of the prime men enſued. At laſt the *Mamalucs* conferred the dignity on *Campſon Gaurius*, a man of great worth: He remembring the Victory he had over the Turks at *Tarſus*, anſwers threatningly to the Turks requeſt, that he would not lay down Arms, except *Selymus* would reſtore the ſon of *Aladolus*, to his Kingdom, and forbear to meddle with any of *Ismaels* Provinces; he alſo deſires to be Arbitrator of the differences between him and the *Sophi*; this ſo exaſperated *Selymus* that he diverts his War from *Perſia*, and falls unexpectedly upon *Comagena*, an *Egyptian* Province, and incamps himſelf not farre from *Alepo*. *Campſon* brings his Army from *Damaſcus*, and encounters with the Turks; but *Cajerbeius* Governour of *Alepo* and *Comagena*, not only perfidiouſly forſook, but alſo purſued *Campſon*, ſo that the *Mamalucs* were

An. Christi defeated, and *Campson* himself being heavy with arms, and troubled with a rupture in his belly, fell with his horse, and was troad to death in the dust. Of the *Turks* 3000 were killed, of the *Mamalucks* 1000, among which were the Governors of *Damascus* and *Tripoli*, but a great slaughter was committed in
1516 the flight, whilst the Peeres and Gentry were posting towards *Hierapolis*, finding themselves betrayed by *Caierbejus*; these *Selymus* persues, who understanding they were got to *Damascus*, takes in *Hierapolis*, and sends *Junus* Bassai with a partie of horse to *Damascus*, but the enemy was gone thence; whereupon the *Turk* marcheth thither with all his army, to whom the gates are presently opened; *Tripoly*, *Berytus*, *Sydon*, *Ptolemais*, and other places did submit to *Selymus*.

Selymus having obtained *Syria* so suddenly, resolves to pursue the remainders of the *Mamalucks*, who having escaped to *Memphis*, had made *Tomumbejus* the *Circassian* Sultan there in the place of *Campson*. The *Arcadian* high-way robbers are suppressed by *Sinan* Bassai, who opens a way to *Gaza*. *Tomumbejus* had sent *Gazellus* thither with an army, who were defeated by *Selymus*, all the *Egyptian* Colours were taken, the Governor of *Alexandria*, the Prætor of *Memphis*, one thousand horse, and great numbers of *Arabians* were slain, *Sinan* Bassai lost 2000 horse, and many prime men. But the *Arabians* recruiting fell upon the *Turks* at *Gaza*, and killed many of them, till *Selymus* brought his whole army into *Judea*, where he joynes with *Sinan* Bassai, and takes *Gaza* upon surrender: Then he marcheth within six miles of *Memphis*, where he is encountred by *Tomumbejus*, whose Counsels were betrayed to the *Turk* by some Fugitives; so that *Selymus* got the victorie, most of the *Egyptian* prime men being lost: The choicest of their horse affrighted with the *Turkish* Canons, fled and got into the City, the streets whereof they Barracadoed with great pieces of timber; but this could not keep out *Selymus*, who breaks through all impediments, and in three days fight destroys in a manner the whole race of *Mamalucks*: Some that had escaped into a Church and submitted themselves to the *Turks* mercy, were all by his command cut off.

Tomumbejus beyond *Nilus* recruited his Forces, another battel is fought, and in it the *Egyptians* quite defeated, *Tomumbejus* was found lurking among reeds up to the middle in water, after the *Turk* had a long time tortured him, to make him confess where his treasures lay; he set him on a poor Jade which carried him about the City; then he causeth him to be strangled, and hanged up on an iron hook in one of the Gates, for a spe-
1517 ctacle to all passengers, of the one's Victory, and the other's miserie: And thus ended the Kingdome of the *Mamalucks* in *Egypt*, which from the extirpation of *Saladins* Posteritie in *Melechlala*, had continued about two hundred forty three years.

Egypt and *Syria* being subdued, *Caierbejus* for a reward of his Treacherie at *Alepo*, is made Governour of *Egypt*; and *Gazelles*, who upon the overthrow of the *Mamalucks*, submitted to the *Turk*, is set over *Syria*: Out of *Memphis* or *Alcair*, above 500 of the chiefe Families, besides multitudes of Women and Children of the *Mamalucks* Progenie, and all that could be found of that race, are at *Alexandria* cut in peeces by *Selymus* his Command.

Then he returnes in Triumph to *Byzantium* and threatens Christendom; But in his preparation for Warre, he is arrested by a Cankering Ulcer in his Kidneys, which spreading, putrified his whole body, so that he died miserably in that same place of *Thracia*, where he endevoured to intrap his Father *Bajazet*. He lived forty six years, and reigned eight. As
1518 he was breathing out his cruel soul, he commended his son *Solyman* to the care of

of *Pyrrhus Baſſa*, of *Cilicia*, injoyning him to forbear the *Perſians*, and to make war upon the Chriſtians. He was a moſt barbarous Tyrant, who ſpared neither Father, Brothers, nor any of his kindred, nor his chief Commanders, that did him beſt ſervice; nor his own ſon, whom he would have murthered with a poiſoned Coat, which the mother ſuſpecting, gave it not to *Solyman*, but to one of his Chamber, who by it was quickly killed. *An. Chriſti*

CHAP. XXI.

The Turkiſh Hiſtory under Solyman, Selymus, Amurath 3d, Mahumet 3d, Achmat, Muſtapha, Oſman *and* Amurath 4th, *from the year* 1520, *till the end of* 1636.

Solyman the only ſon of *Selymus*, ſucceeded *Gazelles*, Governour of *Syria*, thinking himſelf now freed from his Oath by the death of *Selymus*, revolted, intending to make himſelf Maſter of *Syria*; for this cauſe he entertains all the remainders of the *Mamalucs*, and the inhabitants of that Country, which flock to him in great numbers. He inſinuates himſelf alſo into the affections of the great Maſter of the *Rhodes*, from whom he deſired ſome Artillery, Arms, and Gallies. He ſends alſo privately to *Cajerbeius* in *Alcair*, Governour of *Egypt*, exhorting him to joyn, and to revenge the blood of the *Circaſsians*, and to re-eſtabliſh in the deſtruction of the *Turks*, the old government by *Sultans*. But *Cajerbeius* conſidering the difficulty of this buſineſs, and that no credit was to be given to an old Enemy, kills the Agent, and makes the *Turk* acquainted with the plot. Whereupon *Solyman* ſends *Farates* Baſſai, with an Army into *Syria*, which ſo affrighted *Gazelles*, that though he had taken *Tripoli*, and other Gariſons from the *Turk*, yet he betakes himſelf into *Damaſcus*; hither *Farates* repairs, with all ſpeed. *Gazelles* reſolves to hazard all in one battel, and either to get the victory, or elſe to die honourably: both Armies joyned; in this conflict, both he and his *Mamalucs* were cut off by this victory; *Syria* is recovered, and the fidelity of *Cairbeius* is confirmed. 1520

The next year after this victory, by the perſwaſion of the *Janizaries*, *Solyman* reſolves to fall upon *Belgrad* in *Hungary*, where were ſet up many Trophies taken from the *Turks*; *Solyman* ſends an Army to *Saphia*, a City in *Servia*, and he haſteneth after, ſo that he was come before the *Hungarians* knew any thing. *Ludovick* the young King, was totally ruled by others, ſo that he was in effect but a titular King: Hence an Army could not be ſuddenly raiſed; whereupon *Solyman* took *Belgrad* without oppoſition; who after this victory reſted a year; then he reſolves to try his fortune upon *Rhodes*, though he was diſſwaded by his friends who were not unmindful of the loſſe, diſgrace, and repulſe *Mahumet* received there, beſides the danger that might enſue to the *Sultans* own perſon by the Chriſtian Fleet. Notwithſtanding *Solyman* would in this be ruled by none, but by his own Genius: therefore about the end of *June*, he repairs thither with 400 ſhips, and 200000 *Turks*, with great ſtore of Braſſe Ordnance placed upon two Hils, which the *Turks* made themſelves, ſhoveling up Earth for the ſpace of two miles from the City into a wonderfull height. So great was the multitude of workmen, that in a ſhort time they came to the Towne-Ditches, working under ground for ſpringing of Mines. *Villadam* the great Maſter, a French man born, behaved himſelfe ſtoutly, playing continually upon the *Turks* with his great Ordnance, that 1522

An. Christi the Ditches were filled with dead bodies; yet *Solyman* would not give over, though he had loſt above thirty thouſand of his men by the bloody Flux. At laſt the Towres and Walls being overthrown, the Turks ſeize upon the remote parts of the Town. Then with their Mortar pieces, they batter down the houſes within the City, to the terrour of the inhabitants. All this while the *Rhodians* had no ſupply from Chriſtendom, though the Turk had received Recruits from *Egypt* and *Natolia*, for *Cajerbeius* ſent forty ſhips with all manner of Warlike proviſion. Mean while Pope *Hadrian* arrived out of *Spain* into *Italy*, with ſome ſhips and Gallies, and about three thouſand Foot. Theſe he was adviſed to ſend to *Rhodes*, and joyn with the fifty *Venetian* Gallies ready at *Crete*; but he refuſed to ſend them: wherefore the *Rhodians* having neither help, nor hope, ſurrendred themſelves to the Turk, conditionally they might enjoy their lives and goods, except the braſs Ordnance; which was granted, and carefully obſerved by *Solyman*, who would not ſuffer the ſoldiers to touch any conſecrated thing belonging to Saint *Johns* Church, when he entred *Rhodes* with thirty thouſand men; there was not a word heard ſpoken among them, but as ſilent as *Carthuſian* Monks. When *Villadam* took his leave of *Solyman*, he was diſmiſſed with all courteſie; ſo that *Solyman* turning about to one of his *Baſsais*, ſaid, It grieves me (ſaith he) to ſee this unfortunate old man driven from his habitation, and to depart hence with ſo ſad a countenance. So this Bulwark of Chriſtendom, to the honour of *Solyman*, and diſhonour of Chriſtendom, was ſurrendred after ſix months ſiege. In *Egypt Cajerbeius* died, to whom ſucceeded *Acomath Baſsa*, who thought to have made himſelf *Sultan*, but his plot was detected, and he juſtly puniſhed with death. *Habraim Baſsa*, *Solymans* Favorite, is ſent to quiet *Egypt*, which he did with great wiſdom; wherefore he was ſhortly after called home to *Conſtantinople*, by *Solyman*, and honoured with the Title of *Beglerbeg*, or Lord of Lords.

1526 After this, *Solyman* proclaims war againſt *Hungary*: King *Ludowic* raiſes an Army of twenty four thouſand Horſe and Foot, of raw and unskilfull men; neither had he any ſupply from the Chriſtian Princes, except from the Pope, who on his own charges raiſed for him ſome *German* and *Bohemian* Foot. The Turkiſh Army conſiſted of two hundred thouſand men, which made *Solyman* admire the Kings folly, that would with an handful of men oppoſe himſelf to ſuch a mighty Army; but the unfortunate King was adviſed to fight by *Paul Tomor*, Arch-Biſhop of *Collocen*, who had heretofore in ſome light Skirmiſhes, beat the Turk, but never encountred him before in any ſet Battel. In the end, this unfortunate King, as we have ſaid already, was drowned in a Bog, not being able by reaſon of his heavy Arms, to get out from under his Horſe; the thouſand Horſe, his Life-guard, in defending the Waggons and Baggage, were cut off, the Arch-Biſhop, with the other Biſhops ſlain, and the whole Army utterly defeated, ſo that few eſcaped with their lives, notwithſtanding that the Turkiſh Ordnance did no hurt; for the Gunners being Chriſtians, ſhot purpoſely over their heads. The Battel being fought, *Solyman* marcheth to *Buda*, where the Caſtle was ſurrendred to him, the Gariſon diſmiſſed with life and goods. Two brazen Statues ſet up by *Matthias*, were caried thence to *Conſtantinople* as a Trophy of *Solymans* Victory, who ſtayed
1560 not long after in *Hungary*, becauſe of the Winter, but returned home; nor did he after this make any more War upon the Chriſtians, only he laid ſiege to *Vienna*, which with loſſe and diſhonour he was fain to raiſe again. He alſo beat the *Spaniſh* Fleet, and took from them the Iſle *Meninges*, over againſt the *African* Syrtes, the Caſtle whereof was defended by the Duke of *Medina*, Viceroy of *Sicily*. *Pialis Baſsa*, defeated the *Spaniſh* Fleet, that beſieged *Tripoli*, and forced the Caſtle to ſurrender, for want of water and victuals; about 18 thouſand Chriſtians were ſlain and caried away priſoners to *Conſtantinople*,

ple, where at that time *Busbequius Ferdinands* Embassador was Resident, and relieved many of them with necessaries. But as *Solyman* was happy in his Victories abroad, so he was unfortunate in his affairs at home; for he committed Paricide upon the false accusation of *Rossa* or *Roxelana*, his beloved wife, who hated *Mustapha Solymans* son by another venture; this *Mustapha* had done excellent service for his Father against the *Persian*, and was generally well beloved for his excellent parts, especially by the *Janizaries*, wherefore he was accused for affecting the Empire, wch his Father was too apt to believe, therefore marcheth towards him with an Army: sends for *Mustapha* into his Pavilion, who trusting to his own innocency, came boldly. *Solyman* gave order to some Mutes that were strong men, but dumb, to fall upon him, and strangle him, which they did at last not without much strugling; for *Mustapha* being young and strong, made resistance a long time; the cruel Father, Authour and Spectator of the execution, caused his body to be laid before the Pavilion, for the *Janizaries* to behold, that they might see in what condition he was now, whom they meant to make Emperor. At which sight they were much struck with terror and sorrow, but knew no way to help it. *Solyman* also was much afflicted by his other son, which he had of *Roxolana*, his name was *Bajazet*, he partly hated, partly feared his elder brother *Selymus*, who was to succeed in the Empire: These two brothers had the command of two Provinces, which lay neer together; this neighbourhood gave occasion of quarrels, which coming to *Solymans* ears, with complaints of some who hated *Bajazet*, that he intended to invade the Empire, to destroy his brother *Selymus*, that he might not be destroyed by him, when hee should come to reign, and that he meant also to depose his old Father. Presently command is given by *Solyman*, that the two brothers should be removed from their Provinces, and two other assigned them, that might be of a greater distance. *Selymus* in obedience to his Father, accepted of his new Province, which *Bajazet* refused to do, and withal set up a false *Mustapha* against his Father, whereby he incurred his Fathers displeasure, and danger of strangling; but by the intreaty of *Roxellana*, he was reconciled to his son, who sending for him, checkt him severely for his insolency, both against him and his brother, wishing him not to use any sinistrous means to obtain the Empire; which if God had appointed for him, it should be his in spight of all the world; but if God had otherwise determined, all his labour in attaining to it, would be in vain: with this Stoical Doctrine, did he work upon his son awhile; then after he had acknowledged his fault, and begged pardon, a cup of liquour was presented to him which he was fearful to drink, thinking it had been poison; yet perceiving his mother looked cheerfully on him, did drink thereof, and his Father pledged him in the same cup. But afterward this *Bajazet* flew out again in rebellion, and was forced to flie into *Persia* for shelter, where he was apprehended and imprisoned; and at last upon the Turks intreaty, the *Persian* having received satisfaction for the hurt he had sustained by *Bajazet*, with a rich present from *Solyman*, delivers him up to *Halsan*, the Turks Agent, who caried him thence away by a Turkish Garison, and strangled him. The same fate of the Father fell upon his four sons also, who were all slain. This *Solyman* also having had good success against *Rhodes*, attempts *Malta* with a Fleet of 205 Sail; but *John Valet* the great Master, so stoutly with his forces defended it, by the assistance of *Garcas* the *Spanish* Admiral, that the Turks after six months siege, and the loss of twenty three thousand men, were forced with shame to depart, who wrackt their anger upon the Isle *Chios*, which had been in he possession of *Genua*, above 200 years; now it is brought under the Turkish yoke by *Pialis Bassa*. And though *Solymans* body grew weak by age, being now almost fourscore, yet his ambitious thoughts were not at all weakned, but even then being solicited by the *Transylvanian*, besiegeth *Sigethum*, a city in *Hungary*, with

An. Christi

An. Christ vvith 200 thouſand men, but in the midſt of his vain hopes, death cuts him off, having reigned 47 years, he vvas a Prince temperate in his diet, comely in perſonage, carefull of his vvord, and generous in his actions: his death vvas concealed by *Mahumet* Baſſai from the Soldiers, leaſt they ſhould be thereby diſheartned. About this time the *Tartars* beaking in upon *Hungary*, kept *Lazarus Suendius* from relieving the beſieged Towne vvhich at laſt vvas taken, but not without the loſs of 30000 *Turks* in a ſally made by *Nicholas Serinius*, vvho in that action was cut off with his Garriſon.

To *Solyman* ſucceeded his ſon *Selymus* 2d, he alſo ſends aid to the *Tranſylvanian* againſt *Hungary*; mean while *Suendius* takes divers Townes from the *Tartar*, whom he beats quite out of *Panonia*, then takes ſome Townes from the *Turk*, and enlargeth the Territories of *Ceſar Maximilian*, with whom *Selymus* makes a peace for 8 years; about which time *Cyprus* ſubmits to the *Turkiſh* yoke: For *Selymus* pretended that this Iſle was a member of the Kingdome of *Egypt*, whereof now he was ſupreme Lord; and that the *Venetians* in that regard paid a yearly tribute into his Exchequer; but now having falſified their faith to the *Turks*, they were bound to make reſtitution. The *Venetians* though much troubled at the burning of their *Arſenal* lately, yet reſolve not to looſe that noble Iſland which had now been one hundred years in their poſſeſſion; therefore they enter into league with Pope *Pius* 5th and the King of *Spain*, who rigg out a ſtrong Fleet into the ſea; but the ambition and quarrels of the Commanders ſtaying at *Crete*, loſt all opportunity of doing good; for in
1570 this interim *Cyprus* is waſted by *Muſtapha* and *Pialis* the *Turkiſh* Generals: Then the City *Nicoſia*, after a months ſiege is taken. *Famaguſta*, called *Salamis* of olde, having for eleven months ſtoutly ſuſtained all the *Turkiſh* aſſaults, at laſt yeilded upon honorable conditions, had they been as honorably obſerved by the barbarous infidel *Muſtapha*, who though he promiſed life, liberty and goods, yet moſt wickedly murthered thoſe whom by his Oath he ſhould have protected; he cauſed *Antoninus Bragadimus* his ears and noſe to be cut off, his body to be flead alive, and his skin to be ſtuft with ſtraw, and hanged at the main yard of his Galley: Of the *Venetians* that were bound for *Crete*, he made Gally-ſlaves, the chief priſoners and ſpoiles are ſent to *Selimus*, but a *Cyprian* Lady appointed for the *Sultans* luſt, ſet fire by ſome barrels of gunpowder on the two ſhips, that neither ſhe, nor the other priſoners, nor ſpoiles, were ever ſeen or enjoyed by *Selimus*. This Iſland the *Turks* bought at a dear rate, for they loſt about 60000 men in this War beſides what they loſt the year after, in the battel of *Lepanto*, at the Iſlands called *Echinadæ*, fought by the Chriſtian Fleet, under the command of *Don John* of *Auſtria*, *Charls* the 5th's baſtard. *Sebaſtian Venerus*, afterward Duke of *Venice*, and M. *Antonius Columna*, 25 thouſand *Turks* were then ſlain, and 4000 taken; 14 thouſand Chri-
1576 ſtian ſlaves were releaſed, the whole *Turkiſh* Fleet of 250 Saile, was either torne or taken; onely *Uluzal* with 30 Gallies eſcaped. And the year enſuing the Turkiſh Armado appeared whole and intire; ſo that a *Turk* compared wittily the loſs of *Cyprus*, to the loſs of an arm, which could never grow again; but the loſs of *Lepanto* to the ſhaving of ones haire, which will increaſe the thicker. Not long after the *Turks* take *Goletum* in *Africa*, from the *Spaniard* by *Sinan* Baſſai, beſides the new Fort, 500 pieces of Ordnance, and rich booties, upon the report of which good newes at *Conſtantinople*, *Selymus* died, having reigned 8 years; a little before his death he took *Moldavia* by treaſon, killed the *Vayvod* and annexeth it to *Walachia*.

To *Selymus* ſucceeded his ſon *Amurath* 3d | who began his reigne with the

the parricide of his 5 brothers, whom he cauſed to be murthered in his own preſence: He intends to make War upon the *Perſians*; over whom reigned *Iſmael* the ſon of *Techmaſes*, who alſo ſlew his brothers: He for his crueltie is poyſoned by his own ſiſter, and ſo *Mahumet Hodabandes* obtained his fathers Kingdome. Againſt him *Amurath* was incented, becauſe he fomented and maintained the *Aſſyrians* againſt the *Turks*; Beſides, *Amurath* had ſome Dreams animating him to raiſe arms againſt the *Perſians* as Hereticks. The *Tartars* and *Georgians*, or *Iberian* Chriſtians took part with the *Parthian* againſt the *Turk*. Theſe *Iberians* aided by the *Colchs*, *Armenians* and *Medes* had divers and doubtfull incounters with *Muſtapha* that cruel *Turkiſh* Generall: The firſt year of this War 70 thouſand *Turks* loſt their lives by the ſword, famin, and water, beſides the *European Tartars*, the *Turks* Auxiliaries were all cut off; wherefore *Muſtapha* is removed from his Generalſhip, and *Sinan* Baſſai is made chief Vilier or Counceller, whoſe ſucceſs in this War was no better then *Muſtapha's*, who fearing publick puniſhment, put violent hands on himſelf, his eſtate by this, fell to the *Sultan*. *Sinan* Baſſai alſo for his bad ſucceſs is put out of his place and baniſhed; neither was the luck of his ſucceſſor *Ferates* much better. About this time alſo the Præcopit *Tartars*, who inhabit *Taurica*, *Cherſoneſus*, of the *Turks* confederates are made their ſlaves, vvhich is the effect commonly of the *Turks* friendſhip. For becauſe *Mahumet* the *Tartar*, vvould not upon *Amurath's* perſwaſion aſſiſt Prince *Oſman* in his Wars, but went home pretending to ſuppreſs the *Coſſacks*, waſting and robbing by the *Euxin* ſea, therefore by *Oſman* Baſſai, and *Iſlan* the *Tartars* brother, now let out of priſon, he deprives *Mahumet* both of his life and Kingdome, and cauſed both his ſons to be ſtrangled with their father; So *Iſlan* is made Fiduciary King of theſe *Tartars*. But this *Mahumet* had one ſon vvho eſcaped, he raiſed an Army and recovered from *Iſlan* a good part of his fathers Kingdome: *Amurath* in the interim ſends *Oſman* againſt the *Parthians*, who in his journey had many diſaſtures, at laſt he eſcaped into *Tauriſium*, which he fenced, and 5 days after died of a Diſenterie, whilſt in the mean while *Amurath* being taken vvith a fit of the falling Sickneſs, to vvhich he vvas ſubject, had almoſt brained himſelf by the beating his head againſt the ſtones. In *Carneola*, *Amurath* is beaten by the Chriſtians, therefore is forced to renevv the peace with *Cæſar*. The *Turks* alſo in a battel vvith the *Parthians* which laſted 3 days and 3 nights, loſt about 80 thouſand men, and *Tauriſium*, one of the *Parthian* Regall Seats is recovered again by them: After this Victory, the *Parthian* King betakes himſelf to a privat life, and ſhortly after died. *Ibrahim* the *Ægyptian* Baſſai, ſubdues the *Maronits* of *Libanus*, and the *Truſi* of the Chriſtian profeſſion, vvho vvere never till now brought under the *Turks* yoke; but the *Panonian Turks*, whilſt they break in upon *Croatia*, are all cut off by the Chriſtians: Near *Siſſeca* 12 thouſand *Turks* vvere killed or drowned; but the *Grecian* Prætor to be revenged, came before *Siſſeca* with a great Army and took it: Divers other places are taken by them from the Chriſtians, and divers from them by the Chriſtians: Whilſt *Matthias*, *Tiefenbachius* and other Chriſtian Commanders in *Hungary* make War againſt the truce breaking *Turks* under *Serinius* and *Sinan*, *Amurath* weakned with leachery and fits of the ſtone, was conveyed by death to *Mahumets* Paradiſe, there to ſatiate himſelf with all kinde of carnall pleaſures; he reigned 21 years, in his time the *Turks* break the league twice with the *Hungarians*, for which the Baſſai of *Buda* is ſtrangled, and *Sinan* his ſucceſſor diſplaced. *Poland* alſo was by them invaded, with whom a peace is concluded. In a mutiny among the Janiſaries at *Conſtantinople* 15 thouſand houſes are burned: *Raſcia*, *Valachia* and *Moldavia* fall off from the *Turk*.

An. Chriſti 1587

To

An. Christi To *Amurath* 3d succeeded his son *Mahumet* 3d, who was circumcised by his father; He initiated his reigne with the murther of 18 of his brothers whom he strangled. The *Valachians* who had revolted, fought successfully against the *Turks*, *Strigon* and *Vicegrade* are taken by the Christians: *Feratus* was strangled for his wealth; and bad success together. *Lippa* is taken by the *Transylvanian*: *Sinan* in a sharp conflict is beaten, and loseth 10 thousand of his men; at last after many disastures he is driven beyond the river *Agrius*, where he died with age and grief: Upon whose death, *Mahumet* the *Sultan* marcheth toward *Hungary* with a great army, where he takes *Agria*, and defeats *Maximilian* at *Cassovia*, this great victory was obtanied 200 years after that other at *Nicopolis*: After this he returns triumphing to *Constantinople*; this victory cost him 50 thousand *Turks*. *Maximilian* lost 20000 with 120 pieces of Ordnance and all the baggage. *Omat* Bassai with 60 thousand *Turks* besiegeth *Varadin*, from whence he is beat off by the Christians with loss; *Mahumet* being informed that his *Sultanesse* did enquire of some Sooth-sayers what should be her sons fate,
1604 first caused his son to be strangled in her presence, and then commanded her to be flung into the sea, with such as were conscious of her curiositie; but the next year he paid dearly for this his crueltie; for the *Persian* took *Tauristum* from him. The Knights of *Malta* destroyed *Naupactum* and *Patra*: *Rusvormius* having cut off the *Turks* at *Pestum*, recovered *Hatuana*: The Sultan with his over-grown bellie, and goutie leggs, amongst his concubins and Catamits was surprised by a pestilentiall feaver, of which he died the 34 year of his age, having reigned 8 years: He had caused before he fell sick, all the wines in *Constantinople* to be staved, except those that belonged to the *French*, *English*, and *Venice* Ambassadors, upon a sedition of the Janizaries.

To *Mahumet* succeeded his son *Achmet* being yet under age. Upon intestin Wars between the *Hungarian* and *Transylvanian*, raised by *George Basta*; *Pestum* is regained by the *Turks*, and so is *Strigonium* which had been 10 years in the possession of *Rodulphus*. *Achmet* made 20 years peace with *Cæsar*: *Matthias* having obtained *Hungary*, confirmed the peace. 20000 *Turks* are overthrown by the *Persians* at *Babylon*; they have divers encounters, and various success in the *Mediterranean* sea with the *Florentins* and *Malteses*; *Baterius* being accused before the *Sultan*, that he held cor-
1613 respondence with *Cæsar*, and purposed to deliver up *Datia* to him; therefore the *Turk* resolves first to set up *Andrew Gretzius*, then *Bethleem Gabor* as Fiduciarie Prince of *Dacia*; then he makes a truce for a time with the *Parthian*. He also renewes the 20 years peace with *Cæsar*, that he might be without disturbance, revenged on the *Cossacks*, who having wasted the chief Cities of *Muscovia*, and many places in *Tartary*, they burned 24 Turkish Gallies in the Black sea: And being threatned by the Sultan, grew more insolent; so that they over-run *Thracia*, plundring all, even almost to the Walls of *Byzantium*; they waste also *Bithynia* and *Paphlagonia*, and destroy *Trapezund*, with it's Harbour, Gallies and Arsenall; they burn *Sinope* of *Pontus*, and so laden with rich bootie, return to *Sarmatia* or *Poland*. *Achmet* sends to the King of *Poland* to have restitution for these losses, whose answer vvas that he vvas ignorant of those passages: But that the *Turk* could not revenge himself upon the *Polander*, vvas, by reason of the *Persian*, vvho prevailed mightily in *Asia*, for by the revolt of a *Turkish* Bassai, he did waste vvith fire and sword the Sultan's Territories far and near; and had almost driven the *Georgian* King out of his Dominion, for adhering to the Sultan.

In the sixteenth year of this last century, the Turks had many disasters both by sea and land; for in the *Mediterranian* they vvere beaten by the

the *Spaniards*, *Florentins*, and *Malteſſes* in *Mœotis* by the *Coſſacks*, in *Aſia* by the *Perſians*, where they loſt 40000 by the plague and the ſword: But being aſſiſted by the *Tartars*, they invade *Podolia*, and drove thence great booties. After this *Achmet* died in the 14 year of his government: In his time there died of the plague in one year at *Conſtantinople* 200000. The *Florentin* put to flight and took 42 *Turkiſh* Gallies; In one of which taken by them were 300 ſlaves. A Derviſiar is ſlain for throwing a ſtone at the Sultan: The Caſtle of *Lango* was taken by the *Florentin*: The *Jews* expelled *Pera*, Traffique granted to the *Hollanders* out of the *Turks* ill will to *Spain*: 7 *Turkiſh* Gallies taken by the Viceroy of *Sicily*. The Baſſai of *Sidon* for favouring the *Florentin*, is purſued by *Achmet*, whereupon he flyeth to *Florence* with 14 00 weight of gold. *Naſſuff* Baſſai is executed for holding intelligence with the *Perſian*. *Façaia*, the ſuppoſed ſon of *Mahumet* 3d, joyned with the *Aſiatick* rebels, hoping thereby to recover his right: *Achmet* beſides his *Circaſian* Sultaneſſe, maintained 400 Concubins, he died the 30 year of his age. *An. Chriſti* 1616

Achmet dying, reſignes the Government to his brother *Muſtapha*, who had been ſhut up in a Cell to follow his devotions; ſo being preferred to his brother *Achmets* ſons performes his Funerall Ceremonies, but he was envied for his auſterity, and held unfit for ſo great a burthen as the Government of that Monarchy, therefore after three months is ſent back to his old Priſon: And *Oſman* being now twelve years of age, is made Sultan; a youth of a fervent ſpirit. 1617

The *Turks* to be revenged on the *Coſſacks*, break in upon *Podolia*, where they defeat the Governor of that Countrey with three thouſand men. In *Aſia* they had a great battel with the *Perſians*, which was ſo bloody to both parties, that though the *Perſian* had the better, yet was contented to ſue for peace, which was granted upon the payment of an yearly Tribute of ſilk ſtuffs to the *Turk*; who now being ſecure of the *Parthian*, falls upon *Valachia* and *Moldavia*, by the aſſiſtance of the *Tartars*, becauſe the *Vayvod Gratian*, had conſpired with the *Polander* againſt the *Turks*, therefore *Oſman* endeavoured to deſtroy him; for this cauſe he ſends *Campagius* as his Lieutenant. Two battels are fought, in the firſt the *Polonian* prevailed, and *Campagius* is killed; In the ſecond the *Turks* have the better, and *Gratian* with his *Auxiliaries* cut off: Hereupon *Oſman* turns the *Poland Ambaſſador* out of his Court, and denounceth open war againſt him, who at the ſame time was like to be murthered by a Villain. In *Moldavia* a battell is fought, wherein the *Turks* defeat the *Polander*: But the next *March* Prince *Ladiſlaus* with fifty thouſand falls furiouſly upon the *Barbarians*, and utterly defeats them: *Oſman* being highly inraged at this, brings an army of three hundred thouſand into *Moldavia*, but againſt the will of his friends. *Ladiſlaus* with ſixty thouſand *Polanders* and *Germans*, defends the borders of his Kingdome, untill his Father *Sigiſmund* ſhould bring the whole body of the *Polonian* horſe: The two armies facing each other, *Oſman* aſſaults the *Polander*, and ſtrives to ſhut up the *Coſſacks*: So great was the ſlaughter on both ſides, that the *Turk* being out of hope to proceed any further, propoſeth peace upon equall conditions, which the *Polander* gladly accepted of, all his proviſions being ſpent, ſo that he had ſcarce enough left for one day. Of the *Polanders* and *Germans* were ſlain about 12 thouſand, beſides many that died of the ſickneſs: Of the *Turks* were killed about one hundred thouſand, and as many more that died by other accidents. About two years after *Oſman* the Sultan being ſuſpected that he would change the Militia and undertake a tedious pilgrimage to *Mahumets* Sepulchre, is forſaken by his Janizaries, and his Uncle *Muſtapha* reſtored to the Government; who fearing leaſt he might be depoſed again as before, cauſed *Oſman* preſently to be ſtrangled; which done, he ſends to *Cæſar* an Embaſſador for confirming 1618 1620 1621

An. Christi the peace; and assists *Turren* the elder to waste and plunder *Moravia*, but shortly after he is forced by the Janizaries to quit his government, and to give place to *Amurath* 4. *Osmans* brother being 16 years of age; so in the space of 16 months, *Turkie* saw three Sultans, whose large bribes exhausted the treasury: For the Spachi and Janizaries esteem their Emperors according to their bribes and donatives.

The tumults of *Turkie* fell heavie upon the greatest and wealthiest men, whose baggs were emptied and estates plundered. *Arzironius* Bassai to punish the Janizaries insolencies, in offering to put their Lord to death, raised a formidable army in *Asia*, with which he threatned and affrighted the Royall City: The *Persians* laying hold on this opportunity, brake 10
1625 in upon the *Turkish* dominions, seiseth on *Babylon*, layeth siege to *Edessam* of *Mesopotamia*. *Arziron* besiegeth *Prusia* and *Augeronia*: A great army is sent against the *Parthian*, which by him is much weakned and shaken. The *Tartars* to be revenged on the *Cossacks*, for the wrongs done by them to the *Hungarian Turks* break in upon *Podolia*: Their first expedition succeeded wel; but in the second they were drawn into an Ambuscado by the *Polander*, who killed multitudes of them. The Sultan understanding that *Sias Abas* the *Parthian* King, and husband of 800 Concubins was dead, resolves to make a lasting & firm peace with the *Parthians*: therefore caused *Arzironius* to submit, whom he made Governor of *Bosnia* then he sets *Tambetus Girain* at liberty from his prison at *Rhodes*, and having defeated 20
his competitor, makes him again King of *Tartary*. The *French* Ambassador who was imprisoned by *Mustapha* upon the escape of Prince *Coresky* the *Moldavian* out of the Black Tower, was released by *Osman*. About which time the *Turks* take *Manfredonia* in *Sicily*, and *Vats* in *Hungary*, notwithstanding the peace; Prince *Coresky* is apprehended and strangled in prison: After two years of durance, he was a Lord of *Poland*, taken prisoner in the last war. The *Turks* Gallies return from the Black Sea with 170 poor *Cossacks* in triumph: The great Defterdar or Treasurer of *Turky* is strangled and flung out in his shirt into the streets; for being too rich. The Sultan flatters the *Tarter* to enter *Poland*, but could not pre- 30
vail: The *Georgians* defeat the *Persians*, and send many of their heads to the Port; wherefore presently a league is made with those *Georgians*: 8000 *Persians* defeated by the *Turks* neare *Mosul*, or *Ninivie*; at the siege of *Babylon* were killed between 5 and 6000 *Turks*: Newes also comes
1626 to the Port from *Babylon*, that the *Persians* had besieged the Viziers camp now in great distress for want of provision, which caused at *Constantinople* great distempers; the Janizaries also mutinie against *Bostangi* Bassai, for beating one of their order by the Sultans command, who could not be appeased by the Sultans intreatie, till the Bassai was displaced. *Tartarian* by the *Turks* instigation invades *Podolia*; but returning thence 40
with much bootie, is defeated, with loss of his army. The *Cossacks* upon this prepare 703 Frigots to fall upon the Sultans armado, which caused great fear in *Constantinople*; but by the mediation of the King of Great *Britains* Ambassador, who had made a peace between the *Polanders* and *Turks*, the differences were taken off: Another mutiny this year is raised among the Janizaries against the old *Chimacham George Mehemet* Bassai, whom the Sultan (who would fain have protected him) was forced to deliver up to their fury, who first strangled him, and then cut off his eares and nose, carrying them about in Triumph; some other great Officers 50
also they execute in spite of the grand Seignior; nor were they yet pacified, for those Janizaries who had no hand in the death of these men, in a tumultuous way flock to the *Seraglio* petitioning with threatnings that the Sultan would do Justice on *Segman* Bassai, Lieutenant to their *Aga*, and others who had bin authors of the last murthers and mutinies;

mutinies, the Sultan is brought out into his Court, and placed in his Throne, who at last with good words and wholsome advice pacifieth the tumult, *Segman* Bassai's head is cut off before the Court doore, by the Sultan's command, afterward divers Spachi and Janizaries, were strangled and flung into the Sea. *An. Christ*

About this time the Prince of *Dacia* to make his credit the greater, procures the Sultan to write a Letter to the King and Princes united for the liberty of *Germany*, that they would persevere in the union, and hold correspondencie with *Bethlem Gabor*, and the Visier or Governor of *Buda*. The King of Great *Britain* also sends a Letter to the Great *Turk*, concerning the Treaty of *Algier* and *Tunis*, complaining also of divers wrongs done to his Subjects, and requiring Justice. To which the *Turk* by his Letter answers, that there shall be nothing wanting in him towards the maintaining of peace and union between themselves and their Merchants, that satisfaction shall be made for wrongs done, and prevention used for the future: Overtures of peace are made by the Viceroy of *Naples* in the King of *Spaine's* name with the Great *Turk*, and promises to set free all *Turkish* slaves, to secure the Sultan's Subjects in the *Mediterranian* Sea, to serve *Turky* with East-*India* Commodities, by the Red Sea, and to procure the King of *Poland* to restrain the *Cossacks*, from making excursions into the Black Sea; but this negotiation came to nothing, being found fraudulent, and onely to affright *Gabor*, and to divert the *Turks* Forces from aiding the enemies of the house of *Austria*. At *Babylon* the *Turks* fled in the night, burned their Tents, and flung their Artillery in *Euphrates*; the *Persian* pursuing, killed multitudes of them. 1627
The next year *Gemon* in *Arabia* revolts from the *Turk*: A great fleet is sent into the *Euxin* Sea to shut in the *Cossacks*, in the interim six Gallies of the D. of *Tuscany* took a Gallion with some lesser Ships of the *Caire* fleet with rich booty, which caused 12 Gallies to be recalled from the Black Sea, to pursue the *Tuscans*; which they did, overtook them, and recovered their Ships with the bootie: A *Persian* Ambassador arrives at the Port with overtures of peace, and complaints are made against the *English* for some wrongs done by them to some *Turkish* Ships in the Red and *Persian* Seas; whereupon the King's Ambassadors sent Letters to the *English* for restitution: Mean while the *Persians* besiege *Achisca*, take it, and kill 3000 Janizaries. The newes of the King of *Denmarks* defeat, the *Cesarians* hastned both the *Turk* and *Gabor*, to make their peace with the Emperor, it was articled that *Gabor* should be true and faithfull to the Emperor; that he with his Army shall depart out of *Cæsar's* Territories, that restitution be made to *Cæsar* of places, goods, and persons taken lately by the Prince; and that the Princes Subjects shall do homage to the Emperor. In the peace between *Cæsar* and the Sultan, it was agreed that the new Forts built on the confines of *Croatia* should be demolished, that all complaints be laid aside, no wrongs offered, satisfaction for losses made, and captives to be restored, and Merchants to have free trade. *Halil* Bassai, Generall of the *Turk's* Forces in *Asia* is raised from the siege of *Arzirum*, with the loss of his rear Canon and Baggage, and with a mutiny in his Army: This defeat was given by *Abassa* Bassai; the Sultan was much discontented at this report; yet resolves to prosecute the war; therefore sends a new Generall, and causeth new Ordnance to be cast in his own presence, hoping now to bring *Abassa* Bassai the revolted *Turk* to obedience. Not long after the *Tarta Han* is openly declared a rebell and enemy to the *Turkish* Empire: Sir *Thomas Roe* the *English* Ambassador at the Port is called home, after some contestations between him and the *French* Agent, about the Jesuits, which by his procurement, and the other *Romish* Orders in *Turky* were banished the *Turk's* Dominions, except two which the *French* Ambassador retained for his own Familie: The Jesuits order had been 25 years at *Galata*, they first quar- 1628

An. Christi relling with *Cyrillus* Patriarch of *Constantinople*, for maintaining the Doctrine of the *Greek* Church, (which the Pope by his Emissaries out of the *Greek* Colledge in *Rome*, erected by *Gregory*, endeavoured to subvert) procured the deposition of *Cyril*, and the instalment of another. Then *Cyril* being restored to his place, they got him to be banished and imprisoned, who afterward clearing himself, was re-established; upon this the *French* Ambassador, got the stamp brought from *England*, for Printing of some Bookes of the *Greek* Faith, to be plundred: but this being restored again by the *Vizier*, upon complaint made by the *English*, the Jesuits are seized on, and sent away in ships, with all their books and goods.

1629 The new erected *Vizier Husseruph Bassa*, in the place of *Halil Bassa*, passeth over with his Army into *Asia*, where his success was so bad before *Bagdat*, that he lost the third part of his Army; whereupon a new *Vizier*, *Halis Achmat Bassa*, is made: some contestation fell out this year between the *English* and *Turks*, at Sea, which procured some intercourse of Letters, and Complements between the *Turk* and King *Charles* of Great *Britain*; and so the differences were reconciled. The old *Vizier* is displaced, and a Cessation of the War with *Persia* for two years, is published. *Halis Achmat Bassa* is made *Vizier*, to the discontent of the *Janizaries* who hated him, therefore one day
1630 they knockt him down from his Horse with stones; and though the *Sultan* came in person and interceded for him, yet nothing would satisfie but his life; which in the *Sultans* presence, they barbarously took away, by tearing him in pieces. And the next morning they enter the *Seraglio*, and demand the *Muffti*, with some other of their Officers of *State*, to be delivered up to them, whose lives by the *Sultans* intreaty, were spared, but their places taken away. These tumults were raised by the instigation of *Husreff Bassa*, who was discontented for being deposed: He was well beloved of the soldiers for his bounty, therefore *Mortesa Bassa* hath secret instructions given him by the *Sultan* to strangle *Husreff*, and to send his Head privately to the grand Seignour; which was done accordingly, yet not so secretly, but that the knowledge thereof came to the soldiers ears, who presently assemble, and rudely enter the house of the *Vizier*. *Regeb Bassa*, who shewing that he had no hand nor knowledge in the murther, is forced to go with them to the *Sultan*, and to know of him who were the murtherers of *Husreff*: they stay all the while in the outward Yard; he in the Evening returns and assures them, that the *Sultan* would
1631 satisfie them the next Morning. Then they gave out that the *Sultan* had murthered his third Brother, but when they were brought forth alive before them, they were for that night quieted. The next morning they assemble again, and demand the *Sultans* Favorite to be delivered to them, which was done; him presently they tore in pieces, because the *Sultans* affection was greatly towards him: then they fall into a new suspition, that the *Sultan* had caused his three brothers to be murthered, after he had presented them to the soldiers; and upon this they break into his Chamber, expostulating with him for the death of *Husreff*, and desiring the sight again of his three brothers, whom when they saw, they rejoyced, recommending them to his favour, and the care of his Officers. The next Morning, the *Aga* of the *Janizaries*, who had hid himself, being found, was delivered by the *Sultan* to them, who tore him in
1631 pieces, and hanged up divers of his limbs in several places of the Town. All strangers during this storm, lay close within their own Houses. The Dutch Ambassadors House was assaulted, and so was the French, about some *Turkish*
1632 ships taken and made Prizes, but the matter after some debate, is referred to a Trial in Law.

About this time *Elem Bassa* rebelled against the *Sultan*, and spoiled all the Country near *Smyrna*, so that the Consul and Merchants were forced to Transport themselves, and goods to *Scio*. This Rebellion was suppressed

preſſed by an army ſent thither from the Sultan. *Regeb* Baſſai the Viſier, who was thought the firſt acter in theſe troubles, is ſtrangled in the *Seraglio*, without any mutiny of the Soldiers, becauſe moſt of them were abroad upon ſervice. The year following was memorable for the fight between two *Engliſh* ſhips in the Bay of *Caſſandra*, and 30 *Turks* Gallies. *An. Chriſti*

In this fight the *Engliſh* Ships took fire and were burned, divers were killed; the two Maſters, *Harris* and *Wilde* with 60 more, indeavouring to get to ſhore, were taken and put to the Oare. Of the *Turks* were ſlain 1700. the Captain Baſſai hurt, and many Gallies made unſerviceable. King *Charls* upon the earneſt deſire of the *Engliſh* Ambaſſadors, wrote to the Sultan in behalf of the Captives, and for puniſhing of the Captain Baſſai, but to little purpoſe; the King therefore to pacifie the *Turk*, ordered that no *Engliſh* ſhould trade in corn within the *Levant*: Mean while the two Captains died. A great fire this year hapned in *Byzantium*, which conſumed ſome thouſands of houſes; and the *Perſian* war is renewed: The great Viſier is ſent forth with a part of the Militia, who durſt not encounter the *Perſians*, but withdrew himſelf by the way of *Aleppo*, where he ſhewed his Juſtice upon a corrupted Judge or Cadee, whom for his wealth and briberie he ſent in fetters to be a ſlave in *Cyprus*; having firſt cut his haire, then he confiſcates his great eſtate for the Sultans uſe: A great fear fell upon all the ſtrangers in *Byzantium* this year; for their houſes were ſuddenly ſealed up: A *Venetian* Merchant was carried up to the Turret on his houſe, and there hanged, a red Flag being put out to let the Sultan know that execution was done: The 4 Ambaſſadors of *France*, *England*, *Venice* and *Holland*, were carried to the Arſenall, and accuſed for building new houſes with Chappels without the Sultan's leave; wherefore the *French* Chappel is commanded to be pulled down, which was done the next day: The Merchants are impriſoned, and are forced to pay 2000 dollars apiece for their ranſome: The *Engliſh* payment came to 20000 dollars, the 4 Ambaſſadors are again convented, and deſired to deliver up what arms they had in their houſes upon pain of death; all other ſorts of people were exacted upon, but at laſt the Sultan perceiving his error, and danger he was brought in if this Tyrannicall act ſhould be known abroad, promiſed to make reſtitution of other arms, though not of the ſame that were taken (this not conſiſting with his honor) and ſatisfaction for the monys ſeiſed on, excuſing his fact, as being done of want, urged to raiſe money for his neceſſitie. Theſe troubles at laſt were known to proceed from the *French* Ambaſſadors debts, which they neglected to pay, though money was raiſed in *Marſelles* to that purpoſe; this made the Creditors call to the Sultan for Juſtice. 1633

The Sultan fearing a new inſurrection of the Janizaries, cauſed the *Muffti* who had all this while protected himſelf under the great *Turk*, from their fury, to be put to death; whereby they were quickly appeaſed. The Sultan prepares a great Army againſt *Poland*, for ſome outrages committed by the *Polacks* and *Coſſacks*; this great army marched to *Adrianople*, where they ſtaid 40 days, till the meſſenger returned from *Poland*, whom the Sultan ſent with certain Articles of peace; which were hearkned to by the *Polander*, and ſo the Army is disbanded. The *French* Ambaſſador for ſome miſdemeanors is ſent home by the Sultans command, with his Declaration that he meant to keep all fair correſpondency with the *French* King, and the other Princes, whoſe Ambaſſadors lay at *Conſtantinople*. The Captain Baſſai is preferred and ſent Baſſai to *Buda*: The Sultan reſolves with all the ſtrength he could make to weaken the *Perſians* greatneſs, therefore goeth in perſon with a numerous army; intending alſo by this to weaken his unruly *Janizaries*, and to keep them from mutinies by ſuch imployments: In this expedition he took *Reivan*, a place of conſequence; then marching as far as *Tauris*, rageth with fire and ſword without reſiſtance; ſo having loſt divers men with want and ſickneſs, 1634 1635

An. Christi ſickneſs, returns with more triumph then conqueſt. The *Sultan* was no ſooner returned, but news came that the *Perſian* with a great Army beſieged *Reivan*. An Army is diſpatched to raiſe the ſiege, but before they came, being hindred by their *Byram*, or lent, the Town is taken, and the *Turks* in it put to
1636 the ſword, or ranſom. The *Janizaries* finding that the *Sultan* was not affected to them, by employing them againſt the *Perſians*, from whom little was to be had, but blows; and that by theſe means he meant to weaken and wear them out, they reſolve ſoon to depoſe him, others to put him to death. The *Sultan* perceiving this, flings a ſop among them to keep them from biting or barking. He diſtributes large ſums, and ſo mitigates their anger, and procures his own ſafety.

CHAP. XXII.

The Affaires of France *under* Charls 6th Charls 7th, *and* Lewis 11th, *from the year* 1407, *till the year* 1483, *enterwoven with the Hiſtory of* Burgundy, *and other bordering places.*

WE have ſhewed how during the indiſpoſition of *Charls* the ſixt: The Duke of *Burgundy* cauſed the Duke of *Orleans* to be murthered, and how he fled into his own Countrey of *Flanders*, where he found an Army ready, which
1407 he conducted againſt the *Ligeois*, becauſe they would not receive the Biſhop, who being of a great houſe, and near in kin to the Duke of *Bavere*, and brother to the Earl of *Henault* and *Holland*, would not receive any higher order, then of a Subdeacon, abhorring the title of Prieſt, upon hopes of attaining ſome rich poſſeſſions, which ſo troubled the *Ligeois*, that rather then they would admit him, they gave battel to the Duke of *Burgundy*, who killed 17 thouſand of their men upon the place, and utterly defeated them. Mean while the Duke of *Orleans* his widow makes her addreſſes to the King for Juſtice on the Duke of *Burgundy*, for the murther of her husband the Kings brother: *Burgundy* hearing of this, repaires to *Paris* with a great train of armed men, where he pleaded for the Juſtice of his act in killing him, who endeavoured to kill the King, and had by witchcraft or poyſon brought him into this diſtemper, purpoſly that he might attain the Crown; The King though he
1409 diſliked the murther, yet pardons the murtherer becauſe of his greatneſs, which was ſo much the more in that the Dolphin had married his daughter; wherefore in a manner he governed both King and Kingdom. The young D. of *Orleans* fortifies *Burges*, which *Burgundy* attempts to take, but could not, a little while after, a peace is made between them and the *Engliſh* who came to aid *Orleans*, are diſmiſſed without their pay: They in anger caried with them the young Count of *Angoleſme*, *Orleans* his brother into *England*, where he was kept 32 years. Mean while *France* is full of troubles by reaſon of the King's weakneſs, the Duke of *Burgundie's* greatneſs, the heavy taxes laid on
1412 the people, which the Duke promiſed to take off, and the *Engliſh* Forces in *Normandy*, who had already taken *Caen*, and *Cherbourg*, and were now before *Rohan*. *Burgundy* having got one of the gates of *Paris* by the treachery of *John de Villiers*, to be opened to him, enters with a party of horſe, and ſeiſeth on the King; the Dolphin eſcaped, a great maſſacre is committed, for all thoſe who had not the Saint *Andrews* Croſs (which was the badg of *Burgundy*) were murthered, among which were Count *Armignac Conſtable*, and *Henry de Marle* Chanceller; who there loſt their lives: This taking of *Paris* cauſed almoſt all the reſt of the Kingdome to ſide with *Burgundy*. The

Dolphin

Dolphin finding the troubles of *France* could not end without the death of the *Burgundian*; made means to have a Parley with him; which being granted, the Duke is presently murthered by the Dolphin; whereupon *Philip*, *Burgundie's* son, to be revenged for his Father's death, enters into league with the King of *England*, who at that time had taken *Rohan* by Famin, after 7 months siege, and withall delivers up to him *Paris*, *Charters*, *Troy* in *Champanie*, the King, Queen, and their yong daughter *Catherin*; then he cites the Dolphin to appear at *Paris*, there to be tried for this murther, but he not appearing, nor any for him, is declared unworthy to succeed to the Crown, having treacherously murthered so great a Prince against his Oath, and under pretence of friendship and union; besides he married Princess *Catherin* by her Father the King's consent to King *Henry* of *England*, and was contented that if King *Charles* die, King *Henry* should succeed to the Crown of *France*, and his sons by *Katherin* after him. *An. Christi* 1418

King *Henry* as Regent of *France* takes in some Towns, and leaves his brother the Duke of *Clarence*, to guide the kingdom, till he should return from *England*, whither he was going; the Duke upon this, marcheth out of *Roven*, with an Army, and sits down before *Angiers*, which he could neither induce to fight, nor to yeild. At last setting upon some Troops of *French* and *Scots*, who held with the *Dolphin*, is slain in the place by them, and many of his men taken prisoners, the rest fled, and saved themselves by carying the White Crosse, the Colours of *France*, till they came to *Normandy*. King *Henry* upon the news of his brothers death, returns into *France*, where he shortly after died, and King *Charles* followed about fifty three days after. *Katherin* King *Henries* Widow, maried with *Owen Tudar*, a Welch Gentleman. In this *Charles* his time, the *French* reduced the *Millanois* that had rebelled, to obedience of the Dutchess his brothers wife. This King gave the Dutchy of *Nemours* to the King of *Nevar*. The *Dolphin* and *John* his Brother died, and *Charles* the youngest succedeth. This mad King reigned forty two years. 1420

To him succeeded *Charles* 7. at the age of 21. He contained himself sometime within *Berry*; wherefore in mockery, he was called by his adversaries, King of *Berry*: yet he used the Title and Seal of *France*, though not as yet consecrated at *Rhemes*. Whilest he was in his chief troubles with the *English*, a maid eighteen years of age, born in a Village of *Lorrain*, where she used to keep Sheep, came to him, shewing him that she was sent by God to raise the siege of *Orleans*: the King wondring at this, caused her to be examined by his Clergy, who perceiving her constant and resolute, perswade the King to give her Arms, and some Troops of Horse, which was done accordingly; with these she relieves the Town, raiseth the Siege, which had continued seven moneths, and defeats the *English*, after they had taken divers Towns, and in sundry Skirmishes beaten the *French*. About this time the *Burgundian* marieth with *Isabel*, daughter to King *John* of *Portugal*; and King *Charls* of *France* at *Rhemes*, is consecrated, whence he marcheth with his Army to *Paris*: the Duke of *Bedford* did good service for *England*, but lost his life before *Orleans* with a shot from the Town; the Maid also received a wound in relieving the Town. After this, she was taken by the *English* at the siege of *Compend*, which she had relieved; but as she sallied out, fell into the hands of her Enemies, who burned her for a Witch. After this, the *English* are defeated by the Bastard of *Orleans*; but the next year they take *Pontarson*, and the *French* Turnay, the Masculine Propheteſs, that was burned by the *English* is honoured by the *Orleanois* with a brass Statue on their Bridge. The *English* to countenance their cause, sends for *Henry* the sixt, son to *Henry* 5. of *Katherin*, and Crowns him at *Paris*, being twelve years old. Mean while King *Charles* takes *Carnutes*, or *Chartres*, by a Stratagem. An Ambuscadoe was made 1422 1423 1427 1432

An. Christi made in the dark, close by the gate: in the morning a Carter is sent with Fish, who offering to sell them to the Town, got the Porter to open the gate; in break, they that lay in Ambush, and made way for the rest of the Army, who put all to the Sword that bore Arms, even the Bishop of that place, because a *Burgundian*.

Charles being nothing dismayed at the *English* proceedings, goeth on in taking in of Towns, and the rather because he finds Duke *Philip* grow slack in maintaining the *English* cause. *France* in the interim is in a miserable condition. Multitudes fall off from the *English* to the *Burgundian*, whose anger was now pretty well satiated with blood and misery. A Peace therefore is
1435 now propounded at *Artebates*, or *Aras*, the *French* Gentry remonstrating that they had no hand in the death of the Dukes Father, and that *France* had now sufficiently smarted for that murther. The Duke was willing to hearken to Peace, but the *English* in regard of their Title to *France*, could not be satisfied; so their Ambassadors went away without effecting any thing: it was then agreed between the King and Duke, that the King should build a Church in the place where the Dukes Father was killed, should place Canons in it, to do service, and appoint sufficient maintenance for them. Besides the King bestows on him and his heirs, the Cities of *Mascon*, and S. *Gengon*, with all their priviledges and dependances; The County of *Auxeure* to him and his son *Philip* onely, for which they were to swear fealty, and do Homage to the Crown of *France*. Upon the same conditions, he and his son should have the Towns above the River of *Somme*; so low was the *French* King brought, and so Potent a Prince was this Duke, that he was glad upon any tearms to disjoin him from the *English*; divers also of these places were in the *English* possession. Upon the report of this agreement, the *Parisians* under-hand, send to the *French* Commanders abroad, that if they would procure their pardon, the City should be delivered up to them; which being promised, and at the time appointed an Army ready at the Gates, the chief Citizens crying aloud in the streets, *France*, *France*, all the people presently take Arms: the *English* being amazed at this, and seeing the *French* Army breaking in all the Gates, presently fly for shelter to the *Bastile*. The streets are chained, all the *English*, and their adherents, that could be found, men, women, and children, were massacred. These in the *Bastile* yeilded upon promise of life, and safe conduct to the next Towns held by the *English*. *Burgundy* besiegeth *Calice*, but could doe no good, because of the unrulines of his own soldiers, and some differences that fell out between him and his subjects at *Bruges*; wherefore he brings his Army straight thither. He was let into the Town, and so many as they thought they could master; the rest were excluded: but the soldiers within, breaking open one of their Gates, got out again, and so kept the Town from all provision, that they were forced to beg pardon of the Duke bare headed, and bare footed, and withall to pay him a great sum of money. In the interim, the *French* are now in case to send Forces into *Italy*, for recovering of *Naples*, albeit the *English* as yet were not quite driven out of *France*.

About this time *Lewis* 3d, whom Queen *Jane* of *Naples* adopted, died, and *Jane* her self the year after. *Ferdinand* of *Arragon*, is advised by his friends to go for *Naples*; but they who stood for *Anjou*, counsel the Duke of *Bar*, Brother to the said *Lewis*, is wished to hasten thither, upon hopes he might prevail before the rest, because Queen *Jane* had named his Brother heir to the Crown. But he was prisoner to the *Burgundian*, who had raised his ransome to a greater sum then was at first demanded, because now he was Duke of *Anjou*, and Earl of *Province*, by the death of his Brother *Lewis*. Therefore that he might take the speedier order for his ransome, is set at liberty upon his Parol, which he was careful to perform. But his wife *Isabel*, a Princess

of

of great courage, goeth into *Province* with her two ſons, raiſeth men, and pro- *An. Chriſti*
videth Veſſels for her Tranſportation to *Naples*; from whence *Alphonſus* was repulſed by the contrary Faction to the Iſle of *Iſchia*. But recruting himſelf with more ſupplies, he beſiegeth *Cajet* both by Sea and Land. The *Genuois* who had great ſtore of wealth in that Town, and who ſtood for *Anjou*, deſire help from *Philip* Duke of *Millan*, under whoſe protection they were. *Philip* ſends help by Land, the *Genuois* by Sea: *Alphonſus* raiſeth all the ſtrength he can in *Spain*, *Sicily*, and *Naples*; to wit, nineteen great ſhips, three Gallies, and one Gallion: the *Genuois* were ſcarce half ſo many, either in number, or greatneſs of Veſſels: the fight was ſharp, and doubtful at firſt, but at length, ſome of the *Genua* ſhips getting the wind of the Enemy, fell ſo furiouſly upon the *Arragon* Admiral, where the King and his Brother, the King of *Navarre* were, with ſix hundred ſoldiers; that both the Kings were forced to yeild. So the ſiege upon the report of this defeat, is raiſed from *Naples*: the two Kings and three hundred *Donns*, are led away priſoners to *Millan*, where they are moſt magnificently received, entertained, and diſmiſſed with rich Preſents by the Duke, to whom King *Alphonſus* ſheweth reaſons why *Millan* ſhould rather hold with *Arragon* then *Anjou*, becauſe at laſt *France* will become Maſters of *Millan*, whoſe diſpoſitions doe not ſort ſo well with the *Millanois*, as thoſe of *Arragon* do, as was obſerved by *John Galeas* the laſt Duke of *Millan*.

Mean while *Iſabel* Dutcheſs of *Anjou*, arrives at *Cajet*, and from thence at *Naples*, where ſhe aſſembles all the chief of her Faction; but *Burgundy* would not releaſe Duke *Rene* her Husband, till he had delivered up *Caſſel* for his Ranſom. At which the *Genuois* ſtormed, who were in good hope the two Captive Kings ſhould have paid the Dukes Ranſom, therefore were mad, that they ſhould obtain a victory to their great coſt and pains, and Duke *Philip* ſhould have the honour of it; of whom they complain for diſmiſſing the priſoners without Ranſom, and for uſing the *Genuois* (hitherto a free people, and who had made the remote Princes, and Kings of the Eaſt afraid of them) as ſlaves. Hereupon they revolt, and aſſume their former liberty; then with their Gallies they accompany Duke *Rene* to *Naples*, where they made him to be Crowned preſently. Which Act was approved and ratified by Pope *Eugenius*, for which cauſe he was hated by the Duke of *Millan*, and *Alphonſus* King of *Arragon*, who beſiegeth *Naples* again, and in it Duke *Rene* of *Anjou*; but the City was ſo ſtoutly defended, that *Arragon* was fain to raiſe the ſiege, having loſt his brother by a Canon Bullet from the walls. But before the ſiege was quite raiſed, a Runegado out of the City ſhews *Alphonſus* a paſſage through a common ſhoar or kennel; by this the *Arragonians* enter the City, *Anjou* flies to the Caſtle, where having little hopes, makes his Compoſition with *Alphonſus*, and ſo returns by *Florence*, where he ſaluted the Pope into *France*. There he finds his brother Prince *Charles* in ſo great favour 1440
with the King, that the whole Kingdom was ruled by his Councel, which offended divers great men, who adviſed the young *Dolphin* to take Arms againſt his Father; but this plot was quickly quaſhed, the Counſellors puniſhed, and the *Dolphin* pardoned, who not long after cauſed the *Engliſh* to raiſe their ſiege from *Deep*. The Duke of *Burgundy* to take away all occaſion of future broils in *France*, reſolves to reconcile himſelf to the Duke of *Orleans*, now a priſoner in *England* twenty five years; for this cauſe he imploys his wife, the daughter of *Portugal*, who made means by her Ambaſſadors, to have a parley with the King of *England*, on the borders of *Flanders*. An overture was made of Peace, but could not take effect: At length ſhe obtains ſo much favour as to ſee the Duke of *Orleans*, who was preſently ſent for to *Calice*. There ſhe wrought upon him to forget all by-paſt injuries, and to marry with *Mary* daughter to the Duke of *Cleve*, and one of *Burgundies* ſiſters: by which

An. Christi means *Orleans* recovered four hundred thousand Crowns to pay for his Ransom, and a perpetual friendship is procured between these two families.

About this time *Rene*, or *Renatus* of *Anjou*, returns from *Italy*, whose daughter *Margaret* is maried to the King of *England*, and a three years Peace concluded between the two Nations. The County of *Main* is restored again by the *English* to the *French*, and some other places: during which Truce, supplies are sent to the D. of *Millan* against the *Venetians*, and the County of *Ast* is first promised, then rendred by the Duke to his sisters son the Duke of *Orleans*: and the same day Duke *Philip* of *Millan* died, of sickness and grief; the Duke of *Orleans* claimed the next succession to *Millan*, by his defunct Uncle, Duke *Philip*. The *Millanois* aimed at their liberty; *Regnauld* the *French* Commander there, before supplies could be sent him from *France*, besiegeth *Bosto*, but being beaten by the *Millanois*, was forc't to rise and retreat to *Ast*, with loss and disgrace; but *Francis Sforsa*, who had maried *Blanch*, Duke *Philip* of *Millans* daughter, and received with her the City and Principality of *Cremona*, who defeated the *Venetians*, enemies to *Millan*, doth now fall off from *Millan* to the *Venetians*, and taking opportunity by the divers Factions of the Citizens, besiegeth the City, which for want of victuals yeildeth, and receiveth *Sforsa* for their Duke, before *France* could send any Forces thither, for their Truce with *England* was now broke by the *English*, who took *Tongeres*. Upon this the *French* took divers places from the *English*, and *Rouen* among the rest, with the Duke of *Sommerset* in it, who to have his liberty was forced to deliver up five *French* Towns, which were in his possession; and upon the surrender of *Falaise* to the *French*, *Talbot* is delivered out of prison. A Battel is fought between *Bayeux* and *Carenton*, in which the *French* beat the *English*, and by degrees got all *Normandy* again from them. Then the *French* King marcheth with his Forces into *Guien*, where he layeth siege to four Towns at one time. Mean while *Burdeaux* sends to capitulate with the King, and is surrendred on their own conditions, which occasioned the other Towns to surrender also. And so all *Guienne* returns again to the *French*, except *Bayonne*; which at last upon the sight of a white Cross in the Clouds, or a Meteor like a white Cross, which is the Arms of *France*, as the red is of *England*, they deliver up themselves to the *French*, preferring the white Crosse to the red.

Not long after, *Bourdeaux* falls off again from the *French*, and sends to *Talbot*, who coming with five thousand Foot to the gates, was let in. Upon this report the King sends Prince *John*, the Duke of *Burbons* son, with an Army: A battel is fought, in which both *Talbot* and his son, lost their lives, and *Burdeaux* withall, which the King by building two Castles, did so bridle, that they could not afterward revolt to the *English*, who were all dismissed by
1453 the King, and suffered quietly to return home, having lost all their holds in *France*, except *Calice*, and some places thereabouts. Presently after this, the *Dolphin* upon some discontent, takes leave of his Father for four months, but intending to return no more again to the Court, whilst his Father was alive, because he more hearkned to his Favorites, then to him.

About this time the *Gantois* rebelled against their Duke, because he exacted of them a new Gabel of Salt, and incroached on their liberties; therefore they cruelly kill their Governour, but they were defeated by the Duke in a battel, having lost twenty thousand of their men, and were at last content to pay a great sum of mony, and to accept what Laws the Duke would impose on them. In *France*, the King was forced notwithstanding the wars were ended, to maintain in Garisons five thousand Foot, and fifteen hundred Horse, to suppress the rambling soldiers, who went to and fro plundring the Country people. At this time King *Alphonsus* made war in *Tuscany*, upon the *Florentins*, for their aid; the King raiseth two thousand Horse, intending that if *Alphonsus* were worsted, to march to *Naples* for the claiming a title to that king-

Kingdome: the Duke of *Savoy* at first denyed him passage through his country, because he was in League with *Alphonsus* and *Venice*, against *Millan*, and the *Florentins*; but the *Dolphin*, his son in law, wrought so upon him, that at last he yeildeth a passage. But this Expedition came at length to nothing; For upon the sad news of the loss of *Constantinople*, the *Italian* Princes made Peace among themselves. *John* Duke *d' Alanzon* is declared by the King guilty of High Treason, for solliciting the *English* to return into *France*, but afterward is pardoned: The *Dolphin* was now in stead of four months, absent four years from the Court, carying himself like a King in his own Country, by making Laws, and receiving Ambassadors; the King sends an Army with command to bring him to the Court; the young Prince fearing the worst, flyes to the Duke of *Burgundy*, who excuses himself to the King that being his Vassall, he could not refuse to intertain his sonne. *Peter Fregose* Duke of *Genua*, being crossed by the contrary Faction, and fearing the greatnesse of *Alphonsus*, King of *Arragon*, conveys himself and his estate into *France*. Mean while *Alphonsus* dieth, and leaves his Fathers kingdomes to his Brother *John*, but *Naples* to his Bastard son *Ferdinand*; but Pope *Calixtus* would not yeild that a Bastard should be King of *Naples*. *Ferdinand* alledgeth that Pope *Eugenius* on this condition crowned *Alphonsus*, that *Ferdinand* might succeed him, which was confirmed by Pope *Nicolaus*. *An. Christi* 1456

Pope *Pius* who succeeded *Calixtus*, to avoid further trouble, fearing lest *Sforza* and *Ferdinand*, who were very intimate, should joyn their Forces, and raise a new War in *Italy*, Crowns *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, conditionally that this should not prejudice those that could shew Title to that Crown.

Upon the report of this Coronation, *John* son to *Rene* of *Anjou*, procures a great Fleet from *Genua* and *Province*, to make War against *Ferdinand* at *Naples*, complaining against the Pope for Crowning his Enemy. Not long after *John* obtains a great Victory upon *Ferdinand*, so that he was like to conquer *Naples*, had he not delayed too long till *Ferdinand* had recruted himself. In the Interim the *Genuois* revolt from Duke *John*, and the *French*, who had nothing now left them but the Castle with *Savonne*. Upon this King *Rene* marcheth with a *French* Army against *Genua*; but being defeated, and two thousand of his men cut in pieces, was fain to retire to *Savonne*.

Upon report that the *Turk* had taken *Trapezund*, that great and rich City in *Pontus*, the people sends to the Christian Princes for aid against the *Turk*, bewailing the miserable condition of Christendome. The *Dolphin* being in the *Burgundians* Countrey, resolves to goe against the *Turks*: His Father sends first to have him come and speak with him; which hee refused to doe, wherefore the King sends to the Pope, to know which way he might disinherit this disobedient son; the Pope commends the *Dolphins* real, and reproves the King; he also animates the *French* to stand by the *Dolphin* in this his noble intentions, shewing to them the valour and devotion of their Predecessors, in subduing these barbarous Infidels: the Duke of *Burgundy* also protests to make a Voyage himself, or to send an Army against the *Turks*. The *Dolphin* had then a son born to him, whom hee called Duke of *Normandy*: The King mistrusting he had been poisoned, refused to touch any Victuals; At last being importuned to eat by his friends, tried, but could not swallow, the passages were so narrow, and clung so together. And in this case hee died, thanking God that hee would take him away out of this wretched life, on that day which was kept in memory of *Mary Magdalen*, that great sinner, desiring a share in her Repentance, as hee had in her Sinnes. Hee Reigned thirty and eight years. 1461

An. Christi years. This was he that confirmed the Pragmatical Sanction, by which the Popes power was much weakned in *France*. In his time the Parliament of *Tholoſe* was erected for *Languedoc*, and another was ſet up at *Grenoble* in *Dolphiny*.

To *Charles* ſucceeded his ſon *Lewis* 11. who had been a long time out of *France*; he changeth all the Governours and Officers of the kingdom, and is made Umpire of a difference between the King of *Caſtile*, and *Bland*, daughter and heir to the King of *Navarre*, and wife to the King of *Arragon*. To obtain the Popes favour, he renounceth the Pragmatical Sanction, and labours to make the Duke of *Millan* his Vaſſal; he demands of the Duke of *Britany*, that he forbear the title of [*By the Grace of God Duke of* Britany] and that his ſubjects acknowledge the *French* King for their Soveraign and Lord. War alſo is threatned, if the Duke ſhould refuſe: he being aſtoniſhed at this, deſires of the King ſome time to aſſemble and conſult with the States of his Dutchy, about ſuch weighty matters. Mean while he ſends his Agents diſguiſed in divers habits, to the King of *England*, and other Forain Princes; he makes alſo a ſtrait alliance with *Charles* Count of *Charolois*, Duke *Philips* ſon of *Burgundy*, to whom the King ſends Ambaſſadors, accuſing his ſon for allying himſelf with the Duke of *Britany*, a great friend to *England*; and withall they caſt divers foul aſperſions upon him: the Duke ſuffered not his ſon to ſpeak, fearing his raſhneſs, but ſpoke himſelf, excuſing his ſons actions, and accuſing the Kings breach of promiſes. The next day the Count ſpoke for himſelf; that though he had entertained amity with the Duke of *Britany*, yet it was not to prejudice *France*, but to advance the publick good. But ſhortly after it appeared, that the Princes were much diſcontented, among the reſt *Charles* Duke of *Berry*, the Kings brother, who
1465 had all conſpired to reſtore the Gentry and Clergy of *France*, and generally the whole people, now groaning under heavy preſſures, to their ancient priviledges and freedom. For this cauſe the Count of *Charolois* enters *Piccardy*, with an Army, as Lieutenant General to the Duke of *Berry*; he marcheth towards *Paris*, and by Boats on the River *Seine*, ſeizeth upon the Bridge of Saint *Cleve*. The Duke of *Burbon* chaſeth away all the Kings Officers out of that Country, and ſeizeth on the Mony, that was raiſing for the King; who was nothing dejected at all this, but raiſeth what Forces he can, and encounters with Count *Charles* at *Mont l' Hery*, where a ſharp Skirmiſh is fought, to the loſs of above two thouſand; the Count was wounded in the ſtomach and throat: it was given out that the King was ſlain, upon which the Count *d' Main* fled, but that report was falſe; for when the King uncovered his Head, and ſhewed himſelf, his ſoldiers took courage again, and fought ſtoutly.

After the Battail was fought at *Mont l' Hery*, the King returns to *Corbeil*, and from thence to *Paris*, where he ingratiates himſelf by fair words and promiſes, with the Citizens; for ſo *Sforſa* Duke of *Millan*, who had ſent him ſome Auxiliaries of Horſe and Foot adviſed him. By his affability he got the good will of the *Pariſians*, and then he goeth into *Normandy* to raiſe ſtrength there alſo. Mean time the Dukes, Counts, and Barons, had ſate down in three ſeveral places before *Paris*, whether they ſent ſome Heraults to deſire them to ſend ſome of their wiſeſt men, to know the reaſons why this Army ſate down there; and withall to deliberate about a way of Accommodation. The City having met, and adviſed upon this, ſends the Biſhop of *Paris*, with ſome other prime men; to whom the united Princes ſhew, that the Kings inſolent Government, his changing of the Laws and Cuſtoms, his deſpiſing of the Nobility, and oppreſſing of the people, moved them to take Arms, that things might be righted, which would be done the ſooner, if *Paris* the chief City, would by joyning with them, ſhew good example to others.

others. Hereupon the *Parisians* thought it fit the City Gates should be opened to the Princes, conditionally that their soldiers would doe no wrong, but pay for what they take; and that the Kings consent may be required in this matter. The King being advertised of this, extreamly was inraged, and repairs to *Paris* with some Foot Forces, where hee reproves the City in general, and particularly the Bishop, for offering to entertain a Parley with his Enemies: For this cause the King hated him ever after, and caused his Epitaph over his Tomb to be taken down. The Princes failing of their intentions, and of the Cities assistance, resolve to give the King Battel, which he altogether declined, not willing to hazard all upon an uncertain Battel, as *Sforsa* advised him; but he mans, and fortifies all the Gates, Walls, and Towns of the City; great hurt was done at *Charenton*, by the Ordnance; some Sallies and Skirmishes were permitted by the King, and Fortifications are raised on both sides. *Charolois* makes a Bridge of Boats, for Transporting his Army, which presently after seizeth on some of the Suburbs, and drives away the Kings men from thence. Then a Truce for two days is agreed on; the King sends his Chancellor to know the Duke of *Berries* minde, whom nothing will content but the Dutchy of *Normandy*; then the King desires a Parley with *Charolois*, whom he flatters, and makes believe, that he was sorry his Chancellour, whom he sent to his Father, had used any distastfull words, having no such Commission. By this he gained more of *Charolois*, then he could doe by force. The Truce is from day to day renued; so that now there is intercourse between the City, and the Camp, and revolting on both sides, chiefly from the King, whose pretences were not so specious, as those of the Princes, which aimed at the publick good; therefore the King gives order to shoot all such as should either come from, or go to the City without leave. A false report was brought to the Princes, that the next morning the King meant to give them battel, which presently alarumed them, so that all night they stood in battell Aray, for fear of surprisal; but this was only a false fire. It was also given out in *Normandy*, that the King and Princes had made a Peace; and that *Berry* the Kings brother, should be Duke of *Normandy*, which gladed the *Normans* hearts, who longed to have a Duke. Mean while the Duke of *Burbon* enters *Rohan*, and takes it in the name of the Duke of *Berry*. Upon this, the King desires another Parley with Count *Charolois*, vvherein he offers *Normandy* to the Duke of *Berry*, satisfaction to the other Princes; the payment of his sisters mariage portion to the Duke of *Burbon*, and assistance to the Duke of *Lorrain*, for recovering of *Naples*; so a peace is agreed upon, which the Princes vvillingly accept, becaufe of Winter drawing on. *Sforsa's* Forces understanding that the Peace was concluded, returns home, having done much hurt in *Burbons* Country: thus the begun War ended, but not the private grudges. *An. Christi*

The Duke of *Britain* grew angry at this peace, by vvhich *Charolois* obtained all the chief Towns on the River of *Some*, and the Kings brother, *Normandy* for *Berry*; vvhereas he who had been at more charges in this War, then any other, except *Charolois*, had nothing advanced himself, either in his estate or honour; therefore he with divers Lords, begin to look on the new Duke of *Normandy*, as a rising Sun, and to expect advancement by his means. The King who was cunning to sow the seeds of discord among the Princes, caused a report to fly abroad, that whilst the Duke of *Normandy* was lodged upon S. *Katherins* Hill neer *Rohan*, till the City was fitted for his reception in State; the Britains meant to cary him away into their Countrey, whereupon the Rohaners before the day appointed for solemnity, brings in the Duke without any state at all,

An. Chriſt all, ſave onely that the Clergy waited on him with the Croſs. *Britany* fearing that this people would be moved againſt him, returns home, taking ſome towns of *Normandy* by the way, which he fortified with Gariſons: Mean while the King comes with an Army againſt his brother in *Rohan*; who now being forſaken by *Brittany*, and *Charolois* employed in a war againſt the *Liegeois*, was forced to ſubmit, and part with both his Dutchies of *Berry* and *Normandy*, and to retire again into *Brittany*, where he had his firſt aſſiſtance in this late war.

The Government of *Brittany* is reſtored to *Burbony* for his good ſervice in recovering *Normandy* to the King: *Lorrain* having received men and mony from the King towards the recovering of *Naples*, did wave that enterpriſe, in regard his father and other friends, had ſo bad ſucceſs in it heretofore; he intends therefore to recover the right his anceſtors pretended to the Kingdome of *Arragon*, having croſſed the *Pyrenians*, he began to proſper well in *Spain*, till the Plague ſeiſed on his Camp, of which diſeaſe he died: The King preſently upon this calls back his Army, and imploys it againſt the Duke of *Brittany*, whilſt *Charolois* is hindred by the *Liegeoian* war; for upon the death of his father Duke *Philip* of *Burgundy*, who held the *Liegeois* in great awe, impoſed a tribute on them, and took divers places from them, for refuſing to obey their
1467 young Biſhop *Lewis* of *Burbon*, the Duke of *Burgundies* Nephew, whom the Pope had confirmed in that rich Biſhoprick upon the intreaty of his Uncle, and promiſe he made to raiſe an army againſt the *Turk*; w^ch^ young Biſhop could not in a long time be induced to take on him the Order of Prieſthood: I ſay, Duke *Philip* being dead, the *Liegeois* began to reaſſume their liberty; therefore they turn the *Burgundian* Gariſons out of their Towns, which ſo exaſperated *Charls*, that he enters their Countrey with fire and ſword, defeats them in a battell, takes *Leige*, and diſmantles it, and impoſeth on them heavier burthens and taxes then ever his Father did.

In this mean time King *Lewis* forceth his brother *Charls* and the Duke of *Brittany* to make their peace with him, promiſing his brother an yearly penſion of 35 thouſand crowns, conditionally he quit his claim to the Dutchie of *Normandy*; at which time the Duke of *Burgundy*, having quieted *Liegeois*, and *Gantois*, prepares to aſſiſt his antient friends, *Berry* and *Britanny*. As he was on his march, newes came that they two were reconciled to the King, which he did not at firſt believe, ſuppoſing this newes had been given out by the King, to hinder his march; but at laſt by Legats from the King and theſe two Princes, he was aſſured of their reconciliation: The King deſires *Burgundy* to meet him at *Peronne*, for finiſhing this laſt peace with all the Princes: They met accordingly, and as they were in treaty about the peace; newes came that the *Liegeois* had again taken arms: Moſt of the baniſhed men being returned half ſtarved, and like ſavages in their overgrown haires: They firſt take *Tongres* an antient City, where *Lewis* of *Burbon* their Biſhop, was with the Pope's Legat; who ſo aſſwaged the furie of the Soldiers, that little blood was ſhed. When Duke *Charls* underſtood that this rebellion was raiſed by the *French* King's Ambaſſadors; in a rage he accuſeth the King of his treachery and hypocriſie, and cauſeth the Gates of *Peronne* to be ſhut, and kept with a ſtrict Guard, that none might goe out or in, pretending that a Budget with Letters of conſequence was loſt: So the King was kept priſoner two days in great doubt, what would become of him; for he had both in his minde and eie, the Tower cloſe by him, where *Charls* the ſimple King of *France* was fain to renounce his right to the Crown. The Duke ſat in Counſell two days to know what

ſhould

should be done to the King : Some thought it fitting that he should declare himself an enemy to the *Liegeois*, and assist the Duke with an Army; others would not have him to be released at all, fearing he would revenge this wrong; a third sort would have his brother sent for, to have a confirmation of the Conditions in the peace of *Conflans*: The Duke was content to let the King goe free, if he would send his Ambassadors to *Liege* for a peace; which the King swore to do, and promised also to give the Counties of *Brie* and *Champaigne* to his brother, which pleased the Duke well, because these Counties joyning to his, would make him the stronger, to resist future quarrels with the French King. *An. Christi*

The King accompanies the Duke to the siege of *Leige*: The Citizens at first made some sallies on the besiegers; but perceiving their present dangers, and strength of the enemies, send their young Bishop to his Cousin, to mediate for them, with condition he should return if he could not prevail; but the Duke was so incensed, that neither would he hearken to any pardon, nor would permit the Bishop to return, though he was tied by his Oath: Then the Pope's Legat intercedeth, desiring the Duke to remember the Pope's goodness, who upon the earnest request of his father, conferred this Bishoprick on young Burbon; that therefore he would be pleased to bestow this City upon the Pope, and spare their lives: But this the Duke refused, accusing the Legat for pretending to the Bishoprick of *Leige*: So at length the City is taken, plundred, and burned, and all the inhabitants that could be found, cut in pieces: Immediately after this, the King returns into his Kingdome, and deals so cunningly with his brother, by such as had an interest in him, that he got him to refuse *Brie* and *Champaigne* bordering upon *Burgundy*, and in lieu thereof, to accept of *Guienne* farther off. Not long after this, a son is born to King *Lewis*, *Charls* by name: The King willing to pick a quarrell with *Burgundy*, got some discontented persons to Petition him against the Duke's injustice and oppressions, shewing also that he had incroached upon the King's Territories, and broken the peace: The King upon this, calls a Counsell, where it is declared that the Duke had violated the peace; wherefore he is summoned to appear, which he took so hainously that he imprisoned the Messenger, but afterward sent him home: In the interim *Amiens* and Saint *Quintins* return to the Kings obedience: Who shortly after began openly to force other places. Here upon the Duke sends to his friends and allies for aid: The Duke of *Guienne* sends him Letters privatly, that he would send him supplies, the King perceiving how earnest *Burgundy* was to recover *Amiens*, and S. *Quintins*, sends to him, that he should have them again if so be he would renounce alliance with the Dukes of *Brittany* and *Guienne*, and not assist them so long as he had wars with them: To this the Duke condescended. The King in the interim sends under-hand to the Governours of these two places, to keep off the Duke with fair words, and not to surrender the Towns: *Burgundy* understanding that the King meant to cheat him, and that he had already begun to make war upon the Duke of *Guienne*, enters *France* with his Army, and first besiegeth *Beauvais*, but could not take it; therefore he marcheth towards *Normandy*, to joyn his Forces with *Brittany* against *Roban*; but on the way newes came that the Duke of *Guienne* was dead: And the Duke of *Brittany* would not now joyn with *Burgundy*. Seeing now *Guienne* was fallen to the King by the death of his brother, the Duke of *Burgundy* was so mad with the King, that he gave out the King had poysoned his brother by some of his servants; and surely the hatred he had towards him, might cause suspition.

1470

1471

The Constable was the Duke's great enemy, and he was suspected to blow

An. Christi blow the coles for this flame, and to be the chief fomenter of this war; for he entring into *Burgundy*, cauſed all places to be ſet on fire, whether he came: At a meeting he gave the lye to the Duke's Ambaſſadors; which procured him much hatred. The King and Duke being both willing to be rid of him, conſpire his death; but he was ſo potent and cunning, that he would truſt neither of them, but ſtood on his own guard; therefore he turns the Kings Gariſon out of Saint *Quintins*, and puts in a Gariſon of his own. When the King ſent to ſpeak with him, he refuſed to come without his Guard, and aſſurance of ſafety; therefore a bridg was ſet up over a river, and a bar like a lattice in the middle, that they might have the ſight and ſpeech of each other; at laſt the bar was broken down, and they after privat conference departed good friends. About this time *Purpignan* one of the *French* Towns revolts to the *Arragonian*; but it was ſurrendred again upon certain conditions. *Peter* of *Burbon*, Governor of *Guienne*, is taken priſoner by Count *de Armignack*, who not long after is put to death for inceſt with his ſiſter, and they were hanged who betrayed *Burbon*.

The Duke of *Nemours* is condemned for Treaſon, and beheaded. *Anne* the King's eldeſt daughter, is married to *Burbon*, and *Jeane* the younger who was crooked and deformed, to *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans*, afterward *Lewis* 12. About this time the Order of Saint *Michael* was inſtituted by King *Lewis* 11 which he ſent to the Duke of *Brittany*, but he refuſed it, fearing to offend the King of *England*, and Duke of *Burgundy*, his true friends; This the King took ill, that a Duke ſhould ſcorn to be his brother in that Order: This Duke of *Burgundy* helped to eſtabliſh King *Edward* of *England* in his Throne, to make himſelf by this the ſtronger againſt King *Lewis*. The Duke of *Gelders* at this time is impriſoned by his own ſon, but ſet at liberty again by *Charls* of *Burgundy*, wherefore *Gelders* diſinherits his ſon, and makes *Burgundy* his heir: Who having obtained this rich Dutchie, ſends a ſumme of money to *Sigiſmund* Duke of *Auſtria*, the Emperors brother, who mortgaged the Countie of *Ferreſte* for this money: Then he endeavonrs to obtain all the land lying between the Dutchie and Countie; for this cauſe propoſeth the marriage of his daughter to *Maximilian* the Emperor's ſon, and labours what he could to be Lieutenant of the Empire; but the Emperor perceiving his ambition and covetouſneſs forſook him, at the meeting in *Trevers* without bidding him farewell: Yet the Duke proſecutes his deſigne.

There was then great conteſtation about the Biſhoprick of *Colen*; he ſtrives to put in *Robert* his kinſman, who had been driven out by his adverſaries: This was not well reſented by the Emperor, that a ſtranger ſhould meddle with the affairs of *Germany*. Then having called a Diet, he ſends aid to *Nuz*, at that time beſieged by *Burgundy*: In the interim King *Lewis* by his Ambaſſadors reconciles *Auſtria* and the *Switzers*, ſo *Sigiſmund* by their help recovers his Countie of *Ferrette* without paying the ſumme borrowed. At the ſame time alſo *Rhenatus*, or *Rhene*, grandchild to *Rhence*, King of *Sicily* had obtained by right of ſucceſſion the Dutchie of *Lorrain*: He by the French King's inſtigation, declares war againſt *Burgundy*, and pillaged a party of *Luxemburg* which belonged to him. The *Burgundian* is now full of troubles, for the French King takes divers of his Towns: Mean while the Conſtable of France loſt his wife, the King's ſiſter, by which he began to be more in danger of the King then before, who for his ſiſters ſake winked at many things. Wherefore to procure the Duke of *Burgundie's* favour, he deſires the Duke to ſend him ſome Forces, to put within Saint *Quintins*, which he promiſeth

seth to deliver up to him; but he could not be so good as his word, though Forces were sent. *An. Christi*

The King invites the Constable to make war upon *Henault*, which he refused to do, because he knew King *Lewis* meant to take away his life; the King upon this desires to speak with him; he returns answer, that if the King would swear upon the Cross of Saint *Lau.* which is in the Church of *Angers*, to do him no harm by himself or any other, he would come. Now the Tradition was, that whosoever swore on that Crosse, and perjured himself, should die within a year after; the King would upon no tearms sweare, which increased the Constables jealousie. Mean while the King of *England* comes with an Army to *Callis* upon *Burgundies* invitation, who had now laid siege to *Nuz* a whole year, but at last he riseth upon the perswasions of the King of *England*, and the Popes Legat; who procured that during the difference concerning the Bishoprick of *Colen*, *Nuz* should remain depositat in the Popes hands, then *Burgundy* sends his Army to quarter in *Lorrain*, purposly to vex Duke *Rene*. *Burgundy* is invited again by the Constable to seise on Saint *Quintin*; some *English* to this purpose are sent before, who being beaten off from the Town with great Ordnance, disheartned King *Edward* from any further attempt. In the interim whilst *Burgundy* was gone to *Lorrain* for his Army, to joyn with the *English*: a peace is propounded between *France* and *England*, which so much disquieted the Duke of *Burgundy*, that he sends Letters to the King of *England* full of gall, accusing his ingratitude towards him, who of a poor banished man had made him King. The French King mean while Courts the Constable with smooth Letters: One time the Constable sent a messenger to the King, who being called into the Kings Chamber, where some of *Burgundies* chief servants were hid behind the Hangings, told the King openly that the Constable had wrought so with King *Edward*, and Duke *Charls*, that they were quite parted, and 1483
that ill language had been given by the Duke to the King: At last the peace between the two Kingdoms is confirmed, in which *Burgundy* is also included. After King *Edward* was gone home, King *Lewis* and Duke *Charls* plot together to be revenged on the Constable for abusing them both. He remonstrates to the French King how carefull and faithfull he had always been to preserve the Kings Towns: The King seemingly acknowledgeth it, and commends the Constable, telling his messenger that in his Counsels he wanted the Constables head-piece; which the King meant otherwise then the Messenger understood it: For the King meant to have his head. Therefore it is agreed between the King and Duke, that the French should have his body, and the *Burgundians* his goods and Saint *Quintin*. So that the poor Constable is now forsaken by all his friends, and knows not whether to goe, nor what to doe.

At last after long deliberation, he resolves to cast himself upon the Duke of *Burgundy*, as being easier to be appeased then the King, therefore retires himself into *Henault* to those that commanded there under the Duke, who was then before *Nancy*, hoping to take it, and to be Master of all that Dutchie: Thither came some Messengers from the King, demanding according to agreements, the Constable; the Duke who also understood that the King had now an Army upon the borders of *Campaigne*, was in doubt what to do: To deliver the Constable was Treachery, to retain him, dangerous, and a means to loose his hopes of *Nancy*, therefore sends order, that on such a day the Constable should be delivered to the French, hoping before that time, *Nancy* would be taken, and then he would recall his Warrant; but the day being come,

An. Christi the Conſtable is delivered up, and carried away; and within three houres after, Newes came that *Nancy* was taken: The Conſtable who had delivered up Saint *Quintin*, and other places to the *Burgundian*, is Beheaded at *Paris*; But after this, the Dukes affaires never proſpered.

Sigiſmund Duke of *Auſtria*, had by the help of the *Switzers* retaken *Kerreth* from Duke *Charls*: Wherefore he denounceth Warre againſt them. They humbly deſire peace, and promiſe all faithfull ſervice to the Duke, if he will entertain them; They aſſiſted *Sigiſmund*, onely to recover his Right; they ſhew alſo the poverty of their Countrey, not worthie to be Conquered; But he goeth on in his reſolutions, and would not be diſſwaded from this Warre; he raiſeth a formidable Army, hoping not onely to ſubjugate the *Switzers*, but alſo to make himſelf great in *Italy*, becauſe *Frederick*, Prince of *Tarentum*, ſon to *Ferdinand*, King of *Naples*, was come to marry his daughter; beſides old *Rene* of *Anjou*, King of *Sicily*, had promiſed to quit his right in *Sicily* to Duke *Charles*, and would alſo put into his hands the Countie of *Provence*, having now no ſonnes of his owne. The Duke of *Millan* fearing the *Burgundian* greatneſs, ſends to confirm his League with *France*.

The King of *Portugall* nearly allied to Duke *Charles*, comes to *France* to procure a generall peace. The old King of *Sicily* alſo comes to ſee his Nephew King *Lewis*. Mean while the Duke of *Burgundy* takes *Lauſanne* from the *Switzers*; and ſhortly after *Granſon*, where he hanged five hundred and twelve *Switzers*, which ſo inraged the reſt of that Nation; that they raiſed a great Army, fought and defeated the Duke, took all his Baggage and ammunition, regained *Granſon*, unhanged and buried their Countrey men, and hanged as many *Burgundians* as they found in the Towne.

The Duke having recollected his diſperſed Forces, and raiſed new, ſends to *Flanders* for a ſupply of money, which was promiſed if the Dukes perſon or Dominions were in danger, but not on a Warre ſo remote and needleſs: Notwithſtanding he returns with a new Army, and beſiegeth *Morat*. *Rene* Duke of *Lorrain* then in *France*, is made Generall of the *Switzers*, againſt Duke *Charles* their Common Enemy, having obtained money and men from King *Lewis*; becauſe he was to paſs through the *Burgundian* Territories to the *Switzers*. A ſecond battel is fought, and a ſecond overthrow given to the Duke, 21 days after the firſt. The Dukes high ſpirit could not be broken with this misfortune, but ſwelled bigger, raging to be twice beaten by a young unskilfull Prince, and a baſe beggarly people as he called them; whereas he had beaten ſo great Potentates heretofore, reſolves to have the third incounter with them. In the interim, by the *Switzers* help, *Lorrain* is reſtored again to his own Countrey with great joy: Duke *Charles* could not be diſſwaded by the King of *Portugall*, nor his other Friends, from fighting again with the *Switzers*, nor beleeve that King *Lewis* had all this while contrary to the peace aided *Lorrain* with men and money, obſtinately goeth again with a Freſh Army, and beſiegeth *Nancy* in the dead of Winter, where he loſt both his Army and life.

The newes of vvhich vvas ſo vvelcome to the French King, that he gave the Meſſenger one hundred and fifty Marks of Silver; after his death, the Prince of *Orange* beeing of great Power and wealthie, puts into the Kings hand, both the Dutchie and Countie of *Burgundy*, for the flower of the Nobility was killed in the laſt three Battels:

So

so little resistance could be feared: The King comes with an Army into *Piccardie*, and regains his Towns there, which the Duke had kept from him. *An. Christi*

Mean while *Mary* the Duke's heir and onely daughter, sends Ambassadors to the King, desiring him to remove his Army from her borders, and shewing that by the *Salique* Law of *France*, she could not be excluded from the Counties of *Flanders*, *Artois*, and the adjacent places, that he ought to protect and not injure a young Lady and Orphan, who would make a fitter match for his son the Dolphin, then the daughter of *England* can. These Ambassadors having goods and lands in those places which the King had taken, in favour of themseves complyed in some things with the King.

Philip Crevecure Governor of *Artois* is absolved by King *Lewis* from his Oath of Allegeance to Duke *Charls*; so that he becomes now servant wholly to the *French*, by his means the King recovers *Arras*, and *Boulongne*. The King sends to Princes *Mary* his Barbar, one *Oliver*, to perswade her privatly to put her self under the protection of *France*, from whence she is both by the Father and Mother: The Princes was then at *Gaunt*, of whom the Townesmen were so carefull, that they suffered none to speak with her in privat; wherefore the Barbar being suspected, was commanded to depart thence, who presently retired to *Turnay*, where he carried himself so cunningly, that he got thirty of the stoutest there to aid him upon all occasions, wherefore he writes secretly to the Captains of the next Garisons, that they fail not to be at *Turnay* by break of day the next morning, which was done; so one of the Gates was opened, they were let in, and the Town taken. Upon this the *Gantois* assemble the States of *Flanders*, who appoint a Counsell for governing the Princes: Then they send Ambassadors to *France*, to acquaint the King, that the Princes had condescended to be ruled altogether by their Counsell. The King willing to make dissention between the *Flemins* and the Princes *Mary's* Counsellers, assures the *Gantois* that their Chancellor *Hugonet*, brought him Letters from their Lady quite contrary to what they said; wherefore when the Ambassadors were returned to *Gaunt*, the Chancellor *Hugonet* is accused of Treason, and of the loss of *Arras*, and so is beheaded.

Shortly after this, the *Gantois* sets at liberty the Duke of *Gelders* son, who had been imprisoned there by Duke *Charls* of *Burgundy*, him they imploy to regain *Tournay*: But the King's Garison there sallies out upon him, defeats his Forces, and kills him on the place. *Arras* hoping to be aided by the *Gantois*, rebelled against the King, but he shortly reduced them again, and sends away the Inhabitants to another part of the Kingdome, and planted *French* men there. About this time, *Maximilian* the Emperors son comes into *Flanders*, and matcheth with the Princes *Mary*: A little before the Prince of *Orange* who had hitherto complied with the *French* upon hope to recover by the King, his Grandfathers lands detained from him by Duke *Charls*; and now perceiving he was deluded, raiseth Forces, and fights the Governor, one thousand men are slain on both sides: hereupon a great part of the Countrey revolts from the King, but *Charls* of *Ambois* the new Governour sent by the King, recovers in a short time the Towns that had rebelled, and burned *Dole*; and now the King began to entertain the *Switzers*, 6000 whereof he kept in pay continually, and put down the Archers instituted by *Charls* 7. Great troubles arise in *Millan* upon the death of Duke *Galeas*, who was murthered in a Church: He left one son very young, *Robert* of Saint *Severin* the Duke's next kinsman, labours to perswade the French King to attempt *Italy*, but he was unwilling, because the French could never enjoy any

An. Christi thing they got there, nor could he ever ſend Forces to aid the *Florentins* his allies, but ſtill they were ſet upon by Pope *Sixtus*, and *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*; yet to intimidat the Pope, he calls a Gallican Synod at *Orleans*, to adviſe about the reeſtabliſhing of the Pragmatick Sanction in *France*, and aboliſhing the power of ſending money thence to *Rome* for bulls; but here was nothing concluded: The next year they meet again at *Lions*; mean while the Pope revokes his cenſures againſt the *Florentins*, abſolves and makes peace with them. The Kings Ambaſſador returning from *Florence*, goeth for *Millan*, where he receiveth in the Kings name the homage due to him from *Bonne*, the Dutcheſs in behalf of her young ſon, for *Genua*, whereof he was then Lord, and which held of the Crown of *France*.

At that time *Province* fell to the French King by the death of *Rene* King of *Sicily*. in whom the male kinde of the houſe of *Anjou* failed, wherefore *Anjou* and *Main* return to the King and *Province* alſo, by the laſt will of *Rene*, of which young *Rene* Duke of *Lerrain* complained. In the interim *Maximilian* fights the French at *Terovenne*, defeats them, and becomes Maſter of the place: King *Lewis* not willing to hazard any more upon uncertain battels, deſires peace, which was obtained by the death of *Mary* the Dutcheſs, *Maximilians* wife, who left two young children, *Philip* and *Margaret*, the *Gantois* who undertook the tuition of the young children, offer the French King, that if he would quit his allyance with *England*, young Princeſs *Margaret* now three years old, ſhould be conveyed into *France* to be betrothed to the Dolphin, with whom in marriage ſhould be given the Counties of *Artois* and *Burgundy*: To this the King aſſented. The peace is concluded, and the baniſhed *Artoiſiens* returned again to *Aras*, which ſince the baniſhment was new-named *French Town*: Not long after this, King *Lewis* being ſickly and 60 years
1483 old (an age which none of his predeceſſors ſince *Hugh Capiel* the firſt King of that race have exceeded) departeth this life, having acted the Fox rather then the Lion all his reign; he was deſirous before his death to ſee his ſon Crowned, therefore ſends to *Reims* for the holy oyle, which arrived at *Pleſſis* in the Suburbs of *Toures*, as he was giving up the ghoſt.

CHAP. XXIII.

The Proſecution of the Hiſtory under Charls 8. Lewis 12. Francis 1. Henry 2. Francis 2. Charls 8. Henry 3. Henry 4. Lewis 13. *from the year* 1483. *till* 1633. *wherein the lives of the Popes, the affairs of* Italy, Spain, *and other bordering Countries are touched.*

TO *Lewis* 11. ſucceeded his ſon *Charls* 8. at 13 years of age, whom his Father would ſuffer none to ſee, but his domeſtick ſervants, nor learn any more Latin but this ſentence, *qui neſcit diſſimulare, &c.* He that cannot diſſemble, cannot reigne. In the beginning of his reigne he calls a Parliament at *Toures*, where each man had liberty to ſpeak, which was denied by the former King; here complaints are made againſt him (though dead) for infringing their Liberties, and antient Cuſtoms, with the Taxes laid on them. Among other things that were deſired, the Pragmatick Sanction is much urged, and received. It is ordered that *Anne* the Kings eldeſt ſiſter ſhould have the charge of his perſon, and a Counſell of twelve men to rule the Kingdome; ſome would have had

Lewis

Lewis Duke of *Orleans*, first Prince of the blood, to be Governour; but that motion was rejected, because he was too young, being twenty four years old onely, and under his mothers tuition: He thinking himself wronged by being rejected from the government, endeavoured to force it, therefore began to raise men at his own Town of *Orleans*, and to make that the seat of the War; which the Townsmen perceiving, shut their Gates against him: so he was forced to retire, and raise forces elsewhere, which when he had done, were presently scattered by the Kings Proclamation: therefore this was called the foolish War. *An. Christi*

In *Britany Peter Laudais* the Dukes great Favorite, was extreamly hated, both for being suspected of the Chancelors death, and for his greatness with the Duke; therefore the Nobility of that Province conspire against *Laudais*, whom they thought to apprehend in the Dukes Bed-chamber, but he had escaped by a back door; a great commotion is in the Town, thinking the D. had been slain; but it was appeased, by his presence exhibited to the people. Things being quieted, these Noble men that occasioned this uproar, are banished; and *Laudais* in greater favour then ever: So that an order is made for pulling down the Houses and Castles of all that had a hand in this conspiracy; For effecting of which, an Army is raised: The banished Lords understanding this, return to *Britany*, and raise an Army of their faction. But when the two Armies met, they bethought themselves to be all of the same Country and Language, fling down their Arms in pity, and lovingly imbrace each other, turning all their hatred against *Laudais*, whom they understood was in the Castle of *Nantes*; they resolve then to pull him out of the Dukes Arms; yet by general consent they choose a new Chancelour, whom they sent to acquaint the Duke, that the peoples fury could not bee satisfied without the life of *Laudais*, yet promising that he should have a fair Triall according to Law. So he was apprehended, imprisoned, and attached of many hainous crimes, for which he was condemned, and hanged, before the Duke knew his Trial was begun, who otherwise meant to have pardoned him; this exasperated the Duke more then before: so he chooseth a new Chancelor. About this time the Duke of *Orleans* comes into *Britany*, with a great Train, which so much dismaid the Lords, that they repaired to the *French* King; then went out a report, that *Orleans* meant to repudiate his crooked wife, the Kings sister, whom he was forced to mary, and resolved to have for his wife, *Anne* the Duke of *Britains* only daughter and heir.

The exiled Lords striving to live securely in their own countrey, provoke the King to raise Arms against the Duke of *Britany*, promising their best service and assistance, which they did so well, that suddenly entring *Britany*, they caused many Towns to yeild to the King, taking many prisoners, of whom they exacted great ransoms. The *Britains* that were for the Duke, having made a Body of six hundred Horse, and sixteen thousand Foot, were marching against the Enemy, to relieve *Plermel*, then besieged; but in their march, one of the Army stood up, and wished them to consider that their Duke was altogether ruled by the *French*, and yet they were marching against the *French*; and that therefore it were best every man should return to his own home, and live quietly. Upon this they all disbanded. *Plermel* is taken; so is *Venues*, without blow. *Nantes* is besieged forty six days; from which they rise, having done nothing, and with fire and sword they rage over all the countrey, driving away all the cattle; at which the *Britain* Lords murmure, saying, they were better return to their Duke, who had proffered pardon to them, and enjoyment of their goods, then to be thus used by the *French*. So then they began daily to fall off from the Kings army. Divers Towns also revolt from the King, to the Duke; some of which are re-taken again by the *French*. This miserable condition of *Britany* made the

Duke

An. Christi Duke ſend Embaſſadors to the King, being then eighteen years of age. They
1488 found him at *Angers*, to whom Count *Dunois* remonſtrates the miſerable condition of *Britany*, and that the Duke never intended any War againſt *France*, but was contented rather to ſuffer his countrey to be over-run by the Kings army, then to make reſiſtance. They confeſs the Duke of *Orleans*, and Prince of *Orange*, had been in *Britany*, not to raiſe arms againſt the King, as was falſly given out, but to viſit and comfort, the Duke being much afflicted for the untimely death of his eldeſt daughter, which they were bound to doe in reſpect of their near conſanguinity. They grant alſo, that the *Britains* took Arms to relieve *Plermel*, but when they underſtood it was the Kings Army that beſieged the Town, they preſently disbanded: Beſides they ſay, that the Duke had reſtored to the exiled Lords, all their Lands again, therefore the Duke humbly deſired Peace; which the King granted; yet he put it off a while, till he ſaw what became of *Tongeres*, which was beſieged by *Engliſh Britains*; the Town at laſt was ſurrendred upon Articles, that the Garriſon ſhould depart with their lives and goods. Then followed a Skirmiſh, between the *French* and *Britains*, in which one thouſand two hundred on both ſides were killed, the Duke of *Orleans*, and Prince of *Orange* are taken priſoners. At laſt the Peace is concluded, upon this condition, that the *French* ſhall retain what Towns they had taken in *Britany*. Shortly after, the Duke
1491 died, whoſe only daughter King *Charles* of *France* afterward maried, having firſt put away his former wife, *Maximilians* daughter, which was one wrong, and the other was, that he would mary with *Maximilian's* Spouſe.

1492 About this time, *Chriſtopher Columbus*, a Sea-man of *Genua*, underſtood by a Shipwrackt Mariner, that in the Weſtern Sea there were ſome Lands; wherefore he on the King of *Spains* charges, undertakes a Voiage thither, where he diſcovers ſome Iſlands. Mean while King *Charles* is now in hope to obtain *Sicily*, and *Apulia*, being heir by the laſt Will of *Anjou*, whoſe race was now extinct. The baniſhed *Neapolitans*, *Lewis Sfortia*, and Pope *Alexander*, now angry with *Alphonſus*, incourage King *Charles* to make an Expedition into *Italy*, which he undertakes, with an Army of twenty thouſand Foot, and five thouſand Horſe, having no oppoſition; for *Maximilians* anger was pacified for the loſſe of the daughter of *Britany*, by marying with *Blanca Maria*, ſiſter to *John Galeas*, Duke of *Millan*. *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, was beholding to the *French* for reſtoring *Perpenian*; the cities of *Italy* were not againſt him; the *Florentins* help him with mony; *John Galeas* Duke of *Millan* was now dead, and his Uncle *Sfortia* ſucceeded, who made no reſiſtance; only Pope *Alexander* being reconciled to *Alphonſus*, entertains his ſon *Ferdinand*, with his whole Army at *Rome*: But underſtanding that all things ſucceeded well with *Charles*, and that he had gotten *Viterbium*, he diſmiſſeth the *Neapolitans*, and receiveth *Charles* into the city; having firſt for ſafety retired to
1494 the Caſtle of S. *Anhelo*, being guilty of his own crimes, which he redeems by large Bribes given, and promiſes made to King *Charles*, to whom all the kingdom of *Naples* ſubmits, except the Caſtle, which held out a while. *Alphonſus* being hated by his people, reſignes the kingdome to his ſon *Ferdinand*, and betakes himſelf to a Monaſtic life: but the *Italians* could not brook long the *French* pride and rapacity; therefore *Alphonſus* and the Pope, ſolicite *Ferdinand*, the *Venetians*, and *Ceſar*, to make a League; in which, *Lewis Sfortia* is included, for he was now angry with the *French* for the loſs of *Novaria*, taken from him by *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans*. *Charles* hearing what preparations were againſt him, haſtneth out of *Italy*, having exhauſted the kingdom of *Naples*; but before his departure, *Ferdinand* of *Spain* had fortified *Rhegium* in *Calabria*; and ſhortly after the *Arragonians*, with ſome *Sicilian* Forces, recover all *Calabria*, and *Apulia*. *Charles* his Army now conſiſted but of nine thouſand, a part where of he ſent to *Sena*, for a Gariſon, and ſome

Troops

Troops he dismisseth for *Genua*. The *Florentins* now were angry with him, *An. Christi* because he would not restore the Towns they put in his hands; the *Venetians* and *Sfortians* fight him, but are worsted. *Charles* indeed got the Victory; but shortly after lost all his booty, being caried away by the Mercenary *Greeks*, under the *Venetian*: so the *French* return home, having brought nothing with them but the *Neapolitan* disease, which the *Spaniards* conveyed thither from *America*. *Novaria* is besieged by the confederates, where two thousand *French* lost their lives by famine. At last the Town is surrendred, upon condition the besieged should have their lives, and peace should be made with *Sfortia*, and the *Venetians*. A Peace indeed was made, but of no force; for *Sfortia* did not according to the Articles send aid into *France*, but rather assisted *Ferdinand*. Nor would the *Venetians* admit any other conditions then these, to wit, that *Charles* should make War against the *Turk*, and leave the Kingdom of *Naples* to *Ferdinand*, he paying an yearly Tribute. The *French* that were left in *Italy*, fell off to *Ferdinand*, to whom they delivered up their strong Holds; so that of twenty five thousand, few returned home, and those very infirm. *Ferdinand* at the siege of *Cajeta*, died of a Feaver, having lost his father not long before, whose brother *Frederick* undertook the government of *Naples*; so that in two years *Naples* saw five Kings; to wit, *Ferdinand*, *Alphonsus*, *Ferdinand* 2. *Charles* of *France*, and *Frederick*; many disasters befell the House of *Spain* in a short time. *Ferdinand* of *Spain* his onely son died, his sons wife, *Maximilians* daughter, is brought to bed of a dead child, his son in Law *Alphonsus*, the King of *Portugals* son, is killed with a fall from his Horse; his daughter, who was maried to *Emanuel*, cousin German of *Alphonsus* now named, died in child-bed: so the inheritance falls to *Joan*, who was maried to *Philip*. Nor did King *Charles* prosper with his unlawfull mariage; for he left never a child to inherit his Crown: He died suddenly of an Apoplexy. At *Amboise* his death was foretold by *Savonarila*, whom the *Florentins* burned, for being too free in reproving the vices of the Clergy. At this time Pope *Alexander 6.* sate in *Rome*, who tyrannized over the Cardinals, which had sold him the suffrages; he made War upon the *Ursins*, and shortly after received them into favour. 1493

To *Charles* 8. succeeded his cousin German *Lewis* 12. who laid claim not onely to *Naples*, but to *Millan* also, by his Grandmother, the daughter of *John Galeas*; therefore he makes a League with the Pope, *Venetian*, *Florentin*, and *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, against *Lewis Sfortia* of *Millan*, and *Frederick* of *Naples*. It was then agreed, that if *Lewis* obtained *Millan*, *Cremona* should be delivered to the *Venetians*, and that *Cesar Borgia*, the Popes son, who by marying *Carlotta*, the *French* Kings Cousin, had laid aside his Cardinals Hat, should obtain *Aemilia*, *Flaminia*, *Picenum*, and *Umbria*, to the ruine of the right and ancient owners, and that the King of *Spain* and *France*, should divide the Kingdome of *Naples* between them. Thus *Charles*, with a puissant Army, drives *Sfortia* out of his Dukedom: so *Borgia* by turning out, or killing the Princes of *Aemilia*, and *Hetruria*, obtains a large dominion in *Italy*, under whose tyranny many execrable oppressions and villanies were perpetrated. This Pope *Alexander* bestowes on *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, the West, and on *John* of *Portugal*, the East-*Indies*: to *John* in *Portugall*, succeeded *Emanuel*, son to his Uncle *Ferdinand*. *Americus Vesputius*, a *Florentin*, discovered then the continent of *America*, so called from him, for the use of *Ferdinand* of *Spain*. *Sfortia* with the Pope, and *Venetians*, desires *Cesars* help against the insulting *French*; he upon promise of mony, marcheth unto *Italy*, but for want of pay, speedily returns again, and makes peace with King *Lewis*, who entring *Millan*, in great splendor, was called Duke of *Lombardy*; but *Ascanius* the Cardinal, *Sfortia*'s brother, in short time recovers what was lost, by reason the *Insubrians* could not endure the *French* insolencies. King

Lewis

An. Christi *Lewis* upon this raiſeth a new Army, among which were ſix thouſand *Switzers*
Ceſar counſelled *Sfortia* to uſe no *Helvetians*, but *Savoyens* in his Army, which wholeſome advice was rejected, and he thereby ruined; for when the two Armies met, the *Sfortian Switzers* would not fight againſt the *French Switzers*, their Countrey men, but ſhook hands, and left *Sfortia* for a prey to the *French*, who took him priſoner, as the *Venetians* did his brother the Cardinal, both
1500 theſe pined away in a *French* priſon.

Pope *Alexander* this year keeps his Jubilee, and ſets up again the Angel on
1501 his Caſtle at *Rome*, which the Thunder had beat down: the next year after, divers Croſſes were ſeen, ſome of a bloodie colour, upon the garments and skins of people, fore-runners of the troubles of *Europe*, and of great ſickneſſes, which ſhortly after followed, to the deſtruction of many thouſands. Divers Iſles in the Eaſt-*Braſil*, and *Calecut* in the Weſt are detected. The *Saracens* are expelled *Spain*, and *Ferdinand* is honoured by the Pope, with the title of Catholic. *Lewis* of *France*, and *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, ſend Forces
1502 againſt *Frederick* of *Naples*, whom they quickly defeated; but the two conquering Kings could not accord long, they fell out about dividing, and bounding their ſhares in *Naples*, till at laſt the *Spaniards* beat the *French* quite out of that Kingdom and City, having firſt overthrown them in a Battel, and
1504 ſtarved the remainder in *Cajeta*. So the *Spaniard* obtains all, and for a Tribute ſends every year thence a white Horſe to the Pope, who was not long after poiſoned by a miſtake of the Cup-bearer, who preſented him that Cup, which he had provided for *Adrian* the Cardinal, and ſome others. *Borgias* by cauſing himſelf to be ſowed within the belly of a Mule, lately unbowelled, diſcuſſed the force of the poiſon, but could not perfectly recover his health. *Alexander* died the 11 year of his Pontificate. *Borgia* ſeizeth upon all his Treaſure, and beſets the *Vatican* with twelve thouſand armed men, to force the Cardinals to vote for him. Preſently the people take Arms; *Borgias* being yet infirm, is caried thence in a Litter, and *Piccolomini* is elected, and named *Pius* 3. who died the thirtieth day after his Election, as it is thought of poiſon. *Borgias* is detained in the Caſtle of S. *Angelo*. Cardinal *Julian* is elected, vvho calls himſelf *Julius* 2, a man fitter for *Pauls* ſword, then *Peters* keys: He ſtrips *Borgias* of all his Towns, Caſtles, and Wealth; and at laſt gives him his liberty, who going to *Naples*, was taken by *Conſalvus*, and ſent over to *Spain*. Thence having eſcaped priſon, he goeth to the King of *Navarre*, and is killed in the *Cantabrian* War. *Julius* deſiring to enlarge the Churches patrimony, thruſts *Beutivolos* out of *Bononia*, and conſpires againſt the *Venetians* with *Ceſar*, *Spain*, *France*, *Ferrara*, and *Mantua*; but afterward upon their humble ſubmiſſion, vvithout *Ceſars* knowledge, and againſt the *French* Kings will, he departs from the League, and makes peace vvith the *Venetians*, and vvithall falls upon *Alphonſus*, Duke of *Ferrara*, for ſiding with the *French*. *Ceſar* and King *Lewis* raging at the Popes inſolencie, by means of the Cardinals, call a Synod at *Piſæ*, whether he is cited to appear; and withall they take from him *Bononia*, and *Mirandula*. He again to croſs theſe Cardinals, convocates a Synod at *Rome*, and excommunicates thoſe that refuſe to come; he ſtirs up alſo *Ferdinand* againſt *Ceſar* and the *French*, and calls him off from his *African* Victories, who having impoſed a Tribute upon the *Numidians*, tranſports his Army into *Italy*, where he took in ſome ſtrong Forts; with him *Henry* 8. of *England*, is perſwaded to join, being the *Spaniards* ſon in law; but *Henry* intends to recover his right in *Guien*: on the other ſide the *Spaniard* thruſts *John* of *Navarre* out of his kingdome, becauſe being in League with *France*, he denyed paſſage to the *Spaniard*, and his Army. Pope *Julius* alſo calls the *Switzers* into *Italy*, and makes *John Medices*, baniſhed out of *Florence*, his Legate; he cauſed a rumour to be ſpread, that *Maximilian*, and the *Venetians*, were agreed purpoſely that the *Brixians*, who hated

hated the *French*, might deliver the Town to the *Venetians*, which they did, not without a great maſſacring of the *French*: But ſhortly after, the *French* recover the Town again, kill the *Venetian* Gariſon, and make a ſacrifice of the Townſmen. King *Lewis* finding his kingdome vexed on both ſides by the *Spaniſh* and *Engliſh*, he reſolves to make *Italy* the ſeat of the War; therefore he beſiegeth *Ravenna*; the *Pontificians* and *Spaniards* come to raiſe the ſiege; a great battel is fought on *Eaſter* day, which proved victorious to the *Ceſarians* and *French*, who ſlew nine thouſand of the Enemy, and loſt three thouſand of their own party. The Viceroy of *Naples* fled, *John Medices* is taken, *Foxius* the *French* General, was killed, in whoſe Funeral eighteen Colours taken from the *Spaniards*, were caried; divers Towns ſubmit to the *French*. *An. Chriſti* 1511

Not long after this, Pope *Julius* cauſeth the League between *Ceſar* and the *French*, to be broken. *Maximilian* ſides with *Julius* and *Ferdinand*, he raiſeth an Army of *Switzers*, who were incenſed againſt the *French*, for killing of their Agent; by their means the *French* loſe *Millan*, which they had poſſeſſed thirteen years, and bring back *Maximilian Sfortia*, the ſon of *Lewis*. The *French* King is proſcribed by the Pope, who notwithſtanding returns to *Millan* with a freſh Army, which was utterly defeated by the *Switzers*, and the *French* driven quite out of *Italy*. The Fathers of the Councel of *Piſa*, for fear of the *Switzers*, remove to *Lions*: Mean while the Pope and his party ſeize upon divers Cities of *Italy*, by the *Helvetian* help. But when *Venice* refuſed to reſtore to *Ceſar*, *Verona* and *Vicentia*, then the Pope makes a League with him againſt the *Venetians*, and they with *Lewis* againſt the Pope and *Spaniard*. But when *Julius* ſaw that the *Spaniard* and *French* were like to agree, he died for grief; to whom ſucceeded *John Medices*, the Popes Legat, who had been baniſhed *Florence*, and taken priſoner in the late wars at *Ravenna*. He is now called *Leo* the tenth; it was this *Julius* who flung *Peters* keys into *Tibris*, and drew *Pauls* ſword. *Leo* gave way that the ſtones which were hewn by day, for repairing Saint *Peters* Church, begun by *Julius*, ſhould be caried away in the night for the great Palace of the *Medices* at *Florence*. He procured *Lewis* 12. to leave off all Reformation of the Church, and to ſubſcribe to the Councel of *Lateran*; he reconciled the Cardinals that fell off from *Julius*; he was much indebted to his ſiſter, but paid her out of the indulgence mony. About this time *Lewis* makes Peace with *England*, repudiates his wife *Anne* of *Britany*, and marieth another, and ſhortly after died. 1511 1513

To *Lewis* ſucceeded by the *Salic* Law, *Francis Valois*, his next kinſman and ſon in Law: He enters into League with *England* and *Venice*, and obtains *Millan*, having firſt defeated the *Switzers*: the Pope having loſt *Parma* and *Placentia*, makes peace with *Francis*, and condeſcends to confirm by his Bul, whomſoever the King ſhould name in *France*, for Biſhop or Abbot. King *Ferdinand* the Catholick, being dead, and his heir *Charles*, Prince of *Belgium*; *Maximilian* knowing how needful the friendſhip of *France* was, gives off the *Venetian* war, and makes peace with *Francis*. The Pope takes *Urbin* from *Francis Feltrius*, cauſeth *Petruccius* the Cardinal for plotting againſt him, to be ſtrangled, and thoſe that knew the plot, to be depoſed: For compleating the Senate, he makes at one time thirty one Cardinals, by which means he enriched himſelf. Upon the falling off of the *Switzers* from the *French*, *Millan* was re-taken, and reſtored to *Francis Sfortia*, *Maximilians* brother. The Pope recovers *Parma* and *Placentia*, with joy of which, or rather with poiſon, he ſuddenly died; to whom ſucceeded *Hadrian 6.* of *Utricht*, *Charls Ceſars* Tutor; but the next year after his Election, he died. King *Francis* upon the commotions of *Spain*, regained almoſt all the kingdom of *Navarre*, and ſends great Armies into *Italy*, for recovering of *Millan*, which he took, and is not long after taken himſelf. Having beſieged *Papia*, and ſeparated his 1525

An. Christi Army, by the advice of Pope *Clement* 7. who ſucceeded *Hadrian*, the Pope for his covetouſneſs, is beſieged in his Caſtle at *Rome*; his Palace in the *Vatican* is plundred; *Rome* by the Duke of *Burbon*, for the Popes perfidiouſneſs to *Ceſar*, is taken, and expoſed with all her vvealth, Prieſts and Temples, to the fury of the ſoldiers. The Pope being famiſhed, yeildeth to vvhat conditions *Ceſar* pleaſed: Mean time the *Florentins* made themſelves free, by caſting out the *Medices*. *Genua* ſubmits to the *French*, who beſiege the Viceroy of *Naples*, being then in *Naples*; the Viceroy of *Sicily* is defeated by *Auria*; but whilſt the *French* vvere in hope to take *Naples*, they vvere ſo vvaſted vvith ſickneſs, which ſwept away 20000 of them, that they were forced to be gone who vvere left; their General alſo *Lautrecus* died.

1527

1528

To Pope *Clemens* ſucceeded *Alexander* **Farneſius**, who took the name of *Paul* 3. he excommunicated and proſcribed *Henry* 8. of *England*; calls the Councel of *Trent*, and urgeth *Charles* the Emperour to ſuppreſs the *Lutherans* in his Dominions. To *Paul* ſucceeded *John Maria Montanus*, who called himſelf *Julius* 3d. King *Francis* holds a Treaty at *Cambrey*, vvhere his ranſom is paid, and his hoſtages reſtored; he inſtigateth the *Turk* againſt *Charles* the Emperour, and about the ſame time advanceth Learning in *Paris*, by allowing and maintaining new Profeſſors in that Univerſity. He makes vvar vvith the *Savoyen*, and loſeth his ſon the *Dolphin*, vvhom the Earl of *Montecucullo* poiſoned, for vvhich he was drawn in pieces vvith vvilde Horſes; then he makes Truce vvith the Pope and Emperour for ten years. The *Rotchellers* rebell againſt him, becauſe he placed a Gariſon there; then he invades *Piemont*, *Luxenburg*, and *Rouſſillon* becauſe his Ambaſſadors vvere killed as they were going that way, to make a League with the Turk. He takes many Towns in *Piemont*, having fought a great battel there vvith the Imperialiſts, of whom fifteen thouſand were ſlain. He recovers *Bollen*, and invades *England*, with which at laſt he made Peace, and then died, about three months after the death of *Henry* the 8. of *England*, whoſe differences were reconciled a little before; he reigned 33 years.

1529

1538

1547

To King *Francis* ſucceeded his ſon *Henry* 2. by *Katharin Medices*: He falls upon the Imperial Territories, and takes divers Towns; the Imperialiſts out of *Belgium* over-run and waſte *Campania*; the Pope for grief that the Catholick cauſe in *England* died with Queen *Mary*, falls ſuddenly ſick, of which diſeaſe he died; to whom ſucceeded *Marcellus* 2d, who the 22 day after his Election, died of an Apoplexy. *Petrus Caraffa* ſucceeded, and called himſelf *Paul* 4. About theſe times *Ferdinand Cortez* in twenty years ſpace, ſubdued all the parts of *America* about *Mexico*; *Varga* and *Pizarus*, all *Peru*, with the City of *Cuſco*: ſo did the *Portugals* take divers places in the Eaſt-*Indies*. *Charles* the Emperour being dead, the *French* renue the war with his ſon *Philip*; therefore a great Army is ſent under *Francis* Duke of *Guiſe*, into *Campania* and *Naples*: at S. *Quintin* a cruel battel is fought, in which the *French* are utterly defeated, and moſt of their Nobility taken, upon which the Town preſently ſurrendred. *Burdeaux* rebels for the taxes laid on them, but the Conſtable forces them to ſubmit, and to burn their priviledges. The ſame Conſtable appeaſeth a rebellion in *Gaſcony*, raiſed upon the cuſtom of Salt. About this time died *Henry* of *Navarre*, vvhoſe ſon in Law *Vendoſme*, ſeizeth on a part of *Navarre*. Mean while *Caſal* is taken by the *French*, but are beat at ſea by the *Belgians*. The *French* beſiege *Doway*, but in vain, and are defeated at *Graveling*: At laſt *Piemont* and *Savoy* being reſtored to the Duke, the *Dolphin* married to the Queen of *Scotland*, and peace made with *Spain*, by the mariage of *Elizabeth*, King *Henries* daughter to King *Philip*. In the Nuptial ſolemnities, King *Henry* at a Tilt, is wounded in the right eye by *Montgomery*, of which he died in great torture, God letting him feel ſome part of thoſe tortures, with which he tormented the Proteſtants: he died the forty third year of his age,

1551

1557

1559

and

and of his reign the thirteenth: not long after died Pope *Paul* 4th, who ſet up the Inquiſition at *Rome*, againſt the *Lutherans*, but after his death, the people in a tumult, brake open the priſon door, and let out the priſoners, burnt the houſe, and for three days together, abuſed the Popes Marble Statue, and all Monuments of the *Caraffæ* in the City vvere defaced. *An. Chriſti*

To *Henry* 2d, ſucceeded his ſon *Francis* 2d, who though he was young, yet was beginning to be as cruel againſt the *Hugonets*, as his father was, by burning *Annas Burgius* his body, after it had been hanged: At which, the Proteſtants were ſo incenſed, that they conſpire to ſeize on the King, then at *Amboiſe*, and to cary him away; but the plot was diſcovered and prevented. *Lewis Burbon* Prince of *Conde*, is ſuſpected to have had a hand in this plot, therefore is impriſoned: But whilſt at *Orleans*, the King and his Peers there aſſembled, were about to bring him to his Trial, the King fell ſick and died, not having reigned full two years; his mother is made Regent. To Pope *Paul* 4. ſucceeded *John Angelus Medices*, who took the name of *Pius* 4. King *Philip* of *Spain*, cauſeth 23 Gentlemen of great families, to be burnt for their Religion: He giveth 30000 Duckats towards the Printing of the Bible called *Complatenſis*. 1560

To *Francis* 2d, ſucceeded his brother *Charles* 9. under whom the Proteſtants enjoyed ſome quietneſs, till *Beza*, *Martyr*, and *Marlorat*, had exaſperated the Pontificians by their writings; then Pens were turned into Swords. *Francis* of *Guiſe* ſtood up for the Papiſts, and *Lewis* of *Conde* for the *Hugonets*. A battel is fought, in which were ſlain on both ſides about nine thouſand. *Conde* was taken priſoner, and *Guiſe* ſhortly after killed by a Piſtoll ſhot. Upon this, the Queen Regent gives way for the Proteſtant Nobility to exerciſe their Religion in their houſes, and the people in the ſuburbs. *Pius* 4. died, to whom ſucceeded *Michael Chiſſerius*, called by the name of *Pius* 5. *Conde* againſt the promiſe made him when he was taken, is ſhot to death. Shortly after at *Monconture*, another battel is fought, in which the *Hugonets* were defeated, but not ſubdued; for they bore Arms ſo long in *Gaſcony*, and took ſo many Towns, that at laſt they forced a peace for themſelves. Mean while the King of *Spain* marieth the fourth time, with his ſiſters daughter. The Duke of *Alba* tyrannizeth in *Belgium*, and turns out the *Engliſh* thence. The *Netherlanders* weary of oppreſſion, begin to vindicate their liberty. *Pius* 5. dieth, to whom ſucceeded *Gregory* 13. *France* having reſted a while from Civil broils, falls to Clandeſtin butcheries. At *Paris* the Nuptials of *Henry* of *Navarre*, with *Margaret* the Kings ſiſter, are ſolemnized and beſprinkled with Proteſtant blood: The chief Proteſtants are invited to the Wedding; ſuddenly by command from King *Charls* the ninth, all the Proteſtants in *Paris* are maſſacred, without reſpect of age or ſex. *Caſpar Caſtilios* head is ſent as a preſent to the Pope, and letters from the King, who writes, that in few days he put to death above ſeventy thouſand: For this ſlaughter was not only in *Paris*, but alſo in other Towns of *France*. This Maſſacre was committed on Saint *Bartholomews* day, betimes in the morning. The next year after, *Henry* King *Charles* his brother, beſiegeth *Rochel*, poſſeſſed by the proteſtants; but being elected King of *Poland*, he leaves the Siege, and goeth into *Poland*; where having reigned ſix months, he is called home to poſſeſs the Crown of *France* by the death of his brother *Charles*, who reigned fourteen years. *Philip* of *Spain*, underſtanding that his ſonne *Charles* was grieved for the cruelties exerciſed on the *Netherlanders*, puts him in priſon, where he loſt his life, upon ſuſpition that he intended Treaſon againſt his father. 1562 1572 1574

Pope *Gregory* reformed the Calender, which occaſioned ſome troubles in divers places; but in *France*, by Proclamation, it is commanded

An. Chriſti generally to be received: Divers Colledges of Jeſuits are erected under Pope *Gregory*, and in *Rome* for ſtrangers; he was ſuddenly taken with the ſquinzy, which ſuffocated him in two howres. *Henry* of *Navarre* ſtrives to have a National Synod of Proteſtants, for ſettling of their differences; for this cauſe he ſends his Ambaſſador to the Princes, who gave him good words, but nothing
1583 could be done by reaſon of the troubles of thoſe times. The Cardinals of *Burbon* and *Guiſe*, with other Pontifician Ring-leaders, conſpire againſt *Henry* of *Navarre*, utterly to deſtroy him. A great Army therefore is raiſed; *Henry* procures for his aſſiſtance, out of *Germany*, 20 thouſand Foot, and five thouſand Horſe: but theſe were wholly overthrown by the *Guiſians*, being firſt forſaken by the *Helvetians*. The ſame year King *Henry* 3^d^, was ſo curbed by the *Guiſian* faction, that his ſubjects began to ſleight him; wherefore to be rid of their power, he under ſhew of great friendſhip and ſerious buſineſs, invites the *Guiſian* brothers to a Conference, whom he preſently cauſed to be
1588 ſlain, and the reſt of their confederacy to be impriſoned. *Katherin Medices*, the Kings mother, called by ſome the fourth fury of *France*, as being the fomenter of ſeditions, died with grief. The *Pariſians* declare *Charles Main* brother to the *Guiſes*, Governour of *Paris*, and of the Iſle of *France*, leaving out the Kings name: but the *Sorboniſts* were againſt *Main*. He having raiſed an Army, declares he will maintain the Roman Religion. *Lions*, *Orleans*, *Rohan*, and other places, ſide with him. King *Henry* was aſſiſted by the King of *Navarres* forces, and the Nobility; by which the Pontifician Army is defeated, and *Paris* ſo ſtrictly beſieged, that they were like to ſtarve within. When in the mean while *Jacob Clement*, a Dominican, under pretence of ſpeaking with the King, run him in the belly with a poiſoned knife, whom the King killed immediatly with the ſame knife. King *Henry* died of his wound within fourteen howres, having firſt named for his heir *Henry* of *Navarre*; to whom the Nobility ſwore Allegiance, conditionally, that he would permit Liberty of Conſcience; then he falls preſently to weakning the *Guiſian* faction, and taking in of Towns. In the time of King *Henry* the third, the order of the Holy Ghoſt was inſtituted. The King of *Navarre* and *Conde* are by the Pope excommunicated: *Conde* at laſt is poiſoned, and *Navarre* excluded from ſucceſſion. The Battel of *Courtrey* is fought, in which *Navarre*
1589 was victor, and the Duke *Joyeuſe* ſlain.

In *Henry* 4. King of *Navarre*, after ſeven Civil Wars, the Crown of *France* is transferred to the Houſe of *Burbon*, which *Henry* as yet could not quietly enjoy; for *De Main* troubles him, till he was defeated at *Arque*. The Parliament of *Rohan* pronounce all thoſe Traitors, who ſide with the King. The Popes quarrel with him for his Religion; to wit, *Gregory* 13. and his ſucceſſor *Felix Montaltus*, or *Sixtus* 5. who from obſcurity, was elevated to this high dignity: yet he woud be at no charges in relieving *Paris*, when it was again beſieged by the King, fearing to make *Spain*, (which now gaped for *France*) too great. Yet King *Henry* out of pity to his people, permits *Alexander Farneſius*, to cary in proviſions. Pope *Sixtus* having procured the *Spaniards* diſpleaſure, for not affording his aſſiſtance to them, fell into a deep melancholy, and ſo died, having before ſhewed great joy for the converſion of the Marqueſs of *Baden* to the Roman faith; which Marqueſs, *James* by
1590 name, ſhortly after died of a dyſſentery, in the flower of his youth. Preſently *John Baptiſta Caſtanæus*, is elected, and called *Urban* 7. whoſe election was accompanied with an Earthquake that ſhook *Auſtria*, *Moravia*, and *Bohemia*, with an extraordinary dry Summer, that the Rivers were like ſcalding water. This *Urban* being taken with a feaver, died within thirteen days, leaving the Chair to *Nicholas Sfondratus*, or *Gregory* 14. he was born the ſeventh month after his conception, and died the tenth month after his election. About which time the plague and famin ſo raged in *Italy*, that at *Rome* in one year there

there died sixty thousand people: yet this *Gregory* spent on the *French* wars, five hundred thousand Crowns of the publick Treasury, and forty thousand out of his own coffers. King *Henry* perceiving that *Farnesius* would not fight, caused his Army to take up their Winter Quarters all about *Paris*. *Farnesius* after four furious assaults, takes *Corbilium* upon *Sene*, which by the King is again retaken. The *Spaniards* are defeated by the *Momorancies*, and the *Savoyen* prepartions in *Province*, hindred by *Digvier*. The *Germanes* plunder *Lorrains* Country, and are now on the borders of *France*. *Parma* returns to the *Netherlands*, having enough to do with *Grave Maurice*. The Popes Army under *Sfondrat*, the Popes Nephew, did no great matter; for *Parma* not being able to come and join with them, they retreated, upon the report of Pope *Gregories* death; to whom succeeded *Johannes Antonius* of *Piemont*, called by the name of *Innocent 9*. he sate but two months, and was of the *Spanish* faction: to him succeeded *Hippolitus Aldobrandinus*, or *Clement* the 8. King *Henry* besiegeth *Rohan*, which at last is relieved by the Duke of *Parma* Divers skirmishes and encounters there were, to the loss of much blood. *Parma* leaving the greatest part of his Army in *France*, returns to *Belgium*, and deludes the King by delays. At last as he was returning now the third time to drive the King from the siege of *Paris*, he was taken in *Artois*, with sudden and sharp tortures in his body, of which he died: *Maurice* strives to take the Sluce but could not; yet he takes *Steinvick*, and some other Towns. King *Henry* sets out a Remonstrance, whereby he declares that he is no enemy to the Roman Religion, as the world thought, but that his intentions and indeavours were to maintain and preserve it in all places, where hitherto it hath continued; for this cause the Parliament of *Turon* condemns the Popes Bull, in excommunicating King *Henry* for heresie, and causeth it to be burnt by the Hangman, as a seditious and impious Libel: The Popes Legat is also commanded to appear before them, that he might be tried by Law, and receive due punishment for his temerity.

An. Christi

1592

The *French* being weary of their Civil wars, an assembly of the *Guisian* faction, or the holy Leaguers, is called, for electing of a new King. Some were for *Isabella*, the *Infanta* of *Spain*; but that election was against the *Salic* Law: others for *Ernestus* the Arch-Duke, Governour of *Belgium*, *Farnesius* the Duke of *Parma* being dead; which *Ernestus* was also appointed Husband for the *Infanta*: but this motion was generally rejected. Others again, will have him to be King, whom the *Spaniard* shall nominate, and that he shall mary the *Infanta*. *Henry* son to *Guise* that was killed, is nominated King by some; *Main* seeing they could not agree about the Election, procured three months Truce with *Navarre*, to gain so much time for settling the kingdom. This Truce was disliked by the Popes Legat. Upon this the Nobility perswade the King to profess the Roman Faith, shewing it was against the *Salic* Law, that an Heretick should be King of *France*, and against reason, that he should be called the most Christian King, who was the chief Patron of Heresie, and an enemy to that Christian profession which hath continued in *France* hitherto since the beginning of Christianity. The King fearing all would forsake him, if he continued a Calvinist, desires a Conference with the Bishops, and other Doctors of the Church. At length after five hours discourse, the King in white, with a shining Taper before him, goeth to S. *Dennis* Church, where being asked by the Bishop of *Biturix*, what his desire was; answered, his desire was to be received into the bosom of the Catholick, Apostolick, Roman Church, and to live and die in that religion: So being led to the Altar, he is absolved, to the great indignation of the Popes Legat, and the Monks, esteeming this reconciliation of no validity: but to the great joy, and content of the people. The King sends *Lewis Gonzaga*, Ambassador to the Pope, who in all humility and submission, desires the Popes Benediction: who answers,

An. Chriſti ſwers, that he ſhall never be perſwaded the Kings reconciliation to the Church to be ſincere, till an Angell from heaven come down, and tell it in his eare; but the *Guiſians* to pacifie Pope *Clement*, cauſe the Counſell of *Trent*, purely, and without any condition to be proclaimed and obſer-
1594 ved, and ſtrengthen their own ſide as well as he could; but ſome Monks ſuborne one *Barterius* to kill the King, who was prevented at *Melodunum*, and put to death: The Truce drawing to an end, the Pope, *Spaniard*, and *Mayne*, are deviſing new plots. Mean while *Meux*, *Orleans*, *Bourges*, and others fall off from the League to the King, who is inaugurate at *Chartres* by *Thuanus* Biſhop there.

In the abſence of *Mayne*, *Briſſacus* Governor of *Paris* openeth the gates and delivers the Towne to the King with ſuch order and care, that there was no killing nor plundering at all; The Garriſon is diſmiſſed without the leaſt affront offered them. *Rowen* followes the example of *Paris*, ſo doth *Poictiers* and many more Townes; but other places that refuſed, are forced by Arms to ſubmit. *Henry* of *Guiſe* reconciles himſelf to the King, who perceiving that the *Spaniard* did ſtill foment Factions in his Kingdome, upon the perſwaſions of *Henry* of *Bullion*, he ſends ſupply of men and arms to Grave *Maurice* againſt the *Spaniards*. Shortly after one *John Caſtel* being perſwaded the King was yet an Heretick, and not truely abſolved, gets into the crowd at *Paris* where the King was, whom he ſtruck at with his knife, and beat out two of his teeth, intending to have ſtabbed him in the throat: The fellow is preſently apprehended and examined, he confeſſed his intention, and that he was bred in the Jeſuits Colledg at *Paris*, but was ſorry he had not killed that Heretick King; whereupon he is condemned and tortured to death. The Jeſuits are baniſht *France*, and it's made Treaſon for any to ſend their children out of the Kingdome to be inſtructed by them. The young mans father is baniſhed for 9 years, and his goods confiſcate, his houſe is levelled with the ground, and a Pyramide of Marble erected with a golden Croſs, and the 4 Cardinall vertues on it, as a perpetuall monument of this bold fact. The Proteſtants Pattent is alſo renewed, whereby they are made
1595 capable of all honors and dignities equally with Catholicks. *Erneſtus* being dead at *Bruſſels*, *Peter Guſman* undertakes the Government of *Belgium*, and regains *Hoi*, lately taken by *Henry*. He fights a great battel with *Bullion*, near *Durlan* which he takes with divers other Townes. After this the King is entertained at *Lions* with all ſolemnity, and at *Rome* by the interceſſion of Biſhop *Perrone*, and many other Prelats whom he had ſent thither, he obtains the Apoſtolicall Benediction, and is abſolved from his Curſe; ſo being received into the boſome of the Church, is honored with the Title of [moſt Chriſtian.] *Charles Mayne*, *Henry* of *Savoy*, *Joyeuſe*, and other great men are reconciled to the King, who freely pardons them, and undertakes to pay their debts, but to the grief and oppreſſion of the people. *Caſſal* Conſul of *Marſylles* is ſlaine, for intending to deliver up that Citie to the *Spaniard*: So all now is quieted ex-
1597 cept *Britany*.

A peace between *France* and *Spain* is at laſt concluded. *Mercurian* with his Spaniſh Faction in *Britany* ſubmits to King *Henry*, to whom King *Philip* reſtores *Callis*, *Capel*, and divers other places, and he to *Philip* the Principality of *Carolotons*; and ſo all old quarrels are conſipit. *Savoy* hereafter is to remain free of it ſelf, but whereas the difference about the dominion of *Saluſſes* between *France* and *Savoy*, was not yet decided, but left
1599 to the Popes arbitration. Two years after the War is renewed, in which the Duke loſeth his *Ciſalpin* Juriſdiction, his Fort of Saint *Catherin* which threatned *Geneva*, is demoliſhed, and divers other Towns ſurrendred to

the

the French. A Divorce being made between the King and his Queen *Margaret*, ſiſter of *Henry* the ſecond, becauſe of their conſanguinity, to which Divorce ſhe willingly aſſented, onely deſiring that in ſtead of the Kings Wife, ſhe might be called his Siſter: I ſay, this Divorce being made long ſince, the King is deſired to marie again for procreation. Therefore *Mary* the daughter of *Francis* Duke of *Florence*, is betrothed to him, by whom he had *Lewis*, with other children. The King was by *Perorne* accuſed of divers falſquotations in *Philip Mornays* Books, purpoſely to diſgrace him and his profeſſion: The edict of *Nams* concerning the Proteſtants Priviledges, procured much hatred againſt the King, by the Pontificats; therefore divers deſperat plots againſt him were contrived, and diſcovered, for which conceived and intended regicide *Charls Ridicove* of *Gaunt*, *Peter Angere*, and *Nicholas Engliſh* juſtly ſuffered death. At this time was ſeen in *Paris*, a Cornuted Monſter, ſome Virgins alſo in *France* and *Germany*, were known to endure hunger three years and more, a ſtrict Law is made againſt Duels, and death threatned to the challenger. To *Clemens* the 8 at *Rome*, ſucceeded *Alexander Medices*, called by the name of *Leo*, who died 25 days after, his ſucceſſor was *Leo Camillus*, or *Paul* 5. Duke *Joyeuſe* entreth the Order of *Capuchins*, after a while takes arms, and then returns to his Monaſtery. Cardinal *Aldebrandin* comes into *France* to make the Duke of *Savoys* peace, whom the French had ſubdued for not reſtoring the Marquiſat of *Saluſſes*, according to the Articles of peace at *Vervieque*. Marſhall *Byron* intendeth Treaſon againſt the King, is ſent for, and denieth all that *Fineus* his accuſer laid againſt him; but the proofs were ſo manifeſt, that he was condemned and privatly executed; on the Scaffold he opened his breaſt, and ſhewed the wounds he had received in the Kings Cauſe. By Father *Cottons* means the Jeſuits are reſtored to certain places. Count *Avergne* is impriſoned for new practiſes: After this the Duke of *Orleans* is born to the King, and the year after was born the Kings third ſon, the Duke of *Anjou*, and two years after, *Mary* was born, who married to King *Charles* of Great *Britain*. King *Henry* after he had ſetled his Dominions, and maintained them divers years in peace, having placed a great Army upon the confines of *Germany*, which cauſed divers ſuſpitions among the Catholick party, is at laſt murthered by *Ravilliac* in his Coach, as he was viewing the preparation that was making for his Queens reception, who was Crowned the day before: He was ſtabbed twice in the heart; the murtherer being apprehended would confeſs nothing; neither for faire words nor tortures, nor did he ſhew any ſignes of ſorrow, affirming that he was ſet on by none but by inward motions, and the dictates of his conſcience, having put on this reſolution three yeare a goe: So he was put to death by exquiſit tortures of burning pincers, and his body torne in ſunder by horſes: In this Kings time the making of ſilk Stuffs was brought into *France*. The Jeſuits *Pyramid* was demoliſhed, and a fountain erected in its place. The Order of Carmelit Nuns is ſet up by *Catherin* of *Longevil* in the Suburbs of Saint *Jacob*. A French Colonie is tranſported into *Canada* in *America*.

An. Chriſti

1600

1607

1609

1610

King *Henry* the fourth of *France* being dead, his Queen is made Regent during her ſons Minority, who is publickly proclaimed heir to the Crown of *France*, and ſo the great Army is disbanded, which ſome thought had been intended for *Cleve*, , others for *Artois*, others for the Empire. The Queen Regent brought much obloqui and envy on her ſelf, by preferring Marquis *Ancre* her favourit; and of the *Florentin* Familie, before all the Princes of *France*: It was ſaid he uſed inchantments, he held indeed the young King, the Queen, and the whole kingdome in ſubjection: Hee exhauſted the Exchequer, made Laws, and unmade them as he pleaſed:

1692

Which

An. Christi Which cauſed *Henry* of *Burbon*, Prince of *Conde*, *Henry* of *Bullion*, *Nivern*, and others to forſake the Court in diſcontent, and to raiſe Tumults. The Decrees of the Counſell of *Trent* at laſt are divulged, by the importunity of the *Italian* and Pontificiall Partie; but the Parliament of *Paris* ordered that the writings of *Mariana*, *Suarez*, *Belarmin* and others concerning the Popes power of depoſing Kings, ſhould be ſuppreſſed. Cardinal *Perone* with the Clergy, and moſt of the Nobility ſtand up in defence of
1614 the Counſels Authority; but King *James* by his writings declared he was of a contrary minde. *Conde's* and *Ancres* Forces had a ſharp encounter, but *Ancre* prevailed, which Victory was at laſt his deſtruction, and *Conde's* captivity: For when *Longueville*, *Bullion*, *Mayne*, and other Princes underſtood that *Conde* was detained as a priſoner in *Paris* by *Ancres* means, they ſuddenly depart the Court, and are proſcribed by the King: The *Pariſians* being madded at this, fall preſently to plundring of *Ancres* treaſures, and ſpoyling his houſe, ſo that with much adoe were they pacified at laſt by the Kings Guard. The Princes publiſh a Remonſtance, to let the people know what corruptions were now maintained, both in Court and Kingdome, and that therefore they were neceſſitated to take
1615 armes to ſuppreſs theſe abuſes; they alſo by their friends, privatly acquaint the King of the dangers that would fall on him and his Kingdome, if ſuch abuſes were tolerated, and *Ancres* treacherous actions countenanced; therefore they humbly beſeech him that he would not hazard his own fortunes, and the welfare of a moſt floriſhing Kingdome for one mans ſake. Upon this, Order is given to *Vitrius* Captain of the Guard, to diſpatch *Ancre*, who one day ſtops the proud and great Favorit, as he was entring the Palace. At this, *Ancre* preſently began to draw upon the Captain, but before he could pull out his ſword, he is ſhot dead on the place with a Piſtoll: When his death was known in the City, the people exceedingly rejoyced; and to ſhew their hatred on him (though now dead) they found out his corps which was privatly buried, this they draw out of the grave, and having with all manner of diſgraces abuſed it, at length they flung it in a great fire, and turned it into aſhes: His wife being condemned for witchcraft and other diabolicall arts, is hanged, and her body burnd; thus by the juſt puniſhment of a few, the whole Kingdome is preſerved, the Kings anger appeaſed, the peopls fury ſatisfied, and the Princes willingly reduced to obedience: But the Queen in diſpleaſure, having laid down her Regency went to *Blois*; and *Conde* for his unruly tongue is detained in cuſtody.

After theſe ſad paſſages, ſome joy follows in *France* upon the marriage of *Victor Amadeus*, the Duke of *Savoys* eldeſt ſon, Prince of *Piemont*, with *Chriſtina* the Kings ſiſter, the King was married already to the *Infanta* of *Spain*. The Queen-Mother being weary of her abode in *Blois*, got Duke *de Eſpernon* to convey her thence to *Angoleſme* without the Kings knowledge, who took this ill, and as a ſlighting of his Authority, therefore he raiſeth an Army purpoſely to be revenged on *Eſpernon*; but being at laſt pacified by divers meſſages from *Eſpernon* and the Queen-Mo-
1620 ther to him, ſhe is permitted to ſtay at *Andes*; and *Conde* is ſet free. A certain *Italian* being found teaching of Atheiſme at *Tholouſe*, is by the Kings command apprehended, his tongue cut out, and he burnt alive. Mean while the French King is courted by Ambaſſadors from the Emperor, and likewiſe from *Frederick* Count Palatin, now in conteſtation for *Bohemia*. King *Lewis* ſends Ambaſſadors to *Spain* for opening the *Valtelin*, which being the mouth of *Italy*, was now ſtopped and ſhut up againſt the French and *Switzers*, divers conteſtations were held about this buſineſs, but ſtill interrupted. At this time *de Luine* the Kings Favorit, was in great power;

power on whom he had conferred all *Ancres* eſtate: This was ill reſented by the Peers, chiefly by *Longuevil*, *Nemours*, *Mayne*, and *Rohan*, who betake themſelves to the Queen Mother; but the King preventing them by the faithfull ſervice of *Conde*, poſſeſſeth *Caen* in *Normandy*, before the Princes could unite their Forces. More of their towns ſubmit to the King: At length the Queens army being defeated, the Princes were brought to ſuch a ſtrait, that they were fain to Petition for pardon, and the Queen Mother to acknowledge her ſons milde Government: then the Kings army is turned upon *Gaſcony*; thoſe of *Bearn* were commanded to reſtore to the *Roman* Clergy, their old Rites and Revenues, which they refuſing to do, were ſuddenly ſurpriſed by the King, who having changed their Gariſons, reſtores to the Catholicks their Churches, Honors, and Revenues, and ſo annexeth that Province which hitherto had enjoyed much freedome, to the Crown of *France*. This put the Proteſtants to new ſhifts and conſultations, divers meetings to this purpoſe were had; a Synod is called at *Rotchel*, which contrary to the Kings ſtrict and peremptory command is held, to the undoing afterward of that town, and the Proteſtant cauſe in *France*; for the King ſubdued the Town of Saint *John* after a hard ſiege of 20 days, and beats down the Walls; the like he did to *Clerak* in *Gaſcony*, and many other Proteſtant Towns to the number of 60. he brings under his ſubjection, not without great ſlaughter of ſuch as made reſiſtance, for many skirmiſhes were fought. *Montalban* alſo is beſieged a long time, but in vain; for ſickneſs and the winter floods forced the beſiegers to riſe and be gone: Among divers that loſt their lives here, *Henry* of *Mayne*, Viceroy of *Gaſcony* was one. After this, whilſt the King was beleaguering *Mugurt*, Duke *d' Luin*, Maſter of the Horſe (which place *Ancre* had before) in the midſt of his honors and wealth, which was exceeding great, died in *December*: A ſudden fire having in *October* before burned down the two bridges of the goldſmiths, and the exchange, to the great loſs of the Merchants. *An. Chriſti* 1622

Pope *Paul* 5 died of an Apoplexie the 69 year of his age, and the 16 of his Pontificat: K. *Lewis*, the pacification being broke, beſiegeth and taketh *Montpelier* with ſome other Proteſtant towns, at laſt upon the ſight of ſo much bloud ſhed, and ſo many ſlaughtered men, he comes to a new agreement, at which divers of the Pontifician ſide were offended. At *Rome Gregory* 15. called before *Alexander Lodoiſius*, who ſucceeded Pope *Paul* 5. died of a Palſie: To whom ſucceeded Cardinall *Maphæus Berberin*, he took the name of *Urban* 8. In *France* things being ſomewhat quieted, King *Lewis* enters into league with the *Venetians* and *Savoyens* againſt *Spain*, for regaining of the *Valtelin*, which after many skirmiſhes and towns taken, falls wholly into the power of theſe Confederates, whereupon the *French* & *Savoyens* enter *Italy*, and make war againſt *Genua*, for furniſhing the *Spaniard* with money and proviſions; but a new fire of civil war breaking out in *France*, calls home the *French* forces out of *Italy*. The Duke of *Sonlize* with the *Rotchellers* had defeated the Kings fleet in a ſea-ſight; whereupon under *Montmerancy* the King renewes his ſea-fight, and beats *Sonlize*, who preſently fled into *England*. *Rotchel* is beſieged both by ſea and land, divers Forts being erected againſt it, divers eruptions are made from the town, divers Petitions are exhibited for peace, but all in vain; the Proteſtants complain that the Articles of the laſt pacification were not kept by the King, that they had not as was promiſed the free uſe of their Religion, that the Forts ſet up againſt *Rotchel*, were not as yet demoliſhed, that the Synodicall meetings of the Miniſters were hindred; hereupon the two brothers, *Rohan* and *Sonlize*, the chief of the Proteſtant Party in *France*, implore the aſſiſtance of *England*, which now ſtood not upon good 1624

An. Christi terms with *France*, since the sending away of Queen *Maries French* Clergy, for being too busie about her confessions and penances; the *English* also had taken some *French* Snips carrying provision for the *Spaniard*, and the *French* had made a stay of all *English* goods there, for satisfying their losses: Hereupon a fleet under the Duke of *Buckingham* is sent to the Isle of *Ree*, lying over against *Rotchel*; at first he drove the *French* into the Castle, but afterward out of carelesness he suffered his forces to be cut off, and so returns home with loss and dishonor. *Vendome* the Kings bastard brother is imprisoned. *Diguiers* lately converted to the Church of *Rome*, is made Master of the horse, Cardinal *Richelieu* being Admirall of *France*, is imployed against *Rotchel*. *Conde* rageth with fire and sword against their Protestant towns of *Gascony*, putting all ages and sexes promiscuously to death; but at last hath a defeat given him by *Rohan*; the *Rotchelers* stoutly re-
1628 sisted the siege, so long as their hopes of *English* aid, and their provisions cõtinued, but when both failed them, & famin began to prevail, their stout hearts were forced to yeild, for the harbour was so stopped and barricadoed, that ships could not get in to relieve them, nor return the provisions which *Buchingham* had borrowed from them, therefore they surrender the Town, promise to pay the fine laid on them, and to maintain the Kings Garrison there, till they build him a Castle within the walls, on their own charges; upon this they obtain their lives, estates, and Religion: In this siege there died by famin and the sword, 15 thousand of the besieged, the plague also raged in the Kings camp: *Rohan* and *Soubize* are both comprized within these articles of *Rotchel* conditionally they restore what they yet withhold from the King; *Montalban* also with some other places are included in the same peace, if within 3 months they lay down arms, and submit to the King; upon this peace between the King and his Protestant subjects: a peace also is concluded between *England* and *France*, by the death of *Buckingham*, who began and fomented this war.

France being now at peace with *England*, is better able to assist the
1629 Duke of *Niverne*, *Charls* by name, to recover his right in *Mantua*, which he claimed (his cousin *German Vincentius* being now dead) as his due both by will and propinquitie of blood: this Principality he seised on without acquainting *Cæsar* Lord of the Fee; the *Spaniard* and *Savoyen* stormed at this, who had an old quarrel with the Dukes of *Mantua* about *Montsferrat*; so now *France* and *Spain* renew their old strife. The *Savoyen* sides with *Spain*, the *Venetians* with *Mantua*; *Naples*, *Sicily*, *Millan* prepare for
1630 war. The quarrel in *France* between *Gaston* Duke of *Orleans*, and Cardinal *Richelieu*, took rise from the desire the Monsieur had to coyn money with his own stamp, as being next heir to the Crown, and a priviledge equally belonging to him, and to the King; this was denied and refused by the Cardinall, wherefore the Duke in anger leaves the Court.

The King by the Cardinalls advice, set a Guard upon his Brother; this the Duke considering to be both dangerous and disgracefull, withdrawes himselfe privately thence, and raiseth an Army of Malecontents: A battel is fought, in which the Duke is defeated, and *Montmorancie* taken in the skirmish; the King to appease all civill differen-
1632 ces, is content to pardon his brother, and his Courtiers; he commands all foraigne Souldiers to depart the Kingdome, *Montmorancie* is required by the King, to be left to his mercy; pardon also is promised to the Gentrie and Judges of the Dukes partie, upon their humble Petition; the Bishops of his Faction are put over to the censure of the next Synod, so peace upon these terms being setled, the Duke enters *Lyons* in great State; but *Montmorancie*, with whom the King

was

was more implacable, is condemned of High Treaſon. Much interceſſion was made for him, but in vain. His head is cut off at *Tolouſe* the thirty fifth year of his age. *Gaſto* being ſtruck with this rigour, departeth the kingdom, and wrote back to the King, that he was not now tied to any Articles or Covenants, yet promiſeth that he will act nothing to the prejudice of his Native Countrey. *An. Chriſti*

CHAP. XXIV.

A Proſecution of the Engliſh *Hiſtory, under the reigns of* Henry *the* 4th, Henry *the* 5th, *and* Henry *the* 6th; *from the year* 1399. *till the year* 1460. *containing divers paſſages of the* French *and* Scots *affairs.*

HEnry the fourth of *Bullinbrook*, Duke of *Hartford*, ſon and heir to *John* of *Gaunt*, the yonger brother of *Lionel* D. of *Clarence*, is elected and Crowned King, his predeceſſor King *Richard* being depoſed as is already ſaid. Which depoſition is condemned by *John* Biſhop of *Carliſle*, in that firſt Parliament aſſembled by King *Henry* 4. wherein he ſhews the King was worſe uſed then ordinary Malefactors, becauſe they are not condemned (as the King was) before they have anſwered to the objected crimes. But the Biſhop for this ſpeech was attached by the Earl *Marſhal*, and impriſoned in the Abby of S. *Albons*; then was the Crown intailed to King *Henry* and his heirs, and forthwith *Henry* the Kings eldeſt ſon is made Prince of *Wales*, D. of *Cornwall*, and Earl of *Cheſter*. After the Parliament was ended, the K. is invited to *Oxford*, where ſolemn Juſts were to be holden, by *Edw. Plantaginet* Duke of *Aumarle*, *Thomas Holland* Duke of *Surry*, *John Holland* his brother Duke of *Exeter*, both half brothers to King *Richard*, *John Montague* Earl of *Saliſbury*, *Hugh Spencer* Earl of *Glouceſter*, with others, who pretending a Triumph, intended the Kings deſtruction privately, by Indentures under their hands and ſeals. All theſe plotters met at *Oxford*, attended with a ſtrong guard of Archers, only *Aumarle* was abſent, becauſe his father the old Duke, having found out the plot, by the Indentures, which by chance he ſpied in his ſons breaſt, made haſte to acquaint the King therewith, which the young Duke perceiving, being well mounted, out-rod his father, and came to *Windſor* Caſtle, where the King then was, preparing for his *Oxford* journey, which he diverted by revealing the Treaſon, and ſo obtained his pardon. The King preſently raiſeth an Army to ſuppreſs thoſe conſpirators, who being informed that their plot was diſcovered, they diſguiſed one *Magdalen* (who was one of the plotters, and much reſembled the depoſed King) in royal robes, giving out he was King *Richard*; and ſo with all their Troops they march towards *London*, againſt the King, who was now on his march with twenty thouſand men towards them. The noiſe of the Kings approach ſo diſheartned the companions of theſe traiterous Lords, that they ran away and left their Lords helpleſs, and comfortleſs, who ſhortly after in their flight are taken and executed. 1399 1400 1401

The King being delivered from this danger, cauſed *Richard* to be murthered (as is ſaid) leſt in his name the like Treaſon might be attempted: *Charles* the ſixt of *France*, Father in Law to King *Richard*, hearing of his ſufferings and wrongs, but not as yet of his death, raiſeth an Army to relieve him, and to be revenged on King *Henry*. He was marched as far as *Piccardy*, where he underſtood that King *Richard* was dead, whereupon he changeth his reſolution, knowing he could do the dead no good, and disbandeth his Army: Yet

An. Chriſti ſhortly after, purpoſing to be revenged on King *Henry*, by taking his towns in *Aquitan*, raiſeth another Army; but before he was ready, King *Henry* was landed in *France* with an *Engliſh* Army, conducted by *Piercy* Earl of *Worceſter*; which cauſed King *Charles* alter his minde, and disband his forces. Yet *Henry* diſtruſting the weakneſs of his Title, deſires that *Iſabel* King *Charls* his daughter, and wife ſometime to King *Richard*, ſhould be maried to his eldeſt ſon Prince of *Wales*; which *Charles* refuſed to do, wherefore ſhe is conveied into *France*, and maried to her couſin *Charles*, her uncles eldeſt ſon, the Duke of *Orleans*. The noiſe of the late Treaſon, of the *French* preparation, of the murther of King *Richard*; animated the *Scots* and *Welch* againſt him. *Owen Glendor* ſpoils the Marches near him: The Lord *Grey* of *Ruthen*, and
1402 *Edmund Mortimer*, rightful heir to the Crown, are ſent againſt him; but they loſt the battel, and are taken priſoners: *Edmund* is kept in a dark Dungeon, on hope the King would ranſom him, which was leaſt of his thoughts, knowing it was more ſafe for him, to have *Edmund* a priſoner, then at liberty. The *Scots* invade the Northern parts, but are repulſed by King *Henry*, who purſues them with fire and ſword into their own Country. But he was no ſooner gone, when they return with twenty thouſand ſpoiling *Northumberland*; Sir *Henry Hotſpur* ſon and heir to *Henry Piercy*, fell upon them, killed ten thouſand, and took five hundred priſoners; among which were four Earls. The next year following, one thouſand two hundred Gentlemen are ſent to *Glendor*, from *France*, to be Leaders of his diſordered Rout: But twelve of their beſt ſhips were drowned in a ſtorm, the reſt returned home with much difficulty. After this, twelv thouſand *French* are ſent into *Wales*, who ſafely landing, joyned with the *Welch* forces, conſiſting of ten thouſand. King *Henry* in his own perſon marcheth with a ſtrong army into *Wales*: Upon the report of which, the *French* doubting more of the *Welch* inconſtancy, then of their own power or valour, return to their ſhips without ſtriking ſtroak. Hereupon the *Welch* fled and vaniſhed, ſo that the King finding no enemy to fight with, re-
1403 turns in peace.

King *Henry* to ſtrengthen himſelf with friends abroad, againſt his troubles at home, maried with *Jane*, Widow of *John*, Duke of *Britany*, and gave his eldeſt daughter *Blanch* in mariage to *William* Duke of *Bavarr*, ſon and heir apparent of *Lodowick* Emperor; then he matched *Philip* his youngeſt daughter to the King of *Denmark*: After this, *Piercy* of *Northumberland*, *Piercy* of *Worceſter*, and *Henry Hotſpur*, are required by the King to deliver up to him their *Scots* priſoners. This they refuſe to do, as being againſt the Law of Arms, which cauſed ſome diſtaſte: ſo that diſcontent daily riſing, the *Piercies* deſire the King to ranſom *Edmund Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, their impriſoned Couſin, hoping thereby to reſtore him to his Crown; this is denyed by the King as dangerous to his own ſafety, giving out that he voluntarily become *Owens* priſoner, to countenance the *Welch* rebellion, and treacheries againſt his Crown. Upon this, the *Piercies* in anger paid his ranſom, and ſet him free on their own coſt, and withal made a League with *Owen Glendor*, to depoſe King *Henry*, with whom alſo joyned the *Scots*, the Earl of *Stafford*, and *Scroop*, Arch-Biſhop of *York*, the beheaded Earl of *Salisburies* brother, with many others; then they publiſhed and ſent him theſe enſuing Articles: 1. That againſt his Oath he took after his baniſhment, never to meddle with the King nor Crown, hath wickedly ſeized on the Crown, and made himſelf King. 2. That he had impriſoned King *Richard*, and cauſed him to be murthered. 3. That he hath ever ſince unjuſtly kept the Crown from *Edmund Mortimer*, the true heir, as being of *Clarence* the elder brother to *John* of *Gant*, father to the uſurping King. 4. That he had impoſed on the people divers needleſs and heavy Taxes. 5. That againſt his Coronation Oath, he had procured Burgyſhips for the Parliament, of ſuch as would ſerve his turn.

6. That

6. That he hath hitherto denyed to ranſom his Couſin, giving out falſly he was become a voluntary priſoner, to colour the Welch Treaſon and Rebellion. And ſo upon theſe Articles, they defie the King; vow his deſtruction, and the Earl *Mortimers* reſtitution. Hereupon Armies are raiſed on both ſides; and near *Shrewsbury* a battel is fought, in which a great part of the *Scots* who bravely aſſaulted the King, are cut off; *Hotſpur*, with ſome other prime Leaders, and many thouſands more are ſlain, *Worceſter* is taken priſoner, the reſt fled: On the Kings part were loſt one thouſand ſix hundred; of the enemies ſix thouſand, of which, thirty ſix the King ſlew with his own hand. Earl *Duglas* for his valour in a duel with the King, is ſet free without ranſom. The next day thanks are given to God: *Worceſter* is beheaded, and many of the Ring-leaders are hanged, drawn, and quartered. *An.Chriſti* 1404

The King to proſecute his Victory, ſends his Army under the Prince of *Wales*, againſt the Rebels, but they were fled: *Glendor* forſaken, and at laſt famiſhed in the Woods, many of whoſe conſorts were taken, and executed. *Piercy* of *Northumberland* voluntarily ſubmits to the Kings mercy, proteſting his ignorance in that Treaſon; the King for that time gave him good words, with liberty to come and go, becauſe he had the Caſtle of *Barwick*, and ſome other ſtrong holds in his poſſeſſion. After this, *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans*, ſends a challenge to King *Henry*; to whom he returns this anſwer, that his former actions could acquit him from the name of a coward; that Kings ought not to expoſe themſelves to danger, but when neceſſity required; that the Duke was not his equal, & that notwithſtanding he would at all times be ready to repreſs the Dukes inſolencies, or raſh attempts on him or his people. The Duke hereupon in a raſh paſſion, beſiegeth the Town of *Vergien* in *Guien*, where having loſt many of his men after three months ſiege, was forced to riſe and depart with diſhonour. The Duke of *Burgoin* alſo, by the *French* Kings leave, raiſeth ſix thouſand men at *Armos*, one thouſand five hundred Croſs-bows, and twelve thouſand foot men, for regaining of *Callice*. But the *French* King hearing what preparations are making in *England*, and conſidering the difficultie of this attempt, requires the Duke to deſiſt from his intended enterpriſe. This he conceived to proceed from the Duke of *Orleans*, who was jealous of *Bourgoins* valour. King *Henry* having eſcaped two dangers by rebellions, is now like to fall into the third, plotted by *Piercy* of *Northumberland*, *Scroop* Arch-Biſhop of *York*, *Mowbray* Earl *Marſhal*, and by the Lords *Haſtings*, *Faulconbridge*, *Bardolph*, and others. But the plot in the infancy of it, was diſcovered; therefore the King comes unexpectedly into the North, with an Army, ſurpriſed the Lords, and ſtruck off their heads, but *Piercy* and *Bardolph* fled. *Piercy* afterwards returns from *France* into *Scotland*, where he is promiſed aid againſt the King; to prevent which, the Prince of *Wales* is ſent with an Army thither, where he rageth with fire and ſword, recovers the Caſtles of *Barwick*, and *Anwick*, and makes the *Scots* imbrace a peace. After this the K. croſſing the *Thames* from *Kent*, to *Eſſex*, under the conduct of the Lord of *Camois*, was like to be taken by *French* Pirats. The Lord was ſuſpected and attached of Treaſon, but was cleared by his Peers; the *Scots* enter *Northumberland* with *Piercy*, and *Bardolph*, doing much miſchief. *King Henry* upon this, levied a ſtrong Army, but Sir *Ralph Rokesby* then Sheriff of that County, had defeated the *Scots* already, and had ſmote off the two Lords heads, which he ſent to the *King* for preſents. In the eleventh year of his Reign, a Parliament is called, ſome good Laws are enacted; the *Kings* three younger ſons are made *Thomas* Duke of *Clarence*, *John* Duke of *Bedford*, and *Humphry* Duke of *Glouceſter*. The reſt of this *Kings* life was peaceable; he intended warres againſt the Turk, and was for that purpoſe providing ſhips, men, mony, and other requiſits; but was hindred by an Apoplexy, which at laſt killed him, the forty ſix year of his life, and 14 of his reign. On his death-bed he cauſed the 1408 1411

An. Christi Crown to be placed by him on his pillow, fearing ſome other might take it that had better right. The Prince thinking he had been dead, takes away the Crown; whereat the King ſtarted up, asking who had taken away the Crown: The Prince anſwered, that it was he; then falling back into his bed, ſighed and
1412 ſaid, My Son, My Son, God knows what right I had to this Crown, and how I have enjoyed it: to whom the Prince replyed, good Father comfort your ſelf; the Crown you have, and if you die, I will take it, and keep it with my ſword, as you have done; and then the King died: In this Kings time *Guild-Hall* in *London* was built.

King *Henry* 5. ſucceeded, who of a wild and looſe young Prince, became a wiſe and ſolid King, after he had put away his lewd conſorts. He begins his Reign with the honourable Tranſlation of king *Richards* body from *Langlie*, which with pomp he interred at *Weſtminſter* by Queen *Anne* his firſt wife. The
1413 next year he calls a Parliament at *Leicèſter*, where he is Petitioned to ſuppreſs the Religious houſes of the kingdom, becauſe they were abuſed; the Revenues of which houſes were proportioned to yeild to the king the annual rent of twenty thouſand pounds, and would alſo maintain fifteen Earls, fifteen hundred knights, and above ſix thouſand men at arms, beſides alms-houſes for the poor. But to divert this violent ſtream, *Chichly* Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* being ſolicited by the Abbots, diſcovers to the king his right and title to the Crown of *France*, ſhewing the Clergies willingneſs in furthering his regaining of it, by offering to him a vaſt ſum of mony: This ſpeech daſhed the Petition; and now all mens deſires are bent on *France*: For this cauſe the Duke of *Exeter*, the Kings Uncle, the Arch-Biſhop of *Dublin*, the Lord *Grey*, High Admirall of *England*, and the Biſhop of *Norwich*, attended with five hundred Horſe, were ſent to *Charles* ſixt of *France*, to demand that Crown, with the Dutchies of *Aquitan*, *Normandy*, and *Anjou*, with the Counties of *Poyton* and *Main*; which if they may be delivered up peaceably, then King *Henry* will mary *Katherin* the *French* Kings daughter, and endow her with all the ſaid Dutcheſſe and Provinces; otherwiſe he would gain them by the ſword. The *French* King amazed at this meſſage, deſired ſome time to deliberate, promiſing to ſend Ambaſſadors of his own to King *Henry*, whoſe youth the *Dolphin* ſo ſlighted, that he ſent him a Tun of Tennis Balls as a preſent, fitter for him to play with, then the Conqueſt of *France*. King *Henry* was ſo incenſed at this ſcoff, that he ſwore he would ere long toſs ſo many Iron Balls in *France*, that the ſtrongeſt Rackets there ſhould not be able to return them. The *Dolphin* hearing of the great preparations in *England*, ſends to King *Henry*, that if he would live peaceably with *France*, and take to wife his ſiſter *Katherin*, then he ſhould have with her a large ſum of mony, with ſome ſmall Territories in that kingdom; the *French* Ambaſſadors were honourably uſed and entertained at the Kings Table, who at laſt depart with no other anſwer, but that King *Henry* will have his Provinces and Seigniories which he demands. With this he prepares for his march, having firſt fortified the borders from *Scottiſh* invaſions, and made his mother Queen Regent of *England*, in his abſence. Then he ſends Letters of defiance to the *French* King; but in the mean while *Richard* Earl of *Cambridge*, brother to the Duke of *York*, *Henry* Lord *Scroop*, and Sir *Thomas Gray*, upon great rewards promiſed them by the *Dolphin*, conſpired either to kill king *Henry* in his Tent, or to deliver him unto the *French* King; but the Treaſon is diſcovered, the Traitors apprehended, arraigned, and executed the next day.

The King being landed in *Normandy*, neer *Harflew* upon the *Sein*, beſieged it thirty ſeven days; which the *Dolphin* not being able to relieve, was ſurrendred to *Henrie*, who ſacked it, and ranſomed the inhabitants, which mony, and goods, he beſtowed on his ſoldiers. Then having left his uncle *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*, as Governour there, with thirty five Knights, and one thou-

ſand

ſand five hundred ſoldiers, reſolves to go to *Calice* by Land, for the Winter coming ſooner then uſually, cauſed fluxes, feavers, and great mortality in his Army; for there died above one thouſand five hundred men, beſides the Earl of *Stafford*, Biſhop of *Norwich*, and ſome other Lords; the Kings ſtrength then conſiſted only in two thouſand horſe, and thirteen thouſand Archers: yet the *French* durſt not adventure upon them, though the *Dolphin* who managed this war, by reaſon of his fathers infirmity, had aſſembled above thirty thouſand men: So that the *Engliſh* burned and ſpoiled all in their way, without reſiſtance. The *French* (then at *Rohan*) being unwilling the *Engliſh* ſhould paſs through *France* unfought with, adviſeth with his Councel what he ſhould do; after ſome debate, he was adviſed to fight, who preſently ſends a defiance to king *Henry*, whoſe anſwer was, that his men were now ſick, and in want, yet ſtrong enough to repel all violence, if he were interrupted in his march. A great Army of *French* being aſſembled, they intend to fight the *Engliſh*, who therefore place themſelves in good array near *Agencourt*; the Conſtable of *France* accompanied with ten thouſand horſe-men, beſides foot-men, pages, and other attendants, draw near to the *Engliſh* Army; that night was ſpent by the *French* in jollity, preſuming an abſolute victory the next day, becauſe of their multitudes, and the *Engliſh* paucity: ſo that before hand, they caſt lots for their priſoners. The *French* Army is divided into three battaliaes, the firſt conſiſting of about 16000, was led by the Conſtable, the ſecond or middle being bigger then the other, is commanded by the Dukes of *Barre*, and of *Alanſon*: the third was Marſhalled by the Earl of *Mark*, *Damp*, and others. *King Henris* Vaunt-guard conſiſting of Archers only, is conducted by the Duke of *York*. The main Battel is commanded by the *King* himſelf, in which were his ſtrongeſt Bill men; with him were the Duke of *Glouceſter*, Earl *Marſhal Oxford* and *Suffolk*: the rear-ward is directed by *Thomas* Duke of *Exeter*, the *Kings* Uncle. And to keep off the *French* horſe from the *Engliſh* foot, they are all invironed with ſtakes headed with ſharp irons at both ends, for the eaſier pitching of them in the ground. An Ambuſh alſo of *Engliſh* Archers is placed within a new-caſt hedge, which galled the *French* horſe; ſo that their firſt battail is overthrown, not only of the horſe, but of the foot alſo, who were wounded and troden to death by the diſordered horſe; many of them alſo were knockt down by the *Engliſh* Axes and Bils. Then the *French* main battail is aſſaulted by the *Engliſh*, who being couragiouſly charged by the *French* horſe, retreated orderly, and quickly ſlipped behind their ſtakes, to train the *French* horſe upon them; who ignorantly ruſhing forward, goared their horſes ſo, that the main battail was put out of order, and vanquiſhed. In this encounter the *King* fought hand to hand with the Duke of *Alanſon*, whom he felled to the ground, whoſe life he would have ſaved, but the Guard unadviſedly ſlew him. The third battail conſiſting of greateſt numbers, but worſt men, cowardly ran away, caſting down their arms, and many on their knees craving mercy; the *King* gave order they ſhould be received as priſoners; but whilſt he was purſuing the chaſe, 600 *French* horſe entred the *Kings* Camp, weakly guarded, riffling all that they could, and ſlew many of the Guarders, which cauſed a great out-cry: the *King* hearing it, ſuppoſed a freſh Army had been come to fight him again; whereupon Proclamation is made that all ordinary priſoners ſhould be ſlain, leſt they ſhould indanger the Army in the new conflict. A pitifull ſlaughter is made among them, which coſt the *K.* many ſighs and tears, when he underſtood that no freſh Army was come.

An. Chriſti

1414

1415

Though the *K.* and his men were tired with that days ſervice, yet fearing the worſt, he puts his whole Army in Battalia, when preſently the Earls of *Marle* and *Faulconbridge*, aſſailed him with ſix hundred men, but they were quickly overthrown and ſlain. Towards the Evening of this day, the *King* with

An. Christi with his Army gave ſolemn thanks to God for his Victory, and then gave leave to his ſoldiers to riffle thoſe they had ſlain. Which being done, he marcheth into *Calice*, where he is received with great joy. In this battail were ſlain the Conſtable and Admiral of *France*, the Duke of *Alanſon*, the Duke of *Brabant*, the Duke of *Barre*, with divers Earls, twenty five Lords, eight thouſand Knights, Eſquires, and Gentlemen, beſides multitudes of common ſoldiers; the Duke of *Orleans*, the Duke of *Burbon*, with divers Lords, many were taken priſoners. On the *Engliſh* ſide were ſlain the Duke of *York*, the Earl of *Suffolk*, with ſix hundred others: So after the King had refreſhed himſelf and Army ſome time in *Calice*, he returns with much ſpoil and wealth into *England*, and is received into *London* with much triumph. Not long after this battail, the *Dolphin* died; the Earl of *Arminack* is made high Conſtable of *France*, and none put in offices but ſtout men. At the ſame time *Thomas*
1416 Duke of *Exeter*, Governour of *Harflew*, iſſued out of the Town with three thouſand men, ſpoiling all the Country, till almoſt he came to *Rohan*. The new Conſtable with five hundred horſe, made the Duke retire, but orderly; the *French* were ſo hot in the purſuit, and came ſo near *Harflew*, that the reſt of the *Engliſh* within iſſued out, and being joined with the Dukes forces, put the *French* to the flight for two miles, taking divers priſoners, which they diſmiſſed, not without ranſom. The Emperour *Sigiſmund* came into *England* to mediate for peace, but could not: After great entertainment, King *Henry* accompanies him to *Calice*, whether *Henry* of *Burgoin* upon hoſtages repaired. A Peace is concluded between them concerning *Flanders* and *Artois* only; this peace made the *French* jealous of the Duke, as of a ſecret enemy to *France*. Not long after *Harflew* is beſieged by the Conſtable, both on ſea and land: but this Fleet of five hundred *French* ſhips, is defeated by the *Engliſh* Fleet of two hundred ſail, under *John* Duke of *Bedford*, King *Henries* brother: Many *French* were killed, and many ſent priſoners to *England*. Upon this the Conſtable raiſeth his ſiege, and the Duke of *Bedford* new victualled, manned, and fortified the Town, and ſo returned to *England*.

King *Henry* underſtanding that the *French* Peers were fallen out into divers factions, upon private grudges, he calls a Parliament, ſhewing his right to *France*, his opportunity now to regain it, his good ſucceſs hitherto, the many wrongs done by the *French* upon the *Engliſh*, and withall his want of mony. Theſe motives were ſo inducing, that mony is preſently granted, and with chearfulneſs levied. Hereupon *John* Earl of *Huntington* ſon to that D. of *Exeter*, beheaded under King *Henry* the 4. being ſent out to ſcowre the ſeas, fell upon nine *Carricks* of *Genua*, hired for the *French* Kings ſervice; ſix of which he ſunk, the other three he took with great ſtore of mony and mony worth. King *Henry* ſhortly after landeth with his Army in *Normandy*, before the Caſtle of *Tonque*, which he took; the report of this made the *Normans* flye all to their ſtrong Towns, ſo that the *Engliſh* without reſiſtance, march, and pitch before *Cane*, which after long and ſtout reſiſtance by the *Normans*, and many furious aſſaults by the *Engliſh* is taken, the Townſ-men having flung down their arms, and ſubmitted to mercy. The Arms being heaped together in the Market place, and kept with a guard of Engliſh, the King enters the Town, and in the great Church gives ſolemn thanks for his
1417 victory. Then he aſſembles the inhabitants at their Senate, where he cenſured the chief of thoſe who refuſed his mercy, ſome to death, ſome to ranſoms, which he divideth amongſt his ſoldiers. The *Dolphin* and Conſtable, finding want of mony, hindred their actions; they take from the Queen Mother a great maſs of mony, which ſhe had ſcraped together, which ſo exaſperated her, that ſhe got *John* Duke of *Burgoin*, their mortal enemy, to be protectour of the King during his infirmity, and Regent of *France*. Hereupon grudges and quarrels ariſe, the two factions of the *Dolphin* and Regent labouring to undo

undoe each other; ſo the publick good is neglected, and the *Engliſh* animated in the Conqueſts, eſpecially in *Normandy*, where the people for want of aid from *France*, are willing to ſubmit to the *Engliſh*; therefore the King proclaims that all who would yeild and become his ſubjects, ſhould enjoy their own, and receive his protection: Whence moſt of the greateſt Towns there yeild themſelves into the hands of King *Henry*, and his two brothers, *Clarence* and *Glouceſter*. All which the King ſtrongly fortifieth; *Engliſh* officers are placed alſo in *Cane*. *An. Chriſti*

Whilſt the King is thus imployed, he underſtands that *Rohan* is manned, and ſtrongly fortified, and that the whole wealth of the Country is conveyed thither; therefore he layeth ſiege to that City, and chains the River, having made a Bridge alſo over it, to keep off all relief by water. The Earl of *Warwick* with an hundred good ſhips enters the mouth of the River, and cauſeth the Town of *Caodeback* give them a quiet paſſage towards *Rohan*, promiſing to yeild it to King *Henry*, if he took *Rohan*, otherwiſe to let him return peaceably: ſo he goeth for *Rohan*. At this ſiege one thouſand ſix hundred *Iriſh* under the Lord of *Kilmay* repair to the King, and are entertained by him. The King at firſt aſſaulted the City, but to ſpare his men, reſolves to ſtarve it; for there were at that time in it, above two hundred and ten thouſand ſouls: therefore he keeps in the Townſmen by his Archers, and a deep Ditch. This ſiege continued above 5 months; in which time, many were forced to eat Dogs, Cats, and ſuch vermin; multitudes of the poorer ſort were thruſt out of the gates, and ſo periſhed with famin. At laſt ſome Commiſſioners are ſent to deſire a conference, which was granted; ſo the next morning four Knights, four learned men, and four Burgeſſes, all cloathed in black, repaired to the King, and told him, that it ſtood not with the honour of a brave Commander to ſubdue people by famin, but by valour; that therefore if he would permit the ſick, with the women and children, to paſs through his Army, and then aſſault their walls, he ſhould find men to buckle with. The King being offended at this boldneſſe, replyed, that he was not to be taught, neither when to aſſault their City, nor with what weapon, fire, ſword, and famin, being equal inſtruments of deſtruction, and indifferently made uſe of by the beſt Commanders of all ages; therefore he tells them, that neither will he ſuffer their weak people to paſs through his Army, nor will he relieve them, as he hath done ſome already, being uncharitably thruſt out, and expoſed to all miſery. Laſtly, he tells them, that he who hath ventured through all their Countries, and taken their ſtrongeſt holds, dares aſſault the Town, and take it, when he thinks good. Thus having ſpoken, he commanded they ſhould dine with his Chief Officers of State. After dinner, they repair to the King again, humbly deſiring a Truce for eight days, to reſolve upon the beſt courſe; which was aſſented to by the King.

During the eight days Ceſſation from Arms, many conſultations were had, but nothing done. One day more is deſired, and granted; mean while the commons do mutiny in the Town, accuſing and threatning their Magiſtrates, and Commanders; who fearing the worſt, made them all meet in the Market place, and demanded what they would have; they anſwer, a rendition of the City to King *Henry*. So after four days Truce more, the City is ſurrendred. *Burgundy* fearing inſuing dangers, ſtrives to reconcile the two Kings, hoping thereby to avenge himſelf upon the *Dolphin*, and the Conſtable. Many parlies were had, but to no end. The King at laſt told the Duke, that either he would have *Katherin* the Kings daughter, with all the Seignories demanded, or elſe he would drive both his Maſter, and himſelf out of that kingdom. The Duke replyed, that the thing was not ſo ſoon done as ſpoken: Hereupon the Duke reconciles himſelf to the *Dolphin*, at leaſt in outward ſhew; which was a great hinderance to King *Henries* reſolutions, who to ſhew he was not diſ- 1418

mayed,

An. Christi maid, created ſome Earls, and ſuddenly takes *Ponthoys*, with one thouſand five hundred men; thence he marched to *Paris*, and ſate down before it two days, but left it again, by reaſon of his paucity: Mean time, all the Towns of *Normandy* yeild to King *Henry*, except Mount S. *Michael*, which was never beſieged. But whilſt *Burgundy* ſought to reconcile himſelf more fully to the *Dolphin*, is treacheouſly murthered by the ſame *Dolphins* procurement. At which, *Philip* Earl of *Carolois* is ſo grieved for his fathers death, that he
1419 meant to put away his wife, the *Dolphins* ſiſter, but that he was diſſwaded by his friends. At length he ſtrives to make peace between the two Crowns, which after much adoe, was concluded, and King *Henry* maried to the Lady *Katherin*, in whoſe right he is proclaimed Regent and heir apparent of *France*. The Articles of Peace were theſe: 1. King *Charles* and Queen *Iſabel* his wife, ſhould be ſtyled the Father and Mother of King *Henry*. 2. King *Charles*, and Queen *Iſabel*, during their lives, ſhould enjoy their Regall Dignities and Revenues. 3 That Queen *Katherin* ſhould have in *England* a Dowry of twenty thouſand Marks. 4. That King *Henry* ſhould not be ſtyled King of *France*, during the life of King *Charles*. 5. That after the death of King *Charles*, the Crown of *France* ſhould come to King *Henry*, and to his heirs. 6. That King *Henry* ſhould be Regent of *France*, becauſe of the Kings infirmities. 7. That the Court of Parliament in *France*, ſhould enjoy their accuſtomed Priviledges. 8. That King *Henry* ſhould aſſiſt, defend, and protect the Peers, Clergy, and people of *France*. 9. That he ſhall ſuppreſs inteſtin broils, and adminiſter juſtice. 10. That he ſhall place none in offices of Juſtice and Government, but ſuch as are every way able. 11. That he ſhall ſtrive to reduce the *Dolphin* and Conſtable to the obedience of King *Charles*. 12. That he ſhall cauſe all to ſwear obedience to king *Charles*, during his life, and after him to king *Henry* and to his heirs. 13. That all poſſeſſions won from rebellious ſubjects (excepting *Normandy*) ſhould be converted ſolely to the benefit of the *French* King, except the offendors ſubmit. 14. That *Normandy* after king *Charles* his death, ſhall ſubmit to the Scepter of *France*. 15. That the people of *France*, be not burthened with Taxes, nor undue levying thereof. 16. That after king *Charles* his death, *France* and *England* ſhould be governed by one man only, without ſubordination, each kingdome retaining their priviledges. 17. That the ſubjects of both kingdomes live quietly and lovingly together. 18 That neither the *French*, nor *Engliſh* king, ſhall make peace with the pretended *Dolphin*, except they two concur in the ſame with the Duke of *Burgundy*. 19. That none but *French* attend the perſon of king *Charles*. 20. That both the kings, with their people, ſhall ratifie by their hands and ſeals, and ſwear to theſe Articles.

Theſe Articles were proclaimed in *England* and *France*, and ratified by oaths; then both kings accompanied with young king *James* of *Scotland*, the Duke of *Burgundy*, the Prince of *Orange*, twenty one Earls, forty five Barons, beſides multitudes of knights and others, make war in *Burgoin*, taking in all places that had ſided with the *Dolphin*. The murtherers of *John* Duke of *Burgundy*, are apprehended, ſent into *Paris*, where ſhortly after they were ſentenced and executed. King *Henry* is proclaimed Regent and heir apparent to the Crown of *France*, firſt at *Paris*, then at *London*. At *Paris* the two kings kept their *Chriſtmaſs*: Such was king *Henries* entertainment and bounty, that he wins the love of the *French*. The late murthered Duke of *Burgoins* widow, before both the kings at *Paris*, complains of the *Dolphin*, and ſeven others, as murtherers of her Husband. All theſe are cited to appear, who failing, are proſcribed, that is, baniſhed, degraded, and diveſted of all their Eſtates. The *Dolphin* hearing this, goeth to *Languedoc*, where he is aided with men and mony, by *Arminac*, the Conſtable that was. After this king *Henry* and his wife, go to *Rohan*, where they receive homage of the Nobles

of

of *Normandy*; for that Dutchy then having left his brother *Thomas* Duke of *Clarence*, General of *France* and *Normandy*, and *Salisbury* the said Dukes Deputy; he with his wife go to *Calice*, and so to *London*, where they are received with much joy: and shortly after, the Queen is Crowned at *Westminster*. Mean while *Alanson* the *Dolphins* Lieutenant General, levied a great Army, against whom *Clarence* marcheth with his *Normandy* Garisons, and pitched near *Angiers* in *Anjou*. One *Forgusa* a *Lumbard*, to whom Duke *Clarence* trusted too much, betrayed him, by making him believe that the *French* Army was small, disordered, and inconsiderable; wherefore he marcheth with his horse only, leaving his Archers behind, and falling into the Ambushments of his enemies unawares, was forced to fight upon great disadvantages, having four for one against him; and at last after he had stoutly a long time defended himself, was totally overthrown. *An. Christi*

In this battel were slain of the *French*, above 1000 two hundred, of the *English* the Duke of *Clarence*, the Earls of *Tankervile*, and *Kent*, the Lord *Ross*, and about two thousand more. The Earls of *Somerset*, *Suffolk*, and *Perch*, the Lord *FitZwater*, and many others are taken prisoners; Sir *Thomas Beauford*, Commander of the Archers, understanding that *Clarence* was betrayed, hastned to succour him, but came too late, the battel was fought: the *French* upon the news of *Beaufords* coming, were fled, with their prisoners and booty. So finding the dead bodies, he buries them, and sends the corps of Duke *Clarence* into *England*, where it was buried at *Canterbury*, near his Father *King Henry* 4. The news of this defeat being come into *England*, the King grieved much for the loss, chiefly of his brother. Then he sends into *Normandy*, as successor to *Clarence*, the Earl of *Mortaign*, brother to *Somerset*, lately taken; and withall calls a Parliament, shewing how needful it was to send an Army against the *Dolphin*: For undertaking of which business, he wanted not men, but mony. Whereupon the Temporalty gave him one fifteen, and the Clergy two; and for avoiding expence of time, the Bishop of *Winchester*, the *Kings* Uncle, disbursed twenty thousand pounds, which were repaid him out of the fifteens. An Army of four thousand men at Arms, with twenty four thousand Archers, is raised and sent to *Calice*, under *John* Duke of *Bedford*, the Kings brother, whom the King in his own person followed. Who understanding that the *Dolphin* with seven thousand men had besieged *Chartiers*, he marcheth directly thither; in the way he was met by the Duke of *Burgundy*, who brought four thousand men to him. But the *Dolphin* distrusting his own strength, raiseth his siege. Hereupon the *King* sends *Burgundy* into *Piccardie*, to suppress S. *Jacques* Harcourt; *King James* of *Scotland* in the mean time, besiegeth the Town of *Direx*, and by storm takes it. *King Henrie* pursues the *Dolphin* from *Tours* to *Burgys* in *Berrie*, but being unwilling to tire out his men in long pursuits, he returns over the river of *Loire*, taking in Towns and Castles by the way. Mean while news is brought that Queen *Katherin* was delivered of a young *Henry* at *Windsor*, of whom the *King* spake thus: [I *Henry*, born at *Monmouth*, shall remain but a short time, and gain much; but *Henrie* born at *Windsor*, shall reign long, and lose all.] After this, the King takes by force the Town of *Meux*, in *Brie*; hereupon the other Towns yeilded. In the interim, the *Dolphin* falls with fire and sword upon *Burgoins* Country, and besiegeth *Cosney*; the Duke sends to the king for aid, who himself in person marcheth thither with great Forces; but by the way he fell sick, and so was fain to send his brother *John* Duke of *Bedford*: whereupon the *Dolphin* raised his siege, and retired into *Berrie*; the *King* is caried unto *Bois* in *Vincennis*, where he died; before his death, he called to him *John* Duke of *Bedford*, and *Humphrie* Duke of *Glouceſter*, his brothers: he makes *John* Regent of *France*, and Lieutenant General of *Normandie*; and *Humphrie* Protector of *England*, and of his sons person.

Then

An. Christi Then exhorting them with his Nobles that were present, to keep friendship with *Burgundy*, unity among themselves, loyalty to his young son; to take care of his afflicted Queen, to maintain what he had conquered, to prosecute the war against the Dolphin and *Alanson*; he thanked God
1422 for all his conquests, and so departed the 38 year of his age, and the 10 of his reigne, his body is conveyed into *England*, and honorably interred at *Westminster*. The Queen afterward married to *Owen Teudor*, by whom she had three sons, *Edmund* Earl of *Richmond*, Father to *Henry* 7. King of *England*. 2d. *Jasper* Earl of *Pembrok*. And 3d. *Owen*. In this Kings time, Sir *John Oldcastle*, who in the right of his wife, was called Lord *Cobham*, caused great troubles in the Kingdome, by maintaining *Wickliffs* opinions, which could not be suppressed till Sir *Robert Acton*, and divers others were condemned by the Clergy for Heresie, by the laitie for Treason, and so were hanged, and then burned gallows and all.

King *Henry* the 6. at his Fathers death, was but 9 months old, the *French* King being dead, the people there began to shake off the *English* yoke, and to adhere onely to their new *King Charles*. The Lord *Grandvyle* is sent to *Pont-Melance*, which he surprised; but not long after, *Montacute* Earl of *Salisbury* regained it to the *English*. The *Parisians* send
1423 to *England* for protection, which is promised. The league is renewed between the Regent, and the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Britany*: The Regent marrieth *Anne Burgundys* brother, but the wavering *Parisians*, diffiding in the *English* protection, desire King *Charls* to receive their City into his hands; which the Regent understanding, comes upon them suddenly with his Army, seiseth on the Citie, puts to death many of the chief plotters of this revolt, and Masters the Citizens with *English* Garisons. In the mean time the Lord *William Stewart* Constable of *Scotland*, with a strong Army besieges the Town of *Cravant* in *Burgundy*, which siege is raised by the Earl of *Salisbury*, with the loss of 21 hundred of his men, and 8000 of his enemies. After this the Earl is made Vicegerent of *France*, *Bry*, and *Champaigne*, and Sir *John Fastolfe* Deputy of *Normandy*: The King of *Scots* is released and ransomed, who marrieth with *Jane* the Kings Cousin *German*, and daughter to the deceased Earl of *Somerset*. The Protector sends 10000 men with money to the Regent in *France*: Divers Towns are taken and retaken; the Duke of *Britany* revolts to the *French*, and so did his brother *Arthur* Earl of *Richmond*, whom *Henry* 5 had made Earl of *Yury* in *Normandy*, and Governor there; whereupon the Regent besiegeth the Town, which promised to yeild, if help came not from the *French* King at a certain day: Messengers are permitted to goe and acquaint the enemy of all things. *Alanson* shortly after with 16000 *French* made shew to raise the siege, but did nothing, then he sits down before *Vernoyle*, giving out that he had defeated the Regents Army, which was false, yet by this falshood he got the Town; and by his retreat suffered the Regent to be Lord of *Yurie*: Then the Regent gave
1425 battell to the *French* and *Scots* at *Vernoyle*: the fight lasts three hours; in the end the *English* got the day, who lost of their own men 21 hundred, of the *French* were slain 7000, of the *Scots* 2700, besides 5 Earls, 2 Vicounts, and 21 Barons: *Alanson* with divers prime men taken prisoners, *Vernoyle* is surrendred too, and fortified by the Regent, who thence goeth to *Rohan*, where he is joyfully received; then he sends 10000 men to *Myne* under *Salisbury*, who won *Maunts*, and divers other Towns in that Province. *Richmond* now Constable of *France* with 40000 *Scots*, *French*, and *Britans*, besiegeth Saint *James* in *Benyon* defended onely by 600 *English*; but this handfull sallying out furiously on the enemy, and crying hidiously Saint *George*, *Salisbury*, presently defeated this great Army

my, ſuppoſing *Salisbury* with his Forces had been got into the Town; many of the enemie were drowned, more ſlain, ſome taken priſoners, but moſt ran away, leaving behinde them 14 piece of Ordnance, 40 barrels of powder, with match, wine, and other proviſions; The new Conſtable to redeem his loſt honor, burneth a few Villages in *Anjou*, having recollected his diſperſed Forces. *An. Chriſti*

But at home fell out a dangerous difference between the Protector and his Uncle *Henry* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and Chancellor of *England*: For appeaſing of which, the Regent makes a journey into *England*, where by order of Parliament, the differences are compoſed and ended; in honor whereof the King kept a ſolemn feaſt. In the interim the Earl of *Warwick* the Regents Lieutenant in *France*, takes many places in *Mayne*, and is threatned by the *French* Bravadoes, to no purpoſe, for having made ſhew to fight, they run away: Things being quieted at home, the Regent with his Uncle, the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* returns into *France*; and upon *Burgundies* intreaty he ſets *Alanſon* at liberty for the ranſome of 200 thouſand crowns; which money he might have had again if he would have ſworne allegiance to King *Henry* of *England*, which he would upon no terms conſent to. About this time the Biſhop of *Wincheſter* was made a Cardinall at *Callice*, more for his wealth then for his learning, for he was a rich Prelat, but a poor Schollar. *Auranches* an *Engliſh* Gariſon in *Normandy* is beſieged by *Ruſtian* Marſhall of Britany; but the Engliſh ſallied and defeated the Army, and took the Marſhall priſoner. *Pontorſon* is beſieged by the *Engliſh* under *Warwick* and the Lord *Scales*, who forraged the enemies Countrie there about; and being encountred by ſome *French* Lords, and 6000 other Soldiers, he defeats them, and takes ſome of theſe Lords, with one thouſand more priſoners: The Gariſon of Saint *Suſan* ſurpriſeth the Caſtle of *Ramfort*; which twenty thouſand *French* appointed to raiſe the ſiege of *Pontorſon*, regains from the *Engliſh*, when in the mean while *Pontorſon* is taken by *Warwick*, the City of *Mouns* is betrayed by ſome of the Clergy and Magiſtrates within, who in the night murthered the *Engliſh* Guard that maintained the firſt watch, opened the Gates, and let in five hundred *French* men, who committed great ſlaughter there, the Earl of *Suffolk*, Governor of the Town, with moſt of the *Engliſh* Soldiers enter the Caſtle, and held out a ſiege, till the Lord *Talbot* in the night with ſeaven hundred men, by the aſſiſtance of *Suffolk* and the others in the Caſtle, regained it; the *Engliſh* crying S. *George Talbot* ſo amazed the ſleepie *French* in the dark, that many broke their necks over the walls, thirty Citizens, twenty Prieſts, and fifteen Friers who had betrayed the Citie, were tortured to death as Traitors. 1427

About this time died the Duke of *Exeter*, the Kings Tutor, which charge was conferred on *Warwick*, and in his room was ſet up *Thomas Montacute* Earl of *Salisbury*, who is ſent into *France* with five thouſand men, to which number as many more were added; with theſe he marcheth againſt *Orleans*, ſeated on the River of *Loyre*, it was ſtrongly fortified by the Baſtard and Biſhop of that place, a Bulwark was erected on the Bridge, out of which iſſued the Baſtard of *Orleans*, but was beaten back into the Town with the loſs of his men, and of the Fort: About two months after the Town was beſieged, the Earl of *Salisbury* looking into the Town out at a window of the Tower within the Bulwark, was unhappily killed with a great ſhot, whoſe death was fatall to the *Engliſh*, who began now to decline in their victories. *Suffolk* is made Generall in that ſiege, whom the Regent furniſheth with new ſupplies by Sir *John Falſtolph*; who in his return towards the ſiege, is ſet upon by 9000 French,

An. Christi under *Delabreth*, and *Steward*, now Conſtable of *France*, who with five thouſand five hundred of their men are ſlain, and eleven thouſand taken priſoners.

This was called by the French the battel of herrings, becauſe the Engliſh chief proviſion then was ſuch Lenten Stuffe. *Orleans* being wearie of ſo long a ſiege, and finding the French aid failed them, ſent to the Duke of *Burgoin*, to take them into his protection, to which he aſſented if the Regent would ſo agree thereunto; but he refuſed, thinking it a diſhonour for King *Henry* to beat the Buſh, and another to catch the Hare: Wherefore the Duke's affection to the Engliſh began to grow colde.

At laſt *Alanſon* in the night time (the Engliſh Watches being careleſſe) conveyed many Regiments of men, and Proviſions are conveyed into the Towne, ſo that ſhortly after they Sallied out, ſlew ſix hundred of our men, and tooke two Bulwarks. They aſſaulted alſo *Talboat*, in the *Baſtile*, who beat them back into the Towne with loſſe of their men. The next day *Suffolke* quitted the Siege; and was himſelfe within few dayes after Beſieged, and taken Priſoner, with his Brother, and many more, in the Towne of

1428 *Iargzaux*, by *Alanſon*, whō kills all his Priſoners, except the former two.

Alanſons Army conſiſting of twenty three thouſand men, was increaſed by the comming of *Arthur* of *Brittan*, Count *Vandome*, and many more, who fall upon *Talbot*, *Scales*, and *Hungerford*, as they were conducting five thouſand men to Fortifie the Towne of *Meum*, theſe three are taken Priſoners after ſome Bloudie blowes, and twelve hundred of their Company ſlaine. The Report of the French good Succeſſe, made many Townes and Forts revolt to them: Hereupon the French King with a great Army enters *Champaigne*, takes *Troys*, the Chiefe City of that Province; *Challons* and *Rhemes* revolt to King *Charles*; upon this he is preſently Crowned there; the report of whoſe Coronation, cauſed many places to rebell, and ſubmit to the French King.

The Regent finding the French ſo fortunate in recovering their Townes, meanes to trie them in a Pitch'd Battell, therefore Summons King *Charles* to a Fight, who accepts of the Challenge; but when it came to the upſhot, he raiſed his Camp in the night, and run away; the next morning the Regent purſues him, but could not induce him to fight; wherefore he returnes with his Army to *Paris*, where hearing of dayly revolts, marcheth out againe with his Army of ten thouſand men, hoping to make the French (whoſe number was more then double) to ingage, but could not; about this time King *Henry* was Crowned. The Regent perceiving that the Townes of *France* generally revolted, reſolves to make *Normandy* ſure; therefore

1429 he repaires thither, calls a Parliament, and lets them know, the right King *Henry* had to that Dutchie, the miſeries they endured under the French, and their happineſs under the Engliſh Government, and withall promiſeth them a further addition of immunities. Mean while King *Charles* labours to win the Duke of *Burguoin* by great promiſes, and ſhewes of grief, for the murthering of the Dukes father, with which paſſages the Duke acquaints the Regent; the King perceiving he could not win the Duke, ſets down before *Paris* with his whole Army, ſcales the walls, and thinks to take it by ſtorm, but is beat back by the Engliſh Garriſons there. King *Henry* underſtanding of the daily revolts in *France*, from him, comes to *Callice* with a great Army, and by the way of *Roban* marcheth to *Paris*, where he is anointed and crowned King of *France*, receiving homage and fealtie from the nobility and Citizens. At length a peace being urged by Pope *Eugenius* 4. both Kings condeſcend to a truce for 6 years,

which

which lasted but awhile, for shortly after King *Henrys* return into *England*, *Ann* the Regents wife, and sister to the *Burgundian* died, whereby the Dukes affections to the Regent grew cold daily; the truce lately concluded, is broken by the *French*, who by secret underminings possest themselves daily of towns and castles; they secretly convey 200 soldiers into the castle of *Rohan*, hoping to surprize it, but the treason is detected, and the conspirators driven into the dungeon, whence some are hanged, some tortured, some imprisoned, and a few ransomed. *Iohn* Lord *Talbot* is now redeemed out of prison, who brings from *England* 800 men, and joynes with the Regent, he challengeth the French to fight, but they refused. About this time the *Pesants* of *Normandy* rebel, who marching towards *Cane*, used much crueltie, but they are quickly suppressed by the Earl of *Arundel*, and the L. *Willoughby*, who slew above 1000 of them, and put their ringleaders to death by tortures. The E. of *Arundel* as he was besieging *Gerbory* Castle, is shot with a Culvering, and being taken prisoner, shortly after dieth. The D. of *Burbon* after 18 years imprisonment is ransomed for 18000 pound; but died in *London* the same day he intended for *France*: The Regent and D. of *Burgoin* being exasperated against each other by some tale-tellers, were again reconciled by their friends, and so far as to meet at S. *Omers* for a conference, but whilst they both stood upon punctilios of honor, the Regent claiming superioritie as the son, brother and Uncle to Kings, the *Burgundian* as Lord of that town, they departed discontented; and forthwith *Burguoin* makes a league with the French King, the murtherer of his father; about this time S. *Dennis* was betraied to the French by the bastard of *Orleans*, and shortly after recovered again by the English, who beat down the walles and towres thereof. *Ponthois* also rebels, and thrusts the English garison out of the town; mean while the Regent dieth, and is solemnly buried in S. *Maries* Church at *Rohan* in a rich monument, at which the *Norman* Nobility stormed, who not long after intreated K. *Lewis* 11. to pluck it down, and cast the Regents carcas into the open fields, which he refused to do, holding it baseness in them to insult over his dead body, whom they durst not look on whilst he was alive. After him the Duke of *York* is made Regent, which place was aimed at by *Somerset* the Kings cousin. *Paris* revolts with divers other places, using the English cruelly and scornfully: The *Normans* also rebel and insult over the *English*, till they were subdued again by *Talbot* and *Scales*, who slew 5000 of these rebels. The new Regent with 8000 soldiers lands at *Harflew*, and from thence comes to *Rohan*, but his proceedings were much hindred by the D. of *Sommersets* privat grudgings; the D. of *Burgundy* pretending a title to *Callis*, besiegeth it with 40000 men, by 3 assaults he attempted to win it, but is still beat off with loss; then he thought to subdue it by famin, but could not becaus the English Navy was master at sea; at last he tries to shut up the harbour, by sinking 4 great hulks filled with massie stones cemented with iron and lead, that they might not be beaten asunder by the sea; but being they were not sunk in the channel, at low water the ships lay dry, so that the Callisians tore them asunder for their own use; the Duke had built a strong Bastyle, and placed 400 men it, which annoyed the town much; but it was assaulted and won by some troops of horse out of the town, the Protector being landed with his forces, so affrighted the D. who lay now between the town and English army, that he removes in the night, leaving his ordnance, tents, armor, and provision to the Protector, who having 25000 men in his army, falls upon *Flanders* and *Artois* with fire and sword, and then returns with rich booties to *Callice*, and from thence into *England*, being in much trouble about the *Scots* invasion with 30000 men under K. *James* 1. who besieged the Castle of *Rosburg*; which the *Scots* left

An. Christi

1432

1433

1434

An. Christi and retreated into their own country, upon the coming of the Earl of *Northumberland* with his army. About this time Q. *Catherin* the Kings mo-
1436 ther died. The D. of *York* is discharged of his Regency in *France*, and the
1437 E of *Warwick* is put in his room, who after 7 times imbarking arrived in *Normandy*, and sends *Talbot*, *Faulconbridg*, and sir *Thomas Kyriel* with 5000 men to raise the siege from *Crotoy*, afore which *Burgundy* lay with 1000 men. The D. upon this flies into *Albevyl*, and from thence into *Amiens*; the Englisch finding that he would not fight, enter *Piccardy* and *Artois*, spoiling all before them, and carrying away much bootie; *Kyriel* surprized the
1438 Dukes carriages and ordnance. The E. of *Mortayn*, *Somersets* son, took the castle of S. *Auyan* in *Mayn*, where he slew 300 *Scots*, and hanged al the *French* men there, for their revolting. The Englisch begin to have some hopes in regaining of *Paris* upon the rebellion of the Dolphin against his father, therfore a great army is prepared, but the Dolphin was reconciled again to the French K. and so the Englisch hopes were strangled in their birth.
1439 *John* L. *Clifford* in a frostie and snowie night-clothes himself and followers all in white, and so having passed over the ditches of *Ponthois*, they scale the walls, and take the town, in which they killed the most part of the men found there, some ransomed themsevles; upon this the French King in person besiegeth *Ponthois*, giving it many furious assaults, but to no purpose: mean while *Richard Beauchamp* E. of *Warwick* and Regent of *France* died; so *Richard* D. of *York* is made Regent the 2d time, who with a great army repairs to the siege, daring the French K. into the field, which he refused; so leaving his Ordnance in the Bastyl of S. *Martin* which he had erected, raised his siege in the night, and went to *Poyssy*; the Englisch next morning seise themselves of the tents and provisions left behinde, so having fortified the town, the Regent with his army goeth towards *Poyssy* and dares the French King; who finding it good sleeping in a whole skin, refused to fight; whereupon the Regent forsakes him, and marcheth to *Rohan*; when the French K. heard that the Englisch were so far off, he besiegeth *Ponthoys* the 2d time, assaulting it almost every hour, he lost before it almost 3000 men, and in the end he won the town, where he slew 400 Englisch. At last both Kings being weary of war, desire a parley, for which *Calis* was appointed, because *Charls* of *Orleans* who had bin a prisoner in *England* ever
1440 since the battel of *Agencourt*, was to be conveyed thither; the Ambassadors could not agree, because K. *Henrys* demands were thought unreasonable. 1. In demanding 300000 crowns for his ransom, too great a sum. 2. For requiring the possession of *Aquitan* and *Normandy*, without acknowledement of homage to the crown of France. 3. For desiring al Townes and Forts in *France* to be delivered up to K. *Henry*, which the Englisch had enjoyed within the last 30 years, so the parley is dissolved; yet shortly after *Philip* of *Burgundy* paid the D. of *Orleans* his ransom. In the interim the Regent divides his forces into 4 troops, which in several places invade *France* and *Normandy*; the French on the other side being 60000. fall upon *Aquitan* and *Guian*, taking in many towns and forts, which shortly after were retaken by the Englisch: about this time dissention arose between the protector & his uncle the Cardinal of *Vincheſter*, and the Archbishop of *York*, whom he accuseth for doing publick things for their privat gain, the matter is referred to
1442 the counsell, but no redress was had, because most of them were Clergy men; and to vex the Protector the more, they accused and convicted his wife of witchcraft, and that she had conspired against the Kings life, wherfore she is forced 3 times to do publick penance in *London*, and then committed to perpetual imprisonment; divers of her associates were executed.

King *Henry* made the L. *Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and sent him into *Normandy* with 5000 choice men. The E. of *Arminac* to strengthen his title of inheritance to the Countess of *Comings* lands, offers his daughter in mariage

to

to King *Henry*, with much money, and a ſurrender of all the lands in *Aquitan* belonging to him; this offer was willingly hearkned unto; but the *French* King prevented the match, by making himſelf owner of the ſaid Earls dominions; So King *Henry* will think no more on that match: *An. Chriſti*

After much effuſion of blood, a peace is made between the two Kingdomes for eighteen months; in which time the Earl of *Suffolk* without any Commiſſion or acquainting his aſſociates, ſollicits a match between King *Henry* and *Margaret*, Couſin to the *French* King, and daughter to *Reyner* Duke of *Anjou*, and titulary King of *Sicily*, *Naples* and *Jeruſalem*. He demands no money, becauſe the Duke was poor, he alſo conſents that King *Henry* ſhall freely releaſe to her Father, all his right to the Dutchie of *Anjou*, and Countrey of *Mayne*: This motion was well liked by the *French* Lords, and King *Henry*; but oppoſed by the Protector, becauſe the Duke was poor, his honor but titular. 2. That the King was ingaged to *Mary*, *Arminacs* daughter. 3. That his loſs would be great to part with his intereſt in *Anjou* and *Mayne*; but theſe reaſons were rejected, the King reſolves to have her, and therefore beſtowes new honors on them who were inclined to this match; among others this Earl of *Suffolk* is made Marquis, whom the King ſends richly attended into *France*, to receive the young Queen from the *French* King, and *Reyner* her Father; within few days after her arrivall ſhe was married, and Crowned. The time of the truce is almoſt expired, great preparations in *France* for renewing the War, King *Henry* to incounter thoſe preparations, calls a Parliament, in which the Marquiſs of *Suffolk* makes a ſpeech highly tending to his own commendations, in commemorating his former ſervices, which he deſires may be recorded; this was conſented to with great applauſe, and he is made Duke of *Suffolk*. 1443 1445

Such was the condition of *France* at this time, that within few years the whole Kingdome with *Aquitan* and *Normandy* is loſt to the *Engliſh*; partly by the wiſe Counſels of the Duke of *Orleans*, who had he been kept a priſoner ſtill, it had been better for *England*, and partly by means of this unfortunate match between the King and Queen, whereby he loſt *Arminac*, and other friends, nor did this Lady bring either money or new friends to ſtrengthen his cauſe: Beſides, the giving up of his right of *Anjou* and *Mayne*, loſt him both *Normandy* and *Aquitan*. The murther alſo of *Gloceſter* his wiſe Counſeller, and the Kings own milde and peaceable diſpoſition, were main cauſes of the loſs of *France*; now the Queen being of a haughty and revengefull ſpirit, ſcorned that the King ſhould be altogether ruled by *Gloceſter* the Protector, therefore ſhe being incouraged by *Buckingham*, *Suffolk*, the Cardinall of *Wincheſter*, and the Arch-Biſhop of *York*, all enemies to the Protector, calls him in queſtion, for the treaſure ſpent in the *French* Wars; then in Parliament they condemn him to impriſonment, for high Treaſon; and the next day he was found dead; thus was that good Duke of *Gloceſter* rewarded for his faithfull ſervice. Upon his death the Duke of *York* begins ſecretly to ſet on foot his Title to the Crown, the Duke of *Suffolk* fills his Coffers with the peoples money. The Souldiers are neglected, the Kings Counſellers diſabled, and the people diſcontented. The Truce with *France* is violated on the Engliſh ſide, by taking the Town of *Tonggers* on the Frontiers of *Normandy*, belonging to the Duke of *Britany*, without ſatiſfaction given to the Duke, and on the French ſide, by taking *Pont-Larch* 12 miles from *Roban*, where the Engliſh were cruelly ſlain, and their goods rifled; ſo within a few years after, the moſt Towns in *Normandy* and *Guyan* are delivered up to the French among the reſt, *Harflew*, and *Roban*, by *Somm'rſet* and *Shrewsbury*: Theſe diſaſters went not alone, but 1448

An. Christi were accompanied with a rebellion in *Ireland*, which drew thither the Duke of *York* with an Army, who both suppressed the Rebellion, and by his wisdome, courtesie and valour, obtained the love of the Nation.

1449 The *Irish* expedition hindred the affairs of *Normandy*; yet Sir *Thomas Kyriel* is sent thither with 1400 men, who regained some lost places, and then joyned himself to *Matthew Gough* and others, so that now their army consists of 5000 who encountring with 7000 of the enemies marching to the siege of *Cane* were overthrown, 4000 of them being slain: *Cane* is closely besieged, and assaulted by the French, but so stoutly defended by the English, that many French men lost their lives there; at last the English being tired out, and *Sommerset* importuned by his wife, and clamours of the meaner people, resolves to surrender it, though he was much opposed in this by Sir *David Hall*, Captain of *Cane*, who affirmed that this Town belonged not to the King, but to the Duke of *York*, and that therefore *Sommerset* though the Kings Lieutenant there, could not surrender it; but at last it is yeilded upon Articles: And so now all *Normandy* is lost. Sir *David Hall* in anger sailes into *Ireland*, and incenseth *York* against *Sommerset*, whom he persecuted so, that at last
1450 this *Sommerset* lost his head. The Queen is blamed for the loss of *Normandy*; so was *Suffolk*, who is accused of high Treason. 1. In causing the Duke of *Glocester* to lose his Protectorship and life. 2. For placing ill Counsellers about the King. 3. For misguiding the Queen, and misruling the Kingdome. 4. For losing *Aquitan* and *Normandy*. 5. For reporting that his daughter in Law, heir to *John* Duke of *Somerset*, was next heir to the Crown, if the Kings issue failed. 6. For perswading the French to transport an Army into *England*, that his son *John* by his wife might succeed to the Crown. 7. For causing the Duke of *Orleans* to be set at liberty. 8 For perswading the French King by the same Duke to make sharper war in *Normandy*. 9. For having secret correspondence with King *Charls*. 10. For discovering to the French King, the weakness of King *Henrys* provisions. 11. For bragging he had power to work the French King to any thing. 12. For stopping supplys from the Kings Army in *Normandy* and *France*. 13. For his ill gotten wealth, and monopolies of the chief Offices.

The Queen to prevent the Dukes further perill, who could not cleat himself of these Articles, caused him to be sent to the Tower, and then concluding the Parliament, restored him to high favour with the King; the people repine at this, and then openly rebell, under *Blewbeard* their Commander; but this rebellion was nipped in the bud, and the Ring leaders executed. Upon this a Parliament is called at *Leicester*, where in the lower House Justice is required to be done on *Suffolk*, whom the King to please the people exiled for 5 years, but as he was sailing to *France*, he is taken, landed on *Dover* sands, and his head chopt off on a boats side: Thus was the blood of *Humphry* Duke of *Glocester* revenged. Mean while the Duke of *York* in *Ireland*, sets on foot here in *England* his claim to the Crown, as being descended lineally from *Philip* heir of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, the elder brother of *John* of *Gaunt*, great Grand-father to King *Henry* 6. It was also whispered about that God blessed not King *Henrys* usurped succession, as might be seen by the loss of *France*: The weakness of the King, the ambition of the Queen, and wickedness of the Counsellers; hereupon a *Kentish* Rebel, *Iack Cade*, who falsly called himself *Mortimer*, made an insurrection there, and with his armed crew marched towards *Greenwich*, where the King then was, to whom he sent messengers, to inform him, that he meant not to hurt his

his perſon, but to remove his evil Councellors, who had oppreſſed the people. The King upon this is counſelled to encounter theſe Rebels, not with words, but ſwords; therefore an Army is ſuddenly raiſed, the Rebels retreat, whom the Kings Forces under Sir *Humphry Stafford*, and his brother, purſued: the Rebels taking advantage of place and time, confronted and overcame many of the Kings Forces. After this victory, *Jack* with his graceleſs rout, came to black Heath, thence to *London*, where they did much miſchief; but at length the Kings pardon is proclaimed to all, except to the Ring-leaders; ſo the fearful multitude left their Captains. *Jack* is proſcribed, and a thouſand Marks promiſed to him that ſhall bring him dead or alive. In the end he was found, and ſlain; as he fought deſperately for his life, his head is preſented to the King, who paid the reward. *An. Chriſti*

The Duke of *York* being advertiſed by his friends, and ſuch as diſliked the preſent Government, that a Parliament was at hand, left his Deputation in *Ireland*, and returns home, where he adviſeth with *John* Duke of *Norfolk*, and his other friends, how he might without uſurpation, or treaſon, ſet forth his Title to the Crown. After long debate, it was concluded, that the Duke of *York* ſhould raiſe an Army, under pretence of removing the Duke of *Somerſet* from Court, for miſ-ruling the *King* and Queen, for oppreſſing the people, for occaſioning the loſs of *France*, and for other treaſons. The *King* upon this raiſeth alſo an Army, who underſtanding from the Duke of *York*, that he intended nothing againſt his perſon and ſtate, but only the removal of *Somerſet*; the King ſent *Somerſet* (for a ſhew) to the Tower. Hereupon *York* diſſolves his Army, and privately repairs to the King, where unexpectedly he meets with *Somerſet*, and is accuſed by him of treaſon, for raiſing an Army to deſtroy the *King*; wherefore he is detained priſoner: but becauſe the Kings Councel thought it unlikely that he aimed at the Crown, ſeeing he had diſmiſſed his Army upon *Somerſets* commitment, he is ſhortly after releaſed. In the midſt of theſe troubles, the Lord of *Acquitain* offers ſecretly to ſurrender that Dutchy again into the hands of King *Henrie*. Hereupon *Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, is ſent over with three thouſand choice men, who received the Dutchy to the Kings uſe. But the *French* King with two and twenty thouſand came ſuddenly and fought the *Engliſh*; here the Earl, and almoſt all his Army, was ſlain, and *Aquitain* regained. Shortly after Prince *Edward* is born, *Edward Tuthar* King *Henries* brother by the mother ſide, and father to King *Henry* the ſeventh, is made Earl of *Richmond*. The Duke of *York* complains to divers of the Nobility, of the Treaſons and Treacheries of *Somerſet*, and ſtrengthens himſelf by the aſſiſtance of the Earls of *Salisbury*, and *Warwick*; then he cauſeth *Somerſet* to be arreſted of High Treaſon in the Queens great Chamber, whence he was conveyed to the Tower, and ſhortly after accuſed in the Parliament of Treaſon. 1451 1452 1453 1454

The Parliament is adjourned by reaſon of the Kings either reall or feigned ſickneſs: Shortly after, *Somerſet* is inlarged, and made Governor of *Calice*, to the great diſcontent both of Lords and Commons; the Duke of *York*, and his aſſociats, raiſe another Army within the Marches of *Wales*, both to be revenged on *Somerſet*, and to ſet the Crown upon *Yorks* head; ſo they march towards *London*. The King to prevent his coming thither, meets him with another Army at Saint *Albons*; a bloudy battail is fought, on the Kings part were ſlain *Somerſet*, *Stafford*, *Buckingham*, *Clifford*, and more then eight thouſand Lords, Knights, and others. The King is taken priſoner, and brought to the Duke of *York*, who having power to kill him, yet uſed him with all reſpect, and brought him with honour to *London*; where upon the Dukes requeſt, a Parliament is called, and *York* made Protector of the Kings perſon, and kingdom. *Salisbury* is made Lord Chancelour, and his ſon *Warwick*, Captain of *Calice*; and ſo the kingdom was governed, to the content of all good

An. Christi good men; but *Humphrie* Duke of *Buckingham*, who loſt his eldeſt ſon in the battail of S. *Albons*, and *Beauford*, the new Duke of *Somerſet*, who then
1455 loſt his Father, inform the Queen, that for all this fair ſhew, theſe *Triumviri* would bring miſery on her, and on the King, whoſe Crown they meant to ſet on the head of *York*, if their plots be not prevented.

Hereupon the Queen and they in a great Councel held at *Greenwich*, remove *York* and *Salisbury* from their government: Hence divers broils are bred; the Merchant-ſtrangers in *London*, for growing richer then others, becauſe of their parcimony, and vigilancy, are robbed, but the chief offendors in this were put to death. The *French* burn and rob ſome *Frontier* Towns in this kingdom. The *Scots* alſo did much hurt in *York* ſhire, till the Duke came againſt them with a great Army, then they retreated into
1456 their own Country.

The Queen made great ſhew of love to *York*, but meant his ruine; therefore ſhe got the King to make his Progreſs to the North, Hunting and Hawking by the way: Mean while by her letters ſhe requires the three Lords to come to a ſpeedy Conference with the *King*: whereupon they came, ſuſpecting no hurt, and were kindly uſed. But being advertiſed of their danger, the Duke of *York* fled to *Wales*, *Salisbury* to his own Country, and his ſon *Warwick* into *Calice*. The *King* fearing that theſe jars among his Nobles, would occaſion his enemies abroad to attempt miſchief againſt him and his kingdom, cauſed
1457 all his Lords to meet at *London*. The *Lancaſtrian* Faction lodged in the Suburbs, the *Yorkiſh* within the walls, the Citizens fearing blows, remained Neuters; and to keep the Kings Peace, guarded the ſtreets night and day with armed men. But at length the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, with other Clergy men, prevailed ſo with their Rhetorick, that the *King*, Queen, and Lords, met, and friendly (at leaſt in ſhew) intertained each other. This union is honoured with a Religious proceſſion through the City; in which the *King* wore the Crown, the Queen was led by the Duke of *York*, the Lords of each Faction, went hand in hand, at which the people much rejoiced. But ſhortly after, upon a falling out between a ſervant of the *Kings*, and a Gentleman of *Warwicks*, in which the Kings ſervant was wounded, the Kings guard aſſaulted the Earl and his followers, as he was taking horſe; much bloud was ſhed, but no man killed. The Queen who hated the Earl,
1458 commanded he ſhould be apprehended, and ſent to the Tower; which he hearing of, poſted away into *York* ſhire, where he complains to the Duke of *York*, and to his Father, of the wrongs done him by the Kings ſervant, and the Queen notwithſtanding the late friendſhip; but fearing he might be outed of his government in *Calice*, he poſts thither, his father the Earl of *Salisbury*, marcheth to the Court with five thouſand men, complaining to the *King* of the wrongs done by his ſervants to his ſon, and of the Queens diſſimulation. The Queen upon this, cauſeth the Lord *Audley* to incounter him on his way with ten thouſand men, and to bring him dead or alive; ſhe alſo came after with another Army. The two Lords fight deſperately on both ſides: at laſt, the Lord *Audly* with two thouſand four hundred of his men are ſlain, and *Salisbury* remained Maſter of the Field.

The Duke of *York* perceiving that his life was ſecretly aimed at, raiſeth an
1459 Army, and claims his Title to the Crown, in the open Field. Therefore he with *Salisbury*, march into *Wales*, where *Warwick* repairs to them, with *Trallop* and *Blunt*, two expert Commanders in the *French* wars. Their Armies meet the Kings Forces neer the Town of *Ludlow*: the two Captains, which pretended they were for the Lords, and had intended to invade the Kings Army, betimes the next morning, (being checkt in conſcience to fight againſt their Soveraign) ſecretly fled, came to the King, and acquainted him with the Enemies project; for which ſervice they are pardoned, and rewarded.

The

The Lords underſtanding their two chief Captains were revolted, and diffiding in their cauſe, fled from their Army in the dark; the Duke into *Wales*, and thence into *Ireland*, the other two into *Devonſhire*, and from thence to *Calice*. The *King* glad at their flight, purſues them, but too late; he pardoneth the ordinary ſoldiers of the *Yorkiſh* Faction, but their Captains were executed. The Lords are proclaimed Traitors, their goods and lands confiſcated, the government of the North is committed to the Earl of *Northumberland*, and to the Lord *Clifford*. *Henry* the young Duke of *Somerſet*, is made Commander of *Calice*, who going to take poſſeſſion, not thinking his Enemies were there, was beat off by the great Guns from the Caſtle. The Queen hearing of this, prepares to ſend a new Fleet, which lay ready at *Sandwich*; but the Mariners, who favoured the *Yorkiſh* Faction, boarded theſe Ships, as they lay at anchor, and conveyed them with the Lord *Rivers*, appointed Admiral of them, to *Calice*; *Warwick* ſails in them to *Ireland*, to confer with the Duke of *York*. In his return, the Duke of *Exeter*, Admiral of the Seas, intended to take him, but his Mariners, Favorers of the *Yorkiſh* Faction, were cold in the purſuit: ſo *Warwick* returned ſafe to *Calice*. The King upon advice of his Parliament, attainteth all the Lords of the *Yorkiſh* Faction, of high treaſon, and fills all the Sea Ports with Gariſons, for fear of Invaſion: But the Earls at *Calice* had ſecret notice of every thing done in the Kings Chamber; they manned divers of the Kings ſhips, which *Dynham* had brought thither, in which they arrived within the haven of *Sandwich*, and took Sir *Simon Mountfort* priſoner, Warden of the Cinque Ports, vanquiſhed the Town, and caried away ſuch of the Kings Ships, as they found there. They arrive at *Sandwich* the ſecond time, and are aſſiſted by the Lord *Cobham*, with twenty five thouſand men, who march towards *London*, whither the Lord *Scales* is ſent to ſecure it for the King: but the Lord Major would not ſuffer him to enter, ſhewing he had power ſufficient to keep the City for the King; ſo *Scales* in anger, poſſeſſeth the Tower, and annoies the *Londoners*. *An. Chriſti*

The King marcheth with *Buckingham* and *Somerſet*, and with many other Lords, and a ſtrong Army, againſt the Enemy: the two Armies met near *Northampton*; the *King* is for Peace, the Queen for a Battail, who therefore incourageth the ſoldiers. The fight began, and laſted two houres very furiouſly: At laſt the *King* is overthrown, two thouſand of his men ſlain, among which were *Buckingham*, *Shrewsbury*, and many others. The Queen with *Somerſet* and the Prince, fled to *Durham*, hoping to raiſe a new Army, or elſe to ſhelter themſelves in *Scotland*. The King is taken priſoner, and caried honourably to *London*. The Tower is delivered to the Lords by the ſoldiers, againſt the will of the Lord *Scales*, who ſtriving to eſcape diſguiſed in a wherry, is taken and beheaded. The Duke of *York* hearing of this Victory, repairs to *London*, calls a Parliament in the *Kings* name, and ſate down in the Kings ſeat in the upper Houſe, where in an eloquent ſpeech, he diſcovered his title to the Crown, being heir to *Anne* daughter of *Roger Mortimer*, ſon and heir to *Philip*, the only daughter of *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, the third ſon of *Edward* the third, and elder brother to *John* of *Gant*, who was Father to the Uſurper, King *Henry* the fourth. He related alſo the ſeveral calamities that fell upon this kingdom, under that unlawful government. Laſtly, he requires no favour, but what juſtice will afford him, nor other poſſeſſion, then what his deſcent and title will allow him. The Lords and Commons after long deliberation, enacted, that King *Henry* ſhould continue King for his life; that the Duke of *York* ſhould be proclaimed heir apparent of the Crown; that he ſhould be Protector both of King, and kingdom; and that the preſent poſſeſſion of the Crown, ſhould be delivered to him, if at any time *King Henry*, or his friends, ſhould attempt to infringe theſe Acts, now confirmed by Oaths.

The

An. Chriſti The Duke of *York*, being now Protector, ſends to *Scotland* in the Kings name, to the Queen, *Somerſet*, *Exeter*, *Devonſhire*, *Clifford*, and *Roſs*, and the reſt of the Lords fled thither, to repair to the Kings preſence; but they inſtead of obeying this command, come to the Court with an Army of eighteen thouſand *Engliſh* and *Scots*. Hereupon the Duke of *York*, with his younger ſon, the Earl of *Rutland*, and the Earl of *Salisbury*, leaving the King with the Duke of *Norfolk*, and Earl of *Warwick*, march with five thouſand men, and met the Queen at *Wakefield*. The Duke in expectation of his eldeſt ſon *Edward*, Earl of *March*, with a great Army, would needs fight, which unfortunately he did, for there he was ſlain, and almoſt three thouſand of his men. *Rutland* being but twelve years old, kneeling, deſired mercy, but was cruelly ſtabbed by the Lord *Clifford*. *Salisburies* head, with divers others, are ſtruck off, and ſet upon the walls of *York*, in ſpight of the *Yorkiſh* Faction. The young Duke of *York* after this, with three thouſand men, fights *Pembroke*, the Kings half brother, and ſome other Lords, with their compa-
1460 nies. In the firſt incounter, *Pembroke*, and the Earl of *Ormond* fled, four thouſand of their friends are ſlain, *Owen Tuthar* Father in law to King *Henry*, is taken priſoner, with many others, and put to death. Mean while the Q. Army beats the Duke of *Norfolk*, and reſcues King *Henry* from his power. But when ſhe heard of young *Yorks* victory, ſhe retreats Northward, and raiſeth ſixty thouſand men, and near *Towton*, is met by *York*, *Warwick*, and almoſt forty nine thouſand men; a cruel battail is fought, in which above thirty ſix thouſand *Engliſh* are ſlain; among which, were divers Earls, and Lords, the two Dukes, *Somerſet* and *Exeter* fled, *Devonſhire*, with many others, taken priſoners; the King, Queen, Prince *Edward*, and others, are fled into *Scotland*, where they are friendly intertained by the young King; in recompence of which favour, *Barwick* is delivered to the king of *Scots*. The Duke of *York* being Victor, rode triumphantly into *York*, took down the heads of his Father and Friends, and in the ſame place cauſes the heads of *Devonſhire*, and ſome others, to be ſet up. King *Henry* ſends his Queen, with Prince *Edward*, to her Father *Reyner*, deſiring him to procure aid from the *French* king: In the mean while he reſolves to ſtay in *Scotland*, in expectation of better fortunes. Theſe troubles were preſaged by a blazing ſtar, divers prodigious births, and a monſtrous cock out of the ſea. A Porcland crowed three times, turning his head to the South, North, and Weſt. In king *Henries* time *Pauls* ſteeple was fired with Lightning, and Leaden Hall in *London* built. Upon a League with *Spain*, our Sheep are tranſported thither. The white and red Roſes began to be the badges of *York* and *Lancaſter*. *Whittington* Colledge, and *Newgate* are built. The Biſhop of *Salisbury* is pulled from the high Altar, as he was ſaying Maſs, and on the top of a Hill near *Edington*, is barbarouſly murthered by the *Wiltſhire* men. Each one of his tenants carying away in triumph, a piece of his bloudy ſhirt. In this kings time alſo, *France*, *Normandy*, and *Aquitain*, are loſt, five main battails fought between the two great Factions: 1. At Saint *Albons*, in which the *Yorkiſh* prevailed. 2. On *Bloar* Heath, wherein the confederate Lords are Victors. 3. At *Northampton*, in which king *Henry* is overthrown. 4. At *Wakefield*, wherein the king was victorious. 5. At *Towton*, in which the new Duke of *York* prevailed.

CHAP.

An. Chriſti

CHAP. XXV.

A Proſecution of the Scottiſh *Hiſtory under* Robert *Duke of* Albany, *and* Mardo *Earl of* Fife *Governours; alſo under* James *the firſt, and* James *the ſecond, Kings, from the year* 1400, *till the year* 1460.

WEE ſhewed before, that the peace being broken by *Piercies* invaſion of *Scotland*, open war is denounced by the *Scots* againſt *England*. *Archibald Duglas*, with ten thouſand men, rageth with fire and ſword as far as *New Caſtle*. *Henry Piercy*, and *George Dumbar*, meets him with a ſtrong Army; a battail is fought, the *Scots* are defeated, and *Duglas* having loſt one eye, is taken priſoner, with ſome other Lords. This battail was fought at *Hamildon* in *Northumberland*; About this time died *Annabella* the Queen, and *Trale* Arch-Biſhop of S. *Andrews*, who kept Prince *David*, a laſcivious and unruly youth, in ſome awe; but when they were dead, he flew into all kind of diſorders, complaints came daily of him to the king his father, who deſires his brother the Duke of *Albania*, Lord Protector, to keep a ſtrict hand over the young Prince: he willing to extinguiſh his brothers race, makes *David* a cloſe priſoner, purpoſing to ſtarve him; but he was relieved a while by a maid, the keepers daughter of the priſon, who through the window conveyed unto him thin Oaten Cakes, which ſhe hid in a Linnen Cloth caſt over her head, to keep her from the heat of the Sun. A Country Nurſe alſo ſometimes gave him ſuck out of her breaſts, which he received by a cane; ſo his life was prolonged a while: but the keeper upon ſuſpition, watched the priſon ſo narrowly, that he caught both theſe women, who were puniſhed; the cruel keeper execrating his own daughter, ſuffered the young Prince at laſt to eat his own fleſh, for want of other food, and ſo he died miſerably. No man durſt acquaint his Father with this ſad and barbarous uſage, nor with his death a long time, for fear of the Proteſtor. But at laſt by ſecret whiſperings, the king hears of it, ſends for his brother, and accuſeth him, he layeth the fault upon others, and is ready to clear both himſelf and ſervants. Mean while he corrupts his accuſers, produceth ſome malefactors out of priſon, but free from this crime, whom he cruelly puts to death. Yet the king could not but intertain the ſuſpition ſtill of his brothers treachery, but durſt not puniſh him, becauſe of his greatneſs: Mean while being much grieved for his ſon *David*, takes care for his younger ſon *James*, now under the tuition of the Arch-Biſhop of Saint *Andrews*, who with others of the kings friends, adviſe him to ſend the Prince to *Charles* the ſixth King of *France*, ſo he ſhould be educated by him, and out of harms way. Upon this, he is ſent with *Sinclar* Earl of *Orkney*, his Governour, towards *France*; but ſtops at *Flamburg*, by reaſon of the wind, or his own ſickneſs, where he is detained by the *Engliſh*, and ſent up to the King, who retains him as a priſoner, againſt the Law of Nations, and Articles of Peace, made lately for eight years. 1400 1401

The king of *England* having received Letters from the *Scots* King, ſhewing the cauſes of his ſons going to *France*, and withall deſiring he may not be detained in *England*, deſires to be adviſed by his Councel, what he ſhould do in this caſe; ſome were of opinion, that ſeeing this Prince was ſent away to ſecure him from danger, and that there was now a peace with *Scotland*, the *Scots* Prince ſhould be ſet free, and hoſpitably uſed; and that there was no policy at that time to exaſperate the *Scots*: but others affirmed, that his detenſion was juſt, becauſe the *Scots* had aided *Piercy* againſt the king, and that old *Piercy* being a traitour, is maintained and ſheltred by the *Scots* king. This opinion

An. Christi pinion prevailed; Prince *James* is retained, and care taken for his education. But when news came of his captivity to king *Robert* his father, being then at Supper, he fell ſuddenly ſo ill, that they could ſcarce keep life in him; ſo grieved he was, that within three days he died, the 16 year of his Reign. The
1406 Government of the kingdom is committed to his brother *Robert*. In the five following years, divers incurſions of *Engliſh* and *Scots* upon each other were made, and divers places taken and re-taken. The battail of *Harlaw* among the *Scots* themſelves, was memorable. *Donald* Lord of the Iſles, laid claim to the Country of *Roſs*, as being next heir, and which the Governor wrongfully detained from him; therefore having raiſed ten thouſand men in the Iſles, enters *Roſs*, where none made reſiſtance, all acknowledging him for their Lord. Having had ſuch good ſucceſs here, he attempts *Morray* land, which alſo ſubmitted to him; then having plundred *Bogie*, he threatens *Aberden*; the Governour againſt this ſudden and unlooked for enemy, prepares an Army, but before he could be ready, the Earl of *Marre*, with moſt of the Gentry of thoſe parts, encounters him near the Village *Harlaw*;
1411 a bloudy battail is fought, which continued till the night parted them: ſo great was the loſſe on both ſides, that neither party brag of the Victory. More Gentry were loſt in this inteſtin quarrel, then before at any time againſt a Forain Enemy. About this time the Univerſity of Saint *Andrews* was erected.

For ten years after this, no memorable action is recorded between the two kingdoms; either becauſe of the Truce, and the *Engliſh* imployments in *France*, under *Henry* the fifth, or elſe becauſe the Governour of *Scotland* durſt not ſtir, fearing leſt the king of *England* ſhould ſend home the right heir to the kingdom. Some inroads the Borderers made now and then upon each other, but not by publick Authority: The *Dolphin* of *France* being diſinherited by his crazy-headed father, ſends to *Scotland* for aid, according to the old League. A Parliament is ſummoned, and ſeven thouſand Voluntaries under *John* Earl of *Buchan* are ſent, who got the *French* a memorable victory againſt the *Engliſh*, for which, he is made High Conſtable of *France*, the higheſt office next to the King. Mean while, *Robert* Protector of *Scotland* dieth, fifteen years after the death of king *Robert* the third. In his place is ſet up his ſon *Mordacus*, a man unfit for Government;
1420 which called the Earl of *Buchan* home from *France*, who ſhortly after was invited again by the *Dolphin* into *France*, whither he haſteneth, with five thouſand *Scots*, and lands at *Rotchel*. King *Henry* of *England* carieth over with him into *France*, young King *James* of *Scotland*, purpoſely by his means to alienate the *Scots* from the *French*, which he could not do; for when the *Scots King* did preſs them to forſake the *French*, and joyn with their *King*; they anſwered, that their King being now under another juriſdiction, had no power over them: wherefore King *Henry* having found in *Meldin* which he took, twenty *Scots*, he cauſed them to be hanged, pretending they fought againſt their King. Two years after, the *Engliſh* having got a victory at *Vernol*, Earl *Buchan*, with other Lords, and two thouſand *Scots* beſides, were there ſlain. And three years after this, the *Scots* had another overthrow, as they were conveying proviſions to *Orleans*. *Scotland* in the interim, is untowardly governed by *Mordacus*, and his three unruly ſons, who ſleighted their old father. *Walter* the eldeſt, being in love with one of his fathers Falcons, begged him, but having received a denial, in anger wrung off his neck; to whom the old man thus ſpake: Son, (ſaith he) becauſe thou wilt not obey me, I will ſend for one whom both thou and I ſhall obey. Wherefore he reſolves to ſend for his Couſin German *King James*.

A Parliament is called at *Perth*, where it is unanimouſly concluded, that the King muſt be ſent for, all men being weary of the preſent Government. Ambaſſadors are diſpatched into *England*, the Duke of *Glouceſter* being then Pro-

tector of the young King, calls a Parliament; in which it was reſolved the *Scots* King ſhould be ſent home, and to indear him the more to *England*, the Duke of *Somerſets* daughter is given to him in mariage; her portion ſhould be retained for half of the Kings Ranſom, for paiment of the other half, ſome Hoſtages ſhould be left: So *James* returns home the eighteenth year of his Captivity, to the great joy of the people, who complained of their grievances ſuffered by *Mordaos* three ſons, and others, who to ſatisfie the people, were ſent to priſon till the next Parliament. *An. Chriſti* 1423

The King and Queen are Crowned about the twentieth of *April*, *Mordac* ſet the King in his Throne, a ceremony belonging to the Earls of *Fife*. A Parliament is held, and ſome good laws enacted for ſuppreſſing of high-way men, who were become very bold and numerous, according to the looſeneſs of the former times. Subſidies are alſo granted, for paiment of the moity of the Kings Ranſom, which becauſe it was unpleaſing to the people, ſome part thereof was remitted by the King. In this Parliament, *Mordacus* Duke of *Albany*, with his two ſons, *Walter* and *Alexander*, and divers others, are apprehended, and ſent to ſeveral priſons; the Dukes Caſtles are ſeized on for the King. *James* the Dukes youngeſt ſon, ſeeing the ruine of his Fathers Family, in revenge, raiſeth ſome Forces, and burns *Dun-Britton*; then having murthered the Kings Uncle, with thirty more, flies into *Ireland*, where ſhortly after he died. Divers prime perſons alſo fled with him. Shortly after, a Parliament is held at *Sterling*, where *Mordac* with his two ſons, and his wives father, are arraigned of High Treaſon, and beheaded. Not long after this, Ambaſſadors come from *France*, to renue the old League, and to make a match between *Charles* the ſevenths ſon, and King *James* his daughter, being as yet children.

The next year after, the King makes a Progreſſe into the Northern parts, for ſuppreſſing ſome turbulent ſpirits there. Divers of the factious Ring-leaders are apprehended, and put to death. *Alexander* Lord of the Iſles, upon intreaty of friends, is pardoned, and conditionally that he will be quiet, and ſubject to the Laws, is ſent home: But he was ſo far from acknowledging the Kings favour, that he thought himſelf highly wronged for being impriſoned ſo long. Therefore he raiſeth ſome Forces, and ſuddenly falls upon *Innerneſſe*, which he firſt plunders, then ſets on fire. He beſieged the Caſtle, but could not take it; therefore riſeth, upon the report of an Army ſent by the King againſt him. He was now ten thouſand ſtrong, but two of the *Clans*, to wit, *Chatan* and *Chameron*, upon the news of the Kings Forces coming, forſook him. Hereupon, miſtruſting the fidelity of the reſt, disbands his Forces and flies into the Iſlands, and thence intends for *Ireland*; but finding no ſecurity, except in the Kings wonted clemency, procures ſome potent friends to make his peace with him, to which the King would not hearken, till he come himſelf; therefore he comes privately to *Edinburgh*, and in a white ſheet upon *Eaſter* day, caſts himſelf at the Kings feet, and ſubmits to his mercy; the Queen and Lords then preſent intercede for him: he is commanded to ſtay till Divine Service was ended. Mean while the King thinking it fit to yeild ſomewhat to the Queens requeſt, and yet not ſafe to ſend home ſo potent and factious a man, without ſome puniſhment, he ſends him to *Tentallon* Caſtle, and his pragmatical mother to the Iſle *Aemona*: the *Clan-Catans*, and *Clan-Chamerons*, deſtroyed each other by their fewds. In the Iſles, *Donald Baloc*, to revenge his Couſin *Alexanders* wrongs, makes new ſtirs. Againſt him the Earls of *Mar* and *Cathneſſe*, raiſe ſome Forces, whom *Donald* ſuddenly overthrew. *Alan* Earl of *Cathneſs*, was killed: *Alexander* of *Mar*, fled with a few. *Donald* upon this good ſucceſs, goeth with fire and ſword, through all *Abria*, or *Lochabor*; but hearing the Kings Army was coming, haſtneth to the Iſles, with rich booty; the chief of theſe *Clans* repair to the King, to 1426

An. Chriſti clear their innocency, but he will admit of no purgation, till they bring to puniſhment, the Ring-leaders of theſe Rebels. Upon this, they go home, where they apprehend many of them, whom they put to death, and three hundred they ſent in chains to the King, whom he commanded to be hanged; *Donald* himſelf could not be found. There were ſome other of theſe *Clans* left, who by their private quarrels, deſtroyed each other. *Mack Donald*, a notable Rebel, for ſhooing a widow, whom he had robbed, with horſe ſhoos, was ſo ſhooed himſelf, and caried about the ſtreets in that manner, with twelve of his companions, and then hanged upon Gallows's near the high-way. *Mach Donald* the Iſlander, hid himſelf in *Ireland*; where his head was cut off, and ſent to the King for a preſent: and ſo the kingdom was pretty well quieted.

1430 After this, the King ſends divers wiſe and ſincere men about the kingdome, to hear complaints, and to look to weights and meaſures. At this time he had two Twins born to him, which occaſioned much joy, and the inlargement of *Duglas* and *Kennedy* out of priſon, who had been ſent thither for ſpeaking too laviſhly againſt the preſent Government. He advanceth learning, and ſends for ſome skilful in all ſorts of Manufacture out of *Flanders*. He had a mind alſo to reform the abuſes of the Clergy, but durſt not adventure, becauſe of their power and exempt juriſdiction: Yet he was blamed for the luxury and exceſs of his Courtiers, in diet, and apparel, though he himſelf was very moderate, both in the one and the other. He was diſliked alſo for penuriouſneſs, having a greater Revenue then his brother, by the addition of the Earls of *Marr* and *Buchans* patrimonies, who were dead. Whereas his Uncle *Robert*, and this *Roberts* ſon, his Couſin German *Mordacus*, the laſt Governours of *Scotland*, had been very bountiful to the people, whoſe inheritance alſo fell to the King, againſt whom the Gentry grumbled; alſo for keeping all the Wardſhips in his own hand, which ought to be given as Rewards to well deſerving men. The King excuſed his parcimony, by ſhewing how poor his Revenues were by the profuſeneſs of the former Governours and Kings; and that he was forced to raiſe Taxes for defraying of publick charges. Mean while an Ambaſſador comes from *France* to bring away *Margaret*, who had been betrothed to *Lewis*, *Charles* the ſevenths ſon. This Ambaſſie is croſſed by another out of *England*, deſiring an union of the two kingdoms, which is more natural, then with *France*, that neither ſpeaks the ſame language, nor is confined within the ſame Iſland. This union was then earneſtly deſired, becauſe *Burgundy* was fallen off from *England*, and *France* was beginning to grow too ſtrong. *Barwick*, *Roſsburg*, and the other places, now controverted, are promiſed to the *Scots*, if they will aſſent to an offenſive and defenſive League with *England*. The matter is referred to a Parliament, wherein it was conceived, that *Englands* aim was to make the *Scots* forſake their old friends, to the end they ſhould be wholly ſubject to the *Engliſh*. Therefore they reſolve to be conſtant to their old League. This being denyed, the Ambaſſador threatneth war againſt *Scotland*, ſhewing there was already a Fleet prepared to intercept the Lady and her company. Notwithſtanding theſe threats, the King ſends away his daughter, who eſcaped the *Engliſh* Fleet, becauſe that was ingaged in purſuit of ſome *Holland* Veſſels, laden with wine from *Rotchel*, which they took for Prize, (*England* and *Burgundy* being now enemies) but this Prize was re-taken by the *Spaniard*. The *Scots* ſhips arrive ſafely at *Rotchel*, from whence the young Lady is conveyed by the *French* Nobility, to *Turon*, where ſhe is maried, to the content of both Nations.

The King of *England* had now twice provoked the *Scots* to make war; once by labouring to intercept the *Scottiſh* Lady; and then by ſending *Piercy* with four thouſand men to plunder the borders of *Scotland*, who was met by *Duglas*

las Earl of *Angus*, between whom was a hot Skirmiſh, and many killed on both ſides, ſome ſay about 200, of the *Engliſh* were taken 1500. K. *James* raiſeth a great Army, and beſiegeth *Roxburg*; but when he was in hope of a ſurrender, the Q. comes poſt to him, & in a great fright aſſures him, that a plot was intended againſt him, ſuddenly to take away his life: Upon this, he riſeth from the ſiege, and disbands the Army, for which he was much blamed, in that he would be ſo uxorious, as at his wives report to diſmiſſe an Army raiſed with ſo much trouble and charge. The King in his return, retires himſelf into the *Dominicans* Covent at *Perth*, to try what he could learn there of this plot. Mean while the Traitors (the chief of which was *Walter* of *Athol*, the *K*ings uncle) haſten to bring the Treaſon to maturity. One of the Kings own ſervants makes way for the Traitors entrance into the *K*ings Chamber in the night, who preſently aſſault him; the Queen by interpoſing her ſelf to keep off the ſwords, received two wounds; but being forcibly caried away, and the King left to himſelf, he is murthered, having received twenty eight wounds. The ſad news of the Kings death being ſpread abroad, inquiry is made every where for the Traitors, who were all found out, and in leſſe then forty days juſtly executed. *Walter* Earl of *Athol*, had his limbs disjointed the firſt day, by the Strapado; then he was ſet upon a Pillar, and there Crowned with a burning Crown of Iron, to accompliſh what the Witches had told him, to wit, that he ſhould be crowned in a great Aſſembly of people: the next day he is dragged by a horſe through the ſtreets of *Edinburgh* upon an Hurdle. The third day his bowels are taken out, and burned, he being yet alive; his heart is pulled out, and his head cut off, and advanced upon a Pole. At laſt his body is quartred, and ſet up in four ſeveral places: Some others of the ſame wicked crew, are tortured to death, with hot pincers; and others with other puniſhments. This King reigned thirteen years, and lived forty four: he was buried in the Charter Houſe of *Perth*, which he founded.

An. Chriſti 1437

To *James* the 1. ſucceeded *James* the 2d, and youngeſt of the Twins, for *Alexander* the other died. This King is Crowned at *Holy Roods* in *Edinburgh*. During his minority, *Alexander Leviſton* is made Protector or Regent. *Archbald* Earl of *Duglas*, being angry that this honour was not conferred on him, ſuffers, or rather encourageth the *Ananders* under his juriſdiction, to ſpoil and plunder the Country. Complaints are made againſt him, which he ſleighted, commanding his people not to obey the Kings Edicts, alledging he had Regal power himſelf. Beſides there were private quarrels between the Regent and Chancelor, croſſing each others power, to the great diſturbance of the people; which at laſt broke out into publick hatred, to pillaging, and burning of Houſes and Villages. The Q. being much troubled at this diſtemper, and willing to get her young ſon out of the Chancelors cuſtody, who kept him with himſelf in *Edinburgh* Caſtle, cunningly inſinuates her ſelf ſo much into his good opinion, as that ſhe got leave to lie in the ſame Caſtle with her ſon, whom at length ſhe conveyed away in her Trunk, where ſhe kept her Linen, to *Lieth*, and from thence in a ſhip to *Sterlin*, where the Regent reſides. Thither the chief of his party came to ſee the King, and to conſult, how the Kingdom ſhould be freed from the Chancelors tyranny, who had abuſed his truſt, wronged the King, oppreſſed the people, and filled his own Coffers with the wealth of the kingdom. There the Queens wiſdom and care is highly commended; and its agreed, that an Army be raiſed, and *Edinburgh* Caſtle beſieged, before the Chancelour know any thing. Preſently the Regents Faction arm themſelves and beleaguer the Caſtle. The Chancelor knowing his own danger, ſends to *Duglas* for aid, aſſuring him that the Regent aimed at the ruine of them both. *Duglas* who hated them both equally, anſwers him that both the Chancelour and Regent were perfidious, and aimed at nothing but their own private good,

An. Christi and that therefore the Kingdom ſhould be happy if they were both dead. Upon this anſwer, the Regent and Chancelour make Truce for two days, and came to a parly, in which they made known to each other, how dangerous it would be for them to jar, ſeeing *Duglas* deſired the ruine of them both, aiming at the ſole rule of the kingdom, which he would eaſily obtain, if either he could ruine one or both of them. Thus they two agreed: The Chancelour delivers the keys of the Caſtle to the King, where he ſupped that night, and the next day confirms the one in his Chancelorſhip, the other in his Regency. But not long after, *Duglas* their mortal enemy died, whoſe ſon being fourteen years of age, by reaſon of his great wealth and power, and pufft up alſo with flatterers, took more ſtate on him, then became a ſubject. His Court outvied the Kings; his Guard conſiſted of two thouſand horſe, he made Knights, and Councellors, and Officers of his State; then he ſends Ambaſſadors to the *French* King, mentioning the merits of his Progenitors to the Crown of *France*, and ſo he obtains the Title of Duke of *Turon*, or *Tours*. Which honour his Grand-father received from *Charls* 7. and his father till that time enjoyed it. So formidable was the power of *Duglas*, that the Regent and Chancelour committed the Queen and her husband *James Stuart* of *Lorn* to priſon, upon ſuſpition that they complyed with him. Nor were they ſet free, till they had cleared themſelves, and promiſed not to meddle with publick buſineſs, without the Regents knowledge.

Whilſt the kingdom was thus diſtracted, the Iſlanders land with great Forces upon the main land, and with fire and ſword, ſpoil all before them, ſparing neither ſex nor age. To theſe miſeries were added a great famin and peſtilence; the cauſe of all theſe calamities is aſcribed to the Regents tyrannical government, who ſleighting the Chancelor, ruled all by himſelf. But the Chancelour ſeeing how diſcontent the people were with the Viceroy, ſeizeth himſelf of *Edinburgh* Caſtle, and then watched an opportunity, to get the King out of the Regents cuſtody. One day the King was hunting in the Woods near *Sterlin*, with a ſmal company, the Regent alſo then was out of the way; the Chancelor with ſome Troops of horſe lighting on the King, deſires him not to fear, they were come to take him away from his Imperious Tutor, and to ſet him at liberty; therefore (ſaith the Chancelour) play the King, and ſtrive now to rule both your ſelf, and your people, whoſe diſeaſe is ſuch as cannot be cured but by your own immediat hand. With this, he leads the Kings Horſe by the bridle, to a place not far off, where four thouſand horſe were ready to convey him to *Edinburgh*, where he is received with great acclamation. The Viceroy being much perplexed, that he was thus overreached by the Chancelor, and not knowing whom to truſt, reſolves to caſt himſelf upon the Chancelour: therefore with ſome of his retinue rides to *Edinburgh*, and by the interceſſion of the Biſhops of *Aberden* and *Murrey*, procured the Chancelour to give him a meeting in the church of Saint *Aegidius*; where having met, the Viceroy deſires there might be no difference between them, ſeeing they both aimed at the ſame thing, which vvas the good of the King, and Kingdom, though in the manner there might be ſome diverſities.

He wiſheth him to conſider how many enemies they had, how glad they would be (ſaith he) of our jars, how happy might both we and the Kingdom be, if we accord, which if we doe, we ſhall ſecure our ſelves, diſappoint our enemies, advance the Kings, and Kingdoms good; therefore if by either of us, any thing hath been done amiſs, let it be forgot and forgiven, for the publick goods ſake; he having ſaid and confeſſed his error in carying away the yong K. (whoſe tuition was by his father committed to the Chancelor alone, & w^ch^ he had found to be no honor but a burthen to him) & the Chancelor being glad of this friendly overture, lays hold on it, & ſo they are recõciled, & reſolve

to

to concur equally in government of the kingdom. Then a Parliament is called, in which many grievances and complaints are exhibited, by those who had suffered in the late distractions. The Regent told them that *Duglas* might quickly remedy these evils, if he would comply with the Parliament, which can do but little good in settling of affairs, so long as so potent a man stood out against them. Upon this, an Order is made to invite him to the Parliament, that he with the rest might act for the publick good; that he would not degenerate from his noble Progenitors, who had been alway faithful Patriots; that if he please to come, he shall have what share in the Government he will desire. *An. Christi*

Upon this invitation, and perswasion of friends, and desire also of more power, he comes. The Chancelour met him divers miles from the City, and entertains him for two days together at his house, called *Crichton* Castle, where he desires him to acknowledge the *K*ings power and government, and to submit thereto; that he would put away from him all lewd persons, and not protect high-way men, nor oppress the Kings subjects. What hath been by him hitherto acted, shall be imputed to his ill Councellors, and his own inexperience and youth. By these fair words, he was allured to go, who also had brought with him his brother *David*: But some of his wisest friends suspected treachery, and therefore wished him to return, or at least to send back his brother, that the whole Family might not perish together. But these men were quickly silenced by the Chancelor; and the two young Gentlemen went in chearfully, suspecting no hurt. As soon as *Duglas* was entred *Edinburgh* Castle, the Vice-Roy meets him, and makes much of him, causing him to sit down at the Kings own Table. About the midst of Dinner, some of the *K*ings Guard in Arms, brings into the room a Bulls head in a Dish, which they set down before him. In those times, this was a sign of death to those that were to lose their heads. The young Gallant being affrighted at this sight, began to withdraw from the Table; but he was presently laid hold on and caried out into the Castle Court, where he for his intemperate youthfulness, is beheaded, with his brother. When the King heard of this execution, he wept, but was checkt for it by the Regent, shewing, that in the death of *Duglas*, consisted the Kings security and happiness. *Duglas* dying without issue, the Earldom being intailed, fell to *James*, nick-named *Crassus*, or *Grosse*; and his other Patrimonies, which were very great, to his sister *Beatrix*.

Grosse died within two years after, and his eldest son *William* succeeded, who maried with his Uncles daughter, heir of many Countries; which brought much envy on him, both because of the great power and wealth was fallen to him, and likewise the propinquity of bloud between him and his wife; of these things he being conscious, resolved to procure the *K*ings favour upon any tearms, who now was of years, and had undertaken the Government of the kingdom; therefore he bestowes large gifts on some Courtiers, to speak for him; and withall comes in person to the King, acknowledgeth his former errors, and promiseth for the future to be loyal to his Majesty. Upon this the King receives him into favour, and imparts his councels to him; but the Vice-Roy and Chancelour fearing lest this insinuating of *Duglas* into the *K*ings favour, aimed at both their ruines; resigned up their places, and took leave of the Court. The one retired himself to his own Country Mansion; the other to *Edinburgh* Castle: and as they feared, so it fell out; for *Duglas* so insinuated himself into the Kings affection, that he intending to be revenged on them for the death of his two Cousin Germans, perswades the King to call the Regent and Chancelour to an account of their Government; hoping by these means to oppress them if they came, or to have their estates confiscate, if they came not. Upon this they are summoned, but came not, ex- 1443

An. Chriſti cuſing their abſence, not for any crime they were guilty of, but becauſe they had too many enemies at Court, to whoſe cenſure they ſhould be loth to ſubmit; therefore they would reſerve themſelves for better times.

Upon this anſwer, *Duglas* got a Parliament to be called at *Sterling*, in which the Regent and Chancelour are proclaimed publick enemies to the State, and their eſtates confiſcate. To this purpoſe, Forces are ſent to demoliſh the Caſtles, or to new Gariſon them; which was done accordingly: the Chancelor in requital, raiſeth ſome Troops, and commits great ſpoil in the enemies Country, being aided by *Kennedy*, Arch-Biſhop of S. *Andrews*, *George* Earl of *Angale*, and *John* Earl of *Morton*. Upon theſe *Duglas* wracks his anger, one quarrel begets another; ſo divers Forces are raiſed by theſe parties, and divers Skirmiſhes there were, not without much ſhedding of bloud. Mean while the Chancelour *Crichton*, is beleaguered in *Edinburgh* Caſtle by *Duglas*. At length, after nine months ſiege, *Crichton* is pardoned for all offences of his againſt the King, and is permitted to march away with his Forces; ſo the Caſtle is ſurrendred. Not long after, *Crichton* is again made Chancelour, but he left the Court, and all publick imploiments: every one knew that *Duglas* was the cauſe of all theſe civil broils; yet ſo great was his power with the King, that no man durſt accuſe him: ſome great ones he cauſed to be put to death, ſome to be baniſhed. Having done what he could againſt *Crichton*, he tries what he can do againſt *Leviſton* the Regent, whom he cauſeth with his ſon *James*, and divers others, to be ſummoned to the Parliament at *Edinburgh*, where they are accuſed of high crimes. The Regent, and the two *Dundaſſes*, are ſent to priſon in *Dunbarton* Caſtle, the reſt are beheaded. *James* the Regents ſon, on the Scaffold, complained much againſt the inconſtancy of Fortune, and vanity of worldly Honours; ſhewing, that notwithſtanding his Father had been Vice-Roy of *Scotland*, and had done ſo much good ſervice for the King and kingdome, yet all is forgot, the Kings pardon ſleighted, the intreaties of the Nobility for his life rejected; therefore wiſheth all men to beware of publick imployments, and honours, being the deceitful ſmiles of flattering fortune: and having ſo ſaid, laid down his neck on the block, to the great grief of the Spectators.

In the midſt of theſe Civil broils, *Crichton* the Chancelour is ſent Ambaſſador into *France*, to renue the old League, and to get a wife for the King. About this time *Cameron*, Arch-Biſhop of *Glaſgow*, for his cruelties and oppreſſion of his tenants, was called upon by a ſtrange voice to appear before Chriſts Tribunal; being then aſleep, he awaketh in fear, and calls up his ſervants, who ſate down by him: He calls for a Book, and as he was beginning to read, the voice ſummons him again, to the amazement of his ſervants; but when the voice called the third time, he gave a hideous groan, thruſt out his tongue and died. And now the Truce with *England* is expired: whereupon incurſions are made into each others Territories, fire, and ſword, raging on both ſides; ſo that the Country for many miles is laid waſte: therefore a new Truce for ſeven years is concluded; before the expiration of which, the Borderers begin to ſpoil and rob each other. Complaints being made on both ſides, Armies are raiſed; a battail is fought, in which the *Scots* had the better; three thouſand of the *Engliſh* being ſlain, and of the *Scots* ſix hundred only; many were taken priſoners, and much booty is caried into *Edinburgh*. This battail was fought at a place called *Sarc*. Upon the news of this overthrow at *London*, a new Army is appointed to be ſent againſt the *Scots*, for re-gaining of what was loſt: but this Expedition was hindred by the inteſtin commotions in *England*; therefore Ambaſſadors are
1448 ſent to *Scotland*, with Propoſitions of Peace: upon which, when they could not agree, a Truce is made for three years; and preſently after a Meſſenger is ſent from the Chancelour out of *Flanders*, about the mariage of the Duke of

of *Gelders* daughter, ſiſter to the Duke of *Burgundy*, with King *James*. She *An. Chriſti*
the next year is conveyed into *Scotland*, with a great company of Lords and
Earls, and is Crowned at *Holy Roods*.

After this, Earl *Duglas* undertakes a journy for *Rome*, being the year of Jubilee, accompanied with many Lords and Gentlemen; who in his abſence is complained of by his enemies to the King, who durſt not in his preſence, whiſper againſt him. He is accuſed of divers oppreſſions. The King was not willing to hear any complaints againſt him, being abſent; yet to ſtop the clamours of the people, he ſends to the Earls Proctor, to appear, and to take notice of the crimes objected againſt his Lord. He refuſeth to come, wherefore he is impriſoned for contempt; but at laſt he ſubmits, and comes into the Court, who Petitioned, that the Trial be put off, till the Earl come himſelf. But a ſentence paſt for ſatisfaction of his debts. To this purpoſe, Commiſſioners are appointed to take up his Revenues, who were ſleighted by the Earls Tenants and Vaſſals; therefore the King ſends an Army into *Galloway* to force them. The Earl hearing of theſe paſſages at *Rome*, was much perplexed; he was alſo forſaken by divers of his followers: ſo that he returns home with thin Attendants.

Before he came to the King, he premiſes his brother *James* to ſound out how he was affected towards him; and finding he ſtood right in the Kings opinion, returns home; and upon promiſe that he would ſuppreſſe the *Annanders*, who were notable Robbers, he is ſo highly advanced in the Kings favour, that he confers on him the Title of Vice-Roy of *Scotland*; which afterward he forfeited, by having ſecret correſpondency with the King of *England*. *Crichton* the Chancelor was again advanced, which ſo angerd *Duglas*, that he ſet ſome of his followers in the high-way one night, as he was going home from *Edinburgh*, to murther him · but being a ſtout man, he eſcaped, by killing one, and wounding another, but he was wounded alſo himſelf. Shortly after, being recovered, he returns unexpectedly to *Edinburgh*, with a great Train of his friends and ſervants, and had almoſt ſurpriſed *Duglas*, who having eſcaped the danger, to make his party the ſtronger, enters into league with the two richeſt Earls of that time; to wit, of *Roſſe*, and *Craford*. So that now he began to ſleight the King; for one Sir *John Harris* of *Galloway* complaining to *Duglas* of the wrongs he had ſuffered by the *Ananders*, his Vaſſals, and finding no redreſſe, falls himſelf upon them with ſome Forces, which he had raiſed, hoping to recover his loſſes. But he with his Train was ſurpriſed by the Earls Forces, and hanged, notwithſtanding the King by his Letters intreated his pardon. This made people give out, that *Duglas* aimed to be King himſelf; for when the King had interceded again for a chief man of the *Maclellans*, whom *Duglas* kept in priſon for killing one of his name, he ſleighted the Kings requeſt, & executed the Gentleman. The King being ſtirred up by the clamors of the people againſt *Duglas*, ſends for him, who becauſe of his guilty mind, refuſeth to come, knowing that he had many enemies at Court. Yet at laſt, upon the publick faith, confirmed by hand and ſeal; he adventures to come to *Sterlin* with a great Train, where he is kindly uſed by the King, who after Supper, calls him aſide, and reproves him for his ingratitude, and inſolencies; yet promiſeth to pardon all by-paſt offences, if he will break off the league with *Roſſe* and *Craford*, which could not conſiſt with the Kings ſafety or honour. At this the Earl began to boggle, and uſe tergiverſation, ſaying, he would adviſe with his friends, and that the King needed not to be ſo haſty or preſſing. At this he was ſo incenſed, that he told the Earl plainly, if you will not (ſaith he) break off this confederacy, I will, and with that ſtabs him in the breaſt with his dagger. The Courtiers hearing a noiſe, preſently brake into the room, each one giving the Earl a wound. Upon the report of this ſlaughter, a great tumult in the Town is raiſed by the Earls four 1451
bro-

An. Chriſti brothers, and his faction; but the tumult was at laſt appeaſed. The Earldom falls to *James* the next brother, who ſpeaking bitterly againſt the perfidiouſneſſe of the *King* and his Court, deſires his brothers, friends, and followers, to beſiege the Caſtle; but they wanted ſtrength enough for that enterpriſe, therefore they take the Kings Patent containing the Publick Faith, and ties it to a horſe tail, dragging it up and down the ſtreets, and uſing all opprobrious ſpeeches againſt the King and his Court. Then in the Market place the King and his adherents are denounced Perjurers, Truce-breakers, and enemies to all good men, by the ſound of five hundred horns: at laſt they plunder the Town, and fire it.

Within few days this inraged multitude falls to ſpoiling of all the Kings lands and tenants; they beſiege alſo *Dalketh* Caſtle, but could not take it. In the interim the King raiſeth an Army, but becauſe the *Duglaſsians* were too ſtrong for him, he reſolves to forbear action, till *Alexander Gordon* come with his Northern Forces; the Earl of *Craford* to keep theſe from joining with the Kings Southern Forces, encounters with *Gurdon* at *Brechin* in *Anguſe*. A fierce Battail is fought, in which the *Crafordians* are defeated, many prime men on both ſides were killed, *Gordon* here loſt both his brothers, and was forced to return home with his victorious Army, to ſuppreſs the Earl of *Murry*, who was raging with fire and ſword in *Huntlies* Country of *Bogy*; but the *Gordons* beat him not only thence, but alſo out of his own Country of *Murry*. Mean while a Parliament is called at *Edinburgh*, to which Earl *Duglas* and the Lords that followed him, are ſummoned to appear, who refuſe to come. The Earl alſo cauſed a paper to be faſtned the next night on the Church door, wherein he renounceth all Allegiance to the *King*, ſaying, that he will never truſt him, who murthered his Couſins at *Edinburgh*, and his brother at *Sterlin*, being allured thither upon the publick faith; for this contumacy, this Earl *James*, with his brothers, and *Beatrix*, his deceaſed brothers wife, with the Earl of *Crawford*, are proclaimed Rebels. An Army is raiſed to purſue them; their houſes are plundred, fields waſted, barns fired, and their cattel driven away. Earl *James* in the mean time to keep the wealth once gotten, ſtill in his Family, marieth with *Beatrix*, his defunct brothers wife, and deals with the Pope for a diſpenſation, which the King by his Letters hindred. The three enſuing years are ſpent in deſtroying each other with fire and ſword; whereupon followed the famine and peſtilence. Some of the Earls wiſeſt friends, adviſe him to ſubmit to the King, rather then ſtand out to the ruine of himſelf, family, and friends: but he is reſolved never to truſt thoſe that had murthered againſt their faith, his Couſins, and brother: Earl *Craford* being weary of the wars, and of the injuſtice of the cauſe, reſolves in time to ſubmit to the Kings mercy; therefore one day bare-footed, and bare-headed, he comes and caſts himſelf at the Kings feet, deſiring pardon for what was paſt, and promiſeth his fidelity and loyalty for the future. The King upon this ſubmiſſion, and perſwaſion withall of Arch-Biſhop *Kennedy*, his wiſe Councelour, conſidering alſo that *Crafords* falling off from *Duglas*, would weaken that party, receives him into his favor, which *Craford* ever after retained till his dying day. *Duglas* perceiving his Forces to grow weaker daily, had little hope left him now, but in the King of *England*, from whom he expected help; therefore ſends *Hammilton* to *London*, who receives this anſwer from the King, that he would not make war upon *Scotland*, except the Earl will become a ſubject of *England*, and truſt the King with his perſon and eſtate: This hope failing him, and being weakned every day by the *Kings* Forces, who plundred his Countries, and beat down his Caſtles; he is reſolved upon the advice of *Hammilton*, to venture his Fortunes upon a battail. *Abrecorn* Caſtle was now beſieged by the *Kings* Army. The Earl raiſeth all the ſtrength he could to relieve the Caſtle; but when he came within view of the *Kings* Army

Army, he made a halt, and kept off his ſoldiers ſo long from fighting, *An. Chriſti*
that they grew weary with delays. And *Hammilton* one night revolted to the King, who after he had impriſoned him a while, receives him to his favour. Others alſo following the example of *Hamilton*, forſook *Duglas*, ſo the Caſtle at laſt is taken by the King, and demoliſhed. The Earl being forſaken by moſt of his men, flyeth to *England*, vvith a few of his friends: but ſhortly after, he got ſome new Forces, and vvith them enters *Annandel*, but is beaten by the Kings party; he eſcapes again with his brother *John*; *Archbald* Earl of *Murrey* is ſlain, and *George* is wounded, and afterward beheaded. Then a Parliament is held at *Edinburgh*, in which the *Duglaſſes*, *James* and *John*, with *Beatrix*, are proſcribed.

Earl *James* having loſt his brothers, forſaken by his Soldiers, ſlighted by the Engliſh; betakes himſelf at laſt to *Donald* Lord of the Iſles, and Earl of *Roſs*, with whom he enters into a league; they fall firſt upon the Kings lands next to them, then upon *Argile*, *Arran*, *Lochaber* and *Murray*, which they waſte with fire and ſword, they took the Caſtle of *Innerneſs* and fired the Town. Mean while the Engliſh invade the *Scots* borders, and carrie away great booties. *Beatrix* who had married two brothers, being checkt in conſcience, ſubmits her ſelf to the Kings mercy, who pardoned her: The like did the wife of *Donald*; and the like favour ſhe obtains. *Piercy* and the baniſhed *Douglaſs* invade *Marcia* again, but are beat back vvith loſs by *George Douglaſs* E. of *Angus*; *Donald* being weary of his wicked courſes, ſends an humble Petition to the King by his friends, acknowledging his faults, and promiſing all fidelitie and allegeance for the future, preſuming his Majeſtie would be no leſs gracious to him, then he had been to *Crawford* and others: The King upon the importunity of his friends, and the neceſſity alſo that lay on him then, to ſettle his diſtracted Kingdome, ſends him a pardon; and ſo all being quieted at home, he prepares now to make war upon *England*. In the interim the confederate Lords, namely the Duke of *York*, the Earls of *Salisbury* and *Warwick*, with the reſt, ſend Ambaſſadors to deſire the *Scots* aid againſt King *Henry* their enemy, who had loſt *France*, oppreſſed his Kingdome, and injured the *Scots*, withall they promiſe reſtitution of what had been lately taken from the *Scots*; this proffer is accepted by King *James*, who having raiſed an Army, and being now on his march, is met by an Engliſh Impoſter who had lived long in *Italy*; he feignes himſelf to be the Popes Legat, ſent from his holineſs, to forbid him to make war upon *England*, for the Pope was reſolved to make a general peace in Chriſtendom; this being believed, the King disbands his Army, not knowing that this Impoſter was ſent by King *Henry*, till afterward; when he ſaw he was deluded, he aſſembleth again his Forces, and marcheth ſtraight to *Roxburg* Town, which he took and demoliſhed; then he ſits down before the Caſtle, where an Ambaſſie from the Engliſh Confederates aſſures him, that their King was defeated, and the war ended; therefore having thanked him for his good will towards them, deſires him to raiſe his ſiege from *Roxburg*; otherwiſe an Army will be ſent againſt him: To theſe the King anſwers, that as hitherto he hath not made uſe of the Confederates favour, ſo for the future he will not fear their power: He ſet down before a Caſtle built on his own ground, from which he is not to be removed by words, but by arms: Mean while *Donald* of the Iſles with freſh Forces repaires to the King, proferring his ſervice and fidelitie, which the King accepted; the Earl of *Hamley* alſo brings ſome more ſupplies; the King growing wearie of this long ſiege, falls to ſtorming of the Caſtle with great Ordnance, but whilſt he was giving fire to one of the pieces himſelf; ſtanding too near was ſuddenly ſtruck dead; his death was a

1455

vvhile

An. Chriſti while concealed, leaſt the Soldiers ſhould be diſheartned, the Queen cal-
ling the Lords apart, deſires them not to give off, nor be dejected for the Kings death, ſhe would bring another King ſhortly in his room, ſo they fall furiouſly on the Caſtle; in the interim the Kings ſon *Iames*, now 7. years old, is brought into the Camp and ſaluted King; ſhortly upon this the Caſtle is ſurrendred, the Gariſon is permitted to depart with their baggage: And that this Caſtle may breed no more quarrel, it is levelled to the ground. King *Iames* died the 23 year of his Reigne, and of his
1460 life the 29.

CHAP. XXVI.

The Engliſh Hiſtory under King Edward 4. Edward 5. *and* Richard 3. *from the year* 1460, *till the year* 1485.

1461 UPon the overthrow of King *Henry* 6. *Edward* Duke of *York* is proclaimed King, and Crowned: He begins his Reign with many good Acts; Repeals the laſt Kings Statutes, concerning Treaſon, and puts the Earl of *Oxford* with ſome other of King *Henries* Councellours, to death. His two brothers *George* and *Richard* are made Dukes; the one of *Clarence*, the other of *Glouceſter*; divers other Lords alſo are created. The Duke of *Somerſet*, Sir *Ralph Pery*, ſubmit themſelves to the King, who pardons them; but afterward they revolted. When the Queen had returned with new Forces from *France*, and in *Scotland* had raiſed an Army to invade *Nor-*
1462 *thumberland*, King *Edward* ſends a Fleet into the Northern ſeas, and an Army by land under the Lord *Montacute*; he follows after himſelf with another. *Montacute* is incountred by the Lords *Roſs*, and *Hungerford*, and *Piercy*. The Lords fled, and *Piercy* was killed. Theſe being defeated, *Montacute* marcheth againſt the King and Queens Army, who before *K. Edward* came up with his Forces, diſordered and routed the Queens Army. *Somerſet* with divers other great priſoners are taken, and execu-
ted. King *Henry* with many more fled into *Scotland*; an Army is ſent into *Northumberland*, where divers Caſtles were taken; in one of which, was Sir *Ralph Grey*, who was degraded by leaving off his ſpurs, renting his Coat of Arms, and breaking his ſword over his head, and then beheaded. *Montacute* for his good ſervice, is made Earl of *Northumberland*; the Earldom of *Pembroke* is given from *Tuthar* to the Lord *Herbert*. But ſhortly after, *Northumberland* upon ſubmiſſion, is reſtored to his poſ-
ſeſſions and honours; and *Montacute* was contented with the title of Mar-
queſſe. Then the King rewards his Captains and Soldiers with the ene-
1463 mies lands; he new ſtamps the Coin, paſſeth a general pardon, and builds many Caſtles on the Sea Coaſt, to keep off Pirats, and on the main land, to ſuppreſs Theeves and Rebels. Mean while King *Henry* diſguiſed, and coming for *London*, is taken and impriſoned in the Tower. King *Edward* being deſired by his Councel to mary, ſends the Earl of *Warwick* Ambaſſador into *France*, to procure the Lady *Bona*, daughter to *Lewis* Duke of *Savoy*, for his wife. In the interim, this young King being almoſt out the age of twenty four years, and impatient of long delays, falls in love with the Lady *Elizabeth*, the Widow of S. *John Grey*, who vvas ſlain in the battel of S. *Albons*, as he vvas fighting for King *Henry*, and at laſt marieth her; then he makes her Father the Lord *Rivers*, an Earl, and High Conſtable of *England*. Her ſon, Sir *Thomas Grey*, is made Marqueſs
1464 *Dorſet*; this match vvas the occaſion of much miſchief, as will appear.

The

The news of this hasty mariage highly displeased the Earl of *Warwick*, who took this as an affront; yet dissembles his anger, resolving to depose the king, when time served. The King fearing the power of this Earl, indeavoured secretly to abridge him of his Authority. *Warwick* gets leave to go to his Castle for his recreations sake; where he hatcheth some plots against the K. About which time was born the Lady *Elizabeth*, afterward the wife of K. *Henry* 7. and mother to K. *Henry* 8. K. *Edward* to make himself the stronger against *Lewis* the *French* K. who was offended with his mariage, taking it as a frump on him and his Q. sister, makes peace with *Scotland* for 15 years; and to ingage the Kings of *Arragon* and *Castile*, he sent them as some think, many sheep to the prejudice of this kingdom. This *K.* also marieth his sister to *Charles* D. of *Burgundy*, as he had formerly maried two of his sisters to the D. of *Exeter*, and *Suffolk*. *Warwick* aiming to restore *K. Henry*, got his two brothers, the Arch-B. of *York* and Marq. of *Montacute*, to join with him; yet the Marq. was still a secret friend to K. *Edward*. The D. of *Clarence* also being offended with his brother the *K.* joins with the Earl of *Warwick*, upon the Earls perswasions, who complained of the K. for sleighting his own kindred, and preferring the kindred of his wife: the D. also marieth with the Earls daughter, being then at *Calice*; and a rebellion is made in *Yorkshire* by the Arch-bishop of *York* and *Montacute*, causing the country people to believe that the yearly alms of Corn which they gave to the poor of S. *Leonards* Hospital, was converted by the Governor and Priests thereof, to their own private benefit: Hence the Collectors of these alms were beaten by the Rusticks, with whom divers good people sided: at length they fly to arms, more then 15000, who came and faced *York*; but in the night *Montacute* sallied out upon these Rebels, killed many, and struck off their Capt. head. The Rebels weary of the siege, march to *London*, conducted by S. *John Conyers*. *Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke*, and *Humphry* Lord *Stafford*, with 9000 *Welch* men and others, march against these Northern Rebels, 2000 Archers are utterly defeated by the *Yorkshire* men. A division also fell out between *Pembroke* and *Stafford*, so that *Stafford* departs with his Archers from *Pembroke*, who being hereat troubled, but not dismaid, set upon the Rebels the next day, and was like to prevail; but one *Clapham* carying the Earl of *Warwicks* banner, and accompanied with 500 *Northamptonians*, crying a farre off, a *Warwick*, a *Warwick*, so affrighted the *Welch*, supposing *Warwick* had bin coming with another Army, that they ran away, and were utterly routed, to the loss of 5000 of their company. Sir *Richard Herbert*, and 8 more, are beheaded at *Banbury*, by the rebels; so was Earl *Rivers*, the Q. father, and Sr *John* his son, being apprehended at *Grafton*, without any legal proceeding. The Lo. *Stafford* is executed by the K. command, for deserting the Earl of *Pembroke*. At last, the K. marcheth on with his Army against the rebels, with whom were joined the D. of *Clarence* and Earl of *Warwick*.

An. Christi

1465

1466

A Parly is proposed for peace, and many messengers for that purpose sent to and fro; this made the K. secure, who in his bed was seized on by the Earl of *Warwick*, rushing with a good Guard into the Kings Camp, slew his watches, and took him, whom secretly he conveyed as a prisoner to the Arch-Bishop of *York* his brother, who gave the K. so much liberty to hunt, that he made shift to escape to *London*: at which *Warwick* was much troubled, with *Clarence* and the confederates, who had upon the *K.* Captivity dismissed their Army, but they presently raised another, and so did the *King*; all things now were in a combustion, injustice and violence raged every where. At length by the mediation of some great and peaceable Lords, a parly was granted between the K. and the confederates in *VVestminster* Hall, but to no purpose, such bitterness there was on both sides. The *K.* also brought much envy on himself, by cutting off the heads of the Lord *VVels*, and his brother in law Sir *Tho. Dymock*, because they could not perswade Sir *Tho. VVells*, the Lords son, and General of the rebels, to forsake them, and serve under him, Sir *Robert* to revenge his fathers

An. Christi fathers and uncles death, ventured too rashly upon the K. great army, with his handful of men, the confederates not being come yet with their army, so that the K. got the honor of that day. In this battel of loose coats (so called, because the rebels flung off their coats, that they might run the more nimbly) were slain 10000 men, Sir *Rob. VVells*, with some other prime men lost their heads. Upon the report of this overthrow, *Warwick* and *Clarence*, fled to *Exeter*, from thence to *Dartmouth*, & so to *Calice*, the K. was much grieved that they escaped. But to prevent their landing in *England*, with forain forces, the *K.* intreats his brother in Law the D. of *Burgoin*, to hinder all aid from the said Earl, and to surprise him with a Navy; to which the D. was willing enough, being angry with the Earl for hindring his mariage with *Margaret* the K. sister; for siding with K. *Lewis* of *France*, the D. mortal enemy, and because the Earl was more beloved of the people, then the K. himself. But when the Duke and Earl came with their wives and friends before *Calice*, the Earls Deputy *Vawcler* beat them with his Ordnance from the Castle, not permitting any help or succour to be afforded from the Town to the Dutchess, who was brought to bed on shipboard. The King was so glad of this, that he made the said Deputy chief Captain, and
1469 *Burgoin* gave him an annual pension of 1000 Crowns; yet the Deputy incouraged the Earl to ask aid if *Franceo*, and *Calice* should be his, when time served. Upon this the Earl puts to sea, takes some of *Burgundies* ships richly laden, then lands at *Deep*. Upon invitation, he repairs to the *K.* who used him and his company graciously and bountifully, for the hatred he bare to K. *Edward*, and the D. of *Burgundy*. Upon the report of this intertainment, Q. *Margaret*, and Pri. *Edward* her son, with some others, repair to the confederates, and consult about restoring of K. *Henry*; they gave their solemn oaths to each other, to stand firm, and for the more strength, the Earl of *Warwick* maried his 2d daughter to Pri. *Edward*, which made *Clarence* a secret enemy to *Warwick*, fearing that this match would be the undoing of the family of *York*; therefore he gave private intelligence to his brother K. *Edward* of all *Warwicks* proceedings.

The *English* Lords being furnished with all necessaries from the *French* K. make ready for their voyage, but are met with by a *Burgundian* Fleet in the mouth of the river *Sene*, which the next evening a sudden storm drove into the sea, drowned many, and dispersed most of them. *Warwick* glad at this mishap of the *Burgundian*, and understanding by Letters that he was howrely expected in *England*, where he should be sufficiently backt, makes haste, leaving the Q. and Prince behind, and so with great celerity lands at *Dartmouth*. The K. mean while trusting to the *Burgundian* Fleet, which he did not know was spoiled, neglected his own Fleet, and gave himself to dalliance with Ladies. *Warwick* sends out Proclamations, commanding all in K. *Henries* name, to aid him, and to oppose *Edward* the Usurper; and so in a short time, his army mightily increased, and marched towards *London*. K. *Edward* also levied a strong army, but understanding that the people every where affected *K. Henry* and *Warwick*, his heart failed him, so that he mistrusted his own army, wherefore he left his army in the night, and with 800 of his best friends, posts to *Lincolnshire*, thence to *Holland*, resolving to stay with the D. of *Burgundy* till times were better; the *Kentish* men hearing that K. *Edward* was fled, assembled tumultuously in great numbers, and would by force have entred *London* Gates, but being resisted, they fire and riffle the suburbs, and murther much people, but were at last suppressed and punished by the Earl of *Warwick*, who presently goeth to the Tower, sets K. *Henry* at liberty, and conducts him triumphantly thence to *Pauls*, where having performed his devotions, he keeps his Court in the Bishops Palace; then he calls a Parliament, in which his chief adherents are attainted of high treason, and their estates confiscated. The Dutchy of *York* is settled on the D. of *Clarence*, though the second son; the Crown is intailed to K. *Henry*, his heirs male, and for default of such issue, to *Clarence* and his heirs. The Q. and her son Pr. *Edward*, offer divers times to come over by sea, but are hindred by

cross

croſs winds and ſtorms, which the people conſtrued as a judgement on her, for her cruelties in cauſing ſo much bloud ſhed. *Burgundy* was loth at firſt to furniſh K. *Edward* with ſhips and mony, fearing leſt *Warwick* would make a new war on him; yet underſtanding that K. *Edward* was invited by his friends into *England*, and that there were great hopes, he furniſheth him with 50000 *Florence* of gold, and 18 tall ſhips, with 2000 land ſoldiers: He lands in *Yorkſhire*, where he found cold welcome, the people being more addicted to King *Henry*. Yet he marcheth to *York*, where he publiſheth, that he made no claim to the Crown, but to his Dutchy, of which he was unjuſtly deprived, and ſhews that in this, they were in equity to aid him. Upon this, he took his oath, that he would be a true ſubject to K. *Henry*, therefore he was let in, intertained, and monyed; but before two days were at an end, he plants a Gariſon there, and forceth the inhabitants to furniſh him with all things needful for an army; then he hires ſoldiers every where, and many Gentlemen came in to him. His old friend *Montacute*, who had a ſtrong army, gave him free paſſage to march. *Warwick* comes to the City of *Warwick*, with his forces, and writes to *Clarence*, to haſten thither with his Army, for he meant to give the K. battel; but *Clarence* made no haſte, which bred ſuſpition in *Warwick*, that he meant to fail him in his need; therefore he goeth to *Coventry* with his army. K. *Edward* dares *Warwick* into the field, who kept cloſe within the walls, to try what *Clarence* would doe.

An. Chriſti 1470

K. *Edward* went thence towards his brother *Clarence*, who likewiſe refuſed to fight: Hereupon the D. of *Glouceſter*, brother to them both, reconciled them and their armies: then the 3 brothers ſtrive to win *Warwick* to their ſide, but he curſing the D. perfidiouſneſs, would not unite with them. Wherefore King *Edward* to increaſe his ſtrength, repairs to *London*, which excluded him a while. But when they conſidered his juſt title, his abilities for government, and his great army, whereas K. *Henry* was weaker every way, chiefly in the gifts of the mind, they open their gates, lets him in, and ſalutes him *K.* then was K. *Henry* ſeized upon again, and committed to the Tower. *Warwick* thought to have ſurpriſed the K. in his march towards *London*, but was prevented; therefore he marcheth to *Barnet* 10 miles from *London*, purpoſing to venture all upon one battel. K. *Edw.* army being furniſhed with all things needful, by the *Londoners*, marcheth alſo to *Barnet*. The right Wing of *Warwicks* army was commanded by his brother *Montacute*, and *Oxford*. The left Wing by himſelf, and the D. of *Exeter*; the main battail by the D. of *Somerſet*. K. *Edw.* Vantguard was led by the D. of *Glouceſter*, the main battail by himſelf, & *Clarence*, in which was K. *Henry*; the Rereward was conducted by the Lord *Haſtings*. A cruel battail of 5 or 6 howres is fought, and it was not known a great while, who had the better; at laſt *Warwick* perceiving that his men and friends could not hold out long againſt the Kings freſh Forces and Supplies, preſſed ſo far among his enemies, killing multitudes of them, that at laſt he was killed himſelf, and ſo was *Montacute*. The death of theſe two was the overthrow of the whole army, who ran away, and left the Victory for K. *Edward*, who that afternoon enters the city triumphantly with his priſoner K. *Henry*. In *Pauls* he offered up his ſtandard, with thanks to God for his Victory; in this battail were ſlain almoſt ten thouſand men.

The K. grieved much for the death of *Montacute*, his true friend; both he and his brother *Warwick* are brought to *London*, where in *Pauls* Church they lay open faced for 3 days, that the people might ſee they were truly dead; then they were both buried with their Anceſtors in one grave. Q. *Margaret* landed at *Waymouth*, with ſome Forces, before ſhe heard of K. *Edwards* Victory; therefore with her ſon the Prince, ſhe takes ſanctuary in the Abby of *Beaulieu*, whither the D. of *Somerſet* Earl of *Pembroke*, Earl of *Devonſhire*, with divers others reſorted, reſolving to raiſe a new Army: the Q. and *Somerſet* levy forces about *Briſtoll* and *Glouceſter*, intending to joyn themſelves with *Pembrokes*

An. Christi *Welch* men; but the *K.* prevented those designs, who sent his brother the D. of *Glouceſter* with an army, who overthrew the D. of *Somerſets* forces in one hour, of whom above 3000 were ſlain, among which, was the Earl of *Devonſhire*, with ſome other prime men. The Q. and Pr. are taken priſoners, with divers others, who the next day are beheaded, except the Q. the Pr. is murthered by *Clarence*, *Glouceſter*, *Dorſet*, and *Haſtings*. Not long after, *Reyner* ſold *Naples* & *Sicily*, and with the mony of that ſale ranſomed his daughter Q. *Margaret*. K. *Henry* in the mean while was found dead in his Chamber in the Tower, being murthered by K. *Edw.* brother, the D. of *Glouceſter*. To aſſure the people he was dead, his body is expoſed to the public view one whole day in S. *Pauls* Church; his two brothers *Clarence* & *Glouceſter* for their perjuries & murthers, afterward imbrewed their hands in their own bloud. Two or 3 years after K. *Edw.* was ſet-

1473 tled his brother in law the D. of *Burgundy*, perſwades him to renue his wars with *France*, w^ch^ he did, becauſe of his title to that kingd. and for that the *Fr.* K. had aſſiſted Q. *Margaret* and *Warwick*, againſt K. *Edw.* and for that the *Fr.* K. made war upon the D. of *Burgundy*. Now becauſe mony was wanting, a benevolence is demanded, and paid, but grudgingly. One old widow, though a niggard, gave the K. 20 *l.* for which he kiſſed her, ſhe being proud of this kiſſe, gave the K. 20 *l.* more, ſhewing that 40 *l.* was little enough for a kings kiſs.

The K. having at *Dover* 500 ſhips and boats, 1500 Horſe men, and 15000 Archers landed at *Calice*; but the D. of *Burgundy* failed him, who promiſed to meet the K. with 2000 Horſe, who after he had triffled away much time in the ſiege of *Nuyce*, ſent his forces to *Berroys* in *Lorrain*, to be revenged on *Reyner*, Q. *Margarets* father, for ſome ill language he gave him. Yet K. *Edw.* marcheth by *Bollen* to *Perone*, where he had no proviſion of the D. for his Army; thence he goeth to S. *Quintins*, but is beat back from thence, contrary to promiſe. At laſt a peace is concluded with the *French* K. for 9 years, on theſe conditions: 1. That the *Fr. K.* pay to *Edw.* 75000 Crowns, and 50000 more for an annuall penſion. 2. That the *Fr.* K. within one year mary the K. of *Englands* daughter to the Dolphin, allowing them for their maintenance yearly 50000 crowns and then ſhall deliver the quiet poſſeſſion of *Guyan* to them. 3. That the Lo. *Howard* and S. *John Cheny*, ſhould ſtay with the *Fr. K.* as Hoſtages til the *Engl.* army be landed in *England*: The D. of *Burgundy* ſtorms at this peace, ſhewing it was a diſhonourable act in *K. Edw.* who replyed that it was more diſhonourable in the D. to call him in, and then to fail him. So the D. went away in a chafe. The *Fr. K.* to confirm his amity with *England*, ſends to the *Engliſh* Army 100 Wagons of wine, and gave them leave for 3 or 4 days to ſolace themſelves in *Amiens*, where they found good chear provided for them. And becauſe they caried themſelves civilly to the Townſmen, the *Fr. K.* ſends to the chief Commanders, plate and mony. Shortly after, *K. Edw.* by gifts, intreaties, and pro-

1475 teſtations, that he would mary one of his daughters to the yong Earl of *Richmond*, got him to be delivered to his Ambaſſ. by the D. of *Britany*, whom preſently they conveyed to S. *Malos*; but the D. being informed that a mariage was pretended, but his death was intended, and fearing this delivery would be a perpetual ſtain to his Honor, ſends one *Peter Landays* to S. *Malos*, where the young Earl was, expecting a fair wind. This *Peter* by his cunning, got the Earl into a Sanctuary, ſo was the ſheep delivered, and the woolf deluded of his mony. But the D. promiſed faithfully to retain the Earl by him as his priſoner, w^ch^ in ſome

1477 ſort contented K. *Edw.* After this the D. of *Clarence*, K. *Edw.* brother, was condemned of Treaſon, againſt the *K.* life, and is impriſoned in the Tower. But not long after, he was drowned in a But of *Malmſie*, not without the kings knowledge.

1488 This *K.* the 5 laſt years of his life, grew extream wretched and covetous, ſo that with his exactions, he loſt his peoples affections. In the 20 year of his reign, he ſends into *France* to have the mariage accompliſhed between the *Dolphin* and his daughter. But *K. Lewis* deluded him with frivolous excuſes, and

marieth

marieth him to *Maximilians* daughter, which *Maximilian* was the ſon of *Frederick* the Emperor, againſt his oath and articles. *James* 3. K. of *Scots* deſires a match between his ſon and K. *Edw.* daughter, which was willingly aſſented to, and good ſums of mony diſburſed aforehand, conditionally it ſhould be repaid if the match broke off. But the *Scots* K. after things were concluded, ſends an Army to invade *England*, which ſpoiled all before them with fire and ſword; againſt whom *Glouceſter* is ſent with 21000 men, who took the town of *Barwic*, and beſieged the Caſtle, but could not take it; thence he marcheth into *Scotland*, waſting all in his way, and forced K. *James* into *Edinburgh* Caſtle; the Nobility deſire peace, and obtain it, on theſe conditions, that a full amends be made for the hurt done; 2. That K. *James* would reſtore his brother the D. of *Albany*, to his honors and poſſeſſions. 3. That the Caſtle of *Barwick* be delivered up; and 4. That repaiment be made of K. *Edw.* mony lent to K. *James*. The 3 laſt conditions were aſſented to; K. *Edw.* being deluded by the *Fr. K.* about the mariage of the *Dolphin*, and likewiſe the tribute of 50000 Crowns, which was to be paid him yearly during his life, was denied; reſolved to invade *France* with a Royal Army. But in the midſt of his preparations, he fell ſick, as ſome think of a ſurfet, or as others of melancholy, and ſhortly after died the 23 year of his reign.

An. Chriſti. 1481 1483

To *K. Edw. 4.* ſucceeded his ſon *Edw.* 5. at 13 years of age. His uncle the D. of *Glouceſter* (a man as deformed in body, as crooked in conditions, who had murthered both K. *Henry*, and his ſon Pr. *Edw.* and his brother alſo the D. of *Clarence*) reſolves with the D. of *Buckingham*, and Lord *Haſtings*, to remove from the yong K. all his mothers kindred, being mean people, and to undertake the charge of government themſelves. Therefore when he underſtood that the Q. with her brother the Earl *Rivers*, and her ſon the Lo. *Grey*, intended to conduct with an army the yong K. out of *Wales*, towards *London*, there to be crowned. He wrote to the Q. adviſing her not to come up to *London*, in that poſture, for fear the people would grow jealous, and raiſe Civil wars; therefore wiſheth her to put aſide that Train, and to disband her Army: he ſwears withall, that this his advice proceeded from his good will and love to her and hers. The Q. being too credulous, and thinking he had ſpoke as he meant, follows his advice; which he alſo by his letters gave to the Earl *Rivers*, and the Lord *Grey*. So the army is diſmiſſed, and the *K.* is accompanied by *Rivers*, *Grey*, and ſome other friends to *Northampton*, and thence to *Stony Stratford*, which little town not being capable of the whole train, the Earl with his followers remained that night in *Northampton*. But *Glouceſter*, and *Buckingham*, with ſome reſolved attendants, bore *Rivers* company that ſame night; but withal in the night time, the two D. ſeized upon all the keys of the *Inn*, and cauſed all the ways between theſe two towns, to be guarded, and none to paſs that way; then they fell upon the Earl, who was confident of them till now, and commits him to ſafe cuſtody. The 2 D. rode to *Stony Stratford*, and preſented their ſervice to the K. which he accepted, having no ſuſpition of what was done; then they ſeize on the Lo. *Grey*, the K. half brother, and ſome others, whom they ſent to *Pomfret* Caſtle, where without any judicial proceedings, they loſt their heads; they remove alſo the K. menial ſervants & officers, giving out that the Earl with the reſt of his confederates, meant to deſtroy all the Lords of K. *Edwards* bloud, and to rule all themſelves. The Q. being then at *Weſtminſter*, hearing of theſe tragical paſſages, took ſanctuary there, and repented ſhe had adviſed upon *Glouceſters* cunning letters, to diſmiſs the army. The *K.* alſo grieved much, but the 2 D. proteſted, they acted nothing but for his weal; and that they would be faithful to him till their lives end. Then they brought him to *London*, where he is met by the Major and his brethren, in whoſe preſence *Glouceſter* demeaned himſelf ſo ſubmiſſively to the king, that they all, and moſt of the Nobility and Councellors of State, were perſwaded of the Dukes real intentions for the kings good; ſo that he was made protector of king and kingdom.

An. Christi *Glouc.* having obtained his chiefeſt deſire, labours next to get the young D. of *York* into his hands; for that end, he complains to the *K.* Councel of the wrong the Q. did both to the K. in that ſhe would not permit him to enjoy the company of his only brother, and to the kingd. in detaining the ſaid D. in ſanctuary, as a malefactor in priſon; by which all Councellors & Officers of State, are ſcandalled. This motion ſo well pleaſed the Lords, that preſently they employ the Cardinal Arch-B. of *York*, who was gracious with her to deſire ſhe would ſend the yong D. to his brother the *K.* to ſolace him, for theſe reaſons: 1. Becauſe it was diſhonourable to the whole kingd. that a childe ſo near to the *K.* ſhould be kept in priſon; for what elſe is a ſanctuary. 2. Becauſe that place was only for ſuch as by their conſcience were accuſed of ſome crime, which an innocent child could not be guilty of. 3. Becauſe he wants diſcretion to demand ſuch a priviledge. Laſtly, they tell her that any perſon may be taken out of ſanctuary, for his good and welfare; and therefore if ſhe refuſed to let him go, that he muſt be taken thence without her leave, and the rather becauſe it is ſuſpected ſhe meant to ſend him beyond ſeas. The queen alledged, that none was ſo fit to tutor ſo yong, tender, and ſickly a child, as the mother, & that both their ſafeties conſiſted in being ſeparated; but perceiving they meant to have him by force, after ſhe had wept, kiſſed, and embraced the child, praying for his ſafety, ſhe delivers him to the Arch-B. from whom the Protector in the Starre-Chamber attending then the queens anſwer, took the child, kiſſed and hugged him, proteſting that from his ſoul, nothing in the world was ſo dear to him, except the king; whereas indeed he meant the deſtruction of them both; then he brought him to the *K.* who was exceedingly joyed with his company: but ſhortly after, he conveyed them both through *London* in great pomp to the Tower, pretending he did this out of his care to them during the troubles of the kingdom; whereas indeed there were no troubles but by his procurement, and the other Lords who adhered to him.

The Protector having ſecured the two young Princes, next bethinks himſelf how he ſhal obtain the kingd. which he knew would be difficult without the D. of *Buckingham*, who was a powerful man; therefore he acquaints him with his intention, deſiring his aſſiſtance, promiſing to mary his ſon to the ſaid D. daughter, to give him the Earldom of *Hartford*, to which the D. pretended a right, but never could obtain it, from *Edw.* 4. and laſtly, to ſhare with him in the K. treaſury. Upon theſe tearms *Buckingham* aſſented to, and aſſiſted him in the plot: but the Lo. *Haſtings*, whom the Protector had made Chamberlain, could not be won to this wicked deſign; for one *Catesby* a Lawyer, and a Favorite of *Haſtings*, was employed by the Protector to ſound his inclination, which when he had craftily done, he informs the tyrant there was no poſſibility to win him. Hereupon the Protector calls a Councel of the Lords at the Tower, under pretence of fitting all things for the K. Coronation, which he leaſt meaned. When the Lords were ſit, the Protector at laſt came, and chearfully ſaluted them all: Chiefly Dr *Morton*, B. of *Ely*, whom he hated, yet imploys him to procure ſom Strawberries out of his garden, which were very good. The Biſh. glad to pleaſure him, haſteth home; the Protector alſo preſently went out, and returns within an hour, but with a diſcontented countenance, and troubled minde. All wondred at the ſudden change; at laſt after ſome ſilence, he asketh what puniſhment he deſerved, that intended to murther the K. uncle and Protector. At length *Haſtings* anſwered, that he deſerved the greateſt puniſhment imaginable. Then ſaith the Protector, that ſorcereſs the Q. and that ſtrumpet *Shores* wife, have conſpired againſt my life; of which that you may be ſure, you ſhall ſee my arm, which is already conſumed, and with that he ſhewed his naked arm, as if they had not all known, that his arm had been ever ſo from his Nativity. Beſides, no man could believe, that the Q. ſo vertuous a Lady, would intend ſuch a miſchief, or that ſhe would have conſorted with her deceaſed husbands concubine, *Shores* wife. *Haſtings* who after K. *Edw.* death, converſed with *Shores* wife,

wife, was beginning to excuſe her; but preſently the Protector interrupted him, calling him traitor for doubting of that which he ſpoke, and with that clapping his hand rudely on the table, the chamber ſuddenly was filled with armed men, one of which, knockt down the Lord *Stanley* under table with his Holbard, but killed him not. *Haſtings* is arreſted by the Protector, accuſed of Treaſon, and without any other proceeding, caried out into the Green, where his head is chopped off. This execution was done that very day, and hour, that the Earl *Rivers*, Lord *Grey*, and Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, were executed in *Pomfret* Caſtle, without legal proceeding. *An. Chriſti*

After the execution, the Cardinal of *York*, the Biſh. of *Ely*, and the Lo. *Stanley*, are committed there to ſeveral priſons. The Protector and *Buckingham*, put themſeves preſently into arms, and ſends for the chief Citizens; to whom the Protector complains, that his death was conſpired that morning by *Haſtings* and his complices; therefore they are required to certifie the City of the true cauſe of this broil and execution in the Tower. Two hours after the execution, a long Proclamation is read by an Herald of Arms, which was thought to have been written and ſealed ſome days before. Then was Dr *Shaa* imploid to Preach the next Sunday after at *Pauls* Croſs, a Sermon in commendation of the pedigree, vertues and valour of the Protector, and in deteſtation of the laſt K. *Edw.* laſcivious acts, and familiarity with *Shores* wife, and others; alſo to ſhew his children were baſtards, and born in adultery, becauſe he was contracted to the Lady *Lucy*, before he maried the Lady *Grey*, and was alſo affied to the Lady *Bona*, ſiſter in law to the *Fr. K.* he alſo accuſeth the Protectors own mother of incontinency, in the generation of *K. Edw.* and the D. of *Clarence*. At laſt, he hoped the people would receive the Protector, as their Lo. and K. But the Doctors eloquence could not prevail with the people, to accept *Richard* for their K. yet the next day in *Guild-Hall*, *Buckingham* labours by arguments to make the Protector right heir and inheritor of the Crown, and with much reluctancy, got divers of the townſmen to go with him to the Protector at *Beynards* Caſtle, where they prayed him to undergo the office of a K. which he refuſed to do at firſt; but upon their importunity, he aſſented to that, which moſt of all things in the world he deſired.

K. *Richard* being Crowned, to inſinuate himſelf into the good opinion of his enemies, makes *Stanley* whom he impriſoned, Steward of his houſe, and inlarged the Arch-B. of *York*: but *Morton* of *Ely*, he ſent priſoner to the Duke of *Buckingham*. Then he creates his only child *Edw.* Prince of *Wales*, *John Howard* is made D. of *Norfolk*, his eldeſt ſon Sir *Tho. Howard*, is created Earl of *Surry*, the Lo. *Barkley* is advanced to the Earldom of *Nottingham*, and the Lord *Lovel* is made Viſcount *Lovel*. He ſends alſo Ambaſſadors to King *Lewis* of *France*, to conclude a peace; but *Lewis* would not admit any of them into his preſence. Upon this he began to think, that ſo long as the two young Princes lived, his glory would be eclipſed; therefore he makes a progreſs to *Glouceſter*, appointing that the children ſhould be murthered in his abſence, thinking this would take off all ſuſpition from him. He firſt writes to *Brakenbury* Lieutenant of the Tower, to execute his bloudy ſentence, which he refuſed to do. Whereupon curſing the Lieutenant, he writes to one *Terril*, promiſing him great rewards to execute this murther, to vvhich he aſſented, and by the K. command takes the keys of the Tower from the Lieutenant, and then the next night he ſends two wicked executioners into the childrens chamber, where they ſmothered them in their beds, and buried them at the ſtairs foot. The news of the two young Princes found dead in their bed, much perplexed the Nobility and people, but moſt of all the dying Queen; great ſorrow vvas expreſſed every where, except amongſt the Tyrants confederates. But this vvicked Tyrant is croſſed and tortured, not only vvith continual fears and jealouſies, and torments of conſcience, attending on his bloudy ſoul, but alſo the next year, by the loſs of his only child the Prince of *Wales*. Dr *Morton*, a witty and learned man, being *Bucking-*

1483

1484

An. Christi *Buckinghams* priſoner, obſerving the D. ambitious humour, inſinuates ſo into his favour, that they began to be inwardly familiar, and to impart their ſecret thoughts to each other: vvithal, the Dr ſhews, how ungratefully the Uſurper had uſed the D. by vvhoſe means he had obtained the Crown, in not rewarding him, nor reſtoring to him the Earldom of *Hartford*, but rather labouring to ſuppreſs him, being jealous of his greatneſs. He complains alſo of the kings ingratitude to his mother, in making her unchaſte in the conception of his two elder brothers, K. *Edw.* and the D. of *Clarence*. Laſtly, of his murthers committed on the Lo. *Rivers*, and the reſt; chiefly of Pr. *Edw.* ſon to *Henry 6.* and of the murther of the ſame K. and of *Clarence* his own brother, and of the murthering of his innocent Nephews, vvhom he baſtardized. Therefore he adviſeth the D. for his own ſafety, and his Countries, to make uſe of his own greatneſs, and goodneſs, and of the peoples affections, that ſo he may either make himſelf K. or elſe further the uniting of the two Houſes of *York* and *Lancaſter*, by beſtowing K. *Edw.* eldeſt daughter on the Earl of *Richmond*, deſcended from *John* of *Gant* the 4th ſon of K. *Edw.* the third; by vvhich means the kingdom ſhould be quieted, both from Civil wars, and this monſter of men.

The D. though ambitious enough, yet he knew there vvas much envy, but little ſecurity in uſurpation; he therefore thought it beſt to make the Earl K. The Biſhop vvas deſirous to go into the Iſle of *Ely*, promiſing to furniſh the D. with men and mony; but the D. fearing leſt the Biſhops eſcape ſhould be required at his hands, was loth to let him go, nor was he willing to part vvith ſuch a friend and Councellor; but the Biſh. knowing his head was in danger of the Tyrant, whilſt he was a priſoner made an eſcape in a diſguiſed habit to *Ely*, where having furniſhed himſelf with mony, ſails preſently into *Flanders*, animates the Earl of *Richmond* then in *Britany*, to mary K. *Edw.* daughter, to depoſe the Tyrant, and to make himſelf K. He alſo by letters ſtirs up the Gentry and Lords to aſſiſt the Earl, who ſo prevailed with the D. that he inlargeth him, and meant to give him aid, notwithſtanding K. *Richard* had importuned the D. to deliver up the perſon of *Richmond* to him, for jewels, mony, and large promiſes. This plot was not ſo cloſely caried, but K. *Richard* knew of it; therefore he means either to win *Buckingham*, or to diſpatch him: for this cauſe he
1485 kindly invites him to the Court; but the D. knowing *Richards* bloudy diſpoſition, excuſeth his not coming by the indiſpoſition of his body; the K. writes a ſharp letter, commanding him to come; the D. returns a peremptory anſwer, that he would not come to ſuch a monſter and tyrant, who was no K. but an Uſurper. With this the D. haſtneth into *Wales*, where he raiſeth an Army; forces alſo are levied in *Devonſhire* by the *Courtneys*, ſome in *Kent*, by the Gentry there, and ſome in *Yorkſhire*, by *Grey* Marq. *Dorſet*. K. *Richard* to ſupport his bad cauſe, raiſeth another Army, by which he meant to ſuppreſs the D. forces, before they were joined with their friends. The D. ſtriving to dare the K. determines to lead his whole Army through the River *Severn*, at a low Foord; but God for his aſſenting to the murther of the two young Princes, croſſed him ſo with continual rains for ten days, that both his paſſage was hindred, and the Country thereabout almoſt drowned, to the great loſs of the inhabitants; the *Welch* men run away, and left him alone. The D is inforced to harbour himſelf near *Shrewsbury*, at one *Banaſters*, who vvas his ſervant. The D. friends hearing of his bad ſucceſs, diſperſe their companies, every one ſhifting for himſelf; divers of them took ſhipping for *Britany*, as the *Courtneys*, *Dorſet*, and many knights. The K. proſcribes *Buckingham*, promiſing 1000 pound to him that ſhould take him. Upon this, his faithleſs ſervant *Banaſter* betrays him to the Sheriff of *Shropſhire*, vvho vvith a ſtrong guard, conveys him to the King then at *Shrewsbury*. The D. upon examination confeſſed all, & without farther proceeding loſt his head. In the mean while the Earl of *Richmond* with 500 enters the ſea, not hearing of his friends arrival out of *England*, nor of their overthrow; but by a ſudden ſtorm, his ſhips were ſcattered, and driven back,

ſome

ſome upon *Normandy*, ſome on *Britany*; the ſhip in which the Earl was, kept the ſea, with one more. The next day the Earl came before *Pool*; but finding the Coaſts all along filled with armed men, doubting they vvere his enemies, though they laboured to train him in, returns, and lands ſafely in *Normandy*; whence he ſends to *Charles* 8. for a free paſſage into *Britany*, which the K. granted, and withal ſent him ſtore of mony: ſo having come into *Britany*, he meets his exiled friends, vvho acknowledge him for their *K.* conditionally, that he mary with K. *Edwards* daughter, which he promiſed by ſolemn oath to do. So they make ready a Fleet by the D. of *Britanies* help, and levied what ſoldiers they could get. *An. Christi*

Mean while K. *Richard* tyrannizeth over *Richmonds* friends, he makes him a Traitor by act of Parliament; many Lords he puts to death, and ſeized upon their whole eſtates as Traitors. He executed one for this diſtich.

The Rat, the Cat, and *Lovel* the Dog,
Rule all in *England* under the Hog.

That is, *Ratcliff*, *Catesby*, and *Lovel*, the Tyrants 3 Favorites, ruled all under K. *Richard*, who gave a Hog for his ſupporter, to make himſelf the ſtronger. He concludes a peace with K. *James* of *Scotland*, and matcheth his Niece the Lady *Anne* with the Prince of *Rothſay*, the ſaid K eldeſt ſon. He alſo labours again with large bribes and promiſes, to get the Earl of *Richmond* into his hands, but could not, for the D. of *Britany* vvas then ſick, and *Peter Landois*, vvho at S. *Malos* had freed the Earl heretofore, now diſpoſed of all buſineſs in that Country. He being greedy of ſo great a prey as vvas promiſed, to wit, great ſtore of mony, and all the Revenues of the Earl and his confederates, promiſeth to betray the Earl; but D. *Morton* hearing of the danger, preſently acquaints the Earl therewith, who haſteneth out of *Britany* into *France*, where he was welcomed with his friends by the *French* King, and help promiſed him. *Landois* had appointed ſome companies of armed men to attend the Earl into *England*; but indeed to ſurpriſe him. Now when it was given out, that the *French* K. would aſſiſt the Earl, divers Commanders from *Calice* ſecretly repair to the Earl, who courteouſly received them. But K. *Richard* underſtanding of preparations in *France* to aid *Richmond*, he deviſeth a new plot to keep him off ~~from marying vvith the~~ Lady *Elizabeth*, ~~as he intended~~; therefore he gets the Q. Mother upon large promiſes made to her, to deliver into his cuſtody, her five daughters, hoping hereby to hinder the uniting of the two Houſes. So out of covetouſneſs, ſhe delivers her daughters to him, vvho had killed her firſt husband, executed unjuſtly her brother, and her ſon, and had baſtardized and murthered her two other ſons. Having got them into his cuſtody, he intends to mary the ſaid *Elizabeth* his brothers daughter, but that was hindred by Q. *Anne* his wife, who within a few days after is found dead in her bed; ſome think ſhe was poiſoned; others, that it was grief killed her, becauſe ſhe perceived the deſigns and plots of her wicked husband.

The Queen was ſcarce cold, vvhen King *Richard* makes love to the Lady *Elizabeth*; but ſhe kept him off with fair words, deſiring him firſt to ſubdue the Earl of *Richmond*, and to ſettle himſelf and kingdom. Mean while falſe news comes to him, that *Richmond* and his friends vvere out of hope to receive any aid from the *French* King. Upon this, King *Richard* began to be ſecure, and to diſcharge his Gariſons on the Sea Coaſt. When news was brought to *Richmond*, that his Lady, and her ſiſters were by their mother delivered into ~~K. *Rich.* hands, that the wife of this *Richard* was found dead, and he now~~ made love to the Lady *Eliz.* his chief hopes. This news haſtned *Richmond* to come for *England*; therefore having obtained of the *French* King mony, ſhips, armor, artillery, and 2000 men, he arrives at *Milford* Haven in *Wales*. The *Welch* underſtanding that he was the ſon of *Owen Tuthar*, their Country man, and that his mariage with the Lady *Elizabeth*, would ſettle and unite the kingdom,

An. Christi dom, they flock to him from all parts. Beſides theſe, *Thomas* Lord *Stanley*, Father in Law to *Richmond*, came to him with 5000 men; Sir *George Talbot* alſo, came with the power of the young Earl of *Shrewsbury*, (then in Ward) which conſiſted of 2000 men. All theſe had been levied for King *Richards* ſervice, but were now revolted to a more lawful power. King *Richard* grieved much at this revolt, yet raiſeth an Army of 20000 men, purpoſing to venture all upon a battel. The D. of *Norfolk* could not be drawn away from K. *Richard*, but remained loyal till his death. The 22 of *Auguſt*, and third year of this Tyrants Reign, at *Boſworth* in *Leiceſterſhire*, the two armies met, and fought for two howres ſpace. King *Richard* perceiving his men to fight coldly, and that many revolted, and many ſtood by as Neuters, he ruſheth furiouſly amongſt his enemies, and was ſtoutly encountred by Sir *William Brandon*, the Earls Standerd bearer, whom *Richard* ſlew. He alſo knockt down Sir *John Cheney*, a ſtout man, and gets to the Earl, whom he fights, but is at laſt killed by him, and ſo by the death of this Tyrant, the long quarrel ended. *Richard* loſt the Duke of *Norfolk*, and 1000 more. The Earl loſt not above 100. King *Richards* carkaſs was found naked in the field, filthy with dirt, and gory bloud, which was caſt on an Horſes back, and caried to *Leiceſter* like a Calf, his head and hands hanging down on the one ſide, and his legs on the other, and ſo was baſely interred, as he had buried his two Nephews. The Crown was found among the ſpoils, and brought to *Richmond*, by the Lord *Stanley* his Father in Law. There in the field *Henry* is Crowned, with the
1485 acclamations of the people. And then he gives ſolemn thanks to God; and ſo ended this Tyrant *Richard*, who in his life was monſtrous, in his death couragious: He had a deformed body, but a cunning brain, an eloquent tongue, and a ready hand.

CHAP.

An. Christi.

CHAP. XXVII.

The English *History under the Reigns of King* Henry *the* 7. *and King* Henry *the* 8. *from the year* 1485. *till the year* 1548.

KIng *Henry* the 7. being crowned, according to his promiſe marrieth the Lady *Elizabeth*, uniting thereby the two Roſes. After the manner of *France*, he chooſeth a guard to attend upon him, and makes his Uncle *Jaſper* Earl of *Pembrook*, Duke of *Bedford*; The Lord *Stanly* his father-in-law is made Earl of *Derby*, and divers other honors he conferred; *Stafford* the Duke of *Buckinghams* eldeſt ſon is reſtored to his fathers honors and poſſeſſions. Then he calls a Parliament, wherein all former Acts prejudicial to him, or his, are cancelled; the Crown is entailed on him and his heirs. He makes alſo good Laws, and pardons his enemies upon their ſubmiſſion. He bountifully recompenced the Duke of *Britany* for his former favours, and ſo he did the French King, thereby redeeming his Hoſtages, the Marqueſs *Dorſet* and Sir *John Bourchier*. But King *Henry* was not ſuffered to enjoy long quietneſs, by reaſon of unruly ſpirits, ſuch as the *L. Lovel*, *Humfrey Stafford*, and his brother *Thomas*, who leaving their Sanctuary at *Colcheſter*, made many people in the North take Arms againſt the King, who upon this news ſuddenly ſends againſt them his Uncle the Duke of *Bedford* with three thouſand men, whoſe breaſt-plates were made of tanned leather, for want of better Armour. But *Lovel* perceiving that the King would force him to fight before he was ready, and that a better ſtrength was comming with the King himſelf, his fear made him flie to Sir *Thomas Broughton* in the North; the two *Staffords* took ſanctuary in *Culnham* Abbey near *Oxford*, and the Rebels Army left to the Kings mercy, who upon their ſubmiſſion pardoned them. The *Staffords* are taken out of the ſanctuary, which muſt not protect Treaſon; *Humfrey* was put to death, the younger brother ſpared, becauſe he was inſtigated by his reſtleſs brother *Humfrey*. 1486.

Shortly after the quenching of this fire, breaks forth a new flame blown by *Simond* a Prieſt, who knowing that *Edw. Plantaginet* Earl of *Warwick*, ſon and heir to *George* Duke of *Clarence*, brother to King *Edward* the fourth, had been kept by the two laſt Kings a priſoner in *York-ſhire* ever from his infancie, and that King *Hen.* had ſecretly removed him to the Tower; this Prieſt (I ſay) got the tuition of a witty boy, one *Lambert*, but of mean parents; him the Prieſt inſtructed in all manner of literature and court-ſhip, making him believe that he was the onely ſon and heir of the Duke of *Clarence*; the boy being now ſeventeen years old, (the true *Plantaginets* age) and made fit to act his part, is tranſported by the Prieſt into *Ireland*, who quickly works upon the fickle wilde-Iriſh, to accept him for their King. Shortly after, the Nobility and Commons, and *Gerardin* the Chancellor are all drawn into this net. *Gerardin* concludes from his perſon, feature, geſture, ſpeech, and other Princely qualities in him, that he was the Duke of *Clarence* his heir, and therefore furniſheth him with money and other neceſſaries, ſo did the other Lords of *Ireland*: he informs alſo the Lady *Margaret* King *Edward* the fourths ſiſter, daughter to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*, and ſuppoſed Aunt to this counterfeit, of his being there, which ſhe knew to be falſe, yet entertained the conceit out of malice to *Henry* of the houſe of *Lancaſter*, (ſhe being of the houſe of *York*) therefore ſhe gives out that the true *Plantaginet* was in *Ireland*, that the Iriſh had received him for their King, and that ſhe would furniſh him with arms, men and money; this report carries over into *Flanders* to the Dutcheſs Dowager, her nephew the Earl of *Lincoln*, *Francis* Lord *Lovel*, with ſome other prime men, at whoſe comming the Dutcheſs cauſed to be levied two thouſand men in her Country under *Martin Sward*; theſe ſail for *Ireland*, and joyn with Sir *Tho. Gerardin* the Chancellor who had raiſed two thouſand Iriſh ready to paſſe for 1487.

An. Christi. for *England.* Wise and vigilant King *Henry* caused the true *Plantaginet* to be brought from the Tower through the streets, into *Pauls* Church there to be seen by the people. Then he prepares an Army to encounter *Lamberts* forces who were arrived near to *Lincolne*; the two Armies couragiously joyn battel, but in lesse space then an hour, the naked Irish are slain with their Commanders, *Lovel*, *Gerardine*, *Sward* and *Broughton*, the rest submitted, and are pardoned, the Priest is sent to perpetual imprisoment; his personated Pupil is first made a skullian, and afterward the Kings chief Falkoner. Then the Queen is crowned; Archbishop *Bourchier* dieth; *Morton* Bishop of *Ely* succeeded in that See, and was also made Lord Chancellor, who shortly after received from Pope *Alexander* 6. the Cardinals Hat.

1488. The troubles between the French king, and the Duke of *Britany* did perplex King *Henry*, for they both had been his friends, therefore was unwilling to side with either, but rather to mediate a peace; the Duke being ruled by his French guests, the Duke of *Orleans* and his complices refused to hearken to those conditions of peace which the French king proposed. About this time the Lord *Woodvile*, Captain of the Isle of *Wight*, and the Queens Uncle, without the Kings knowledge sailed into *Britany* with four hundred expert souldiers to aid the Duke, who was then ready to fight the French king near to *Tongiers*. Fifteen hundred *Britains* were clad in coats with red crosses, as if they had been *Englishmen*; but in the end the poor *Britains* are slain, with the Lord *Woodvile*, so that the *French* got the day. Upon this King *Henry* is advised by his Parliament, rather to adhere to the *Britains*, then to the *French*, because he had been more beholding to that Duke, then to King *Charles*; besides if the *French* should get *Britany* from the Duke, they would prove bad neighbours to *England.* Hereupon an Army of eight thousand men is sent under the Lord *Brooks*; but as soon as they arrived, the Duke died, and the war ended by the affiancing of the Lady *Anne* the heir of *Britany* to King *Charles.*

1489. The Northern Rusticks of *York* and *Durham*, refusing to pay the tax granted to the King for maintenance of the *British* war, rushed furiously upon, and murthered *Henry* Earl of *Northumberland*, for distraining the goods of such as would not pay, and not resting here, they grow to a great body, and force the Gentry of those places to take their parts: Hereupon the King sends an Army under *Thomas* Earle of *Surrey*, who was taken prisoner at *Bosworth* field, but is now set free by King *Henry*, and received into his favour. The king had another Army comming after, which so affrighted the Rebels, that they all fled every man to his own home; but the king made strict enquiry after the Ring-leaders, who being apprehended were executed, the meaner sort were pardoned.

1490. King *Charles* having corrupted the Brittish Nobility, obtained the Lady *Anne* for his wife, and returned the Lady *Margaret* to her father *Maximilian* king of the *Romans*, who scorning thus to be slighted, resolves to be revenged, therefore he desires aid from king *Henry*, who by advice of his Parliament concluded to assist him, because *France* by the addition of *Brittain* would become too great. A benevolence is demanded and granted by the Gentry, but grudgingly. A fleet of ships is prepared to transport the Army under the kings Uncle *Jasper* Duke of *Bedford*, and *John* Earle of *Oxford*, but when the Army was ready to be imbarked, the king is informed that *Maximilian* had no military preparations at all, which vexed king *Henry*, fearing lest the people might account him a coward if he should dismisse the Army, or brand him with oppression or covetousnes, for pretending a war to pick their pockets, therefore he adviseth with his Parliament what were best to be done in this case; they all resolve, that he alone with his own Army should war upon *France* in revenge of the wrongs lately offered to king *Henry*.

1491. Shortly after, the king sailed over to *Calice*, and there having marshalled his

his Army into four battels, he layeth ſiege to *Bulloign*; the French king fearing leſt the *Brittains* (whom he had lately offended by altering ſome of their cuſtomes) might fall off to the *Engliſh*, ſends Articles of peace to king *Henry*, who accepted of them, and ſhortly after a peace is concluded, and the ſum of 186000. and 200 pounds is paid towards king *Henries* charges, beſides a yearly penſion of five and twenty thouſand crowns was duely paid whilſt king *Henry* lived: and ſo the king returns by *Calice* into *England*. *An. Chriſti.*

Mean while the Dutcheſs of *Burgundy*, a mortal enemy to the houſe of *Lancaſter*, deviſeth a new trick to vexe king *Henry*: ſhe had got a Dutch boy, comely, learned and witty, his true name was *Peter Warbeck*, but nicknamed *Perkin*, which in Dutch ſignifieth weakneſs; he was educated by this Lady in all Princely qualities, ſo that he was thought by moſt to be of a Noble extraction; he was ſo expert in the pedigrees of the houſes of *York* & *Lancaſter*, that no man could exceed him; for ſhe made him believe that under the name of *Richard* D. of *York* ſecond ſon to King *Edward* the 4. her brother, ſhe meant to make him King; then ſhe ſends him over into *Ireland*, where he was received as their Lord and King: the French king alſo willing to divert the *Engliſh* Army intended againſt him, and to remove King *Henry*, ſends for this *Perkin Warbeck*, reſolving to make him King; as ſoon as he was come to the French Court, he was received and entertained as if he had been born to a Kingdome, but on a ſudden his honours vaniſhed into ſmoak, for a peace was concluded between the two Crowns, and *Perkin* ran away ſecretly to the Dutcheſs of *Burgundy*, and fearing leſt the French would have betraied him to King *Henry*, the Dutcheſs receives him with great joy, giving him all the accommodation beſeeming a Prince, with a guard of thirty Gentlemen; then ſhe cauſed it to be publiſhed in *England*, that her nephew *Richard* Duke of *York* lived in her Court, therefore wiſheth all true hearted *Engliſh* to ſtick by him, as rightful heir to the Crown.

The report is ſuddenly believed by thoſe who were willing to fiſh in troubled waters, who delight in the change, who were diſcontented with the houſe of *Lancaſter*, and complained they were not rewarded by King *Henry* as they deſerved. Upon this Sir *Robert Clifford* is ſent into *Flanders* to enquire the truth of things, who having conferred with the Dutcheſs, and ſeen the behaviour of this Mock-prince, certifies his friends in *England*, that this is the true ſon of King *Edward* the 4. The perſwaſion of which grew ſo general, that King *Henry* prepares for future ſtorms, and *Perkins* invaſion; he guards all the Sea-coaſt, and by his letters informs the *Burgundians* and *Flemings* of the vanity and foolery of this device; he ſends alſo privately ſome politick heads to finde out of the Dutcheſs and *Perkin*, who of quality in *England* ſided with him, upon whoſe information ſome were put to death. King *Henry* finding that *Maximilian* King of the *Romans*, and his ſon *Philip* Archduke of *Auſtria* and Duke of *Burgundy* ſecretly favoured the attempts of the Lady *Margaret* concerning *Warbeck*, removed the *Engliſh* Mart from *Flanders* and *Callice*, prohibiting all importation of *Flemiſh* wares into *England*; *Maximilian* alſo forbad all *Engliſh* commodities in his Countries: Upon this, great diſcontent aroſe among the *Engliſh* Merchants, who could not keep ſo many Apprentices and Journy-men as formerly, therefore a multitude of Journymen and Apprentices run furiouſly into the Still-yard, broke open warehouſes and ſhops, rifling all in their way, and abuſing tht Eaſterlings, till the Lord Maior with his forces diſperſed them; the Ring-leaders being about eighty, were with many others impriſoned, but at laſt they obtained the Kings pardon. 1493.

Sir *Robert Clifford* repenting of his journey into *Flanders*, obtains the Kings pardon, and leave to return home, who in the Tower before the King and his Lords, diſcovers the whole practice and purpoſe of the Lady *Margaret* and *Warbeck*. The King alſo enjoyns him to diſcover the Conſpirators, that if

An. Christi. they were great ones, they might be presently seized on, without further trouble, being already in the Tower. Sir *William Stanly* onely is accused, whom the king had highly loved, and made him his Chamberlain: but now having nothing to say for himself, is imprisoned, and a few dayes after beheaded. Yet for all this, many out of several ends were so desirous of change, that they could not keep their tongues from speaking despitefully of the king; but he curbed their tongues by strict punishments, and strengthened himself against all assaults or invasions.

1495. King *Henry* remembring the aide which the wilde-Irish gave to *Perkin* two years ago, sends an Army thither under the command of Sr. *Edward Poynings*, who could doe but little good upon that wild people, sheltring themselves in Bogs and Woods; nor did the Nobility there give any aide to Sir *Edward*, for which the Earl of *Kildare* was suspected, being then the greatest man in that Island, and the kings Deputy. He being falsly accused, is brought over into *England*; but he so cleared himself before the King, that he is dismissed with honour, and leave to continue in his place: Mean while, *Perkin* with the off-scum of divers Nations, came upon the Kentish coast, some of them landed to try what the people would do for *Perkin*; the country people cunningly trained them further into the land, with their fair promises to live and die with *Perkin* against the King, till finding opportunity, they fell upon them, and killed many; one hundred and sixty they took prisoners, whom the High-Sheriff sent bound with ropes to *London*, where they were tryed and executed in divers places of the kingdome. *Perkin* in discontent returns to *Flanders*, where he recruits himself with more rascals, and with them he sets saile for *Ireland*; where finding men, but no arms, he leaves the Irish, and comes into *Scotland*, imploring the help of king *James* the fourth, being then young. The *Scots* taking opportunity by this to invade *England*, raise an Army and enter *Northumberland*, wasting, burning, and destroying all before them with much inhumanity and cruelty; and after they had left that Country desolate, finding no English aid comming to their new king, they return home with their booty, and let *Perkin* shift for himself.

Upon the great desolation of the Northern parts, king *Henry* raiseth a puissant army to be revenged on the Scots; for the maintaining of which war, a tax is granted: No sooner was this Army on foot marching northward, but it is suddenly recalled; for the Cornish-men refused to pay the Tax, and were in arms, pretending that the king and kingdome were abused by Archbishop *Morton*, and Sr. *Reinold Bray*, the kings two faithfullest Councellors; that these two polled the people, to enrich themselves. One *Joseph* a Black-smith, and *Flamock* a lawyer, were the two main men of this faction; these being in a great body, presse forward towards *London*; and by the way they make the Lord *Audley* their cheif Commander; the king gives them leave to march on, because the farther they are from their own home, the lesse help they shall have; and the long march also will tire their souldiers. Now when they came into *Kent*, the help which they expected there, failed them; and not only so, but were ready also to resist and suppresse them. Wherefore the *Cornishmen* being no ways daunted, retired to Black-heath, intending to try their fortune. The king having divided his Army into three parts, chargeth the Rebels in the face with his own part, the other two on either side; the *Cornish* resist stoutly, so that the fight lasted some houres, in which the Lord *D'awbeny* was taken prisoner by them, but presently let go again, hoping thereby to finde favour; at last, the king won the field: of his side were lost three hundred, of the Rebels above two thousand, their chief Commanders were taken prisoners; the ring-leaders of this rebellion were executed as traitours: their heads and quarters dispersed in divers Towns and Castles, for the greater

1497. terrour of Rebels.

Whilest king *Henry* was busie about the Cornishmen, lest the Scots should make

make an invaſion, he requires *Thomas Howard* Earl of *Surrey*, with *Richard Fox* Biſhop of *Durham* to withſtand, till he ſent more power to aide them. In the interim, the Scots invade *England* again, and are met with an Army of twenty thouſand, which made them retreat; the Engliſh enter *Scotland*, and deſtroy divers Towns and Forts neer the bordets without reſiſtance; in the night-time, the king of *Scots* diſmiſſeth his Army, who diſperſe themſelves into the woods and mountains: the Engliſh purſued a while, but were forced to give off by reaſon of the ſtorms, and want of proviſion in that barren part of *Scotland*. *An. Chriſti.*

About this time, an Ambaſſador arrives from *Ferdinand* king of *Caſtile*, to mediate a peace between the two kings. A Truce for ſome years is concluded, conditionally that *Warbeck* be baniſhed out of *Scotland*. The peace alſo between *France* and *England* is ratified; the Engliſh trade is alſo reſtored to the Flemings upon the deſire of *Philip* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and great joy was uſed in *Antwerp* upon the return of the Engliſh. And now king *Henry* had peace every where, except with *Perkin*, who being turned out of *Scotland*, ſails with one hundred and twenty ragged ſouldiers and four ſhips into *Cornwall*; the diſcontented Corniſh flock to him, and aid him with three thouſand men; with theſe he marcheth towards *Exeter*; which becauſe they within would not yeeld upon his entreaties, he beſiegeth it round; and for want of Artillery to batter the wals, they cauſed them to be ſcaled in many places at once: but ſtill he is repulſed with the loſſe of many of his men in the Town-ditches and Trenches. Then they try to ſet the City-Gates on fire, but the townſmen made greater fires within, till with Banks and Bulwarks they ſecured thoſe places; then *Perkin* fals to his ſcaling again, but to no purpoſe, whereat he was much diſheartned: Mean while, the King reſolves with his Army to raiſe the ſiege; but before he came, *Courtney* Earle of *Devonſhire* with a good Army forceth the Rebels to give over the ſiege, who march away thence to *Taunton*, which they beſiege: The king directs his march thither, upon the report of whoſe comming, *Perkin* flies away with ſixty horſe to *Beauly* Abbey, where they take ſanctuary; the reſidue of them were taken priſoners, and divers of them executed: but the meaner ſort falling on their knees, begged for mercy, which the king granted them.

After this, king *Henry* goeth to *Exeter*, where having thanked and commended the inhabitants for their valour and loyalty, gave to them his ſword from his ſide, commanding that hereafter it ſhould be born before the Major publiquely, as formerly and for the like purpoſe king *Edward* the fourth had done. Then the king ſends ſome bands of ſouldiers to *Beauly* to apprehend *Perkin*, who yeelded himſelf, and was brought to the king, by whom he is carried priſoner to *London*; but eſcaped to the Abbot of *Shene*, who procured him the kings pardon: Then was he brought to White-hall, where his ignoble pedegree was written in a paper, and pin'd upon his back; ſo being ſtocked there a whole day, and the next morning upon a high ſcaffold in *Cheapſide*, from thence he is committed a cloſe priſoner in the tower. But as he was practiſing to eſcape with young *Warwick*, who had been a priſoner from his infancy, he is condemned of high treaſon, and executed at *Tyburn* two dayes after: and the young Earl of *Warwick* on the tower hill; for no other crime but for affecting his liberty; for which fact king *Henry* was much blamed. 1498. 1499. 1500.

After theſe things, *Arthur* Prince of Wales being now fifteen years old, is betrothed by deputation to the Lady *Catherine*, daughter to *Ferdinand* king of *Spaine*, being of the age of eighteen years. The next year ſhe is joyfully received into *England*, and married in *Pauls* Church. Not long after, king *James* the fourth of *Scotland* is affied to the Lady *Margaret*, king *Henrys* eldeſt daughter, and afterward married: by this match, king *Henry* aimed at the union of the two Crowns; and he knew that if his two ſons and their iſſue failed, the *Scots* king would be drawn into *England*, as to the richer and greater kingdom; 1501.

which

An. Christi. which was better then if *England* ſhould wait upon a greater kingdome, and be commanded by a Deputy.

Prince *Arthur* about five moneths after his marriage died, to the great grief of all good men, and was buried in *Wincheſter*: his brother *Henry* Duke of *York* ſucceeded in the Principality of *Wales*, and was the next year after created Earl of *Cheſter* by the king. The Lady *Margaret*, king *Henry's* eldeſt daughter, with a great train of Nobility and Gentry, is ſent into *Scotland* to king *James*, who meets her on the Borders, receives her from the Earls of *Surrey* and *Northumberland*, and is married to her in *Edinburg*. After this, the king to enrich himſelf and impoveriſh his people, takes advantages of forfeitures upon the penal Laws, the chief charge of which buſineſſe is committed to *Empſon* and *Dudley*, two corrupted Lawyers, who by their Catch-poles miſerably polled and pull'd the people, ſo that no man was maſter of his own; this impoveriſhing of the people was held a good way to keep them from rebelling.

1502.

1503.

Philip Arch Duke of *Auſtria* going by Sea to take poſſeſſion of the Kingdome of *Caſtile*, fallen to his wife *Jane* by the death of her mother, was driven by ſtorms with his Queen into *Waymouth*; Sir *Thomas Trenchard* entertains them both at his houſe, and acquaints by poſts King *Henry* of the Arch-Dukes arrivall: The king preſently ſends to invite them to his Court, being then at *Windſor*; The Prince of *Wales* with a great train meets them about five miles from *VVindſor*, and within half a mile, king *Henry* with his *Nobility* welcomes them, with all the joy and ſolemnity that could be conceived; after ſome ſtay at *VVindſor*, the king conducts his Royall Gueſts to *London* with all imaginable magnificence; where, after much mirth, the League is renewed; and ſo having parted with much love, *Philip* and his Queen embark themſelves for *Spain*, where they both died not long after. Within a while king *Henry* began to grow weak and ſickly, and ſo *Empſon* and *Dudly* took more liberty to oppreſſe the people then before. But as the kings time grew ſhort, ſo he grew better; for he remitted all offences againſt his penal laws, he enlarged priſoners (except traitours and murtherers) and paid the ſmal debts of thoſe that were in Wards; he gave alſo money to thoſe that had been wronged by theſe two wicked Cormorants; He repented heartily for the wrongs he had done, and lent money *gratis* to divers Merchants. At laſt he died, having lived two and fifty years, and reigned three and twenty, and was buried in his Chappel which he had erected at *VVeſtminſter*.

1505.

1506.

1507.

1508.

Henry the eighth ſucceeded at the age of eighteen years; he married *Catherine* daughter to *Ferdinand* of *Arragon*, Prince *Arthur* his brothers wife, by diſpenſation from Pope *Julius*: In the beginning of his Reign, to pleaſe the people, he cauſeth the heads of *Empſon* and *Dudly* to be chopt off for their oppreſſions, and puniſhed inferiour offenders in that kinde with Stocks and Pillories. His Wives father *Ferdinand* of *Arragon*, got king *Henry* to aid him againſt the *Moors*, which he did; He helped alſo Pope *Iulius* againſt the *French* king, who had invaded the Churches Patrimony, and proclaims war againſt him for detaining from him *Guyen* and *Normandy*, and his other lands in *France*; For this his aſſiſtance of the Pope, both againſt the French ſword, and *Luthers* pen, he obtained the title of *Defender of the Faith*. *Ferdinand* alſo his father in law promiſeth to help king *Henry* againſt *France*, if he would land his men in *Biſca*, from whence they might march to *Guyen*. King *Henry* accordingly ſends ten thouſand men under *Grey* Marqueſſe of *Dorſet*, who being landed in *Biſcay* did no good at all; nor had they any aid from *Ferdinand*, whoſe intention was onely to ſurpriſe *Navarre* for his own uſe, which he did; for having raiſed an Army under Duke *D' Alva*, which he pretended to joyn with the Engliſh forces, he ſuddenly ruſheth upon *Navarre*, ſurpriſeth *Pampalona*, and ſeiſeth himſelf a great part of that kingdome: nor did *Ferdinand* at all aſſiſt the Engliſh as he promiſed, but ſuffered them for foure moneths to periſh with

1509.

with want and ſickneſs, ſo that the Souldiers returne to *England* in diſ- *An. Chriſti.*
content.

Whilſt things were acted thus by the *Spaniard*, the Engliſh Admiral Sir 1512.
Edward Howard takes divers French veſſels, burns and ſpoils *Britany* in divers places; the Britains dared indeed the Admiral, and he came into the field with two thouſand and ſix hundred men againſt ten thouſand; but when they perceived the Engliſh courage, they ran away. King *Henry* upon this ſends more aid to his Admiral both of ſhips and men; with theſe he encounters the French fleet: the *Regent* of *England*, in which were ſeven hundred ſouldiers, and the great Carrick of *Breſt* wherein were nine hundred, both theſe ſhips being faſt grapled together, were unfortunately burnt and drowned in the ſea, with all that were in them: the French king increaſeth his fleet, and ſent it with all neceſſaries into the Haven of *Breſt*. King *Henry* alſo inlargeth his Fleet, with which the *Engliſh* Admiral reſolves to ſet upon the *French* at *Breſt*, but as he was entring in, the formoſt Ship was ſplitted upon a Rock, which made the reſt forbear to proceed. The Frenchmen upon this fortifie the Haven, placing in the mouth thereof four and twenty old *Flemiſh* hulks, which were to be ſet on fire when the *Engliſh* Ships did draw neer them; they raiſed alſo divers Rampires and Bulwarks for their great Ordnance.

The *Engliſh* Admiral fearing the Haven was too ſhallow for his great Ships, 1513.
entreth into the harbour with oared Barges, and manfully aſſailed the three great Gallies of *Rhodes*, brought thither by a knight called Prior *John*; but when the *Engliſh* Barges were gone, the *French* in great numbers ruſh into the Gallies, and with continual freſh ſupplies overmaſter the *Engliſh*, the greater part whereof being ſlain, the Admiral with a Pike is born over-boord and drowned, the reſt are taken priſoners; the Lord *Thomas Howard*, brother to the deceaſed Admiral, is put in his place. *Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury* is ſent into *France* with eight thouſand men, and *Somerſet* Lord *Harbert* with ſix thouſand, theſe beſiege *Tyrwin*; ſhortly after the king himſelf with eleven thouſand comes over and joyns himſelf with the two former bodies, having left the care of the South part of the kingdome to his Queen, and of the North to *Howard* Earl of *Surrey*, becauſe of the Scots: At *Tyrwyn* there were divers ſallies of the *French* upon the *Engliſh*, and many ſkirmiſhes, till the French king came with a great Army to raiſe the ſiege; after many bravado's and threats, the battels joyn with great eagerneſs, but at laſt the French are beat, many whereof are ſlain, many taken priſoners, the reſt fled, *Tyrwyn* is ſurrendred, pillaged, and burnt down, onely the Biſhops Palace was preſerved with the Cathedral Church; In this ſiege *Maximilian* the Emperour ſerved under king *Henry*.

After this, king *Henry* beſiegeth *Turnay*, which after many ſharp aſſaults and ſkirmiſhes, yielded to ſubmit and pay ten thouſand pound to king *Henry*. *Wolſey* the kings Almoner takes of them the Oath of allegiance, and Sir *Edward Poynings* is made Governour of the Town, and ſo the winter drawing on, king *Henry* returns home, mean while the Engliſh Admiral vexeth the French both at ſea and land. The Scots, in the abſence of king *Henry*, invade *England* with eight thouſand men under the command of the Lord *Humes* king *James* his Chamberlain, theſe having done much miſchief with fire and ſword, are ſuddenly aſſaulted by Sir *William Bulmer* and one thouſand Archers, who defeated them, and ſtript them of their booty, being too ſecure and confident. King *James* in revenge of this defeat, againſt the peace and articles of marriage, enters *England* with one hundred thouſand fighting men, and beſieged the Caſtle of *Norham*, which he took, the Earl of *Surrey* being aided by his eldeſt ſon the Admiral, marcheth with ſix and twenty thouſand fighting men, among which were many Lords and Knights, againſt the Scots; a bloody battel is fought in *Floden* field, where after a ſharp diſpute the Scots are defeated, of whoſe army were ſlain king *James*, two Biſhops, twelve Earles, fourteen Lords, twelve thou-

An. Christi thousand Gentlemen and common souldiers; on the *English* part were killed fifteen hundred.

King *Henry* to reward the service of those who had fought for him against the French and Scots, confers on them divers honours. *Thomas Howard* Earle of *Surrey* is made Duke of *Norfolke*, and his son the Admiral is made Earle of *Surrey*. *Brandon* Viscount *Lysle* is stiled Duke of *Suffolke*. *Sommerset* Lord *Herbert* is created Earle of *Worcester*. *Stanly* is made Lord *Monteagle*, and *Thomas Wolsey* is Bishop of *Lincoln*. About the end of this year the enclosures near *Islingtown* are thrown down by the Londoners, as hindring their recreations. The French under *Prior-John* land in *Sussex* in the night time, and
1514. burn a village there, but he is beaten to his gallies, with the losse of many of his men, and with a wound in his face; to requite this, Sir *John Wallop* from the Admiral lands in *Normandy* with eight hundred men, where he burns and spoils one and twenty villages. After this a peace is concluded between *France* and *England*, upon a match between the French King *Lewis* the 12. and *Mary* King *Henries* sister. Hereupon the Duke of *Longuevil*, and the other French prisoners taken at the battel of *Tyrwin*, are released; the Lady with a great train is landed at *Bulloign*, where the Dolphin with the French Nobility receives and brings her to *Abuyle*, where she is married, and shortly after crowned at *Paris*; but within twelve weeks after the marriage King *Lewis*
1515. dieth, and Queen *Mary* is brought again into *England* by the Duke of *Suffolke*, who with the kings consent married her. *Francis* the first successor to *Lewis*, renews the peace with *England*.

About these times, *Thomas Wolsey* born in *Ipswich* of mean parents, became the most potent man in the Kingdome; First he was the Kings Almoner, then Bishop of *Lincolne*, then a Privy-counsellor, at last Archbishop and Cardinal of *Torke*; yet not content with all this, he gets the King to take the great Seal from *Canterbury*, and to give it him, whereby he became also the Chancellor of *England*, so that now without him no matter of Church or State was man-
1516. aged. He demands accounts of all officers in the last wars, and thereby enricheth himself, either sharing with them, or receiving great bribes from them; they that had nothing were punished; He erecteth also new Courts of Judicature, by which he enriched his coffers: Such was his pride, that he would not suffer Cardinal *Campeius* the Popes Legat here for *England* to land, untill
1517. he had sent back to *Rome* for a new Commission, in which *Wolsey* is made *Campeius* his Collegate; so at last both the Legats repair to *Greenwich*, where the King was; before them were carried two silver Crosses, two silver Pillars, two guilded Axes, and two embroidered Cushions; their message is delivered in an Italian speech to the King, for his aid, with the other Christian Princes against the Turks; to this the King required some time of consideration: then did *Wolsey* by his Legative authority without the king, erect a Court, in which he visited all Bishops and their Dioceses, inriching himself by bribes, and sequestring for his own use the probate of Wills; and such was his pride, that before and after meat when he washed, he was attended on by Dukes and Earles.

The King and Queen, the twelfth year of *Henries* Reign, resolve to passe
1520. over into *France*, for which cause great and rich preparations are made by Sea and Land; they came at last with all their train to *Callice*, and the French King with his Queen and attendance to *Arde*. Cardinal *Wolsey* is sent before with a large Commission to treat about a further peace with king *Francis*; the Lords and Gentry that attended on *Wolsey* were cloathed with crimson velvet, and wore chains of gold, the yeomen and grooms were apparrelled in scarlet: when he came to *Arde*, the French king royally entertained him, and having seen his large Commission, gave him the like under the great Seal of *France*: Then did both the Kings with their Queen and train meet in the valley of *Andrea*, where they feasted and rejoyced some dayes together, and then friendly departed to their own homes; and because there was like to be wars between the

the Emperor and French, King *Henry* being in league with both, mediated for peace, therefore Commiſſioners from theſe three Princes were to meet at *Calice*; the Cardinal is employed by king *Henry*, with the Earle of *Worceſter*, and ſome others in this Commiſſion; he with his Colleagues ride proudly through *London*, where he is met by the Maior and his brethren, and the Companies in their ſeveral Liveries; thence he paſſeth in Barges to *Graveſend*, and thence to *Canterbury*, where he is met by the Archbiſhop and his Clergy with a ſolemn proceſſion; from thence he goeth to *Dover*, and ſo to *Calice*; where he meets the other Ambaſſadors, a conference there was had, but nothing effected: *Wolſey* to ſhew his greatneſs, would needs go to the Emperors Court, carrying with him the great Seal of *England*, which no Chancellor before durſt do; he is accompanied with four hundred and ſixty horſe, being in all places met and ſaluted by the Gentry. At *Bruges* he was met about a mile from the Town by the Emperor himſelf, who highly honoured him, both becauſe of his large Commiſſion, and of the broad Seal of *England* which was carried before him in great ſtate; but the want of the ſame in *England* hindred the paſſing of writs and patents. *An. Chriſti.* 1521.

At *Bruges*, the cauſes of the war beween *Cæſar* and *France* are diſputed at large: the Cardinal makes a witty ſpeech commending the excellency of peace, which the Emperor liked well, but withall told the Cardinal, That God had not put the ſword in vain in the Magiſtrates hand, but that by it he was to mantain his hereditary rights againſt uſurpers, and regain by violence what by violence was detained, and therefore he doubted not of his Uncle king *Henries* help, ſeeing all Princes were bound to ſupport right, and ſuppreſſe wrong; he complains alſo of the wrongs done by the French to him, in repudiating his daughter the Lady *Margaret*, in detaining from him his Towns and Caſtles in *Picardy*, in getting treacherouſly from him his wife the Lady *Jane* the young Dutcheſs of *Brittany*, in mantaining his rebellious ſubject the Duke of *Gelders* againſt him, and laſtly his ſurpriſal of the kingdome of *Naples* from the houſe of *Caſtile*. The Cardinal could reply but little to what was ſaid, therefore he took his leave, and returns for *England*, where he is welcomed and feaſted by the king.

The proud Cardinal, under colour of the kings aid to *Cæſar* againſt *France*, grants forth Commiſſions under the great Seal of *England* for every man to ſet down the true value of his eſtate, and to pay four ſhillings in the pound; the ſame ſum is alſo demanded of the Clergy: this proceeding was moſt diſtaſteful to all men, as conſiſting neither with law, nor the peoples liberty, nor with the welfare of thoſe whoſe credits exceeded their eſtates, beſides that the ſums demanded were not payable; notwithſtanding *Wolſey* would not (though generally petitioned) mitigate this rigor; and though in *Hampſhire* Viſcount *Lyſle* wrote to the Cardinal the danger that was likely to enſue if there were no mitigation, ſeeing the people were ready to riſe, yet he received no other anſwer, but that it ſhould coſt him his head, for offering to differ from his inſtructions; but at laſt when he ſaw how heavy this burthen was to the people, new Commiſſions are ſent out to demand the ſixth part of each mans ſubſtance; but the people inſtead of paying the money curſed the Cardinal: ſo great was the diſtemper every where, and danger of inſurrection, that the king was much grieved thereat, and cauſed theſe Commiſſions to be recalled, proteſting they were ſent abroad without his knowledge, and that he would require nothing of his people but by way of benevolence. 1522. 1523. 1524. 1525.

The Cardinal perceiving how the king had laid all the blame upon him, to ingratiate himſelf with the people, he calls the Maior of *London* with his brethren before him, to whom he proteſted that he had kneeled to the king to perſwade him to revoke the Commiſſion, and to relie on his peoples benevolence; to this purpoſe he directs his letters to all the Shires, but this policie could not get the peoples good opinion of him; then Commiſſions are made

An. Christi. for the benevolence, but they also did not take with the people, some pleading poverty; others, that demanding of benevolences was against their liberty, and the statute made in the first year of king *Richard* the third.

About this time, the Cardinal procures a licence from the Pope to pull down some smal religious houses, for appropriating their lands and revenews to two Colledges which he had erected, the one at *Oxford*, the other at *Ipswich*: this gave a hint not long after to king *Henry* to demolish all such houses. Then this busie-headed Butchers dog (as the people called him) took upon him to reform the kings house; therefore he put out some of his menial servants, and puts worse in their rooms: He bestows on the king his Mannor of *Hampton* Court, for which he hath leave of the king to keep his court in his Palace at *Richmond*. The *French* king, about this time, desires in marriage the Lady *Mary*,
1527. king *Henry's* onely daughter; but this motion liked not our States-men, who foresaw that if king *Henry* died without issue male, *France* being the greater kingdome, would make this but an attendant upon that. The Cardinal also made a scruple of the lawfulnesse of king *Henry's* marriage, and it was disputed at *Paris*, whether *Mary* were legitimate, being king *Henry's* daughter by *Catherine* his brother *Arthurs* wife. This doubt the Cardinal first raised in displeasure to *Cæsar*, because he had not used his utmost power to make him Pope. Dr. *Longland* Bishop of *Lincoln* and the kings confessor, told him that he had lived almost twenty years incestuously with his Queen, and that therefore he should now leave her bed, and repent for this great sin.

The King presently upon this, imploys the Cardinal in an Embassie to the French king, the substance whereof was onely known to the king and him; at his departure, the king takes his leave of him, as of a familiar friend: when he rode through *London* he was attended on by twelve hundred Horse. At *Calice* and *Bulloin* he is received with great honour, and flattering Pageants are presented to him at *Bulloin*: as he rode towards *Amiens*, he is met by the Provost and chief Citizens, and within half a mile by the king himself, who in great state conducted him to his lodging, on the gates whereof was written in fair letters *Cardinalis Pacificus*: after much entertainment and divers conferences, a Peace is concluded, and sealed with a seale of gold: of which afterward the Cardinal bragged in the Star-chamber, and that he had made an everlasting peace; but the people muttered, that *France* never kept peace long with *England*; and that a peace with *Cæsar* and the *Flemings* (which the Cardinal kept off) had been better.

1428. The nullity of the kings marriage being smothered a while, is revived again; and the king upon this refrains her bed: *VVolsey* procures a Commission from the Pope, to be directed to him, and his brother *Campeius*; that before them as supream Judges the matter might be debated: the Commission being granted, *Wolsey* acquaints the Queen therewith, who accuseth him as being chief cause of these troubles, because the Emperour her Nephew had not made him Pope, and because she had gently told him of his tyranny, covetousnesse and leachery: The king permits the Queen to choose her own Councellours, who named four Doctoors, two of the law, to wit, *Warham* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and *West* Bishop of *Ely*; and two of divinity, namely,
1529. *Fisher* Bishop of *Rochester*, and *Standish* Bishop of *Assaph*: a stately Court is erected in the great Hall at *Black-friars*, where were placed two Chairs, and two great Cushions, covered with Cloth of gold; the Legats took their places, *Wolsey* the right hand: The King and Queen are cited; He by his Proctor acknowledgeth the Legats power from the Pope, but the Queen appealed from them to the Court at *Rome*, which appeal was not allowed: the proceedings of the Court were so tedious, that the King with the Queen came in person, where he desires a quick end, and withall protests how much he loved the Queen, and what an excellent wife she had been to him; but that now he was troubled in Conscience to keep her company.

At

At *Rome*, there is a cuſtom that all legal proceedings ceaſe from the laſt of *July* till the fourth of *October*; which the two Cardinals willing to obſerve, reſolve to adjourn their Court, at which the king is troubled, and ſends the Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* with other Lords to the Legats for diſpatch of their ſentence, but could not prevaile, which made *Suffolk* cry out in open Court, That never any Legat or Cardinal did good in *England*. The king reſolves to wait till *October*; but underſtanding that *Campeius* was bound for *Rome*, being ſent for by the Pope, and that this buſineſſe was to be determined in the Court of *Rome*, which would prove both tedious, chargeable, and troubleſome: He began to be ſenſible of the jugling of theſe two Legats, and withall to hate *Wolſey*, whom of nothing he had raiſed to ſuch honour and greatneſſe. The kings Counſel and Nobility being glad that *Wolſey* was like to fall, help to further it, by framing articles againſt him, for his pride, tyrany, oppreſſion, and ſecret correſpondency with the Pope, by which the kings power was diminiſhed; therefore they conclude he incurred a *præmunire* and forfeiture of all his eſtate, and promotions, and liberty to the king: theſe articles were delivered to the king and ſubſcribed, who concealed them for a while; then *Campeius* takes his leave of the king at *Woodſtock*; *Wolſey* is commanded by the king to attend him into *London*, not knowing what had paſſed; as they were journying from thence to the ſea-coaſt, by order, *Campeius* his Trunks are opened, and ſearch made for *VVolſey*'s letters to *Rome*, but they were ſent away a day before by the poſt. *An. Chriſti.*

The Cardinal was indicted the next Term in the kings Bench, upon the Statute of *Præmunire*, by *Hales* the kings Atturney; and the Indictment being found againſt him, the Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* are required to take the great ſeal from him, which was beſtowed on Sir *Thomas Moore*; then the Cardinals goods by command are ſeiſed on, and he is confined to *Aſher* neer *Kingſton*: then being required to plead to his Indictment, by his Atturney he confeſſed all; his places are taken from him, and conferred on others; yet the king left to him the Biſhopricks of *York* and *VVincheſter*, and ſent him alſo much of his plate and houſhold-ſtuffe. And now the king begins to manage the affairs of the Church and State himſelf, the charge whereof hitherto he committed to *VVolſey*.

In Parliament a complaint is made againſt the Clergy for exacting large ſums as fees for the probate of Wils. 2. For demanding Mortuaries of poore houſe-keepers. 3. For becomming Husbandmen, and Graſiers, and Farmers: 4. For keeping Tanning-houſes, for being Grocers, for ingroſſing Wool, Cloth, and other commodities. 5. For enjoying great revenews and benefices, in which they neither preached nor kept hoſpitality. 6. Becauſe ſome dunces kept above twelve benefices. This complaint is much oppoſed by the Biſhops, chiefly by *Rocheſter*, who told the Lords, that theſe proceedings of the Commons were like thoſe of the *Bohemians*, which proceeded not of Faith: The Commons complain to the king againſt the Biſhop for counting them Hereticks and Infidels; the king ſends for the Biſhop and accuſeth him, who clears himſelf that he ſpoke that phraſe of the *Bohemians*, not of the houſe of Commons. Then ſhortly after this debate between the Biſhop and Commons, in which ſome uncivil words were uſed, Articles are preferred againſt *VVolſey*, which are theſe; 1. That he got himſelf by ſiniſtrous means to be made the Popes Legate, to the kings prejudice in eccleſiaſtical things: 2. In writing ſtill, *Ego & Rex meus*; as if the king were his inferiour. 3. For calling the Church of *England* a reprobate Church, in his letters to the Pope. 4. For carrying beyond ſeas the great ſeal of the kingdome, without leave. 5. For ſending a commiſſion under the ſeal, without the king, about making a Peace betwixt his Majeſty and the Duke of *Ferrara*. 6. For preſuming to come neer the king and breath upon him, when he had the *French Pox*. 7. For cauſing a Cardinals Hat to be ſtamped on the kings coyn. 8. For inhibiting the kings Clark of the

An. Christi. Market to execute his office in St. *Albans*, being a parcel of his Abbey. 9. For conveying in sixteen barrels two hundred and forty thousand pounds to the Pope, besides other sums at other times, and for exacting by his commissions infinite sums of money from the people, purposely to disturbe the kingdoms peace; all these articles *Wolsey* confessed, and submitted himself to the kings mercy.

The king understanding that the Emperour and Pope were together at *Bononia*, sends an Ambassadour to them, to let them know, that it was not out of any dislike he had of his Queen that he desired a divorce, but because the President of *Paris* and many grave Divines conceive this marriage unlawfull; therefore he desires, for satisfaction of his conscience, that a speedy sentence may passe. The Emperor said, he would be satisfied by the judgment of the Law in that point. The Pope promiseth an end, when he came to *Rome*; but he meant no such thing: for if he should give sentence against Pope *Julius* his dispensation, he would make all future dispensations of no validity; and if he should give sentence against the Queen, he would make *Cæsar* his enemy. King *Henry* seeing nothing but delayes, imployes the chief Divines of *England* to travel into all Universities to know their opinions about this match: these returning, brought twelve Instruments sealed by so many Universities, all concluding the Kings marriage unlawfull. At this time *Wolsey* gets leave to live within his Diocesse of *York*; one *Cromwell* a servant of his, left him, and got into the Kings service and favour also. The King was content, that the Cardinals Colledge at *Oxford* (called then *Kings-Colledge*, now *Christ-Church*) should be endowed with the Lands which were forfeited; but he destroyed his Colledges at *Ipswich*, as being needlesse.

The King understanding that *Wolsey* had got a Bull from *Rome* to curse him, if he did not restore him to all his goods and places, causeth a Proclamation to be published, That all Appeals, Provisions and Instruments procured from *Rome* against the Kings power, within one year next before that time, or to be procured hereafter, to be be void, and the procurers thereof to be punishable. Mean while the Cardinal by his Letters animates the Pope and Clergy against the King, and they on the other side encourage him to constancie, promising his restoration: *Wolsey* being puffed up upon this, makes great preparation for his instalment in the Archbishoprick of *York*, inviting the Northern Gentry thither, meaning to feast them magnificently; he erected his seat in the Cathedral-church, in height and state like a Kings throne. The King understood of all these proceedings, that they were done to affront him; therefore to prevent his instalment, a Commission is sent to the Earl of *Northumberland* to arrest him and commit him to Sheffield-castle; he stood upon the priviledge of a Roman Cardinal, and that he was exempted from the secular power; yet he was seised on, and his goods also, his Officers were discharged, and his Physitian sent to the Tower, whither also the Cardinal was to be brought, but that he fell suddenly sick, upon the sight of the Captain of the Tower that came to apprehend him; he took a strong Purge, which in two nights killed him.

The Clergie being guilty of a *Præmunire*, by maintaining the Cardinals Legantine power, paid to the King an hundred thousand pounds, to prevent further mischief; and by a publike Instrument acknowledged him *Supreme Head of the Church of England*. So *Wolsey* being gone, the King causeth the Opinion of the Universities to be read openly in his Parliament, and then to be sent to the Queen, who for all this will not relinquish her Appeale to *Rome*, whereupon the King gets her to be divorced, and the Archbishop to pronounce the marriage null; and then he fals in love with the Lady *Anne Bullen*, whom he made Marchioness of *Pembrook*, and afterward married her.

In this Kings time, on *May-day*, great outrages were committed upon Merchant-strangers and their goods, by multitudes of unruly *Londoners*; but they were

were quickly ſuppreſſed by the Lord Maior, and divers of them executed, the reſt were pardoned by the king who ſate then in Guild-hall. *Tournay* is delivered up to the French by king *Henry* for ſixty thouſand crowns, which was diſliked by ſome, becauſe it was a curb to the French, and a nurcery for training the Engliſh youth in martial diſcipline. *Charles* after the death of *Maximilian*, comming from *Spain* to receive the Empire, by the way is royally entertained in *England*. King *Henry* being told by his Privy-counſel, that ſome Gentlemen of his privy-chamber were too familiar and bold with him, the king thanked them, and left thoſe gallants at the Counſels diſpoſing who removed them, and put wiſer men in their room: King *Henry* as he returned from viſiting the French king, by the way gave the Emperor a viſit at *Graveling*, and a peace is concluded between theſe three Princes. The Duke of *Buckingham* being made believe by a Monk that he ſhould be King, becauſe he bragged of it, and ſeemed to rejoyce thereat, was arraigned at *Weſtminſter* before the Duke of *Norfolke* High-ſteward of *England*, and was beheaded on the Tower-hill. *An. Chriſti.*

The peace concluded between *England* and *France* is broken by the French; 1. In ſending *John* Duke of *Albany* into *Scotland* to raiſe new wars. 2. In detaining from King *Henry* the yearly tribute due for *Normandy*, and *Aquitain* &c. 3. By ſeiſing on the Engliſh Merchants goods, and committing them to priſon. 4. By ſpoiling and taking the Engliſh ſhips at ſea. 5. By refuſing to pay to Queen *Mary* Dowager of *France* her yearly penſion. 6. And by refuſing to pay the money promiſed for *Tournay*. For thoſe wrongs King *Henry* prepares his Navy, which he delivers to the charge of the Earle of *Surrey*; then he reſtrains the French Ambaſſador of his liberty, ſeiſeth on the French mens goods, (except ſuch as were Denizens) and impriſoneth them. The Engliſh Admiral lands ſome men in *Brittany*, whom he conducteth to *Morley*, and having beaten open with great ſhot the chief gate, enters the Town, rifles and burns it. Forces alſo are ſent to *Scotland* to prevent the comming in of the Scots hither. The Admiral having ranſacked divers Towns in *France*, returns with great booty into *England*. *John* Duke of *Albany* by the French kings procurement raiſeth a great Army in *Scotland* to invade *England*; againſt them two Armies are ſent, the one under the Earle of *Shrewsbury*, the other of eight and twenty thouſand under the Lords *Roſſe* and *Dacres*, but theſe Armies onely viewed each other, and ſo parted without blows.

Charles Brandon Duke of *Suffolk* is ſent into *France* with thirteen thouſand men, where he makes great havock, and takes *Bell* Caſtle. From the Emperor to the Dukes ſervice came three thouſand foot and five hundred horſe, with theſe the Town of *Bray* is taken by aſſault, then they paſſe over the river *Some* into *France*, and do much hurt; but the winter approaching, and the Duke of *Eurbon* who was revolted from the French to the Emperor came not with his ten thouſand men as was promiſed, as alſo becauſe the Engliſh had not carts as the Burgundians to carry away their booty, they were reſolved to disband; *Suffolk* ſends to know the Kings pleaſure, who would not aſſent to their return, but ſends the Lord *Mountjoy* with ſix thouſand men, yet notwithſtanding the ſouldiers without the Dukes leave disband themſelves.

Mean while the Duke of *Albany* raiſeth an Army of eighty thouſand Scots, againſt whom the Admiral and Treaſurer of *England* march with forty thouſand, but there was no blow at all given, for the Scots retreated; then the Scots Queen, King *Henries* eldeſt ſiſter, obtains a truce till a peace could be concluded. *Albany* perceiving that the Scots Nobility could not endure that he being a Frenchman born, and (next to the king) inheritor of that Crown, ſhould have the rule of their king and kingdome, and fearing ſome miſchief, fled ſecretly into *France*; upon whoſe departure a peace is concluded, and a match propoſed between the Lady *Mary* king *Henries* daughter, and young king

James

An. Christi. *James* of *Scotland*, the Emperor alſo ſends to have the ſame Lady *Mary* for his wife, on whom he proffers to beſtow for her dowry the Low-countries; he deſired alſo that her portion-money might be preſently diſburſed for *Cæſars* wars, and that king *Henry* would in perſon with a royal Army invade *France* which was an enemy to them both: the king being offended with the Emperor for raiſing the price of his gold within his Provinces, anſwered, That his daughter was too young to marry. Then the French king ſends to have her for his ſon the Dolphin; but this motion was croſſed by the Duke of *Burbons* Army, and the Marqueſs of *Piſcary*, who took the French king and his children priſoners as he lay at the ſiege of *Pavia*. About this time king *Henry* in his hawking, fell with his head downward into a ditch, which he offered to leap over, and had been ſmothered in the mud, if his foot-man *Moody* had not plucked his head out of the mud: Not long after this, the king beſtows divers honours; he made his baſtard-ſon begot on *Elizabeth Blunt*, *Henry Fitzroy* Earle of *Nottingham*; *Courtney* Marqueſs of *Exeter*; *Brandon Suffolks* eldeſt ſon by the French Queen *Mary* his wife, is created Earle of *Lincoln*; *Manners* Lord *Roſſe* is made Earle of *Rutland*, with divers others.

Ambaſſadors are ſent from the Queen Regent of *France* for concluding a peace, with the proffer of twenty hundred thouſand crowns for arrearages of the tribute, whereof fifty thouſand pounds ſterling ſhould be paid in hand, and ſecurity given for the reſt; they promiſe alſo to pay Queen *Mary* her dowry: upon this a peace is made, and now the King by the means of *Thomas*
1532. *Cromwel* (whom of *Wolſey's* ſervant he had made a Baron and Counſellor of State) curb by degrees the Popes authority here, in making a law that all ſhould incur a premunire, who appealed to the See of *Rome*, and procured thence any proceſſe or judgement whatſoever; the Clergy freely ſubmit themſelves to him in ſpiritual affairs, the Pope is utterly deprived of his Anuates and firſt-fruits; the lawfulneſs of his marriage with Queen *Anne* is eſtabliſhed, and the unlawfulneſs of his former match with Queen *Katherine*, the Crown is entailed on him and his iſſue; to this Act all ſwore except Sir *Thomas More*, who diſliking the Kings proceedings againſt Queen *Katherine* and the Pope, had delivered the great Seal into the Kings hands; Dr. *Fiſher* alſo Biſhop of *Rocheſter* refuſed to ſwear, and both proteſted againſt the ſaid Act of Parliament, for which cauſe they both loſt their heads. The next year the Kings ſupremacie is confirmed by Parliament.

The Lord *Dacres* about this time is ſuſpected of treaſon, and acquitted. *Elizabeth Burton* the holy Maid of *Kent* with her complices were executed for conſpiring the kings death, under the ſhew of devotion. The next year the kings ſupremacie is again confirmed, and the Popes power baniſhed; firſt-
1534. fruits alſo, tenths and benefices, with all Church-dignities are granted to the king. Not long after Queen *Anne* and the Lord *Rochford* are beheaded unjuſtly for ſuſpicion of carnal commerce; within twenty dayes after he marrieth with *Jane* Sir *John Seymours* daughter, mother to king *Edward*, but
1535. ſhortly after his birth ſhe died. The Lord *Thomas Howard* is beheaded for marrying without the kings conſent, *Margaret* his ſiſter, and wife firſt to king *James* the 4. and then to *Archibald Douglaſſe*, by whom ſhe had a daughter called *Margaret*. Two and thirty Commiſſioners are named by the king who were to make Eccleſiaſtick laws, and by the ſame Parliament all religious houſes not exceeding in revenue yearly two hundred pounds, were diſſolved and given to the king; a book of Articles alſo concerning Church-government is publiſhed by the Clergy: theſe proceedings againſt the Popes power, occaſioned the *Lincolnſhire* men to riſe in a body of twenty thouſand; the king levieth a great Army, and marcheth againſt them; they humbly petition that the religious houſes may not be diſſolved, nor the old Church-government altered: but the king would hearken to nothing, except a hundred of their Ring-leaders were ſent to him to be puniſhed; upon this every one ſuſpecting himſelf, they all

all forsook the field and went home; but Captain *Cobler* (indeed Dr. *Mackarel*) with some others were shortly after found out and executed. This was no sooner appeased, when another Rebellion starts up in the North of forty thousand men, complaining also that the old Religion was changed and wronged: Against these the Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* are sent with a great Army; but their intended fight was hindred by the sudden swelling of a small Brook that lay between them, upon a shower of rain; which so wrought upon the Rebels, that a general Pardon being promised, they all went peaceably home. *An. Christi.*

10 In *Cumberland* a third Rebellion breaks out, by *Tilby* and *Musgrave*, with eight thousand men against the King; but they were defeated by the Duke of *Norfolk*, seventy four of their Commanders are taken and executed. The Lord *Darcy* is put to death for a murther; the Lord *Hussey* with divers Knights and two Abbots, and many more, are executed for denying the Kings Supremacie, and so was Friar *Forrest* for heresie. Divers honours are likewise conferred: Viscount *Beauchamp* is made Earl of *Hartford*, *Fitz-William* Earle of *Southampton*; and among the rest, Sir *Thomas Cromwel* Counsellor of Estate, Knight of the Garter, Lord Privy-Seal, Lord *Cromwel*, is made the Kings Vicegerent in all Church-matters, and had the precedencie of the Archbishop of 20 *Canterbury*; and to shew how officious he was, he destroyed Images and Shrines, the Begging Friars and Nuns. About this time, the Marquis of *Exeter* *Henry Poole*, with divers Gentlemen, for conspiring with Cardinal *Poole* (now beyond the seas) to reestablish the Popes authority, are executed, and so are divers Abbots and others for denying the Kings supremacie. Shortly after this a Rebellion brake out in *Ireland* by *O-Neale*, but is suppressed by the Lord *Grey* Deputy. The Lord *Cromwell* is made Earle of *Essex*, by whose advice the king quarrels with the Religious houses, pretending their vices and idlenesse, but indeed aiming at their wealth and revenues, which amounted to more then two hundred thousand pounds yearly; all this wealth was given by the 30 Parliament to the King, who exchanged these lands with Noblemen for other lands. 1536. 1537.

Cromwell having made havock of the Church, perswades the King to marry the Lady *Anne* of *Cleve*, a good woman, but no wayes lovely, except in her flattering pictures; which made King *Henry*, after he had been married foure moneths, to slight her. Hereupon the Clergy, to flatter the King, pronounce this marriage to be null, because she confessed the King could not afford her that benevolence due from a husband to a wife: The like sentence is published by the Parliament, and withall, that it was lawfull for him and her to marry when and whom they pleased; it was also enacted, that whosoever 40 spake or wrote to the contrary, should be held as traitors. King *Henry* being now free, within twenty dayes after marrieth *Katherine Howard* the daughter of the Lord *Howard*, brother to the Duke of *Norfolk*: And withall he began to cast off his favourite *Cromwell*; which his enemies perceiving, prefer a Bill of High-treason against him, wherein he is accused of divers things in generall; so then being by Parliament attainted of Treason, and of Heresie also in supporting the *Lutherans*, he is beheaded with the Lord *Hungerford* on the Tower-hill. About this time also *Grey* the Deputy of *Ireland*, for procuring the Irish Rebels to enter and make havock within the English pale, is condemned of treason and beheaded.

50 Queen *Katherine* being accused for her unchaste conversation before her marriage with one *Francis Dyrham*, and after with *Thomas Culpeper*; the two Gentlemen suffer death at *Tyburn*; the Queen, and the Lady *Rochford* who brought *Culpeper* into the Queens chamber, are beheaded. In this Parliament the King is proclaimed King of *Ireland*, which title his predecessors never assumed. Then the King married *Katherine Parre* the Marquis of *Northamptons* sister, the Lord *Latimers* wife sometimes, who had not escaped with her head, had 1541.

An. Christi. had king *Henry* escaped death. About this time *Oneal* and his son repair to the Kings Court, submissively confessing their rebellions, for which the King
1542. pardons them, and made the father Earle of *Tyrone*, and his sonne Lord of *Duncan*.

And now the *Scots*, who had been quiet a while, begin to stir again: therefore king *Henry* sends to king *James* 5. his Nephew, that he may do homage for *Scotland*, which was flatly refused; then king *Henry* demands some territories due to him on the Scots borders, for which he had old evidences to shew, these are rejected by the Scots commissioners as fained: then king *Henry* desires to meet and confer with king *James* in friendly manner upon the borders of either kingdome; for this cause king *Henry* goeth to *York*, where he understood king *James* would not meet him but by his Commissioners, whereupon king *Henry* leaves Commissioners there, and returns home. But during this Treaty, a party of Scots invade the Western marches, spoiling and burning all before them; complaint is made, and satisfaction promised, but nothing performed, neither had the Scots commissioners sufficient authority from their king to conclude any thing but what was dishonorable to king *Henry*: wherefore he is forced to send an Army of twenty thousand into *Scotland* under the Duke of *Norfolk*, who was accompanied with divers other Earls, Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, who march into *Scotland* burning and spoiling without resistance, and so return home laden with spoiles. Upon this the Scots king raiseth fifteen thousand men, who invade the west-marches, spoiling the English ground, as the English army had done the Scotish before: but *Dacres*, *Musgrave*, and the Lord *Wharton*, with open forces, and a secret ambush defeated the Scots, being in mutiny among themselves; there were taken prisoners the Earls of *Cassels* and *Glencarn*, the Lords *Maxwel*, *Fleming*, and others, with two hundred Gentlemen and eight hundred common souldiers, with 24 peeces of ordnance, and four carts laden with spears; four and twenty of the chief prisoners are sent to the Tower, and two dayes after dispersed and committed to the charge of divers Lords and Gentlemen. This overthrow so much vexed king *James*, that he died with grief a few weeks after, leaving behind him one daughter Queen *Mary*, newly born. Upon his death, a motion is made for a match between king *Henries* onely son, and this king *James* his onely daughter; the Scots prisoners promise their best assistance for the furtherance thereof, for which cause king *Henry* set them all at liberty without ransome, and besides bestowed on them divers rich gifts.

1543. Mean while the English and French Merchants spoile each other at sea; complaints are made, but no redresse; wherefore king *Henry* transports an English army into *France*, which being landed besiege the Town of *Landersey*; upon this the French king comes with a strong army, raiseth the siege, relieves the town, and in the night-time (being not willing to fight) they steale away into their own countries, and the English return home.

The match between Prince *Edward* and the Infant-Queen *Mary* of *Scotland*, is concluded in their Parliament, and ratified by the seals and oaths of the Nobility; for that purpose the Queen should have been sent into *England*. But shortly after, the French king by cunning plots alienated the Scots from that match: so that king *Henry* is forced to make unwonted preparations against both kingdoms; he first then sends a mighty Army against *Scotland* by sea in two hundred ships under *Lisle* the Admiral, and by land under the Earl of *Hartford*: The fleet having landed all the men, they seise in the *Firth* on many ships; then they besiege *Lieth*, and being a while resisted by sixe thousand Scotish horse, they took the Town and plundred it: thence they march towards *Edinburgh*, where the Provost and chief Citizens met them, who delivered to the Earl of *Hartford* the City-keyes, conditionally he would preserve it from fire, and suffer the souldiers to depart with their baggage out of the town: *Hartford* the Generall answers them, That their Nobility by falsifying

falsifying their oath had drawn these Armies on them; if the souldiers and inhabitants would come disarmed into the field, and yeeld their lives and goods to him, he would do as he thought good, otherwayes they must expect all extremity; the Citizens upon this return discontented, with a resolution to resist, which they did, till the gates and walls were battered; the English enter the Town, a part whereof they burned, and plundered the rest: mean while four thousand English horse more are sent by king *Henry*, great spoils and booties are carried away by sea into *England*; *Holy-roods*, *Leith*, *Haddington*, with divers other places thereabout are defaced. Then King *Henry* sends two strong Armies into *France*, the one under the Duke of *Norfolke*, which besieged the Town *Muttrel*, but after much losse of time, were fain in the end to leave it; The other under the the Duke of *Suffolke*, who besieged *Bulloign*; to this siege King *Henry* himself came, who so battered the walls, that the Town was fain to yeeld, conditionally the inhabitants may depart with bag and baggage, which was granted; there came out sixty seven horse, one thousand five hundred sixty three foot, eight hundred Gunners, eighty seven hurt men, besides multitudes of others, the whole number was four thousand four hundred forty four souls. *An. Christi.*

Whilst King *Henry* is thus employed in *France*, *Cæsar* underhand makes a peace with the French, whereat King *Henry* was much troubled, therefore leaving order for repairing the Town and Castle, he dismisseth his Army, and returns into *England*, where because of his daily wars he demands a benevolence of all his subjects, which was granted, onely Alderman *Read* refused, therefore was forced to serve the King in person against the Scots, by whom he was taken prisoner, and at last ransomed; after King *Henry* was gone, the Dolphin in a dark night suddenly surprised *Base-Bulloign*, but was fain to quit it again, being beat out by those of the upper Town: shortly after Monsieur *de Bees* came with fifteen thousand men to erect a Fort before the Town, but *Hartford*, *Lisle* and *Gray* put them to flight, and forced them to leave behinde their ordnance, tents, and other provisions: The French king to be revenged, sends in a fleet of two hundred ships, and seven and twenty gallies, with sixty thousand men, which cast anchor before the Isle of *Wight*; but as the English fleet passed out of the harbour of *Portsmouth*, the *Mary-rose* one of the Kings best ships, with Sir *George Carew*, and above four hundred men in her, were all suddenly sunk under water, by reason the ordnance were left untrigged, and the under port-holes open, so that when the ship turned the ordnance ran back to one side, and bare the port-holes under water. The French Admiral hearing of King *Henries* preparation, hoised anchors, and returns into *France* without acting any thing. Whilst the King is absent in *France*, the Scots invade *England*, making havock of all before them: the Earle of *Hartford* with twelve thousand men, in requital, commits the like outrages upon the Scots territories; *Lisle* the High-Admiral lands within the haven of *Treport*, the Suburbs of which he burned, with some other places thereabouts. After all this stir, at last a peace is concluded between *England* and *France*, *Bulloign* is restored for eight hundred thousand crowns: but the Duke of *Norfolke*, with his son the Earl of *Surrey*, after many brave services done by them, are suddenly apprehended and sent to the Tower, because they bare in their Escuchen certain Arms which were pretended onely to belong to the King and Prince, which Arms notwithstanding their Ancestors had born time out of minde without controlment; for this sole cause the Earle lost his head, but the Duke his father escaped this fate by the Kings death. 1545. 1546.

When the King perceived that his sickness was incurable, he caused the *Gray-friars* Church of *London* to be opened again after he had suppressed it, and to be made a Parish-Church, the revenues whereof he gave to the City towards the relief of their poor, and withall gave five hundred marks yearly of lands towards the maintenance of the Divine-service, and reparations of

An. Christi. the Church: he ordained his children to succeed each other, if issue failed; he ordained a thousand marks for the poor, and twelve pence a day for twelve poor Knights at *Windsor*, with a white-cloth Gown yearly, an embroidered Garter, with S. *George* his Crosse, and a mantle of red-cloth to be worn thereon; so having reigned seven and thirty years and nine months, he died in the six and fiftieth year of his life; he had six wives, 1. Queen *Katherine* king *Ferdinands* daughter of *Spain*. 2. Queen *Anne* the daughter of Sir *Thomas Bullen* Earle of *Wiltshire*. 3. Queen *Jane* Sir *John Seymours* daughter. 4. Queen *Anne* sister to the Duke of *Cleve*. 5. *Katherine* daughter to *Edmund*, and neece to *Thomas Howard* his brother Duke of *Norfolk*. 6. *Katherine* daughter to Sir *Thomas Parre* of *Kendal*, and sister to *William Parre* Marquess of *Northampton*; by his first wife he had two sons that died young, and Queen *Mary*; by his second Queen *Elizabeth* by his third King *Edward*, and by *Elizabeth Blunt* he had a bastard called *Henry Fitz-roy*, whom he made Earle of *Nottingham*, Duke of *Richmond* and *Sommerset*, Lord Warden of the *Marches* against *Scotland*, and Lieutenant-General of the North of *England*. He was a Prince more eminent for his vices, then vertues, for he was counted ambitious in affecting the title of Spiritual supremacie; covetous, in appropriating the revenews of religious houses to his own uses, and extraordinary exactions from the people; he was also prodigal, in wasting so great a treasure as was left him so quickly and needlessely; He was likewise cruel in condemning two Cardinals, in putting to death two Queens, twelve Dukes, Marquesses, Earls, and Earls sons, 18. Barons and Knights, seventy seven Abbots, Priors, Monks and Priests, and of the common sort huge multitudes; his lust and wantonness, his wavering in Religion, his revengeful and impotent disposition, were too eminent in him.

Chap. XXVIII.

The affairs of Scotland *under King* James *the* 3. *and King* James *the* 4. *from the year* 1460. *till the year* 1513.

1460. King *James* the 2. being slain in the camp, his son being nine years old succeeded, by name *James* the 3. There was much contesting between the Queen-mother and her party, with *Angus* and the rest of the Nobility, who should have the government of the young King and Kingdome; a Parliament is called, and arguments alleadged on both sides; the Queen pleads the right of a mother, the Lords the ancient customes of the Kingdome. At last to prevent all animosities which were like to arise, it is ordered that two able men of each faction should be named to govern the King and Kingdome during the minority of King *James*: of the Queens side were chosen *Grame* and *Boyde*, who was then Chancellor; of the other party, *Robert* Earl of *Orkney*, and *John Kennedy*, to these were added two Bishops, of *Glasco* and *Dunkel*; to the Queen was permitted the tuition of her son, but she was not to meddle with the affairs of State; she had also leave to educate her other children, to wit, the Duke of *Albain*, and the Earle of *Marr*, with the two young Ladies. Things at home being thus composed, the English Ambassadors who came to make peace, had audience, and a peace for fifteen years is concluded, the next year the Kings mother died; *Alexander* the Kings brother
1463. returning from *France* is taken by the English, but released again upon the Scots complaint of the breach of peace.

Scotland continued not long quiet; for *Donald* Lord of the Isles, hearing the King was dead, caused himself to be proclaimed king of the Isles, threatning death to all that should acknowledge any other King there: being invited by the Captain of *Innernesse*-Castle to a feast, he seised on the Castle, and thrust out the garrison; then having gathered an Army of malecontents and loose persons

persons, he falls upon *Athol*, and seiseth on the Earl and his wife, who had taken sanctuary in S. *Brigets* Church; but *Donald* violates the Sanctuary, carries away the Earle, his wife, and many others, with all their wealth, which for security was laid up there, and then sets fire on the Church, and killed divers of the Priests for making resistance: but as he was returning home by water with his sacrilegious booty, a sudden storm sunk most of his vessels, and he narrowly escaped with his life, and after that time till his death continued mad; thus God useth to reward sacrilege. Many of his followers being touched in conscience, went bare-footed, and in white sheets to S. *Brigets* Church, offering gifts for their attonement. At Court *Robert Boyd* a potent man, and great with the young King, to whose counsels he too much hearkened, by his brother *Alexander Boyd* adviseth the King to shake off his governours, and to manage the kingdome himself: *Kennedy* a grave man, and one of the kings governours, for advising the king the contrary, and for offering to stop him from hunting at an unseasonable time, is abused by this *Alexander*, who with his bow which he had then in his hand broke *Kennedy's* head, this caused a great fewd between these families, to the disturbance of the whole kingdome: shortly after *Kennedy* died to the great grief of all good men, for in his life and doctrine he was exemplary and powerful; he had been a great benefactor to the University of St. *Andrews*: *Patrick Grame* is in his stead elected Bishop by the Canons, who repairs to *Rome*, for confirmation, which was a while hindred by the Archbishop of *Yorke*, claiming a power over the Scots Bishops; but at last it is decreed at *Rome* that *Grame* should be Primate of *Scotland*, and the Popes Legat also for three years, that the Priests might be reformed, and Church-discipline established, yet *Grame* durst not return home so long as the *Boyds* continued in their greatness, which came to that height, that *Robert Boyd* the elder was made Viceroy by the king during his minority, his son also *Thomas* is honoured with the marriage of the kings eldest sister, which brought much envy upon *Boyd* and his family, for the people began to repine at his greatness, and to ascribe all the distempers of the Kingdom to *Boyds* misgovernment, these coals were blown by the *Kennedies*.

An. Christi.

1466.

Mean while Ambassadors are sent to *Denmark* for a match between the young King and the *Danes* daughter, with instructions for removing the old controversie between the two Kings about the Islands of *Orkney* and *Shetland*, the chief Ambassador was *Andrew Stewart* Chancellor of *Scotland*, who sends word to King *James* that the match was concluded, and these Islands given to him for his wifes dowry, so that the *Dane* upon this parted with all his right: *Thomas* the son of *Robert Boyd*, and Earle of *Arran*, is sent with a great train of Nobility and Gentry to bring home the new Queen; in the interim the *Kennedies* begin to work upon the kings affections, and to draw him from the *Boyds*, against whose insolent government the people did much complain; the time was fit for their purpose, *Thomas* being absent longer then was expected, because of the winter which makes the Northern seas unnavigable, and the two elder *Boyds* by reason of infirmities, were not able to frequent the Court as they were wont; for this end a Parliament is called at *Edinburg*, to which the two *Boyds Robert* and *Alexander* are summoned; *Robert* out of his guilt, and perceiving the kings minde was alienated, and that his enemies were grown very powerful, fled into *England*; his brother *Alexander* not being able to flie, because sickly, appears; it was there objected that he and his brother had by their own private motion made the king come to *Edinburgh* from *Sterling* against the will of his governours; he replied, that they had the kings pardon under the broad Seal, and defired also the Records might be searched, which was denied him, and so having received the sentence of condemnation for abusing the young kings authority, is beheaded; *Robert* a few years after died with grief at *Anwick* in *England*; his son *Thomas* though now employed upon publike service, is before being heard proclaimed traitor, and his estate confiscated.

1469.

An. Christi. 1470. The next Spring the young Queen arrives with the Daniſh fleet. *Thomas Boyd* underſtanding by his wife who met him on the ſhore, the calamity that had befallen his family, the alienation of the Kings minde, and the power of his adverſaries; though ſome of his friends would have had him repair to the King, from whom in this publike joy he might obtain pardon, yet durſt not venture, therefore ſails back again into *Denmarke*, from thence he travels through *Germany* into *France*, and from thence he goeth to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*, whom he ſerved in his wars, and was highly honoured by him: the King ſends into *Flanders* to his ſiſter *Boyds* wife, to come home, upon hopes that ſhe might ſo far prevail with her brother as that he may again receive her husband into favour; but when ſhe was come, the King endeavours to make a divorce, which was effected upon the not-appearing of her husband within ſixty dayes after his citation; ſo the marriage is diſſolved, and ſhe forced to marry to another husband, *James Hamilton*, far inferiour in birth and wealth to the former, her children alſo are called home by the king; mean while he dieth with grief at *Antwerp*, and is honourably buried there by Duke *Charles* of *Burgundy*: ſo that family of the *Boyds* in a few years flouriſhed and faded; and they that overthrew it, were in hopes that things both in Court and Country would have mended, but it fell out otherwayes, for the king gave himſelf altogether to his pleaſures, and his Courtiers to rapine and oppreſſion; among other abuſes there crept in one in chooſing of Biſhops, whereas hitherto they were elected by the Prebends and Canons, the covetous and ſacrilegious Courtiers never left, till they got the king to aſſume that power to himſelf, perſwading him that by theſe means his power would be ſo much the greater, not onely in puniſhing of vice, but alſo in rewarding of vertue and learning; whereas it came to paſſe that now Church-dignities by the Courtiers were ordinarily ſold.

1472. *Grame* the Archbiſhop being now at *Rome*, and hearing of the great abuſes crept into the Church of *Scotland*, reſolves to come home, and ſends before him the Popes Bull for being Legat; which procured to him much envy, chiefly by thoſe who had made or might make benefit by the ſale of Church-preferments, fearing this gain would be pulled from them; therefore they conſpire together, and complain to the king, that by *Grames* power from the Pope, the priviledges of the Church of *Scotland* were infringed, and that the king himſelf ſhould be brought into ſubjection: Upon this, meſſengers are ſent to *Grame*, not to meddle with his function, untill the king had received ſatisfaction about ſome complaints exhibited againſt him; who was therefore ſummoned by ſuch a day to appear in *Edinburgh*; who being come, and having produced his Patents for the Arch-biſhoprick of St. *Andrews*, and Primacy of *Scotland*, and for being the Popes Legate to reform the Church abuſes, his adverſaries appeal to the Pope, during which time the king forbids him to meddle with the Arch-biſhoprick: mean while his enemies got one *Seveſs*, who had ſtudied Aſtrologie at *Lovan*, to be made Arch-deacon of St. *Andrews*, whom the Biſhop would not admit; hereupon he combines with the Rector of the Univerſity to excommunicate the Arch-biſhop, which he ſlighting, was by the king inhibited from medling with any Church within his Dioceſſe, and all his goods are confiſcated; beſides, the Popes Auditors ſend out an Excommunication againſt him, for non-payment of his Fees in the Court of *Rome*, for his Pattents or Buls: then they made him abjure his Biſhoprick, and impriſoned him in a Cloyſter within a remote Iſland or rock rather, called *Æmona*; Three years after, he is tranſlated to *Dumfermlin* caſtle, and from thence to Lake *Lommond*, where he died of grief: thus was that good man perſecuted for his pious intentions.

1476. About this time, the Lord of the Iſles underſtanding of great preparations making againſt him both by ſea and land, comes humbly to the Court, acknowledgeth his faults, and is pardoned: Onely *Roſſe*, *Kintyr*, and *Knapdale* are

are taken from him; the command of the Isles is left to him. This year the peace is renewed again with *England*, which was like to break out into an open war; because the English had seised on a great ship which was built by *Kennedy*, being driven in by storms: King *Edward* gave order, that the value of the goods taken should be estimated, and satisfaction made. The king was much addicted to the study of Astrologie; therefore understanding by the *Scots* Merchants in *Flanders*, of one *Andrew* a Physitian and Mathematician, who had foretold the Duke of *Burgundies* death, he sends for him, and prefers him in his Court: by him he understood of his own danger, and how the Lion should be killed by his own Whelps; wherefore he became very tyranical, suspecting every man that was neer him: He was jealous of his Lords also, and therefore conferred honours on mean men, which angered the Nobility. The kings younger brother *John*, for speaking too freely against the corruptions of the Court, is imprisoned, condemned, and by the opening of a Vein is forced to bleed to death; It was given out that he had consulted with Witches against the King, and that it might appear the more probable, twelve Witches are condemned and burned: The other brother *Alexander* upon suspition also is imprisoned in *Edinburgh* Castle; but he having feasted his keepers and made them drunk, escaped with his man by his sheets, which he fastned to the bars of the Window; his man broke his leg in the fall, so that his master was fain for a mile to carry him on his shoulders, so having a bark ready, and a fair winde, they set saile to *Dumbar* Castle, which he fortified, and from thence to *France*. *An. Christi.*

Not long after this an Ambassadour comes from king *Edward* of *England* to renew the peace, and to conclude a match between his daughter and king *James* his son, when they should be both of years; but this correspondency held not long, for the borderers made divers incursions upon each other; Besides, *Douglasse* an old exile, and *Alexander* the kings brother, lately being returned from *France* into *England*, blew the coals of sedition: King *Lewis* also sends into *Scotland*, to rouse up their drooping spirits against the *English*, who under *Gloceſter* were preparing an Army: but the *Scottish* Nobility being more discontended with the misgovernment of their own king, then with the English preparations, assemble, and are by *Archbald Douglasse* Earl of *Angus* animated first to reform the abuses of the Court before they invade *England*; For he lets them see, how careleſse the king was in his Government, how much addicted to Magick and unlawfull studies; how the chief officers at Court were mean men, how the Nobility was slighted, how the kings own brothers were used, the one being murthered, and the other banished, and now by the English employed in the head of an Army against them; therefore he wisheth them to consider how much more dangerous a domestick enemy was then a forreign, and what condition they now were in under such governours, whose avarice (saith he) is neither satisfied with our wealth, nor their cruelty with our blood: Upon this a great tumult arose in the Assembly, and a resolution to break in upon the king and his guard, but that motion was disliked, for fear the kings person might be endangered; who hearing of an assembly of Lords in the Church near the Court, sends *Cochran* one of his Court-officers to see what the matter was; as he was comming, *Douglasse* apprehends him by his gold-chain which hung about his neck, and delivered him to be secured; mean while *Douglasse* with some officers of his Army breaks into the kings bedchamber, and there presently apprehends all such servants that were there, or within the Court-walls, whom the souldiers suffered not to come to a triall, but presently hanged them up in their horse-bridles for want of ropes.

Whilst these things were thus acting, the Duke of *Gloceſter* enters *Scotland* with his Army, and demands restitution of the portion-money which was disbursed by the king of *England* upon hopes of the match, and the surrender of

An. Christi. of *Barwick* Castle; It was answered, That the children were not fit for marriage; nor was the day of repayment of that money come; as for *Barwick*, the English should have it, if they could take it. Mean while, *Argile*, with the Chancellor and two Bishops, of St. *Andrews* and *Dumblain*, send to *Alexander* then in the English Camp to return home, and to enjoy his estate, which in the next Parliament should be established on him. This businesse he imparts to *Glocester*, who kindly dismisseth him, who being returned home, a Parliament is called, in which he is made governour of the kingdome; and because the
1482. State of *Scotland* was then unsetled, it was held dangerous to make war with *England*; therefore they resolve to deliver *Barwick*, after one and twenty years possession, to the English. King *Edward* fearing lest the *Scots* should disinherit their kings Posterity, with whom they were highly offended, sends to *Scotland* to disannul the match between the two young Princes; and to demand back the portion-money; which at a day appointed, was repaid.

Alexander, out of his affection to the king his brother, sets him at liberty out of *Edinburgh*-Castle, and restores to him the government: But the king being more mindful of old injuries, then of new courtesies, intends to dispatch his brother, being thereto animated by his enemies, who accused his popularity and affectation of the kingdome: therefore by the advice of his friends, he flies into *England*, and delivers up *Dumbar* Castle to king *Edward*. Whereupon he is condemned of treason, for sending underhand messengers thither, for going thither himself without leave, and for combining with the king of *England* against his native Country. *William Crichton* also his chief Counsellor and Abbettor is proscribed, and his estate confiscated: after this, *Alexander* and *Douglasse* with five hundred English horse fals upon a party of *Scots*,
1484. who defeated them, and took *Douglasse* prisoner; *Alexander* escaped again. The Earle of *Richmond* having got the crown of *England*, makes a progresse to *Newcastle*, whence he sends Ambassadours to *Edinburgh* to conclude a lasting peace, or truce for some years: King *James* returns answer, that the *Scots* being a warlike people, would not hearken to any long peace; yet he would prevaile so far, as to procure a Truce for seven years; which was accordingly effected, and so king *Henry* returns Southward. Not long after, the king lost his Queen at home, and his brother in *France*, which two kept him in some aw; but now they being gone, he returned to his old wayes, in slighting the Nobility, in pillaging of the people, in filling places of trust with new upstarts: Among the rest, was one *John Ramsey*, whom he made steward of his house; this man fearing the Nobility, which was beginning to raise arms, causeth a Proclamation to be made, that none neer the Court should bear arms, except *Ramsey* and his followers; which incensed the Lords so much the more against him; the king in the interim studieth by all means to suppresse the Lords. Therefore one day he openeth his minde to *George* Earl of *Angus*, telling him that he meant suddenly to seise upon, and cut off the chief Lords and heads of this faction: the Earl disswades him from this, as being dishonourable, to cut off treacherously so many great personages, being reconciled to the king, and having the publique-faith; but his better way were to arrest them openly, one after another, that they may in open Court plead for themselves. The king being satisfied with this advice, dismisseth the Earl, who presently acquaints the other Lords with the kings intention: Upon this, they take arms; the king finding his own danger, takes shipping, and gets over to *Fife* side, where he raiseth an army out of the Northern parts: The Lords seise upon the young Prince, whom they make the head of their army: the king, in the interim, sends to the *French* and *English* kings for aide against his rebellious Lords, shewing the like danger may befal themselves; He sends also to Pope *Eugenius* the eighth, that he by his Apostolical authority would command them to obey their king; but the Lords who knew of all these messages, hasten to fight the king before either forreign aide or Ambassadours should come; the

king

King contained himself in *Edinburgh*-Castle, till his Northern forces were come; but upon the perswasions of some, he was content to remove thence to *Sterling* Castle hoping there to be more secure and nearer his forces; but when he came thither, the governour being made by the adverse faction, denied the King entrance, wherefore not knowing whither to flie, and being followed close by the enemy, he was forced to fight with such forces as he then had, which being defeated, and the king having his horse slain under him, fled into a water-mill near *Sterling*, hoping from thence to escape by some ships that lay near the place, but he was pursued so eagerly, that he and such as fled with him thither were slain; this death of the king was adjudged just in the next ensuing Parliament: he died the eight and twentieth year of his reign, and of his age the five and thirthieth. *An. Christi.* 1488.

To *James* the 3. succeeded his son *James* the 4. being fifteen years old; a Parliament is called, at which few were present except those that had a hand in the kings death; the best of the kings ships held out against the new king, *Edinburgh*-Castle is summoned to surrender to the young king which it did, and so likewise did *Sterling*-Castle; many grumbled at the kings death, complaining that things were not thereby bettered, but worsted, for the young king did not command, but was commanded by those who had a hand in his fathers death: mean while the English took occasion by these intestine broiles of *Scotland* to invade the kingdome; the young king labours to reconcile the Sea-men, lest they might cause troubles in his absence, therefore he wins with fair promises *Andrew Wood* an expert Sea-captain, who had the command of two men of Warre, with which he surpriseth five English ships before *Dumbar* and brings them all to *Lieth*; mean while the adverse faction cries out, that the kingdome was abused by a company of traitors, who had murthered one king, and kept the other as a prisoner; withall *Alexander* Lord *Forbes*, chief of that family, carried about the streets of *Aberdene*, and some other chief Towns, the kings bloody shirt, exhorting all good people to take Arms, and to revenge the kings death; *Matthew Stewart* also Earl of *Lenox* endeavoured to raise what forces he could in the Southern parts: in the interim the English were mad that five of their best ships should be thus surprised by two Scots-men of war, therefore they furnish *Steven Bull* with a fleet, promising a great reward if he could bring *Andrew Wood* dead or alive; *Bull* watcheth his opportunity, and sets upon *Woods* fleet furiously, they fought so long till the night parted them; the next morning they fell to it again with such eagernes, that they perceived not the tide fail them, wherefore the English ships being of a greater bulk were forced to yeeld, being stuck on the sand; *Bull* with the other English Sea-captains are brought by *Wood* to the king, who restores both the Captains and Ships to king *Henry* of *England*, who took this very kindly, and returns great thanks to king *James*. 1490.

About this time a strange monster was born in *Scotland*, which beneath the navel was one body, but above two distinct bodies, having different senses, souls and wills; any hurt beneath the navel is equally felt by both bodies above, but if any of the upper members were hurt, one of the bodies onely felt the pain: this monster the king caused to be instructed in Musick and divers languages; one of the bodies died some dayes before the other, which also shortly after pined and consumed away, it lived eight and twenty years. A Parliament is held in *Edinburgh*, there all differences are composed, an Act of oblivion passed, and friendship between the great families confirmed by mutual marriages, so that after great storms follow halcionian dayes: and that the King may testifie to the world, how his father was killed without his consent and knowledge, he wore an iron chain instead of a girdle so long as he lived, to which every year he added a linke or ring. About this time *Warbeck* the counterfeit Duke of *York* comes into *Scotland*, insinuates himself into the Kings favour, obtains in marriage the Earle of *Huntly's* daughter, and an Army against

An. Christi. against *England*, by which all *Northumberland* is wasted and spoiled, and great
booties are carried into *Scotland*; this wrong king *Henry* meant to repay, but
that he was retarded by the Cornish rebellion; after this the Scots invade *Eng-*
land again, but are hindered from doing any great hurt by *Fox* the Bishop of
Durham, and the E. of *Surrey* who enter *Scotland*, & having burned some places,
return home; In the interim an Ambassador comes into *England* from *Ferdinand*
and *Isabella* of *Spain* about the marriage of *Katherine* with Prince *Arthur*; the
same also is sent into *Scotland* to negotiate for a peace with *England*; the Am-
1497. bassador with Bishop *Fox*, could not draw the Scots Commissioners to deliver
up *Warbeck* to King *Henry*, for King *James* did not think it could stand with his
honour to expose to the enemy an humble suppliant who had cast himself
upon his protection, who was of the Royal blood, and affianced to him, having
passed his word and faith to the contrary, yea a truce for some months is
made, that *Warbeck* might in that time shift for himself as King *James* advised
him to do.

Warbeck being gone, a peace is concluded, which was like to break off a-
gain, upon a quarrel between some of the borderers; but upon complaint
made by the *Scots*, satisfaction is promised by king *Henry*. The Bishop of
Durham is sent into *Scotland*, who there adviseth with king *James* about his
1500. marriage with king *Henry's* daughter, which three yeares after was consum-
mated, after which followed peace and plenty for divers years, the Court and
Country began to abound with riot and luxury; the King gave himself to
building of stately houses, monasteries, and great ships, one whereof was said
to exceed any that had been built before: *Francis* the French king, and *Henry*
the 8. of *England* strove to exceed this ship in greatnesse, but both their ships
proved unserviceable. The king having exhausted his coffers upon these
needlesse expences, is advised by *Elphinston* Bishop of *Aberden*, to make the
Gentry compound for their Wardships, and such also as had sold half of their
lands without their Lords consent. This and some other wayes proposed be-
ing distastefull to the Gentry, the King resolves (partly to lessen his charges
at home, and partly to make satisfaction for taking arms against his father)
to make a journy into *Syria*: for this purpose a Fleet is made ready, a great
many bind themselves by vow to wait thither on the king, who had acquaint-
ed the neighbouring Princes with his resolution.

Mean while a war was breaking out between *France* and *England*: For,
Pope *Julius*, *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, *Maximilian* the Emperor, the *Venetians* and
Switzers, with the *English*, were entring into a league against *France*, the affairs
of which had lately succeeded well in *Italy*. King *James* was not willing to
side with either party, yet was earnestly importuned by the French faction,
who to pick a quarrel with king *Henry*, sends the Bishop of *Murrey* to demand
a great sum of money due to his Queen by legacie from Prince *Arthur*. King
Henry knowing this message was a preparative for a breach, returns this an-
swer, That not only this debt, but whatsoever else is due to king *James*, shall
be truly satisfied: upon this he resolves not to invade *England*, yet to help
France, therefore sends his fleet thither which he had lately built, of which
James Hamilton Earl of *Arran* is made Admiral; but he in stead of going into
France, goeth into *Ireland*, and takes *Knockfergus*, which he burned, and so
returns home.

In the mean time letters from *France* come to the king, complaining he was
not so good as his word, and that the promised ships were not come; whereat
the king was so displeased, that he sends *Archibald Douglasse* Earle of *Angus* to
take *Hamiltons* Commission from him, and to succeed in the Admiralty; but
he understanding the Kings mind beforehand, hoised anchor and was gone to
sea, where his fleet by storms is torn and shattered, and the great ship is made
unserviceable and left in *Britany*. Besides some private quarrels fell out among
the borderers, about killing of Sir *Robert Car* king *James* his favourite, by three

English-

English-men, and the taking of some Scots ships by the English, without making satisfaction, occasioned a breach between the two kingdoms: The English borderers began to drive booties out of the Scots ground, where *Alexander Hume* Governour of the three Scotish Marches, with three thousand horse enters *England*, and plunders the seven next villages before any help could come; the booty was carried safe into *Scotland*, but *Alexander* with some part of his forces staid behind, and were set upon by three hundred English which lay in ambush, divers of the Scots were killed, and two hundred taken prisoners. In the mean time the King calls a Parliament, to advise about making war against *England*; the wiser part were against it, but the French Ambassador and his faction mainly for it; the King inclines to the French party, and so open war is proclaimed both by sea and land against *England*; a Herald is sent to King *Henry* then before *Tournay*, to denounce war against him, for the wrongs done by the English without satisfaction, as also for molesting *Lewis* the French king his ancient friend, and *Charles* Duke of *Gelders* his kinsman. King *Henry* returns answer, That he heard no more then what he expected from a King who kept covenant neither with God nor man; His threatenings should not make him give off his enterprise, nor should he care to lose his friendship, who was so inconstant in his affections. *An. Christi.*

Mean while, whilst the King was at Divine service in his Chappel, an ancient man of a venerable aspect, with long haire, a long garment, and a linnen-girdle, came bare-headed to the king, and leaning on his chair told him, That if he proceeded in that war, he and his Army should repent it; and with that vanished away, nor could he ever after be found, though diligent search was made for him. But the King notwithstanding marcheth on with his Army, and entring *England* takes divers Castles and overthrowes them, *Northumberland* is pillaged; he was advised to besiege *Barwick*, which then might have been easily taken, but he slighted that opportunity. In the interim Heralds come from the English, to know of King *James* what day and place he would appoint for a battel: the King was advised by his friends to return home with his Army, rather then to venture himself with so few (for many of his forces had forsaken him) against so numerous an Army of English, which was increased by six thousand old souldiers sent thither out of *France*; and if he will fight, he were best fight upon his own ground, where he will find more provision and advantages then in the enemies country. When the day appointed for the fight came, the English appeared not; wherefore the King is desired again to retreat home, for the enemies policie was by delayes to increase their own Army, whilst the Scots did daily diminish; and that it was no more shame for him to retreat, then for the English to fail of the day appointed: but the King was so obstinately bent on a battel, that he told his Lords, if there were an hundred thousand English, he would fight them. This rash answer did much displease the Lords, chiefly *Douglasse* Earl of *Angus*, who told him that he had done sufficiently for the French king, to divert a great part of the English Army from *France* hither; and that it was unreasonable, why to please the French Ambassador, he should expose himself and his handfull of men to six and twenty thousand expert English souldiers: The king bid the old Earl go home, if he was afraid; who answered, That his former actions in defence of his Country shew how little afraid he was, but now being aged and weak he was content to take his ease, yet was willing to leave his two sons behind as pledges of the love he bore his Country; and so departed.

The *Scots* now are resolved to fight, and by reason of their paucity take the advantage of the ground; which the *English* perceiving, to draw them upon even ground, make shew as if they were resolved by the way of *Barwick* to enter *Scotland*, which the *Scots* fearing left their advantage, and so the Armies encounter: *Alexander Gordon* who commanded the *Scots* right-wing, defeated the *English* left-wing; but the *Scots* other wing, in which were *Lenox*

An. Christi. and *Argile*, was utterly routed by the Engliſh; the body of the Scots Army where the king was fought ſtoutly, till night parted both Armies; great ſlaughter on both ſides; of the Scots were loſt above five thouſand, of the Engliſh about the ſame number, but theſe were of the meaner ſort, the moſt of the Scots that were ſlain were Gentlemen, this battel was fought neer the
1513. hill *Fluddon*: what became of king *James* is uncertain; ſome think he was killed there, others, that he eſcaped, and afterwards was murthered by the *Humes*; but whatever became of him, he was a brave Prince, had he not been too head-ſtrong, who for his zeale in the Chriſtian Religion was ſtiled by the Pope, *Protector of the Faith.*

Chap. XXIX.

The Scottiſh *Hiſtory under King* James *the fifth, and his young Daughter Queen* Mary, *from the year* 1513. *till* 1544.

KIng *James* the fourth left his Queen *Margaret*, and two ſons behind him; the elder was two years old, whom the Parliament at *Sterling* declares King; *Hume* is made governour of all that part of the kingdome on this ſide *Forth*, *Gordon* Earl of *Huntley* of all beyond. The Queen is Regent, for ſo King *James* had ordered it in his laſt Will, which he had made before he went to battell; This dignity ſhe was to enjoy ſo long as ſhe continued unmarried, which was not long, for within few moneths ſhe married with *Archibald Douglaſſe* Earl of *Angus*, a Youth endowed with all the parts of fortune and nature. A great part of the Nobility being ſlain, the Clergy began to rule in Parliament. *Stewart* Archbiſhop of St. *Andrews* being killed at *Fludon*, three fell in competition for that place, one named *Douglaſſe*, who was choſen by the Queen, being of her husbands family; the other was *Hepburn* Abbot of St. *Andrews*, whom the Monks (as they were wont) elected for Archbiſhop; the third was *Forman* Biſhop of *Murry*, on whom alſo *Lewis* the eleventh of *France* beſtowed the Archbiſhoprick of *Biturix*; beſides, the Pope conferred on him the Archbiſhoprick of St. *Andrews*, with the two rich Abbies of *Dumfermling* and *Aberbroth*, and made him alſo *Legatus à latere*. *Alexander Hume* upon promiſe of the Abby of *Coldingam* to his youngeſt brother, cauſeth the Popes Bull for electing of *Forman* to be proclaimed in *Edinburgh*, which occaſioned much miſchief, for *Hepburn* ſought by all means to be revenged on the *Humes* for this.

The Queen perceiving the diſtractions of *Scotland*, wrote to her brother of *England*, to forbear making war againſt her and her children, who were ſufficiently troubled already with domeſtick broils; who returns this anſwer, That he will not quarrel with the *Scots*, if they quarrel not with him. And now the Queen by her marriage having loſt the Regency, the kingdome is divided into two factions: the *Douglaſſes* would have the Queen continued, pretending that would be a means to keep peace with *England*; but the *Humes* would have another elected, becauſe the times were troubleſome; The Queen had loſt her Regency, and it was not the cuſtome of *Scotland* to be ruled by women; at laſt after much debate, *John* Duke of *Albany* being then in *France*, is choſen by moſt ſuffrages, he was the ſon of *Alexander* brother to king *James* 3. *Francis* the *French* king was glad of this election, for he knew it would be for his advantage; therefore he furniſheth him with men and money for his journey: In the interim, for want of one head, the kingdome is much vexed with highway men. *Forman* fearing leſt *Hepburn* would croſſe him in his title to the Archbiſhoprick, remits all the profit he made of it, during the vacancy; beſides, he

he reſignes to him the Biſhoprick of *Murry*, and promiſeth to allow him a large yearly penſion out of the Church-revenues. *An. Chriſti.*

The Duke of *Albany* upon his arrival into *Scotland*, is declared Earl of *March* and Vice-roy during the kings minority: King *James* 4. his baſtard ſon is made Earl of *Murry*: *Hepburn* inſinuates himſelf into the Viceroys affections, and diſcovers to him the humors, greatneſſe, and factions of the *Scots* Nobility; he acquaints him being a ſtranger in *Scotland*, with the qualities of each family, chiefly of the *Douglaſſes* and *Humes*, which he hated; therefore wiſheth the Viceroy to ſend for French forces, to ſuppreſſe in time the growing factions of theſe great families. *Hume* perceiving which way the game was like to go, and that *Hepburn* had accuſed him to the Viceroy, as if he had murthered king *James*; repairs to the Queen, and makes her believe that the Viceroy intended to murther the young king, that he being next in blood might transfer the Crown to himſelf: therefore how dangerous and unreaſonable it was, that a ſtranger, and the ſon of him who would have murthered his brother the king, and hath therefore lived ſtill ſince in exile, ſhould have the cuſtody of the young King; he wiſheth her therefore to flie into *England* with her ſon, and caſt her ſelf upon her brothers protection. This comming to the Regents ears, he preſently ſeiſeth on *Sterling* Caſtle, where the Queen was, and removes her with the *Douglaſſes* from the king, whoſe tuition he committed to three of the Nobility, whom he moſt truſted, with a ſufficient guard. The *Humes* upon this flie into *England*, and ſo doth the Queen ſhortly after with her husband *Douglaſſe*; whom king *Henry* ordered to ſtay in *Northumberland*, till his further pleaſure was known. The Regent troubled at their departure, ſends Ambaſſadours to king *Henry*, to aſſure him, that neither the Queen nor her followers had reaſon to leave their country, but their cauſeleſſe jealouſies; he alſo deals ſo with the *Douglaſſes* and *Humes* with large promiſes, that he perſwaded them to return home: the Queen was fain to ſtay, becauſe of her great belly; for ſhortly after, ſhe was delivered of a daughter *Margaret*: When ſhe was fit to travel, king *Henry* ſends for her. 1515.

The Regent baniſheth the Earl of *Angus* his Uncle, with ſome other prime men; and ſummons *Alexander Hume* to appear in Parliament, which he refuſing to doe, is condemned, and his eſtate confiſcated: Upon this, he ſuffers or countenances the highway-men to doe much miſchief; for ſuppreſſing of whom, and taking of *Hume*, ten thouſand horſe and foot are raiſed; but before they come, he ſubmits himſelf to the Regent, who ſends him to *Edinburgh*, and confines him to the Earl of *Arrans* houſe his ſiſters husband; *Hume* perſwades *Arran* to undertake the government himſelf, being the ſiſters ſon of king *James* 3. and fitter to be Regent then a ſtranger, and a baniſhed man: Upon this, they go away; the Regent preſently takes *Hamilton* Caſtle upon ſurrender; *Hume* deſtroys with fire and ſword a great part of the town of *Dunbar*: To theſe, the next ſpring, was added *John Stewart* Earl of *Lennox*; theſe ſeiſe upon *Glaſcow* Caſtle, which upon the comming of the Regent they forſook, and afterward all of them are pardoned and received into the Regents favour, but not long after, upon new ſuſpitions, are condemned and beheaded; they were accuſed of the kings death, and of treachery in *Floden* battel; but *Hepburn* the Abbot was their cheif perſecutor, ever ſince they croſſed him in the Biſhoprick of St. *Andrews*. *Alexander* had three other brothers, two of whom were baniſhed, and the third was murthred by *James Hepburn*. 1516.

The *December* following, the Regent brings the king from *Sterling* to *Edinburgh*, where having obtained leave of the Nobility, he takes ſhipping for *France*: The charge of the government lyeth upon the Earls of *Huntley*, *Angus*, *Arran*, and *Argile*, with the two Arch-biſhops of St. *Andrews* and *Glaſcow*: The Queen about a year after her departure, returns into *Scotland*, where new troubles ariſe upon the killing of the Governour of *Dunbar* by *David Hume*, whereupon the Vice-roy is ſent for: quarrels alſo ariſe between the 1517.

An. Christi. Earl of *Angus* and the *Kars*. A Parliament is called at *Edinburgh*, where
1520. complaint is made againſt the greatneſſe of *Angus*, who falling foule with the *Hamiltons* in the ſtreets of *Edinburgh*, a great ſlaughter was made, ſo that about ſeventy two were killed; among the reſt, *Arrans* brother, and *Eglentons* ſon: The *Hamiltons* to be revenged on the *Douglaſſes*, beſieged one of their Caſtles, but to no purpoſe. The next year, *Douglaſſe* with the two baniſhed *Humes*, enter *Edinburgh*, and take down the heads of *Alexander* and *William Humes*, which had been ſet up all this while on an eminent place of the City. So the whole five years of the Regents abſence, was filled with ſlaughter and rapine: When he was come, he intended to weaken the power of the
1521. *Douglaſſes*; therefore baniſheth the Earl of *Angus* into *France*, his Uncle the Biſhop of *Dunkell* he ſends to the Pope, to be puniſhed by him, but by the way he died of the plague in *London*.

The next year after the Regents return, a Parliament is held at *Edinburgh*, and an Army raiſed, which is ſent into *Annandel*, with an intent to invade *England*: When they were come within three miles of *England*, *Gordon* Earl of *Huntley* diſſwaded the Nobility from entring, pretending it was unſafe to provoke a forreign enemy, when they had ſo many enemies at home; but this was indeed to croſſe the Regents deſign, who to pleaſe the *French*, intended to invade *England*. The Regent to ſave his credit, had a party with *Muſgrave* and ſome other Engliſh, in which a Truce was agreed on: The Regent ſhortly after goeth over into *France*, where he ſtayed ſome moneths longer then he expected, becauſe the Engliſh fleet lay in wait for him: Therefore he ſends five hundred *French* ſouldiers before with a fleet, which falling upon the Engliſh neer the Iſle of *Man* beat them. In the interim, *Howard* Earl of *Surry* is ſent with an Army of ten thouſand mercinaries, beſides others, into *Scotland*, where having no reſſiſtance by reaſon of the Regents abſence, and the domeſtick diſtractions, they waſte *Marcia* and *Teviot*; upon his return, the *Scots* borderers plunder *Northumberland*, ſo that *Howard* is forced to come back again; who with much loſſe to his own party, took *Jadburg*. About which time, five hundred Engliſh horſe being ſuddenly affrighted in the dark, broke their halters, and run away as if mad, at laſt they became a prey to the *Scots*; three dayes after the Engliſh Army disbanded. The Regent perceiving that the Engliſh fleet lay ſtill in wait for him, gave out that he would not remove from *France* till the next ſpring: Whereupon the Engliſh fleet returned home; but as ſoon as they were gone, the Regent claps three thouſand French foot beſides one hundred courtiſiers in fifty ſhips, and arrives ſafely in *Scotland*.

King *Henry* of *England* at this time did much court the *Scots* for an Union, alledging divers reaſons why their union with *England* would be more advantagious then with *France*, in reſpect of vicinity, identity of language, ſoile, aire, conditions, countenances and habit of bodies: ſhewing alſo that the marriage of his daughter *Mary* with king *James*, would make a perfect Union, and much increaſe the happineſſe of *Scotland*. Notwithſtanding all this, the *French* faction being bribed, carried it againſt king *Henry*; for they alledged that this was not the firſt time the Engliſh deluded them under ſhews of friendſhip and union: *Edward* the firſt, againſt his oath, by which he was bound to end the controverſie between the two kings, *Bruce* and *Balliol*, he increaſed it, by making *Balliol* king; *Edward* the fourth alſo pretended to marry his daughter *Cicil* to king *James* the third's ſon, but when it came to the upſhot, upon ſome diviſions in *Scotland*, he fell off; therefore king *Henryes* aime was not to inrich, but to impoveriſh and enſlave *Scotland*, being deſtitute of all forreign aide: they deny alſo that greater benefit can accrue to *Scotland* by their union with *England*, or more ſecurity, then with *France*: Therefore they adviſe them not to exchange without a cauſe, their old truſty friends, for new and ſlipery pretenders. The news alſo of the Regents being landed with forreign forces, confirmed the *French*, and cooled the Engliſh faction.

The

The Regent having made his Rendezvous at *Glaſco*, and from thence being come to *Edinburgh*, he aſſembleth the Lords, highly commending their conſtancie to the French, and the old league, and exhorting them to unity: then having refreſhed his Army, and united the Scots forces with the French, he marcheth into *England* with the French, but the Scots would not follow, knowing this expedition was onely to gratifie the French king; the Regent with his French beſieged *Werk*-Caſtle, and battered down the outward wall with their ordnance, but they were beaten off again; the Regent ſeeing no good could be done by the French, and that the Scots would not fight, hearing alſo of an Army of forty thouſand Engliſh comming againſt him, returning home, the ſnow having done much hurt both to his men and horſe, which made the Engliſh alſo return without action: the next Spring the Viceroy prepares again for *France*, deſiring the Lords to keep the King at *Sterling*, and to make a peace with *England* before his return; but in his abſence all growing out of order, the young king by divers of the Lords is conveyed to *Edinburgh*; where at *Holy-Roods* he undertook the government himſelf, and all took the oath of allegiance to him, moſt officers of State were changed for a while, he rode in ſtate to the Parliament; ſhortly after the Biſhops of S. *Andrews* and *Aberdene* for diſliking this change are impriſoned, who to be revenged, curſe all within their juriſdiction with bell, book and candle, but all are reconciled again within a moneth; *Archibald Douglaſſe* who was baniſhed into *France*, returns home through *England*, and is kindly uſed by king *Henry*, purpoſely to croſſe the Regent; *Lenox* and *Argile* who were out of publike employment, are glad of his comming; but the Queen whoſe affections were alienated from him, and *Arran*, which two ruled all, were much troubled at it, ſo was alſo *Hamilton* who feared his greatneſs, theſe with the King kept themſelves in *Edinburgh*-Caſtle; but the adverſe faction of Lords choſe *Douglaſſe*, *Lenox* and *Argile*, protectors of the King and kingdome, theſe preſently ſeiſe upon *Sterling*, and thence without oppoſition enter *Edinburgh*, the Caſtle being unprovided then for a ſiege is yeelded up to them, out of which all are diſmiſſed except the king; theſe *Triumviri* were to rule four moñths by turn, but this government laſted not long, for under the *Douglaſſes* ſuch corruptions and diſorders crept both into the Church and State, that the other two fell off, and the king grew weary. *An. Chriſti.*

Whilſt *Douglaſſe* waited on the king into *Teviot*, there to ſuppreſſe the Bandito's or high-way men, who having ſummoned the chief of each family injoyned them to find out and apprehend theſe robbers, which they did accordingly, and many of them were put to death: I ſay, at this time a plot was laid by *Lenox* and the other *Stewarts* to get away the king from the *Douglaſſes*, which becauſe they could not effect by ſecret plots, they reſolved by open hoſtility to get him away, therefore on a ſudden news are brought that the *Stewarts* were in Arms, the *Douglaſſes* with their friends in a great tumult flie alſo to their Arms, a hot skirmiſh followed in which the *Stewarts* were worſted, the king all the while ſtood as a ſpectator: after this the *Douglaſſes* to ſtrengthen their faction, procured the *Hamiltons* (who had been a great while kept from the Court) to enter into league with them; the *Stewarts* on the other ſide, got divers Lords and Biſhops to joyn with them, and in the kings name to call a Parliament at *Sterling*, and to ſet upon the Hamiltonian forces, before they joyned with the Douglaſſes; *Lenox* with his party being too haſty, fell upon the Hamiltonians having the advantage of the ground, by whom they are defeated, and *Lenox* to the kings great grief was ſlain; the Douglaſſians were haſting with their forces, and the king from *Edinburgh*; but the king faining himſelf to be ill-diſpoſed, came ſo ſlowly, that *George Douglaſſe* ſuſpecting he did this purpoſely to retard them from joyning with *Hamilton*, told him, Sir, rather then the enemy ſhall take you from us, we will cut you in two peeces, and reſerve the one half for our ſelves: this ſpeech made ſo deep an impreſſion 1526.

An. Christi. impreſſion on the young king, that he could never after be reconciled to him, though he was to others.

The work being done before the *Douglaſſians* came, inquiſition by them is made of thoſe prime men that took up arms againſt the king, among the reſt the Earl of *Caſſels* is ſummoned to appeare, his kinſman *Kennedy* appeared for him, ſhewing that the Earle fought not againſt, but for the king, and by his command, and with that he produced the Kings letters. *James Hamilton* the Baſtard was ſo mad at *Kennedy*, that not long after he cauſed him to be murthered: *Douglaſſe* takes the murthered Earls ſon into his protection, and beſtowes his daughter on him; he alſo plunders Archbiſhop *Betons* Caſtle, for his complying with *Lenox*. *Beton*, that he might not fall into *Douglaſſe* his hands, was glad to hide himſelf, and ſo was the Queen, who both feared and hated her husband. Shortly after, one of *James Stewarts* Grooms, being grieved for the death of his maſter, ſtabs *Hamilton* the Baſtard in ſixe ſeveral places of his body, in revenge of his maſters death: This fellow, though pinched all over with burning irons, ſhewed no manner of grief either in word or geſture. Not long after this, the King in the night-time, accompanied with a few horſe, made an eſcape out of *Falkland*, and came to *Sterling*, where being now out of the power of the *Douglaſſes*, he ſends for the Lords, who counſel him to remove the *Douglaſſians* from all government, and that neither they, nor any of their friends, kindred or ſervants come within twelve miles of the Court upon pain of death: this kept off the Earl and his brother *George* from comming; a Parliament is called at *Edinburgh*, out of which the Douglaſſian faction removes, when they heard the King was coming with an Army: the Earle of *Angus* is ordered to be baniſhed beyond the *Spey*, his brother *George* and *Archibald* his uncle are to be impriſoned in *Edinburgh*-caſtle; but they refuſed to obey this Order, therefore they are ſummoned to appear in Parliament, in the interim the Chancellorſhip and Treaſurerſhip are taken from them: but when the King was gone, they thought by the aid of their friends to take poſſeſſion of *Edinburgh*, and to hinder the meeting of the Parliament; but the City was ſo well guarded, they could do no good; upon this, *Douglaſſe* goeth to his Caſtle of *Tantallon*, fourteen miles from the town.

In this Parliament the *Douglaſſes* are proſcribed, and their eſtates confiſcated; whereupon they flie out into open hoſtolity, and let looſe the reins to all high-way-men, ſo that much miſchief and robberies are committed. The king beſiegeth *Tantallon*-caſtle, but could do no good on it: *Argile* is imployed by the king to ſuppreſſe the Bandito's: the *Douglaſſes* being forſaken by the *Hamiltons*, flie into *England*. King *Henry* of *England* preparing to make war againſt *Charles* the Emperor, ſends to make a peace with *Scotland*, and to have the *Douglaſſes* reſtored: king *James* would not heare any thing of reſtoring *Douglaſſe*, and ſo the peace could not be concluded, only a truce is made for five years; in the mean while *Tantallon*-caſtle is delivered by *Douglaſſe* to the king. The next year, the king makes *James* Earl of *Murrey* Viceroy, whom he ſends to the borders to meet the Earl of *Northumberland*, concerning the peace, and reparation for wrongs, but nothing was concluded: The king ſends the Earl *Bothwell* and ſome other Lords into *Edinburgh*-caſtle, upon information given, that they were underhand raiſing war againſt *England*; then he goeth in perſon with eight thouſand men to ſuppreſſe the rebellious borderers, whoſe Chief *Maxwell* with divers others he cauſed to be apprehended and hanged, at which the Engliſh were glad, for he had done them much miſchief: ſhortly after this, the king releaſeth the impriſoned Lords out of the Caſtle.

1531. About this time, one *John Scot* a mean man in *Edinburgh*, grew famous with Faſting; for when he pleaſed, he could abſtain thirty, or forty, or fifty dayes together without meat or drink: Experiments of this he gave both to king *Iames* in *Scotland*, to the Pope at *Rome*, to the *Venetians*, to the *Engliſh* in *London*, where

where he was impriſoned for preaching at *Pauls*-Croſſe againſt king *Henry*'s divorce, and falling off from the Church of *Rome:* when he was asked by what means he faſted ſo, he ſtill anſwered, By the help of the Virgin *Mary*. The Duke of *Albany* obtained of the Pope, that the Clergy ſhould out of their revenues allow an yearly ſalary for Judges to end controverſies between man and man about bargains or pecuniary matters: *Dumbar* Biſhop of *Aberdene* in this point appeals to the Pope, and then at *Edinburgh* was ſet up the Colledge of Juſtice: the king to pleaſe the Pope, makes ſtrict inquiſition againſt the Lutherans, in recompence of which, the Pope beſtows on him all the Tithes for three years. This year the Engliſh having entred into a league with *France* againſt *Cæſar*, are willing to pick a quarrel with *Scotland*; therefore upon ſome ſmall pretences they invade the Scots borders, and did at firſt much harm, till they were beat out, and then they were contented by mediation of the French to imbrace a peace; *David Beton* is ſent into *France* to complain that the old league with *Scotland* was neglected; an Ambaſſador is ſent from *France* to compoſe the differences between the Scots and Engliſh; *Cæſar* ſends an Ambaſſador from *Toledo* by the way of *Ireland* into *Scotland*, to draw the Scots into a league with him againſt *England* and *France*, complaining of the wrongs done to his Aunt *Katherine* by King *Henry*; then a match is propoſed either with *Mary* of *Hungary*, or *Mary* of *Portugal*, or *Mary* of *England*; but King *James* inclined rather to the king of *Denmarks* daughter by *Iſabel* ſiſter to *Charles Cæſar*. About this ſome time was required for deliberation.

An. Chriſti.

1532.

1534.

Things being ſetled at home, the King reſolves to ſail about *Scotland*, for reducing the Iſlanders to obedience; firſt he ſails to the *Orcades*, which he ſetleth, and puts garriſons both in the Kings and in the Biſhops Caſtles; then he ſettles the other Iſlands, and ſends away their chief diſturbers to *Edinburgh* and *Dumbar*-Caſtles; the Lutherans are ſeverely enquired after, and ſome burnt: the Earl of *Murry*, and the Biſhop of *Aberdene*, are ſent into *France* about a wife for the king, to whom king *Henry* of *England* ſends by one of his Biſhops a book containing the Articles of the Reformed Religion, which king *James* upon perſwaſion of his Clergy rejected as heretical: then king *Henry* ſends to deſire king *James* to give him a meeting about ſetling of both kingdomes in one; which was by marrying king *Henries* daughter, whereby king *James* after king *Henries* death ſhould be heire of both, in aſſurance of which, king *Henry* proffers to make him Duke of *Yorke*, and his Deputy or Viceroy of *England*: king *James* intended to give king *Henry* a meeting, but was at laſt diſſwaded from it by the *Hamiltons*, who being next heirs to the Crown, would not have the king marry at all; by the Biſhops alſo, who pretended that king *Henry* meant to have the Religion of *Scotland* altered; they alleadged the danger that might befall the king if he ſhould truſt his perſon in *England*, whereas king *James* the firſt, *Malcolme* the firſt, and his brother *William* kings of *Scotland*, were drawn into *England* upon great promiſes, and then forced to aſſent and act ſuch things as ſtood not with the honour and ſafety of their kingdome.

With theſe reaſons, and with promiſes of great ſums of money, king *James* his minde was changed, and ſo king *Henry* was angred, which occaſioned new quarrels. King *James* being impatient of cælibate, and finding that his Ambaſſadors in *France* trifled away their time; reſolves to go thither in perſon, but without the knowledge of his Lords; the firſt time he ſet to ſea he was forced back by ſtorms, the next time he landed in *Deep*, being accompanied with many of his Lords, who ſuddenly comming to *Paris* before king *Francis* knew of his arrival, was moſt courteouſly entertained, and a match preſently concluded between him and *Magdalen* the French kings daughter; after much joy and ſolemnity they both ſailed into *Scotland*, but not long after ſhe fell into an hectick feaver and died, to the great grief of all except the Prieſts,

1537.

who

An. Christi. who feared ſhe would incline the King to Proteſtaniſme, for ſhe had been bred by her Aunt the Queen of *Navar*; after her death, Ambaſſadors are ſent to marry *Mary* of the houſe of *Guiſe*, and widow to the Duke of *Longevil*: *Bothwel* for ſuſpected treaſon is baniſhed out of *Scotland*, *England* and *France*: the Lord *Forbes* is beheaded, being accuſed by one *Straughen* of treaſon, and perſecuted by *Huntlies* faction: the Earl of *Angus* his ſiſter was burned for conſpiring with ſome others to poyſon the king; her husband thinking by a rope to eſcape out of *Edinburgh*-Caſtle, fell and ſo bruiſed himſelf that he died preſently; the next year *Mary* of *Guiſe* is with great ſolemnity married at St. *Andrews* by the Archbiſhop to King *James*. Many Proteſtants that year ſuffe-
1539. red either death or baniſhment: *George Buchanan* eſcaped out of priſon: The Queen this year was brought to bed of a ſon, and the next year of another. King *Henry* ſends again to have King *James* give him a meeting at *Yorke*, which he refuſed upon the diſſwaſions of his Clergy. *James Hamilton* for treaſon is beheaded, and his limbs ſet up in four ſeveral places of *Edinburgh*; not long after, the King dreamed that this *Hamiltons* ghoſt appeared to him in a ghaſtly manner, brandiſhing his ſword againſt him, with which he cut off his right hand, and then his left; the king being awakened, and thinking much of the meaning of this dream, news is brought him that both his ſons were dead about the ſame time, the one at St. *Andrews*, and the other at *Sterling*.

Not long after this, the two kings quarrel, the borderers are waſted on both ſides; at laſt Armies are raiſed, the Scots Army mutined becauſe the king had by his letters named one *Oliver Sinclar* for their General, and ſo in a confuſed manner were marching home, which the Engliſh perceiving, they ſet upon them with their whole Army, and routed them; the news of this overthrow ſo vexed the king, that ſhortly after he ſickned and died, having left one daughter heir to the Crown five dayes old, he was entombed in the Abbey-Church of *Holy-Roods*, near his firſt wife *Magdalen*. The loſſe of the Army, and the kings ſudden death, put the Scots into a great deal of anxiety; the *Hamiltons* were now in hope to obtain the Crown, at leaſt during the nonage of the childe *Mary*: the Scots priſoners at *London* are for two dayes ſhut up in the Tower, and from thence being brought in ſolemnity through the ſtreets to the king, were checked by the Chancellor for breaking the peace, and then were diſperſed into ſome private houſes; but when news came that king *James* was dead, having left one daughter, the priſoners are ſent for to the Court
1543. and kindly uſed by the king, who having tried how they were inclined to a match between his ſon and their young Queen, he ſends them home into *Scotland*, the two *Douglaſſes* return with them after fifteen years baniſhment: The Cardinal of St. *Andrews* got himſelf to be made Viceroy before they came, but as ſoon as they were come he was thruſt out, and *James Hamilton* Earl of *Arran* is named Viceroy.

The next *March* a Parliament was called, whither Sir *Ralph Sadler* is ſent Ambaſſador from king *Henry* to conclude a peace, and to make up the match, his propoſal was much oppoſed by the Queen, Cardinal and Clergy; the Cardinal is confined, and great hopes appear of a full union, ſo that the Merchants begin again to traffique freely; but the Cardinal (being ſet at liberty) with his Clergy and the Queen, ſtrive what they can to hinder any union with *England*, therefore they cauſe affronts to be put upon the Engliſh Ambaſſador, and withall the hoſtages which were promiſed upon the ſetting of the Scots Lords free in *England*, were denied, for they feared this union would be prejudicial to *France*, and that it would bring in with it an alteration in Religion: Sir *Ralph* complains of the affronts, to whom the Regent promiſeth reparation, but ſhews it was not in his power to deliver any hoſtages: the Earl of *Caſſils* alone profeſſed openly, that he would return to *England*, and there remain a perpetual priſoner, rather then his two brothers which were his

hoſtages

hoſtages ſhould ſuffer for him, and ſo he went ſtreight to *London*; the King highly commending his reſolution, ſets both his brothers at liberty, and ſends him alſo back again with ſome rich preſents. Mean while King *Henry* ſtayes all the Scots ſhips that were within his harbours, threatning war and deſtruction againſt thoſe who had broke the peace, and violated the Laws of Nations: but the Queen and Cardinals faction ſends to the French king, that he ſhould now or never hinder the Scots union with *England*, and to that purpoſe ſhould ſend home *Matthew Stewart* Earl of *Lenox*, who was the *Hamiltons* great enemy, to ſuppreſſe them and their claim which they laid to the Crown, he being next heir by King *James* his laſt Will; they promiſe alſo to marry him to the widow Queen, and to make him heire to *James Hamilton* lately dead, for the Regent was a baſtard; beſides the French king promiſed his aſſiſtance to *Lenox*, if he would go home. *An. Chriſti.*

The young credulous Earle upon theſe great proffers and promiſes goeth for *Scotland*, where having ſaluted the Regent, he repairs to the Cardinal, to whom he ſhews the cauſes of this his journey; his friends to the number of four thouſand accompany him to the Queen: *Hamilton* to avoid blood, propoſeth ſome Articles for peace, to wit, that the Queen ſhould be tranſported into *Sterling*, and that ſhe ſhould be educated by four of the Nobility which were of neither faction; hereupon ſhe was crowned at *Sterling*: the Regent finding himſelf too weak for the other faction, in the Gray-Friars at *Sterling* in the preſence of the Queen-mother, and chief Lords of the Court, recanted his opinion concerning the controverted points of Religion, and totally ſubmitted himſelf to the Cardinal, who was Regent in effect, the other onely in name; thus the Queen-mother and Cardinal having got the Regent to be at their beck, ſtrive underhand to get *Lenox* out of the way, by writing to the French king, and deſiring him to call back *Lenox* again, for he had done what they deſired in diminiſhing the Regents power, but they were afraid leſt his greatneſſe may cauſe ſome faction; in the interim the Queen-mother bare him in hand that ſhe would marry him, and entertained him at Court with feaſting, masking and dancing; the Earl of *Bothwel* whom King *James* the 5. baniſhed, is now returned, and was a great ſervant alſo to the Queen-mother, which bred emulation in *Lenox*, yet he at laſt got *Bothwel* to forſake the Court; but when he perceived that the Queen and Cardinal did put him off with long delayes, and that they went about to delude him, he grew angry, and with intent of revenge went to *Dumbritton*, where he receiveth from the French king a great ſumme of money which he was to employ by the advice of the Queen and Cardinal, but he diſtributed a great part of this money among his friends, and ſome he ſent to the Queen; the Cardinal finding that no ſhare thereof came to him, in anger complies with the Regent, and wiſheth him to ſend ſpeedily an Army to *Glaſcow* which might unawares ſeiſe upon *Lenox* and the money alſo; but *Lenox* underſtanding of this plot, raiſeth preſently ſeven thouſand Voluntiers, and with them he marcheth to *Leith*, and ſends to the Cardinal that he was come to prevent his journey to *Glaſcow*, and withall to fight his forces; the Cardinal puts him off from day to day with promiſes of a fight, but when *Lenox* ſaw that he loſt time, that his Voluntiers were beginning to hold correſpondence with the Enemy, and that he was not provided to make a ſiege, makes his peace with the Regent.

Shortly after *Lenox* underſtanding that a plot was laid againſt him, he retired to *Glaſcow*, where he fortifies and victuals the Biſhops Caſtle; thence he goeth to *Dumbritton*, where he underſtands that the *Douglaſſes* and *Hamiltons* were reconciled, and that King *Francis* affection was alienated from him upon the calumnies of his enemies; in the interim the Earl of *Angus*, and *Robert Maxwel* came to *Glaſcow*, to take up the differences between the Regent and *Lenox*; mean while King *Henry* of *England* ſends his fleet which was intended for *France*, againſt *Leith* and *Edinburgh*, which had ſlighted his proffers, and affronted

An. Christi. affronted his Ambaſſador; ten thouſand men being landed they quickly ſeiſe on the Town, moſt of the Merchants being gone elſewhere; here they ſtayed three dayes till their Artillery was landed, with which they battered the walls of *Edinburgh* which they took and plundered, and having ſet fire on ſome houſes, they marched up and down that Country, waſting divers Gentlemens houſes and villages; and ſo having done what ſpoil they could, return to their ſhips; *Lenox* in the mean time ſends a meſſenger with letters to King *Francis* clearing his own innocencie, and accuſing his enemies of falſe calumnies againſt him; but the King was ſo prepoſſeſſed by the Queen-mother, and the *Guiſian* faction, that he would not admit the meſſenger into his preſence; *Lenox* being much perplexed that he was thus abuſed by the Queen and Cardinal, and ſlighted by the French king, who had employed him on a deſperate ſervice, and then forſook him, underſtanding alſo that the Regent was come into *Glaſcow* with an Army, and after ten dayes ſiege had taken the Caſtle, reſolves now to comply with the King of *England*; and having received ſome encouragements thereto, intends firſt to be revenged on the *Hamiltons*, therefore with eight hundred Townſmen of *Glaſcow* and others, he encounters the *Hamilton* forces which were far more numerous; in the firſt encounter he beat off the enemy from their Ordnance, but freſh ſupplies comming to the *Hamiltons* got them that victory, about three hundred were killed on both ſides: *Glaſcow* is plundered, and *Lenox* having left the Caſtle of *Dumbritton* to *George Sterling*, ſet ſails for *England*, where he is honourably received and entertained by the King who marrieth him to *Margaret Douglaſſe*, King *James* the fifths ſiſter, and daughter to King *Henries* ſiſter.

CHAP. XXX.

A continuation of the Scottiſh *Hiſtory under the two Regents*, Hamilton *and the* Queen-mother, *from* 1544. *till* 1560.

1544. THE *Hamiltons* being glad to be rid of ſo potent an enemy as *Lenox*, call a Parliament, in which he and his friends are condemned, and their whole eſtates confiſcated; whileſt *Scotland* is thus peſtred with home-bred ſeditions, the Engliſh invade it with an Army, to reſiſt which, the Queen-mother with the Cardinal and Regent, raiſe between eight and nine thouſand men, but the Regent out of cowardiſe fled with a few to *Dumbar*, the Army upon his ſudden departure began to disband: *Archibald Douglaſſe* Earl of *Angus*, with ſome few of his friends, brought back the Artillery to *Dumbar*, even in the ſight of the enemy, wherein he ſhewed great reſolution and boldneſſe; the Engliſh mean while waſtes all the Country to the *Forth*, and ſo return home; *Thomas Howard* the Duke of *Norforlk*, with ſome others, beg from King *Henry* in recompence of their good ſervice in *Scotland*, all ſuch lands there as either they had, or ſhould ſubdue, and with all a ſufficient Army, till the work were done; this was aſſented to, ſo they return with three thouſand mercinaries, beſides the borderers who were voluntaries, and warred on their own charges: the Earl of *Angus* whoſe eſtate lay moſt about the borders repairs to the Regent, ſhewing him the danger the kingdome was in, and reproved him for ſuffering himſelf to be led by the Cardinal and his Clergy, for which he had loſt the hearts of the Nobility; hereupon ſummons are ſent abroad to invite the Lords to a meeting, that an Army might be raiſed, they two in the interim with three hundred horſe ride towards the Engliſh quarters; ſome of the borderers joyn their forces with the Regent, to whom came a ſupply of three hundred out of *Fife*, and ſome more forces under *Walter Scot*; theſe encounter with the *Engliſh* who had both the ſun and wind againſt them, ſo that being blinded with the ſun now in the Weſt, and the gun-powder-ſmoak, they were preſently diſranked and confounded, and ſo ſuddenly flung down

down their arms and ran away; the *Scots* purſued with great eagerneſſe and made a great ſlaughter; of the *Scots* two onely were ſlain; of the Engliſh about two hundred, and a thouſand taken priſoners, eight hundred of which were Gentlemen. *An. Chriſti.*

About this time, the *Gourdons* under *George* Earl of *Huntly*, or rather the *Reginaldins* by his inſtigation, fought a battel with the *Fraſers*, in which the whole family of the *Fraſers* were killed, ſo that it had been utterly extinct; but that there were 80 of their wives left big with with childe, all which were brought to bed of ſons, who lived till they all came to mens eſtate. Five hundred horſe and three thouſand foot are ſent out of *France* into *Scotland*, to retard the Engliſh from invading *France*; an Ambaſſadour alſo is ſent to enquire into crimes objected againſt *Lenox*, that he ſuppreſſed much of the *French* money, that he ſpoiled the publique cauſe by falling out with the Cardinal, and of his going into *England*; he had alſo order to leavy an army in *Scotland*, whereupon fifteen thouſand make their rendezvous at *Haddington*, whence they march into *England*, waſting for ſix miles together all with fire and ſword. So having ſpent ten dayes in plundering, they return laden with ſpoil. *Mongomery* the *French* Ambaſſadour enquires and findes that the Cardinal had wrongfully accuſed *Lenox*, and forced him to flie into *England*; Then the Regent and Cardinal undertook a progreſſe into *Perth*, *Dundee*, and other towns, to puniſh and ſuppreſſe the Proteſtants; they take away the Provoſtſhip of *Perth* from the *Ruvens*, in whoſe family it had continued many years, and put one upon them, whom they would not admit, which cauſed great troubles and tumults in the town, ſo that ſixty men were ſlain, and many in the confuſed preſſe of the people reſiſting their new Provoſt and his forces, were trod to death. After this the Cardinal conveys the Regent to St. *Andrews*, where having ſumptuouſly entertained him for three weeks, he goeth to the National Synod then held at *Edinburg*, where *George Sephoçard* a Miniſter is accuſed of Hereſie; him they fetch away with a troop of horſe from *John Cockburns* houſe where he was entertained, then he was carried to St. *Andrews*, where he was condemned by the Cardinal and his Clergie to be burned as an Heretick, for the Regent refuſed to meddle with him: the Cardinal in great ſtate with divers church-men ſate in his window over againſt the place of Execution: *George*, as the rope was about his neck, and the fire ready to be kindled, told the Cardinal, that ere long, for all his great ſtate, he ſhould be laid as low as he; ſo he was ſtrangled, and his body burned to aſhes: This ſeverity procured much obloquie and hatred from the people and Nobility on the Cardinal, who to make his party the ſtronger, marrieth his eldeſt daughter to the Earl of *Crafords* ſon. 1545.

Mean while, the Cardinal underſtanding that there was a great fleet from *England* comming to infeſt the coaſt of *Fife*, he ſends to all the Nobility and Gentry of that country to meet him on ſuch a day, to conſult about fortifying of that coaſt. About that time the Earl of *Rothus* ſon, by the aſſiſtance of fifteen more that were of the plot, entred one day betimes in the morning into the Cardinals Caſtle at Saint *Andrews*, the gate being opened to let in the work-men who were then repairing and fortifying of the place; theſe conſpirators break into his bed-Chamber, and with many wounds they ſtab him to death: then upon a tumult in the Town, his dead body is expoſed to publique view in the ſame place where he beheld the Miniſters execution; the murtherers are ſummoned to *Edinburgh*, who ſtand upon their own guard in the Caſtle, and refuſe to come; whereupon they are proſcribed: The Regent by the Queen and Clergies inſtigation takes arms, and layeth ſiege to the Caſtle almoſt 4 months, till the winter forced them to raiſe the ſiege and depart; but they in the Caſtle being rid of their enemies, waſte all the Country about with fire and ſword, and gave themſelves to all licentiouſneſſe, notwithſtanding *John Knox* preached damnation to them.

An. Christi. The Engliſh again invade the borders, and new levies are raiſed to reſiſt them, about which time a French fleet in which were 21 gallies arrived; the French and Scots joyn their forces, and ſuddenly beſiege the Cardinals caſtle, which they batter with their braſſe-ordnance from the towers of the two next Churches, ſo that at laſt the beſieged were forced to yield, being promiſed their lives; in this caſtle was found the Cardinals treaſure, with much proviſion, furniture and houſholdſtuffe, beſides much wealth hid there for ſecurity by the Citizens; the caſtle by command is pull'd down to the ground.

1547. About this time news came, that the King of *England* was preparing both by ſea and land to invade *Scotland*, and to force the *Scots* to make good their promiſe about the marriage of their young Queen with king *Henries* ſonne. The Regent raiſeth what forces he can to oppoſe the common enemy; ſome skirmiſhes there were, and divers both Engliſh and Scots killed: at laſt the Engliſh perceiving the Scots army to increaſe daily, they ſend letters to the Regent and the Lords, deſiring them to conſider how unnatural this war was between Chriſtians and neighbours, how happily and quickly it might be compoſed, if they would ſtand to their promiſe and league about the match, which would be ſo advantagious to them; how impoſſible it was to find a huſband ſo fit for their Queen, as one born of ſo great a Prince, in the ſame Iſland, of the ſame language, ſo neer in blood, and of ſuch excellent endowments, beſides what unhappineſſe will accrue in matching with a ſtranger: therefore if the Scots will conſent to this match, they ſhall have the education of their young Queen till ſhe be marriageable, and the Engliſh will forthwith return home with their Army, promiſing to make ſatisfaction for any hurt done on the Scots ſide, conditionally they will not ſuffer their Queen to be conveyed away to any other kingdom, nor ſuffer the French to marry her. Theſe letters the Regent by advice of his Counſellors ſuppreſſed, preſuming on an uncertain victory, and giving out that the Engliſh came purpoſely to carry away their Queen, and to enſlave the Nation: upon this they reſolve to fight; *Douglaſſe* Earl of *Angus* leads the Van, *Gordon* Earl of *Huntley* the Rear, the Regent led the main body, the whole Army was about twenty thouſand: the Engliſh being ſcanted of proviſions, were retreating; but ſeeing the Scots Van following them ſo eagerly, that they were a good way from the reſt of their Army, they face about, and in the firſt encounter are diſordered; but having again recollected themſelves, at laſt worſted the Scots Van, which the main body perceiving began to flie, which the Engliſh horſe perceiving from the higher ground, purſued, killed and took many of them; there fell of the Engliſh horſe in the firſt encounter about two hundred, of the Scots the number is not certain, whoſe Rear retreated homeward in ſafety; all this while the Scots army ſuffered much harm by the Engliſh fleet, which plaied upon them with their ordnance.

1547.

This battel being fought, the Engliſh waſte all the Country for ſix miles together, and take in certain Caſtles: The Regent repairs to both the Queens at *Sterling*, being ſad for this diſaſter; but the Queen-mother was not much ſorry, though ſhe made ſhew, becauſe ſhe aimed to diſplace the Regent, and to get the government into her own hand: The young Queen is ſecured in *Dumbritton*, whileſt the Lords conſult about ſetling of the kingdome. Ambaſſadours are alſo ſent to *Henry* of *France*, for aide againſt the common enemy, with hopes that the young Queen ſhall be conveyed over into *France*, and married to the Dolphin; but the French aide came not ſo ſoon as was expected: mean while the Engliſh invade *Galloway* by the aſſiſtance of *Lennox*, to whom a great part of that Country ſubmitted; they waſte alſo the Country about *Haddington*: In the interim three thouſand German foot, two thouſand French, and one thouſand horſe, are ſent from King *Henry* of *France*; to theſe the Regent with eight thouſand *Scots* doe joyn, and beſiege *Haddington*: A meeting is had of the Lords about tranſporting of the Queen; many were for

1548.

the

the union with *England*, cheifly thoſe that deſired a reformation of Religion; but the Catholicks, and all ſuch as were bribed by the French, chiefly the Regent, who was promiſed a yearly revenue of twelve thouſand Francks, beſides a Captainſhip over a hundred Curiſiers; all theſe being the major part, voted the Queen ſhould be ſent into *France*: The fleet that waited for her at *Lieth*, ſailed about the coaſt and took her in at *Dumbritton*; who after a ſtormy paſſage arrived in *Britany*, from whence ſhe is conveyed to the Court. *An. Chriſti.*

Whilſt the ſiege continues at *Haddington*, the *Scots* ſurpriſe *Hume*-Caſtle with ſome other places from the *Engliſh*. *James Stewart* the Queens brother with ſome forces in *Fife*, fell upon twelve hundred Engliſh lately landed, and drove them back again to their ſhips, with the loſſe of ſix hundred of them, partly ſlain, and partly drowned, as they were haſtening to their fleet; about one hundred were taken priſoners. Then the Engliſh fleet reſolves to ſeiſe upon the town of *Montroſe* in the night; but the governour of the Town perceiving by the lights in their ſhips where they were, placeth divers armed men in ambuſh, who fell upon eight hundred of them as they were landing, and drove them back into the Sea, ſo that ſcarce the third part of them eſcaped. The ſiege at *Haddington* continues ſtill: *Thomas Palmer* with one thouſand foot and three hundred horſe from *Barwick* are ſent to relieve the beſieged, but they were almoſt all cut off by the Scots in ambuſh; after theſe three hundred more are ſent with powder and ſhot to relieve the beſieged, for theſe the *French* lay in wait, but miſſed them: Then news came that a great army was comming out of *England* to raiſe the ſiege; whereupon the *Scots* army not willing to hazard all upon one battell, leave the ſiege, and ſend back the Artillery to *Edenburgh*; where the Provoſt was killed with his ſon and others by the *French*, becauſe he reſiſted them as they were entering the City, fearing leſt they ſhould fall to plundering after their accuſtomed manner. The *French* return again ſuddenly to *Haddington*, where they killed the watch betimes in the morning, but as they were breaking open the gate, the Engliſh are awaked, who diſcharging the murthering piece before the gate, did ſuch execution upon the *French*, that they ran away; but not long after, they made incurſions upon *England*, and did much hurt there.

Not long after this, *Deſſius* the *French* General is called home, upon the Regents letters complaining of his inſolencies, and ſedition raiſed by him at *Edenburgh*: but by the way he retakes from the Engliſh *Keth*-Iſland, and puts moſt of them to the ſword. *Termius* is ſent into *Scotland* with ſome more *French* ſupplies, who regain ſome Caſtles from the Engliſh; and upon the departure of their Army into *England*, ſits down before *Haddington*, which at laſt, the Engliſh garriſon for want of proviſions were forced to quit, having firſt ſet fire on ſome houſes. Mean while, news is brought and proclaimed in *Scotland* of a Peace between *France* and *England*; whereupon the *French* are ſhipped away. But in this ſubſequent three yeares of peace, many diſorders, inſolencies and oppreſſions were committed by the Regent, and his brother the Archbiſhop of S. *Andrewes*, who was altogether ruled by his Concubine; for which their government grew odious to the people: whereupon the Queen-mother makes a journey into *France*, for ſhe aimed at the government, which ſhe hoped to obtain by the French aſſiſtance: the French king willing to advance her without tumult, beſtowes great penſions and offices on the Regent and his ſon, and on *Huntly*, whoſe ſon had married the Regents daughter, on others alſo that were of the Queens faction, who were imployed to perſwade the Regent to reſign his power to the Queen-mother; the Biſhop of *Roſſe* an eloquent man did the Queen good ſervice in this buſines, for which the French king rewards him with an Abby in *France*. The Queen-mother hoping now a way was made for her greatneſſe, returns home through *England*, being accompanied with a French Ambaſſador, who by their favourites perſwade the Regent to reſign his Regencie, ſo full of troubles and care, and which 1549.

An. Christi. which he could not keep long, by reaſon the young Queen was almoſt of age, and that the French king would recompence him ſufficiently; the Regent was contented to reſign, conditionally that he might never be queſtioned for the late kings goods which he had uſed, not for any act he had done in his Regency, which was granted him, and withall the title of Duke of *Caſtellerot*, rich preſents, and a yearly penſion of twelve thouſand Franks; it was alſo voted, that if the Queen died without iſſue, *Hamilton* ſhould be declared next heir to the Crown; theſe Articles were ſent to *France*, and there confirmed by the young Queen and her protectors, to wit, King *Henry* 2. of *France*, the Duke of *Guiſe*, and his brother *Charles* the Cardinal; but the Regent repenting of his forwardneſs in promiſing to reſign, began to uſe delayes, untill he ſaw all the Lords fall off from him to the Queen-mother; then he reſigns, conditionally that the Articles be ratified in Parliament, which was done accordingly;

1555. the Scepter, Crown and Sword were delivered up ſolemnly by the Regent to the French Ambaſſador, who received them in the name of the young Queen, and by her command delivered them to the Queen-mother, a thing not ſeen before in *Scotland*, that a woman ſhould govern that Kingdome; but it was ordered that the Caſtle of *Edinburgh* ſhould not be committed to the *French*, leſt if the Queen ſhould die childleſſe, they would make it the place of their tyranny.

The Kingdome being ſetled, *Huntly* is employed by the Queen-Regent to ſuppreſs the high-way-men, which he undertook, but performed not, wherefore he is impriſoned, and not releaſed untill he had reſigned his right to *Moravia*, and his offices he enjoyed in the North, and then he was diſmiſſed, and made a Privy-counſellor; then the Queen-Regent makes a progreſs as far North as *Innerneſs*, where ſhe cauſed divers delinquents to be executed, and ſent the Earle of *Athol* againſt the Rebels, who brought with him their chief Commander *Muderac* with his whole family to the Queen, but ſhortly after he made an eſcape, and did more miſchief then before; ſome of Cardinal *Betons* murtherers are advanced by the Queen; a new project is ſet on foot by the French, for raiſing of monies to mantain an Army of mercinaries, that each man ſhould be rated according to his eſtate, but this was wholly diſliked and rejected, as being both dangerous and needleſs; it was thought that *Huntly* was the aurhor of this project, purpoſely to bring the Queen-Regent in diſlike with the people.

1557. The French king ſends to the Regent of *Scotland*, that ſhe would according to the old league denounce war againſt *England*, becauſe Queen *Mary* aſſiſted her husband King *Philip* againſt the French; but the Lords would not conſent to any war againſt *England* at this time: then a plot was laid to build a Fort near *Barwick*, purpoſely to induce the Engliſh to quarrels, which fell out accordingly, ſo that quarrel aroſe, and war is denounced; but the Scots fall out with the French Ambaſſador *Oſellius*, for taking upon him to rule the Kingdome; at which both he and the Queen-Regent were offended, but know not how to help it, except by haſtning the marriage between the young Queen and the Dolphin, by which means the power of the Lords would be curbed: After divers excurſions, a great skirmiſh there was between the Duke of *Norfolk* and *Andrew Car*, in which many were wounded and killed on both ſides, and *Car* taken priſoner: After this, a Parliament is held in *Edinburgh*, in which the French kings letters were read, deſiring the Scots to ſend away for conſummating of the marriage, and confirming of the old league, ſome of their prime men; whereupon three Peers, two Biſhops, one Prior or Abbot, and two Provoſts were ſent away, two ſhips of that fleet were ſunk with ſtormy weather, the Earl of *Rothuſe*, and *Reed* Biſhop of *Orkney* ſaved themſelves in a Fiſher-boat; when all the Commiſſioners were come on ſhore they haſten to the Court; the *Guiſes* who had now the command of all *France*, uſe all the celerity they can to conſummate the marriage; there were five brothers of them, the eldeſt

eldeſt was General of the French forces in *France*; the ſecond of the Ligurian forces; the third of their Army in *Scotland*; the fourth commanded the Gallies at *Marſieles*; and the fifth who was *Charles* the Cardinal, had the diſpoſing of the whole treaſure of *France*: after the nuptial ſolemnities were finiſhed, the Chancellor of *France* deſires the Scots Commiſſioners that the Queens husband might be ſolemnly inſtalled and created King of *Scotland*, and that it might be confirmed by Parliament, which motion was rejected by them as unreaſonable, and as no wayes contained within their Commiſſion: ſhortly after four of the prime Commiſſioners, with divers of their attendants died ſuddenly, not without ſuſpition of poyſon; *James* the Queens brother recovered, but never perfectly, for he had ſtill after this an infirm ſtomach. *An. Chriſti.*

About this time the borders are infeſted on both ſides with mutual incurſions, a fleet of Engliſh was ſent to infeſt the Scots coaſt, which arriving in *Orkney*, landed many men to plunder and burn the Biſhops ſeat, and Town of *Orkney*, but the ſhips were ſcattered and torn by ſtorms, and all that came on ſhore were cut in peeces by the Iſlanders: great troubles fell out in St. *Andrews* about the burning of one *Milvins* a revolted Prieſt, whoſe tombe was erected and taken down again divers times, till at laſt the ſtones were quite carried away for other buildings: At *Edinburgh* on the feſtival day of S. *Ægidius* the Cities Patron, his ſtatue that ſhould have been carried about in Proceſſion, was ſtoln out of the Church, and another little one being made, and carried about ſolemnly, was thrown down and trampled upon by the rude multitude, and all the Proceſſion ornaments torn in peeces. Shortly after, *Paul Meſan* a Miniſter, is ſummoned to appear at *Edinburgh*, which he refuſed, being backed and ſupported by *Dundee*; upon this divers prime men out of *Fife* and *Angus*, diſperſed themſelves through the kingdome, exhorting the people to ſhake off the old Religion, and to ſubſcribe to the Reformation, and withall they ſend to the Queen Regent, that the Divine-ſervice might be uſed in the vulgar tongue, that the people might chuſe their own Miniſters, and have power to depoſe them; this motion was rejected by the Papal-Clergy with much indignation, but the Regent for quietneſs ſake gave way that Divine-ſervice be ſaid in Scottiſh, conditionally that no Miniſter be ſuffered to preach at *Leith* and *Edinburgh*; the Prieſts notwithſtanding ceaſed not to perſecute the Miniſters, and cauſed ſome old Canons to be printed and faſtened to the Church-doors, the copies of which, becauſe ſold up and down for farthings a peece, therefore the people called the Roman religion, *The Farthing-faith.*

In the Parliament at *Edinburgh* the French Ambaſſador, with his faction, labour hard to have the Crown of *Scotland* ſet upon the Dolphins head, which at laſt after much debate was aſſented to; the Earl of *Argile*, with *James* the Queens brother, are appointed to convey the Crown into *France*, but they fearing this would prove an enſlaving of *Scotland* to *France*, put off the journey with long delayes; in the interim Queen *Mary* of *England* dieth, and *Mary* of *Scotland* claimeth that Crown, therefore aſſumes the Title and Arms of *England*, which her husband likewiſe did: the Queen Regent alſo began to carry herſelf more imperiouſly then before, petitions were preferred to her in behalf of the Proteſtants, which ſhe rejected; whereupon threatning ſpeeches are given out of ſhaking off her government. The Town of *Perth* publickly receives the Proteſtant Religion, for which ſhe threatens *Raven* the Provoſt; then ſhe ſends to *Haliburton* Provoſt of *Dundee*, to apprehend *Meſan*, and ſend him to her, but he conveyes him away out of danger; ſhe commands that the next Eaſter ſhould be kept after the Roman manner, but this her command was generally ſlighted; wherefore in a rage ſhee ſummons to *Sterling* all the Miniſters of *Scotland*, who at the day appointed came with multitudes of their own ſide to guard them, ſo that the Regent was afraid, and diſmiſſed them without acting any thing againſt them,

ſave

An. Christi. ſave only that ſhe proſcribed ſuch as had not appeared there, as contumacious.

At this time *Knox* is Preacher at *Perth*, who with his knocking tongue beat down the quires and chancels of Cathedrals, with the religious houſes, beginning firſt at *Perth*, where the mad multitude in a few dayes deſtroy the the buildings of the *Franciſcans*, *Dominicans*, and *Carthuſians*; The like fury was ſeen in *Cuper* of *Fife*, and afterward like a Gangrene it crept into other places. This ſo highly incenſed the Regent, that being aſſiſted by the Earls of *Argile* and *Athol*, with the *French*, ſhe ſuddenly raiſed an Army againſt *Perth*: The Lords of the Reformation with ſeven thouſand repair thither to defend the Town; but by the mediation of friends, a peace is made without ſheding of blood, and the Regent upon the disbanding of her Army is permitted to enter and ſtay in the Town with her ordinary attendance during pleaſure, but the French are not permitted to come within three miles of the place: But after the Regent had been there three dayes, ſhe baniſheth divers of the Townſmen, and divers of them ſhe plunders, and changeth all the officers of the Town; and then having left a garriſon of *Scots* there, ſhe goeth to *Sterlin*. This much incenſed the people againſt her; wherefore they aſſemble in great numbers, being countenanced by ſome Lords, and fell upon *S. Andrews* and other Towns, ſpoiling all the Religious houſes, ſo that the Archbiſhop with his guard were forced to flie: whereupon the Regent in a rage commands all the *French* and *Scots* of her ſide to be in arms at the ſounding of the trumpet; about three thouſand *Scots* and *French* repaire to her, but the number of her enemies was far greater; wherefore ſhe ſends to make peace with them, which they refuſe, becauſe ſhe did not uſe to keep promiſe with hereticks, and they knew alſo that ſhe laboured to gain time, whereby ſhe might have forraign aid; yet ſome hopes appeared, if ſhe would diſmiſſe her garriſon at *Perth*, and ſuffer the Town to enjoy her old liberties, which ſhe refuſed to do; wherefore the Proteſtant army from *Cuper* beſiegeth *Perth*, which ſhortly after is ſurrendred to them, and *Ruven* is reſtored to his Provoſtſhip; then they march to the town of *Scone*, which they burn, for murthering a Proteſtant againſt their promiſe; after this they ſeiſe upon *Sterlin*, underſtanding that the Regent was ſending thither a French garriſon, and there they pull down the Monaſtery, thence they march towards *Edinburgh*, which put ſuch a terror in the French and Scots Catholikes, that they flie to *Dunbar*; the Proteſtant Lords in the interim ſet up preaching Miniſters every where.

1559. Mean while news came of the death of king *Henry* of *France*, which made the *Scots* ſecure, and the Queen doubtful leſt ſhe and her French ſhould be expelled the kingdome: but hearing that moſt of the Scots army was diſbanded, ſhe haſteneth with her forces to *Edinburgh*, where being met with Duke *Hamilton*, and *Douglaſſe* Earle of *Morton*, they obtain a truce for ſome moneths, in which it was agreed, That no man ſhould be forced againſt his conſcience to any ceremonies, That Prieſts ſhould not be debarred of their Tythes and other duties, That no garriſon ſhould be left in *Edinburgh*, That no religious houſes be demoliſhed or converted to other uſes, That the Mint and Palace with all the Royal furniture be reſtored to the Regent. Theſe things being agreed upon, the Regent cauſeth ſtrange reports to be ſpread abroad, that the Scots Proteſtants made religion a pretence of their rebellion, and that *James* the late Kings baſtard ſtrove by undermining the lawful heire to uſurp the Crown: letters alſo are ſent to him from king *Francis* and Queen *Mary*, complaining of his ingratitude and defection, to which he anſwers by pleading for his own innocencie and conſcience. In the mean time a thouſand French mercinaries land in *Lieth*; the Earl of *Arran* alſo fled out of *France* and came home, being threatned with death by the *Guiſes* for promoting the Proteſtant cauſe in *France*; He perſwades his father *James Hamilton*, lately Regent of *Scotland*, to joyn with the Proteſtant party, who now were preparing to beſiege the French in *Lieth*, to whoſe relief the French king ſends two thouſand men;

men; the Biſhop of *Amiens* alſo with three Sorbon Doctors are ſent to diſpute if need were; the Regent upon their comming was ſo lifted up, that ſhe vowed to be revenged on the Kings and Churches enemies, therefore divers of the Lords are ſummoned to appear, who refuſe to come, becauſe they ſaw the Regent and the French were bent to enſlave the kingdome, by fortifying *Leith*, and filling it with garriſons of ſtrangers; to theſe ſhe ſends a Herauld of Arms, ſhewing that her whole aim was to mantain the ancient Religion, and to keep the kingdome in quietneſs, not for her ſelf, but for her daughter that was the ſole lawful heir; therefore ſhe commands them to lay down Arms, and appear to their ſummons, or elſe they muſt be proclaimed Rebels: the Lords return this anſwer, That by reaſon the Regent aimed wholly at the deſtruction of the kingdome and Proteſtant Religion, therefore they forbid her to exerciſe her power any more, but to depart from *Leith* with the Ambaſſador, Sorbons and garriſon, or elſe they muſt force her, which they are loth to do, by reaſon of the league between *Scotland* and *France*, and the nearneſs of blood between her and their Queen. *An. Chriſti.*

Preſently upon this it is ordered, that the Queen-Regents power and authority was void, that the Embaſſie from her daughter and ſon-in-law was of no validity, and withall an Herauld is ſent to *Leith* to command all the Scots there to depart within four and twenty hours, after this ſome light skirmiſhes there were; in the interim the Regent by fair promiſes inticeth divers of the Lords to her ſide, and for want of pay the Proteſtant ſouldiers mutiny, which much advanced the Regents cauſe, who had ſecret intelligence of all their conſultations; beſides the Duke of *Caſtellerot* was fearful and wavering to help theſe evils, chiefly to content the ſouldiers, they ſend into *England* to borrow a ſum of money, for they could not ſupply ſo great a ſum of themſelves, nor could they coin their plate, becauſe they had not the command of the Mint; but *Cockburn* who was ſent to bring money out of *England*, is apprehended by *Bothwel*, and brought to the Regent with his money; the Earl of *Arran* and *James Stewart* thought to have reſcued *Cockburn*, but were prevented by *Bothwel*. The Provoſt of *Dundee*, with his Trained-bands of foot, and ſome mercinaries, as they were marching towards *Leith*, were driven back by the French horſe in great diſorder; ſo that many who ſeemed to be Proteſtants, ſlide back again to Popery; *Arran* and *Stewart*, with ſome forces brake out of *Edinburgh* upon the *French* very raſhly, by whom they were defeated, and forced to forſake the City, which they did in the night-time, and the next day came to *Sterling*, where *Knox* encouraged them to perſeverance.

The Proteſtants perceiving the French ſide increaſe daily, reſolve to ſend to the Queen of *England* for aid, ſhewing her the danger that might redound to *England*, if the French ſhould have the command of *Scotland*: hereupon ſupplies are promiſed; mean while ſome part of the Proteſtant forces ſtay at *Glaſcow*, and the reſt march into *Fife*; the French before the Engliſh came fall upon thoſe in *Fife*; plundering and waſting all the Proteſtant Towns, houſes & villages in their way. The Proteſtant forces aſſemble at the Town of *Diſert*, and for twenty dayes together have light skirmiſhes with the French, and lying in ambuſh apprehended about a hundred Savoyans, half of which they killed with their Captain, the remainder they ſend priſoners to *Dundee*; in the interim a league at *Berwick* is made between the Engliſh and them on theſe Articles, That they ſhould help each other againſt any ſtrangers in either Kingdome; That Queen *Elizabeth* ſhould pay both the Scots ſouldiers in *England*, and the Engliſh in *Scotland*; That the booties ſhould be permitted to the Engliſh, but the Towns and Caſtles to their right owner; and upon this the Scots were to give Hoſtages. 1560.

An. Christi.

Chap. XXXI.

The continuation of the Engliſh *Hiſtory under King* Edward *the 6. and Queen* Mary, *from the year* 1546. *till* 1558.

1546. TO King *Henry* ſucceeded his ſon King *Edward* the 6. over whoſe minority and Kingdome, his uncle *Edward* Lord *Seymour*, Earl of *Hereford* and Duke of *Sommerſet* is made Protector: He began his Reign with altering of Religion; Mean while the Protector not obtaining the promiſed marriage for King *Edward*, marcheth in perſon with a great Army to *Scotland*, and ſends about by ſea a ſtrong fleet; the Regent of *Scotland*, cauſed the Red or Fire-croſſe to be ſet up, a cuſtome uſed in times of ſudden danger, thither all from ſixteen to ſixty muſt repair; the place of Rendezvous is *Muſſelburgh*, there the two Armies meet, divers skirmiſhes before the battel, ſome killed and taken priſoners on both ſides; the Earl of *Huntley*, to avoid effuſion of blood, ſends a challenge to the Engliſh Protector either to fight man to man ſingly, or ten to ten, or twenty to twenty; this demand was denied and a battel is fought; in which the Scots firſt encounter was ſo furious, that the Engliſh horſe were forced back, and in retiring bare down a part of their own foot-men, and the Engliſh Standard was like to be carried away; divers Engliſh Captains were ſlain, and the Lord *Grey* hurt; the Scots hoping too much to a deceivable victory, and being too couragiouſly forward diſranked themſelves for haſte, and fell upon the disbanded Engliſh, who being brought again into array, preſſed hard upon the enemy, who for want of ſhot, confuſedly retired to the main body, which thinking the day had been loſt, turned their backs and fled, the chaſe was followed almoſt five miles, divers men of quality were ſlain, beſides ten thouſand commons ſouldiers, and a thouſand taken priſoners.

The Protector upon his return, calls a Parliament at *London*, in which all Chantries, Colledges, and free Chappels are given to the King. The ſix Articles were repealed, and ſome other Statutes againſt heretical Tenents; Injunctions are ſent forth to pull down all Images in Churches, beginning at St. *Pauls* in *London*, which cauſed great ſtirs, chiefly in *Devonſhire* and *Cornwal*, where one of the Commiſſioners were ſtabbed, and a great inſurrection againſt the King is hatched; ten thouſand take Arms, and beſiege *Exeter*, which was in ſuch diſtreſſe, that the Townſmen fed upon bran and horſe-fleſh, for this loyalty the Cities Charters were confirmed, their liberties inlarged, and the Manor of *Exilend* beſtowed on them; the Rebels mean while ſpoil the Country, of which at laſt growing weary, and not finding the aid they looked for, ſent their Articles of peace to the King: 1. That Baptiſme be adminiſtred in all times of need. 2. That children be Biſhoped or Confirmed. 3. That the Lords body be conſecrated and reſerved in Churches, and Maſſe celebrated as before. 4. That holy-bread and holy-water be uſed. 5. That the Prieſts ſing or ſay Maſſe in the Quire of the Pariſh-Churches. 6. That Prieſts live chaſte without marriage. 7. That the ſix Articles of King *Henry* the 8. be uſed. The King upon this ſends them a general pardon, blaming them for their preſumption and folly, ſhewing them that their demands were not to be granted, and that if they did not ſubmit, they ſhould feel the dint of his ſword; notwithſtanding all this, they perſiſt in their rebellion till Sir *John Ruſſel*, Lord Privy-ſeal, was ſent with ſome forces againſt them, with whom he encounters near *Honiton*; a cruel fight was maintained by the *Corniſh* till their hearts failing them, they began to give back and flie; the Royaliſts diſorderly fall to the ſpoil, which the *Corniſh* perceiving, ſuddenly returned, and gave a new onſet, a cruel encounter followed, three hundred Rebels are killed, and the reſt take to their heels.

After

After this, the Royaliſts being now a thouſand ſtrong, by the addition of an Italian-band intended againſt *Scotland* under the Lord *Grey* of *Milton*; the Lord *Ruſſel* marcheth over the Downs to the relief of *Exeter*; the Rebels encounter with him again, and are again defeated, with the loſſe of moſt of their lives; the reſt got into the Town of S. *Mary Clift*, who were aided preſently with multitudes of people, carrying into the field the Crucifix under a Canopy; another battel is fought wherein the Rebels are utterly defeated and ſlain, their chiefe Captains are taken and executed by Marſhal-law; *Boyen* the Maior of *Bodmin* in *Cornwall* was commanded by the Provoſt-marſhal to ſet up a paire of Gallows, on which he was immediately hanged himſelfe, the Millers man alſo who called himſelfe by his Maſters name was hanged upon the next Tree, being told by the ſaid Knight that he could never do his Maſter better ſervice then to hang for him: At the ſame time alſo there were great troubles in divers places about laying open of Incloſures, which the poor people began to put in practice themſelves, preſuming upon the Kings Commiſſion; but the greateſt commotion was in *Norfolke* raiſed by *John Flowerdew*, and *Robert Ket*, caſting down one anothers fences and hedges: At laſt this *Ket* is made Captain of this commotion, to him multitudes flock, the High-Sheriffe made Proclamation for them to depart; but had not his horſe been the ſwifter, he had been killed by them; they make *Monſhold* the place of their Rendezvous, their behaviour was very barbarous even to all their friends, for Sir *Roger Woodhouſe* for his kindneſſe in bringing them two carts laden with beer and victuals, loſeth both his horſes and apparrel, and almoſt his life, having his body abuſed and caſt in priſon; to theſe the ſcum both of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* aſſembled, who by ringing of bells, and firing of Beacons ſet all in an uproar, they forced divers good ſubjects to dance after their pipe; in the Kings name they gave out warrants to apprehend and impriſon whom they pleaſed, their number now was increaſed to ſixteen thouſand; *Ket* the Tanner ſits as ſupreme Judge in an old Tree, which hee called the Oake of Reformation, from thence hee delivered his oracles. *An. Chriſti.* 1549.

Theſe men were now ſo high, that they ſcorned the Kings pardon, which by an Herauld at Arms was proclaimed to them; they batter the walls of *Norwich*, and enter into it, ſeiſing upon all the proviſion and munitions, impriſoning the Maior and other Citizens; thither *Par* Marqueſſe of *Northampton* is ſent by the King with one thouſand five hundred horſe, to whom preſently the Magiſtrates ſurrendred the Cities Sword, and ſo he enters; the Rebels that ſame night aſſaulted it with the loſſe of three hundred of them, the next day they enter the Town and began a bloody fight, in which the Lord *Sheffeild* was cruelly ſlain, having fallen from his horſe, and the Marqueſſe forced to forſake the City; Sir *Thomas Cornwallis* is taken priſoner, and at laſt the Town is ranſacked and ſet on fire by the Rebels: After this the Lord *Dudley* is made General againſt them, who ſhewing himſelfe upon the Plain before *Norwich*, ſent againe the Kings pardon, which is rejected, wherefore he plants his Ordnance againſt Saint *Stevens* Gate, which being forced open, the Earle of *Warwick* enters, and in the Market place, with ſmall reſiſtance, executes threeſcore Rebels by Marſhal-law; but they ſeiſed on the Earls powder and ſhot, and conveyed it to their Camp, they manned the ſtreets and kill many Royalliſts, but at length are forced backe to *Monſhold*, againſt which place *Warwick* planted his Ordnance, but the Rebels fell with ſuch violence upon his forces, that they gave back, leaving the Artillery to the Rebels.

The Earl being over-maſtered, was adviſed by ſome to be gone, but he drawing his ſword, cauſed his friends to do the like, who with a mutual kiſſe

An Christi. confirmed their courage and resolutions; then they stop all provisions from the Rebels, but they arose thence and entrenched themselves in the valley called *Dussindale*, upon a vain propheſie that [*Hab, Dick, and Hick*] that is, the Rusticks with their clubs should fill that valley with dead bodies; the next day the Lord General prepares to fight, having received a supply of one thousand and four hundred Lances, but first sends a pardon which they reject again; the Rebels place all their prisoners coupled in irons in the fore-rank of their Army, and with a shot struck the Kings Standard-bearer in the thigh, whereupon the Earl dischargeth his whole Artillery upon them, and so opened their battel that most of the captive Gentlemen escaped; the Royalists fought so stoutly, that the Rebels gave back and fled, the fore-most of which was their Captain *Ket*; the chase continued three miles, with the slaughter of three thousand five hundred Rebels, some resolute men staid to keep the Ordnance, to whom the General proffers a pardon, which they refuse, chusing rather to die like men then to be hanged up like dogs, as was intended; the General sends again that he would come in person and confirm the pardon if they made any doubt thereof, which he did accordingly, and so they flung down their Arms and prayed for the King.

Captain *Ket* the next day hid himself in a barn, and was betrayed by two of his servants, then with two hundred horse was conveyed to *Norwich*, nine chief Rebels are hanged upon the Oak of Reformation; *William Ket* the younger brother was hanged upon an high steeple, and *Robert Ket* the Arch-rebel in chains upon the Castle of *Norwich*; the Townsmen solemnised yearly the day of their delivery. The North also was not a little troubled about Religion, divers parts of *York-shire* standing up for the old Faith, the flame brake out first at *Seimer* in the North-riding, the Beacons are fired, and multitudes flock together, who first murthered *White* a Gentleman, with some others, whose naked body they left upon the Wold before *Seimer*, then they carried many prisoners away, and being now increased to three thousand began to grow formidable; but when the Kings pardon came, *Ombler* a yeoman, and *Dale* a Parish-clerk, the chief Ring-leaders, were forsaken by the multitude, and shortly after with some others were executed at *York*.

Not onely is the Country disquieted, but the Court also by the Kings two uncles Queen *Janes* brothers, to wit, *Edward* Duke of *Sommerset* the elder, and Protector of the Kings person and Kingdome; and *Thomas* Lord *Seymour* the younger, Admiral, who married *Katherine Par* King *Henries* last wife: she striving for precedencie with the Protectors Dutchesse, raised such a Tragedy, that Lord *Thomas* is accused, attainted and condemned of Treason, and under his brothers hand-writing, beheaded on the Tower-hill for purposing to destroy the King, and to translate the Crown to himself: shortly after this seventeen Counsellors, and many Lords accuse the Protector of ambition, misgovernment, pride, sedition, and divers treasons, for which they desire the Londoners help to remove the King from him; the Protectors party on the other side, desire the Londoners aid against these mutinous Lords: in their assembly the Citizens were divided, till the Recorder stood up, and told them what danger it might be to act any thing against the King, as the Londoners once did by aiding the Barons against King *Henry* the 3. for which they lost their priviledges, therefore he adviseth them to petition the King that complaints may be heard against the Protector; whereupon the King is sent to, the Protector commanded from his presence and sent to the Tower, where he is accused by the Kings Counsellors for acting without the assent of the last Kings Executors, for subverting Laws, and stopping of Justice, for releasing divers traytors and murtherers out of prison, for making Captains under his own seal, for communicating alone with foreign Ambassadors about matters of State, for threatning the Privy-counsellors who dissented in any thing

from

from him; for erecting a Court of Requests in his own house; for selling of Offices, Bishopricks and some of the Kings lands without consent; for commanding multiplication by *Alanmistry*, to the abuse of the Kings Coyn; for setting forth Proclamations against inclosures, causing thereby divers insurrections; for giving Commissions against law, concerning Commons, Highwayes, and Cottages; for not suppressing the Rebels, and for encouraging divers of them; and for setting forth Proclamations in favour of them; for neglecting the Forts of *New-haven* and *Blackneſſe*; for sowing discord among the Lords, and incensing the king against them; and lastly, for accusing the Lords of high-treason, because they consulted how to have these abuses reformed. *An. Christi.*

The protector notwithstanding these accusations, is by the king set at liberty, though not restored to his former dignity, and so he remained untouched two years: Mean while the Lord *Grey* was not idle in *Scotland*, but took in some forts; before him one *Newton* and *Hamilton* fought a duel, accusing each other for some opprobrious words uttered against king *Edward*, *Hamilton* is slain, and *Newton* rewarded with a gold Chain and the Lord *Grey*'s Gown: But not long after, the English by the Scots and French are totally driven out of *Scotland*, and all the Forts retaken by them. The French also attempt to surprise *Bulloignebergh*, but were prevented by one *Carar* an English souldier, who discovered the plot; many of the French were slain in the attempt, so that fifteen waggons went away laden with dead bodies: after this they attempt the Isles of *Jersey* and *Gernsey*, but were repulsed with the losse of one thousand of their men, which made them ashamed to divulge this expedition. But not long after, the French obtain by surrender, *Hamiltoune*, *Blackneſſe*, *Balloignebergh*, and *Bulloigne* it self. About this time the sweating sickneſſe raged fiercely in *England*, and on the English onely beyond seas, which made them to be shunned in all places. 1550.

The Duke of *Sommerset* is now again apprehended, after he had married his eldest son the Lord *Lisle* to the Earl of *Warwicks* daughter, which Earl had been his greatest enemy; who now by *Sommersets* means is made Duke of *Northumberland*; but is accused notwithstanding by *Warwick* and the other Counsellors, for wearing a coat of defence under his garment at the Counsel-Table, as if he intended the death of some Counsellour; wherefore he is attached, and sent to the Tower, with the Lord *Gray* of *Milton* and some others; and the next day the Dutchess of *Sommerset* is committed, all upon suspicion of Treason: The Duke was indicted of treason and fellony; but having put himself upon his Peers, is cleared of the treason, but not of the fellony; for which he is condemned to die; therefore is sent back to the Tower, where he kept a sad Christmasse: the 22 of *February* after, he was brought to the Scaffold upon the Tower-hill, where he acknowledged how willing and ready he was to dye, and to pay that debt, which God might on a sudden have exacted from him: Upon this a great tumult arose among the spectators, upon the comming in of the Hamblets to guard the Tower-hil; some supposing they were come to rescue the Duke; which was no sooner quieted, but another ensued upon Sir *Anthony Browns* riding towards the Scaffold; the people thinking a Pardon had been come, for which they were glad; but the Duke desired them to be quiet, that he might die without trouble; and praying for the prosperity of the King and his Councel, laid down his head to the Axe. 1551.

The king takes the Dukes death so much to heart, that he fell into a Consumption: Mean while, to alter the succession of the Crown, three marriages are solemnized in one day: betwixt *Dudley Northumberlands* fourth son, and *Jane*, *Suffolks* eldest daughter; the other was betwixt *Herbert*, *Pembroks* heire, and *Catharine*, *Suffolks* youngest daughter; the third between *Hastings*, *Huntingtons* heir, and *Catherine*, *Northumberlands* youngest daughter. *Jane* the eldest daughter of *Suffolk* was thought fittest for the Crown, to whom king *Edward*

An. Christi. *Edward* left it by his Will, being perſwaded thereto by thoſe who would have disinherited *Mary* and *Elizabeth*. This was ſubſcribed by the Kings Council, the Lords, the Biſhops, and Judges; onely Sir *James Hales* Juſtice of the Common-Pleas would not ſubſcribe; ſhortly upon this the king died. He was a Prince, though young, yet of great hopes and parts; much enclined to mercy, ſo that he could hardly be induced to ſet his hand to the Warrant of *Joan Butchers* execution, a notable Heretick, till he was urged thereto by *Cranmer* his God-father, and Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*; He was very zealous for the Proteſtant Religion, ſo that he could not be moved by *Charls* the Emperour, to give way that the Lady *Mary* ſhould have Maſſe ſaid in her houſe, but wept when he was urged to it; and wrote a paſſionate letter to his ſiſter, diſſwading her to continue in her Catholick reſolution. Upon a Sermon which Dr. *Ridley* preached before him, concerning *mercy to be ſhewed by rich men to the poore*, he was ſo touched in conſcience, that he conferred after dinner with the Doctor of ſome way, whereby he might doe moſt good to the poore; the Doctor adviſeth him to take directions from *London*: The king upon this writes to the Lord Major about this buſineſſe, and ſends his letter by Biſhop *Ridley*, who having conferred with the Major and his Brethren, returns to the King with the Cities advice: Hereupon, he gives to them St. *Bartholmews* Hoſpital by *Smithfield*, and the *Gray-Friers* Church neer to it, with all its revenews; alſo his houſe of *Bridewell* (new built by king *Henry* for the reception of the Emperor) to be a Houſe of Correction for idle and diſſolute perſons: He gave alſo the Hoſpital of Saint *Thomas* in *Southwark*, with ſeven hundred Marks by year out of the rents of the Hoſpital of Saint *John Baptiſt* or the *Savoy*, with
1553. bedding and other furniture; other charitable works he alſo did, and then died at *Greenwich* the ſeventeenth year of his Age, and the ſeventh year of his Reign, and lieth buried at *Weſtminſter*, neer *Henry* the ſeventh.

To him ſucceeded his ſiſter Queen *Mary*; but the Stateſmen concealed his death two dayes, intending *Jane* ſhould ſucceed, as being more firm to Proteſtantiſme then *Mary*; for this cauſe the Counſel ſends for the Major of *London*, ſix Aldermen and twelve Commoners, who all ſwear for the Lady *Jane*: But the Lady *Mary* hearing of this news, writes to the Lords, accuſing them for concealing her brothers death; for neglecting her who was next heire to the Crown, ordained by act of Parliament, and her fathers teſtament; therefore wills them to Proclaim her Queen in *London*, and other towns: To theſe letters the Lords made anſwer, that according to the laſt Kings Will, *Jane* daughter to *Henry* Duke of *Suffolk* ſhould ſucceed to the Crown; they alſo put her in minde of her mothers Divorce, and her own illegitimation; therefore they wiſh her to deſiſt from any ſuch claime: this letter was ſubſcribed, by the Archbiſhop, the Chancellour, and divers Lords. The Lady *Mary* upon reception of this letter removes to *Freminſham* Caſtle, to whom the *Suffolk*-men reſorted firſt, hoping ſhe would eſtabliſh Proteſtantiſme: The Lords at *London* Proclaim the kings death, and Queen *Jane* his ſucceſſour by his laſt Will; but at *Norwich* Queen *Mary* is proclaimed, and aſſiſted by the Earls of *Suſſex*, *Bath*, and *Oxford*, with the Lord *Wentworth*, and divers others: To encounter theſe, Queen *Jane*'s father is appointed with an army to repair into *Norfolk*, which ſo grieved Queen *Iane*, that with tears ſhe got him to ſtay; then was the Duke of *Northumberland* aſſigned Lord Lieutenant for Queen *Iane*, whom his ſon had married; he fearing the worſt, wiſhed the Lords to be carefull of what they went about, and ſo with ſix hundred men he marcheth out of *London* through *Shoreditch*, the people ſhewing no ſigne of joy at all, which the Duke obſerved.

Mean while the Lord *Windſore* with others, raiſe the Commons of *Buckingham-ſhire*, and proclaim Queen *Mary*; the like is done in *Oxford-ſhire*, and *Northampton-ſhire*; all theſe made forward towards *Norfolk*: beſides ſix tall ſhips, appointed to have taken the Lady *Mary* if ſhe had fled, being driven by

ſtorms

storms into *Yarmouth* haven, revolted to Queen *Mary*; at the report of this, the Lords in the Tower began to be afraid, and their Tenants to deny them any aide; *Northumberland* still follicited the Lords for more assistance, but little came; Dr. *Ridly* Bishop of *London* by command maintains Queen *Janes* cause in his sermon at *Pauls Crosse*, but could not work upon the people; which the Lords perceiving, fell off from the Duke then at *Bury*, and proclaimed Queen *Mary* in *London*: the Duke willing to follow the stream, returns to *Cambridge*, where being forsaken by most of his souldiers; he proclaims her Queen himself without Trumpet or Herauld, and in sighe of joy threw up his Cap: yet all were pardoned by her, except this Duke and Sir *John Gates* Captain of the guard: the Duke was first arrested by a Sergiant at arms, and the next morning by the Earle of *Arundel*, and thence was conveyed with his three sons, the Earl of *Huntington* and divers others to the Tower, where also the Lady *Jane* and her husband *Dudly* were imprisoned. *An. Christi.*

At the Queens entrance into the Tower, *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk* was released, who had lain there from the last of *Henry* the eighth; so was *Edward* Lord *Courtney*, whom she makes Earl of *Devon-shire*, *Tunstall* Bishop of *Durham*, and *Gardiner* of *Winchester* are released also; Doctor *Ridly* and some other Protestant Bishops are depосed, *Ridly*, and *Cranmer* Arch-bishop, are sent to the Tower; so constantly devoted she was to the Catholick Religion, that her brother king *Edward* could never work upon her; nor any worldly respects alter her resolution: The Duke of *Northumberland* upon the Scaffold renounces the Protestant Faith, and exhorts the people to the Catholick Religion; yet he was beheaded with Sir *John Gates* and Sir *Thomas Palmer*. The Queen is crowned at *Westminster* by *Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester*; the Lady *Jane* with her husband are condemned in *Guild-hall*; she was pittied, because she was in a manner forced to accept the title of Queen; therefore she had the liberty of the Tower, and had been pardoned, but that her father the Duke of *Suffolk* went about to hinder the Queens marriage, with king *Philip* of *Spain*; and to this purpose instigates *Leicester-shire* and *Warwich-shire* against the match: Upon this, the Earl of *Huntington* is sent who takes *Coventry*, and afterward the Duke, whom his own servant betraied, and his brother *John* Lord *Grey*; the other brother Lord *Thomas* escaped, but was retaken, and all three sent to the Tower: Lord *Gilford Dudley* is first beheaded, whose bleeding body was in the sight of his sad Lady brought into the Tower Chappel; who was the next that suffered, and was much lamented for her innocency: Judge *Margan* that condemned her, fell mad eleven dayes after the Duke of *Suffolk* was executed on the Tower-hil, and about two moneths after his brother Lord *Thomas Grey* in the same place suffered. 1554

Gardiner, now Lord Chancellor, sets forth highly the match with *Spaine*, to the Lords in the Presence Chamber; yet many of them so disliked it, that combinations were made, and arms taken up by Sir *Thomas VVyat* of *Kent*, who at *Maidstone* published a Proclamation against the Queens match; from thence he goeth to *Rochester*, and breaks down the Bridge; divers sided with *VVyat* and many in *Kent* were against him, so that the Country is much divided. The Duke of *Norfolk* is sent to *Gravesend* with five hundred *Londoners* to maintain the Queens cause: when the two adverse factions met, a cruel skirmish ensued; but at length the Queens party prevailed, and the other fled; but shortly after, the Duke by his own treacherous party was so betrayed, that he was forced to flie, and leave behind him to *VVyat* eight brasse pieces of Ordnance; with these *VVyat* assaileth *Cowling-Castle*, but was resisted by the Lord *Cobham*: Shortly after; he had a Parly at *Dartford* with Sir *Edward Hastings*, Master of the Horse, and Sir *Thomas Cornwallis*, who demand of him the cause of this Rebellion; he answers, that he feared the Land would be overrun by strangers: Then they desire him to come and communicate the cause before the Queen, which he refused except he might have the custody of the

Tower

An. Christi. Tower, and the Queen in it, with power to place and displace the Queens Counsellors; to which *Hastings* replied, That *Wyat* and twenty thousand more should die, before he should have his traiterous demands granted; so they parted, and *Wyat* approacheth with his forces towards *London*, at which both the Court and City were afraid, who all take Arms, even the Lawyers in *Westminster* pleaded in harnesse. The *Spanish* Ambassadors steal away by water.

Mean while good news came, that the seditious *Carews* and *Gibs* in *Cornwall* were defeated and fled; the Queen comes in state to Guild-hall, where before the Maior, Aldermen, and chief Citizens, she made a speech, declaring her right to the Crown, the unreasonablenesse of *Wyats* demands, making her marriage a cloak for his pretended purposes against her person and dignity, she also shews her true love to them, and that she will not marry but by their consent, and for their good, therefore she wisheth them to be as careful of her honour and safety, as she will be of their weal and happinesse; the Queen having said, returns to the Court, and makes *Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke* her Field-General, and proffers a hundred pound land by the year to him that shall bring *Wyat* dead or alive, who understanding all passages marcheth toward *London* with four thousand men, at whom the White-tower shot but did no hurt; he enters *Southwark* peaceably, the people there joyning with him; *Winchester* house is rifled contrary to his Proclamation.

Wyat having got *Southwark*, comes to the Bridge, but finding the gate shut, he planteth his Ordnance against it; the Lord Maior cuts down the draw-bridge, and fortifies the City every where, causing the Ordnance in the Tower to be levelled against the Bridge-foot: much Artillery is planted against *Southwark*, which made the inhabitants with teares to beseech *Wyat* to be gone; who presently marched to *Kingston* upon *Thames*, where finding the bridge broken down, he quickly again repairs it, and so marcheth to *Branford*; the Queens Army takes S. *James* fields; *Wyat* marcheth towards Charing-crosse, the Ordnance playing upon each other, but to little purpose; the Lord Chamberlain at Charing-crosse made some resistance, but was forced back to the gates of White-hall, which were shut, the Court being affrighted with a report that the Lord General was revolted to *Wyat*, who in the interim hasteneth to Ludgate, but could not there have any admittance; some of his straglers that had taken into *Westminster*, comming before the Court-gates, shot their arrows into the garden and into the windows, but no hurt was done: At Charing-crosse as they were going to joyn with *Wyat*, they are encountred by the Captain of the guard and defeated, twenty of them being slain; *Wyat* returns discontented from Ludgate, and is staid at Temple-bar by some of the Queens horse, some bickering there was, but upon the counsel of an Herauld at Arms, *Wyat* submits to the Queens mercy, who with *Cobham* and some others are carried to the Court, and thence to the Tower; in *London* 50 were hanged for *Wyats* conspiracy, and 400 more led through the City to *Westminster* with halters about their necks, who were all pardoned by the Queen; *Wyat* having acknowledged his offence upon the Scaffold, and exhorted the people to take heed they rise not against the higher powers, submits his neck to the stroke of the Axe.

In *Kent* divers persons were executed for this rebellion; the Lord *Courtney* and Lady *Elizabeth* the Queeens sister are suspected as aiders unto *Wyat*, and therefore are sent to the Tower; the Lady *Elizabeth* being sick at *Ashridge*, is conveyed away by a Troop of horse to the Court, where she was for a fortnight in the nature of a prisoner, none being suffered to visit her but they that kept the door; she was accused by Bishop *Gardiner* and nine more of the Councel, that she was privy to *Wyats* conspiracy, and the stirs in the West, all which she constantly denied; then they told her she must go to the Tower, at which she was much troubled, desiring the Lords that they would mediate

for

for her; but about an houre after her attendants are diſcharged, except her Gentleman-uſher, three Gentlewomen, and two Grooms of his chamber, and withall a ſtrict guard is ſet over her; the next day ſhe is commanded to the Tower, and her Barge was ready for her; ſhe deſires to ſtay till the next tide, which was denied her, then ſhe intreats ſo much time as to write a letter to the Queen, one of the two Lords that came to her would not yeeld to her requeſt, but the Earl of *Suſſex* granted it, and promiſed to deliver it with his own hand to the Queen; in the interim the tide was ſpent, and they durſt not truſt her to the next tide, which fell out in the night, for fear ſhe might be forcibly taken from the guard; therefore the next day being Palmſunday, and the Londoners then all at Church, ſhe is conveyed to her Barge, caſting her eyes towards the windows as ſhe paſſed through the garden, hoping ſome would pity her; ſuch haſte was made to have her away, that they would not ſtay till the water was level, whereupon as ſhe paſſed the Arch, the ſtern of the boat ſtruck againſt the ground, ſo that ſhe was forced to ſtep into the water before ſhe could come to the ſtairs. *An. Chriſti.*

When ſhe entred the Tower, ſhe reſted her ſelf a while upon a cold ſtone in the rain, and then was put into a room which was locked and bolted upon her, ſo with her family ſhe went to prayer; the Lords would have had her been a cloſe priſoner, but the Lord *Suſſex* would not yeeld to it; then after two dayes it was commanded ſhe ſhould have Maſſe in her lodgings: *Wincheſter* with ſome others of the Councel examined here in the Tower of the talk ſhe had with Sir *James Croft* a priſoner, and of her removing from *Aſhridge* to *Dunnington*-Caſtle, and of ſuch other frivolous matters, at which the Lord of *Arundel* was offended that ſhe ſhould be vexed thus cauſeleſſely: growing ſickly in her cloſe priſon for want of aire, liberty was given her to walk in the Queens lodgings, and in the garden, all priſoners being inhibited to look that way whilſt ſhe was there; ſhe took delight in a little boy that brought her flowers every day, but upon ſuſpicion the boy might convey letters between her and the Lord *Courtney*, he was kept from her; ſome of her enemies had got a warrant to be ſigned for her execution, at which Mr. *Bridges* the Lieutenant being troubled, went to the Queen to know her further pleaſure therein, who denied ſhe knew of any ſuch warrant, blamed the doers, and gave a contrary command: but ſhortly after the Conſtable is diſcharged, and Sir *Henry Bennifield* was placed in his room; ſhe was not long after removed from the Tower to *Richmond*, where upon the removal of her ſervants, and placing of ſouldiers about her, ſhe thought ſhe ſhould have died that night, but the Lord *Tame* who then attended her, aſſured her of the contrary.

From *Richmond* ſhe is conveyed to *Woodſtock*; the people who wiſhed her well, not being ſuffered to ſalute or pray for her; ſome were put in the ſtocks for ringing the bells, hoping ſhe had been delivered: when ſhe was at *Woodſtock*, it was ſuſpected that ſome Ruffians had been ſent to murther her, but they could not have any acceſſe to her; one night (whether accidentally or purpoſely it was not known) her lodgings took fire, to the great endangering of her perſon; ſo comfortleſſe was her life to her, that one day ſeeing a maid milking her kine in the Park, ſhe wiſhed that her ſelf was a milk-maid.

Queen *Mary* ſhortly after her Coronation called a Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, and a Convocation in S. *Pauls* Church, where ſhe commanded a diſputation to be had of ſome controverted points of Religion; for ſix dayes diſputations were had, but to no purpoſe, wherefore ſhe by *Bonner* diſſolves the Aſſembly; not long after, *Cranmer*, *Ridly* and *Latimer*, ſometime Biſhops, were ſent to *Oxford* to diſpute upon the ſame points, but theſe three at the end of the diſputation are condemned to die, and were burned as hereticks: at *London* a Rain-bow inverſed, and two Suns at once were ſeen, which were held bad preſages of the marriage with *Spain*, much diſliked by the people; but the queen gave order that *London* and other places ſhould be informed of the benefits 1553.

An. Chriſti. which would accrue to this Kingdome by that match; the Earl of *Bedford* and the Lord *Fitz-waters* were ſent into *Spain* to conduct King *Philip*, the Lord Admiral with eight and twenty ſhips ſecured the ſeas, *Philip* with a Navy of 150. ſail arrived in *England*, and lands in *Southampton*, he was the firſt of the fleet that landed, all the way as he went he bare his naked ſword in his hand; but before he went to his lodging, he betook himſelf to his devotions in *Holy-Roods* Church, the like he did at *Wincheſter*; the Earl of *Arundel* Steward of the Queens houſe preſents him with the Garter, and the Maior with the keyes of *Southampton*; the Queen meets him at *Wincheſter*, where theſe Articles were agreed on: 1. That *Philip* ſhould be ſtiled King of *England* during the Matrimony, but not diſpoſe of any lands or offices. 2. That *Mary* ſhould be Queen of the dominions of *Spain*. 3. That her dowry ſhould be yearly ſixty thouſand pounds *Flemiſh*. 4. That their iſſue male or female ſhould ſucceed according to the Laws. 5. That if *Charles* the Infant of *Spain* died iſſueleſſe, then the eldeſt ſon of this Matrimony ſhould ſucceed in all the dominions of *Charles* the Emperor. 6. That the dominions of the *Low-countries* and *Burgundy* ſhould be excluded from the ſaid *Charles* his iſſue if they remained, and ſhould be enjoyed by the eldeſt born of this marriage, without further claim to any other dominions of *Spain*. 7. That the eldeſt female of this marriage, for want of male, ſhould poſſeſſe theſe dominions, provided ſhe marry a Nobleman either of *Belgium* or of *England*. 8. That the eldeſt daughter of King *Philip* and queen *Mary* ſhould ſucceed to the Realms of *England*, *Spain* and *Belgium*. 9. That theſe ſeveral dominions be governed by their Natives. 10. That a firm peace be concluded betwixt theſe Nations for ever.

Beſides theſe generals, the King articles, That he will beſtow no *Engliſh* preferments on ſtrangers, That his Court ſhall be repleniſhed with natives of the land; That he ſhall not violate any priviledges of *England*; That he ſhall not carry the Queen out of her Kingdome without her conſent, nor her children, but by the aſſent of the Lords; That if he die iſſueleſſe, the ſucceſſion ſhall come to the nex heir; That he ſuffer not to be carried away the Jewels of the Crown, neither guns, nor any furniture of war; And laſtly, That he
1554. ſhall not entangle *England* with the wars of his father, and the French King. Things thus ordered, the marriage is ſolemnized at *Wincheſter* on S. *Jamſes* day, where *Cæſars* Ambaſſadors pronounced, That their Maſter in conſideration of this marriage had given to his ſon *Philip* the Kingdomes of *Naples* and *Jeruſalem*; whereupon their titles were there ſolemnly proclaimed; then they went from the Church, having two ſwords carried before them. So diſcontented were ſome Proteſtants at this match, and advancement of the *Roman* faith, that one *Bourn* preaching at *Pauls*-croſſe, had a dagger thrown at him, which cauſed the Croſſe the next Sunday to be guarded by the Queens guard; The next year Dr. *Pendleton* had a gun ſhot at him; A maid was taught to ſpeak in a wall, as if it had been an Angel, againſt the Queen, the Prince of *Spain*, and the Maſſe; a Cat was hanged on a gallows in *Cheap*, her head ſhorn, and wearing a veſture like a Cope, and many other abuſes were offered, which made the Queen and Biſhops ever after jealous of the *Londoners*.

Queen *Mary*, to be better directed in matters of Religion, ſends for her kinſman Cardinal *Pool*, the ſon of *Margaret* Counteſſe of *Salisbury*, the onely daughter of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, King *Edward* the 4. ſecond brother, he had been bred in *Oxford*, and made Dean of *Exeter* by K. *Henry*, at *Padua* he ſtudied ſeven years, where underſtanding the King had caſt off the Pope, refuſed to return into *England*, wherefore he is proclaimed Traitor and his Denary taken from him, to recompence which loſſe, the Pope made him a Cardinal; he did ſollicite foreign Princes againſt King *Henry*, for which he not being able to be revenged on *Pool*, wracks his anger on his mother, being now eighty years old, whom he cauſed to loſe her head; then he was made Legate of

of *Viterbion*, and is appointed by Pope *Paul* the third to be one of his Vicegerents in the Council of *Trent*; he was afterwards choſen Pope, but being accuſed by Cardinal *Caraffa*, as a favourer of Proteſtants, he cleared himſelf, and was choſen again; but he not being nimble enough to ſtrike the Iron while it was hot, the Cardinal *de Monte*, afterward *Julius* the third, ſteps between him and the Papal-chaire, who cauſed *Caraffa* to ask *Poole* forgiveneſſe; then *Poole* retires to *Verona*, where in the Monaſtery of Saint *Bennet*, of which order he was both Profeſſor and Patron, he reſides a while. *An. Chriſti.*

Shortly after this, Queen *Mary* ſends for him into *England*, for ſhe had been bred under the Counteſſe his mother, and he was alſo of the blood royal, which put him in ſome hopes he might change his Hat for a Crown: But *Cæſar* miſtruſting his intent, kept him back, till the match was concluded between his ſon and Queen *Mary*. *Caraffa* being now Pope, ſends Friar *Peto* to diſcharge *Poole* of his Legative power, which much incenſed the Queen; ſo that ſhe forbids *Peto* to enter the land, till the Pope and *Poole* were reconciled: The queen cauſed all the acts made by king *Henry* againſt *Poole* to be repealed, and the houſe of Parliament upon their petition to him is abſolved, and received again into the boſome of the Church: All the ancient Ceremonies of the Church are reſtored again, and all Church-livings that had been aſſumed to the Crown; The queen affirming, that *ſhe preferred her ſouls happineſſe to ten kingdoms.*

Though queen *Mary* was pious and zealous in her Religion, yet many barbarous cruelties were by her Officers exerciſed on Proteſtants, her power in this caſe being much abuſed; ſo that five Biſhops, one and twenty Divines, eight Gentlemen, eighty four Artificers, beſides many others, even women and children, were cruelly put to death; many were forced to fly the land, amongſt whom was *Catherine* Dutcheſſe of *Suffolk*, who had married *Richard Bartie* Eſquire, theſe were perſecuted by Biſhop *Gardiner*, becauſe ſhe had perſecuted him and other Papiſts in king *Edwards* dayes; ſhe was forced to go diſguiſed on ſhip-board, with her young daughter, her husband being gone away before: ſhe ſuffered much by ſtorms at ſea, and more by want, perſecution, and cold on the land, in thoſe places of *Belgium* and *Germany* where ſhe travelled; till ſhe was relieved with her husband and childe, by *Peruſel* a Miniſter in *Wieſel*: After this, they endured much more hardſhip, till they got into *Poland*, where they ſtaid till queen *Maries* death.

Queen *Mary* being ſuppoſed to be with childe, cauſed *Te Deum* to be ſung, and ſolemn prayers made for her ſafe delivery; in hope of which, Mid-wives, Rockers, and all things elſe were provided. An act was made, that king *Philip* ſhould be Protector of her iſſue and realm; but yet king *Philip* had no great confidence that his queen was with childe, nor duſt he truſt the Engliſh, or think that they could be kind to ſtrangers, who were ſo cruel to their own Princes, for he found that the Lord *Paget* and ſome others had conſulted to cut off the Lady *Elizabeths* head; therefore in compaſſion to her, he never gave off, till he got the queen to ſet her at liberty; ſo ſhe is brought to *Hampton* Court, where after fourteen daies ſhe was admitted into the queens chamber; there falling on her knee, ſhe prayed for her, and declared her loyalty to her Majeſty, which the queen queſtioned, and checked her for not acknowledging her offence; but ſhe ſtill pleaded for her own innocency: ſeven daies after the Lady was diſcharged of *Beneſield* her Jailour, her maids are ſent to the Tower; and *Gardiner* died ſhortly after. About this time, one *Fetherſtone* a Millers ſon gave out, that he was king *Edward* 6. but being taken at *Eltham* in *Kent*, he was brought to *Hampton* Court, where being found by his ſimple anſwers little better then frantick, is ſent to the Marſhalſie, and from thence with a paper-crown on his head to *Weſtminſter*, and from thence whipped to *Smith-field*, and then baniſhed into the North: but the next year falling into the ſame madneſſe, is apprehended, condemned of treaſon and hanged at *Tyburn*.

An. Christi. The time of Queen *Maries* deliverance being come, it was given out that a Prince was born, which cauſed great joy and triumph, both in *London* and *Antwerp*; but all this came to nothing, for ſhe was never with childe: Here-
1555. upon King *Philip*, in anger, went over the Seas, pretending to viſit his father, and to take poſſeſſion of *Belgium*, where he ſtaid one year and a half, to Queen *Maries* great grief; who met him on the way as he returned, and brought him with great pomp through *London*. In his abſence, ſome plotted to rob the Queens Exchequer at *Weſtminſter*, to raiſe war in the land; but the plot was diſcovered, and the plotters executed. One *Clebeck* a School-maſter, read publiquely a traiterous Proclaimation againſt the Queen, perſwading the people to take arms. *Thomas Stafford* diſperſed ſlanderous books againſt the Queen, and by ſtealth took the Caſtle of *Scarborough*, incenſing the people againſt her; but he was ſuppreſſed by *Thomas Piercy* Earl of *Northumberland*, and ſent to *London*, where he was beheaded. About this time, *Charls Cæſar* called
1557. his ſon *Philip* into *Bruſſels*, where he reſigns to him all his dominions, counſelling him to entertain peace with the French, for the general good of Chriſtendome; a peace for five years was made, but held not long; for the Pope being then beſieged by Duke *Alva* at *Rome*, ſends to the French for aide, who by the *Guiſe* made his way open into *Rome*; but the French falling away for want of pay, the Pope renounced his amity with *France*, and entertains it with *Spain*. Queen *Mary* to ſhew her love both to the Pope and king *Philip*, fals out with *France*, pretending divers wrongs from thence; ſo ſhe ſends a Defiance unto King *Henry* of *France*, and proclaims wars againſt him in *London*, contrary to her promiſe and articles. King *Philip* paſſeth over to *Flanders*, after whom the Queen ſends one thouſand horſe, four thouſand foot, and two thouſand pioniers under the Earl of *Pembroke* as Generall, theſe joyned with king *Philip*, whileſt the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Brunſwick*, with ſome Lords, had invaded the French confines, and beſieged St. *Quintins*; which *Montmorancy* Conſtable of *France* came with great forces to relieve; but he ſo miſcarried, that he was hurt, and taken priſoner with eight Knights of the order: Shortly after St. *Quintus* is taken by king *Philip* and the Engliſh.

Upon the taking of this town, the Engliſh grew ſecure, and negligent of *Calice*, ſo that the Duke of *Guiſe* with great celerity approached the Engliſh frontier; under colour to victual *Boloigne* and *Ard*, he divided his Army into two parts; the one he ſends to *Ricebank*, whileſt the other battered two forts at once, which they wan in twelve houres ſpace; *Ricebank* is alſo abandoned by the Engliſh, and left to the *Guiſe*: then the Duke batters the walls of *Calice* three dayes together, and made a great breach, He planted alſo fifteen double Cannons againſt the Caſtle; they within finding themſelves too weak, thought to blow up the French with Gun-powder, as they entred, but the train would take no fire, being wet with the drops of water that fell from the French-mens cloths, having waded through the ditch; ſo that they got the Caſtle, with the death of *Ager* Marſhal of the Town, his ſon and heir, and eighty Engliſh more. The Lord *Wentworth*, Deputy of the Town, ſent to the Caſtle for a parly, which was granted, and theſe Articles agreed on. 1. That the Town with the Artillery, Victuals, and Munition ſhould be yeelded freely to the French. 2. That the lives of the Inhabitants ſhall be ſaved. 3. That the Deputy with fifty others remain priſoners till they pay their ranſom.

The Engliſh were ſhut up in two Churches, where they remain a whole day and night without meat or drink. The Duke commanded that all their plate, mony and jewels be laid on the altars, upon pain of death; ſo the Town was voided of five hundred ordinary ſouldiers, of townſmen women and children four thouſand and two hundred, and all theſe ſtript of the wealth they had been long in gathering: In the ſpace of eight dayes was this Town loſt, which coſt king *Edward* 3. eleven moneths ſiege, and had been poſſeſſed by the Engliſh two hundred and eleven years; fifty priſoners are ſent away into *France*.

King

King *Philip* being ſollicited by Queen *Mary* to recover this loſt honour, makes an attempt upon *Breſt*, and takes *Thermes* the new Captain of *Calice* priſoner; yet *Calice* could not be regained, which ſo grieved Queen *Mary*, that ſhe ſaid, *The loſſe of* Calice *was written in her heart, and might be therein read when her body ſhould be opened.* The loſſe of this Town, and long abſence of king *Philip*, increaſed her melancholy, which ended in a feaver that was her death, at S. *James*; ſhe reigned 5 years, 4 moneths, and 11 dayes, and lived 42 years and 9 moneths. Cardinal *Poole* died the ſame day with Queen *Mary*. *An. Chriſti.* 1558.

CHAP. XXXII.

The Engliſh *Hiſtory, interwoven with the Hiſtory of* Spain, France, Ireland, *and* Netherlands, *under Queen* Elizabeth, *from* 1558. *till* 1602.

QUeen *Elizabeth* ſucceeded, being twenty four years old. She preſently orders that the Liturgy be ſaid in Engliſh. As ſhe was paſſing through *Cheap* in her Chariot, the Bible was preſented to her, which ſhe took and imbraced, profeſſing to make it the rule of her government: then ſhe aſſures the Lord Maior and City of her care and love to them: then being come to *Weſtminſter*, ſhe is crowned by the Biſhop of *Carliſle*, the See of *Canterbury* being vacant. In her firſt Parliament, the title of Supremacie, with the Tenths, Firſt-fruits, and Benefices are reſtored to the Crown; Queen *Maries* Acts are repealed in favour of Catholikes. A Conference was held at *Weſtminſter* concerning the Engliſh Service-book, the changing of Ceremonies, and the Maſſe; but this Conference came to nothing. She was petitioned by her Parliament to marry; but ſhe told them, that ſhe meant to reigne, live, and die a Virgin. 1558.

A peace being on foot between *France* and *Spain*, the Queen interpoſeth for *England*, and demands reſtitution of *Calice*, being loſt not in the quarrel of *England*, but of king *Philip*, againſt the will of the Engliſh Councel. It was alleadged, that great ſums of money for arrearages were due to the Engliſh from the French king, all which the Queen was willing to remit, conditionally that *Calice* may be reſtored, without which reſtitution no peace could be concluded between *England* and *France*; it was at length agreed, that *Calice* ſhould remain French for eight years, and then return to the Engliſh, upon forfeiture of five hundred thouſand Crowns, but neither the one nor the other were ever performed. The Lord *Wentworth* Deputy of *Calice*, was arraigned at *Weſtminſter* for the loſſe of the Town, but was acquitted by his Peers. The oath of Supremacie is offered to the Clergy: in place of *Poole* deceaſed, *Porker* is made Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*: the Monaſteries are again ſuppreſſed, and Images aboliſhed: then care is taken for refining the Coyn, and for furniſhing the kingdome with munition, armour, and powder. The French king, in favour of his ſon the Dolphin, and Queen *Mary* of *Scotland*, cauſed their right to the Crown of *England* to be proclaimed at *Paris*, commanding *England* to be put among their Titles, and the Arms thereof to be impaled with *Scotland* and *France*, in their Seals, Plate, and Tapiſtry: but afterward upon Articles of Accord between *England*, *Scotland* and *France*, it was agreed, that the Arms and Titles of *England* and *Ireland* ſhould not thenceforth be uſed by the French king, nor his Queen of *Scotland*.

Guſtavus King of *Sweden* propoſeth a Match between his eldeſt Son *Ericus* and Queen *Elizabeth*, which ſuit afterward was renewed by *Ericus* himſelfe being King, but is both times rejected by Queen *Elizabeth*. Who ſends aid firſt into *Scotland* for ſupporting of the Proteſtant religion, then into *France* for 1560.

An.Chriſti. 1562. for the ſame purpoſe: her Forces are received into *New-haven*, *Roan* and *Deep*, under the command of *Ambroſe Dudley* Earl of *Warwick*, who is aſſiſted by ſome Scots forces from *Deep*: but *New-haven*, after eleven moneths poſſeſſion, was loſt again by the Engliſh, for want of water, which the enemy had cut off, and by reaſon of the Plague which raged there, and afterward in *England* receiving infection from thence. About this time fell out the Maſſacre at *Paris*, in which the Admiral was barbarouſly murthered, mangled and abuſed, beſides many thouſands of men, women and children.

About the ſame time *Ireland* rebels under *Shan* or *John O-Neal*, who claimed an hereditary right to the Province of *Ulſter*, as the *O-Neals* had formerly done of all *Ireland*; for when *Edward Bruce* named himſelf king of *Ireland*, *Donald O-Neal* ſtiled himſelf king of *Ulſter* and heir of *Ireland*; but the Engliſh quaſhed his title, till in the wars between *York* and *Lancaſter*, they forſook *Ulſter*. At this time *Henry O-Neale* raiſed his family, by marrying the daughter of *Thomas* Earl of *Kildare*, from whom iſſued *Con O-Neal*, ſirnamed *Bacco* from his halting, who curſed his poſterity, if they learned the Engliſh tongue, ſowed wheat, or built houſes. But king *Henry* the 8. ſo cruſhed *Kildare*, that he ſubmitted, and was content to hold his revenues in fee of the King, with the title of Earl of *Tiron* or *Tir-Oen* to him, and to *Matthew* his falſe reputed ſonne, and to their lawfull heirs. *Shan O-Neale* upon this murthers *Matthew*, and drives his father *Con Bacco* out of his houſe and all his poſſeſſions, ſo that he died for want and grief. *Shan* being then choſen, and inaugured by an old ſhoe caſt over his head, ſeiſed upon his fathers eſtate, and to ſecure himſelf, he murthered *Brian Matthews* eldeſt ſon, the other two *Hugh* and *Con-mack* eſcaped: ſo being ſeated in *Ulſter*, there he playes the tyrant, declaring that he was the ſon and heir of *Con O-Neal* lawfully begotten, and that *Matthew* his ſuppoſed brother was a Black-ſmiths ſon, and was obtruded upon *Con* by his Concubine the ſaid *Smiths* wife; he pleads alſo the Iriſh law *Taniſtry*, whereby a man at his full years is to be preferred before a boy, and an uncle before a nephew. So bearing himſelf as abſolute king of *Ulſter*, he overthrew *O-Raily* in the field, took *O-Donel* priſoner with his wife and children, and committed adultery with her.

This *Shan* hearing of the Lord Deputies preparations againſt him, went over into *England*, and humbly ſubmits himſelf to Queen *Elizabeth*, who ſends him back upon promiſes of allegiance, and for a while he carried himſelf loyal and civilly; but afterward fell off again, fired *Armach*, beſieged *Dundalk*, and ſpoiled the Country. Againſt him Sir *Henry Sidney* then Deputy of *Ireland* came with ſeven Companies of foot and a Troop of horſe; *O-Neal* in a pitch'd
1565. field is overthrown, and in divers other skirmiſhes ſo foiled, that he purpoſeth with an halter about his neck to ſubmit himſelf to the Deputy: but his Secretary adviſeth him to try his fortune once more by the ſword, in making amity with the wild Scots then in *Claneboy*; this counſel he takes, and repairs with *O-Donels* wife his Adultereſſe-concubine to the Scots camp, where being at firſt welcomed and entertained, was afterward hacked in peeces by *Mac Gilleſpic* and *Alexander Oge* two Scots Captains, becauſe *Shan* had killed heretofore this *Alexanders* brother; a few of *Shans* followers eſcaped by flight; and ſo *Ulſter* is freed from its oppreſſion under *O-Neal*.

1567. The eight years being expired for reſtitution of *Calice* to the Engliſh, Sir *Thomas Smith* is ſent with Sir *Henry Norris*, to demand the Town and Forts about it, according to agreement; but the Towns-governors will not be ſpoken with; whereupon they repair to King *Charles*, who told them, That none had right to *Calice* but himſelf; the Queen-mother alſo added, That the Engliſh by invading *Scotland* and *New-haven*, had forfeited *Calice*: Sir *Thomas* replies, That the French had loſt *Calice* by ſending forces into *Scotland*, and ſolliciting the Scots Lords to invade *England*, which they refuſed to do, as being againſt their late treaty and league with Queen *Elizabeth*; the French alſo had armed

Normandy

Normandy and *Britany*, and hired divers German forces against *England*, and did beare also the Arms of *England*: The Queen-mother replied, that the Engliſh did beare the Arms of *France*; but however ſhe affirms, that what the King of *Scotland* did in his Wives right, ſhould not be imputed to King *Charls* her ſon. Then the King willed the Ambaſſadors to abſent themſelves a while, till he had talked with his Councel; and ſo after an houre they were ſent for again, and told, That five thouſand French onely were ſent into *Scotland* to ſuppreſſe the rebellion of the Proteſtant Lords there, and not to invade *England*, whereas Queen *Elizabeth* had ſent fifteen thouſand thither to aſſiſt the Rebels: Sir *Thomas* anſwers, That the Queen hearing of ſuch great preparations, was neceſſitated to ſend great aid both by ſea and land, not to aſſiſt Rebels, but to maintain ſuch as were oppreſſed for their conſcience. The Chancellor of *France* alſo tels him, that *Calice* ſtood upon French, not Engliſh ground; and as the Engliſh had right to it by the fortune of war, ſo now the French have the ſame, beſides that they enjoyed it long before the Engliſh took it, who had alſo once poſſeſſed and enjoyed *Aquitain* and other places, which long ſince they have loſt; the Engliſh claim two hundred years poſſeſſion, the French above five hundred years; if preſcription then could ſtand among Princes as among private men, the French can preſcribe a far longer time then the Engliſh: As for king *Francis* the 2. he did not therefore intend to invade *England*, becauſe the Engliſh thought ſo, for ſuſpitions and thoughts are no realities; but the Engliſh Queen did really invade *France*, upon a fair pretence of keeping the Towns for the Kings uſe, but ſhe kept *New-haven* as a pledge for *Calice*, whereby ſhe hath loſt her right to *Calice*: withall he ſhews, that God having divided *England* from *France* by the ſea, the Engliſh ſhould content themſelves within their own confines: therefore he wiſheth them to entertain peace with *France*, which will do them more good then the gaining of *Calice*. To this Sir *Thomas* anſwers, That the Engliſh made no invaſion upon *France*, but were invited thither by divers of the Nobility and others then in danger; nor when they were landed did they uſe any hoſtility, or take an hen or egge but what they paid for; and if that aid had not come from *England*, much of *France* had been ruined: As for the Queens keeping of *New-haven*, ſhe had reaſon ſo to do, having been at ſo great charge and coſt; ſhe deſerved to have ſome reaſon offered her in her right to *Calice*. But (ſaith the Conſtable) ſo much proviſion of victuals, men and ammunition, and ſo many ſhips, could not be for *New-haven* alone; therefore the Queen muſt have had further deſignes: No (ſaith Sir *Thomas*) it was onely out of providence that this proviſion was had, becauſe ſea and winde doe not ſerve at all times. At laſt after much debate, both the King and Queen-mother, and all the Councel told him plainly, that they would entertain amity with the Engliſh Queen, but *France* would not part any more with *Calice*.

An. Chriſti.

1569.

At the ſame time the troubles of *Scotland* were ſo great, that the King was ſhamefully murthered, and the Queen baniſhed; who ſetting ſail for *France*, was by contrary winds driven into *Cumberland*. Queen *Elizabeth* ſolliciteth the Scots on her behalf, but they could not be induced to admit her again, ſo ſhe is forced to ſtay in *England*. Mean while the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Weſtmorland* with ſome others, pretending Religion, flie out into Rebellion, intending to ſurpriſe the Earle of *Suſſex* Lieutenant of the North; but they were prevented, and the Queen had notice of their intents, wherfore ſhe ſends for *Northumberland* to the Court, who out of feare removed from his Caſtle of *Topcliffe* in York-ſhire, and goeth to *Branſpath*, where meeting with the Earle of *Weſtmorland*, they command the Country to take arms, pretending it was to aid the Queen, and to reſtore the old Religion; which if they ſhould neglect, forraigne Princes would do it, to the danger of the whole kingdome. From thence they go to *Durham*, where they tore the Bible; at *Rippon* they heard Maſſe; thence they went to *Bramham-Moore*, where they muſtered

ſixteen

An. Christi. sixteen hundred horse and four thousand foot; then they fall upon *Barnards* Castle, which in eleven dayes they took; they grew so high, that in their letters they called the queen, *Elizabeth* the late and pretended queen: Upon this they are proclaimed traitours; *Carlile*-Castle is kept against them by the Lord *Scroop* and Earl of *Cumberland*. The Earl of *Sussex* Lieutenant of the North with an army follows the enemy, who was both heartlesse and moneyless, the one hundred thousand crowns failing them which the Pope promised. The chief heads of these Rebels finding their inability to resist so great a power as was comming against them, resolve to flie into *Scotland* to those Lords that stood out for the Roman religion, which they did accordingly, and left their army to the mercy of *Sussex*, who surprised them without resistance, so that at *Durham* and about in the country many were put to death.

This execution made many desperate, who in revenge of their friends put to death, gather head under *Leonard Dacres*; these neer to *Naworth* fought de-
1570. speratly with the Lord *Hunsdon*, who at last caused them to give back, and *Dacres* to flie into *Scotland*; where *Northumberland* is taken by the Regent, and sent into *England*, and beheaded at *York*, declaring the Popes supremacy, the Queens heresie, and the kingdomes misery, being now in a schisme. *Westmerland* was shifted away into *Flanders*, where he died miserably of ulcers.

About this time, *Nicholas Morton* an English-man, made Bishop by Pope *Pius Quintus*, procures at *Rome* a Bull against queen *Elizabeth*, whereby she is declared an Heretick, an usurper, and uncapable of the Crown; therefore all her subjects are absolved from their allegiance to her, and curses denounced against such as should obey her: this Bull was hanged up at the Bishop of *Londons* gate, and had many patrons and abettors, who came to untimely deaths; among whom was Dr. *Story* a Civilian, who having escaped out of prison, got over into *Antwerp*, where being imployed by the Duke *Alva* to
1571. search all ships for English-bibles, was catcht by one *Parker* a Merchant, as he was searching his ship, and carried over into *England*, where he was executed
1573. at *Tyburn*. One *Sommervel* intended to murther the queen, but was prevented, apprehended, imprisoned and condemned, but in the prison he strangled himself to death. One hundred and twenty Jesuits were apprehended, fifty three of which were banished, the rest executed, among whom was *Edmund Campian*; *Robert Parsons* escaped. In *Cornwal*, *Cuthert Mayne* disswades the people from obeying the Queen; In other places, *Nelson* and divers others were imployed to the same purpose: *Thompson* brought holy-oyle to anoint the Priests, and *Hemford* a dispensation from the Pope: *Haidock* was imployed to find out the fittest landing-place for strangers, and to prepare aides at home: *John Pain* with fifty more were encouraged to kill the queen by a violent assault.

Francis Throgmorton was imployed by *Mendoza* the Spanish Ambassadour in
1583. *London*, to collect the names of the English great-men who stood for the Catholick cause; to whom was joyned *Charls Paget*: abroad divers were set on work, to sollicite the king of *Spain* to invade *England*: The Duke of *Guise* undertook to be the leader, if *Rome* and *Spain* would bear the charges. *Throgmorton* delivers to *Mendoza* his chard of the Havens of *England*, with a list of Catholick aiders; *Arundel* in *Sussex* was held the fittest place for landing: but *Throgmorton* upon suspition is apprehended, and his study searched, where were found the list of his Catholicks, the Havens for landing, with pedigrees touching the English Crown, and some libels against the Queen; but a casket with some other things unknown were secretly conveyed to the Spanish Ambassadours. This whole conspiracy *Throgmorton* confesseth, & suffereth. *William Parry* for burglary was to die, but obtained pardon from Q. *Elizabeth*; yet after-
1584. ward he went about to take away her life, by pretending that he would discover the names of divers who had plotted against her, but still his heart failed him, when he came to speak with her. At last his treason was discovered by one

one Mr. *Nevil* whom he thought to be ſure on his ſide, which Treaſon he confeſſed himſelf, and by his letter to the Lords of the Councel ſeems to abhor it, and craves pardon for it, but when he ſaw he was to be executed, he denied his former confeſſion. One *Appletree* (whether purpoſely or caſually was not known) diſcharged a bullet, and ſhot the water-man in the Barge where the Queen was, within ſix foot of her ſeat, but ſhe pardoned the offender. *Henry Percy* Earl of *Northumberland*, being of *Throgmortons* conſpiracy, was ſent to the Tower, where he murthereth himſelf by diſcharging a dag with three bullets under his left pap. *An. Chriſti.*

There were beſides theſe, divers other Treaſons hatched by the Earl of *Arundel*, Sir *John Perot* Deputy of *Ireland*, *Babington*, *Tichburn*, *Ballard*, and divers others, ſome of theſe ſuffered at *Tyburn*; *Babington*, *Charnock* and *Savage* in *Lincolns-Inne*-fields. *Cullen* an *Iriſh* Fencer undertook the death of the Queen for thirty pounds, he ſuffered at *Tyburn*. *Sanders* wrote againſt the Queen; ſo did *Creſwel* under the name of *Philopater*, and *Parſons* under the title of *Doleman* concerning titles of the Crown. Dr. *Lopez* the *Portugal* Phyſitian for a rich jewel given him by a *Spaniſh* Counſellor, and a promiſe of fifty thouſand crowns, undertakes to poyſon the Queen by a potion; but the matter was not carried ſo cloſe as was thought: *Lopez* was appointed to give the Queen phyſick, purpoſely to try him, the phyſick being brought, the Queen wiſheth him to miniſter to the Treaſurer *Cecil* who had more need of phyſick then ſhe; when he came to *Cecil* he is apprehended for a Traitor, the ingredients of his potion are examined by other Doctors, and it was found poyſon; ſo he is arraigned, and with his two conſorts hanged at *Tyburn*.

After theſe, *Yerk*, *Williams* and others, were animated at *Bruxels* by *Holt* the *Engliſh* Jeſuite to kill the Queen, but the plot was diſcovered and prevented, and the plotters hanged. The laſt that publikely attempted the Queens death was *Squire*, firſt a Scrivener, and then a Purveyor in the Queens ſtable, he being taken at ſea (as he was ſailing after Sir *Francis Drake*) by ſome *Spaniards*, is ſet upon by *Walepool* an *Engliſh-man*, to poyſon the pommel of the Queens ſaddle, which he did as ſoon as he came into *England*, being exchanged for a *Spaniſh* priſoner; but the poyſon had loſt its vertue, for it did no hurt neither to the Queen, nor to the Earl of *Eſſex*, as was intended; but *Walepool* hearing no news of his plot, ſuſpected *Squire* for a falſe brother, and fearing he would reveal divers ſecrets, prevents him, by diſpatching one into *England* to inform againſt *Squire*; this Informer at firſt was not credited, yet *Squire* was examined, and ſome paſſages in his anſwer laid hold on, which made him be ſuſpected, and ſo upon advice of his friends he confeſſed; and accordingly ſuffered.

The thirteenth year of her Reign an Act was made that none ſhould name any particular perſon to be the Queens heir or ſucceſſor: *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk*, for favouring too much the *Scots* cauſe, is beheaded on the Tower-hill. This year was ſeen that ſtrange Star or Comet in *Caſſiopæa*, it was obſerved to be higher then the Moon, and not much leſſer then *Venus*. Queen *Elizabeth* ſends fifteen hundred men to aid the Regent of *Scotland* againſt the other faction; *Edinburgh*-Caſtle is battered with thirty Canons, and at laſt for want of water is ſurrendred by compoſition to the uſe of the young King. About this time the Royal-Exchange was built by Sir *Thomas Greſham*. Sir *Martin Forbuſher* made ſail into the North-Eaſt-ſeas, further then any other had done; he attempted the next year thirty leagues further, and a third time he aſſayed further. Sir *Francis Drake* with five ſhips, and a hundred ſixty four men paſt the line three and thirty degrees of latitude, and in the ſix and thirtieth degree enters the river *Plate*; with three of his ſhips he paſſed the ſtrait of *Magellan*, leaving the other two as impediments to him, the Marrigold was alſo loſt, Mr. *Winters* ſhip ſhaken off by ſtorms recovered *England*, but the Pelican, whereof he was Admiral, held on her courſe upon the Weſt of *America*

1571. 1572. 1573. 1576. 1577.

An. Christi. 1578. *rica*, where he passed the line to the latitude 47 but finding no passage by reason of fogs and ice, returned South-west, and came to anchor eight and thirty degrees from the line, where the King of that Country presented unto him his Crown of feathers, admiring our men, and sacrificing to them as to gods: this place he calls *Nova Albion*; at his departure he erects a Plate of brasse as a monument, wherein was engraven the Queens name, and her picture, with her Arms in a peece of silver under the Plate; from thence he came to the Isles of *Molucco*, and thence to *Java Major*, and so to the Cape of Good-hope, and then he fell with the coast of *Guinea*, whence crossing again the line, he came to the height of the *Azores*, and then to *England*, having 1580. been absent three years wanting twelve dayes; his ship was laid up in the Dock near *Deptford*, and the Captain Knighted.

And now the *English* begin to trade with the *Muscovites* and *Turks*; the *Sultan* upon the request of the *English* Ambassador made peace with the *Polander*, which *Sultan* by his letter to Queen *Elizabeth* inciteth her to make 1583. war against *Spain*. Pope *Gregory* the 13. stirs up the King of *Spain*, having obtained *Portugal*, to war against *England*, in favour of the *Irish* Rebels, offering to acquit him of the fruits of the Archbishoprick of *Toledo*, long retained in his hands; the Archbishop being suspended, wherefore they two joyn in hope to conquer *Ireland*; the Pope sends six hundred men under the command of *Thomas Stukely*, whom he stiled Marquesse of *Ireland*; the *Spaniard* bears all the charge, with the addition of three hundred *Spaniards*, and sends money to raise four thousand men more; these landed in the County of *Kerry*, raised their Standart, and built a fort; by these means *Desmond* hoped to be King of *Ireland*.

The Lord *Grey* Deputy of *Ireland*, with his forces fell upon these strangers, and puts them to the sword, a few being reserved for ransomes: the Fort had store of money, armour, shot, powder, and other provision; all the *Irish* there as well women as men died, and *Desmond* driven into the woods, was in a cottage wounded by a souldier, who at length cut off his head. The Earl of *Essex* is sent over to reduce the wilde *Irish* in *Ulster*, which had been pretty quiet after the Queen had enacted, That no man should assume the name of *O-Neale* till *Turlogh Leinigh*, a brothers son of *Con-More* grand-father of *Shan-O-Neal*, of whom we have spoken already. This *Turlogh* disquieted the *Scots* of the Islands, and slew *Alexander Oge*, the slayer of *Shan O-Neal* his son in law; *Hugh* Baron of *Duncannon* escaped from him into *England*, on whom the Queen bestowed the command of a troop of horse, and a thousand marks *per annum*, and for his good service against *Desmond* he obtained the title of Earl of *Tir-Oen*; upon this old *Turlogh* resigns to him the government of *Ulster* on certain conditions, chiefly, that they both should joyn their forces to maintain the *Roman* Religion. *Mac-Guyre* encouraged by *Guaran* Primate of *Ireland*, began first to stir, but is discomfited by Sir *Richard Bingham*, and *Guaran* slain in the field. *Mac-Guyre* after this flies out into open Rebellion, whom *Tir-Oen* pursueth and receiveth a wound in his thigh, which made him gracious at the *English* Court: he procured *Fitz-williams* the Deputy to be called home, in whose place Sir *William Russel* is put, whom he flatters with such fine words, that although the Marshal charged him with many subordinations of *Mac-Guyre*, yet he was dismissed, to the great discontent of the Queen, and disquietness of the land.

King *Philip* of *Spain* had before this been incensed by Queen *Elizabeth*, for entertaining the fugitive *Netherlanders* his subjects in her Kingdom, whom she thought she could not in honour banish, having fled thither for the safety of their lives, and liberty of their consciences: She also desires that *Westmerland*, with others of her Rebels should be banished the *Spanish* dominions. The *Netherlanders* abhorring the *Spanish* Inquisition, send to Queen *Elizabeth* to protect them, which at first she seemed to be unwilling, as being loth to provoke

voke *Spain* againſt her, but ſent to King *Philip* to commiſerate his afflicted people, which he refuſing to do, ſhe ſends (being ſollicited the ſecond time by the *Netherlanders*) in Bullion the value of forty thouſand angels in part of an hundred thouſand pounds promiſed, which made *Don John* of *Auſtria* then governour of *Belgium* interpoſe himſelf in the *Scottiſh* affairs to diſturb *England*. The *French* to make *England* ſurer to them, ſend over Monſieut Duke of *Anjou* the Kings brother, to marry Queen *Elizabeth*, whom ſhe magnificently entertained, but would not aſſent to marry him. *An. Chriſti.*

The fame of this Monſieur was ſo great, that the *Netherlanders* (having declared againſt the tyranny of King *Philip*) choſe him for their Protector; but he died not long after in *France*, and *William* of *Naſſaw* is proclaimed Traitor, his eſtate confiſcated, and promiſed with twenty thouſand crowns annual to him that ſhall bring him dead or alive, whereupon he is murthered at *Delph*; therefore the Queen is ſollicited again, as alſo *Henry* the French King for relief; the Queen ſends the Earl of *Derby* into *France* in behalf of theſe Provinces, but he being in danger of the *Guiſe* and the League, recommends back again their diſtreſſes to the Queen, promiſing his relief; hereupon ſhe undertakes their protection by advice of her Councel, becauſe ſhe was bound (ſay they) to defend the Goſpel, to relieve the oppreſſed Proteſtants, to keep off the ſtrength of *Spain* from ſetling too near, and to revenge the invaſion of *Ireland*: hereupon Articles being drawn, Sir *John Norris* is ſent over with five thouſand foot, and one thouſand horſe on the Queens pay during the war; for which money, *Fluſhing*, *Bril*, two Seonces, and the Caſtle of *Ramekins* in *Holland* were pledged to the Queen. 1585.

The Pope and *Spaniard* were highly diſpleaſed with the Queen, who in two books taxe her of ingratitude to K. *Philip* who ſaved her life, and of intended murthering of the Prince of *Parma*, to which an anſwer was publiſhed; and reaſons ſhewed why ſhe undertook the protection of theſe Provinces, becauſe of their ſcituation and vicinity, becauſe of many ancient leagues between *England* and the Dukes of *Burgundy*, becauſe of the *Spaniards* tyranny, and the priviledges thoſe Countries have to make choice of any other head, when they are oppreſſed by the preſent governour, and becauſe *Mendoza* practiſed with *Throgmorton* to bring into *England* foreign power.

Things thus ordered, *Robert Dudly* Baron of *Denbigh*, Earl of *Leiceſter*, and the Earl of *Northumberlands* ſon, is ſent over as the Queens Deputy-General, who at the *Hague* took an oath of the States to the Queen, and claimed abſolute authority over them; at which ſhe was offended, declaring ſhe promiſed to be their Protector, but not their Sovereign; mean while all *Engliſh* ſhips and goods are arreſted in *Spain*. Pope *Sixtus* 5. ſends to the Prince of *Parma* a conſecrated Sword, with a Hat. The *Netherlanders* are put in fear that the Queen meant to make peace with the *Spaniard* without them, but by her letters ſhe freed them from this fear. After this the *Spaniards* and *Engliſh* skirmiſh near *Zutphen*, in which though the *Spaniard* was worſted, Sir *Philip Sidney* being ſhot in the thigh loſt his life: but the States grew diſcontented with *Leiceſter* their governour, for making *York* and *Stanly* two Spanioliſed perſons governours of Towns, to wit, of *Deventer* and *Sconce*, which afterward they ſold to the *Spaniard*, and for ſome other points of his miſgovernment; but he haſteneth over into *England* to be preſent in Parliament at the handling of the Queen of *Scots* cauſe, who was beheaded at *Fotheringhay*-Caſtle; Queen *Elizabeth* ſeeming much grieved at it, by puniſhing her Secretary the chief actor therein, with impriſoment, and the loſſe of her preſence and his place: the body of Queen *Mary* was interred in *Peterborough*-Church under a hearſe of black-velvet, and was tranſlated thence by her ſon King *James* to King *Henry* the 7. Chappel, and laid under white-marble. 1586. 1587.

In *Leiceſters* abſence, many diſorders were committed by the Engliſh; wherefore *Maurice* the younger ſonne of *William* Prince of *Orange* is choſen

An. Christi. Governor. *Buckhurst* is ſent into *Holland* to examine complaints, at which *Leiceſter* is offended, who recalls Sir *John Norris*, (to the diſlike of the States) and ſends him into *Ireland*; then he returns into *Belgium*, where he is blamed for the ſurrendring of *Sluce*; factions did increaſe, and many Towns reject his government; hereupon he is recalled into *England* by the Queen, and commanded to reſign his government, which done, it is proclaimed through all the Provinces. Mean time king *Philip* is preparing of his great Fleet, and withall bears the Queen in hand that he aimed at a generall peace, which ſhe believed, but could not perſwade the States to give credit that he intended peace, who was head of the Holy-league, perſecuted Proteſtants, and was preparing of a Fleet; therefore they to be in readineſſe, fit their War-ſhips, and
1588. preſſe a thouſand Sailers to aid her, if need be. Notwithſtanding this, Commiſſioners are ſent out of *England* to confer with *Parma* about the peace, with king *Philips* Commiſſioners; much time is ſpent about precedencie, and the place of meeting, at laſt the Engliſh have the priority, and the place is *Oſtend.*

The Queen demands a Ceſſation of arms, a preſent Truce, a diſmiſſion of foraign ſouldiers, a reſtitution of the monies lent by her to the States, an enjoyment of their ancient Liberties, and a Toleration of Religion for two years, and a Confirmation of the Articles of *Gaunt*; ſo ſhe promiſeth to deliver up the Towns again. All theſe demands are rejected by the Spaniards. Meanwhile Pope *Sixtus* 5. ſends out his Bul to confirm the Excommunications of his two former Predeceſſors againſt the Queen; and Cardinal *Allen* ſets out a bitter book, wherein he exhorts all to joyn with King *Philip* and *Parma* againſt her: This book the Queen ſent to *Parma*, but he ſlighted it off with a complement. In the interim it is given out, that King *Philip* had kept fifty thouſand men in pay almoſt a whole year, by means of that Treaty: And at laſt the great *Armado* begins to appeare, in which were 72 Gallions and Galliaſſes, 47 Ships and Hulks, 11 Pinaces and Carvals, 2843 great Ordnance, 8094 Sailers, 18658 Souldiers, 2088 Gally-ſlaves, 220000 Bullets for great ſhot, 4200 Kintals of Powder, 200 Kintals of Match, 7000 Muskets and Calivers, beſides incredible ſtore of other proviſions, Bisket and Wine for ſixe moneths, with Bacon, Cheeſe, Fleſh, Rice, &c. this Army coſt king *Philip* thirty thouſand Ducats every day. The Generall was the Duke of *Medina*, the Admiral Don *Martinez*; Don *Martin Alorcon* was Vicar-general for the Inquiſition, with whom were an hundred Monks and Jeſuites; Cardinal *Allen* is Superintendent of Church-matters, he tranſlates the Popes Bull into Engliſh and ſends it away; In this Fleet were divers of the Nobility and Gentry of *Spain* and *Portugal*. The Duke of *Parma* alſo prepared a great Navy, with 300 ſmall Boats, and 70 flat-bottom'd, every one able to beare 30 horſes, with a world of all ſort of furniture and proviſion: Neer *Newport* he had 30 companies of *Italians*, 2 of *Walloons*, and 8 of *Burgundians*; at *Dyxmew* he had 80 Companies of *Netherlanders*, 60 of *Spaniards*, and 60 of *High-Dutch*, beſides 7 of *Engliſh*. The Pope ſends forth his Cruſado, and promiſeth a million of gold, with a proviſo that he ſhould hold the Engliſh Crown as feudatory to the See of *Rome.*

To prevent this ſtorm, *Charles Howard* High-Admiral of *England* is ſent into the ſeas; the Lord *Seymer* with the ſhips of *Belgium* kept betwixt *Calice* and *Dover*: The Queen being advertiſed by the French king, that this fleet was for *England*, cauſed all the Trained bands through the kingdome to be muſtered and in readineſſe, the Earl of *Leiceſter* is made Lieutenant over them, *Tilbury* in *Eſſex* was the place for the Camp; there were two and twenty thouſand foot and ſixteen hundred horſe; the Queens guard conſiſted of two thouſand two hundred and fifty two horſe, and of foot thirty four thouſand and fifty. But the great Spaniſh Navy is ſo toſſed with a ſtorm, that the Duke of *Medina* is driven back into the *Groine*, and eight other of their ſhips diſperſed and torne, beſides three Portugal gallies which fell upon the coaſt of *Bayon*

and

and were ſet upon by their own ſlaves, who freed themſelves by the ſlaughter of many *Spaniards*. Sir *Francis Drake* Vice-Admiral goeth weſtward, and joyneth his fleet with the reſt, which made up an hundred ſaile. *An. Chriſti.*

The Admiral hearing in what diſtreſſe the Spaniſh fleet was, did bear ſaile towards *Spain*; but the wind turning South, he returns homeward and Anchored his fleet in *Plimouth* haven; the Spaniards put again to ſea, and at laſt caſt anchor in the Channel of the Narrow-ſeas; ſome Pinaces are diſpatched to *Parma*, to forward his charge for the kings ſervice: ſudden news is brought to the Admiral, that the Armado was come, which by reaſon of ſickneſſe, and the former ſtorm, was not expected that year: Wherefore all hands are ſet on work to warp out the ſhips then in the harbour, and many of the men on ſhore; at length they got out to ſea, and having advantage of the wind, diſcharged their Cannon on the Spaniards, and were anſwered in the ſame language; the next day, the two fleets fought within musket-ſhot; the Engliſh Admiral fell fiercely on the Vice-admiral of *Spain*; a Gallion in which were ſome Dons, was ſorely battered by the Engliſh, whoſe ſhips were lower and nimbler, whereas the Spaniſh high Veſſels were fitter for defence then offence: The next day *Drake* commands this Gallion to yeeld, Don *Pedro* at firſt refuſed, but underſtanding that it was *Drake*, who had him in chaſe, came on board his ſhip, where after ſome complements, he is kindely uſed by *Drake*, and lodged in his own Cabbin; the reſt of that company were ſent to *Plimouth*, where they ſtaid eighteen moneths till their ranſome were paid; in that ſhip were found five and fifty Ducats in gold: that ſame day *Oquendo's* great Gallion fell on fire, the upper part whereof, and moſt of the perſons were conſumed, the Hulk was brought into *Plimouth*.

Neer *Portland* a fierce encounter was between the Engliſh and Spaniards, wherein a great Venetian ſhip with ſome ſmaller were ſurpriſed. The 24. day of *July*, a great fight was between four Galliaſſes and the Engliſh fleet, in which though the Spaniards were galled with chain ſhot from our ſhips, yet they had the advantage becauſe our powder failed; which being ſupplied, our fleet is divided into four ſquadrons, under four Commanders; namely, the Admiral, *Drake*, *Hawkins*, and *Forbiſher*. *July* 25. againſt the Iſle of *Wight*, was a cruel encounter, each diſcharging their whole-ſides. The 27 of *July*, the Spaniards anchored in ſight of *Calice*, intending for *Dunkirk*, there to joyn with the Duke of *Parma*, to whom *Medina* ſends to haſten his forces; but the Spaniſh ſhips were ſo planked with beams, that Bullets could not pierce them; wherefore eight Engliſh-ſhips are filled with powder, brimſtone, and other combuſtible matter, which *July* 28 about midnight were let drive with Wind and Tide among the Spaniſh fleet; this cauſed the Spaniards, being ſuddenly affrighted, to cut their cables, or elſe they had been all fired; in this confuſed haſte, one of their Galliaſſes of *Naples* fell foule on another ſhip, and loſt her rudder, and ſo was aſſaulted by the Engliſh on a ſhelve in the ſhore of *Calice*; her General *Moncado* was ſlain in the fight, and many more Spaniards, many leaped into the Sea and were drowned: In her were four hundred ſouldiers, and three hundred ſlaves, which were now freed from their fetters; and a booty found of fifty thouſand Ducats; the governour of *Calice* would not ſuffer the veſſel to be ſet on fire.

The 29 of *July*, over againſt *Grevcling*, a ſore conflict continued that day, in which a Gallion of *Biſca* periſhed, wherein the Captains in madneſſe killed each others: Two great ſhips beſides preſently ſunk; *Francis de Toledo*, with others, committed themſelves to the Skiff, and arrived at *Oſtend*. The St. *Philip* a Gallion of *Portugal*, in which he was, with the ſouldiers in her, were taken by the *Fluſhingers*. The St. *Mathew*, another *Portugal* Gallion was ſo ſhot, that her leaks could not be ſtopt. *Don Diego Pimentelli*, refuſing *Medina's* courteſie, who would have ſaved him in a skiff, was afterward taken on the coaſt of *Flanders* by five men of war, and carried into *Zealand*; In the interim, *Seymer* with his ſquadron

An. Christi squadron is sent to joyn with the 35 ships of *Holland*, that lay on the coast of *Flanders* to keep in the Duke of *Parma*; but the Armado being weary of fighting, spread their main-sails and put to sea, the English Admiral following lest they should put into *Scotland*, but they bent their course toward *Norway*, so about the degree of latitude 57. our Admiral left them.

The *Spaniards* considering with themselves, how they had lost five thousand of their men, that many maimed and sick souldiers lay on their hands, twelve of their greatest ships were sunk, lost and taken, their tackling spoiled and anchors lost, their victuals failing and fresh-water spent, which made them fling their horses and mules overboard, knowing also that *Parma* could not, and *Scotland* would not help them, by reason of their correspondencie with *England*, they held it best to return into *Spain*; so sailing between the *Orcades*, about *Caithnes* and the coast of *Ireland*, kept westward in the main ocean, and returned at length into *Spain*, where the Duke is deposed from all his authority and confined to his house; The residue of the ships, about forty in number, were so battered on the coast of *Ireland*, that divers of them perished, amongst others *Oquendo's* great Galliasse and two great ships of *Venice*, some were driven on the English, some on the French coast, and were taken; so that of 134 ships only 53 returned to *Spain*, of the whole fleet were missing 81 vessels, and of 30000 souldiers 13500. above 2000 prisoners were taken in *England*, *Ireland*, and *Low-Countries*.

All danger being past, the Camp at *Tilbury* is disbanded, and not long after *Leicester* died. The Queen on the 8. of *September* gives solemn thanks to God for this Victory in S. *Pauls*, where on the lower battlements eleven Spanish Ensigns are hung up, the next day they were spread upon *London*-Bridge; the 19. day of *November* was appointed to be kept holy throughout the Land; the Queen upon the Sunday following, being the 24. of *November*, went in state from *White-Hall* to S. *Pauls*, where at the West-door she fell down on her knees, giving solemn thanks to God, and exhorting the people to the same duty. The *Zelanders* on their Coyn stamped the memorial of this day and victory, so did the *Hollanders*.

It being reported that king *Philip* was preparing a new Fleet to recover his lost honour, It was resolved by the Lords and Commons of *England*, That an attempt be made upon *Spain*, and aid given to Don *Antonio* the expulsed King of *Portugal*, who was given out by king *Philip* to be a bastard; after he had driven him out of *Portugal*, he proclaims eight hundred thousand crowns to him that should bring him either dead or alive, yet he was kept disguised eight moneths in *Portugal*; then he fled unto the Court of *France*, where he received aid from the Queen-mother, a competitor also for the Portugal-crown. A fleet is sent to the Isles of *Terceres*, which by the Spaniards is overthrown, eight of the tallest French ships are lost, and two thousand men slain; divers Portugal Captains for this losse were imprisoned as cowards. So *Antonio*
1589. having no more hopes of *France*, repaires into *England*, where he desires the Queen to land him safe in his country; whereupon six of her ships, and twenty more of war, besides others for transportation, accompanied Don *Antonio* from *Plymouth*, Sir *Francis Drake* was Admiral, Sir *John Norris* Generall for land-service, with eleven thousand souldiers, two thousand and five hundred mariners; these landing in the Bay of *Galicia* neer the *Groin*, were encountred by the enemy neer the Town, who forced them back to their gates.

Norris the next day, forced the Gallies which plaied upon his troops, to abandon the road; the Base-town is surprised, five hundred that fled thence to the rocks were slain; in this Town was an incredible magazine of mony, victuals, and arms provided against *England*; the English by immoderate drinking of wine, caused a great infection and mortality in the army; a great Gallion is set on fire by overcharging the great ordnance, this burned two dayes together, so that of fifty great pieces, sixteen only were left; the higher

town

Town held out, being built on a rock; the Miners attempting to blow up the walls, overthrew a part of a tower, the other part falling down unexpectedly, slew Captain *Sydneham* with thirty souldiers; after this *Norris* with nine Regiments met a *Spanish* Army comming against him, and a hot skirmish ensueth, in which Sir *Edward Norris*, with some other Commanders are wounded, notwithstanding the whole Army of *Spaniards* was routed in this service, the Kings Standard is taken, which was displaied before the General; then returning to the *Groine*, the *English* fired the base Town, and so put again to sea, the Earl of *Essex* meets with the fleet, and they all land in *Portugal*, under shot of the Castle of *Peniche*; the enemy fell presently on the *English*, but are beat so, that they take their heels and leave the Town undefended, which presently yeeldeth, and so doth the Castle upon summons, understanding that *Don Antonio* was there. *An. Christi.*

Seven Companies of foot being left to guard the ships, the main Army marcheth over-land to *Lisbon*, and took a Castle by the way: many of the *English* souldiers were poysoned with drinking of standing waters, and eating of poysoned honey left purposely in the houses. The 25. of *May* our Army came to *Lisbon*, whose Suburbs were abandoned and store-houses fired; the enemy in the night time (whilst the *English* were at rest, being wearied with six dayes march and watching) sallied out, and killed Collonel *Bret*, with divers Captains and others; but the Earl of *Essex* fell on them unexpectedly and drove them to the City-gates: in the interim *Cascu* is surprised, the inhabitants being fled to the mountains, who understanding their King was come, professed their loyalty to him, but the Castle held out for the *Spaniard*.

The Duke of *Braganza*, *Francisco de Toledo* and others, promised to aid *Antonio* with three thousand horse and other supplies, but could make no head, because of the *Spanish* Commanders every where: *Antonio* hoping aid would come at last, desired the *English* to stay before *Lisbon* for nine dayes, which could not be granted, because the *English* were sickly and much weakned, nor was there any forwardness in the *Portugals*; *Antonio* desires the Suburbs might not be spoiled: *Essex* in a bravery run his spear and brake it against the gate of that City, challenging any *Spaniard* within to fight with him, but none appeared. The Castle of *Cascais* is rendred upon conditions. Sixty *Spanish* hulks laden with provision for *Lisbon* are taken.

The *English* being at sea again, are overtaken in a calm by nine gallies which sunk some of our stragling ships; Captain *Minshaw* fought to the last after his ship was on fire; so continuing seventeen dayes on board, many dead souldiers are cast into the sea: Then they came to *Vigo* a Town, which with the Country for seven miles compasse they set on fire: Then *Drake* arrives safely at *Plimouth* June 21. and *Norris* July the 2. after.

The state of *France* at this time was much distracted and out of order, therefore a meeting at *Bloys* is appointed of the three Estates for establishing peace and union: For the Clergy appeared a hundred thirty four Deputies, among whom were four Archbishops, one and twenty Bishops, and two Generals of Orders; For the Nobility, a hundred and eighty Gentlemen; For the Commons, a hundred ninety one Merchants and Lawyers: To these King *Henry* the third made a speech tending to union, which was prosecuted by the Chancellor, by the Archbishop of *Bourges*, and by the President for the third Estate; whereupon an oath of union is taken, but the Leagures in the interim disgrace all the Kings actions, and make his government odious, purposely to set the *Guise* in his Throne, who temporised with both. The Clergy excommunicates King *Henry* of *Navar* as an heretick, and deprived him of the government of *Guienne*, but King *Henry* would have him to be summoned, and again to be sworn to the union. To this it was answered, That he had been many times wrought upon to renounce

An. Christi. nounce his hereſie, to no purpoſe; he was excommuninate by the Pope, and therefore king *Henry* was bound to ſubſcribe thereto, otherwiſe *Guiſe* would diſſolve the aſſembly; and ſo *Henry* of *Navar* is pronounced incapable of the crown of *France*.

The king to be rid of the *Guiſes*, intended to deſtroy them both; notice was given to the Duke of this, but he would not believe it, preſuming on his own greatneſſe; but at laſt, he was killed by the kings guard, and ſo was his brother the Cardinal not long after; which ſo incenſed the people, that they defamed the King, defaced his furniture, brake his pictures, dragged his image through the ſtreets of *Paris*, and beat down his arms: The Sorboniſts alſo concluded, that the people were free from their allegiance to him; whereas the Duke of *Guiſe* was highly commended and lamented. The Leaguers prevaile ſo againſt the Parliament, that all ſorts of inſolencies were permitted; beſides, one *Clement* a *Jacobin*, vowed to kill the King, which he did at *Paris*; where he delivered the king a Letter, and with a knife wounded him in the belly, which the king drew forth, and ſtruck the *Jacobin* above the eye, whom alſo the kings ſervants ſtabbed to death: So *Henry* died of his wound.

Upon this, *Henry* of *Navar* is proclaimed by the Army, and named by the laſt *Henry* of *France* his ſucceſſor, in his laſt Will; him Queen *Elizabeth* aſſiſted
1591. againſt the leaguers with twenty thouſand pounds, with ſhips, Arms, and Powder, and with four thouſand ſouldiers at one time, and with three thouſand at another; and to reſiſt *Parma* who was entred *France*, ſhe ſends over *Eſſex* with four thouſand foot and two hundred horſe, theſe landing in *Normandy*, laid
1593. ſiege to *Rohan*, where his brother *Devereux* was ſlain: *Henry* finding the Leaguers too ſtrong for him, and the Popes power ſo great; at laſt renounced his religion, and embraced the Roman Faith; ſo he is abſolved and crowned. In *Brittany* the Spaniards are worſted, with the loſſe of Captain *Forbiſher*, and divers other Engliſh: The Leaguers by treaſons lay wait for his life, and croſs him what they can at *Rome*; at laſt, war is proclaimed between *France* and *Spain*.

To *Erneſtus* in *Belgium*, ſucceeded *Albert* Arch-duke, who prepares againſt the French, and fals firſt upon *Calice*. *Richbank* left unmanned, is ſeiſed on by him, and the town at length upon compoſition is ſurrendred: Queen *Elizabeth* not willing the Spaniards ſhould poſſeſſe that Town, proffers aid to the
1596. French king againſt him; but he weakened by war, was more inclined to harken to conditions of peace; whereat the Queen was diſpleaſed, and prepares another ſea expedition, with a Declaration, ſhewing the cauſes of preparing this fleet, to wit, for defence of her friends and ſubjects; All which ſhe wils to forbear helping of, or trading with the Spaniards: Then about 150 ſaile of Engliſh and Flemmins met at *Plymouth*, under the command of *Charls Howard* Admiral, and the Earl of *Eſſex*: before they put to ſea, the Queen prayed ſolemnly for their good ſucceſſe: At ſea, they met an Iriſh Bark from *Cadiz* ſhewing the ſtrength of the Town, and ſhipping in the Bay, to wit, twenty Gallies, ninety ſhips, five great Gallions, two Galliaſſes, with divers other veſſels, all richly laden, and bound for divers places.

On the twentieth of *June* the Engliſh attempt to land on the Weſt ſide of *Cadiz*, but could not; the place was ſo ſtrong, the next day the Spaniſh fleet prepares to fight: Lord *Thomas Howard*, with ſome *Londoners*, and a ſquadron of *Belgick* ſhips began the skirmiſh; *Eſſex* and *Charls Howard* ſeconded them: *Wink field* aſſailed the Gallies, which got paſſage at the bridge: The Spaniſh Admiral St. *Philip* is ſore battered, and ſet on fire, and ſo was the St. *Thomas*; that they might not come into the Engliſh hands, the reſt of the Spaniſh fleet ran themſelves on ground. Then *Eſſex* lands his men; ſome Regiments are ſent to the Bridge to impeach all ſupplies from the main, *Eſſex* with the reſt took towards *Cadiz*, which at firſt plaid ſo ſore upon the Engliſh, that the formoſt began to give back, till *Eſſex* caught his own Colours, and caſt them over

over the wall into the Town, to engage his men: a furious assault is made, the Colours regained, and the Town surprised, though with the losse of many English, among whom Sr. *John Wink field* was slain. *An. Christi.*

The Town and Castle being surrendred, the fury of the souldiers is staid by proclamation, great respect was shewed to religious Persons, women and children; the Ladies were suffered to depart quietly with their Jewels, the Generals standing by to see them safely shipped. The Bishop of *Cusco* is released without ransome, the spoile of the town is given to the souldiers, one hundred and twenty thousand Ducats are promised by the townsmen for their ransom; the ships also that ran on shore offered two millions and a half of Ducats for their ransom; but the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, Admiral of *Spain*, caused them all to be set on fire, yet the *Matthew* was saved, and so was the *Andrew*: thus was that rich fleet suddenly consumed, the town ransacked and burned, and the whole Island wasted.

The English having abandoned *Cadiz*, set saile Westward towards *Faro*, a town in *Algarva*; where the Earl landing his men, took what they found in the town forsaken by its inhabitants, and forraged the Country for three leagues about. Thence they put to sea again, and landed safely at *Plymouth*, *August* 7. 1597.

The next year, the Earl of *Essex* is employed by the Queen, both as Admiral and General in another Voyage against the Spaniard, with six thousand men, besides Mariners, in one hundred and twenty ships, which *July* 9. set saile from *Plymouth* for the *Azores*, but were driven back by storm; they set saile again *August* 17. and *September* 15. they arrived at those Isles, which submitted presently; they sackt the town *Villa-Franca*, took a *Brasil*-man, and three prizes, which they brought into *England*, worth four hundred thousand Ducats.

The traffique of *Spain* failing by reason of these wars, the young king of *Poland*, *Sigismund*, sent an Ambassadour to Queen *Elizabeth*, who had audience at *Greenwich*; He complains that the *Poland* Merchants are hindred in their trade with *Spain* by sea, which should be open to all; therefore wisheth some redresse and restitution be made, or else his Master who is so neerly allied to the King of *Spain* and house of *Austria*, would seek some means to right himself: to this the Queen in latine answered, That his Master was too young and unexperienced in negotiating with Princes; and that his threatning speech savoured more of ignorance and arogance, then of judgement and good manners; She shews him that it was not against the law of nature for her to intercept military helps from any to her enemy: so wishing him to wait for a further answer from her Counsel, she riseth in anger.

Another Ambassadour comes from *Denmark*, to intreat a peace between *Spain* and *England*, and amity between *England* and *Denmark*; and a free Traffique between *Spain* and *Denmark*; whereas hitherto the Danish Merchants had suffered by the English; and lastly, he delivers to her the Garter, which the former King deceased had worn: For the peace with *Spain*, she told him, she broke it not; nor would she sue for confirmation of it, especially by so young a King as the *Dane* was; as for peace with *Denmark*, she was willing to continue it; but for any wrongs done by her ships on the Danish Merchants, she knew not; if any should appear, satisfaction should be made. Shortly after this, the English Merchants are arrested in the *Sound*; for which cause the Queen sends thither an Ambassadour, to whom all satisfaction and content is given by the *Dane*.

Mean while *Tir-Oen*, whom the Queen had made an Earl, and pardoned twice, begins to stir against her; and first he assails the Fort of *Black-water*, by which the entry lay into his country, and got it by surrender; Then he writes to *Kildare*, to side with him; and to Sir *John Norris* appointed Lord General, to use him mildly, lest he should flie out into disloialty: In this mean time, his guard consisted of one thousand horse, and six thousand two hundred and eighty foot of *Ulster*, and two thousand three hundred of *Conaught*; all which

An. Christi. are proclaimed traitours: The Queen willing to be quiet, sent Commissioners to confer with the Earl, who complains of the wrongs done him by Sir *Henry Bagnal* Marshal: then he petitions that he and his may be pardoned, and restored to their estates; that they might freely exercise the old Religion; that no souldier or Sheriff should meddle with the jurisdiction of his Earldome; that he may be restored to his pay, and Company of fifty horse; that the spoilers of his Country be punished; and that *Bagnal* should pay him the thousand pounds promised him in Dowry with his sister, *Tirons* wife: Then the Commissioners propounded these Articles to him, That he would lay down Arms and submit, reedifie the defaced Forts, admit the Queens Officers, restore the spoils, confesse how far they had dealt with forreign Princes, and lastly to disclaim all forreign aide. *Tir-Oen* would not hearken to these demands; therefore *Norris* with the Deputies help, marcheth into *Armagh*; whereupon *Tir-Oen* forsakes *Blak-water* Fort, fires the Villages about, and plucks down *Dunsannon* town, with part of his own house: *Norris* sets a garrison in the Church of *Armagh*, and proclaims *Tir-Oen* traitour.

Tir-Oen to gain time, presents a feined submission, prostrates himself before the Queens Picture, ungirds his sword, and craves pardon; where in the interim he deals with *Spain* for aide, and messengers thence are sent him with promises of men and arms: Hereupon he makes havock of the countrey, and then sues for pardon again; and withall sends king *Philips* letters, and the causes of his own discontent to the Deputy: In the mean time, most of *Connaught* revolteth, and all *Ulster* rebelleth, except seven Castles that kept for the Queen. Thomas Lord *Burrough* is sent Deputy into *Ireland*, and *Norris* upon discontent dieth. The new Deputy makes forward to meet with the Rebels, who encountred him, but they loose *Blackwater* Fort again; and whilest they endeavoured to rescue it, *Kildare* interposeth, and discomfiteth them, but with the losse of some prime men, and dear friends; for which he died of grief.

1598. *Tir-Oen* rallieth his forces again, and in the Deputies absence, beleagures it with all his strength: The Deputy hearing of this, hasteth to rescue it, but by the way he dieth. Then was the Earl of *Ormond* made Governour of *Ireland*. *Tir-Oen* again complains of the wrongs he sustained, and oppressions of *Ireland* under the English, by which his disaffection to the English Nation was known: *Bagnal* is sent to raise the siege at *Blackwater* with fourteen companies; neer *Armagh* the enemy meets him, where in a bloody conflict *Bagnal* is slain, and the English quite defeated: here thirteen Captains were slain, and fifteen hundred common souldiers were routed and cut off; hereupon the garrison of *Blackwater* is surrendred, and *Tir-Oen* furnished with all sorts of provision and arms.

Tir-Oen puft up with this successe, sends four thousand into *Munster*, who prosecute the English there with fire and sword, and after a moneth return richly laden: He sends letters also to king *Philip* of *Spain*, promising to keep his allegiance to *Spain*, and enmity with *England*. In this sad condition of *Ireland*, the Earl of *Essex* is sent over with sixteen thousand foot, and four thousand horse; being arrived thither, he fals upon the Rebels of *Munster*, and chaseth them into the woods, with great losse both of men and time; thence he made into *Leinster*, against the Rebels there, whom he vanquished; but Sir *Conyers Clifford* governour of *Connaught* is slain, and his forces defeated; whereupon the Lord General enters *Ulster*; *Tir-Oen* desires a parly with him, which is denied: The next morning, the Earl desires a parly again, and is again refused; but upon his third petition, it is granted. He had conference with *Essex* for an hours space, then both returned to their Companies, and some choise men are appointed to confer with *Tir-Oen*, and Commissioners for a treaty of

1599. peace. But the Queen was highly displeased, that so much blood and money had been spent in vain, and so much time lost without service upon the Archrebel: Wherefore *Essex* having received sharp letters from her, who was also

incensed

incenſed by his enemies, he haſteneth into *England*, where at *Non-ſuch*, he had acceſſe to the Queen; but ſhortly after, is commanded to his Chamber, and then committed to the cuſtody of the Lord-keeper. *An. Chriſti.*

The news of this commitment gave occaſion to *Tir-Oen* to ſtir out again, who gives out, that he would reſtore *Ireland* to her antient religion and liberty; and expell all the Engliſh; he receives from *Spain* money, and arms; and from *Rome* Indulgences, with a plume of *Phœnix* feathers, for a trophie of his victories: After this, in the midſt of winter, he goeth on Pilgrimage to the holy-croſſe in *Tipperary*, whence he ſends *Mac-Guire* to ſpoile the Country; whom Sir *Warham Saint Legar* ran with a Lance through the body, and was by him run through himſelf: Hereupon *Tir-Oen* returns from *Munſter*. The Lord *Montjoy* at this time is made Deputy of *Ireland*, who in *May* prepares to invade *Ulſter*; where he forced *Tir-Oen* to draw back into his old corners; He kils the chiefeſt of the Rebels, he breaks through the Iriſh Palliſadoes, beats the enemy back, and plants a garriſon eight miles from *Armagh*, which he named *Mount Norris*, in memory of Sir *John Norris*; at *Carlingford* he gave a total rout to the enemies. In the midſt of Winter he clears the Glinnes or Vallies of *Leimſter* from Rebels; he ſubdues divers other places, fortifies *Armagh*, and drives *Tir-Oen* from *Blackwater*. 1600.

In the mean time, king *Philip* of *Spain* ſends *Don John de Aquila* with two thouſand Spaniards and ſome Iriſh fugitives to help *Tir-Oen*; theſe land at *Kinſale* in *Mounſter*, where they publiſh their Commiſſion, and Queen *Elizabeths* Depoſition: The Deputy encamps neer *Kinſale*, and Sir *Richard Leviſon*, with two of the Queens ſhips incloſeth the Haven; but hearing of two thouſand Spaniards more at *Bere*-Haven, makes haſte thither, and ſinks five of their ſhips; to this new ſupply of Spaniards, the rebels repair, who made up ſix thouſand foot and five hundred horſe: Theſe intended to have put the Spaniards and eight hundred Iriſh into *Kinſale*, but they were prevented by the Deputies vigilancy, who followed the Rebels as they were retreating towards a Bog, where their horſe were routed by the Earl of *Clanricard*; the main battel was charged by the Deputy, who quickly put the Rebels to flight; many of whom were ſlain, with twelve hundred Spaniards, and divers commanders taken priſoners, *Tir-Oen* flieth to his ſtarting-holes in *Ulſter*, and *Odonel* driven into *Spain*.

The General being returned to the ſiege of *Kinſale*, and having mounted his Canons, is ſent to by *D. Aquila* for a parly, complaining of the Iriſh rudenes, perfidiouſneſſe, and cowardiſe; and ſhewing that he deſired peace not out of want either in the town, or from *Spaine*: the Deputy willingly hearkened to a peace; and it was Articled, that *D. Aquila* ſhould quit all places he had in *Ireland*, and ſhould with his Spaniards depart, with arms, money, munition, and banners diſplaied; that they ſhould have ſhips, and victuals for their money, that they ſhould be uſed as friends, if driven into any harbours of *England* or *Ireland*, that a ceſſation ſhould be from war, that their ſhips ſhould freely paſſe without moleſtation from Engliſh ſhips; Many of *Tir-Oen*'s men were drowned in their flight by the Winter floods, and he himſelf ſhifted from one corner to another.

The next Spring the Deputy marcheth from *Dublin* towards *Ulſter*, where he forceth *Tir-Oen* to ſet his own houſe at *Duncannon* on fire, who flies from place to place; then the Deputy waſtes all his Country, and takes in many places, ſo that now the Rebels exclaim againſt *Tir-Oen*, and reſolves to come in to the Deputy; which cauſed this Arch-Rebel to beg pardon again of the Queen, who granted it; then he came in a poor array to the Deputy, and fell twice on his face before him, acknowledging the Queens goodneſſe, and his own wickedneſſe in rebelling ſo often, hoping he ſhould finde her wonted clemency, and ſhe ſhould not faile of his true loyalty; but when he began to excuſe himſelf in ſome things, the Lord Deputy commanded him to be ſilent,

An. Christi. and to depart the presence, which he did, and had been sent over into *England*, had not the news of the Queens death hindred this designe.

The Earl of *Essex* was ever held in jealousie, since his conference with *Tir-Oen*; yet presuming on his own merits and innocencie, carried himselfe so stoutly and stubbornly to the Queen, that the Lord Keeper by a Letter prudently adviseth him to yield to the times, to submit to the Queen, and not to live such a discontented life as he did, whereby he wronged his friends, his honour, his fortunes, his country, and his Soveraign, and withall encouraged the foraign enemy to rejoice and insult: He intreats him therefore to yield, if he be guilty, out of duty; if not guilty, out of policie; for in this he would shew both his honour, prudence, and piety, and withall his true valour in conquering himself. To this Letter the Earl answers, by laying the cause of all his discontents upon the Queens obdurateness to him, who had deserved so well of her; He shewes, that willingly he doth not wrong either his friends, honour, fortunes, country, nor Soveraign by his retiredness, seeing he is forced thereto, and driven by the Queen to a private life, who hath disabled him from serving his country in any publike way, but hath made him capable to serve it by sacrificing his life and carkasse to it: He is indeed bound to her Majesty in the duty of Allegiance, not of Attendance; in the first he will never fail, of the second there is no need: He yields to the time, for he saw the storm coming, therefore put himself into the harbour; but he will never yield himself to be guilty, or the imposition laid on him just; however he will patiently bear all, for Princes may erre, and subjects may receive wrong; no power shall shew more strength and constancie in oppressing, then he will shew in suffering.

The Queen notwithstanding this Letter, which laid all the blame of his sufferings on her, was contented he should be removed to his own house; then she sends some of her Councellors to convent him about the manner of his treating with *Tir-Oen*, and his leaving of *Ireland*, contrary to the Queens command: his answer was, That he had to do with bogs and woods, as well as with men, and forced to do things there, which he would not have done elsewhere. The Queen was contented with his answer and submission; yet he is suspended from the exercise of his office for a while, and shortly after he is set at liberty, the Queen hoping his surest guard would be his own discretion: But his liberty, without his offices and wonted power at Court, could not settle his discontents, which also were fomented by his followers; wherefore at *Drury*-house they consult and agree to bring the Earl by violent hand into the Queens presence, and to remove thence his opposites: but the Queens jealousies increased, by the continual flocking of Lords, Knights and Captains to *Essex*-house, by his refusing to come before the Lords of the Councel when he was commanded; therefore she sends the Lord Keeper, with some others of his friends, to offer him justice for any griefs, and to dismisse his assemblies. These being let in, but not their followers, the Earle complains his life was sought after, and had been perfidiously dealt with: he was desired to expresse the particulars of his grievances, and he should have justice and satisfaction; and withall his Attendants are commanded to lay down arms and to depart: but the Earl shut up the four Councellors in his Bed-chamber under sure custody, and in a tumultuous manner made into *London*, his followers crying that *Essex* should have been murthered by *Cobham*, *Cecil*, and *Rawleigh*; so he past to *Fanchurch-street*, where he entred the house of a supposed friend, one of the Sheriffs, but he absented himself; in the interim *Essex* is proclaimed Traitor; in *Gracious-street* he stood a while with a halbert in his hand, and a napkin about his neck, but no body came to assist him; Then he passeth towards *Ludgate*, but there he is resisted by some Pike-men, and thrust through the hat, some of his company were hurt, and young *Tracy* slain; So returning thence to *Queen-hive*, he took Boat and lands at his own house, which he fortified,

fied, and the Lord Amiral assaulted; upon resistance some are slain, which the Earl perceiving, presently yeelded, desiring civil usage and an honourable trial, so he was carried to *Lambeth*-house, and from thence, with some others, to the Tower. *An. Christi*

Upon the 19. of *February*, *Essex* and *Southampton* are arraigned; and *Essex* the 25. of *February* is executed on the Green within the Tower, having first confessed this great sin of Rebellion, but that he never meant to wrong the Queen, desiring all to think charitably of him, to hear the confession of his faith, to forgive him, and to pray for him; so his head was cut off at three strokes, to the endangering of the Executioners life by the multitude: divers of his accessaries died, some at *Tiburn*, some on the *Tower-hill*, the Earls death was much lamented both by the people, and the Queen her self till her dying day: *Southampton* was imprisoned in the Tower till he was released by King *James*. 1600.

At last Queen *Elizabeth* having setled her dominions in peace, died the 24. of *March*, the 69. year of her age, and of her Reign the 44. She was a Queen of such eminent endowments, that to say little were to wrong her, and to say much were to flatter her, therefore let her own works praise her. She was happy in this, that never any Prince of this land had such wise Counsellors, such politick Statists, such resolute and couragious souldiers. 1602.

CHAP. XXXIII.

The History of Scotland *under Queen* Mary, *from the year* 1560. *till the year* 1567.

WHilst an Army is preparing in *England* to assist the *Scots* Protestants, the *French* plunder *Dysert* and *Wimes*, two Towns in *Fife*, then they march toward St. *Andrews*, and in the way they spie eight great ships afar off in the sea, who being in hope that these were ships from *France* comming to aid them, discharge for joy their great Ordnance; but understanding by some small barks that this was an *English* fleet comming to aid the Protestants, and that a Land-army was upon the borders, their joy is turned into fear and grief, and they presently disperse themselves sundry wayes, the richer sort of those places send away their wealth into remoter Countries. The *French* plunder friends and foes, affirming that the *Scots* Catholicks were too sparing in helping their friends, for which cause many of them fall off from the *French* faction, so that all *Fife* turns Protestants, the example of which was followed by divers other Countries in shaking off the *French* tyranny; two ships in the interim with a thousand foot, and some horse are sent from *France*; the *French* were no sooner landed, but the two ships are carried away by the *Scots* in the night: shortly after eight *French* ships more arrive with men, money and munition, but finding the Frith so full of *English* ships, they return home again; another *English* fleet comes, so that now the Isle of *Keth* is beset round, and all commerce by sea kept from *Leith*; mean time the governours of *Fife* meet *Huntly* at *Perth*, where after three dayes conference, he with all the Northern parts come in to the Protestant party. 1560.

The Lords of the Reformation hearing that the *English* Army of six thousand foot and two thousand horse were come, they go to meet them at *Haddington*; the Regent with some few of her servants, to be out of danger, betakes her self into *Edinburgh*-Castle; *Areskin* the governour, though he held the Castle for the Protestants, yet was content to admit the Regent, hoping thereby she would be the easier wrought upon, being now in his power; to this purpose the Protestant Lords send a letter to her, wherein they complain of the wrongs sustained by her means in filling the Kingdome with *French*, by whom the people are much afflicted, that they have often besought her

An. Christi. her to dismisse them, which because she will not consent to, they have therefore intreated the Queen of *Englands* assistance, not thereby to cast off their allegiance to their own Sovereign, but to ease their own necks from the strangers yoke; therefore they beseech her to dismisse the *French* forces, who shall have safe conduct by the *English* either by sea or land; if she refuse this, they take God to witnesse, they are clear of the mischiefs that will ensue.

Upon the approach of the *English*, thirteen hundred *French* came out of *Leith* to seise themselves of a hill not far off, there was skirmishing for five hours for obtaining that place: at last the *Scots* horse furiously breaking in upon the *French* Army drove them back into the Town, and had the *English* horse been in readinesse, that *French* party had been all cut off; some parlies were held with the Regent about a peace, which took no effect, because the *Scots* would consent to nothing till the strangers were sent away; and now the *English* having shot often against *Leith* to no purpose, draw nearer to the Town with their Ordnance, a part of which casually fell on fire, and burned till the next day, so that much of the *French* provision was consumed; then the *English* set the water-mills near the Town on fire, which the *French* would have quenched, but could not; the besiegers assayed to scale the walls, but were beat off with the losse of a hundred and sixty of their men; whereupon the siege riseth, and the *English* forbear to attempt any more till they have further directions from the Queen; in the interim letters come from the Duke of *Norfolk*, wishing the *English* to be couragious, and to continue the siege, promising them aid enough, and his own presence, if need required, withall he sends them his pavillion, and shortly after two thousand Auxiliaries, so the siege is renewed again, and divers skirmishes followed.

In the mean time Queen *Elizabeth* sends some *English* Commissioners into *Scotland* to treat with the *French* Commissioners for a peace; about which time the Queen-Regent died of grief in the Castle of *Edinburgh*, a Lady of her own nature inclined to goodnes and peace, but she was over-ruled by the King and Queen of *France*, and they by the *Guises*; the Commissioners at first could not accord, because the *French* desired to carry home all their booty with them, which was denied; wherefore they broke out again into open hostility, but the *French* finding their provision almost spent, and no hopes of supply; the *English* also growing weary, and the *Scots* souldiers wanting their pay, they all inclined to peace, which was concluded on these Articles, That the *French* should be gone within twenty dayes, and some *English* ships should be provided for them: That *Leith* should be restored to the *Scots*, and the walls demolished: That the fortifications erected by the *French* about *Dumbar* be thrown down: That the *English* should withdraw their Armies out of *Scotland*: And that an Act of oblivion passe. It was also agreed that sixty *French* should keep the possession of *Kerth*-Island and *Dumbar*-Castle, lest the Queen should think that she is quite deprived of all government.

After the *French* were gone, *Scotland* was very quiet till Queen *Mary* came over, a Parliament is held in *Edinburgh*, where the Protestant faith is established, and sent to Queen *Mary* for her approbation: Ambassadors are also sent into *England* to thank the Queen for her assistance; and now about this time King *Francis* dieth, at which the *Scots* were glad, hoping now to be quite freed from the *French* yoke. *James* the Queens brother hasteneth into *France* to his sister, who with her uncles was retired in *Lorrain* from her mother in law, who now took upon her the government of the Kingdome: Queen *Mary* signifieth to her brother, that she was willing to return into *Scotland*, and therefore appointed a day for that purpose, desirous rather to command as a Soyereign in her own Country, then to live as a subject to a mother-in-law in a foreign Kingdome; mean while she sends back her brother into *Scotland*, with her Letters-patents for calling of a Parliament, that the *French* Ambassador who

was

was lately ſent thither, might have audience; his demands were to have the old league renewed with *France*, and the new broken with *England*, the Prieſts reſtored again to their places and revenews: To the firſt, it was anſwered by the Lords, they never broke the league with *France*, but the French have broke with them, by endeavouring to infringe their liberties: as for the league with *England*, they can no wayes break without extream ingratitude to their deliverers; as for the Prieſts, they need none of their ſervice, being they know no uſe of ſuch, but are now better ſupplied. *An. Chriſti.*

In this Parliament an Act was made for demoliſhing of all Monaſteries, and Commiſſions ſent abroad for that purpoſe; but the Queens friends adviſed her, that at her firſt comming into *Scotland*, ſhe ſhould not medle with matters of religion, till ſhe had got ſure footing, and then ſhe might ſhew her power; her Uncles animated her to reeſtabliſh the Roman Faith: *Charls* the Cardinal counſelled her to leave in his cuſtody her richeſt houſhold-ſtuffe, jewels, and robes, becauſe of danger by ſea; but ſhe told him, that her life was more dear to her, then her jewels, if then ſhe truſted the one to the ſea, ſhe would not leave the other behind: An Agent is ſent to Queen *Elizabeth* to ſound her how ſhe was affected, if queen *Mary* ſhould make her journey through *England*; It was anſwered, that none ſhould be welcomer to her then queen *Mary* her kinſwoman; With this an Engliſh fleet is ſent out, ſome thought it was to intercept queen *Mary*, if ſhe ſhould go home without viſiting queen *Elizabeth*; but queen *Mary* notwithſtanding, by reaſon of a great miſt, got into *Scotland*, upon the report of whoſe arrival, the Lords and Gentry flock from all parts of the kingdome, ſome for one end, ſome for another: At firſt it was agreed that the Religion ſhould ſtand as it was now eſtabliſhed in *Scotland*, onely the Queen ſhould be permitted to have Maſſe at Court for her ſelf and family.

Shortly after, as the Prieſts were going into the Queens Chappel, one ſnatcht the Taper out of the hands of one, which made a ſudden hubburb, but all was pacified again by *James* the Queens brother; the Earl of *Huntly*, whoſe family hath been ever conſtant to the Roman profeſſion, took this affront in very ill part, and told the Queens Uncles (who were then preſent) that he would reduce all the Northern parts again to the old religion; the reſt of that year was ſpent in feaſts and masks to entertain the *French* Peers, who accompanied the Queen into *Scotland*: ſhortly after, an Ambaſſadour is ſent by the Queen and her Lords to Queen *Elizabeth*, for confirming of the league, and continuing mutual love to each other; withall ſhe is deſired to declare the Queen of *Scots* to be her next heir, as being next in blood, if ſo be ſhe have no children of her own: To this ſhe anſwers, wondring that Queen *Mary* and her Peers did not rather ſend a confirmation of the league at *Leith*; this the Ambaſſadour excuſed, that he was preſently ſent away upon the Queens landing, and that as yet ſhe hath had ſcarce time to conferr with her Lords about the affairs of the Kingdome, and ſettling of Religion: But ſaith Queen *Elizabeth*, ſhe was tied by her hand and ſeal to confirm that League; therefore ſhe needed no great time for that; to this the Ambaſſadour could ſay nothing, as being no part of his Commiſſion: then ſaith the Queen of *England*, I grant that your Queen is next in blood to me; and all the world knows, I never attempted to doe her wrong, even when ſhe wronged me, in uſurping my titles and arms; but I impute this rather to others, then to her ſelf; however, I hope, ſhe will give me leave to enjoy my kingdome, whilſt I live, and my children after me, if I have any, if I have none, I ſhall not any waies hinder her right, neither doe I know any (I ſpeak in the preſence of God) whom I ſhould preferre to her, or who hath any right after me to my Crown, but her ſelf; and ſo deſiring ſome longer time to think upon ſo weighty a buſineſſe, ſhe diſmiſſeth the Ambaſſadour. 1567.

A few daies after ſhe ſends for him again, and wonders what the Scots Lords meant, to ſend her ſuch a meſſage, upon the landing of their Queen, and before

ſatisfaction

An. Christi ſatisfaction be made for former wrongs; I am not (ſaith ſhe) deſtitute either of force at home, or friends abroad, to maintain my own right: the Ambaſſador anſwers, That their intent was only to ſhew their affection to their Queen, and to avoid the ſhedding of much blood, and ſetting the two kingdoms at odds, if any queſtion ſhould ariſe about the title of ſucceſſion: I diſlike not their intent (ſaith ſhe) but what needs all this, ſeeing I never went about to queſtion her title? but however, I am not willing whilſt I am alive to look upon my own winding-ſheet; nor do I think it prudence in me to declare her my ſucceſſor, for that will breed many diſputations according to peoples affections; beſides, I am married to my kingdome, whilſt I live this marriage cannot be diſſolved, when I am dead let them ſucceed that have moſt right; again, my declaration in this point may occaſion rather ſome emulation between the two kingdoms, then confirm union; Princes uſe to be leſſe affected to thoſe whom they know ſhall ſucceed them, then otherwiſe; ſo was *Charles* 7. of *France* to *Lewis* 11. and he to *Charls* 8. and lately *Francis* to *Henry* his ſucceſſor: again, I know the inconſtancie of this people, and how more do worſhip the riſing then the ſetting ſun; my ſiſter *Mary* was not willing to hear that I ſhould ſucceed her; I know that many out of every diſcontent, and becauſe I do not ſatisfie their expectations, their covetous and ambitious thoughts will be apt to fall off from me to my ſucceſſor, who the more he or ſhe ſhines in the peoples affections, the dimmer will be my light, and the more I ſtrengthen her title of ſucceſſion, the more I ſhall weaken my own ſecurity: but I will take time to think more ſeriouſly of this buſines, and ſhall endeavour in this to gratifie your Queen, when ſhe ſhall confirm the League to which ſhe is bound.

After divers other diſcourſes, Commiſſioners are appointed on both ſides to review the former League, and to bring it into theſe heads, to wit, That Queen *Mary* ſhould forbear the titles of *England* and *Ireland*, and likewiſe the Queen of *Englands* Arms; on the other ſide, That Queen *Elizabeth* ſhould not either by her ſelfe or her poſterity go about to hinder the ſucceſſion of *Scotland* to the Crown of *England*. But whilſt theſe things were in agitation, the Queen commits the Provoſt and Magiſtrates of *Edinburgh* to the Caſtle, for ſetting forth a proclamation, That all Papiſts muſt avoid the City by a certain day. The Miniſters of *Edinburgh* complain againſt the Queen in their Sermons, for celebrating Maſſe with ſuch ſolemnity upon All-Saints day, ſhewing that it was lawfull for the people to force the Prince to obſerve the Lawes eſtabliſhed, and to aboliſh Popery: but the Nobility were loth to hearken to this doctrine. In the interim the Borderers fell to ſpoiling and plundring the neighbouring countries; againſt theſe *James* the Queens baſe-brother is ſent with ſome forces, who ſuddenly ſurpriſeth them, of whom he hanged eight and twenty, others upon hoſtages given he diſmiſſed. The Queen alſo made the people jealous of her, by ſecuring her ſelf with a ſtronger guard then her predeceſſors uſed to have, which was occaſioned upon a report that the Earl of *Aran* (whom ſhe did not affect for his religion, being a rigid Calviniſt) intended to ſeiſe on her perſon, and to carry her to his caſtle ſixteen miles off; ſhe angered alſo the Prieſts, by exacting of them the third part of their revenues for maintenance of Preachers, and the reſt for her own uſe, having waſted much of the Crown-revenues. To make herſelf more gracious with the people, ſhe creates her brother *James* Earl of *Mar*; but this honour being found to belong anciently to the *Areskins*, ſhe makes him inſtead of *Mar* Earl of *Murry*, and procures him the Earl-Marſhals daughter for his wife; but *Huntly* ſtorms at this, having been governour of theſe two Provinces a great while, and challenged *Murry* for his inheritance; ſo that at this time he was the richeſt and powerfulleſt Peer of the Kingdome, and all the Northern parts were at his beck, only *Makintoſe* a great man among the *Highlanders* refuſed to be ſubject to him; which ſo incenſed *Huntly*, that he unawares ſeiſed upon his perſon and impriſoned him, and in his abſeuce his Counteſſe

cauſed

caused his head to be struck off, not without suspition that it was done by *Huntlies* command. *An. Christi.*

The same *Huntly* was also highly incensed against the Earl of *Murrey*, whom he accused to the Queen that he aimed at the Crown, but his proofs were invalid. The Earl *Bothwel* at this time, having lavishly wasted his patrimony, knew not how to live but by fishing in troubled waters; therefore to set the Kingdome in a Civill-war, he endeavours to make dissention between *Murrey* and the *Hamiltons*; so he strives to perswade *Murrey* that the *Hamiltons* aimed at his and the Queens destruction, and promiseth assistance to cut them off, which saith he, will be a work acceptable to the Queen, for so she shall be rid of near kinsmen pretending to the Crown, besides that *Aran* is her great enemy: *Murrey* refused to meddle in such a bloody businesse, therefore *Bothwel* incenseth the *Hamiltons* against him, accusing him as their great enemy, and that it was easie to seise upon him as he usually walked alone in *Falkland* Park. *Aran* abhorring this plot, by private letters informeth *Murrey* with it, who returns answer by the same messenger; but *Aran* being absent, his father openeth the letters, and withall imprisoneth his son, who escaped in the night to *Falkland*, where the Court then was, and discloseth the whole plot; whereupon *Bothwel* and *Galvin Hamilton* the chief actors are apprehended and imprisoned, the one in *Edinburgh*, the other in *Sterling* Castle, and *Aran* himself who faltered in his discovery, is sent to St. *Andrews*-Castle, where he feigned himself mad, lest he should detect his father who had a hand in the plot; but he so constantly accused *Bothwel*, that he offered in vindication of the truth to fight a duell with him.

Mean while *Huntly* useth all the means he can to cut off *Murrey* his competitor, divers wayes he attempted, but all failed; at length he procures some of his followers to fall upon him in the night-time as he was going home from the Queen, for he usually staid late with her; but *Murrey* hearing of the plot, got some of them who lay in wait for him to be apprehended in their Arms, *Huntley* excused the matter, that they meant to ride home in their Arms, and had no other intent, and so the businesse was silenced; but the *Guises* with *Huntley* and others, did altogether aim at *Murries* destruction, not onely out of private respects, but also because he was a main supporter of the Protestants. The Queen is advised to bear *Huntley* in hand, that she would marry with his son *John*, purposely to further his designs in promoting the Catholick cause; for this end she makes a progresse into the Northern parts: now she hated both *Huntley* for his greatnesse, and *Murrey* for his religion; she tells *Huntley* that she could not with her honour be reconciled to his son *John* who raised a tumult lately in *Edinburgh*, till first he were imprisoned in *Sterling*-Castle a while, this she intended, because she knew that during *Johns* absence, she could not be desired to marry; but *Huntley* was not willing his son should be committed to custody, chiefly under *Mar*, *Murries* uncle, who was governour of *Sterling*-Castle: but *John Gordon Huntlies* son, who had escaped out of *Edinburgh*-Castle, was now near *Aberden* quartered with a thousand horse.

About the same time *Bothwel* by a rope escaped out of *Edinburgh*-Castle: the Queen intends to go further North, the murther was put off till she came to *Strathbogie* the Earls house; but in the way when she could not perswade him to be content that his son should be sent a prisoner for a while, she turned aside and would not lie at his house, but went for *Innernesse*; when she came thither she is not suffered to enter the Castle which was kept by *Huntlies* forces, wherefore she is fain to lie in the Town, which she commands to be strongly guarded, and the ships which lay there to be ready to convey her away if any danger should be; when the *Clanchatans*, *Frasers* and *Monroes*, with divers other families understood in what danger the Queen was, repaired all to her aid, and presently lay siege to the Castle, which for want of necessaries yeelded, and divers of the garrison were hanged; from thence she returns to *Aber-*

An. Christi dene, where she expresseth her indignation against *Huntley*: he perceiving there was no way to obtain his will over the Queen, but by the death of her brother, he intended to dispatch him with all speed; *Murrey* understanding in what danger he was raiseth what forces he could and marcheth out against *Huntley*, a hot skirmish ensueth in which the *Huntlyans* are discomfited, 120. were slain, and 100. taken prisoners, among whom was *Huntley* himself with his two sons *John* and *Adam*; the father being aged and corpulent, died as soon as he was taken, the rest are brought to *Aberden*, where *John* was beheaded, or rather mangled by the unskilful Executioner to the great grief of the spectators, and of the Queen her self, for he was of a comely presence, and in the flower of his age; *Adam* is pardoned because he was young: many *Gordons* were either fined or banished, *George Huntlies* eldest son fled to his father-in-law *Hamilton*, who came to the Queen, now being returned from *Aberden* to *Perth*, to beg pardon for his son-in-law; the Queen gave good words till she had got him out of *Hamiltons* hands, then she sends him to *Dumbar*-Castle; 1563. the next year he is sent to *Edinburgh*, where he is condemned of Treason, and remitted to *Dumbar*.

Things being thus setled, *Bothwel* is summoned to return to his prison, which because he refused, is proclaimed Traitor; *Matthew Stuart* Earl of *Lenox*, after two and twenty years banishment returns home, and is restored again; his 1564. son *Henry* returns out of *England*: Mean while the Archbishop of St. *Andrews* for saying Masse is imprisoned in *Edinburgh*-Castle. The Queen falls in love with young *Lenox*, being her Aunts son, and a comely youth, and equally allied to Queen *Elizabeth* as her self, who seemed to approve of this match, thinking it safer for her that Queen *Mary* take him for her husband then a foreign Prince; yet she sends Ambassadors to Queen *Mary*, desiring her not to be too hasty in a matter of that consequence; a Parliament is called at *Sterling*, some of the Lords were for the match, some against it, chiefly *Stuart* of *Ochiltry*, who said he would never assent to have a Popish King over them, and it was held fitter for the people to chuse a husband for one, then that one should chuse a King for them all; at last her side prevailed, and to make this young Lord *Darly* the fitter for so high a fortune as to marry a Queen, and the widow of so great a King, she honoureth him with the titles of Duke of *Rothesay*, and Earl of *Rosse*.

The Queen fearing lest her Uncles the *Guises* would hinder the marriage, makes what haste she can to finish it, being thereto also advised by *David Riz*, whom of one of her Musitians she had made her Secretary for the *French*-tongue, and who sowed the coals of dissention between her and *Murrey*, whom he intended to murther, who also advised her to send for *Bothwel* out of *France*, *George Gordon* Earl of *Sutherland* out of *Flanders* (who had been banished for Treason) and to release *George Gordon* of *Huntly* out of prison, which she did, and restored them to their honours. *Murrey* was much incensed at *Bothwels* return to advancement, so that he forsakes the Court, and sueth *Bothwel* for the wrongs he had done him in seeking to murther him; but *Bothwel* presuming on the Queens favour and his friends, slighted his citation, and did not appear: mean while the marriage between the Queen and *Darly* is hastened by *David Riz* for his own private ends, and also for promoting the *Roman* Religion, whereof both Earl *Matthew* and his son *Darly* were stout assertors, and which the *Guises* were striving to advance through all Christendome.

The marriage is performed about the end of *July*, and the next day *Darly* is proclaimed King, to the great offence of divers Lords, and of the people, who grumbled they should have a King imposed on them without consent of Parliament; divers Lords absented themselves, who are therefore banished, and their enemies called to the Court; the banished Lords met at *Passet*, the King and Queen with a guard of four thousand go to *Glascow*, *Hamilton*-

Castle

Caſtle is ſummoned to be delivered up to the Queen, which is denied: the banished Lords were of different minds; the *Hamiltons* would have both the King and Queen to be ſlain, ſaying there could be no ſecurity for them but in their deaths; the other Lords (who perceived the *Hamiltons* drift in aiming at the Crown as next heirs, by the death of the King and Queen) would have all differences compoſed in an amicable way; of this opinion were the *Hamiltons* at laſt, except *James* their chief: theſe diſcontented Lords repaire to *Edinburgh* to conſult of raiſing an Army, but were ſo ſhot at from the caſtle, that they were forced to be gone thence towards *Dumfrize*; the Queen makes the Earl of *Lenox* Lieutenant of the Weſt; the goods of thoſe are plundred that were fled into *England*, and an oath is taken of the Nobility of *Fife* to be in arms for the defence of King and Queen, if any forces ſhould come out of *England*. *An. Chriſti.*

The next year a Parliament is called at *Edinburgh*, for ſequeſtring the eſtates of thoſe Lords who were baniſhed, for degrading of them, and tearing of their Arms, which the Prince cannot do there without conſent of the Parliament. In the interim the Queen is adviſed by *David* to raiſe an Army for ſuppreſſing of her enemies; and becauſe ſhe could not truſt her own ſubjects, to ſend for German ſouldiers, or Italians rather his country-men, who would be at his beck: thus divers ſtrangers are brought in by parcels and privately, that there might be no ſuſpition. Divers diſcontents and jealouſies are ſown between the King and Queen, by which he became leſſe gracious in her eyes, ſo that his power was leſſened, and his outward eſtate and honour impaired: *David* is blamed for being the cauſe of this; wherefore the King by the advice of his friends conſpired his death, which the Queen underſtanding prevented, but the ſecond conſpiracie was carried more cloſely; for as the Queen was one night at ſupper, the King with ſome armed men by the private ſtairs enters the room, pulls *David* from thence, and held the Queen in his arms, till in an outward chamber the Favourite was ſtabbed to death by the Earl of *Mortons* ſervants, who were there waiting on their Lord purpoſely for this execution, at which many were offended, becauſe the execution was not done publikely by the Hang-man, as a fit ſpectacle for the people. 1565.

Upon this murther, a great tumult aroſe in the Court: the Earls of *Huntley*, *Athol* and *Bothwell*, being at ſupper in the other ſide of the Palace, as they were upon the noiſe going out of the chamber, are by a guard kept in: *Patrick Ruven* a great actor in this tragedy, comes into the Queens chamber, and adviſeth her to be more carefull of her Nobility and Lawes, without which ſhe ought not to act any thing, and not to rely too much on ſtrangers, who are altogether for their own ends, and which the Nobility cannot brook. In the interim, upon the fame of this murther, the Citizens take arms and come in great multitudes to the Court, to whom the King ſpoke out of a window, deſiring them to return peaceably home, that he and the Queen were ſafe, that nothing was acted but what he had commanded, and which he would at another time acquaint them with: ſo they departed peaceably, except a few that were left to watch. The baniſhed Lords return, and are ready to anſwer their accuſers, but none appeared againſt them. The Queen in the night-time eſcapes out at a back-door, where *Seton* with two hundred horſe was ready to receive her, who firſt conveyed her to his own houſe, and thence to *Dumbar*; there having raiſed ſufficient ſtrength, ſhe perſecutes all thoſe that had a hand in the death of *David*, ſome with baniſhment, ſome with fines, and ſome with death; ſhe cauſeth *Davids* body to be transferred from before the Church-door where he was buried, into the next Kings tombe, which occaſioned great obloquies among the people. Not long after ſhe betakes her ſelf to *Edinburgh*-Caſtle, where ſhe is brought to bed of a Son, called *James* the ſixth. 1566.

James Melvin is ſent to queen *Elizabeth* to ſignifie the birth of this young Prince, who preſently ſends *Henry Killegrew* to congratulate with her for her

An. Christi. safe deliverance, and to wish her not to favour any more *Shan-O-Neal* the Irish rebel, nor to entertain the English fugitives, and to punish the theevish borderers. Not long after, the Earl of *Bedford* is sent from Queen *Elizabeth*, being Godmother, with a Font of massie gold for a gift; and commanded that neither he nor any of his followers, should call the Lord *Darly* by the name of king: after the ceremony was finished, *Bedford* dealt with queen *Mary* about composing the differences between her and her husband; and ratifying the treaty at *Edinburgh*: this last she refused to doe, as being derogatory to her and her sons right unto the crown of *England*; yet she promiseth to send Commissioners to queen *Elizabeth* about this Treaty; and that she will forbear to use the Arms and Titles of *England*, whilest queen *Elizabeth* lived: But before these Commissioners were sent, about a moneth or two after the Prince was
1567. Christened, *Darly* the Queens husband is in the dead of the night villanously strangled in his bed, and cast into a garden, so was his servant that attended on him in his chamber, and then the house is blown up with Gun-powder; a rumor is spread that this was done by *Morton*, *Murry*, and their confederats, who laid it from themselves upon the Queen.

Bothwel being now reconciled to *Murry*, was the man who was employed to murther the king, in hope he might obtain the Queens marriage after: *Murry* goeth home fifteen houres before the murther, to avoid suspition; afterward he with the conspirators perswades her to marry *Bothwel*, purposely to overthrow her. *Lenox* the kings father accuseth *Bothwel* of the regicide, who is commanded to bring in his accusations before the Parliament, within twenty dayes, which he durst not doe, having so many enemies in the City, and *Bothwell* so backt with friends; so *Bothwell* is acquitted, *Morton* maintaining his cause; and most of the Lords under their hands and seals gave their consents to the marriage; Upon this he is created Duke of *Orkney*, and a suspition is raised that the Queen was consenting to her husbands death: wherefore the Conspirators intend to kill *Bothwel* and depose the Queen; *Murry* to avoid all suspition goeth into *France*. Immediatly after, these men that perswaded the marriage, raise arms against *Bothwel*, willing him secretly to be gone, lest being taken, he discover the plot; and withall, that they might lay hold of his flight, as an argument to accuse the Queen of killing the King; but when they took her, they used her contumeliously, putting an old cloak on her, they thrust her in prison at *Lochlevyn*, under the custody of *Murry's* mother, king *James* the fifths Concubine, boasting that she was king *James* his lawfull wife; which insolencies were highly resented by queen *Elizabeth*: Therefore she sends *Throgmorton* into *Scotland*, to expostulate with the Conspirators for their insolencies against their Queen; she desires her restauration and justice on the Regicides, and that the young king be sent rather into *England* then into *France* for his security.

But so much was queen *Mary* hated, that neither the English nor French Ambassadours could have accesse to her; some would have her restored, and *Bothwel* divorced; others will have her banished, others again desire she may be publikely arraigned and imprisoned; but *Knox* and his fellow-Ministers will have her deprived of life and kingdome, by a publike execution; at last by threatning her with death, for tyranny, incontinency, and violation of the laws, they forced her to put her hand to the Letters-pattents which she never read, wherein she resignes her realm to her son, now thirteen moneths old, makes *Murry* Regent, during the Kings minority, and if he refused, then *James* Duke of *Chastelroy*, *Mathew* Earl of *Lenox*, with *Argile*, *Morton*, *Glencarn*, and *Marre*. Five daies after this resignation, *James* her son was annointed, and crowned King, the Coronation Oath in his name was taken by the Earls of *Morton* and *Hume*, That he will maintain the Laws and Religion, as it is now established.

CHAP.

An. Christi

CHAP. XXXIV.

A continuation of the Scots History under King James the 6. from the year 1567. till 1602.

WHen Queen *Mary* and *Bothwel* perceived that an Army was raised to apprehend them, they make an escape in disguised habits to *Dumbar*; in the interim the conspirators repair to *Edinburgh*, where *Hamilton*, *Huntley*, and other Lords of the Queens side were; these are driven into the Castle, being let in by *Balfour* the Captain, the City presently submits to the conspirators; a great number of all sorts flock to the Queen, who having now made up a sufficient Army, marcheth presently towards *Leith*; the sudden news whereof awakes *Edinburgh*, all the inhabitants are in Arms and in the field by break of day: As the two Armies were ready to joyn battel, *Crocus* the *French* Ambassador endeavours to make attonement, by shewing them the uncertainty and danger of a battel, and the Queens willingnesse to give a general pardon, and her propensity to peace: to whom *Morton* answered, That he took Arms not against the Queen, but the murtherers of the King, whom if she will either punish, or put from her, they will lay down Arms and submit to her; Neither are we come (saith he) to desire, but to grant a pardon: So upon this resolute answer, *Crocus* takes his leave and returns to *Edinburgh*: *Bothwel* to end the controversie, challengeth any one of the conspirators Army to fight with him, three after each other present themselves, but the Queen would not give way: the Lords that were with her, finding the unwillingnesse of the common-souldier to fight in this quarrel, desire the Queen to forbear fighting till some other time, whereupon *Bothwel* perceiving his own danger, escapes to *Dumbar* in great haste and fear.

The Queen understanding that *Huntley*, and Archbishop *Hamilton* were comming with some forces, she desires of the Army leave to meet them, promising to return, but this is denied, divers of her souldiers railing against her, and holding out one of their colours, in which was painted King *Henry* lying dead, and his infant-son by him praying to God for vengeance on the paricides; at which sight the Queen swouned, who towards the evening was brought to *Edinburgh* in great contempt, the streets being filled with people to see her. That Banner we spake of, was the next day presented again to her as she looked out at a window, complaining of her wrongs; the day after she is sent prisoner to *Loch-Leven*: *Bothwel* finding no security for himself, nor help for the Queen, flyes into the *Orcades*, thence into *Shetland*, and at last turns Pyrat. The Queen as we have said, is forced to resign her Crown, and *Murrey* being lately returned from *France*, is by the conspiring Lords made Regent.

Shortly after the Infant-King was crowned, a Parliament is summoned, where it was ordered that a fleet should be sent to catch *Bothwel*, who did much hurt in the Northern-seas; but though some of his fellow-pyrats were taken, yet he escaped into *Denmark*, where being known by some Merchants, is laid in irons, so he continued in much misery for ten years, and then falling mad, died. Not long after this, an Ambassador comes from *France*, shewing that his Commission was to speak with the Queen, or else to return instantly, the Regent told him, that it was not in his power to help him to the speech of the Queen without their consent that imprisoned her, but to gratifie him, he promiseth to call the Lords together for that purpose; in the interim the Queen having bribed a boat-man is conveyed over the lake, they in the Castle made haste to follow her, bnt could not, for all the boats were drawn on the dry ground, and bored through with many holes; the Queen had horses laid for her, and so gets to *Hamilton* a small Town eight miles from *Glascow*, where she

An. Christi. she is guarded with five hundred horse, and a great many more flock to her from all parts: the French Ambassador goeth to and fro, pretendinga pacification, but indeed he encourageth the Queen to fight, who was now 6500 strong, whereas the Regent was scarce 4000. A battel is fought, wherein the Queens horse had the better a while, till they were so galled by the Regents archers, that they were forced to flie to the Queen, who about a mile off beheld the fight; she with her horse flie towards *England*. The Regent appoints a Parliament, which the Queens party do what they can to hinder, queen *Elizabeth* also sends letters to him for that end, that he should not be too hasty in determining any thing against the Queens party, whom she would not suffer to receive wrong from her subjects.

The Regent, notwithstanding those letters, calls a Parliament, in which it was questioned, Whether all they that assisted the Queen should not be condemned of treason, and their estates confiscated? At last it was resolved, that some should be punished for example sake. Shortly after the Regent raiseth an Army, and subdueth those parts that stood out for the queen: but queen *Elizabeths* letters put some stay to his proceedings; for she was informed by the banished Lords, that queen *Mary* was extremely wronged by her subjects, and the Majesty of Princes slighted, if this power should be tolerated in people to depose their Princes; therefore she desires Commissioners may be sent to inform her truly of his proceedings, and to cleer himself of the crimes objected against him. This seemed harsh to the Regent, that things already decided should be again questioned; yet knowing that if queen *Elizabeth* should fall off from him, he should be exposed to inevitable danger, having *Lorrain* the queens uncle, who ruled the Court of *France*, against him, and divers of the Scotish Nobility, therefore he appoints certain Commissioners to go, but perceiving them unwilling, he goeth himself with two Lords, one Bishop, one Abbot, two Lawyers, and *George Buchanan*, he takes also with him *William Metland*, fearing to leave so publike a man, and so well-affected to queen *Mary* behind him; his whole train was but an hundred horse. At *York* he is met by the Duke of *Norfolk*, (who was thought to marry with queen *Mary*) the Earl of *Sussex*, and Sir *Ralph Sadler*; A few dayes after, queen *Maries* Commissioners came to complain against the Regents proceedings, who excuseth himself that he acted nothing but by consent of Parliament: queen *Elizabeth* sends for two of the Regents side, to be fully instructed in the particulars; *Metland* and *Macgill* are sent; and at last the Regent is desired to come to the Court, that the queen might know what he could say for himself, or against queen *Mary*.

In this mean while rumours are spread abroad in *Scotland*, that the Regent went about to betray the kingdom and the young king to the English, whereupon great commotions and distempers began to break out; the Regent to prevent them was willing to be gone, and so was queen *Elizabeth* to gain the more time for queen *Mary*, therefore she adviseth him to leave one of his friends behind, that might answer to any crime that might be objected against him. But *Hamilton* now being returned from *France*, is set on by the banished queens side to stand for the Regencie, as being so neer in blood to the young King; but his suit is denied him, because by many instances it was proved, that there is less danger for a young Prince to be under the tuition of strangers then of a neer kinsman who aimeth at the Crown, as may be seen in king *Richard* 3. of *England* his cruelty to his brothers sons: Therefore *Hamilton* is detained in *England*, till the young Kings Commissioners were first gone, lest new troubles might be raised. But because rumours were spread of divers plots to kill the Regent in his journy homeward, queen *Elizabeth* gives order that all the suspected wayes through which he was to travel should be strongly guarded.

The Regent being returned safely into *Edinburgh*, a great meeting ensued of the Kings Lords at *Sterlin*, who ratified all that was concluded and agreed upon

upon with the *Engliſh* laſt; *Hamilton* alſo being returned is forced to ſubmit to the Kings ſide, for he found that help came not to him as he expected, and that the Regent had an Army in readineſs; but when he underſtood that queen *Mary* had more liberty in *England* then before, and that ſhe was to marry with the Duke of *Norfolk*, he began to fall off again from the conſpiring Lords; wherefore he is ſent with *Maxwel* to *Edinburgh*-Caſtle. *Argile* is queſtioned for comming to *Glaſcow* with fifteen hundred men, purpoſely to raiſe the Country for the Queen whilſt the Regent was abſent; but he upon his ſubmiſſion, and taking the oath of allegiance is pardoned. *Huntley* alſo is accuſed in raiſing forces for the Queen, and in oppreſſing of divers families, and he likewiſe is abſolved, but withall is enjoyned to make reſtitution to thoſe whom he had wronged. *An. Chriſti.*

After this the Regent makes a journey into *Aberden*, *Elgin* and *Innerneſſe*, for ſetling of theſe places and the Northern Countries; thence returning into *Perth*, he receives letters from the Queen of *England* which he imparts to the Nobility being ſummoned thither; the contents of theſe letters were, That either Queen *Mary* ſhould be reſtored to her former dignities, or elſe that ſhe may be colleague with her ſon in the government; or if neither of theſe could be obtained, that ſhe may live privately at home, and be made capable of ſuch honours as might not be derogatory to the young King; this laſt clauſe was aſſented to, but they would not yeeld that the Kings power ſhould be any wayes impaired. Then were read Queen *Maries* letters, wherein ſhe deſires that if her marriage with *Bothwel* be unlawful, ſhe might be divorced: At this the Conſpirators were offended, in that ſhe ſtiled her ſelf Queen, and wrote to them as ſubjects; therefore they thought her letters not fit to be anſwered, ſhewing that her beſt way to diſſolve the marriage, were to ſend to the King of *Denmark* to do juſtice on *Bothwel* as the murtherer of her husband, and ſo he being dead, ſhe might marry with whom ſhe pleaſed. Then an Agent is ſent to Queen *Elizabeth*, with the Regents anſwer to her letters, with which ſhe was not ſatisfied, but deſires further ſatisfaction; upon this *Petcarne* is ſent to acquaint her, that for divers reaſons they could not admit Queen *Mary* into any ſhare of the government, fearing that ſhe who was ſo unnatural to her husband, would not be too kinde to her ſon, having obtained her Crown and dignity from her.

Mean while a plot is detected in *England*, that Queen *Mary* and *Norfolk* were ſuddenly to marry; and that they might obtain both Kingdomes without oppoſition, Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James* were to be murthered at one time; hereupon *Norfolk* is ſent to the Tower, and Queen *Mary* is appointed to be ſent home to the Regent by ſea; but this reſolution is altered: About the ſame time *Metland* and *Balfour* Captain of *Edinburgh*-Caſtle, are convented before the Lords for holding correſpondencie with Queen *Mary*, but both are pardoned, onely *Metland* is confined to a private houſe in *Edinburgh*, whom *Kircady* the Captain of that Caſtle got into his cuſtody; by feigning the Regents letters, as if he had written to *Kircady* to take *Metland* into his cuſtody, at which the Lords were angry, the Regent ſends for *Kircady*, who refuſeth to come; hence it was conceived that he ſided with the Queen, who was now ſaid to be comming with *Norfolk* out of *England*; but it was otherwayes, for he is ſent to the Tower, and ſhe is confined: the Regent notwithſtanding his repulſe, goeth up next day into the Caſtle, and having conferred with *Kircady*, comes away thence well-pleaſed, and marcheth towards the borders to ſuppreſſe the Rebels there, which he did to the great content of Queen *Elizabeth*, who alſo thanked him for apprehending *Northumberland*, who fled thither out of *England*, whom the Regent impriſoned in *Loch-Levin*. 1569.

Queen *Maries* faction perceiving the Regents power to increaſe daily, by the correſpondencie he held with Queen *Elizabeth*, and finding that no good could be done ſo long as he lived, they combine to kill him; therefore one day

as

An. Christi. as he rode through the ſtreets of *Lithgo*, he was ſhot by one *Hamilton* out of a private place through the body a little beneath the navil; finding himſelf hurt he lights from his horſe, and is carried to his lodging, where he died ſhortly after; *Hamilton* eſcapes into *France*: upon the death of *Murrey* great diſorders aroſe, *Metland* and other priſoners are let out of the Caſtle; great debating
1571. there was who ſhould be Regent, and by what power he ſhould be choſen. *Car* and *Scot* with ſome forces they had raiſed, invade the borders of *England* with fire and ſword: Queen *Elizabeth* ſends *Randolph* to complain, and to deſire the Lords to unite themſelves to chooſe a Regent, and to ſettle the Kingdome, that juſtice may be done on thoſe who had invaded her borders; but when no redreſſe could be had, ſhe ſends an Army under the Earl of *Suſſex* to aſſiſt the Kings ſide againſt the other faction who ſtood out for the Queen; theſe underſtanding that the Army was upon their march, write letters to the Queen of *England* to be conveyed by the Earl of *Suſſex*, who is deſired by queen *Maries* ſide; not to march further till he ſhould receive the Queens anſwer; but he ſuſpecting that theſe were delatory letters to gain time, and his charge being to make haſte, openeth them, wherein he findes nothing but brags and threatnings, therefore he marcheth on.

When the queens faction heard that the *Engliſh* Army was on the borders, they remove preſently from *Edinburgh* to *Limnuchum*, where the Earls of *Huntley*, *Aran* and *Argile* call a Parliament; the Kings faction ſends to the queen of *England* to have her aſſiſtance in naming of a Regent, ſhewing they ſhould be ready to imbrace him whom ſhe will nominate; in the interim the *Engliſh* Army fall with fire and ſword upon the *Cars* and *Scots* Territories who had lately invaded *England*: *Hume*-Caſtle with much wealth in it, is ſurrendred to *Suſſex*, upon hope that he had been of *Norfolks* faction. The Lord *Scrupe* on the other ſide enters *Anandel*, and ſpoils the lands of the *Johnſtons*, who had alſo invaded *England*. The *Hamiltons* upon the report of the *Engliſh* Army haſten to *Glaſcow* to pull down the Archbiſhops Caſtle, fearing leſt *Lenox* returning from *England* ſhould make it the ſeat of the war; they beſiege the Caſtle to no end, for it held out ſo long, that upon the comming of the *Engliſh* Army to *Edinburgh* they riſe from the ſiege, and haſten away; *Huntley* goeth home, *Hamilton* and *Argile* into *Argiles* Country; the *Engliſh* two dayes after come to *Glaſcow*, and ſpoil all the lands belonging to the *Hamiltons*, or thoſe who had a hand in the Regents death, or who had received any *Engliſh* fugitives; they ſet on fire the *Hamiltons* Palace, with the Town, and beat down a part of the Caſtle; ſo the *Engliſh* retnrn to *Barwick*, and the *Scots* who aided them to their homes.

In the interim *Petcarne* returns from the Queen of *England*, who wonders that after four moneths they ſhould now acquaint her with their buſineſſe; ſhe tells them that the Ambaſſadors of *Spain* and *France* had importuned her to hear the complaints of Queen *Mary*, which ſhe had promiſed to do, if in the mean while queen *Mary* will give order that her ſide will forbear all acts of hoſtility, and ſuffer things to remain as they were in the Regents time; but ſhe will have no hand in chooſing them a new Regent, leſt ſhe ſhould ſeem to wrong queen *Mary*, her cauſe being not yet heard; but withall ſhe wiſheth them to forbear a while the naming of a new Regent: At this the Kings ſide was troubled, fearing leſt by this delay the Queens faction would gather ſtrength, therefore they reſolve to chooſe an Inter-Rex, or Vice-Roy for a while, till Queen *Elizabeths* buſineſſe at home be ſetled, who was troubled about the Popes Bull againſt her, in procuring of which (ſo it was given out) the queen of *Scots* had a hand: Then they name for their Viceroy *Matthew* Earl of *Lenox* the young Kings Grandfather; mean while Queen *Elizabeth* writes that ſhe will not name any Regent for them, but ſhe thinks none fitter for that place then *Lenox*, as being neareſt and deareſt to the young King; ſo he is preſently of a Viceroy made Regent.

He

He having taken his oath, gives order for raiſing of an Army to hinder the Parliament appointed by the Queens faction, and withall ſummons a Parliament in the Kings name to be held in *Edinburgh*: then he ſends to the Governour of *Edinburgh*-Caſtle for ſome Braſſe-guns and other warlike neceſſaries; at firſt he promiſed, but afterward denied, ſhewing he was for peace, not war; notwithſtanding the Regent with five thouſand goeth to *Limnuch*, where hearing of ſome forces of *Brechin* placed there by *Huntley*, who was raiſing an Army in the north, to hinder his deſign ſends a party to *Brechin*, at the news of whoſe approach *Ogleby* and *Balfour* fled, leaving a garriſon, who maintained the Church-Tower and the Counteſſe of *Mars* Caſtle a while againſt the Regents forces, but at length yielded, and thirty of them were hanged: *Huntley* finding that ſupplies came not as he expected, removes farther north; the Regent returns him to *Edinburgh* to the Parliament, where nothing was acted againſt the murtherers of the Regent, becauſe *Q. Maries* cauſe was not yet heard. In the interim the Queens ſide ſollicite the Pope, *Spain*, and *France*, to ſend forces into *England* for reſtoring of *Q. Mary*. *Montgomery* Earle of *Eglinton* with ſome others ſubmit to the Regent, who had lately hurt himſelf by a fall from his horſe. An attempt is made upon *Dunbritton*-Caſtle, which with much difficulty at laſt they took by ſcaling-ladders; *Fleming* the Captain eſcaped into *Argile*; but *Hamilton* the Archbiſhop of S. *Andrews*, with ſome other prime men, and the French Agent who lay there as a Spy, are apprehended. The Regent hearing that the Caſtle was taken, in great joy haſteneth thither, where he reſtores to *Flemings* wife her plate and houſhold-ſtuffe; and wondring at the courage of the ſouldiers who could venture to ſcale ſuch an inacceſſible Rock, commends them highly. The French Agent is accuſed for robbing ſome Merchants, wherefore he is ſent to S. *Andrews* to anſwer to their ſuit, but he eſcaped from thence. There was alſo an Engliſh-man taken and ſent home, who afterward was found to have been ſent by the *Norfolkians* purpoſely to poyſon the young King. The Archbiſhop being found guilty both of the Kings death and Regents, was hanged at *Sterlin*; his chief accuſer was a Prieſt, to whom one *John Hamilton* a principal actor in the Kings death had confeſſed the whole murther ſecretly.

An. Chriſti.

1572.

Morton being returned from his Engliſh embaſſie, gave an account thereof before the Lords at *Sterlin*; How they had exhibited in writing to *Q. Elizabeth* the reaſons that moved them to depoſe *Q. Mary*, alleadging divers precedents out of ancient and modern hiſtories, of the like depoſition of Princes by their people; but yet the Queen was not fully ſatisfied of the legality of this fact, therefore ſhe deſires there may be an expedient found out for compoſing the differences betwixt her and her ſubjects; it was anſwered by the Commiſſioners, that they had no commiſſion to treat about any expedient, nor could they conſent to the diminiſhing of their Kings power, nor if they did conſent, would the Scots Nobility allow it; upon this the Queen checkt them for being ſo ſtiffe in their reſolutions, in not harkening to an accommodation, and withall ſhe deſires them to confer again with her Commiſſioners, with whom they had conference the other day; to this they condiſcended, but this conference took no effect, wherefore the Queen wiſheth that in the next Scotiſh Parliament the matter may be diſcuſſed; but ſhe would not permit the Scots to depart home, untill the Biſhop of *Roſſe* who was one of Queen *Maries* Agents, had received anſwer from his Queen of theſe paſſages; at laſt her anſwer came, wherein ſhe complaines of the hard meaſure offered to her by her ſubjects; therefore Queen *Elizabeth* wiſheth them to ſhew their duty to their Prince, upon her true repentance, and ſo ſhe diſmiſſeth them.

The Commiſſioners having finiſhed their relation, a Parliament is appointed to be held at *Edinburgh*; but becauſe the Queens party were maſters of the Town, they reſolve to ſit in the ſuburbs; in the interim it is proclaimed at

An. Christi *Leith*, that no provisions or arms either by sea or land be brought to *Edinburgh* upon pain of treason; the Herald was accompanied with about an hundred horse and foot, on whom some Citizens sallied out as they were returning home neer the walls, but were beat in again. Whilst the Parliament sate without the Town, they within call a Parliament of their own; the Castle in the interim plaid with their Ordnance upon the Kings Parliament, but no hurt was done. When both the Assemblies were dismissed, two hundred and twenty musketiers, and a hundred horse, with two field-peeces, are sent out of *Edinburgh* against *Dalketh*, where the Earl *Mortons* house was, who hearing of this presently arms two hundred foot and sixty horse; a skirmish followed, in which the Queens men were put to run, which the City-garrison perceiving sends out presently fresh forces, who put *Mortons* men to flie, some were slain and taken on both sides, some also of the Queens party were killed by a barrel of gunpowder accidentally having taken fire. Some bickering also there was between the two factions about a company of Scots souldiers lately arrived out of *Denmark*; these intended all to serve the King, but six and twenty of them were intercepted at *Leith* by the Queens party, and carried to *Edinburgh*-Castle.

When *Drury* the English Agent, who had been mediating for peace, to no purpose, was upon going away, a skirmish fell out between the two factions, in which the Queens party was worsted by *Mortons* forces, who killed fifty of the enemy, and took a hundred and fifty prisoners; almost there were daily skirmishes: the Regent kept *Leith* to intercept all provisions by sea from the Edinburgers; land-provisions could not be cut off, being so many wayes to bring it: A French vessel laden with arms, in which also good store of mony is found, was taken; the mony paid the souldiers, and the arms were carried to *Sterlin*; shortly after another French ship was taken with letters from the French, promising speedy aid to the Queens party. The Regent being gone to *Sterlin*, the Edinburgers with all their forces march out into the field, to draw the Kings party out of *Leith*; who sallying out furiously, drove their enemies back to *Edinburgh*, of whom they killed and took divers.

After this, the Queens party with two hundred horse and three hundred foot march out of *Edinburgh* towards *Sterlin*, by the way they presse all the horses they found, then betimes in the morning they enter the Town without resistance, all being secure and asleep, they beset the Lords lodgings with armed men, *Mortons* house they set on fire, and himself having escaped the fire they took prisoner, the Regent is also taken, the Earls of *Glencarn* and *Eglinton* are secured: *Areskin* Captain of the Castle sends some companies of musketiers to seise upon his own house, not then quite finished, which looked full upon the market-place possessed by the enemy, who being sore galled by the musketiers fled confusedly to the gates, in the narrow streets (making more haste then good speed) many of them are trampled upon; the Regents life was saved a while by *David Spence*, who to keep off the blows received them himself, and died the same day of his wounds, two of those that killed him were put to death, the other prisoners in the flight escaped, and the Regent himself also died of his wounds that day. Three Regents are named till the next Parliament, to wit, *Argile*, *James Douglasse* Earle of *Morton*, and *Areskin*-Earle of *Mar*; He by all the suffrages is preferred to the rest, who resolves to besiege *Edinburgh*, but it was so strengthened that he could do no good that way; after this for divers moneths there were many excursions and skirmishes and divers slain on both sides.

About this time the North was much troubled by the falling out of two great families, the *Gordons* and the *Forbeses*; these were for the young King, but the *Gordons* for the Queen: the quarrel grew to that height, that neer *Aberden* a great battel was fought, in which the *Gordons* had the upper hand; many other skirmishes were between the two great factions, till *Edinburgh*

was

was ſtrictly beſieged by the Regent, who pulled down all the Mills neer, and intercepted all the proviſion that came thither, and made garriſons of all the Noblemens houſes round about: *Blackneſſe* is betrayed to *Hamilton*, by which means all navigation between *Leith* and *Sterlin* is hindred. Mean time the King of *Spain* ſends from the *Low-Countries* ſeven great peeces of Ordnance with powder and arms to *Huntley* Lieutenant of the North, for queen *Maries* uſe, who ſends the Lord *Seaton* to the Duke of *Alba* for his aid, and that he would forbid the Scotiſh rebels to traffick there; he anſwers, That he would aid her with mony, but he could not hinder the Scots from trading, becauſe it was contrary to the liberty of the *Low-Countries*. *An. Chriſti.*

The Biſhop of *Roſſe* Agent for the Queen of *Scots*, is committed into cuſtody of the Biſhop of *London*, becauſe he had ſecretly kindled the Rebellion in the North: but being now delivered, deals with the French king, that he would uſe means with queen *Elizabeth* for delivering of queen *Mary*, which queen *Elizabeth* would not aſſent to, as being dangerous to her ſelf and kingdome, ſeeing queen *Mary* aſpired by all evil courſes (ſaith ſhe) unto the kingdome of *England*; yet ſhe urgeth a confirmation of the Treaty of *Edinburgh*, which in part was aſſented to, ſo far as concerned *Q. Elizabeths* title, but the *Scots* could not be induced to break their old league with *France*, except *England* would allow them the ſame priviledges and benefits they have in *France*. The Biſhop of *Roſs* is ſearched for letters ſent to him from the D. of *Alba* about *Q. Mary's* deliverance, and is ſent away into the Iſle of *Ely*; ſome mony alſo which *Q. Mary* ſent to her friends in *Scotland* is intercepted. *Roſſe* being found to have often conference with *Q. Elizabeths* enemies, is committed to the Tower, after it had been argued by the Lawyers, that an Ambaſſador loſeth his priviledge who raiſeth rebellion. The Regent *Mar*, having ruled 13 moneths, died.

To him in the Regencie ſucceeded *James Douglaſſe* Earl of *Morton*, who enacted certain lawes againſt Papiſts and Hereticks: the cuſtody of the King is committed to *Alexander Areskin*, becauſe the Earl of *Mar* was under age, to whom by peculiar right doth belong the cuſtody of the king in his minority; and it was ordered that none ſhould be admitted into the kings preſence but ſuch as were unarmed, that Papiſts and they of the Queens ſide ſhould be excluded, that an Earl might come in with two men, a Baron with one, and other men alone. *Hamilton* Duke of *Chaſtelroy*, and *Huntley*, are drawn by queen *Elizabeths* means to ſubmit to the king and his Regent, and to acknowledge the religion eſtabliſhed; ſhe ſends alſo Sir *William Drury* with forces into *Scotland*, to joyn with the *Scots* in reducing of *Edinburgh*-Caſtle, which was at laſt ſurrendred the 33. day of the ſiege, *Kircady* the governour is hanged. The Biſhop of *Roſſe* is baniſhed out of *England*, who notwithſtanding leaves not to ſollicite foraign Princes in queen *Maries* behalf, who all gave good words, but did nothing. King *Henry* 3. of *France*, and his mother, labour what they can to get young king *James* into *France*, ſo did queen *Mary*, hoping thereby the Catholikes would be more mildly dealt with here. *Q. Mary* is blamed alſo for contriving a marriage between *Charles* uncle to the Scots king, and *Elizabeth Candiſh* daughter to the Counteſſe of *Shrewsbury*. The Duke of *Chaſtelroy* and the Earl of *Arran*, who were *Q. Maries* faithful friends, died this year. Don *John* of *Auſtria* intends to marry with the queen of *Scots*, therefore deals with the Pope about the expulſion of *Q. Elizabeth*, and ſollicites the king of *Spain* to invade *England*. *Morton* the Regent is removed from his regencie, and the goverminent is delivered to the king being now twelve years old, and to twelve Noblemen, of whom three every three moneths ſhould be preſent with the king to adviſe him, of theſe *Morton* was one; but he loth to leave his greatnes, drew all the power to himſelf, and kept in his hand the king within the caſtle of *Sterlin*, wherewith the other Lords were angry, who made the Earl of *Athol* their Captain, and raiſed an Army, whereupon *Morton* yielded and went home ſecretly, and *Athol* died incontinently, not without ſuſpition of poyſon. 1573.

An. Christi. *Esmeus Stuart*, son of *John* brother to *Matthew* Earl of *Lenox* the Kings grand-
father, and called *Aubigney* of a Town in *Berry*, which was bestowed upon *John*
1579. *Stuart* by king *Charles* 7. for defeating the English at *Baugy*, is now come into
Scotland to see his Cousin, who made him a Privy-Councellor, Lord Chamber-
lain of *Scotland*, Captain of *Dunbritton*, Earl of *Lenox*, and after Duke, which
procured some envy on the King as a favourer of the *Guises* and Roman reli-
gion; therefore the Ministers and some envious Lords raised one *James Stuart*
1580. of the family of *Ochiltree*, Captain of the Guard and Earl of *Arran*, to affront
him; but the King in short time reconciled them: Then they accuse him to
queen *Elizabeth*, as one sent by the *Guises* against the Protestants, to free the
Queen, and to dissolve the amity between *England* and *Scotland*; but he cleer-
ed all objections, and shewed himself a Protestant: It was also feared, that by
Dunbritton he would either let in the French, or transport the King into
France; and that he perswaded the King to resign to his Mother the Crown,
and take it again by a lawfull resignation: Hereupon *Robert Bowes* is sent to
challenge *Lenox* before the King and his Councel; but before his cause was
heard or known, he would have him removed from the Councel, which was
denied as a thing not heard of; withall they desire him to shew his Instructi-
ons, which he denied, and so being unheard was called home.

Upon this, *Alexander Hume* is sent to queen *Elizabeth*, who admitted him
not, but sends him to *Burleigh*, who complained that the Queens Ambassador
was slighted, and the Kings French cousin, a Papist, and who perhaps aimed at
the Crown, was preferred to the Queen of *England*: so *Hume* is sent back, with
a caveat to the King to beware of the French plots and faction. In the interim
1581. *Morton* is accused by *Arran* of treason, and imprisoned, though a great friend
for *England*; therefore Sir *Thomas Randolph* is sent into *Scotland* to conserve
amity with *England*, to defend *Morton* from wrong, and to remove *Lenox*;
He told both the King and his Councel, what queen *Elizabeth* had done in
freeing *Scotland* from the French, in defending their King and Religion, with-
out taking a foot of Scotish ground; that now *Lenox* hath diverted the Kings
mind from her to the French, slighteth the Ministers, and puts out the Kings
best officers. The King told him, that he acknowledgeth the Queens good
will, but that *Lenox* was wronged; that in justice he must bring to trial a man
accused of treason. Then *Randolph* strives to stir up *Argile* and some other
Lords, to effect by arms what they could not do otherwayes, shewing that
English forces were ready on the borders to joyn with them; but this took
not effect with these Lords. *Angus* and *Mar* devised plots for *Morton* against
Lenox; but the King banisheth *Angus* beyond the river of *Spey*, and the Castle
of *Sterlin* is taken from *Mar*. *Randolph* fearing danger to himself, got away
secretly by sea to *Barwick*; the English forces are called back from the borders;
1582. and *Morton*, as privy to the murther of the kings father, is beheaded; *Angus*
with others who stood in his defence, fled into *England*.

William Ruthen, lately made Earl of *Gowry*, with *Mar*, *Lindsey* and others,
in the absence of *Lenox* and *Arran*, invite the king into the Castle of *Ruthen*,
where they detain him violently, and put away his best servants, they impriſon
Arran, and call back *Angus*, and send away *Lenox* into *France*; they force the
King to approve this his surprise, by his letters to queen *Elizabeth*; the French
King hearing of this, sends two Ambassadors to set the King free, and to con-
firm the French faction: queen *Mary* in the mean while in her letters to queen
Elizabeth bewaileth the hard condition and miseries of her son now detained
as a prisoner by Rebels, who had been the cause of all her miseries, and withall
blameth queen *Elizabeth* for countenancing and supporting such, shewing her
needlesse jealousies and fears, and how she had perswaded her to resigne her
kingdome, and had denied her assistance when she had escaped out of *Loch-
levin*, when she sent back the Diamond which she had received from queen
Elizabeth as a pledge of her love, and how she suffered her (when she escaped

to

to *England* for ſhelter as her laſt aſſured anchor) to be intercepted and guarded with keepers, and to be ſhut up in ſtrong places till now; ſhe clears her ſelf alſo of any combination with *Norfolk* prejudicial to queen *Elizabeth*, upon whoſe perſwaſion ſhe had ſuffered divers of her friends to be put to death in *Statland*; therefore ſhe deſires that ſhe may have ſome more liberty, however ſome Catholick Prieſt to direct her in Religion, a courteſie not denied to foreign Ambaſſadors; as for the ſuggeſtions of *Beal* about her transferring her right of *Scotland* to her ſon, without queen *Elizabeths* promiſe, ſhe deſires that he may not be credited, and ſo concludes, wiſhing her to commiſerate a diſtreſſed queen, and her neareſt couſin. *An. Chriſti.* 1583.

These letters much trouble Queen *Elizabeth*, who ſends *Beal* a Clerk of the Councel to expoſtulate with her for her complaining letters; the Councel of *England* was content ſhe ſhould be delivered, conditionally, That ſhe practice nothing againſt Queen *Elizabeth*; That ſhe would diſallow as unjuſt what was done by king *Francis* her husband; That ſhe claim no right to *England* during the life of Queen *Elizabeth*; That ſhe procure the king and States of *Scotland* to confirm theſe, and give hoſtages withall; but the *Scots* of the *Engliſh* faction rejected theſe propoſals. About this time the Earl of *Lenox* died, the Ambaſſadors depart unſatisfied, and the king eſcapeth from the government of the three Lords to the Caſtle of S. *Andrews*, and openly declares that this his ſurpriſal was traiterous, yet the buſie-headed Miniſters in their Synod pronounced the ſame to be juſt, darting out Excommunications againſt the diſapprovers thereof.

Gowry with ſome others conſpire to take the King again, pretending his good, the ſecurity of Religion, and amity with *England*: but *Gowry* is apprehended and impriſoned; his other conſpirators ſuddenly ſurpriſe *Sterling*, and as ſuddenly quitted it out of fear and want of ſupplies from *England*. *Marr*, *Glames* and *Angus* fled unto queen *Elizabeth* for her help and mediation with the King; in the interim *Gowry* is arraigned before his Peers at *Sterling*, for impriſoning the King and conſpiring againſt him, for intending to ſeiſe upon *Perth* and *Sterling*, for reſiſting the Kings authority at *Dundee*, who being found guilty was beheaded: queen *Elizabeth* makes ſhew of a treaty with queen *Mary*, if ſhe would mediate with her ſon for the *Scots* fugitive Lords, and detect the plots of the *Guiſes*: for the firſt queen *Mary* was content to mediate, if theſe Lords would ſubmit and turn loyal; for the ſecond, ſhe refuſed till ſhe were fully aſſured of her liberty; for ſhe will not loſe certain friends for uncertain hopes, therefore ſhe deſires the ſame uſage from her which ſhe had from her ſiſter queen *Mary* when ſhe was her priſoner, or the King of *Navarre* from the French king; but this Treaty was put off, and came to nothing, upon diſcovery of ſome letters carried by *Crithton* the Jeſuite, importing the invaſion of *England* by the *Pope*, *Spaniards*, and *Guiſes*: then ſhe ſends *Navus* her Secretary with proffers of entertaining a ſtrict league of amity with queen *Elizabeth*, of renouncing all claim to *England* during her life, of acting nothing againſt her, or the rebellious *Scots*, and their Religion, nor in her ſons marriage without the privity of queen *Elizabeth*. 1584.

But the Presbyterian Miniſters, and their upholders, croſſed all means of pacification; ſo the Pulpit being advanced above the Throne, all went as the Presbytery would have it, till this year they were curbed by ſome wholeſome Laws advancing the Kings power over them, and reſtraining Presbyterial aſſemblies, and abrogating equality of Miniſters by reſtoring the Biſhops, and condemning ſlanderous books againſt the king and his mother; mean while Queen *Mary* is taken from the cuſtody of *Shrewsbury* after fifteen years, and is committed to *Paulet* and *Drury*, purpoſely to make her fall upon deſperate attempts; ſtrange whiſpers went abroad about the depoſition of queen *Elizabeth*, and the marriage of queen *Mary* with ſome Noble Engliſh Catholick, but who this man ſhould be could not be found out. About this time

Henry

An. Christi. 1585. *Henry Percie* E. of *Northumberland* being a priſoner in the Tower, and ſuſpected to have been a plotter againſt Queen *Elizabeth*, murthered himſelf; upon the diſcovery of *Babbingtons* treaſon, Queen *Maries* cloſet is broken open whilſt ſhe was hunting abroad, and all her cabinets, desks and papers are ſent to the Court; all her money alſo was ſeized on, divers letters of ſtrangers were found, and about ſixty kinds of cyphers; divers letters alſo of *Engliſh* Lords 1586. offering their ſervice to her, which the Queen diſſembled; Queen *Maries* two Secretaries were examined, and confeſſed that ſhe knew of *Babbingtons* plot, wherefore Commiſſioners are ſent to *Fodringhay*-Caſtle to examine Queen *Mary*, and to pronounce ſentence of death, if found guilty: when they came they delivered her Queen *Elizabeths* letters; which ſhe read with great and Princely magnanimity, ſhewing ſhe was a Queen, and not ſubject to their Laws, nor was ſhe guilty of what ſhe was accuſed; therefore refuſeth to appear or anſwer as a criminal, or to admit that law lately made againſt her, yet upon perſwaſions ſhe appears, divers accuſations were brought in againſt her, of which (though ſhe ſtoutly defended herſelf) yet ſhe was found guilty. Shortly after the Parliament petitioneth that ſhe might be put to death, which Q. *Elizabeth* ſeemingly refuſed to conſent to, as being a dangerous preſident.

Yet ſhortly after *Buckhurſt* and *Beal* are ſent to Queen *Mary* to acquaint her with the ſentence given againſt her, and that therefore ſhe ſhould repent and prepare her ſelf; upon this ſhe anſwered, That ſhe was exceedingly glad for being accounted an inſtrument of re-eſtabliſhing religion in this Iſland; ſo ſhe deſires a Catholick prieſt, then ſhe writes a letter to Queen *Elizabeth*, deſiring her body might be ſent into *France* there to be laid by her mother, and not into *Scotland* where violence hath been offered to the aſhes of her Anceſtors, that ſo ſhe may have reſt after death, who could never enjoy any in her life. Secondly, ſhe deſires to die publikely that ſhe might witneſſe her faith in Chriſt, and her obedience to the Church. Thirdly, that her ſervants might peaceably depart, and enjoy the legacies ſhe had beſtowed on them.

King *James* being much afflicted about the ſentence of death againſt his mother, ſent divers Ambaſſadors to Queen *Elizabeth*, ſhewing how much he was bound both in honour and nature to intercede for a Queen, and his mother, how diſhonourable and dangerous it might be to Queen *Elizabeth* to ſhed the blood of a Queen ſo near to her: but the Miniſters of *Scotland*, and the reſt of her enemies were ſo earneſt and prevalent with queen *Elizabeth*, that the Kings letters could not prevail, nor the French kings Ambaſſadors which he alſo ſent to this purpoſe; beſides the Queen was affrighted daily with rumors of the Spaniſh fleet, of the Scots invaſion, of the *Guiſes* preparations, of domeſtick rebellions, of plots to murther her, all to haſten the Scots queens death, therefore ſhe delivers to *Daviſon* her Secretary letters ſigned with her hand, that a mandate ſhould be made under the Great-ſeal for her execution, and to be in readineſſe if need ſhould be. This mandate is preſently conveyed to the Queens Counſellors by him, and diſpatched away to *Shrewsbury*, *Kent*, *Derby* and *Cumberland*, which four Earls came to her, willing her to prepare, for ſhe was to die the next day; ſhe with a ſetled minde anſwered, That death was welcome to her, and that her ſoul was not worthy of eternal joy, whoſe body cannot endure the Executioners blow; ſhe deſired the ſpeech of her Confeſſor which was denied her, yet ſhe wrote to him that he would pray for her; that night ſhe ſupped, drunk to her ſervants incouraging them, ſhe read over her laſt will, then went to bed, ſlept a while, and ſpent the reſt of that night in prayer.

The next day ſhe came in a Majeſtick manner to the Scaffold, carrying the Crucifix before her, where having profeſſed her conſtancie to the Roman religion, and taking leave of her friends and ſervants, laid down her neck on the block, repeating theſe words, *Into thy hands, O Lord, I commend my ſpirit*; and ſo at two blows her head was cut off, her body was buried in *Peterburgh*-Church,

Church, and her magnificent funeral kept at *Paris* at the charges of the *Guiſes*, ſhe lived forty ſix years, and was a captive eighteen: when Q. *Elizabeth* heard of her death ſhe was ready to ſwound for grief, ſhe commands her Counſellors, to come no more into her preſence, and *Daviſon* to be brought into the Star-chamber; then ſhe writes a letter to King *James*, ſhewing how without her knowledge his mother was put to death, and how grievous it is to her; withall ſhe aſſures him, none ſhall be more affectionated to him, nor ſo careful of him as her ſelf; mean while *Daviſon* is ſharply reproved in the Star-chamber for his forwardneſſe, and fined ten thouſand pounds, and impriſonment at the Queens pleaſure. *An. Chriſti*

The King was ſo diſpleaſed at the death of his mother, that he would not ſuffer the *Engliſh* Ambaſſador to come into *Scotland*, and would hardly hear him by another man, or receive his letters; he called home his own Ambaſſador out of *England*, and threatneth revenge; the Eſtates of *Scotland* proffer to ſpend their lives and eſtates in this quarrel; ſome perſwade him to require a Navy of the King of *Denmark*, to whoſe daughter he began to be a Suitor; ſome would have him joyn with *Spain* and *France*, and the Pope, and that he ſhould not truſt Proteſtants who had killed his mother, leſt they alſo kill the children; ſome would rather have him ſtand as neuter, but others adviſed him to keep peace with *England*, and be conſtant to his Religion. Queen *Elizabeth* perceiving the *French* tampering with King *James* to withdraw him from his religion and amity with *England*, ſends to him, to let him ſee how dangerous it will prove to him and his Kingdome to fall out with *England* at this time, how uncertain the aids of *France* and *Spain* will be, how he may by this loſe his claim to the Crown of *England*, and how ſhe will be a mother to him; withall ſhe ſends him the ſentence againſt *Daviſon*, and the Judges of *Englands* opinion, ſhewing that the ſentence againſt his mother was no wayes prejudicial to his right of ſucceſſion. 1587.

From this time till the comming of King *James* into *England*, fell out no matters of great concernment in *Scotland*, except the driving of ſome *Spaniſh* ſhips (after the Armado was defeated) upon the Iſlands of *Orkney*; the voyage of King *James* to bring home his new married Queen *Anne* from *Denmark*; the attempt that *Bothwel* made upon the King and Queen in their chambers, from whence he was repulſed and forced to flye, ſome of whoſe Pages and followers were apprehended and hanged, for which treaſonable attempt of his he is proclaimed Traitor, and becauſe he was harboured by the Earl of *Murrey*, contrary to the proclamation, *Huntley* by command ſeiſeth on *Murrey* in his own houſe and kills him; *Bothwel* in the interim eſcapes into *England*, where he lurked a while, and from thence returning is apprehended and confined, he endeavours to raiſe a rebellion, but to no purpoſe. This year Prince *Henry* was born; divers conteſtations the King had with the Presbyterian Miniſters about the Biſhops and Church-government, in which the King was extreamly vexed, perſecuted and preached againſt by them, whoſe power was at that time no leſſe formidable then the Popes heretofore. About this time was fought that cruel battel of *Avinian* between *Huntley* and *Argile*, in which ſeven hundred of *Argiles* ſide were ſlain, and the reſt put to flight; theſe ſtirs were raiſed and fomented by ſome rigid Presbyterian Miniſters, as *Robert Bruce* Super-intendent of *Edinburgh*, *Balquankel* and others, becauſe the King kept correſpondency with Catholick Princes, and was not cruel enough againſt the Papiſts in *Scotland*; therefore they encourage *Bothwel* againſt the King, though he had been proclaimed Traitor, and furniſhed him with money which they had gathered for redeeming of ſome Proteſtant *Scots* from the *Turks*; *Bothwel* with three hundred horſe ſurpriſeth *Leith*, the King deſires the aſſiſtance of the *Edinburgers* againſt him, but they would not ſtir, being forbid by their Miniſters to help the King, ſo that he was forced to come up to the Church of S. *Giles*, and there publikly before the people held up his hand

1588. 1589. 1591. 1592. 1593. 1594.

An. Christi hand and proteſted he would be an utter enemy to the Papiſts; whereupon the Citizens take Arms, whereby *Bothwels* hopes were fruſtrated, who curſed the Miniſters for deluding him thus.

Upon this the King was forced by the importunity of the Miniſters, to make *Argile* (who was their great Protector) Lieutenant of the North, a man unfit for that employment, as being of too haughty and cruel a diſpoſition, and beſides weak in horſe, though powerful enough in foot-forces; the King alſo was perſwaded to beſtow on him the Country of *Lochaber* which belonged to *Huntley*: *Argile* having received his Commiſſion, raiſeth an Army of twelve thouſand, with which he intends to proſecute *Huntley*, *Ærrol* and *Angus*, three Catholick Earls, with fire and ſword; they hearing of this preparation, raiſe alſo a thouſand horſe with a foot-army, I mean *Huntley* and *Ærrol*, for *Angus* had an Army of his own to defend his Country, and could not come in time to joyn with the other two, becauſe of the Rivers between. *Argile* placed two thouſand musketiers in his Van, againſt which *Huntlies* great Ordnance did ſo play that they forced them to give back, and joyn with the main body where *Argile* was himſelf, which *Ærrol* perceiving, wheels about with his horſe, and falls upon them in the Rear, and withall receiveth two wounds with forked arrows, one in the arm, another in the foot; to help him, *Huntley* breaks in furiouſly with all his horſe upon the main body of *Argiles* Army, and puts them with *Argile* himſelf to flight; the fight continued two hours; of *Huntlies* ſide few were killed, but many wounded, and
1600. above two hundred horſe ſlain; of *Argiles* ſide ſome ſay ſeven hundred, others five hundred. The next five years fell out no memorable accident, but *Gowries*
1601. Treaſon, and not long after the birth of Prince *Charles*.

Chap. XXXV.

The Hiſtory of England *and* Scotland *together, from the comming in of King* James *to be ſole Monarch of the whole Iſland, from the year* 1602. *till* 1625.

1602. Queen *Elizabeth* being dead about ten a clock in the morning, King *James* the very ſame day (Secretary *Cecil* reading his Title and Queen *Elizabeths* Will) was proclaimed by ſound of Trumpet firſt at *Whitehall*, then in *Cheap-ſide*, King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France* and *Ireland*. Sir *Robert Cary*, the Lord *Hunſdons* younger ſon, poſted away unſent, to King *James* with the news of the Queens death, who afterward was made a Baron: A few dayes after, the Lords of the Councel ſend Sir *Charles Percy* and Mr. *Thomas Sommerſet*, and after them Sir *Thomas Lake* Clerk of the Signet, to acquaint the King of the peoples affections towards him, as likewiſe with the State of of the Kingdome. *Egerton* Lord Chancellor, *Buckhurſt* Lord Treaſurer, *Nottingham* Lord Admiral, and *Cecil* chief Secretary are confirmed in their places: *Thomas Howard* the brother, and *Henry Howard* the ſon of *Norfolk* who had ſuffered for the Kings mother, are advanced by him, though they were Catholicks, to let Pope *Clement* 8. ſee he was no ſuch enemy to Papiſts as ſome would have had him, and that his two Bulls ſent out againſt his ſucceſſion to the Crown were needleſſe.

King *James* having ſetled *Scotland*, on the fifth of *April* begins his journey
1603. for *England*, and comes to *Theobalds* the third of *May*, where he was met by the Lords of the late Queens Privy-councel, and entertained with an Oration by the Lord Keeper: Here divers Lords of *Scotland* are made Privy-counſellors of *England*. The ſeventh of *May* he rode towards *London*, where by the way near *Totnam-High-croſſe*, the Maior, Aldermen, and five hundred choice Citizens all mounted with chains of gold, met him and attended him to the

Charter-

Charter-house, where came forth Proclamations the same day against Monopolies and Protections, and divers other abuses. All the way the King had travelled, prisoners for small offences were set free, and he plentifully distributed his favours, chiefly the Order of Knighthood. Divers Lords and Countesses are sent to conduct the Queen, with Prince *Henry* now nine years old, and the Lady *Elizabeth*; the King meets them at *Easton* in *Northamptonshire*: *Charles* Duke of *Albany* came not, being weak and sickly, till the next year: The king also makes divers Barons and Earls: Divers Abassadors arrive to congratulate his happy comming to the Crown, namely from the *Palsgrave*, the *Hollander*, the Arch-duke, the *Spaniard*, the *Venetian*, the *Florentine*, and the *French*; for entertaining of whom a Master of the Ceremonies is ordained: There were also made this year fourteen Serjeants at Law. *Valentine Thomas* for conspiring against Queen *Elizabeth*, was drawn, hanged and quartered. The Lord *Montjoy* returns out of *Ireland*, bringing with him *Tir-Oen* whom the king pardoned, who sends to his brother of *Denmark* the Earl of *Rutland* with the Garter, and to be god-father to his son *Christianus*. The Lord *Spencer* also is sent with the Garter to the Duke of *Wirtinberg*. *An. Christi*

This year produced a plot against the King and Prince *Henry*, by the Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, and divers others, upon some discontents, they knew not what; they are apprehended in *July*, and arraigned in *November* at *Winchester*, because of the sickness then at *London*, wherefore the Terme also was kept there. The Lord *Grey* is accused for raising two thousand men to defend the *Low-Countries*, but indeed to seise upon the king and Prince: *Cobham* and *Rawleigh* met in S. *Martins*, and consulted about raising sedition, altering Religion, & setting up Lady *Arabella*; it was proved that *Watson* the Priest was designed to be Lord Chancellor, and others for other offices: *Rawleigh* was to treat with Count *Aremberg* for money, and *Cobham* with the *Spaniard* and Arch-duke for assisting *Arabella*; these pleaded, the king not being yet crowned this could be no Treason, and that it was onely discourse, and not matter of fact; but they were refuted and condemned, the Priests *Watson* and *Clerk* were executed, and *Brook* beheaded; *Cobham*, *Grey* and *Markham*, at the point of their Execution were reprieved by the Kings warrant, and carried back to the Tower. After this the King kept the feast of S. *George* at *Windsor*, where the Prince with some others are installed; the Earl of *Southampton* is restored; divers other honours are conferred, and on S. *James* day the King and Queen are crowned and anointed at *Westminster* by Archbishop *Whitegift*; command is given for observation of *Gowries* conspiracy. The King calls in all letters of Mart against the *Spaniard*, and concludes a peace with him, which was confirmed by mutual oaths solemnly taken: the *Spanish* Ambassador held the Kings hands between his, and in like manner the *English* Ambassador at *Valledolid* held the King of *Spains* hands, when they took their oaths: *Nottingham* Lord Admiral was Ambassador for *England*, and *Valesco* Constable of *Castile* for *Spain*: by *Nottingham* the king sent these presents to the *Spaniard*, six horses with saddles and saddle-cloaths embroidered, whereof three for the King and three for the Queen, two crosse-bows with sheaffes of arrows, four fowling-peeces inlaid with plates of gold, and a couple of lyme-hounds. The Earl of *Hartford* is sent Ambassador to *Albert* and *Isabella* to take their oaths, who bestowed on the Arch-dukes servants three thousand pounds, so the Arch-duke presented him with a Jewel of nine hundred pounds value, and a suit of Arms worth three hundred pounds, and bare his charges all the time of his stay at *Bruxels*. 1604.

After this, the kings second son *Charles* Duke of *Albany* is created Duke of *York*, being now four years old. *Richard Haydock* a Physitian, pretending to preach at night in his sleep, acknowledgeth his forgery to the king who had detected it. One *Douglasse* a Scots-man, for counterfeiting the kings Privy-seal to divers Princes in *Germany*, is sent over by the *Palsgrave*, and in *Smith-*

An. Christi 1605.

field hanged and quartered. A second Parliament is called at *Westminster*, four dayes before the sitting, the King, Queen and Prince rode solemnly through *London*, where divers Pageants were erected, Presents given, and speeches made. In the time of this Parliament was discovered the Gunpowder-plot, contrived by *Catesby*, *Percie* and others, who hired a cellar under the Parliament-house, laying in it twenty barrels of powder which they had under billets and faggots; their intent was to blow up the King and Prince, Nobles and Commons, to surprise the Duke of *York*, and to proclaim the Lady *Elizabeth* Queen; but the plot was detected by a letter sent to the Lord *Monteagle*, which his foot-man received from an unknown man, the letter was to desire him to forbear being at Parliament, because of a terrible blow that was to be given; the letter was delivered to the Earl of *Salisbury* by *Monteagle*, who could make no sense of it; but the King when he read it, apprehended presently, that by the word (blow) was intimated a blowing up with Gunpowder, therefore command is given to search all the rooms about the Parliament-house, in the cellar under the faggots were found six and thirty barrels of powder; *Fawks* upon suspition is apprehended, in whose pocket is found a peece of touch-wood, a tinder-box, and a watch, to try the short and long burning of the touch-wood: the plot being discovered, some fled to *Worcestershire*, where *Catesby* & *Percie* were slain by one shot of a musket, both the *Wrights John* and *Christopher* are likewise slain, the rest were publikly executed, except *Tresham* who died of the Strangury in the Tower, whither *Northumberland* upon suspition is sent; great joy there was for this deliverance, so that the Spanish and Arch-dukes Ambassadors made bone-fires, and threw money amongst the people.

About this time the King receives as a present from the *Spaniard* six Jennets of *Andalusia*, with embroidered saddles, and saddle-cloth of Tissue, one of these Jennets was snow-white, whose main reached to the ground: the Queen of *Spain* also sent to our Queen *Anne* rich presents of embroidery, ambergreece, a rich cap and girdle in a bason of gold to congratulate the kings happy deliverance, in memory whereof the fifth of *November* is appointed to be kept holy, and the Lord *Monteagle* is rewarded with two hundred pounds a year for ever, and five hundred pounds besides for his life. Shortly after a rumor was spread that the king was slain at *Oking*, which caused great fears in *London*, till within two hours after news came that he was safe, to the great comfort of all; so that the Spanish Ambassador gave Sir *Lewis Lewknor* a chain of gold for bringing him the news. *Henry Garnet* Provincial of the English Jesuits, suffered death for concealing the Gunpowder-treason: *Northumberland* is fined to pay to the King thirty thousand pounds, to forfeit all his offices, and to be kept prisoner during the Kings pleasure for misprisions of Treason.

At *Hampton*-Court an Assembly of Divines is called by the King to confer about the Liturgy and Church-government; the first sitting was in the privy-chamber, where in the presence of his Privy-councel, he shewed the causes why he called these Divines, not that he thought there was any thing in the Church that required alteration, all things being so well setled already, but like a wise Physitian to make search into the supposed diseases thereof, and to remove the occasion of complaints, that the mouths of complainants may be stopped, and sober mindes satisfied: He acknowledgeth Confirmation after Baptisme, by Episcopal benediction and imposition of hands, after the childe hath professed his own faith, to be of great use and antiquity in the Church, and so the Bishops made it appear to his Majesty, that confirmation was no essential part of Baptisme: for Absolution they shew it is used in the reformed Churches of *Auspurg*, *Saxony* and *Bohemia*, and that Christ gave power to his Ministers to pronounce it: for pivate Baptisme, they say, That it it is not to be administred by women and Laicks, but by lawful Ministers onely: and as for Excommunication, they say, That the abuses being removed,

moved, it ought to retain its vigor in the Church: and so for that day the Assembly of the Prelates was dismissed. *An. Christi*

The Munday after, the King calls into his privy-chamber the complaining Doctors, telling them, That he meant not to innovate the Church-government so found and so long established, but to settle uniformity and unity, and to remove abuses if there be any, therefore desires them to declare their grievances: hereupon Dr. *Reynolds* the foreman reduced all the matters in debate to these four heads: 1. For preservation of true doctrine. 2. For placing of good Pastors. 3. For sincere Church-government. 4. For explanation of some clauses in the Service-book. All these points were exactly handled and cleared by the Prelates, and so moderated by the King with that judgement and learning, that all who were present were ravished with admiration. The Wednesday following, being the third dayes Conference, the King declares what formerly had past, and shuts up all with a godly exhortation, perswading all to unity, and diligence in their charge, shewing the duties both of superiors and inferiors, wishing them to build Gods Temple without the sound of discord, and to shew their obedience and humility by a peaceable conformity, seeing the points in controversie were matters of meer weakness. After this the King gives order for a new translation of the Bible according to the originals, and then sends some learned and judicious Divines into *Scotland* to confer with the Divines there about an uniform government in both Churches: Then by Act of Parliament he provides for the Churches constant maintenance, that none of her revenues or lands be alienated.

The king, to shew how willing he was to unite the two kingdomes into one, causeth one name to be given to both, and himself to be proclaimed king of *Great-Britain*; he causeth another Proclamation to come forth for banishing of Jesuites and Priests, and a third for confirming the book of Common-prayer, as it was in the late Queens time.

In the fourth year of the kings reign, the king of *Denmark* arrives in the *Thames* with eight ships, and anchored before *Gravesend*, thither the King with the Prince and Lords went in Barges to meet him, and conducted him to *London*, where he stayed till the 12. of *August*, having landed the 17. of *July* before; after whose departure arrived at *London*, *Francis* Prince of *Vandemont* the Duke of *Lorrains* third son, accompanied with seven Earls, ten Barons, forty Gentlemen, and sixscore common persons, who were for fourteen dayes together entertained by the king at *Hampton*-Court. The next year in *May*, some malecontents in the Shires of *Northampton*, *Leceister* and *Warwick* in great companies began to throw down Inclosures, whose Ring-leader was one *Reynolds*, or Captain *Pouch*, so called from his green-leather-pouch hanging by his side, where he said he had sufficient to defend them against all opposers, but when he was apprehended, there was nothing found there but a peece of green-cheese; some Lords, with *Cook* the chief Justice, suppressed them by force of Arms, and punished some of them by death, others by fines. In *June* following the King dined with *Wats* the Lord Maior, who after dinner presented him with a purse full of gold, and then the King was made free of the Company of Cloath-workers, to whom he promised a brace of Bucks yearly for ever, to be spent at the election of their Master. 1606.

In *July* following, the king dined at Merchant-Taylors-hall, where he was presented with a purse of gold, and a Roll shewed him wherein were registred seven Kings, one Queen, seventeen Princes and Dukes, two Dutchesses, one Archbishop, one and thirty Earls, sixty six Barons, seven Abbots, seven Priors, with many Knights free of that Company; the king being free of another Company, refused to be of theirs, but gave way that the Prince should be free, and that he would see the Garland put on his head, whereupon a purse of gold is presented to the Prince, and he with divers Lords are made free. About this time ungrateful *Tir-Oen*, with some other Irish Lords went away to sollicite

An. Christi foreign Princes against the King, and to offer *Ireland* to the Pope.

1608. This year *Virginia* is planted. *George Jervis* a Priest, and *Thomas Garnet* a Jesuite are executed; a pardon was offered to *Garnet*, if he would take the Oath of Allegiance, which he refused. Divers English Pyrates turn Turks. The *New-Exchange* is erected, where a long old Stable stood before, by *Salisbury* the Treasurer, and is named by the King (who with the Queen and Prince

1609. came to see it) *Britains-Burse*. Foraigners are prohibited to fish upon the Kings coasts without leave. Now Allom is made in *England*, which heretofore was brought from other places; This year also Silk-worms were brought into *England*.

1610. The King having received aid for Knighting Prince *Henry*, and he being now come to the age of seventeen years, is made Prince of *Wales*. *Garter* King at Arms bore the Letters-Patents, *Sussex* the Purple-Velvet Robes, *Huntington* the Train, *Cumberland* the Sword, *Rutland* the Ring, *Darby* the Rod, and *Shrewsbury* the Cap and Coronet; *Nottingham* and *Northampton* supported the Prince, being in his Surcoat only, and bare-headed: Thus he was conducted to the King, and attended on by five and twenty Knights of the Bath; *Salisbury* read the Letters-patents; the Prince kneeling all the while before the King, and at the words accustomed the King put on him the Robe, Sword, Cap and Coronet, the Rod and Ring, and then kissed him on the cheeks; so then he was allowed to keep Court by himself.

The King to keep peace at home, in his own person heard the differences between the Ecclesiastick and temporal Judges, argued touching Protections; he heard also the complaints of the Victuallers and other Officers of his Navy. Upon the news of king *Henry* 4. of *France* his death, king *James* by proclamation commands all Priests and Jesuites to avoid the land, and all Recusants to return home to their dwellings. The East-India Merchants are made a Corporation for ever, who built a ship of 1200 Tun, which at *Bantham* was lost: the King also builds a ship of 1400 Tun, which he gave to the Prince, who called it by his dignity, *The Prince*.

About this time Mr. *Car*, who had been one of the Kings twelve Pages, whom he dismissed upon taking so many Footmen, was afterward made one of the Bed-chamber, upon breaking of his leg, as he lighted from his horse in the kings presence, who ever after cast an affection towards him; he made him knight, then his Secretary, then Viscount *Rochester*, and a Privy-councellor, afterward he made him Earl of *Somerset*, and at last Lord Chamberlain. These great Honours made some to envy, others to admire and flatter him; among the rest the Countesse of *Essex* the Earl of *Suffolks* daughter, who so much fell in love with him, that she slighted her own husband, and procured Mrs. *Turner*, one *Gresham*, and Dr. *Forman*, by inchantments to disable him, and to procure *Cars* love; places of meeting are appointed at *Hammersmith*, where much loose behaviour was used between them, so that Sir *Thomas Overbury*, *Cars* favorite, was much displeased with it; and Prince *Henry* hearing of his loose kind of life with her, slighted him, which some think hastened the Princes death.

The Lady *Francis Howard* complaining of her husbands frigidity, and that she was still a Maid, procures a Divorce, which was granted upon a search made on her by twelve Matrons: then a marriage is thought on by *Car* and *Howard*, to which *Overbury* was altogether averse; upon this *Rochester* and the Countesse meet, and conclude the death of *Overbury*, who was a main obstacle to their proceedings; for the facilitating whereof, *Wade* is removed from the Lieutenantship of the Tower, and *Elvis* is preferred; then the Countesse confers with Mrs. *Turner*, complaining of *Overburies* insolencie for defaming her name; hereupon they resolve to poyson him, by one *Weston* an Apothecary sometimes servant to Dr. *Turner*. And because *Overbury* was to be imployed as an Ambassador into the *Low-Countries* to the Archduke, *Rochester* disswades him from that imployment, promising to take him off with credit; but in

stead

ſtead of ſo doing, he inconſeth the king againſt him, ſhewing that *Overbury* was become ſo inſolent, that he ſcorned that employment to the Archduke as too mean for him; therefore the king having received a deniall from *Overbury*, ſends him to the Tower; *Northampton* and *Rocheſter* his two great enemies, command the Lieutenant to keep him cloſe priſoner, and *Weſton* is preferred to wait on him in the Tower; *Greſham* in the interim dies, and one *Franklin* is entertained in that buſineſſe, a man fit to make poyſons. *An. Chriſti.*

Shortly after, *Elvis* the Lieutenant was acquainted with the poyſoning of *Overbury* by *Weſton*, as he was carrying a part of his ſupper in one hand, and a glaſſe of blue water in the other: The next day *Elvis* is ſent for by *Northampton*, by whom he was encouraged to perſiſt, and a thouſand pounds promiſed him for a reward; he is alſo deſired to ſift out *Overburies* minde, how he is affected to the match between *Rocheſter* and the Counteſſe; in the interim more poyſons are ſent by the Counteſſe, which by *Weſton* are tempered with his broth and meat; ſome poyſoned Tarts and Jellies alſo are ſent by the Viſcount to Sir *Thomas Monſon*, whoſe ſervant delivered them to *Weſton*, which brought the ſaid Sir *Thomas* to be ſuſpected as having a hand in this act; by this means *Overbury* grew very ſick, but by a cooling bath he received ſome eaſe: hereupon the Lieutenant is commanded by the Counceil (as he gave out) that no man might have liberty to ſpeak with him.

Now the intended marriage comes to light, much queſtioning and debate there is about it; the biſhops are divided, *Canterbury* and others againſt it, *Wincheſter* and *Ely* for it, at laſt a nullity is obtained, and order is ſent to *Eſſex* to repay the portions of five thouſand pound: when *Overbury* heard of the marriage, he grieved exceedingly both for the Earl of *Sommerſet*, as for himſelf, ſuſpecting it would cauſe his death; therefore he writes to the Earl to be releaſed, who returns him ſome Court holy-water, and a white-powder to eaſe his pain, which it did ſhortly after, for being given to him in a gliſter, proved poyſon, which the next day with exceſſive pains in the guts killed him; after his death, it was ſpread abroad he died of the pox by exceſſe of laſciviouſneſſe.

This year gold is enhaunſed; one *Legate* an *Arian* is burned; and the Lantgrave of *Heſſe* commeth to viſit King *James*. The next year the Lord *Zanchir* is hanged for cauſing one *Turner* to be murthered. The body of Queen *Mary* of *Scotland* is removed from *Peterborow* to *Weſtminſter*, where a ſtately tomb of marble is erected over it. The *Palſgrave* Elector commeth into *England*, who with *Grave-Mauriee* are inveſted with the Garter. The year following was fatal to this Iſland by the death of Prince *Henry*, and the marriage of his ſiſter the Lady *Elizabeth* to the *Palſgrave*. 1611. 1612. 1613.

The nullity being obtained, the match is made, and honoured by the Kings preſence, and a Mask; a few dayes after, the new married couple were feaſted with the Nobility of the Kingdome, at Merchant-Taylors hall by the Lord Maior and Aldermen. Rumors are ſpread abroad of a *Spaniſh* fleet, as if intended for *England*, and this ſuſpition increaſed by a Proclamation againſt *Spaniſh* money: the *Scots* in the Weſtern Iſlands flie out into rebellion, ſo do the *Wilde-Iriſh* in *Ireland*, but were quickly ſuppreſſed. In the Iſlands of *Orkney* there was great commotions raiſed by the Earl of *Orkney*, then a priſoner in *Edinburgh*-Caſtle, who wrote letters to his Baſtard-ſon, and other of his friends there to take poſſeſſion of his houſes, whereof he accounted the Caſtle of *Kirkway* one; whereupon the Counceil at *Edinburgh* ſend thither ſome ſhips of war, and land-forces out of *Cathneſſe*, who beſiege the Caſtle both by ſea and land, which at laſt yeeldeth to mercy; the Earls ſon with the beſieged are hanged up cloſe by the Caſtle, which is demoliſhed, the Ordnance carried away, and not long after the Earl himſelf was beheaded at *Edinburgh*. 1614.

The Earl of *Northampton* is publikly ſpoken againſt for countenancing and advancing the Roman Religion; a Bill is exhibited in the Star-chamber by him

An. Christi him againſt ſuch as defamed him; but *Canterbury* maintains their cauſe, ſhewing there were never in his time ſo many Prieſts in *England* as now: My Lord hereat being much troubled, went to *Greenwich*, made his will, then returned to his houſe at *London*, where he died. The Cloath-workers obtain at laſt that no more white-cloaths be carried over the ſeas undied and undreſſed, the Dutch proclaim that none ſhall buy any ſuch cloaths ſo dreſſed and died: hereupon wools are prohibited to be tranſported out of the Kingdome; yet at laſt it is ordered by the Councel, that a certain number of white-cloaths ſhall be tranſported.

Sommerſet having loſt *Northampton* his great friend, and fearing the detection of *Overburies* death, procures a general pardon of all treaſons, miſpriſions, murthers, fellonies, outrages whatſoever, which the King ſigned, but Chancellor *Egerton* refuſeth to let it paſſe the Seal, and acquaints the King of the danger might ariſe thereby: whereupon the King ſuſpecting all was not well with *Somerſet*, withdraws his favour from him, and begins to caſt his affection upon a young Gentleman lately come from *France*, Mr. *George Villiers*, on whom he beſtows a thouſand pounds, then Knights him, inveſts him with the Garter, makes him Maſter of the horſe, and afterward Earl, Marqueſſe, and Duke of *Buckingham*.

Sommerſet being troubled in conſcience about *Overburies* death, ſendeth to *France* to have the Apothecary diſpatched who gave the Gliſter; he cauſeth all places to be ſearched where he thought any letters were which concerned that miſchief; and by reaſon of his pride, covetouſneſſe, and inſolent carriage, he is every day leſſe in the Kings favour, and the peoples affections: At laſt upon petition of *Overburies* man to my Lord *Cook*, and upon the information of Sir *Ralph Winwood* to the King *Weſton*, is examined, and after much adoe at laſt confeſſes all, who with *Turner*, *Franklin* and *Elvis* are condemned and hanged; *Sommerſet* is committed to the Dean of *Weſtminſter*, he ſtood ſtill upon his innocencie, and denied all, but his Counteſſe confeſſed; whereupon his money, plate and jewels worth 200000 *li.* and his lands to 19000 *li. per annum*, are ſeiſed upon for the Kings uſe, who beſtowed divers of them upon the Prince.

About this time Sir *Walter Raleigh*, after ten years impriſonment in the Tower, was ſet at liberty: he hated *Sommerſet* exceedingly, becauſe he had begged and got his lands; the Counteſſe of *Shrewsbury* alſo, who was privy to the eſcape of the Lady *Arabella*, was releaſed out of the Tower.

In the year 1614. the *Engliſh* ſends a Plantation to the *Barmudes*, as the *Londoners* had done the year before into *Ireland*. The King of *Denmark* this year came privately into *England* again. *Hugh Middleton* brought the water into *London*, and *Suttons* Hoſpital is founded. The next year after, the Lady
1615. *Arabella* who married to Mr. *William Seymour*, now Marqueſſe of *Hartford*, dieth, which alſo was the fatal year of Sir *Thomas Overbury*. The tryal of *Sommerſet* and his Lady is put off, becauſe ſhe was with childe; but after ſhe was delivered of a daughter, the Lord Chancellor is authoriſed to be High-Steward of *England* for the time being, to whom were joyned eight Judges for his aſſiſtants; a Seat-Royal is placed in the upper end of *Weſtminſter*-hall, the two priſoners are brought from the Tower; the Counteſſe pleaded guilty, but *Sommerſet* pleaded not guilty; yet being found guilty by his Judges, is condemned, and ſent back to the Tower, they were afterward both pardoned and releaſed out of the Tower. This ſame year the Archbiſhop of *Spalato*
1616. comes into *England*, and the Cautionary Towns are reſtored to the States. About two years before this, the Order of Knight-Baronets was inſtituted by King *James*, who were to maintain thirty foot-ſouldiers in *Ireland* for three years, after the rate of eight pence a day, and to pay the wages of one whole year upon the paſſing of their Patent, then they muſt be Gentlemen of three deſcents, and ſhould be worth a thouſand pounds *per annum*, the

number

number to be installed was not to exceed two hundred. An Ambassador came from the *Russian* Emperor to King *James*, desiring his amity, and to mediate for a peace between him and the King of *Swethland*, and presents him with rich Furs: and not onely the *Russian*, but the *Persian* also, admiring the wisdome and happinesse of King *James*, some time before this, sent Sir *Robert Sherley* to desire his amity, and withall freely offers commerce to the Kings subjects through all the *Persian* dominions: This Sir *Robert* was made an Earl of the Empire by *Rodulphus Cæsar*, then having served the *Persian* ten years, was made General of his Artillery, and married him to the Lady *Teresia*, whose sister was one of the Queens of *Persia*; she was brought to bed here of a son, whom the Queen and Prince *Henry* Christened. About this time *Moorfields*, before a stinking place, were made out into pleasant walks: Prince *Charles* is created Prince of *Wales*, which action was accompanied with much joy, and the installing of five and twenty Knights of the *Bath*. *An. Christi*

This year the King after fourteen years absence returns into *Scotland* for setling both the Church and State there, whose presence was so welcome, that every place and City whither he went did strive to outstrip one another in magnificent entertainment: having setled all things, and confirmed the five Articles of *Perth*, after six moneths abode there, he returns into *England*; Sir *Walter Rawleigh* being now at liberty perswades the King to afford him some ships for *Guyana*, where he thought was a Mine of gold, which would inrich him and the whole kingdome without any prejudice to the *Spaniard*, but when he came thither no treasure could be found; wherefore that he might not return empty-handed, he falls upon S. *Thome*, a Town of the *Spaniards*, which he sacked, pillaged and burned: *Gundomore* the *Spanish* Leiger complains: King *James* to avoid a breach between *Spain* and *England*, prefers the death of one man, already condemned, before the breach of publike peace, therefore he is newly arraigned and condemned to die, his head was cut off on a Scaffold in the Pallace-yard. 1617. 1618.

Queen *Anne*, after she had been married twenty years, died at *Hampton*-Court, whose death cast the king into a dangerous sickness, of which he recovered. In a Parliament at *Westminster* (in which Chancellor *Bacon* for bribery was put from his place, and sent to the Tower, into whose place Dr. *Williams* Dean of *Westminster* succeeded) *Montpesson* and *Michel* are for abuses censured: Sir *Richard Weston* is sent Ambassador to the Emperor to sollicite the restoring of the *Palsgrave* to his own Country: *Gundomore* assures the king there was no readier way to recover the *Pallatinate*, then by making a match between Prince *Charles* and the *Infanta* of *Spain*, which might be effected, if the Prince were sent thither; whereupon the king sends him with *Buckingham*, *Porter* and *Cottington* by land; in the way at *Paris*, being disguised, he saw the Court, and Princesse *Mary*, whom afterward he married; *Gundomore* in the interim obtains of some Ladies large summes of money for places with the *Infanta* when she came: The Prince being arrived in *Spain*, was received with as much love and magnificence as could be expected, so as the charge of his entertainment stood the King of *Spain* in nine and forty thousand Ducats, yet he was so restrained from the Lady, that the eight moneths time he stayed in *Spain* he saw her very seldome, and that at a distance, and never spake with her but twice, and that before company, and was limited also in his speeches. 1619. 1621. 1623.

This match was hindred by the falling out of *Buckingham* and Count *Olvares* the King of *Spains* great favourite: much time also was protracted upon pretence of difficulties to obtain the Popes dispensation; wherefore King *James* wearied with delayes sends for the Prince home, who having taken his leave of the King of *Spain*, returns by sea, and lands at *Portsmouth*, to the great joy of the people: the Articles of the marriage were so strict and large for exercise of the Catholick Religion, and none at all for restoring of the

An. Christi the *Palatinate*, that King *James* broke off all treaty of the marriage, and signified so much to the *Spaniard* and other Princes; wherefore a consultation is had for recovering it by Arms: to this end a great contribution by way of benevolence was collected for raising men. Then another match was thought on for the Prince; for this cause the Earls of *Carliſle* and *Holland* are sent into *France* to treat of a marriage with the younger daughter of *Henry* 4. which was accompliſhed shortly after King *James* his death. About this time the Archbiſhop of *Spalato* was burned at *Rome* for apostacie; he came into this
1624. Kingome petending Religion, as he shewed in his writings by maintaining Protestanisme, and was therefore made Dean of *Windsor*, and Master of the *Savoy*; but being sickle-headed, after he had stayed here five years, he retracted all he had written or said before, and therefore is commanded by the King to depart the Kingdome within three dayes, and so he returns to *Rome*, where he inveighed as bitterly against the Protestants, as he did here against the Papists.

1625. This year was fatal by the fall of that great Cedar King *James*, the wiſest, fortunateſt, and most peaceable Prince that ever was in this land; under whose two and twenty years government, this kingdome attained to the height of peace, plenty and happineſſe; in whose halcionian dayes, more works of piety were done then in any other Princes reign of the like continuance; such were the reparations of *Pauls* begun then, the endowments of S. *Johns* Colledge in *Oxford* by Dr. *Land* the Archbiſhop, the Almſ-houſe at *Croyden* by Archbiſhop *Abbot*, and that in *Suſſex* by *Robert* Earl of *Dorſet*, that of *Sutton* in the Charter-houſe, *Wilby* Colledge in *Oxford* by Mr. *Nicholas Wilby*, *Dulwich* Almſ-houſe by *Edward Allen* the Player, the Hiſtory-Lecture at *Oxford* by Mr. *Cambden*, three thouſand and ſix hundred pounds given to good uſes by Mr. *Patyn* Grocer of *London*, *Camden*-Hoſpital in *Glocesterſhire* founded by Sir *Baptiſt Hicks*, five thouſand pounds given by Mr. *Thomas Teaſdale* for maintenance of ſeven Fellows and five Schollars in *Ballyol* Colledge, three fair Hoſpitals founded by *Henry* Earl of *Northampton*, one at *Ryſing* in *Norfolk*, a ſecond at *Clun* in *Shropſhire*, the third at *Greenwich* in *Kent*, 8000 *li.* given by *William Jones* of *London* for a Free-ſchool and Almſ-houſes in *Wales*, and a 100 *li.* for ever yearly to a preacher in *London*. Not to ſpeak of *Chelſey*-Colledge, divers Churches and Chappels by private men, and other ſums of money left by charitable men; all which were the fruits of his peaceable government: and among the reſt, we may not omit the Plantations of *Ireland*, *Virginia*, *Barmudas*, and *New-England*; in *Virginia*, the firſt Town that ever was built there bare his name; for though this was diſcovered in the Queens time, yet it was not planted till the kings: the next was the plantation of the *Barmudas*, and the laſt of *New-England*, the patent whereof was granted by king *James* to *Briſtol*, *Exeter*, and *Plimouth*. In his time alſo divers Schools, Churches and Hoſpitals were erected in *Scotland*, and a Plantation by the Scots was thought on in the north part of *Canada*, which in king *Charles* his time was ſet on foot. This king *James* for his wiſdome was admired of foreign Princes, for learning by the Univerſities; for his wiſe, juſt, and peaceable government, by his ſubjects. Proteſtaniſme had never a greater Champion, as may be ſeen by his books, by his care in cauſing Conferences to be held in *Scotland* about uniformity of Diſcipline, and unity of Doctrine; about expelling *Vorſtius* out of *Leyden*, and ſending Divines to the Synod of *Dort*, and his learned moderating of the Conference at *Hampton*-Court; ſo that he was *Plato's* Prince, a Philoſophical King, or a Kingly Philoſopher. He died the 27. of *March*, the 59. year of his age, having reigned over all *Great-Britain* 22. years compleat. In his time fell out divers ſtrange accidents; the great Plague, whering died in *London* above 38000. in one year, the great Froſt, great inundations and fires, chiefly that of *Dorcheſter*, the falling of the room at Black-Friars, a Whale within eight miles of *London*, the Blazing-ſtar, the killing of a man by Archbiſhop *Abbot*.

Chap.

An. Christi.

CHAP. XXXVI.

A Continuation of the History of Great-Britain, *under King* Charles, *from the yeare* 1625. *till the yeare* 1641.

PRince *Charles* being about the age of 25 yeares, is proclaimed King of *Great-Britain, &c.* Who shortly after his Coronation was married to *Henrieta Maria*, younger daughter of King *Henry* 4. of *France*. The Match was made upon these conditions: That the Popes dispensation should be procured within the space of three moneths before; That the free exercise of the Catholike Religion be permitted to the Queen and her servants, and her Children; that therefore she should be allowed her Chappel, and Burial-place peculiar to herself and family, with 28 Priests and a Bishop chosen by the French king, who should be exempted from the Secular power; And that King *Charles* should sweare never to withdraw from, or perswade her to imbrace any other Religion. Her Portion was 800000 Crowns; her Dowry 18000 lib. sterling; besides so much Lands as should maintain her and her Court, answerable to her Greatnesse. 1625.

Not long after the marriage was consummated, all amity with *Spain* is rejected, and Commerce prohibited: a Fleet of 150 Sail, with 10000 Foot and some Horse, are sent against *Spain*; they landed at *Cadiz*, but were beaten back into their ships with losse, by *Ferdinand Gironius*; the ships by storms in their return were much shattered, many of the passengers died with sickneſse and cold, so that few returned home. This unlucky Expedition hindred the League that was made between *England*, *Denmark*, *Swethland*, *Venice* and *Holland*, against the House of *Austria*.

The next yeare, King *Lewis* of *France* falls out with King *Charles* of *Great-Britain*, becauſe he sent back the French Priests into *France*, upon some distaste taken against them for injoining an unseemly Penance on the Queen; and becauſe he entertained Monsieur *Subize*, and armed him against the French King: and however King *Charles* was content to allow the Queen twelve Priests and one Bishop, twelve Women, one Chamberlain, one Secretary, one Physitian, and three other Catholike servants; yet he could not be disswaded from defending *Subize*, and the Protestant cause; which occasioned a warre between them; therefore the English ships and goods are arrested in *France*, and the half of the Queens dower was retained: Upon this, an English Fleet is sent to the Isle of *Rhee*, under the Duke of *Buckingham*, who took it; but not long after it was lost again, and the English driven to their ships, not without the losse of many a brave man. Yet K. *Charles* being nothing dismayed, prepares another Fleet against the next year, for relief of *Rochel* now besieged by the French King; but whilst the Duke was ready to imbarque at *Portsmouth* where the Fleet lay, he was suddenly stabbed by one *John Felton*, which caused great discontent in the King, and a tumult in the Dukes lodgings; the French being accused as actors in this murther; but *Felton* confessing that he had killed the Duke, the tumult was appeased, and he apprehended, who confessed he could not be quiet in mind till he had acted that tragedy, being perswaded that the Duke was no good Patriot, having exasperated the King against the former Parliament which was assembled for giving aid to the King in defence of the Protestant cause, which was then in great danger both in *France* and *Germany*, the King of *Denmark* being brought very low by the Emperor. 1626. 1627. 1628.

Notwithstanding the Dukes death, the Fleet was dispatched to the reliefe of *Rochel*, but could do no good, becauſe it came too late; for the Town was begirt with impregnable Barracadoes and Circumvallations both by sea and land, so that *re infecta* it returned home. The next year a Parliament is called;

An. Christi Peace is concluded with *France*; A new Plantation is begun in *America*, called
1629. *New-England*. Not long after, on the 29. of *May*, Prince *Charles* was borne: the next day, the King at *Pauls-Crosse* gave thanks to God for the Queens safe delivery, and the birth of his Son. This year a Peace is concluded with *Spain*.
1631. In the year following, the King sends to the Emperor for restitution of the *Palatine* into his inheritance, but nothing was effected. In the year 1633. the King about *May* began his journey into *Scotland*, where he was Crowned the 18. of *June*, with great solemnity. Not long after, as he was crossing the Ferry between *Leith* and *Brunt-Island*, there arose so sudden a storm, that he was in danger to be cast away; some of his servants were then drowned, and much of his Plate and houshold-stuffe was lost. He erected about the same time a Bishops See in *Edinburgh*, and setled Mr. *William Forbes* of *Aberden* (an eminent man for learning) Bishop there; but he died shortly after, being vexed by the people of that place, who could not endure to be subject to a Bishop. The King having called a Parliament there, in which some things in favour of the Church were enacted, which pleased not divers of the Great ones there; whereupon the King returns abruptly into *England*, which was ill resented by the *Scots* Lords.

1634. The next year following, King *Charles* for maintenance of his Navy, raised the Tax of Ship-mony, by which means the Sea-men were well paid, and for two years together the Kingdome was well guarded by the Royal Fleet. But this Tax was so unequally laid by the Sheriffs and their Deputies, upon divers of the meaner sort, that it caused great discontent: (For I know a Minister, whose Benefice was scarce 100.l. *per annum*, forced to pay 15.l. for his Tax the first year.) This Ship-mony was at last opposed and voted down in Parliament, In the year 1636. the King sends again to the Emperor in behalf of the Palsgrave, in which Embassie much mony was spent to little purpose. In the year after, the Popes Nuntio's are received and entertained at the Queens Court. In *Scotland* fell out the great Tumult at *Edinburgh*, *July* 23. upon the reading of the New Service-book in S. *Giles* Church, the Women beginning the fray by flinging their stools and Bibles at the Deans head, as he was reading; who hardly escaped, with the Bishop, out of the Church with their lives: But the tumult was appeased by the Privy-Councellors then present, and the Bishop conveyed away by the Lord *Weems*. So things remained quiet till the next Spring, that new troubles arose. A Generall Assembly, against the Kings command, is held at *Glascow*, in which the Bishops are deposed, excommunicated, and abjured; the Articles of *Perth*, Service-book, and Canons are rejected by the Presbyterian Assembly, who also impose an Oath and Covenant upon the people, the chief promoters whereof were three Ministers, *Henderson*, *Dickson*, and *Cant*; who comming to *Aberden*, received some stop by the learned Divines there, who would not condiscend that the Covenant should be propounded or recommended in their Pulpits to the People under their charge, till they were satisfied in these demands. 1. By what warrant or power they imposed a Covenant on them, seeing they were not authorised by the King nor his Councel, nor any established Judicatory or National Synod. 2. Whether they ought to subscribe a Covenant of mutual defence by arms, seeing such Covenants are forbid by Parliament, *an.* 1585. 3. Whether they ought to feare any danger of Innovation in Religion, seeing the King hath protested, declared and sworn to the contrary, and hath removed all occasions of fear, as the Service-book, Canons, and High-commission. 4. What reason is there for them to abjure Episcopacie and the Articles of *Perth*, and to have an interpretation of the Negative Confession imposed on them against their judgments. 5. Whether the abjuring of the late introduced Rites, be not an assent that the former Rites are unchangeable; whereas all Rites according to times and occasions may be changed. 6. Whether the abjuring of *Perth*-Articles be not a contradicting of the judgment of most modern Divines, who hold

hold them in their own nature lawfull; as alſo a condemning of the ancient Church, which practiſed them. 7. Whether they can abjure theſe Rites as Popiſh, which according to the light of their conſcience and ſincerity of their hearts, they have practiſed as lawfull ſo many years; And whether they ought not to have ſome time given them to conſider of ſo weighty a buſineſſe. 8. Whether the Kings perſon ought not to be defended, though he preſerve not the true Religion. 9. Whether this can be conſiſtent; To ſwear to maintain the Kings authority, and yet ſwear diſobedience to the Articles eſtabliſhed by his authority. 10. Whether the abjuration of *Perth*-Articles be not prejudicial to the liberty of Voting in a National Aſſembly. 11. Whether the ſubſcription to the Profeſſion of Faith, regiſtred *an.* 1567. in Parliament, be not ſufficient to ſhew the ſincerity of their Profeſſion. 12. Whether the late practiſe of the Covenanters in contemning Authority, and Gods ſervice in his own houſe, on his own day, as to lay violent hands on the Prelates and Paſtors in time of Divine ſervice, whilſt they practiſe what the King and his Councel commanded: I ſay, whether theſe diſorders are tolerable, or is it fit that the Anticovenanters ſhould joyn with them. 13. How this Covenant can be ſubſcribed without ſcandal; firſt, of diſſenting from other Reformed Churches; ſecondly, of diſſenting from Antiquity; thirdly, of perjury, having ſworn obedience to the Articles of *Perth*, and to the Ordinary at their admiſſion to the Miniſtery. 14. Whether theſe Covenanting Miniſters can with reaſon deſire the uſe of our Pulpits, to withdraw (ſay they) our Flocks from their obedience and allegiance, and that Doctrine which we in our conſcience think to be true? *An. Chriſti.*

To theſe *Quære's* the Covenanting Miniſters put in their Anſwers, but ſuch as were not ſatisfying to the Divines of *Aberden*, as may be ſeen in their Replies and Duplies. The Biſhops alſo proteſted and declared againſt the Aſſembly at *Glaſcow*, as being altogether unlawfull, becauſe it met without the Kings warrant; becauſe it conſiſted of more Lay-men then Miniſters; becauſe moſt of theſe Miniſters were ſcandalous either in their lives or doctrine, or both; becauſe they were enemies and perſecutors of the Biſhops, to whom they owed Canonical obedience, and that it was unreaſonable they ſhould be both Judges and parties; and becauſe they are ſuch Miniſters as have not ſworn to the Articles of Religion, nor taken the oath of Allegiance, and uſurp more authority to themſelves then can ſtand with the freedome of an Aſſembly; and as juſtly might the Biſhops except againſt this Aſſembly, which hath already precondemned Epiſcopacie, as *Athanaſius*, *Hoſius* of *Corduba*, and *Maximus* Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, did except againſt ſome partial and prejudicating Councels, or *Luther* againſt the Councel of *Trent*, becauſe he was precondemned by Pope *Leo*. But theſe Reaſons of the Biſhops were ſlighted, and the Aſſembly notwithſtanding proceeded, though the King ſends the Marquis *Hamilton* to diſſolve it: For the Presbyterial ſide prevails more and more; who made an Act againſt the Biſhops, and expelled them the kingdom; whereat the King was ſo angry, that he cauſed the *Scots* ſhips here to be ſeiſed, and their Trading with *England* to be prohibited.

Mean while, the Queen-mother of *France*, King *Henry* the Fourths widdow, came to *London*, *Octob.* 31. whom the King received courteouſly, and entertained royally. In *November* Proclamation is made againſt the Aſſembly in *Scotland*, by the King: but it was ſo ſlighted, that an Army is raiſed by the Presbyterian Scots; againſt whom the Biſhops contribute and raiſe among the Clergie great ſums of mony, for maintaining of an Army againſt the Preſbyterians. The next year, about the 27. of *March*, the King begins his journy for *Scotland*, whom his Army followed under the conduct of the Earl of *Arundel*, accompanied with moſt of the Engliſh Nobility; the two Armies pitched their Tents in view of each other, but there was no reſolution or deſire in either ſide to fight; therefore a Peace was concluded the ſame year in *June*: 1639.

An. Chriſti 1640. but when the King returned to *London*, the Articles of the Peace were publikely burned, which again incenſed the *Scots*, ſo that the next year they raiſed another Army; upon which the King ſummons a Parliament in *April*, for raiſing of mony and new forces againſt the *Scots*; but finding his people averſe either to contribute men or mony, he diſſolves the Parliament in *May*, which both diſcontented the Engliſh, and encouraged the Scots, on the 17. of *Auguſt* following, to enter *England*, and poſſeſſe themſelves of *Newcaſtle*. Hereupon the King raiſeth new forces to reſiſt the *Scots*; but the new-raiſed Souldiers grew mutinous, killed divers of their Officers, and would neither march nor fight: Yet the Clergie deſiſted not to animate both the King and people againſt the *Scots*, and in their Convocation gave a great ſumme to maintain the war. The Lords are commanded to attend the King in this Northern expedition.

About the midſt of *October* the former year, the Spaniſh Fleet, cloſe by the Engliſh ſhore, for want of powder and ammunition (which they alleadged the King had promiſed them) were defeated by the *Hollanders*: There were in this Fleet 8000 *Spaniards*, which ſhould have been planted among the *Wallons*, and ſo many of them to be tranſported into *Spain*. About the ſame time alſo, a Bill is exhibited againſt the *Londoners*, for ſome miſdemeanors committed by their Under-officers about *London-Derry*; wherefore in the Star-chamber the *Londoners* are fined, and their Plantation forfeited to the King, whereupon the Citizens would not contribute or advance any ſums of mony towards this expedition againſt the *Scots*. When the King ſaw he could raiſe no mony, and that the common-ſouldiers would not engage; upon the earneſt intreaties of the Lords, he ſummons a Parliament at *Weſtminſter*, the 3. of *November*.

But before we conclude this Hiſtory, I will ſpeak a little more fully of theſe fatal begun troubles in *Scotland*. When the King underſtood what Forces were raiſing there, he ſends to Marquis *Douglaſſe*, to the Earle of *Nidſdale*, to 1639. *Traquair* the Treaſurer, to *Roxburgh* and other Lords of his ſide, to be ready with their Forces: but the Covenanters ſeiſe upon all the arms and ammunion in *Scotland*, and ſend 10000 foot, with 4000 horſe, and 30 peeces of canon, againſt *Aberden*, which held out for the King, and whither he meant to ſend great forces. Of the Nobility that ſtood out for the King, were about twenty Lords and Earls, of the Covenanters about eight and twenty. When the King was come to *Barwick*, he underſtood that the *Scots* Army was divided into two bodies; one under *Hume*, of 8000. not far from *Barwick*; the other of 5000. under *Johnſton* neer *Carliſle*. To theſe the King ſends his Heralds with a Proclamation, commanding them not to come ueer the borders of *England*, for then he will conſtrue it as an invaſion: They on the other ſide ſend him a Petition, deſiring their complaints may be heard, and grievances redreſſed. Upon this, *Arundel* with other Lords are named by the King to confer with the *Scots* Commiſſioners, and to know their grievances: They deſire that the King would by Parliament ratifie the Articles of *Glaſcow*. 2. That all Church-affairs in *Scotland* may be determined by their Generall Aſſemblies, and that all Civil matters may be decided by Parliament, which they deſire may be held every ſecond or third year. 3. That the King would withdraw both his Ships and Land-forces, and reſtore to the *Scots* their Ships again. 4. That all the Incendiaries and ſeditious perſons who were fled into *England*, may be ſent home to be tryed and puniſhed. 5. That the King would confirm their Lawes, Religion, and Priviledges.

The King was not well pleaſed with theſe particulars; therefore the Lord *Lowden* deſires him, that he would but confirm their Religion and Liberties according to the Eccleſiaſtical and Civil lawes of *Scotland*, and that ſhould content them: Upon this, the King declares, That he will confirm the Canons of the Aſſembly of *Glaſcow*, concerning the abolition of the Liturgie, High-Commiſſion,

Commiſſion, Book of Canons, with the five Articles of *Perth*; That the Miniſters ſhall be bound to take no other Oath at their admiſſion, but what is preſcribed in Parliament, and that the Biſhops ſhall ſtand to the cenſure of the General Aſſembly of *Glaſcow*; and that all things ſhall be determined by the Aſſembly and Parliament which ſhall be held in *Edinburgh* the next *Auguſt*, in which an Act of Oblivion ſhall paſſe, and at which he will be preſent himſelf; and withall he promiſeth to reſtore their ſhips and goods, and to recall his fleet, conditionally they will diſarm and disband their Armies, and diſſolve their tables and meetings, and that they will reſtore his Forts and Caſtles, with their Ammunition, as likewiſe the Crown, Scepter and Sword, with his other Royal ornaments; and beſides, that they will ſuffer his good ſubjects to enjoy their lands and liberties, which have been detained from them ſince the laſt Aſſembly. *An. Chriſt.* i

The peace being concluded, and the Armies disbanded, the King is received into *Edingburgh* with great ſolemnity, and his Caſtles are reſtored, on condition that they ſhall not be victualled for above four and twenty hours at a time. But ſhortly after the King declared, that he would have the Biſhops ſit in the General Aſſembly, which was denied; and the Biſhops were excomunicated, and withal two hundred thouſand pounds is demanded to be raiſed upon the Biſhops lands and eſtates, for ſatisfaction of the damages ſuſtained by the detention of the ſhips in *England:* the Parliament then ſitting, rather favoured the Aſſembly then hindred it, or diſcountenanced their proceedings, wherefore the King would have adjourned rhe Parliament till *June* the next year, which could not be aſſented to; but four Deputies are ſent to the King to compoſe all differences. In the interim, new forces are raiſed both in *England* and *Ireland*, whilſt the Scots Commiſſioners are kindly entertained at Court; but the Scots being jealous (becauſe their Commiſſioners were ſo long detained in ſuſpence) that the King meant to keep them as priſoners, when his Army was ready to march, they ſeized upon two *Engliſh* Lords, whom they meant to detain till their Commiſſioners were returned. 1640.

The Presbyterian Scots underſtanding that hoth the Armies of *England* and *Ireland* were ready to march, enter preſently into a Covenant which they called National, and tax the tenth part of their eſtates toward maintenance of the war; ſixteen thouſand men are raiſed under the conduct of *Argile*, to guard the Sea-coaſt, and hinder the Iriſh forces from landing: The like number is to be in readineſſe againſt the King begins his march. They would not ſuffer Generall *Ruven*, governour then of *Edinburgh*-Caſtle, to repair a part of the wall that was fallen down; nor would they ſuffer the Garriſon-ſouldiers to go out and in, but at their devotion; therefore they place a guard of five hundred men before the Caſtle gate, and raiſed a Fort in the Town to keep the Caſtle in awe, and raiſed a Rampart to keep off the bullets that might be ſhot againſt the City.

Mean while the *Engliſh* Fleet puts to Sea; and the Land-forces of *England* conſiſting of forty thouſand, are divided into three bodies, under *Hamilton*, *Goring*, and *Northumberland*. The Scots main body conſiſted of thirty thouſand under General *Leſly* in *Lothien*, the reſt of their Army was employed to guard the borders and coaſts on all ſides, to wit, ſix thouſand under the Lord *Leviſton* near *Kelſo*; *Lothien* and *Johnſon* had the command of eight thouſand on the Weſtern marches; *Rothes* and *Lindſey* commanded fifteen thouſand in *Fife*; *Montroſſe* and the Earl *Marſhal* encamped near *Aberden* with twelve thouſand, beſides they had a garriſon of two thouſand within the City. *Argile* guards the coaſt on the Iriſh-ſeas with ſixteen thouſand. In the interim the Lord *Lowden* one of the four Scots Commiſſioners, is ſent to the Tower, for having about him a copy of the Scots Declaration which had been burned. This incenſed the Scots ſo much the more, complaining that the impriſoning of their Commiſſioner was againſt the Law of Nations; the King ſends Commiſſioners

An. Chriſti miſſioners to examine him in the Tower, to whom he would not anſwer, being a ſubject of *Scotland*, where he ought to be examined and tried by his Peers; and alſo told them, that what he was accuſed of was acted before the Pacification 1639. when an Act of oblivion paſſed. Hereupon he is enlarged and imployed by the King in a new Commiſſion into *Scotland*, to ſettle the troubles there.

Whilſt theſe things are acting, *Edinburgh* raiſeth two Batteries againſt the Caſtle, the great Ordnance play upon each other without any great hurt; at length the Governour is ſummoned to deliver up the Caſtle within fifteen dayes; which time being expired, and the Caſtle not likely to be ſurrendred, the great Artillery from the batteries plaid ſo furiouſly on it, that a breach was made in the wall; there were alſo two Mines ſprung which did great hurt, the Governours ſon loſt his arm by a canon-bullet; at laſt they come to a parley, the Governour deſires to acquaint the King with the ſtate of the Caſtle before he deliver it up, which was granted by the City, and ſo followed a ceſſation from hoſtility. The Scots in the interim (whoſe intention at firſt was onely to ſtand upon their own defence) to keep their ſouldiers from idleneſſe, enter *England* with thirty thouſand; fifteen thouſand march into *Cumberland*, and the other fifteen thouſand into *Northumberland*, with a Declaration that they come in as friends, not as enemies, for no other end but to have a ratification of the laſt years Treaty; they promiſe alſo to take nothing but what they ſhall pay for.

The King being at *York* with ſix thouſand horſe, and eighteen thouſand foot, underſtood that the Scots were marching towards *Newcaſtle*, therefore ſends fifteen hundred horſe, with a battalion of Infantry to diſpute the paſſage over the *Tine*; a skirmiſh followed, in which four hundred of the *Engliſh* were ſlain, and two hundred Scots, whoſe Army being far greater then the other, eauſed them to retreat. Then the Scots for two hours lay ſiege to *Newcaſtle*, which upon the firſt ſummons opened their gates. Then the Scots make themſelves maſters of *Hartpool*, and of two Caſtles on the *Tine*. Upon this the King ſends to them to know their demands, and withall diſſwades them from advancing any further with their Army; the Scots return a petition to the King, wherein they deſire a free Parliament for ending of all differences, and ſetling of a ſolid peace; the *Engliſh* Lords being aſſembled at *York*, deſire likewiſe of the King that he would call a Parliament, which at laſt was aſſented to, and five and twenty thouſand pounds Sterling was aſſigned to the Scots towards the defraying of their charges; in the mean time the Caſtle of *Edinburgh* is delivered up, and ſome *Engliſh* horſe, with five hundred of their foot, (which were ſent from *Barwick* to *Dunce*, to carry away nine peeces of Ordnance left there by the Scots) are defeated and ſlain by the Lord *Haddington*.

Virgil. Hitherto we have ſeen King *Charles* in his glory: but now, [*Nox atra caput triſti circumvolat umbra*] The bright day of his Reign is overcaſt with a dark and diſmal cloud. The morning of his day ſhined out clear, but it was ſhut up in a diſmal evening:

Seneca.

Quem dies vidit veniens ſuperbum
Hunc dies vidit fugiens jacentem.

Whom Phæbus *riſing ſaw with Glory croun'd,*
Him Phæbus *ſetting ſees flat on the ground.*

In the tragedy of his life, we may ſee the cataſtrophe of humane felicity. Kings are crowned with thorns as well as with gold; and with *Peter* they walke upon the waters; their heads like *Nebuchadnezzars* Image are of gold, but their feet are of clay; they live like gods, but dye like men:

Quiſquam

An. Christi.

Quiſquamne regno gaudet? O fallax bonum,
Quantum malorum, quam fronte blanda tegis?
Vt alta ventos ſemper excipiunt juga,
Rupemque ſaxis vaſta dirimentem freta, *Seneca.*
Quamvis quieti verberant fluctus maris:
Imperia ſic excelſa fortunæ objacent.

Who'l dote on Kingdomes? O mans vanitie!
What miſchiefs under ſmiling faces lie?
As ſtorms rage moſt on Hils, and as the Rocks
Which part the Sea, are ſubject to its knocks:
So higheſt Principalities and Crowns
Are liable to angry Fortunes frowns.

And here I will conclude, being arrived into the wiſh'd for Harbour: *& nunc immenſum ſpatiis confecimus æquor:* I have ſailed over a great Sea, and it's time to caſt anchor. I will not venture upon the ſtormy rocks, quick-ſands, contrary tides, and whirlpools of theſe laſt ten years, leſt I make ſhipwrack, and ſo be forced to hang up my wet cloaths in *Neptunes* temple: *Ne me tabula ſacer votiva paries indicet uvida ſuſpendiſſe potenti veſtimenta maris Deo.* In the mean while, let us beſeech Almighty God, who hath ſet bounds to the Sea, and to its proud waves, who holdeth the winds in his fiſt, whoſe word is fulfilled by fire and hail, ſnow, vapour and ſtormy wind, that he will be pleaſed to appeaſe this ſtorm which hath laſted ſo many years among us, and to aſſwage this tempeſtuous wind, worſe then Euroclydon, which vexed St. *Paul* and his paſſengers; that he would bring again the Sun and Stars ſo long hid from us, and that he would conduct the weather-beaten ſhip of this Church and State into the harbour of Tranquility; that at laſt enjoying ſome ſerenity and Halcion dayes, we may ſit ſecurely under our Vines and Fig-trees, and ſing the ſongs of Sion in our own Land. *Amen.*

FINIS.

A BRIEF
CHRONOLOGY
OF THE
Principal Paſſages
Faln out in the
WORLD:
FROM THE
MACEDONIAN KINGDOM,
TILL
The laſt TEN YEARS:

Divided into

180 DECADS, containing 1800 YEARS;

BY

ALEXANDER ROSSE.

LONDON,

Printed for *John Saywell*, and are to bee ſold at his Shop, at the ſign of the *Greyhound* in *little-Britain*, without *Adlerſgate*,
M. DC. LII.

A BRIEF

CHRONOLOGY

OF THE

Principal Things

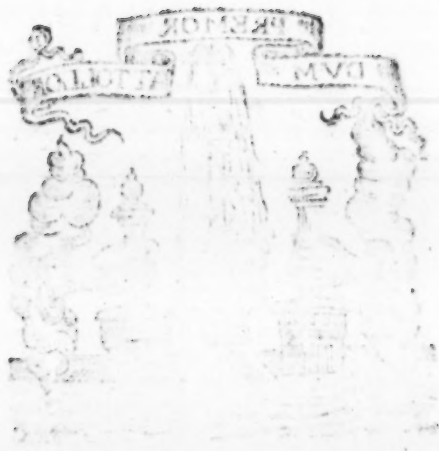
in the

WORLD,

FROM

THE Beginning of the World, to the Year of our LORD 1728.

Divided into



Printed for Jacob Sewell, and are to be Sold at the Sign of the Crown in Duck-Lane. M. DCC. XXIX.

TO THE

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL

Sr JUSTINIAN EISOM,

KNIGHT and *BARONET.*

SIR;

AS *Aeneas* after seven Years tossing and tumbling upon the impetuous Billows of the angry and enraged Sea (*Per* Syrtes *&* *inhospita saxa*) was at last so happy as to cast Anchor in his long-wish'd for Harbour, (*Sedes ubi Fata quietas ostendunt*;) So I having some Years crossed the Ocean of *History*, (where likewise I have been crossed by Storms and contrary Winds and Tides) at last have sheltered my Weather-beaten Historicall-Ship, under the Lee-shore of a knowing and *honourable Patron*. I have adventured also to secure this *Chronologicall Cock-Boat* under the Cliffe of your *Protection*, being throughly acquainted with your Worth, Ingenuity, and Learning. That *Latin-Piece* you set me upon, wherein I shew how farr short the *Latin Poets* are of *Virgill*, is not as yet come to perfection; in the interim I was desirous, as an

earneſt of that, to preſent you with this Piece; not doubting but ere long I ſhall be able to give a full account of my Pains in the other; So with a thankfull recognition of your Favours towards me, I take leave, and will ever be found

(*SIR*)

Your humble ſervant,

ALEXANDER ROSSE.

A BRIEF

A brief CHRONOLOGIE

Of the Principall Paſſages ſince the end of the MACEDONIAN KINGDOME till theſe preſent Times, according to the years of CHRIST, before or after his Birth:

Divided into Decads.

	Yea. bef. Chr.
JOnathas brother to *Judas* is made General of the Jewes. *Demetrius* encroacheth on his Neighbours, is overcome and ſlain by *Alexander* the ſuppoſed ſon of *Epiphanes*. The *Dalmatian* War, and then the *Spaniſh* under *Claudus*, *Lucullus*, and *Scipio*.	— 158
Simon ſucceedeth *Jonathas*, he takes *Gaza*, raſeth *Sion*, &c. is ſlain with his two ſons *Mattathias* and *Judas*; *John* eſcapeth. *Ptolomy Phyſcon* or *Evergetes* marrieth *Cleopatra* the mother, kills her ſon, and then marrieth her daughter. The third Punic War, and *Carthage* deſtroyed.	— 148
John Hyrcanus ſucceeds his father, beſiegeth *Ptolomy*, makes peace with *Antiochus Pius*, demoliſheth the Temple on Mount *Garizim*, reneweth the League with the Romans, beſiegeth and takes *Samaria*. The Servil war in *Sicily*. *Numantia* deſtroyed.	— 138
Demetrius freed from the *Parthian* captivity, to him ſucceeds his ſon *Antiochus Gryphus*. *Fabius* recovereth *Luſitania*, and cuts off the right hands of all the Rebels. *Pompey* is beaten by the *Numantines*.	— 128
Antiochus Cyzicenus brother to *Grypus*, makes war againſt him. *Ptolomy Lathurus* or *Lamyrus* reigns four years with his Mother, by whom he is expelled. The Romans make war againſt the Thracians, and Dalmatians, and *Mithridates* King of *Pontus* and *Jugurtha*.	— 118
Ariſtobulus the firſt King of *Judæa* ſince *Zedechias*. *Ptolomy Lathurus* kills his Mother, and aſſumes again the Government. The Romans make war againſt the Cymbrians.	— 108
Alexander Jamnæus ſon of *Hircanus*, brother to *Ariſtobulus*, obtains divers Victories againſt his enemies. *Ptolomy Alexander*, *Cleopatra's* other ſon, is forced by her to marry *Selene*, taken from *Ptolomy Lathurus* by *Cleopatra*. At *Rome*, *Metellus* is baniſhed and revoked. *Marius* raiſeth ſedition at home, and ſtirs up *Mithridates* abroad. *Rutilius* condemned for extortion in *Aſia*. *Livius Druſus* ſlain for raiſing ſedition. The *Marſi* and others in *Italy* make war againſt the Romans.	— 98

Years bef. Chr.

88— *Hanna* the Propheteſſe becometh a widow; the Phariſees overcome *Alexander*; he crucifieth the authors of the Rebellion, and kills their wives and children; he falls ſick of a Quartan Ague, which held him three years till his death.
Tigranes King of *Armenia* is invited by the Syrians, over whom he reigneth 18. years in peace.
Aretas King of *Arabia* obtaineth *Damaſcus*, by killing *Antiochus Dionyſius* the fifth brother of *Seleucus*.
Lathurus returns to his Kingdome of *Ægypt*.
Pompey, father to *Pompey* the Great, defeateth the *Piceni*, with others. *Scylla* overcommeth the Samnites. *Sulpitius* ſlain by *Scylla*, *Cato* by the Marſi, *Octavius* and *Merula* by *Cinna*. *Scylla* hath divers Victories. *Rome* beſieged by *Marius*, *Carbo*, *Cinna* and *Sertorius*. *Pompey* killed with thunder, *Cinna* ſtoned, *Marius* ſlain.

78— *Alexandra Saboine*, wife of *Jamnæus*, great with the Phariſees.
Ptolomy Anletes, ſo called from his delight in Muſical Inſtruments, King of *Ægypt*, he was father to *Cleopatra* the wife of *M. Antony*, he dieth about this time.
Antiochus Cizicerus lurks in *Cilicia* till *Tigranes* was defeated by *Lucullus*, who again reſtores him to his Kingdome of *Syria*.
At *Rome*, *Scylla* tyrannizeth, then dieth. *Lepidus* defeated. *Sertorius* rebels in *Spain*, who beats *Pompey* and *Metellus*, *Mithridates* overcome by *Lucullus*, the Dardani by *Scribonius*, *Caſſius* by *Spartacus*, who is at laſt defeated and ſlain by *Craſſus*: *Nicomedes* of *Bithynia* makes *Rome* his heir; It's made a Province.

68— *Ariſtobulus* poſſeſſeth two and twenty Caſtles, overcomes *Hircanus*, and depoſeth him. *Antipater*, *Herods* father, attempts the reſtoring of *Hircanus*. *Aretas* the Arabian beſiegeth *Ariſtobulus* in *Jeruſalem*, the ſiege raiſed by *Pompey*, who takes *Jeruſalem*; he heareth at *Damaſcus* the difference between the two brothers, and giveth the Prieſthood to *Hircanus*, but not the Kingdome, and carrieth *Ariſtobulus* with his two ſons to *Rome*, *Alexander* the younger eſcapeth.
Syria with *Cilicia* is made a Province by *Pompey*; *Tigranes* ſubmits to him, who depoſeth *Antiochus* for not keeping his Kingdome when he had it.
At *Rome* the Capitol is rebuilt. *Metellus* ends the three years war in *Crete*, called therefore *Creticus*. *Pompey* ends the Pyratical war, and hath divers victories. *Catelines* Conſpiracy defeated. *Clodius* defloureth *Pompeia*. *Pompey* triumpheth. *Helvetians* attempt *Gaule*.

58— *Alexander* the Jew ſubmits to *Gabinus*, then rebels, and is defeated. *Craſſus* robs the Temple of *Jeruſalem*.
In *Syria*, *Gabinius* is Preſident; he brings ſeventeen millions to *Rome*, is baniſhed, and *Craſſus* ſent in his place, who was ſlain by the Parthians, and melted gold put in his mouth. The Parthians expelled out of *Syria* by *Caſſius*.
In *Ægypt*, *Ptolomy* is depoſed by his Subjects, is reſtored by *Pompey*; his daughter whom the Ægyptians made their Queen, ſtrangleth her husband, and marrieth one *Archelaus*; both are killed by *Gabinius*, when *Ptolomy* was reſtored; To him ſucceeds *Ptolomy Dionyſius*, with his ſiſter and wife *Cleopatra*.
At *Rome*, *Craſſus*, *Pompey*, and *Cæſar* make a league; *Cæſar* ſubdues the Galliceans, hath *Illyria* and *Gaule* aſſigned him for five years, makes war with the Gauls nine years, defeateth *Arioviſtus*, makes an attempt upon *Brittain*, envied by *Pompey*, he had many victories, he retains his Army for his own defence. *Cicero* baniſhed and reſtored.

48— *Ariſtobulus* releaſed by *Cæſar*, and ſlain by the Pompeians, his ſon *Alexander* beheaded by *Scipio* at *Antioch*. *Antipater* made Governour of *Judæa*, who makes *Phaſelus* his eldeſt ſon Governor of *Jeruſalem*, and *Herod* of *Galilee*, who was in danger for executing *Ezechias* the thief, but acquitted by *Hyrcanus*. The Jews made Citizens of *Rome*. *Antipater* poyſoned by *Malichus*, and is killed by *Herod*, whom *Caſſius* makes Governour of *Cæle-Syria*. *Antigonus* ſon of *Ariſtobulus* invades *Galilee*, whom *Herod* expelleth, who with *Phaſelus* are made Tetrarchs of *Judæa* by *Antony*. *Antigonus* takes *Jeruſalem* by meanes of

Pacorus

Years beſ. Chr.

Pacorus the Parthian, and ſends *Hircanus* and *Phaſelus* bound to *Galilee*. *Phaſelus* daſheth out his own brains. *Herod* eſcaped into *Ægypt*.

In *Ægypt*, *Ptolomy* baniſheth *Cleopatra*, who takes *Cæſar* for her Protector. *Ptolomies* Tutors kill *Pompey*. *Ptolomy* defeated by *Cæſar*, and is drowned. *Alexandria* and the Library burnt by *Cæſar*, who ſetleth *Cleopatra*; ſhe poyſoneth her brother, and kill's her ſiſter *Arſinoe*; ſhe diſſolves a Pearl in Vinegar; *Antony* doats on her.

At *Rome*, the civil war between *Cæſar* and *Pompey* laſted four years; *Pompey* defeated in *Pharſalia*, and flyeth into *Ægypt*; *Cæſar* hath divers Victories, and is made Dictator; *Pompey's* ſon ſtirred up by *Cato* and others to renew the war; *Scipio* ſlain; *Cato* kills himſelf; *Cæſar* ſubdues *Africk*, makes *Numidia* a Province, defeats *Pompey's* ſon in *Spain*, and kills him, reformes the Kalendar, and is ſlain with 23 wounds.

Herod made King of *Judæa*, gets many Victories, takes *Joppe*, recovers *Galilee*, overthrows *Antigonus*, marries *Mariamne* the Neece of *Hircanus*, takes *Jeruſalem*, and beheads *Antigonus*, ſo ends the Aſmonæan Race; *Ariſtobulus* drowned by *Herod*; he overcomes the Arabians, and puts *Hircanus* to death, and is at *Rhodes* confirmed King. —38

Syria is regained by *Ventidius* from *Pacorus* the Parthian.

At *Rome*, *Octavius* and *Antony* are reconciled; *Sext. Pompeius* ſeizeth on the Corn going for *Rome*, with whom *Octavius* hath war; at laſt *Pompey* flyeth into *Parthia*, and is killed. *Lepidus* reſigns his Triumvirate. *Antony* hath bad ſucceſſe in *Parthia*; The Dalmatian and Panonian war; *Africk*, *Judæa*, and *Spain* ſubdued; *Mauritania* made a Province; divers other places ſubdued; *Octavius* and *Antony* at variance about *Cleopatra*; the battel at *Actium*; *Antony* is defeated, and kils himſelf.

In *Judæa*, *Mariamne* executed, with *Alexandra*, and others of *Antigonus* his Faction by *Herod*; His buildings at *Jeruſalem*, at *Samaria*, which he called Sebaſte, and *Cæſaria*, called Stratons Tower. —28

In *Ægypt*, *Cleopatra* kills her ſelf; *Ægypt* is made a Province.

At *Rome*, the Temple of *Janus* is ſhut; *Octavius* triumpheth, and is called *Auguſtus*. *Gallus* Preſident of *Ægypt* is baniſhed, and kills himſelf; *Spain* ſubdued; the Pantheon built; *Tyber* breaks in upon *Rome*.

In *Judæa*, *Herod* builds a Temple of white Marble to *Auguſtus*, reedifieth the Temple of *Jeruſalem*, and builds the Tower *Antonia*, he brings back his two ſons from *Rome*. *Agrippa* entertained by *Herod* at *Jeruſalem*; he accuſeth his two ſons *Ariſtob.* and *Alexander* by *Mariamne*. —18

At *Rome*, *Auguſtus* confines the Senate to a leſſe number; *Agrippa* recovereth the Roman Enſigns taken by *Mithridates*, and regains the Colours which were loſt by *Craſſus* and *Antony*. *Auguſtus* adopteth *Agrippa's* ſons by his daughter. *Agrippa* overcommeth the Spaniſh ſlaves, and the Boſphori, but refuſeth a Triumph. *Tiberius* ſubdueth the *Panonii*, and is made Colleague to *Auguſtus*. *Druſus* overcommeth the Friſians.

In *Judæa*, *Herod* is reconciled to *Auguſtus*, he accuſeth his ſons, and they are executed. *Antipater* conſpireth againſt his father, and is put to death; A Tax is impoſed on the Jews by *Cyrenius*. *John* the Baptiſt is born, and ſix moneths after our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt: —8

Herod commands the children of *Bethleem* to be murthered, he dieth ſhortly after; *Archelaus* ſucceeds: *Antipater* Tetrarch of *Galilee*, and *Philip* of *Trachonitis*: At the Paſſeover 3000. Jews ſlain.

At *Rome*, *Claudius* the ſon of *Druſus* is born, *Druſus* is killed with a fall from his horſe: *Tiberius* triumpheth, and hath the Tribunes power for five years, to keep under *Caius* and *Lucius*, *Auguſtus* his Nephews: A general Tax over the Roman world; the Temple of *Janus* ſhut the third time. *Varus* Preſident of *Syria* pillageth the countrey. *Caius Cæſar* parteth *Herods* lands among his children. *Lollius* being accuſed of Treaſon, ſlew himſelf. *Auguſtus* forbids any man to call him Lord.

Years of Christ.

1 — Christ is born in *Bethleem*. *Archelaus* confirmed by *Augustus*. Christ flyeth into *Ægypt*. *Archelaus* marrieth incestuously with his brother *Alexanders* widow; is accused to the Senate for his cruelty, for which he is banished to *Vienna*; And *Judæa* annexed to the Province of *Syria*.

At *Rome*, *Augustus* adopteth *Tiberius*. *Armenia* is left by the *Parthian* to the *Romans*. *Ariobarzanes* governour of *Armenia*. *Cinna* conspireth against *Augustus*, is pardoned and made Consul. *Agrippa* Nephew to *Augustus* banished for his insolencies; and *Julia*, *Augustus* his daughter for adultery. *Germanicus* makes war in *Dalmatia*. *Ovid* banished. *Vespasian* born. Magicians and Astrologers expelled *Rome*; the *Panonians* sue for peace.

10 — In *Judæa*, the Samaritans prophane the Temple; Christ disputeth there: *Judas Gaulonites* raiseth a sedition. *Cæsarea Philippi* built by *Philip* the Tetrarch, in honour of *Augustus*. The Jews are expelled *Rome* and *Italy*, and employed against the Samaritans. In *Syria* *Varus* is governour; he being defeated by *Arminius*, kils himself in *Germany*.

The Romans under *Tiberius* break league with the Goths, who therefore waste *Mæsia*. *Augustus* dieth at *Nola*; *Tiberius* succeeds, who puts *Agrippa* to death, and famisheth *Julia*. *Tyber* overfloweth. *Germanicus* hath divers victories, and triumpheth over the *Catti*, &c. not long after he is poysoned by *Piso*, who being accused of this murther kils himself. *Zeno* king of *Armenia* makes peace with *Parthia*.

20 — In *Judæa*, *Pilate* is president, who upon the Jews threats, removes his standards with the statue of *Tiberius*, out of the Temple into *Cæsarea*: He takes also the Corban or Treasure out of the Temple, and with it pays for the publique water-works. *Herod Antipas* builds *Tyberias*, divorceth his wife *Areta*, and marrieth *Herodias* his brother *Philips* wife, and then beheadeth the *Baptist*; for which he is defeated by the *Arabians*: Christ is Baptized.

At *Rome*, the Players are expelled the City: *Pompey's* Theatre repaired by *Tyberius*, and the statue of *Sejanus* erected in it. *Livia* poysoneth her husband *Drusus*, and lyeth with *Sejanus*, who destroys the friends of *Germanicus*. *Tacfarinas* killed by *Dolobella*. *Sejanus* put to death, his son strangled, his daughter defloured, then murthred. *Tiberius* goeth into *Campania*, then to *Capreæ*, upon the burning of Mount *Cælius*. *Agrippina* bears *Nero* to *Domitius*. At *Fidenæ* the Amphitheater kils with its fall 50000. people. *Tiberius* his hatred against the family of *Germanicus*. In this ten years space the *French*, *Thracians*, and *Frisians* rebell.

30 — In *Judæa* Christ suffereth, after him St. *Stephen*; and St. *James* is Bishop of *Jerusalem*: the Disciples are persecuted; St. *Paul*, the *Eunuch*, and *Samaria* converted. *Paul* preacheth in *Arabia*, *James* in *Spain*. *Peter* healeth *Æneas*, and raiseth *Tabitha*. *Cornelius* converted; *Paul* and *Barnabas* expelled *Antioch* by the Jews. *Pilate* writes to *Tiberius* about Christs Miracles. *Herod Agrippa* imprisoned at *Rome* for wishing *Tiberius* dead; he is released by *Caligula*, and made King of *Judæa*, and gives him a golden Chain which he hanged up in the Temple. *Philip* dyeth, his Tetrarchy annexed to *Syria*. *Herod* banished by *Caligula* to *Lions*, whom *Herodias* follows, his Tetrarchy is given to *Agrippa*. *Caiphas* the High-Priest kills himself.

At *Rome*, *Nero* son of *Germanicus* is starved by *Tiberius*, so was *Agrippina* wife to *Germanicus*. *Tiberius* rageth and tyrannizeth over the people and Nobility; he hath war, then makes peace with *Artabanus* King of *Parthia*. *Caligula* succeeds, he spends a hundred millions in three years, abuseth his three sisters, wished the Romans had but one neck, makes himself a God, executeth many innocent people in sport, pillageth *France* and *Spain*, employes his Army to gather Cockle-shells on the *Brittish* shore: he had two books called the Sword and Dagger, in which he writes the names of those he meant to murther. *Nero* the Emperour, and *Titus Vespasian* are born.

In

Years of Chriſt.

—40

In *Judæa*, Petronius is commanded by *Caligula* to ſet up his ſtatue in the Temple. *Agrippa* having obtained *Jeruſalem* and *Samaria* of *Claudius* without tribute, was ſtruck with vermin and died. *Judea* again is made a Province. *Theudas* for an inſurrection is beheaded. *Paul* and *Barnabas* ſtay two years at *Iconium*. St. *Matthew* writes his Goſpel. The name Chriſtians begins at *Antioch*; St. *James* is beheaded; St. Peter delivered out of priſon miraculouſly; St. *Mark* is Biſhop of *Alexandria*; *Paul* ſtoned at *Lyſtra*; the Apoſtles Synod at *Jeruſalem*; *Barnabas* and *Mark* ſaile to *Cyprus*; *Paul* and *Sylas* paſſe through *Syria*; *Timothy* is circumciſed; Many Jews ſmothered between the Temple-Gates upon a ſedition.

At *Rome*, *Caligula* is ſlain. *Claudius* ſucceeds; his wife *Meſſalina* inſatiable in luſt: He makes war with the Britains, from which he cals his ſon *Britanicus*: He depriveth the *Rhodians* of their priviledges, for killing ſome Romans. *Veſpatian* goeth into *Britain*; he renews the ſecular Playes. *Meſſalina* and her Paramour *Silius* are both ſlain. *Claudius* marrieth *Agrippina* his brother *Germanicus* daughter, who by her perſwaſions adopts her ſon *Nero*, and recals *Seneca*, whom he makes his Tutor. *Veſpatian* takes the Iſle of *Wight*; and *Claudius*, *Orkney*: the Britains and Picts yeeld to the Romans. *Aſinius Pollio* is baniſhed; and *Valerius* the Conſul kils himſelf.

—50

In *Judæa*, *Cumanus* the Governour maintaineth a faction between the Jews and Samaritans, which was the deſtruction of many; wherefore he is baniſhed, and *Fœlix* ſet in his place; who marrieth *Druſilla*, *Agrippa's* ſiſter, and puts *Jonathan* the High-prieſt to death, and tyrannizeth over the Jews. To *Fœlix* ſucceeds *Portius Feſtus*. *Lydia*, and *Dennis* the Areopagite. *Juſtus* and *Criſpus* are converted. *Paul* writes his two Epiſtles to the *Theſſalonians*, his firſt Epiſtle to *Timothy*, his two Epiſtles to the *Corinthians*, to *Titus*, to the *Romans*, and his other epiſtles. St. *Luke* writes his Goſpel. *Philip* is crucified at *Hierapolis*. *Paul* fighteth with beaſts at *Epheſus*, raiſeth *Eutichus*, is impriſoned at *Cæſarea*; appeals to *Cæſar*: his ſhip-wrack and impriſonment.

At *Rome* is a great famine. *Nero* marrieth *Octavia*, daughter to *Claudius*, who by *Agrippina* his wife is poyſoned. *Caractacus* General of the Britains brought to *Rome*. *Nero* ſucceeds to *Claudius*, a good Emperour for the firſt five years: he poyſoneth *Britanicus*, fearing that *Agrippina* would make him Emperour: He builds an Amphitheatre in *Campo martis*. *Janus* Temple ſhut the fifth time. *Artaxata* the chief City of *Armenia* taken by *Corbalo*. *Poppæa Sabina* becomes *Nero's* Concubine: he commits inceſt with his mother, then murthers her; he inſtitutes the Quinquennal games, called *Neronia*: a thunder-bolt ſtruck the Cup out of his hand: he committed many works of darknes in the night.

—60

In *Judæa*, the Jews and *Agrippa* differ, about a Proſpect which he erected on his houſe. *Annanias* High-Prieſt, and ſon of *Annas*, is depoſed for ſtoning of St. *James*. *Jeſus Ananus* foretels *Jeruſalems* deſtruction. *Agrippa* beautifieth *Cæſarea Philippi*, and cals it *Neroniades*. The building of the Temple is finiſhed: ſtrange Prodigies and Apparitions were ſeen at *Jeruſalem*. *Florus* for his cruelty is ſlain by the Jews, and ſix thouſand Romans. *Agrippa* ſtoned out of the City. *Veſpaſian* is ſent thither, who takes divers places. *Titus* is left to end the war. Three factions in *Jeruſalem*, with a horrible famine, in which a woman eat her childe; at laſt it is taken by *Titus*.

In *Rome*, *Nero* kils his wife *Octavia*, and marrieth his Whore *Poppæa*: by *Suetonius* he overcomes the Brittans, and expels *Vologeſus* the Parthian king out of *Armenia*: in a womans habit he marrieth *Pythagoras*; he ſets *Rome* on fire, and ſings *Homers Iliades*. Upon the diſcovering of a plot, he kils *Seneca*, *Lucan*, and many more: he kicks *Poppæa* great with childe, and kils her. He crowns *Tiridates* king of *Armenia*, at *Rome*. He goeth into *Greece* with his Fidlers, marrieth *Sporus* an Eunuch; attempts to cut the *Iſthmus* in *Peloponneſus*: is proclaimed an enemy to the State, and murthers himſelf. *Galba* ſucceeds, who is ſlain by *Otho*; he kils himſelf being defeated by *Vitellius*, who alſo after nine moneths is killed.

The Church begins to be perſecuted generally under *Nero*. St *Mark* having written his Goſpel from St. *Lukes* mouth, is ſlain at *Alexandria*: St. *Luke* writes the *Acts*; St. *Paul* returns into *Italy*, and writes his ſecond Epiſtle to *Timothy*. *Ioſeph* of *Aramathæa* converts the Britains: the Chriſtians are ſecretly warned out of *Ieruſalem*. St. *Johns*

Goſpel

Years of Christ.

Gospel written at *Ephesus*; Peter and Paul suffer at *Rome*. *Menander* the Heretick, father of the Gnosticks, makes himself the Saviour of man. The Nazarens observe the Law with the Gospel.

70— In *Judæa*, *Titus* commands the two Drachmes usually offered to the Temple, to be payed to the Capitol; the ornaments and wealth of the Temple brought to *Rome*, and laid up in the Temple of Peace. Many miseries befall the Jews. The Temple of *Onias* at *Heliopolis* is shut up by *Vespasians* command.

At *Rome*, *Vespasian* is Emperour, who with *Titus* triumphs over the Jews. The Batavians are brought to obedience: He expels the Philosophers out of *Rome* for some abuses: He dedicates the Temple of Peace; and the Temple of *Janus* shut the sixth time. *Ichaia*, *Greece*, and divers other places made Provinces; The Sarmatians invade *Mæsia*; He sets the Image of the Sun upon *Nero's* statue, instead of *Nero's* head: The *Alani* waste *Media* and *Armenia*; Two Senators plot *Vespasians* death; he dieth of a Flux; *Titus* succeeded for two years; he built an Amphitheater, at the dedication of which 5000. beasts slain.

In the Church *Linus* succeeds St. *Peter*; the Nazarens held there was but one soule in substance of man, beast, and plant.

80— At *Rome*, the Capitol is fired from heaven, which is consumed with many fair buildings. *Titus* dyeth, the delight of mankind; whom *Domitian* succeeds, the Fly-catcher, and an excellent Archer; he repudiates his wife, and marrieth his brothers widow *Julia*; he makes Lawes against Adultery, and Gelding; he kills his cousin *Flavius Sabinus*, and causeth more Corn to be sowed, and lesse Vines planted; The Capitol is rebuilt. *Agricola* having subdued the *Brittains*, passeth over to *Ireland*, then is made Governour of *Syria*. Philosophers and Mathematicians expelled *Rome*. *Nerva* banished, and recalled. Playes appointed every fourth year to *Jupiter*. *Capitolinus* his tyranny over the Senators; he assumes divine titles. *Agricola* subdueth *Fife* in *Scotland*.

In the Church, to *Linus*, who was martyred, succeeded *Cletus*, or *Anacletus*. St. *Andrew* crucified in *Achaio*. The Nicholaitan Hereticks held promiscuous Marriages, and the creation of all earthly things by Angels: The *Ebionites* called also *Sampsei* and *Elcesaitæ* denyed Christs Divinity, and rejected St. *Pauls* Epistles, and all the Gospels except St. *Matthews*: *Corinthus* denyes *Maries* Virginity, makes *Jesus* and *Christ* two different persons, held Circumcision, and are the first Millenaries; St. *John* would not stay with him in the Bath.

90— At *Rome*, *Domitian* triumpheth over the *Dacians* and *Germans*; he unjustly buried alive *Cornelia*, the chief Vestal virgin. The Romans lose divers Armies. *Decebalus* the Gothish King, deludeth the Romans by putting Armour on the stumps of Trees; he murthereth divers, and puts all the Line of *David* to death; he intended to kill his wife, with many others, who conspire and murther him. *Cocceius Nerva* succeeded, who ruled well, and repealed all *Domitians* Acts; he died after one year and four moneths; *Trajanus* whom he adopted, succeeded for 19. years, a just Emperour, whose Tutor was *Plutarch*.

The Church is persecuted the second time by *Domitian*. *John* having escaped the scalding Oyle, is banished into *Pathmos*, where he writes his Revelation. St. *Dennis* is beheaded at *Paris*; *Timothy* stoned at *Ephesus*. *Protasius* and *Garvasius* suffer at *Millan*; *Flav. Clemens* the Consul slain for Christianity; his wife *Domicilla* is banished into *Pontus*; *Clemens* Pope ten years.

100— At *Rome*, *Trajan* refuseth Consulship; The Dacian wars lasted five years; He defeats *Decebalus*, and renews the Sword-playing; he builds a Bridge over *Danubius*, and overthrows *Decebalus*, who for grief kills himself at *Zarmis* or *Alba Julia*; his treasure is found hid in the River; the Bridge is broken down, and Colonies planted in *Transilvania*;

Years of Chriſt.

ſilvania; he erects a Library and Columne at *Rome*, he hath divers Victories in the Eaſt; *Nero's* golden houſe burnt; he builds a Fleet in the Red Sea; he is ſtiled *Optimus*.

In the Church, a third perſecution is raiſed by *Trajan*. *John* dieth at *Epheſus*, whoſe ſucceſſor was *Oneſimus*. *Simeon* Biſhop of *Jeruſalem* is crucified. *Ignatius* Biſhop of *Antioch* is ſent bound to *Rome*, where he is torn by the Lions. *Oneſimus*, St. *Pauls* Diſciple, is ſtoned. *Clemens* bound to an anchor, and caſt into the ſea. *Anacletus* ſucceeded for 10 years.

At *Rome*, the *Pantheon* is burnt by lightning. *Trajan* in the Eaſt beats the Kings of *Armenia* and *Parthia*. *Armenia*, *Meſopotamia*, and *Aſſyria* made Provinces. *Trajan's* Column finiſhed: He takes *Niſibis*, *Edeſſe*, and burns *Seleucia*: He is endangered by the Earthquake at *Antioch*: He makes the Haven at *Ancona* navigable: He dieth at *Seleucia*; his bones are buried under his Column. *Adrian* ſucceeded for 20 yeares; he kills *Palma* and other brave men; he ſubdueth the *Sauromatæ*; he gives *Armenia* and *Meſopotomia* to *Coſroes*. The *Britains*, *Scots*, and *Picts* rebell. —110

In the Church, the perſecution ceaſeth, upon *Pliny's* letters in behalf of the Chriſtians to *Trajan*. *Papias* S. *Johns* diſciple Biſhop of *Hierapolis*, maintaineth the *Millinaries* Sect. *Quadratus* Biſhop of *Athens*, who lived in the time of Chriſt, died about the time of *Hadrian*. *Anacletus* martyred.

At *Rome*, *Adrian* forbid men and women to uſe one Bath: he builds *Adrianopolis* in *Thrace*, ſends *Antoninus* Proconſul into *Aſia*, and viſits all the Roman provinces: He plants Colonies in *Cyrene* and *Lybia*; He honours *Platina*, *Trajans* widow, with a Temple, for by her he got the Empire: He makes a wall in *Britain*, to keep out the *Scots*: He diſputes at *Athens* with the Philoſophers: He ſetleth the Provinces in *Africk*, and erecteth a Library at *Athens*, and a monument to his dead Horſe. —120

In the Church, *Evariſtus* a Greek is Pope 9 years, and then is martyred. In *Aſia*, the Chriſtians are perſecuted by *Antoninus*. *Alexander* the firſt is Pope 10 years; he brought in Holy-water. Divers Apologies written in the Chriſtians behalf, which made *Adrian* ſtay the perſecution, and was minded to build them a Church, but was hindred by their enemies.

At *Rome*, *Adrian* makes his own Tombe, called *Moles Adriani*: He builds a City to his favourite *Antonius*, who was drowned in *Egypt*; he rebuilds *Ieruſalem*, and calls it *Aelia*. The Jews rebell, becauſe he built a Temple to *Iupiter* there where *Solomons* Temple ſtood; *Iulius Severus* is ſent againſt them. *Adrian* dieth, to whom ſucceeded *Antoninus Pius* 22 years, who adopted *M. Annius Verus*, and calls him *Aurelius*. The Northern *Britains* rebell, and are ſubdued by *Lollius*. —130

In *Iudæa*, the Jewes are forbid to dwell in *Ieruſalem*. They rebell, and are defeated with their Captain *Cochebas*, by *Severus*, who deſtroyes their Caſtles and Towns, and waſtes all their Country; their Captives are ſent into *Spain*, where they continued 1500 years, till *Ferdinand* and *Emanuel* expelled them.

In the Church, Pope *Alexander* is martyred. *Sixtus* the firſt ſucceeds Pope 10 years; he inſtituted Altars. *Iuſtin*, of a Samaritan becomes a Chriſtian: *Aquila Ponticus*, of a Chriſtian became a Jew; he tranſlated the Bible into Greek, and was caſt out of the Church for ſtudying Aſtrologie. *Saturninus* the Heretique held Chriſts body phantaſtical, that Marriage was the doctrine of Devils, that the Jewes and Chriſtians had two different gods, &c. *Baſilides* the Heretique held, that Chriſt ſuffered not, but *Simon* of *Cyrene*; that Faith was natural, and divers other wild opinions.

At *Rome*, *Antoninus* repaireth the decayed Bridge, and forbids the reading of *Sybilla's* books: He reforms divers abuſes; ſubdues the *Moors*, *Daci*, and *Alani*: He is bountiful to *Rhodes* and other places ſhaken with earthquakes. —140

In the Church, *Sixtus* is martyred. *Teleſphorus* ſucceeded 11 years: He appointed *Lent*-Faſt;

Years of Christ.

Fast, and the Hymn [*Gloria in excelsis*] *Mark*, the first uncircumcised Bishop of *Jerusalem*; the debate about the observation of *Easter* began: *Carpocras* the Heretick makes Christ a meer man, holds transanimation, denyes the Resurrection, and affirms that Satan made the world; his disciples were called Gnosticks. *Cerdon*, another Heretick, held two Gods, denyed Christs humanity, and the Resurrection, and the Law: *Heraclion* held the same opinions, and after him *Valentinian*. *Marcus*, father of the Marcionites, held the same, and had a peculiar form of Baptism.

150 At *Rome*, *Antoninus* causeth persecution to cease, upon the inundation of *Tibris*, fires, and Earthquakes; he makes men as well as women subject to the Law of Adultery.

In the Church, *Polycarpus* Bishop of *Smyrna* converts many at *Rome* from Heresies, and then is martyred: *Justin* writes his first Apologie: Churches are consecrated, and Witnesses ordained in Baptism by Pope *Higinus*, who succeeded *Telesphorus* the Martyr; he sate four years, and the first that stiled himself Pope: *Pius* succeeds 9 years; he appointed Nuns, and that *Easter* should be kept on Sunday; and Fonts in Churches.

160 At *Rome*, *M. Aurelius Antoninus Philosophus* reigned 19 years; his brother *Luc. Aur. Verus* is made Colleague, who marcheth against the Parthian, but dallies at *Antioch*, but his Army fight successefully, and take *Seleucia*, with 40000. Captives: The *Catti* are expelled out of *Rhetia*: *Antoninus* makes good Lawes; his son *Commodus* made *Cæsar*; *Pertinax* defeats the *Germans*, who had invaded *Italy*: The Marconian war is begun. *Lucius* returning home, dyeth by the way of an Apoplexie: The *Britains* rebell, and are suppressed by *Agricola*, who repaireth *Adrians* wall broken down by the *Scots* and *Picts*, who had invaded *Westmorland*.

In the Church is raised a fourth Persecution, in which *Justin* having written his second Apologie, is beheaded at *Rome*. *Polycarpus* differs from *Anicetus* (who was now Pope 8 years) about the time of *Easter*; but it was agreed, that each Countrey should use their own custome. *Marcion* a Bishops son, of a Christian became a Cerdonian: *Polycarpus* is martyred at *Smyrna*: *Photinus* Bishop of *Lions* suffers with many others: *Hegesippus* of a Jew becomes a Christian, and writes the Church-story: *Melito* Bishop of *Sardis* is also martyred. Pope *Anicete* ordaines shaving of Priests, and consecrating of Bishops.

The Gnosticks about this time lived; they held two Gods, two souls in each faithfull man, Jesus and Christ to be different, that Christ remained 18 moneths on earth after his Resurrection, and that the world was made by Angels: *Tatian* held that *Adam* was damned, Marriage was fornication, Flesh and Wine not to be eat and drunk; he held many Gods, and denyed Christ to be of *David*; of him came the *Eucratites*: *Marcion* denyed Christs Divinity, transanimation he held, and rebaptisation as often as men fell; he rejected Marriage, the Old Testament, and eating of flesh, he also held all warrs unlawful.

170 At *Rome*, the Emperour pawnes his Plate and Jewels, to ease the people of Taxes, which afterward he redeemed. *Cassius* in *Armenia* calls himself Emperour, and is slain by his Souldiers: The Romans defeat the Marconians, by the Christians prayers: *Commodus* is made his fathers Colleague, they defeat the Scythians: *Antoninus* dieth in *Panonia*: *Commodus* reigned 12 years, he kept 300 Concubines, and 300 boyes; he killed his sister *Lucilia*, and ravished the rest: before he subdued the *Germans*, he triumphed over them. In *Britain*, *Lucius* is the first Christian King; he erected three Arch-bishops, and built St. *Peters* in *Cornhill Lond.* which was the Cathedrall till *Pauls*

180 In the Church Pope *Anicetus* is martyred; his successor *Soter* sate four years; he ordained the Fathers consent, and Priests Benediction in Marriage; to him succeeded *Eleutherius* 15 years; he sends *Damianus* into *Britain* to baptize King *Lucius* and his people. The *Ophit* Hereticks worshipped the Serpent, holding Christ to be that Serpent which deceived *Eve*; they denyed the Resurrection, and Christs humanity.

The

Years of Chriſt.

The *Caini* held divers of the former opinions; ſo did the *Scethitæ*, but that theſe made *Seth* the Saviour of the world, the others *Cain*, *Eſau*, and *Judas*. The Adamites were naked in their Aſſemblies, had women in common in the dark, and denyed Prayer. *Montanus* affirmed himſelf to be the Holy Ghoſt, denyed the Trinity, allowed Inceſt, and baked the bread of the Sacrament with mans blood; his chief diſciple was *Noetus*; *Lucian* and *Apello* were Marcions.

At *Rome*, *Commodus* gives himſelf to pleaſure, and leaves the Government to *Perennius*, who murthered many Senators, at laſt he and his ſon are put to death for treaſon, and *Cleander* put in his room, who makes ſale of all places and offices. The *Daci* are ſubdued by *Albinus* and *Niger*: 2000 die daily at *Rome* of the Plague; the Capitol and Library are burned by Lightning. The *Britains* after the death of *Lucius* have civil Wars, and rebell, but are ſubdued again by *Marcellus*: *Pertinax* being ſent hither, was almoſt killed by the Souldiers, and is ſent away again. The *Scots* and *Picts* again break *Adrians* Wall. — 180

In the Church *Theodoſian* makes the third Tranſlation of the Bible; he was a Marcionite, then a Jew. *Pantænus*, whoſe ſcholler was *Clem. Alexandrinus*, ſets up the firſt Chriſtian Schoole at *Alexandria*: *Apollonius* the Senator is martyred: The Jews Thalmud is now made: The Pepuzian Hereticks, ſo called from *Pepuza* a Phrygian Town, were Montaniſts; they held *Pepuza* to be the heavenly *Jeruſalem* mentioned in Scripture: The *Apoſtolici* held all things in common, condemned Marriage, thinking the Apoſtles did ſo; made Apocryphal Books their Goſpel, and refuſed to admit thoſe into the Church who fell after Baptiſm: Artolyritæ made up their Sacrament of bread and cheeſe. *Originiani* and *Turpes*, ſo called from their filthy lives, forbidding Marriage, and extolling Fornication.

At *Rome*, *Commodus* removes the head from the Coloſſus, and puts his own head on it; He acteth *Hercules* in a Play, and is at laſt ſtrangled by *Martia* his Concubine, and *Lætus*. The Temples of *Veſta*, *Peace*, and others are burned. *Pertinax* reigned not full three moneths, being ſlain by the Souldiers, and *Did. Julianus* not much above two moneths, being alſo killed by them; then *Niger* in *Syria*, *Albinus* in *Britain*, *Severus* in *Panonia*, (who reigned 17 years) are made Emperours: *Severus* defeats *Niger*, and beſiegeth *Byzantium* three years; he hath many Victories in the Eaſt, and makes *Caracalla* his ſon, *Cæſar*; he takes *Bizantium*, kills *Albinus*, and ſends his head to *Rome*, where he put 29 Senators to death; he makes *Geta* his other ſon, Cæſar, and makes *Caracalla* his Colleague. The *Britains* help *Albinus* againſt *Severus*, whom he defeats: *Virius Lupus* ſent to *Britain*. — 190

In the Church, *Tertullian* being vexed by the Roman Clergy, turns *Montaniſt*. *Severus* the Heretick followed *Marcions* opinions. *Theodoſius* denied Chriſts Divinity, and took upon him to alter the Goſpel. *Quarto-decimani* kept *Eaſter* on the 14. day of the Moon, and then faſted, they were *Antilapſarians*. *Alogi* rejected the Goſpel and Apocalypſe, ſaying they were written by *Cerinthus*; they denied Chriſt to be the Word, or God. *Victor* Pope 9 years.

At *Rome*, *Severus* undertakes an Expedition into the Eaſt, and makes League with the King of *Armenia*; he waſteth *Arabia*, and maſtereth King *Abgarus*, and hath divers other Victories; he repaireth the Pantheon: *Plautianus* the Favourite is killed by *Caracalla's* treachery, whoſe daughter *Plautilla* his own wife, with her ſiſter, he baniſheth: *Caracalla* ſtriving with his brother, breaks his own thigh. *Severus* with his ſons go into *Britain*, where at *York* he reſides, and makes a wall 132 miles long, then dieth: About this time *Scotland* receiveth the Faith. Many of the *Caledonians* maſſacred for rebelling againſt the *Romans*. — 200

Years of Christ.

In the Church the 5. Perſecution is raiſed by *Severus*. *Leonidas*, *Origens* father, ſuffered at *Alexandria*, ſo did *Philip* Governour of *Ægypt*. *Irenæus* Biſhop of *Lyons*, with others, are martyred. *Narciſſus* Biſhop of *Jeruſalem* flyeth into the wilderneſſe: *Speratus* martyred at *Carthage*. *Symmachus* tranſlates the Bible. *Zeplirinus* is Pope 18 years; he ordained the Euchariſt to be received once a year. *Hermiani* and *Seleuciani* held the Chaos eternal with God, Angels Creators of mens ſouls, that Chriſt left his fleſh in the Sun, they denied Baptiſm and the Reſurrection. *Praxeas*, father of the *Patriſpaſſiani*, held that God the Father onely ſuffered. *Melchiſedeciani* made *Melchiſedec* greater then Chriſt, whoſe Divinity they denied.

210 At *Rome*, *Caracalla* reigned ſix years; *Geta* ruled one year with him, whom he killed in his Mothers armes, and multitudes of his party; he married with *Julia* his mother-in-law; he overcomes the *Germans*; he marcheth into *Aſia*; he murthers the Alexandrian youth, for calling him *Oedipus*, and his wife *Jocaſta*; burns *Ariſtotles* books; treacherouſly murthers the *Parthians*; is ſlain by *Avitus*, *Caracalla's* Baſtard, who ſucceeds, and is called *Heliogabalus*, a moſt luxurious and cruel Prince. The *Britains* rebel.

In the Church, *Calixtus* is Pope ſix years; he inſtituted the four Embers or Faſts before Ordination, and Church-yards: The fifth Edition of the Bible, called *Vulgata*, found at *Jericho*. A Councel in *Africa* about Repabtiſation. The *Elceſai* Hereticks held two Chriſts, denyed *Maries* Virginity, deified the Water, rejected Scripture; *Angelici* adored Angels.

220 *Heliogabalus* brings his God, the Sun, to *Rome*, and builds a Temple for him. *Baſſianus* his couſin made *Cæſar*; *Heliogabalus* is ſlain with his Mother, and his body dragged and flung into the *Tibris*; *Alexander Severus* ſucceeded thirteen years, a good Prince, he had Chriſts Picture in his Cloſet; *Ulpian* his chief Lawyer and Counſellor is ſlain by the Souldiers. *Armenia* invaded by the *Perſians*.

In the Church a perſecution is raiſed by *Ulpian*. *Calixtus* martyred. Pope *Urban* ſucceeded ſeven years. Chriſtians begin to build Churches. The ſixth Edition of the Bible.

230 *Alexander* the Emperour goeth againſt *Artaxerxes* the *Perſian*, and returns to *Antioch* with loſſe; he was ſevere againſt corrupt Judges, Harlots, Theeves, and falſe Notaries; he erects an Hoſpital for children, triumpheth over the *Perſians*; *France* invaded by the *Germans*: He is ſlain with his Mother *Mammæa*. *Maximinus* a tall Goth ſucceeded two years, a great Trencher-man; he had been a Mulettor; *Gordian* is ſet up againſt him, who hanged himſelf upon the death of his ſon: The Senate chooſe two Emperours, *Balbinus* and *Pupienus*, whom the Souldiers ſlew: *Maximinus* is ſlain before *Aquileia*, and his carkaſs flung to the dogs; *Gordianus* ſucceeded five years.

In the Church, *Urban* being martyred, *Pontianus* ſucceeded Pope four years, who being baniſhed, dyed miſerably in *Sardinia*: *Anterus* ſucceeded one moneth, who being martyred, had *Fabian* for his ſucceſſor 14 years. *Cecilia* the Virgin and others are martyred. *Origen* inſtructeth *Mammæa* in the faith, and finiſheth his Octopla. The ſixth Perſecution is raiſed, and ends with *Maximinus* his death.

240 At *Rome*, *Gordian* openeth the Temple of *Janus*, and defeats the *Perſian*; he is ſlain by *Philip* the Arabian, who ſucceeded 5 years; he makes peace with the Perſian. In the ſecular Playes, *Pompey's* Theater and many houſes burnt: *Philopopolis* in *Thrace* is built by him.

In the Church, Pope *Fabian* admits *Philip* the Emperour upon his repentance: *Laurence* the Deacon is broyled on a Grid yron. A Councel is held in *Arabia* againſt the Hereticks which held the ſouls Mortality, of which opinion was *Beryllus* Biſhop of *Boſtra*, whom *Origen* reclaimed.

At

Years of Chr

At *Rome*, *Philip* leaves his ſon, and goeth againſt *Decius*, whom the Souldiers in *Illyria* choſe Emperour: *Philip* with his ſon are ſlain: *Decius* ſucceeded one year, who being ſlain by the *Goths*, *Gallus* ſucceeds two years, who became a tributary Prince to the *Goths*, the Empire is waſted by the *Goths* and *Perſians*. *Gallus* and his ſon are ſlain by *Æmilianus*, and he by *Valerian*, who reigneth 7 years; The *Goths* waſte the Eaſtern parts; ſo doth *Sapores* the *Perſian*, who made *Valerian* his foot-ſtool, and flaid him alive. — 250

In the Church, *Fab.* Pope is martyred. *Novatianus* makes a Schiſme: *Cornelius* a Roman Prieſt is baniſhed, whipped, and beheaded. *Lucius* is Pope two years; he is martyred; *Stephen* Archdeacon is Pope three years; he ordained ſacred Garments for thoſe that ſerved at the Altar; he alſo is martyred, whom *Sixtus* followed: Divers Synods were held about this time about the cauſe of *Novatus*, and the Lapſed: *Paul* the Eremite lived in the wilderneſſe till *Conſtantine*; from him the Monks ſprang up. The ſeventh Perſecution is raiſed: *Cyprian* and many others are martyred: The *Valeſii* held that they onely were ſaved, who made themſelves Eunuchs: *Novatus*, father of the *Cathari*, who would admit none Lapſed: *Sabellius* denyed the Trinity and Unity of God, and held that the matter was coeternal with God.

At *Rome*, *Galien* reigns alone, who mitigates the Chriſtian perſecution: Many Commanders uſurp the Empire, which is waſted by the Barbarians, and the Commanders deſtroy each other: *Galien* is ſlain; *Aurelius* ſucceeds ten years, who is defeated and ſlaine at *Millan* by his Souldiers: *Marcus Aurelianus* ſucceedeth ſix yeares. — 260

In the Church, to *Sixtus* ſucceeded Pope *Dionyſius* nine years, who divides *Rome* into Pariſhes, and the Countrey into Dioceſſes. *Hierachitæ* denied Marriage and the Reſurrection, debarred children from Heaven, and held *Melchiſedech* to be the Holy Ghoſt. *Originiſts* made the Holy Ghoſt a creature, held that the ſouls were created before the body, and that the Devils after 1000 years ſhould be releaſed from puniſhment. *Samoſatenus* Biſhop of *Antioch* denied Chriſts Divinity, therefore would not baptize in Chriſts Name.

At *Rome*, *Aurelian* uſeth the Diadem, overcommeth the *Goths*; is beaten by, and beats the *Marconians*; He erecteth a Temple to the Sun; defeats the *Goths* in *Thrace*; incompaſſeth *Rome* with a Wall of fifty miles about; He triumpheth over *Zenobia* and *Tetricus*; ſhe dyeth at *Rome*. Silk brought out of India: The *Boii* are ſuppreſſed; he is ſlain by the treachery of his Secretary *Mneſteus*, who for this is flung to wild beaſts: *Tacitus* ſucceeds 6 moneths, and is ſlain by the Souldiers; his brother *Florianus* is ſlain; *Aurel. Prolus* ſucceeds 6 years; He hath divers Victories. *Conſtantine* is born in *Britain* to *Conſtantius* and *Helena*. — 270

In the Church, *Fælix* ſate Pope three years; He inſtituted Conſecration of Altars, and Regiſtred Martyrs names. *Eutichianus* ſucceeded 10 years, who buried with his own hands 342. Martyrs. A Synod is held at *Antioch* againſt *Samoſatenus*. The ninth Perſecution is raiſed by *Aurelian*, whoſe hand became ſtiffe as he was ſubſcribing the Edict; but he dyed before it took effect. *Manes*, father of the *Manichees*, held all the Hereſies of the former Heretiques: He was flai'd alive by the *Perſian* King.

At *Rome* much miſchiefe is done by the Sword-players, who broke priſon. *Probus* overcommeth the *Goths*, gives peace to the *Perſian*, and defeats *Proculus* and *Bonoſus*, uſurpers; He is ſlain by his Souldiers. *Aurelius Carus* ſucceeds one year; obtaines divers Victories, and is ſlain by Thunder: *Diocleſian* ſucceeds 20. yeares: He ſubdues the *Sarmatæ*, and *Perſians*, and *Goths* in *Panonia*, and Rebels in *France* and *Germany*, and *Julian* the Uſurper; He had ſix yeares warrs with *Achillæus* the other Uſurper. — 280

Years of Christ.

In the Church, *Caius* ſate Pope 13 years: He inſtituted the 8 Eccleſiaſtical degrees. *Cyril* Biſhop of *Antioch*, for hindring *Numerian* from entring into the Church, is ſlain by him. Proclianite hereticks, of one *Proclus*, held that Chriſt was not come in the fleſh.

290— At *Rome*, *Diocleſian* aſſumes divine honours. *Conſtantius Chlorus* is made governour of *Britain*; *Galerius* is made Cæſar: theſe have divers victories. *Diocleſian* takes *Alexandria*, and *Archillæus* in it, whom he flung to wild beaſts. *Galerius* defeated by *Narſes* the Perſian, and then defeats him. *Conſtantius* kills the French and Almains.

In the Church, *Caius* is martyred. *Marcellinus* ſucceeded Pope 8 years; he ſacrificed to Idols. *Anthony* the Eremite then flouriſhed. *Arnobius* converted to the faith, and writes againſt *Porphyrie*. *Amphibalus*, and ten more, ſuffered martyrdome in *Britain*. *Suſanna* Neece to Pope *Caius*, martyred, for not marrying with *Maximian* a Heathen.

300— At *Rome*, *Diocleſian* and *Maximian* triumph over the Perſians and Goths: *Diocleſ.* will be called *Jovius*, and *Maximian*, *Herculeus*. They give over the government. *Galerius* and *Conſtantius* made Emperors, this of the Weſt, the other of the Eaſt. *Conſtantius* dieth; to him ſucceeded his ſon *Conſtantine* 30 years, who married *Fauſta Maximian's* daughter: He makes a Bridge over the *Rhine*, and hath divers victories. *Fauſta* diſcovers *Maximians* plot againſt *Conſtantine*.

In the Church, Pope *Marcelline* having at the Synod at *Sinueſſa* in *Campania* publikely in a hair-cloth confeſſed his fault, is at laſt martyred, and his body after 36 dayes was interred by his ſucceſſor *Marcellus*, who ſate 5 years, and was ſtifled to death by the ſtench of a filthy ſtable where he was incloſed; that ſtable afterward was turned to a Church, and called by his name. To him ſucceeded *Euſebius* 2 years. Many Chriſtians are burnt in a houſe at *Nicomedia*, by *Valerius*. The tenth Perſecution is raiſed, in which incredible numbers ſuffered in Egypt. S. *Alban* and others martyred in *Britain*. *Conſtantine* expelleth thoſe of his Court, who for rewards would ſacrifice to Idols. At this time the *Donatiſts* had divers Conventicles at *Carthage*. The traditors or betrayers of the Bible, are condemned in a Synod at *Cyrta* in *Africa*. Biſhop *Meletius* an Antilapſarian; he had many followers, who held divers Jewiſh ceremonies. Fifteen Cardinals were inſtituted by the Pope, to bury and baptiſe. *Donatus* the Prieſt of *Carthage*, held the true Church no where but with him and his followers; He rebaptized, and held the Perſons of the Trinity ſuperior to each other.

310— *Galerius* having made *Licinius* Emperor in *Illyria*, kills himſelf, being troubled with a loathſome diſeaſe in his privities. *Conſtantine* defeats three times *Maxentius*, who is drowned in *Tyber*. *Conſtantine* triumpheth, and marrieth his ſiſter to *Licinius*. *Maximinus* is defeated by the Perſian, then by *Licinius*, at laſt ſtrangles himſelf. *Conſtantine*, by himſelf and his two ſons, gets many victories; He overcomes *Licinius*, who turns Apoſtate. The *Britains* rebell, and defeat *Traherus*.

In the Church, Pope *Euſebius* is martyred. His ſucceſſor *Melchiades* ſate three yeares, who aboliſhed Faſting upon Sundayes and Holy-dayes; he dyed a Martyr. In his time fell out the Schiſme between *Donatus*, and *Cecilian* Biſhop of *Carthage*. *Sylveſter* ſucceeded Pope 21 years; he inſtituted the feaſt of *S. Peter ad Vincula*; he appointed the Albe and Corporal for the Altar. Divers Councels held at this time againſt the Donatiſts, Antilapſarians, Jewes and Arians. S. *Catherine* is martyred at *Alexandria*. *Conſtantine* becomes Chriſtian, upon the ſight of a Croſſe in the aire. *Arius* brocheth his blaſphemy, and is condemned in a Synod at *Alexandria*; *Conſtantine* confutes him by his letters.

320— *Conſtantine* appeaſeth the tumultuous ſouldiers in *Gaule*; defeats the *Sauromates* and *Licinius* two times, at laſt puts him to death for plotting againſt him: He kils his own ſon *Criſpus*, upon *Fauſta's* falſe accuſation: He repairs *Jeruſalem*, and executes the younger *Lucinius*:

Lucinius: Fauſta, for her falſhood, is put to death in a hot Bath. He repairs divers Towns; and transfers his ſeat to *Byzantium*, which he new names *Conſtantinople*. *Years of Chriſt.*

In the Church, *Conſtantine* ordained burning of Wax-candles by day. *Sylveſter* is diſcontented, becauſe Soothſayers were tolerated; therefore retires to Mount *Soracte*. *Conſtantine* ordains the LORDS Day; builds S.*Peters* Church, S.*Pauls*, and the *Lateran*. His mother *Helena* finds the Croſſe. The firſt General Councel of *Nice*, held againſt *Arius*; where the Nicene Creed was made, [*Sicut in principio*] added to [*Gloria Patri.*] S.*Baſil* gathereth together the diſperſed Monks, and makes lawes for them. *Arius* is recalled by *Conſtantine*, upon his ſiſters intreaty. *Athanaſius* is perſecuted. *Conſtantinople* made a Patriarchate.

Conſtantine ſubdues the *Goths*, and gives them *Panonia* to inhabite; he makes his ſon *Conſtans* Cæſar. *Sapores* (who was made King in his mothers wombe) waſtes *Meſopotamia*. *Conſtantine* is baptized, and dieth at *Nicomedia*, leaving the Empire to his three ſonnes: *Conſtantine* the eldeſt had the Weſt, and reigned 3 years; *Conſtantius* had the Eaſt, and reigned 24 years; *Conſtans* had *Italy* &c. and reigned 12 years, he ſlew and defeated his brother *Conſtantine*. —130

In the Church, to *Sylveſter* ſucceeded *Marcus* 8 moneths: He ordained the Nicene Creed to be ſung after the Goſpel. *Julius* ſucceeded Pope 15 years. Conventicles are held at *Tyre*, *Jeruſalem*, and *Byzantium*, againſt *Athanaſius*, and in favour of *Arius*. *Athanaſius* is accuſed of fornication and murther, by *Euſebius*. He refuſeth to admit *Arius* into his Church, wherefore he is baniſhed by the Emperor. *Arius* dyeth by the falling out of his guts. *Athanaſius* reſtored by *Conſtantine* the younger, and is accuſed to Pope *Julius* by the Arians. The *Theopaſchites* held, that Chriſts divinity ſuffered.

Conſtantius raiſeth *Sapores* (who had deſtroyed many Chriſtians) from the ſiege of *Niſibis*. He perſecutes the Orthodox Biſhops; ſhuts up the Heathen Temples; condemneth Sodomites; dedicates the Golden-Temple of *Antioch*; defeats the *Perſians*, but with great loſſe. *Conſtans* ſubdueth the *Gauls*; and is odious for his evil life. —140

In the Church, Pope *Julius* holds a Synod at *Rome*, where *Athanaſius* and *Marcellus* are reſtored, to the grief of the *Arians*. At *Rome*, *Athanaſius* writes his Creed; he is depoſed in a Conventicle at *Antioch*. Great tumults in *Conſtantinople*, and ſlaughter about the depoſing of *Paul* the Orthodox Biſhop, and conſecration of *Macedonius* the Arian. The *Arians* new form of Faith is rejected by the Weſtern Biſhops. The Councel of *Nice* is confirmed by that of *Sardis* now aſſembled. *Paul* and *Athanaſius* reſtored to their ſeats. *Marcellus* denieth Chriſts Divinity. The *Macedonians* reject the Holy Ghoſt. *Photinus* held Chriſts Kingdome but temporary. *Euphrates* denieth Chriſts Divinity.

Conſtantius makes *Gallus* his couſin, Cæſar; who kills the rebellious Jewes, and takes divers Towns from them: He defeats *Magnentius* three times, who had murthered *Conſtans*, uſurped the government, tyranniſed in *Rome*, martyred his own mother, wounded *Deſiderius* his brother whom he had made Cæſar, and at laſt kills himſelf; *Decentius* his other brother, and Cæſar, hanged himſelf. *Conſtantius* being ſole Emperor, puts *Gallus* to death for his cruelty, and makes his brother *Julian* Cæſar, who beat the *Almans*, and got divers victories. *Silvanus* the Uſurper is ſlain. The Germans, Sarmatæ, and Perſians do much miſchief; but are ſubdued. *Sapores* takes *Amida*. *Julian* ſtudyeth Magick; and is ſaluted Emperor by the Army, but refuſeth it. —150

In the Church, *Licerius* ſate Pope 15 years: He is perſecuted for not condemning *Athanaſius*; *Felix* is placed in his room, and again diſplaced, *Liberius* being recalled. Divers Synods and Conventicles were held about this time. The Acatian hereticks held, that Chriſt was like his Father in will, not in ſubſtance. *Aetius* was an Arian, and held beſides that God was comprehenſible. About this time the feaſt of the Annunciation began to be obſerved. *Paul* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople* is ſtrangled by the Arians, and divers Biſhops baniſhed by them, among the reſt *Athanaſius*. *Oſius* Biſhop of

Years of Christ.

of *Corduba*, out of feare ſubſcribes to the Arian new Confeſſion of faith, which is rejected by the Councel of *Ariminum*. S. *Andrew's* bones tranſlated to *Conſtantinople*.

360— *Julian* is ſaluted Emperor, and defeats the French and Almans; he reigned one yeare. *Conſtantius* returning from the Perſian war, dieth. *Apollo's* Temple is burnt. *Julian* marcheth againſt the Perſian, and threatneth the ruine of Chriſtianity; but is wounded and dieth. *Jovianus* ſucceeds 7 moneths; he makes his Army profeſſe themſelves Chriſtians; he makes peace with the Perſian, and is ſtifled in his bed with coal-ſmoke. In the Weſt ſucceeded *Valentinian* 11 years; in the Eaſt *Valence* 14 years. The *Picts* and *Scots* kill the Roman Commanders, and ſeiſe on the greateſt part of *Britain*. *Valentinian* reſtores the Standard and Crucifix, deſpiſed by *Julian*. He had both good and bad ſucceſſe againſt the Germans: he makes his ſon *Gratian* his Colleague 16 years; *Ambroſe* is made Governour of *Lombardy*. *Valence* overcomes *Procopius* the Uſurper, and kills him; then waſtes the *Goths* territories, and defeats their King *Theodoſius*; having ſetled *Britain*, calls it *Valentia*. *Romachus* the Tyrant of *Scotland* is beheaded by his Nobles, and his head fixed on a pole.

In the Church, a third ſchiſme aroſe about the Popes election. *Urſicinus* and *Damaſus* are both choſen, not without great ſlaughter: but *Valentinian* baniſhed *Urſicinus*, and choſe *Damaſus*, who ſate 17 years; He added *Gloria Patri* to the end of the Pſalms, and *Allelujah*. About 11 Councels were aſſembled within this Decad of years. The heretick *Eunomius* held, that the Holy-Ghoſt was created by the Son, and that Chriſt aſſumed mans body without a ſoule. *Jovianus* made all ſins equal, denied *Mary's* Virginity, contemned Faſting, and held that men ſinned not after Baptiſme. *Collyridiani* offered ſacrifices to the Virgin *Mary*. *Lucifer* ſaid, that Satan made mans body; and held ſelf-murther lawful; he rejected ſome part of the Old-Teſtament. The Chriſtians are perſecuted by *Julian*, who advanceth Gentiliſme, and condemneth *Athanaſius* to death. He is hindred by ſtrange prodigies from rebuilding the Temple of *Jeruſalem*; he writes books againſt Chriſt. *Valentinian* reſtores the Chriſtian profeſſors. *Valence* is baptized by *Eudoxius* the Arian Biſhop. Prodigious Haile falls at *Conſtantinople*. Marriage is forbid in *Lent*, by the Councel of *Laodicea*. The Order of S. *Lazarus* in *Savoy* founded.

370— *Severus* ſubdueth the Saxons, and *Valentinian* treacherouſly kills them; therefore becomes odious. *Firmus* the Uſurper in *Africa* kills himſelf. The *Romans* are beat by the *Quadi*; the *Sarmatæ* defeated by *Theodoſius*; peace granted to the Almans. *Valentinian* died ſuddenly, when he underſtood what baſe beggerly people the *Sarmatæ* were, with whom he had ſo ften fought. *Gratian* kills the Germans. *Valence* in the Eaſt, executeth the Philoſophers, and impriſoneth them whoſe names began with *Theod*. He kills *Para* King of *Armenia* treacherouſly; he ſuffers the *Goths* to plant in *Thrace*; they waſte *Thrace* and *Theſſaly*; *Valence* going againſt them, is burnt in a cottage. *Theodoſius* ſucceeds 16 years, who ſubdued the *Goths*. Great wars between the *Scots* and *Picts*.

In the Church, a great tumult was raiſed in *Alexandria* about *Athanaſius*, who hid himſelf in his fathers monument. *Evagrius* the Orthodox Biſhop is baniſhed by *Valence*, and 80 Prieſts drowned. *Athanaſius* dieth; his ſucceſſor *Peter* flyeth to *Rome*. The *Stracens* are converted. *Ambroſe* made Biſhop of *Milain*. The Goths turn Arians. The feaſt of Epiphanie obſerved. The baniſhed Biſhops reſtored by *Gratian*. *Audeani* or Anthropomorphites, gave to God a mans body; held Darkneſſe, Fire and Water eternal. *Apollinaris* gave Chriſt a heavenly body; he denied the Trinity, held traduction of ſouls, that the Ceremonial law ſhould be in uſe after the reſurrection, and denied Chriſt a humane will. The *Meſſalians* denied the Trinity, made God viſible; contemned Chriſts ſufferings, Sacraments and Alms; allowed perjury, to advance Religion; and aſcribed ſalvation to Prayer alone.

380— *Gratian* in the Weſt, defeats the *Goths* of *Macedonia* and *Ioanonia*. *Maximus* the Uſurper in *Britain*, makes his ſon *Victor* Emperor; he kills *Gratian* treacherouſly at *Lyons*; then ſeiſeth upon *Spain*, *France*, *Britain* and *Afric*. *Maximus* invades *Italy*. *Valentinian* flieth to *Theodoſius*. *Maximus* and his ſon *Victor* both are ſlain; their Generall caſt himſelf into the ſea. In the Eaſt, *Theodoſius* falls ſick, and is baptized. The *Goths* ſubmit to the *Romans*.

Years of Chriſt.

Romans. *Antioch* rebels againſt *Theodoſius*, whom *Flavian* the Biſhop aſſwageth: he makes his ſon *Arcadius* Emperour at 8 years of age: he defeats the *Scythians*, reſtores *Valentinian*, and defeats *Maximus*; his governour is killed at *Theſſalonica*, which coſt 7000. men their lives, for which he after was ſorry.

In the Church, *Siricius* is Pope 13 years: he was an enemy to the married Clergy; he added *Anthems* to the Liturgie. *Priſcilian* the Heretick, denied the Trinity, makes the ſoul to be of the Divine eſſence; he condemned Marriage and Fleſh-eating, allowed Perjury and lying in Religion. *Euchyts* held Baptiſme needleſſe. *Helvidius* author of the *Antidicomarionites*, held that *Joſeph* had children by *Mary*, after Chriſts birth. The ſecond general Council at *Conſtantinople* againſt *Macedonius*; beſides nine other Synods within this Decad. The *Nicene Creed* (read after the Goſpel) is confirmed by the Council of *Conſtant*. *Ambroſe* is perſecuted by *Valentinian* and *Juſtina* the Empreſſe. *Pſalms* began to be ſung by turns; and *Anthems* brought into the Church by *Ambroſe*. *Maximus* ſubdueth *Armortica*, and names it *Little-Britain*. *Urſula* and 1100. Virgins going from *London* in *Britain*, loſt their lives to ſave their Virginity. The Order of *Auguſtine* Friars began now.

390

Theodoſius, upon the ſlaughter of *Theſſolonica*, makes a law, that 30 dayes ſhould come between the ſentence and execution; and is excluded the Church, till he had made publique Penance; he makes his ſon *Honorius* Cæſar, and defeats *Eugenius* neer *Aquileia*; he dieth at *Milan*. *Arcadius* reigns 13 years, his Tutor *Ruffinus* rebels and is killed. *Eutropius* ſucceeds, who proclaims *Stilico* a traitor, and baniſheth good men. *Alaricus* invades *Greece*, he flyeth to the ſanctuary upon a capital crime, but is not ſaved by it; for he made a law againſt ſanctuaries. In the Weſt, *Arbogaſtes* ſtrangleth *Valentinian*, and ſets up *Eugenius* a Schoolmaſter to be Emperour two years. *Theodoſius* having triumphed over him, makes his ſon *Honorius* Emperour in the Weſt 28 years, whoſe aſſiſtant was *Stilico*; who fals out with *Eutropius*. Sword-players are put down by *Honorius*, who marrieth *Stilico's* daughter; *Gildo* is ſtrangled: the Empire begins to decline.

In the Church, *Anaſtaſius* is Pope four years; he ordained that the Goſpel ſhould be heard ſtanding: 13 Synods were held within this Decad; St. *Hierom* inſtituted Canonical houres for Prayer. The Baptiſts head is brought out of *Cilicia* to *Conſtantinople*. *Hierom* expelled his Church for condemning *Origen*; he tranſlates the Bible out of the Hebrew. The *Marcomans* and *Huns* converted. *Stilico* burns the *Sybils* books at *Rome*. The third Council of *Carthage*, ordains that the Euchariſt ſhould be received faſting.

400

In the Weſt, *Alaricus* invades *Italy*, beſiegeth *Honorius*, and is twice defeated by *Stilico*; who alſo defeats and kils *Rhadagiſus* the Goth; *Stilico* conſpires with *Alaricus* againſt *Arcadius*, but he is ſlain by *Honorius*, upon ſuſpition that he aimed at the Eaſtern Empire. The *Vandals* waſte *Germany*: one *Conſtantine* is choſen Emperour in *Britain*. The Scots beat down the wall of *Severus* & pillage *Britain*. *Alaricus* beſiegeth *Rome*, and ſets up *Attalus* againſt *Honorius*, who unites himſelf to *Conſtantine* the uſurper. In the Eaſt, *Theodoſius* the younger is born, and baptized by *Chryſoſtome*; he is made Emperour, but under the government of *Iſdigerdes* King of *Perſia* 42 years.

In the Church, *Innocent* 1. is Pope 15 years; he made Saturday a faſting-day, excommunicates *Arcadius* and the Eaſtern Biſhops for perſecuting *Chryſoſtome*. About this time began the rights of Patronages in the Council of *Mela*. *Chryſoſtome* for taxing *Eudoxia* is baniſhed twice; he died in exile. Ten Councils held within this Decad. *Vigilantius* an enemy to Churches and Virginity. *Triformiani* held the Divinity imperfect in each of the three Perſons. *Melangiſmonité* held that the Son was in the Father, as a leſſer veſſel in a greater. *Pelacius* held *Adam* mortal by nature before his fall; that his ſin was meerly perſonal, that there is no Original ſin, that our natural concupiſcence is good; that men have free will to good without grace; that the Infants of faithful men are ſaved without baptiſme, but ſhall not enter into Gods kingdom.

410

Rome is taken by *Alaricus*, and *Attalus* degraded; the Roman Commanders kill each other. *Maximus* is defeated in *Spain*: *Heraclian* the Uſurper in *Africk* is defeated and ſlain.

Years of Christ.

ſlain. *Attalus* is ſet up by *Athaulphus* the *Goth*, and then taken; *Honorius* cuts off his right hand, and baniſheth him to *Lipara*. *Conſtantius* marrieth *Placidia*, whom he reſcued from the *Goths*, the ſiſter of *Honorius*, of them came *Valentinian*, who ſucceeded *Honorius*. The Burgundians take *Trevers*, aud obtain a ſeat neer the *Rhene*. *Alaricus* loſt all the ſpoiles of *Italy* in a ſtorme. The *Vandals* ſack *Majorca* and *Minorca*, ſeat themſelves in *Betica*, and call it *Vandalaſia*, whence they are expelled by *Vallia* and the *Goths*.

In the Church, *Zoſimus* was Pope two years, who prohibited Prieſts to drink in Taverns; to him ſucceeded *Boniface* the firſt, 5 years; with him *Eulalius* is choſen by ſome, which makes the third Schiſm, but *Eulalius* is expelled by the Emperour: In this Decad were ten Councels, the chief was that of *Carthage* which condemned *Pelagianiſm*. The Jews kill many Chriſtians at *Alexandria*. The *Donatiſts*, to be accounted Martyrs, kill themſelves. The Jews crucifie a child in *Paleſtina*. *Pelagius* at *Diaſpolis* in *Paleſtine* recants his Hereſies.

420— In the Weſt, *Honorius* makes *Conſtantius* his Colleague. *Conſtantius* dieth. *Placidia* his widow, and *Valentinian* her ſon being ſuſpected by *Honorius*, flie to *Theodoſius*, who entertains them. *Maximus* and *Jovinus* Uſurpers in *Spain*, are ſent in bonds to *Rome*, and there executed. *Honorius* dieth: his Secretary *John* invades the Empire. *Valentinian* created Cæſar by *Theodoſius*. *John* is taken and beheaded. *Valentinian* 3. reigned 29 years. *Boniface* governour of *Afric* rebels, and calls the *Vandals* into *Afric* out of *Spain*, whom *Placidia* could not remove thence. *Venice* is founded by the *Romans*, flying from *Attila* and the *Huns*. *Martian*, afterward Emperor, ſleeping is covered with an Eagle. *Genſericus* makes a league with him. In the Eaſt, *Theodoſius* warreth againſt the *Perſians*, who are forced to ſue for peace, and to give off perſecuting the Chriſtians. *Theodoſius* recovers *Panonia* from the *Huns*.

In the Church, *Celeſtinus* is Pope 8 years. The wanton Hereticks, called *Paterniani* and *Venuſtiani*, held that mans lower parts were made by Satan. *Neſtorius* Biſhop of *Conſtantium*, gave to Chriſt two perſonalities, but one will; He would not have *Mary* to be called the Mother of God. He was condemned in the Councel of *Epheſus*, which was the 3. Oecumenical; his tongue was eat up with worms. Within this Decad were held 6 Councels. Pope *Celeſtine* ſends *Palladius* into *Scotland*, to ſuppreſſe Pelagianiſme there; and *Germanus* for this end is ſent into *Britain*. The Emperors ordain, that Chriſts picture be not placed neer the ground.

430— In the Weſtern Empire, *Hippo* is taken by the *Vandals*, and *Africk* ſubdued by them; a peace is made with them, and *Numidia* given for them to dwell in; but *Genſericus* againſt the League takes *Carthage*, and ſeizeth upon all *Africk*. In the Eaſt, *Conſtantinople* burneth for three dayes; a great Famine followed. Peace is granted to the *Perſian*. *Theodoſius* gives a great ſum to the people to buy Corn; He finiſheth the *Code*. The *Scots* break down *Severus* his Turff wall; *Ætius* rebuilds it of brick; this alſo the *Scots* and *Picts* overthrow. *Clodio* called *Crinitus* reigned in *France*.

In the Church, *Sixtus* the third ſate Pope 9 years; He was accuſed of Fornication by *Baſſus*, but is cleared afterward; this *Sixtus* imbalmed and buried with his own hands the body of *Baſſus*. Four Councels held within this Decad. The *Burgundians* are converted. *Patrick* is ſent into *Scotland*, where he ſate Biſhop 60 years. The Jews of *Crete* are drowned in following their falſe *Moſes* through the Sea. The Orthodox Biſhops are perſecuted by *Genſericus* the *Arian*. *Eudocia*, *Theodoſius* his wife, builds St. *Stevens* Church at *Jeruſalem*.

440— In the Weſtern Empire, *Sicily* is invaded by *Genſericus*; He becomes tributary for a part of *Africk*. In the Eaſt, the *Hunns* waſte *Thrace*, *Meſia*, and *Greece*. *Theodoſius* helpeth *Valentinian* againſt the *Vandals*. The Emperour is fain to buy peace of *Attila*. A great Earthquake at *Conſtantinople*. *Saturnine* ſlain by the Empreſs. *Attila* threatneth war for want of his tribute; He is defeated by *Authenius*. *Theodoſius* dieth with a fall from his horſe in hunting. The *Anglo-Saxons* called into *Britain* by *Vortiger* the Uſurper. The

Scots

Years of Chriſt

Scots and *Picts* vex the *Britains*. In *France*, *Clodio* beats the Romans; *Merovee* ſucceeds him, whoſe poſterity continued till *Pipin*.

In the Church, *Leo* ſate Pope 20 years; He was excommunicated by *Dioſcorus* Biſhop of *Alexandria*, for rejecting the Councel of *Epheſus*. Nine Councels held within this Decad. *Eutiches*, Abbot of *Conſtantinople*, gave Chriſt but one Nature, divine onely, which he made paſſible; He is abſolved in the Councel of *Epheſus*. St. *Patrick* converts *Ireland*. Rogations or Letanies inſtituted by Pope *Leo*. The *Manichees* at *Rome* recant and burn their Books. The ſeven Sleepers awake after two hundred yeares ſleep.

In *Italy* the Famine was ſo great, that Parents exchanged their children for food. *Attila* invades *France*, and is overthrown; He takes *Aquileia*. Pope *Leo* perſwades him to leave *Italy*; he is forced by the *Alani* into *Scythia*. *Valentinian* kills *Ætius* with his own hands; *Ætius* his Souldiers kill him in revenge: *Maximus* is killed by *Eudocia*. *Avitus* uſurpeth the Empire 9 moneths. *Genſericus* is expelled *Italy*. *Mauritania* loſt and won by *Majoranus*. In the Eaſt, *Martian* is Emperour 6 years; he dreamed that *Attila's* Bow was broken, the ſame night he died; *Martian* died two years after; *Leo* ſucceeded 17 years; *Majoranus* is by him made Emperour of the Weſt. In Britain, *Vortiger* is depoſed and reſtored; 300 of the Nobles ſlain by the *Saxons*, and *Vortiger* taken priſoner. The *French* and *Gauls* unite themſelves by Marriages. *Childericus* reignes. *Attila* ſtrangled by his own blood in the night. *Theodoricus* the ſecond reigns in *Spain*. *Attila's* ſons loſt what he had got. — 450

In the Church, Pope *Leo* refutes the *Acephali*. *Diaſcorus* the *Eutychian* with his Diſciples, were called *Monophiſitæ* and *Theopaſchitæ*, for ſaying Chriſt had but one divine Nature paſſible; theſe with *Eutyches* are condemned in the fourth General Councel of *Chalcedon*; five Councels were held in this Decad. Conteſtation between *Rome* and *Conſtantinople* about ſupremacy. The Orthodox are perſecuted by the *Vandals* in *Africa*. *Auſtria*, *Bavaria*, and *Panonia* converted. *Avitus*, of an Emperour becomes Biſhop of *Placentia*. The *Eutychians* cruelty againſt *Proterius* Biſhop of *Alexandria*, whom they ſlew, and chewed his entrails. Bells uſed firſt at *Nola* in *Campania*. Monks called *Studeæ* at *Conſtantinople*.

In the Weſt, *Majoranus* beats the *Goths* in *Gaule*, and is beaten by the *Vandals* in *Spain*; He is ſlain by *Severus* his General, who reigned 3 years. *Ricimer* expels the *Alani* out of *Italy*, and poyſoneth *Severus*. *Authenius*, *Martians* ſon-in-law, is made Emperour by *Leo*, five years. In the Eaſt, the *Goths* waſte *Illyria*. *Genſericus* ſpoileth the Sea-coaſts of the Empire. *Conſtantinople* burneth 4 dayes. *Leo* ſets out a Fleet againſt *Genſericus*, to whom it is betrayed. *Leo* hated by the people, for betrothing his daughter to *Aſpar's* ſon an Arian. In *Britain*, *Hengiſt* reigns over *Kent*: *Vortiger* driven into the woods. *Theodoricus* the *Goth* drives the Romans out of *Spain*, after 700 years poſſeſſion; He perſecuted the Catholikes, and wrote the Gothick Laws: The Oſtrogoths defeat the *Huns* in *Hungary*, cut off their Kings head, which they ſent to *Conſtantinople*: The *Sueves* in *Gallicia* take *Lisbon*. The *Vandals* expelled *Sicily* by *Marcellinus*, who was treacherouſly ſlain. — 460

In the Church, *Hilary* ſate Pope 6 years; He excluded unlearned men from the Clergy, and prohibited Popes from naming their ſucceſſor: To him ſucceeded *Simplicius* 16 years. 4 Councels held within this Decad. *Paulin* Biſhop of *Nola*, was the firſt that introduced Hiſtorical Pictures and Crucifixes into Churches; He pawned himſelf to redeem a widows ſon that was captive. The Painters hand withered at *Conſtantinople*, for offering to paint Chriſt like *Jupiter*. *Litania minor*, or three dayes Rogation in Aſcenſion-week, inſtituted by *Mamarcus* and *Sidonius Apollinaris*, againſt Wolves and Beares.

In the Weſt, *Ricimer* rebels againſt the Emperour; is reconciled; rebels again, and kils *Anthemius*. Divers petty Emperours at *Rome* expell each other; the laſt is *Auguſtulus*, whom *Odoacer* one of the *Heruli* baniſhed, and took *Rome*. Thus endeth the Weſtern-Empire. *Odoacer* and the *Heruli* reigned in *Italy* till *Juſtinians* dayes. In the Eaſt, *Leo*, to pleaſe the people, cauſeth all *Aſpars* Family to be ſlaine: *Leo* dyeth; To him ſucceeds *Leo* the ſecond, and after him *Zeno* 17 years; He is depoſed by *Baſiliſcus*, and afterward recovereth, and depoſeth *Baſiliſcus*. *Marcion*, *Ricimers* — 470

Years of Christ.

ſon, defeateth *Zeno*. The *Lombards* tranſport themſelves into *Panonia*. *Childerick* of *France* takes divers places from the Empire. *Vortiger* is burnt in his Caſtle in *Wales*. *Stone-hedge* erected on *Salisbury*-Plains, in memory of the Saxon-treachery there.

In the Church, *Aratius* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople* claimes the ſecond place after the Pope, which is confirmed by *Leo* the Emperour. *Peter Fullo* the *Eutychian* is made Biſhop of *Antioch*, and condemneth the Councel of *Chalcedon*. The Hebrew Vowels were invented about this time. *Baſiliſcus* condemneth the Councel of *Chalcedon*, but upon *Zeno's* raiſing of forces, he recants. The Library of *Conſtantinople* burnt, in which was *Homer* in Golden Letters.

480 — In the Weſt, *Julius Nepos* is ſlain. In the Eaſt, *Theodorick* the *Goth* threatneth *Conſtantinople*, and dieth of a fall from his horſe. *Illus* and *Leontius*, Uſurpers, are taken, and their heads ſent to *Conſtantinople*. *Zeno* gives himſelf to tyranny and riot. *Clovis* the great, the firſt Chriſtian King of *France*. In *Britain*, *Hengiſt* is ſlain; the *South-Saxons* poſſeſſed *Surrey* and *Suſſex*. *Hunnerick* the *Vandal* perſecutes the *Catholikes*, and is killed by wormes.

In the Church, *Felix* is Pope 9 years; He inſtituted the Feaſt of S. *Michael*: Six Councels were held within this Decad. *Eutychus* his hereſie ſpreadeth far in the Eaſt.

490 — *Zeno* the Greek Emperour is buried in a fit of the *Epilepſie*; *Ariadna* would not ſuffer the Tombe-ſtone to be removed, though he revived, ſo he died miſerably: *Anaſtaſius Dicorus* ſucceeds 27 years. *Longinus*, *Zeno's* brother, uſurpeth in *Iſauria*, and occaſions a war. The Emperours ſtatues dragged about the ſtreets of *Conſtantinople*: *Longinus* is taken and tortured to death. The Bulgarians waſte *Thrace*; for money they give off and return. *Clovis* the King of *France* hath divers Victories; ſo hath *Aurelius* in *Britain*, who was poyſoned by a Monk. *Theodorick* the Oſtragoth waſtes *Italy*, takes *Ravenna*, kills *Odoacar* treacherouſly at a Feaſt, ſo he becomes ſole King of *Italy* 33 years; He hath divers Victories. The *Heruli* and *Lombards* live together, and then quarrel; the *Heruli* defeated. The *Vandals* make peace with the *Romans*, and recall the baniſhed Catholiques. The *Goths* burn the Roman Governour in *France* within a brazen Bull.

In the Church, *Galaſius* is Pope 5 years; He excluded the lame and blind from the Prieſthood: *Anaſtaſius* the ſecond ſucceeded two years; He was an *Acatian*, and died the death of *Arius*: *Symmachus* ſucceeds 15 years; His Antipope was *Laurence*, and ſo there followed a fifth Schiſme. Four Councels held this Decad. *Acephali*, ſo called from having neither Biſhop nor Prieſt; they were called alſo *Theodoſiani*, from *Theodoſius* Biſhop of *Alexandria*; they rejected the Councel of *Chalcedon*, and were *Eutychians*. The Canonical Scripture diſtinguiſhed from Apocrypha. The Babylonian Thalmud, which is the Jews Civil and Canon Law, is finiſhed.

500 — In the Eaſt, *Cabades* the *Perſian* takes *Amida*, which is redeemed again. The Bulgarians take *Syrmium* in *Panonia*. The Emperour hires the *Goths* to depart his Dominions. *Anaſtaſius* repaireth *Daras* in *Meſopotamia*, and aideth *Clovis* with men and ſhips. *Uther-Pendragon*, in *Britain*, father of Prince *Arthur*, makes a League with the *Scots*. *Cherdick* foundeth the Kingdome of the Weſt-*Saxons*, which contained *Berkeſhire*, *Hampſhire*, *Wilts*, *Sommerſet*, *Dorſet*, *Devonſhire* and *Cornwall*. *Alaricus* and his Arian *Goths* ſlain by *Clovis* the French King. *Theodorick* the Oſtragoth relieves *Rome* with Corn, expels the Magicians thence, and erecteth Water-works at *Ravenna*: By *Vitiges* he takes *Syrmium* from the Bulgarians.

In the Church, *Symmachus* is confirmed Pope by *Theodorick*; He baniſhed the *Manichees*, doth many good works; 8 Councels held within this Decad, whereof 5 were kept at *Rome*, 3 of them about the cauſe of *Symmachus*. *Anaſtaſius* murthered 3000 Catholiques; He is excommunicated by the Pope. The Feaſt of *Peter* and *Paul* inſtituted. The Chriſtians perſecuted in *Arabia* and *Paleſtine*. The Emperour hates Images, therefore cauſeth divers Monſters to be painted. As an Arian was going to baptize, the water dried up ſuddenly in the Font.

In

Years of Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, *Vitalianus* the *Scythian* helps the *Catholicks*; ſubdueth *Thrace*, *Scythia* and *Meſia*; forceth *Anaſtaſius* to revoke the baniſhed, and is bribed with money and honours to depart. The *Huns* alſo are bribed to leave the waſting of *Armenia* and *Capadocia*. *Anaſtaſius* is ſlain by thunder. *Juſtin* ſucceeds 9 years, who got the Empire by bribing; he defeats his Uſurpers, and kils *Vitalianus*: he makes peace with the *Perſian*. *Clovis* of *France* dieth, and leaves his kingdome to his 4 ſons. *Arthur* in Britain takes *London*, and beats the Saxons.

In the Church, *Hormiſda* ſate Pope 10 years. In this Decad were held 8 Councels. *Anaſtaſius* perſecutes the Catholicks againſt his own Inſtrument made to the contrary, which he burned: he added to the *Triſagion* [*Who was crucificed for us*] this cauſed a ſedition: he ſleighted the Popes Ambaſſadours. 350 Orthodox Monks ſlain by *Severus* the Eutychian Biſhop of *Antioch*; who being condemned to loſe his tongue, flyeth into *Ægypt*. *Bennet* founded his Order on mount *Caſſin*.

The *Sclavi* of *Scythia* takes *Iſtria*: the *Lombards* for the ſervice againſt the *Goths* obtain *Auſtria* of *Juſtin*; he dieth: his ſiſters ſon *Juſtinian* ſucceedeth 38 years; he ſends *Beliſarius* and *Procopius* againſt the *Perſians*, and aideth the king of *Colchos* againſt them: he ſetteth out his Code: by *Mundus* he defeats the Getes and Bulgarians in Britain; *York* yeeldeth to *Arthur*, who forceth the *Saxons* to Peace: the Eaſt-Saxon kingdom founded by *Erchenwyn*; it contained *Eſſex*, *Middleſex*, and part of *Hartford*-ſhire: the Scots and Picts aid king *Arthur*. *Sigiſmund* king of *Burgundy* is ſlain and caſt into a Well. *Gondamare* is choſen, and expelled by *Clodomire* and *Thyerre*. *Athalaricus* king of the Oſtrogoths, ſon of *Amaleſunthia* a learned woman in all languages. The Lombards poſſeſſe *Panonia*. *Hilderick* is impriſoned and ſlain by the Vandals. —520

In the Church, *John* ſate Pope 3 years, he is impriſoned and famiſhed: his ſucceſſor *Felix* fouth, ſate 4 years; he inſtituted Extream Unction, and did good works. Seven Councels held within this Decad. To the Order of *Bennet* the Italian Monk belong the Cæleſtians, Carthuſians, Ciſteaux, and Monks of Clugny. *Zaras* king of *Colchos* baptized at *Conſtant*. Pope *John* is forced to intercede with *Juſtin* for the *Arians*. *Gethes* king of the *Heculi* baptiſed at *Conſtant*. *Juſtinian* ordered ſwearing by the Goſpels. *Tzani* of *Armenia* ſubdued by *Juſtinian*, and converted.

Beliſarius is defeated in *Perſia*, he overcomes *Probus* and the other Rebels. *Sardinia* is rendred to *Juſtinian*. *Beliſarius* recovers *Carthage* from *Gilimer*, after it had been poſſeſſed 95 years by the *Vandals*. *Gilimer* brought captive to *Conſtantine*, and kindly uſed by *Juſtinian*, who divides *Africk* into 7 Provinces. *Beliſarius* takes *Syracuſe* and other towns in *Sicily*. *Mundus* and his ſon ſlain. *Beliſarius* hath divers Victories and Conqueſts in *Aſia*, being aided by *Narſes* the Eunuch. *Vitiges* the *Oſtrogoth* led in triumph to *Conſtantinople* by *Beliſarius*. *Coſroes* the *Perſian* makes a long league with the *Romans*, but is ſoon broken. *Cardick* the Weſt-Saxon takes the Iſle of *Wight*; *Henrick* his ſon overthrows the *Britains*: the *French* kings divide *Burgundy* amongſt them, ſo that kingdome endeth: The *French* invade *Spain*, and makes the *Goths* abjure Arianiſme. *Amalari* the Viſigoth is killed by his wives brothers. *Vitiges* king of the *Oſtrogoths*, is imployed againſt the *Perſians*. *Gilimer* the *Vandal* puts out his brothers eyes. The *Vandals* being driven out of *Africk*, ſeek out new Plantations in *Poland*, *Hungaria*, *Greece* and *Germany*. —530

In the Church, *Boniface* ſate Pope 2 years; his Antipope was *Dioſcorus*, which made the ſixth Schiſme. *John* 2 ſate 3 years: *Agapetus* 3 years: *Silverius* 3 years; his Antipope is *Vigilius*, and ſo is the 7 Schiſme. This *Vigilius* ſate 16 years, who baniſhed and famiſhed *Silverius*. 9 Councels held this Decad. *Dionyſius* a Roman Abbot begins to reckon the years from Chriſts Birth, which before were reckoned from the *Æra* of *Dioclesian*. *Juſtinian* publiſheth his Inſtitutions and Pandects. *Zanabarzus* king of *Iberia* baptiſed at *Conſtantinople*. The ſpoils of *Jeruſalem* taken by *Titus*, and tranſported by *Genſericus* to *Africk*, are reſtored by *Juſtinian* to *Jeruſalem*. He converteth the Stews into a Covent of Penitents: he becomes an Eutychian, and is converted by Pope *Agapetus*. *Bavaria* is converted. *Juſtinians* [*Conſtit. novell.*] publiſhed.

Years of Christ.

540— In the East, *Belisarius* beateth the *Persian*; *Justinian* repaireth *Antioch*, and buildeth a Church there: *Belisarius* called out of *Persia* into *Italy*, where he raiseth *Totila* from the siege of *Hadruntium* in the West. *Totila* taketh *Rome*, which is by *Belisarius* retaken; with other towns in *Italy*. *Belisarius* recalled into *Persia*: a plot discovered against the Emperour; *Cosroes* upon the comming of *Belisarius* returns home from vexing the Empire: he is removed by bribes from *Edessa*. In Britain *Arthur*, and *Mordred* differ, and are slain; *Mordreds* two sons killed by *Constantine* the Usurper. *Northumberland* a kingdome, founded by *Ella* and *Ida*; it contained besides *Northumberland*. *York-shire*, *Lancashire*, *Durham*, *Cumberland*, and *Westmorland*. At *Rome*, *Basilius* was the last Consul. The *French* returning from *Spain* with much booty, bring with them the garment of *Vincentius* the Martyr, and build a Church for him at S. *Germans*.

In the Church, *Vigildus* sits as lawful Pope; he sends divers ships to *Rome* with corn, which *Totila* incercepteth. 3 Councels held within this Decad. An *Indian* king sends to *Justinian* for some to Baptise him and his people. The Feast of *Purification* ordained at *Constantinople*.

550— *Rome* and all *Italy* subdued by *Totila*, who also wastes *Sicily*: *Artabanes* expels the Goths, and recovers it. *Narses* kils *Totila* and recovers *Italy*; the *Persian* defeats the *Romans*, and is defeated by them: *Justinian* kils his Commanders for slaying the King of the *Lazii*. After *Totila* and *Thæias* his successor were killed, there were no more Gotish kings in *Italy*: but *Narses* governed it under the title of Duke, till being angred by *Justinians* wife, he called in the *Longobards*: the Goths had held *Italy* 70 years, the *Lombards* kept it 204 years, that part which is between the Alpes and Appenin In *France Clothayre* subdueth the *Saxons* and *Thuringi*; he pursueth *Cramnus* into *Britain*, and burns him.

In the Church, the 5 General Councel is held at *Constant.* for suppressing of Heresies, there were four more National Synods within this Decad: *Vigilius* opposeth the Councel of *Constant.* and is banished; at last submits and dyeth. *Pelagius* succeeds 4 years: The Western Bishops at *Aquileia* reject this fifth General Councel, which made a Schisme between the Eastern and Western Churches, almost 100 years. To the Bishop of *Constant.* is assigned the next place to the Pope. *Julius Halicarnassæus* taught that Christs body was impassible after his Conception: the *Armenians* are again converted to the Faith.

560— In the Empire to *Justinian* succeeded *Justin* second 11 years; he was a just Prince, in giving way that an exemplary punnishment should be inflicted on a great man, who had oppressed a poore woman; but he was unfortunate in his wars against *Persia*; so he fell into a Phrensie, and dyed. In France, a hill neer *Rohan* bellowed many dayes like an Oxe, and then brake asunder to the destruction of many Villages, People and Cattel. King *Clothaire* dying left his kingdom to his four sons. *Levigildus* king of the Visigoths in *Spain*, wins *Corduba* and other places: the Exarchat of *Ravenna* now began. *Alboinus* reigns in *Lombardy* 3 years.

In the Church, *John* 3. sate Pope 12 years: the Christians are persecuted by the Jews and Samaritans in *Palestina*, but are suppressed and punished by the Emperour. The Monothelites increase about this time. The *French* and *Spanish* Clergy differ about the time of Easter. The Church of *Armenia* is vexed by *Cosroes* the *Persian*. *Alboinus* king of *Lombardy*, murthers the Christians of *Italy* and *Sicily*; and he not long after is murthered. *Theodimiras* in Galicia king, of an Arian becomes a Catholike. 2 Councels held within this Decad.

570— In the East, *Martian* was forced to raise the siege from *Nisibis*. *Apamea* taken by the Persians. The *Avares* passe *Danubius* and doe much hurt: *Cosroes* defeated by *Justinian* the General. *Tyberius* is Emperour 7 years in Britain. *Vffa* founded the kingdom of the East-Angles, containing the Isle of *Ely*, *Norfolk*, *Suffolk* and *Cambridge*-shire. The *Lombards* enter *France*, and are repulsed: *Charibers* brethren dissent: Civil wars in France. *Levigild* winneth *Campanio*. *Alboin* the Lombard for making his wife drink in her fathers skul, is murthered; she is poysoned. *Clephes Alboins* son, reigned 1 year 6 moneths, and was slain: then *Lombardy* was governed 10 years by 30 Dukes. *Longinus* the Exarch lost his eyes at *Constantinople*, for which he killed two Patritians. The *Huns* expelled *Germany* by the French.

In

In the Church, *Bennet* is Pope 5 years; *Pelagius* 2. ſucceeded 12 years. He was the firſt elected Pope without the Emperours conſent, the City being beſieged by the *Lombards*. Two Councels held this Decad. — Years of Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, *Hormiſda Coſroes* his ſucceſſour, is beat by the Romans. *Mauritius* regaineth all from the Perſian that was loſt. *Tiberius* died of a ſurfeit of Gourds. *Mauritius* ſucceeded 16 years. The *Huns* take *Sirmium*: they are defeated by *Commentiolus*. *Philippicus* beats the Perſians twice; and *Germanus* once. *Malgo Conanus* King of Britain, a wicked Prince. *Crida* founded the kingdome of *Mercia*, containing 17 Shires, and half of *Hartford*-ſhire; after the death of *Carecaus*, loſt the Eaſt part of the kingdom: wars between the Scots and Picts. *Childebert* of France goeth againſt the *Lombards*, at the Emperours deſire; he is murthered. The kingdome of the *Sueves* in *Gallicia*, after 176 years poſſeſſion is annexed to the Viſigoths. The *Lombards* choſe themſelves a new King: *Liuigild* the Viſigoth kils his own ſon. *Recaredus* the firſt, becomes a Catholike, he was a good Prince. — 580

In the Church, *Gregory* is ſent to the Emperour, to excuſe the Election of *Pelagius*. 11 Councels aſſembled this Decad. The *Benedictines* expelled out of Mount *Caſſine* by the *Lombards*: They build a Covent at *Rome*. Chriſt's ſeamleſſe Coat was found by a Jew. The Pope and Biſhop of *Conſtantinople* differ about the title of Univerſal Biſhop.

Mauritius makes peace with *Coſroes*; the *Huns* invade *Thrace*. *Piſcus* defeats the *Huns*, and expels the *Sclavi* out of *Thrace*; he is removed and then reſtored: he beats the *Huns* again. *Coſroes* depoſed by his Subjects, and reſtored by *Mauritius*, and made his Guard of Chriſtians. *Edilwach* 1 Chriſtian king of the South-Saxons; a great famine in his time, ſo that people drowned themſelves. *Ethelfred* defeated the Britains, & ſlew 12000 Monks at *Bangor*. *Ethelbert* king of *Kent* converted by *Auguſtine*; he built S. *Pauls* in *London*. Scots and Britains have war with the Saxons and Picts. *Childebert* the French king, takes divers towns in *Italy*. *Agilulphus* the Lombard is baptiſed, and named *Paul*; he hath divers victories. *Chaganus* the *Hun*, invades the *Venetian* territories: He abuſeth *Tomilda* the widow, and then ſtaketh her for her treachery. — 590

In the Church, *Gregory* the great ſate 13 years; he was elected againſt his will: he ſtiles himſelf, Servant of Gods ſervants; he added to the Liturgie [*Give peace in our time O Lord*] and [*Lord have mercy on us*] and *Hallelujah*: He confirmed Prayer to Saints, Purgatory, and ſacrifices for the dead: He redeemed many Captives, and kept daily 3000 Monks. 12 Synods held within this Decad. *Gregory*, upon a great Plague, of which 800 died in an houre, inſtituted the ſeven-fold Letany or Proceſſion, called the Great, Roman, and Gregorian. 40 Virgins brake out of S. *Radegunds* Monaſtery, who expelled the Abbeſſe, and beat the Biſhops and Monks. *Gregory* reproves *John* of *Conſtantinople* for aſſuming the title of [Univerſal Biſhop.] By *Gregory* the Britains and Lombards are converted.

Mauritius will not redeem the Captives taken by *Chaganus*, therefore they are ſlain. *Phocas* is beaten for urging the Emperour againſt *Commentiolus*; this *Commentiolus* with *Priſcus* kill *Chaganus* his 2 ſons, 12000 *Huns*, and took 13000, at which *Mauritius* was offended: he was forewarned of his death: upon ſuſpition he impriſoneth *Philippicus*, becauſe his name began with *Ph.* but *Phocas* ſlew him with his two ſons, and ſo ſucceeded 8 years. *Theodoſius* ſon to *Mauritius* is ſlain, as he was going to *Coſroes*. *Narſes* ſuffers him ſelf to be beaten by *Coſroes*, with whom he joyns, then is reconciled to *Phocas*, and burnt at *Conſtantinople*. *Mauritius* his widow and daughters put to death. *Phocas* tyranniſeth over the Nobility; attempts to kill his ſon in law *Priſcus*; he is at laſt cut in peeces and burnt. In *France Pipin* is brought to *Clothayrs* Court by *Caroloman* his father. *Liuba* Prince of the Viſigoths is ſlain by *Victericus*. *Padua* burnt by the Lombards, upon which *Venice* increaſeth by new commers. — 600

In the Church, *Sabinian* was Pope 2 years: he hated *Gregory* and his writings. *Boniface* 3. ſucceeded 1 year. He appropriated the name Pope, by *Phocas* his means, to the Biſhop of *Rome*. *Boniface* 4 ſucceeds: He inſtituted the Feaſts of All-Souls, next day after All-Saints: He conſecrates the Pantheon to the Virgin *Mary* and all Martyrs. 4 Councels this Decad. The *Agnoetæ* held that Chriſts divinity was ignorant of the laſt day. The *Trithets* founded by *Johannes Grammaticus* or *Philoponus*, made three Natures or Eſſences in God. The *Jacobites* from *Jacob* the *Syrian*, were *Eutychians*. *Armenii* ſo called from their Countrey, held a Quaternity in God;

Made

Years of Christ.

made God passible, and denyed that Christ took his humanity from *Mary*. *Boniface* called Universal-Bishop by *Phocas*. The Emperor is in a dream accused of homicide, for not redeeming the Captives; therefore growes penitent. *Mahumet* begins to broach his doctrines. The Bishop of *Antioch* abused and burnt by the Jews, and the Christians persecuted by them.

610 In the East, *Heraclius* reigns 31 years: he makes his son *Heraclius* Emperor, and new-names him *Constantine*. The *Sclavi* plant themselves in *Dalmatia* and *Istria*, now called *Sclavonia* from them. *Palestine* and *Jerusalem* won by the Persians, who subdue *Egypt*, and take *Damascus* and *Carthage*. *Cosroes* refuseth to make peace with *Heraclius*, except he will reject Christ, and adore the Sun. The Emperor is betrayed by *Chaganus*, and defeated in *Thrace*. *Cosroes* is adored as a God. *Ebald* King of *Kent* becomes a Gentile, and marrieth his stepmother, but is reclaimed by the Archbishop. *Brunchild* in *France* sets the Kings at variance; at last being found guilty of the death of ten Kings, is tyed by the hairs of her head to a wild-horse and torn in peeces. *Victericus* the Visigoth is slain by his own people at a feast. *Sisebutus* his successor and brother converted 90000 Jewes: *Eleutherius* the Exarch stileth himself King of *Italy*; he is slain by his souldiers, and his head sent to *Constantinople*.

In the Church, *Deus-dedit* sate Pope 3 years: He ordained, that none should marry their godfathers or godmothers, and that none should answer for their own children in baptisme. *Boniface* 5. succeeded 8 years; He instituted Sanctuaries. Six Councels gathered this Decad. *Cosroes* carrieth the Crosse of Christ from *Jerusalem* to *Persia*. The Jewes flie out of *Spain* into *France*, where strict lawes are also made against them.

620 *Heraclius* robs the Churches, to pay the souldiers in his Persian expedition; He leaves the care of the City, and of his son, to the Patriarch, and a Patritian. Seventy Ambassadors betrayed by *Saes* the Persian, and sent in chains to *Cosroes*. The *Persians* defeated by the Emperor, and the Temple of the Sun overthrown. *Ninive* is taken, and *Cosroes* driven to *Seleucia*. *Sarbora* with his forces revolteth to *Heraclius*, who returneth with the Crosse and other spoils to *Jerusalem*, and driveth the Jewes out of the City. *Cosroes* slaieth his General *Saes*, because he did not catch *Heraclius*. *Siroes* the eldest son of *Cosroes*, kills all his brothers first, and then his father. About this time the Faith was imbraced in *Northumberland*, and the Archbishoprick of *York* founded. In *Scotland*, King *Ferquhard*, for Pelagianisme, is imprisoned by his Nobles, and then kills himself. In *France*, *Pipin Caroloman's* son is made by *Clotbaire* the 1 Duke of *Brabant*. *Mahumet* flieth to *Mecha* from his enemies; from this flight the *Turks* begin their Computation, called *Hegira*: He becomes of a Prophet a Robber, and takes *Mecha*.

In the Church, Pope *Honorius* sate 13 years: He built and repaired divers Churches; he covered S. *Peters* with brasse, taken from the Temple of *Romulus*. *Heraclius* the Emperor becomes a Monothelite; this heresie was condemned in the 6. General Councel held at *Constant*. The feast of the Exaltation of the Crosse, instituted *Sept.* 14. being now regained from the *Persian*.

630 The *Saracens* being denied their pay, and called Dogs by the Emperors Treasurer, they make war against *Mauritius*; they take *Gaza* and other places, with *Arabia*, and defeat the Emperor twice, whose garrison they drive out of *Damascus*; then they invade *Egypt*, and take *Jerusalem*, which the Emperor fearing, plundered it before: It was held by the *Saracens*; till *Godfrey* of *Bulloign's* time, 463 years. The *Saracens* take *Antioch*, *Edessa*, *Daras*, and all *Mesopotamia*. *Erpenwald* King of the East-Angles, slain by his people for being a Christian. *Dagobert* becomes sole Monarch of *France*; he founded a Colledge for Fair women, and beautifieth S. *Dennis*; he hath divers victories. *Rotharis* the Lombard gave liberty of conscience to Catholikes and Arians. *Isaacius* the Exarch robs the Popes treasure. *Mahumet* dieth. The *Persians* subdued by the *Saracens*.

In the Church, *Severinus*, *John* 4. *Theodorus* Popes, succeeded each other in a short time, *Martin* sate Pope 6 years. Six Councels were held within this Decad: in the 6. of *Toledo*,

Years of Chriſt.

Toledo, the Kings of *Spain* are ordered to ſwear, that none but Chriſtians ſhould be ſuffered to live within their Kingdomes; hereupon the Jewes are baniſhed. *Amandus* Biſhop of *Utricht* converts *Gaum* to the faith. The Chriſtians are permited to exerciſe their Religion at *Jeruſalem*. About this time, *England* was divided into Pariſhes.

In the Eaſt, *Conſtantine* 2. *Heraclius* his ſon, reigned 4 moneths, and is poyſoned by his ſtep-mother *Martina*, who with her ſon *Heracleon* reigned 4 moneths; ſhe loſt her tongue, and he his noſe, for the murther of *Conſtantine*, whoſe ſon *Conſtans* reigned 27 years. *Winceſter*-Church in *England*, and *Malmeſbury*-Abbey, founded by *Kenwalk*. *Frequhard* 2. King of *Scotland*, raviſheth his Daughter, and killed his Queen. *Dagobert* of *France* repairs *Utricht*, and beſtows it on the Biſhop of *Colen*. The Saracens take *Cæſarea* in *Paleſtine* after 7 years ſiege; they ſubdue all *Aſia*, 839 years after *Antiochus* the Great loſt it. *Haumar* builds a Temple in *Jeruſalem* for his Superſtition, in which he was murthered. *Hothman* his ſucceſſor makes *Africk* tributary, and conquereth *Cyprus*. —640

In the Church, Pope *Martin* for oppoſing the Monothelites, is ſent by the Exarch to *Conſtantinople*, where he is impriſoned, and then baniſhed to *Pontus*. 6 Councels held this Decad. The Emperor ſets out an Edict, forbidding Diſputations about one or two Wills in Chriſt. *Pyrrhus* the Monothelite, Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, recanteth and relapſeth.

The Emperor buyes two years peace of the Saracens for a great ſum; they take *Rhodes*, and defeat the Emperor in a Sea-fight, he eſcaped in a diſguiſe, then he beats the *Sclavi*. *Muhavias* the Saracen makes peace with the Emperor, and promiſeth a daily tribute. The Emperor kills his brother, and is affrighted in his ſleep about him. *Peada* of *Mercia* the firſt Chriſtian king there, laid the foundation of *Medhamſtead*, now *Peterburgh*, but was ſlain before he finiſhed it. *Sigebert* of *France* adopteth *Hildebert* ſon of *Grimoald*, but afterward having a ſon *Dagobert*, him *Grimoald* ſhut up in a Monaſtery in *Scotland*, and makes his ſon *Hildebert* King, whom *Clodoveius* impriſoneth, and makes his ſon *Childerick* King. The *Saracens* Fleet burnt by the Chriſtians. —650

In the Church, *Eugenius* 4. ſupplieth *Martins* place being abſent, he appointed Biſhops to have priſons of their own for Clergy-delinquents. Pope *Vitalianus* ſucceeds 14 years; he brought Organs into the Church. Four Councels held this Decad. The Roman Clergy ſollicited by the Emperor to ſubſcribe to the Type or Edict, but in vain. *Maximus* the Abbot, for refuſing is ſcourged, his tongue cut out, and his right hand cut off, and then baniſhed. *Cæſara* 9. of *Perſia*, or *Parthia* rather, is baptiſed at *Conſtantinople*; and by her means, her husband and people.

The *Saracens* make peace among themſelves, and refuſe to pay the Emperour his Tribute; he is defeated by the Lombards, and tranſporteth from *Rome* to *Sicily* all the braſſe-monuments; He intended to make *Syracuſe* the ſeat of the Empire. *Sapores* governour of *Armenia* rebelleth; but is killed by his horſe. The Emperour ſtayes at *Syracuſe*, and is ſlain. *Conſtantine* his ſon ſucceeds 17 yeers, who ſlew *Mezentius* his Competitor, and cuts off his two Brothers noſes, that they might not rule with him. *Wulphere* king of *Mercia* kills his 2 ſons with his own hands, for being baptiſed, but repents, and finiſheth *Peterborough*-Church, which his brother began. *Clovis* of France openeth S. *Dennis* Tomb, and upon this fals mad. *Gundebert* and *Pertharit* two brothers, ſtrive for *Lombardy*, but both are expelled by *Grimoald* D. of *Benevent*. The *Saracens* depopulate *Afric*. —660

In the Church *Adeodatus* ſate Pope 7 years. 5 Councels this Decad; one was held in *England*, about the difference between the Engliſh and Scots for obſerving the Feaſt of Eaſter. The Emperour robs the Church of *Rome*, and gives her priviledeges.

The *Saracens* take *Syracuſe*, and carry thence to *Alexandria* the braſſe-monuments, which *Conſtans* had taken out of *Rome*: they beſiege *Byzantium* 7 years together. 30000 *Saracens* ſlain, their Fleet fired by *Callinicus* with wild-fire. Peace granted to them for 30 years paying a tribute of Gold, Captives and Horſes. The *Bulgars* ſeat themſelves in the —670

Years of Christ.

the lower *Mœsia* called from them *Bulgaria*. The Emperour is forced to peace with them. *Bamba* the Visigoth overcommeth his Rebels: he is poysoned. *Childeric* the French king, for causing a Gentleman to be whipped, is slaine by him, with his Queen great with child. The *Saracens* invade *Spain*, and loose to *Bamba* 270 ships.

In the Church, *Donnus* the first sate Pope 2 years; he subjected the Church of *Ravenna* to *Rome*. *Agatho* succeeded 4 years. 5 Councels this Decad. Christs Napkin, 8 foot long, found by the Jewes, taken from them by the Saracens, and given to the Christians.

680— *Constantine* being dead, his son *Justinian* succeeds 10 years. Divers countries taken from the Saracens, who are forced to pay a yearly tribute of 1000 Crowns, with a horse and servant daily for 10 years. *Justinian* defeats the *Sclavi*, and is defeated by the *Bulgarians*. *Cadwallader* the last King of the *Britains*, becomes a Monk in *Rome*. K. *Maldwyn* of *Scotland* is strangled by his wife, and she is burnt. In King *Eugenius* the 6. his time, it rained blood through all *Britain* for seven dayes. In *France*, *Theodoric* of a Monk is made King; he persecutes his Bishops. The *Maronites* take from the *Saracens* all from *Taurus* to *Libanus*. The *Saracens* have civil-war among themselves.

In the Church, *Leo* 2. was Pope; He ordered the kissing of the *Pax*. To him succeeded *Bennet* 2. The Emperor gives way, that the Popes election stand good, without his or successors approbation. *John* 5. succeeds; After him is the 8. Schisme between *Peter* and *Theodore*, the one being chosen by the Exarch, the other by the people; a third is chosen, *Conon* by name; then follows the 9. Schisme between *Theodore* and *Paschal*. at last *Sergius* succeeds 14 years. 7 Councels held this Decad. All the *Manichees* in *Armenia* burnt by *Justinian*. *Sergius* appointed to be sung at the Communion, [*O Lamb of God, which takest away the sinnes of the World!*]

690— The *Saracens* offer satisfaction to the Emperor for wrongs done by them, which is rejected, and the peace broken. He hireth the *Sclavi*, and by them beats the *Saracens*, but 20000. of them revolt, the Emperor is thereby defeated, and kills the rest of them: upon this losse, *Sabatius* governour of *Armenia* delivers up the Country to the *Saracens*. *Leontius* being delivered by the Emperor out of prison, and made governor of *Greece*, takes *Iustinian*, cuts off his nose, and banisheth him into *Pontus*. This *Leontius* reigned 3 years; He expels by his brother *Iohn* the *Saracens* out of *Africk*, and he again expelled by them; He sets up *Tiberius Absimarus* 7 years; he cuts off *Leontius* his nose, and thrusts him into a Monastery. The Saracens in *Syria* defeated by the Romans. *Pipin* is made Major of the Palace over all *France*; he had *Charles Martel* by his Concubine. *Ina* King of the West-Saxons built S. *Andrews* Colledge in *Wells*, beautified *Glassenbury*, and was the first that paid Peter-pence. The Jewes conspire against the King of *Visigoths* in Spain; they are upon this made slaves. The Venetians choose them a Duke called *Paulus Lucius*, upon the Lombards incursions into their territories.

In the Church, Pope *Sergius* rejecteth the Councel of *Trullus*, for adding 103 Canons to the 6. General Councel; He is accused of whoredome, and strangely acquitted by the Bastards at 19 dayes old. 6 Councels called within this Decad. It was decreed that Easter-week, called *Septimana in albis*, should be kept holy; the Virgin *Mary's* Nativity is made a Feast.

700— The Saracens killed in *Armenia*. *Mahumet* reduceth again the Country into obedience 12000 Saracens killed in *Cilicia*. *Philippicus* is banished, for dreaming he should be Emperor. *Iustinian* is restored again to the Empire by the Bulgarians, 8 years; He hangeth *Abismarus*, *Heraclius*, and *Leontius*; He breaks league with the Bulgarians, and is beaten by them. *Offa* King of the East-Saxons, enlarged *Westminster*-Church; He with *Kenred* King of *Mercia*, went to *Rome* and became Monks. *Eugenius* the 7. of *Scotland* lost his Queen by two Rebels who entred his chamber, and missing him, killed her great with child. The *Normans* make the first onset upon *France*, and do much mischief on the Coast. *Aripert* invades *Lombardy*, and doth many cruel acts; the *Saracens* invade *Spain*, and do much hurt. *Cracus* Prince of *Poland* expels the Franconians out of his dominion, builds *Cracovia*, and makes it his chief residence: He destroyed a mischievous Monster,

Years of Chriſt.

Monſter, by flinging into its cave a Calfs-skin ſtufft with brimſtone, pitch and nitre, which he devoured, and ſo dyed.

In the Church ſate *John* the 6. 3 years; He repaired Churches, and redeemed Captives; upon his intreaty, *Giſulphus* D. of *Benevent* gave off plundring of *Campania*. *Aripert* the *Lombard* beſtoweth the Cottian Alpes on the Church: This was the firſt Province the Pope poſſeſſed. *John* the 7. ſucceeds 3 years; He built our Ladies Chappel in St. *Peters* Church: *Zozimus* ſucceeded 20 dayes, then *Conſtantine* 7 years; the Emperour met him at *Nice*, and kiſſed his feet. *Callinicus*, Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, had his eyes put out, and baniſhed to *Rome*: The Emperour could not procure the Pope to confirm the Councel of *Trullus*. *Fœlix* Biſhop of *Ravenna*, loſt his eyes, and is baniſhed to *Pontus* for refuſing to pay his tax due to the Pope at his Conſecration: The Pope freeth *Papia* from *Millans* juriſdiction.

Juſtinian ſends an Army againſt *Cherſoneſus*, which killed multitudes, roſted the Nobles upon ſpits, & 73000. children were drowned: The *Cherſoneſians* at this proclaim *Philippicus* Emperour 1 year, who beheaded *Juſtinian*, and cut the throat of his ſon *Tiberius*. *Thrace* is waſted by the Bulgarians: *Philippicus* is taken, and his eyes put out: *Anaſtaſius Artemius* ſucceeds 2 years. The *Saracens* ſend a Fleet againſt *Conſtantinople*. A mutiny in *Phœnicia* in the Emperours Army, in which the General is killed, and one *Theodoſius* choſen, who beſiegeth *Conſtantinople*, takes *Anaſtaſius*, and thruſts him into a Monaſtery; his General *Leo Iſaurus* is choſen 24 years. *Theodoſius*, to redeem his ſon, reſigneth and becomes a Prieſt. *Solyman* beſiegeth *Conſtantinople*, where he dyeth, with moſt of his Army. *Omar* reneweth the ſiege, and departeth with loſs. *Conſtantine Copronymus* born. The Archbiſhop of *Theſſalonica* and the Bulgars ſet up *Anaſtaſius* again, but the Authors are executed. The *French* beat the *Goths* quite out of *France*. *Charles Martel*, heir to *Pipin*, doth great feats. The *Danes* waſte *Herefordſhire*. *Ethelbald* King of *Mercia* builds *Crowland* Abbey. *Mordacus* King of Scots, built many Churches and Abbeys. *Roderick* the Viſigoth, is killed with his Army by the *Saracens*, who makes *Corduba* the ſeat of their Kingdome. The *Goths* retire into *Cantabria*. *Pelagius* defeateth the Moors, and is made King of *Oviedo*. *Aripert* of *Lombardy* is drowned with his Treaſure in the River *Papia*. A great diſſention falls out between the Biſhops of *Aquileia* and *Grada*. The *Saracens* waſte and take much of the Empire. —710

In the Church, *Gregory* the 2. ſate Pope 17 years; He redeems *Cumæ* from the Duke of *Benevent*: Two Councels held this Decad. *Omar* perſecuteth the Chriſtians. *Germany* converted by *Boniface*. *Radboldus* D. of *Friſia* will rather go to Hell with many, then to Heaven with a few. *John*, a blind Monk, made Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*, becauſe he foretold that *Philippicus* ſhould be Emperour.

Leo makes his ſon *Conſtantine* Emperour; from him all the Weſt falls off, for prohibiting Images; His Army alſo rebels. *Nice* in *Bitinia* beſieged by the *Saracens*. *Charles Martel* hath great Victories againſt the *Germans*, *Bavarians*, *Friſians*, and *Moors*. *Luitprand* the *Lombard*, takes *Ravenna* from the Exarch, and loſeth it. *Pane* the Exarch, and his ſon, are ſlain at *Rome*, for intending to kill the Pope. *Eutychius* the Eunuch was the laſt Exarch, for he was expelled afterward by *Luitprand:* The Exarchs had ruled in *Italy* under the Emperour 182 years. *Chaganus* defeats *Muſalmas* and his *Saracens*. —720

In the Church, Pope *Gregory* ſits, and is oftentimes attempted to be ſlain by the Emperours emiſſaries; At laſt he excommunicates the Emperour. The Jews are ſeduced by a falſe Meſſias. 3 Councels held this Decad all at *Rome*. The Jews great enemies to Images. *Leo*, upon hope of long life, pulls down Images, he was called therefore *Iconomachus*; His Edict againſt Images cauſeth much trouble; He burneth a great Library, and 12 Library-keepers in it; His Statues are overthrown, and *Conſtantinople* beſieged by the Greeks. The *Friſians* are converted. St. *Auſtins* bones redeemed from the *Saracens*, and tranſlated to *Papia*. *Franconia* and *Haſſia* converted by *Winifred*.

Years of Christ.

730 *Tiberius* the Uſurpers head is ſent by the Exarch from *Italy* to *Conſtantinople*. The *Saracens* plunder *Aſia*. One *Philippicus* ſcourged for abſolving Witches, who had killed ſome Infants. *Solyman* the Saracen General, takes many Towns and Captives from *Leo*. In *France*, *Charles* is victorious over the Moors and Goths. In *Spain*, *Alphonſus* King of *Leon* aſſumes the title of Catholique. *Rittogarus*, a German Prince, for being beaten by *Venda* daughter to *Cracus* of *Poland*, kills himſelf. The Venetians kill *Orſo* their Duke, and chooſe annual Magiſtrates. *Luitprand* the *Lombard*, and the Exarch, make league againſt the Pope.

In the Church, *Gregory* the 3. ſate 11 years; His Revenues in *Sicily* and *Calabria* amounting yearly to 8000 l. are detained by the Emperour. *Luitprand* beſiegeth *Rome*, and takes four Cities from the Pope; the Emperour will not be perſwaded by the Pope and Italians to reſtore Images. One Councel held at *Rome* this Decad. *Boniface* founded the Biſhopricks of *Ratisbone* and *Saltzburg*.

740 *Copronimus* ſucceeds *Leo* 34 years; he takes *Ardavaſtus* the Uſurper with his two ſons, and puts out their eyes, and cauſeth *Anaſtaſius* the Patriarch to be led back upon an Aſſe through *Conſtantinople*, for aiding him. A great earth-quake in *Syria*, and a Plague in *Conſtantinople*. The Emperours Fleet beats the Ægyptian Moores, and the Saracens of *Cyprus*. *Charls* dieth in *France*, and leaveth four ſons; the two elder *Caroloman* and *Pipin* ſubdue the *Gaſcoins*, *Almains* and *Saxons*. *Pipin* becomes Major of the Palace alone. *Luitprand* the Lombard recovers *Spoletum* and *Benevent* by the Popes aide; therefore reſtores him four Cities, with the Patrimony of *Ancona*, *Sabina*, and *Narne*. *Rachiſius* the Lombard breaks the peace made with the Pope; upon which he with his Queen enters a Monaſtery. The *Polonians* chooſe *Palatius* again: *Venda* drowns her ſelf out of ſuperſtition. The *Huns* or *Hungarians* tranſplant themſelves out of *Scythia* into *Panonia*. *Soloman* the Saracen rebelleth, and is executed. The Venetian chooſe Dukes again. *Theodat Orſo*'s ſon is elected.

In the Church, *Zachary* ſate 10 years; He compoſeth the diſtractions of Italy. 7 Councels were called in this Decad. The Chriſtians of *Antioch* are permitted by the Saracens to chooſe them a Patriarch after 40 years vacancy. *Peter* Biſhop of *Damaſcus* hath his tongue cut out by the Saracens, for refuting Infidels. The Pope would not have the Childe in *Bavaria* baptiſed with falſe Latine, to be rebaptiſed, being no hereſie. *Gervilius* Biſhop of *Mentz*, for murther, hawking, and hunting, is depoſed. The *Pater Noſter* and *Creed* ordered to be read in Engliſh, at *Cliffe*-Councel.

750 *Conſtantine* makes his ſon *Leo* Emperour: the Exarchat fals to the Lombards poſſeſſion. *Conſtantinople* repeopled by *Armenians*. *Conſtantine* ſends Organs and other Preſents to *Pipin*. He expells the Sclavi out Macedonia, but is beaten by the Bulgarians. *Chilperick* the French King, and laſt of the *Merovinges*, is thruſt by *Pipin* into a Monaſtery, who reigns alone 17 years: he with his ſons *Caroloman* and *Charls* are anointed by the Pope at *Paris*. *Pipin* forceth *Aiſtulphus* the Lombard to make reſtitution to the Pope, and to buy his own Peace: He ſubdueth *Saxony*: *Vaifarius* Duke of *Aquitain* forced to make peace with *Pipin*. *Alphonſus* of Spain recovers *Navar*, and much of *Portugal*, and rooteth out Arianiſme. *Aiſtulphus* the Lombard having taken *Ravenna* claimeth juriſdiction over *Rome*; but *Pipin* helps the Pope. *Aiſtulphus* breaks his neck in hunting. *Deſiderius* made King who beſtows *Ferrara* and other places on the Pope. *Poland* is invaded by the *Moravians* and *Panonians*. The *Venetians* to curb the Dukes power, joyn two Tribunes to govern with him. *Selencia* is repaired by the Saracens, and called *Bagdet*. *Habdel* the Saracen oppreſſeth the Chriſtians, the Turks waſte *Armenia* and *Perſia*.

In the Church, *Stephen* 2. was Pope but 8 dayes. *Stephen* 3. ſucceeded 5 years. He was the firſt Pope that was carried on mens ſhoulders. *Pipin* beſtows on him the Exarch, and the Country about *Luna*, with *Corſica*, *Soranum*, *Parma*, *Rhegium*, *Mantua*, *Spoletum* and *Benneventium*. *Paul* ſucceeded 10 years; he is oppoſed by *Theophilact* Antipope, which made the tenth ſchiſme. *Paul* built a Monaſtery in *Rome*, where the Greek-Pſalms were to be ſung. In this Decad were held two Councels. *Boniface* is ſlain by the Friſians who were revolted from Chriſt. The Turks receive *Mahumets* Alcaron.

Years of Chriſt.

Conſtantine defeats the Bulgarians divers times, but loſt his Fleet: He beheaded the Patriarch: he makes *Nicephorus* and *Chriſtopher* his ſons Cæſars. *Leo* marrieth *Irene* the Athenian. *Ferguſius* of Scotland ſtrangled by the Queen, which fact ſhe confeſſed, becauſe he preferred Concubines to her, and ſo ſtabs her ſelf before the people. *Pipin* ſubdueth all *Aquitain*, and inſtituteth the Parliament of *Paris*. *Charls* the Great ſucceeded in France, Burgundy, and Aquitain. *Soyſſons* left to *Caraloman*. The Danes deſcended of the *Cimbri*, being expelled *Scythia*, place themſelves in that Cherſoneſe called *Cimbrick* from them. The Venetians depoſe their Duke *Monegario*, and put out his eyes for tyranniſing.

In the Church, a ſchiſme which is the 11. is made by *Philip* a Prieſt, but he is caſt out of the Lateran the fifth day, and *Stephen* the 4. choſen, who ſate 4 years. This Decad produced 3 Councels: The Emperour aſſembleth all the Aſian Monks at *Epheſus*, commanding them either to marry, or loſe their eyes, and to be baniſhed into *Cyprus*: He expels the Monks, and ſels their Monaſteries.

The Saracens invade the Empire, and defeat the Emperours army in *Iſauria*. The Bulgarians break the peace, which coſt the lives of 12000 of their men. *Leo* the 4. ſucceedeth Emperour 5 years: His brother *Nicephorus* for aſpiring is baniſhed. *Telerick* king of Bulgaria expelled by his ſubjects; is baptiſed in *Conſtantinople*, and made a Patritian. 770
five of the Saracens Amira's killed in *Syria* by *Leo*'s army. By putting the cold Crown kept in the Temple on his head, he ſickned and died. *Conſtantine* 7 ſucceedeth with *Irene* 17 years. *Mac-Donald* ſeiſeth on the *Hebudes*; he with the other rebels are killed by *Argiles* forces. *Charls* taketh *Deſiderius* the Lombard, brings him into France, and reſtores all except Lombardy to the Pope. *Charls* beats the Saxons, and forceth them to be Chriſtians. He expells the Weſtphalians out of his Kingdome, and takes Navarre, kils two Saracen Kings, inſtituteth the 12 Peers of France. *Godfrey* King of Denmark ſubdueth the Saxons, who are enjoyned to preſent every new King with 100 white-horſes. The Spaniards are forced by the Saracens to pay a yearly tribute of Chriſtian Virgins. *Leſcus* 2. choſen King of Poland, for detecting the fraud of one *Leſcus*, who uſed ſiniſtrous means to be Prince.

In the Church, *Adrian* was Pope 24 years; he firſt ſealed with Lead. *Deſiderius* makes a lay-man ArchBiſhop of *Ravenna*, whom the Pope expels. *Deſiderius* for oppreſſing the Pope, is ſubdued by *Charls*. The title of Patritians in *Rome* aboliſhed by Pope *Adrian*. 9 Councels aſſembled this Decad. *Habdalla* the Saracen, commands all Chriſtians and Jews to be marked in their hands: The Pope and Councel gave full power to *Charls* and his ſucceſſors to chooſe the Pope.

A Sedition raiſed at *Conſtantinople*, in behalf of *Nicephorus*. *Charls* is ſent to by *Irene*, for 780
a match between his daughter and her ſon: Shee recovereth the booty from the *Sclavi*. *Irenes* forces defeated in Italy by the French, and break off the marriage of her ſon, whom ſhe married to a mean *Armenian* called *Mary*. The Danes invade England; a League made between France and Scotland. The Scots and Iriſh make war upon each other. *Pipin* ſon to King *Charls* is crowned at *Rome*, King of Italy. The Saxons rebell, and are ſubdued: they are tranſplanted into Brabant and Flanders. The Dukes of Benevent and Bavaria rebel, and are ſubdued. *Charls* ſubdueth the Sclavonians. *Ethelburga* daughter to *Offa* the Saxon, poyſoned her husband unwittingly, and fled into France, where ſhe is thruſt into a Monaſtery. *Irene* forced by the Saracens to pay tribute; her Fleet is ſurpriſed by them.

In the Church, Pope *Adrian* is god-father to *Pipin* *Charls* his ſon: he repairs Churches, and feeds 100 people daily in the Lateran. In this Decad were 5 Councels; one whereof was the 2. of *Nice*, or 8. General of 350 Biſhops, for reſtoring Images. In *Thrace*, was digged out of a wall a ſtone-Coffin, with this inſcription, *Chriſt ſhall be born of the Virgin Mary*, &c. *Charls* founded the Biſhoprick of *Breme*. A Councel at *Conſtantinople*, diſturbed by the people, about Images.

Conſtantine undertakes the government, and depoſeth his mother, and admits her again 790
upon entreaty; he is defeated by the Bulgarians: he puts out the eyes of *Nicephorus*, *Chriſtopher*, and his Uncle *Nicetas*: Upon this, the Armenian Legions rebell: He put away his wife, and marrieth her maid: he overcomes the Saracens, and ſpoiles the Bulgarian Country. *Irene* puts out his eyes, the ſame day he ſo ſerved his Uncle.

Years of Christ.

He dieth shortly after, and she reigns alone: She extinguished the line of *Leo Isauricus*, (About this time, the Sun darkned 17 dayes together) She makes peace with *Charles*, and puts out the eyes of *Copronymus* his son. Intercourse prohibited between *Charles* and *Offa's* subjects. The *Danes* waste *England* again. *Egbert* King of the West-Saxons becomes sole Monarch of *England*. *Charles* defeats the Hungarians and Saxons again; His son *Pipin* rebelleth, and is put into a Monastery. *Charles* builds a Bridge at *Mentz* over the *Rhine*; he kills 4000 rebellious Saxons. *Alphonsus* in *Spain* kills 70000 Moors, and frees the Land of the tribute of Virgins: He takes *Lisbon* from them, and makes a League with *Charles*. S. *James* is made Patron of *Spain*, whose Body was now found, and a Church built by *Alphonsus* for it. He sends rich Presents to *Charles*, who takes *Buda* in *Hungary*.

In the Church, *Adrian* is yet Pope: He repairs the walls of *Rome* ruined by the *Tiber*. To him succeeds *Leo* 3. 21 years. 4 Synods held within this Decad. The Councel of *Frankfort* condemns the 2. Council of *Nice*. *Charles* founded the Archbishoprick of *Hamburgh*, which afterward was translated to *Breme*. The Patriarch of *Constantinople* is excommunicated by the Abbot, for consenting to the Emperors second marriage, his first wife yet living.

800— In the East, *Irene* and *Charles* treat about a marriage; mean while *Nicephorus* banisheth her, and reigns 8 years, he makes peace with *Charles*; *Sicily* and a part of *Italy* are reserved for the Greek Empire. *Bardanes* is proclaimed Emperor, but he waves it, and enters into a Covent: *Nicephorus* puts out his eyes, and makes his own son *Stauratius* Emperor; He is beat by the Saracens, and forced to pay an annual tribute; He tyrannizeth, and loseth *Sardis* with much treasure, and 6000 Greeks to the Bulgarians. In the West, *Charlemain* is crowned Emperor by Pope *Leo*; He reigned 14 years; He repaireth *Florence*, punisheth the plotters against the Pope, takes *Nuceria* and other places from the Greeks, transplants the Saxons into *France*, and gives their lands to the Vandals, he wasts *Bohemia*, kils *Lescus* the Polonian; he builds *Dresda* & *Numberg*; then by will leaves *Italy* to *Pipin*, *France* to *Lewis*, *Saxony* and the rest to *Charles*. The Spanish Moors waste *Sardinia* and *Corsica*. *Egbert* the English Monarch expels *Balred* of *Kent*, which he makes a Province, and calls the whole Island by the name of *England*. The *Scots* begin to weare S. *Andrews* Crosse in their Banners, upon the Victory they had against *Athelstane* of *Northumberland*, which S. *Andrew* appearing promised to them. *Frisia* is subdued by the *Danes*. The Earldome of *Arragon* by marriage falls to *Garzias* King of *Navarre*. *Mauritius* Duke of *Venice*, flung the Bishop of *Grada* from an high tower, for reproving him of his lusts; upon this flieth with his father. Quarrels between the *Herocleans* and *Aquileians*. The *Venetians* side with the *Moors* against *Pipin*. The *Saracens* divide themselves into six Principalities.

In the Church, Pope *Leo* sits again, after he had been beaten and imprisoned upon false crimes, of which he cleares himself in a Synod at *Rome*. 4 Councels were held in this Decad. *Paulus Diaconus* was the first that composed Postils for the year, at the command of *Charles*.

810— In the East, *Nicephorus* and most of the Nobility slain by *Crumnus* the Bulgarian. *Stauratius* after two moneths is thrust into a Covent by *Michael Curopulata*. *Thrace* and *Macedon* wasted by the Bulgarians; the Saracens defeated by *Leo* the Generall, who succeeded Emperor 7 years, *Michael* being retired into a Monastery, whose sons were gelded by *Leo*, and banished with their mother; He beats the Bulgarians into a peace. *Michael* is condemned to be burnt for conspiring against *Leo*, but is reprieved till after Christmasse, in the interim *Leo* is killed in the Temple. In the West, *Pipin* dieth at *Ravenna*, he left one son; his eldest brother *Charles* dieth issueless. *Pipins* son *Bernard* is made King of *Italy*. *Charlemain*, a little before his death, crowns his son *Lewis* Emperor; then dieth aged 72 years. His son *Lewis*, called the Pious, succeeded 27 years; He makes *Lotharius* King of *France*, and his Colleague. *Pipin* is made King of *Aquitain*, and *Lewis* King of *Bavaria*. *Bernard Pipin's* son rebelleth, with divers Bishops. *Bernard* dieth, and leaves three sons. The Bridge at *Mentz* burnt in three houres, which was not built in ten years. *Lewis* subdueth the *Vandals*. In *Spain*, the *Moors* rebell, and are slain by *Alphonso*. *Popielus* Prince of *Poland* had one of his sons devoured by Rats, as he used in his

his anger to wiſh. *Siward* and *Ringo* ſtriving for the Kingdome of *Denmark*, are both ſlain in battel. The *Norwegians* infeſt the Daniſh coaſt. *Gaunt*-Monaſtery burnt by accident. Years of Chriſt.

In the Church, *Steven* 5. ſate 7 moneths: To him ſucceeded *Paſchalis* 1. 7 yeares; he redeemed Captives, and built Churches. 10 Councels were held in this Decad. *Herbert* a Biſhop is ſent to the King of *Swevia*, to convert his people. St. *James* of *Compoſtella* began about this time to be famous for miracles *Leo* an enemy to Images. The Romans are permitted bythe Emperor to chooſe their own Popes.

In the Eaſt, *Michael Balbus* is releaſed, and reigneth 8 years: He geldeth *Leo's* ſons. One *Thomas* aſpires at the Empire, beſiegeth *Conſtantinople*, but is defeated, taken and executed, with his ſon. The *Moors* do much hurt by ſea; they build *Candy* in *Crete*; they are there overcome by the Imperialiſts, who ſhortly after in their ſecurity are ſlain by the *Moors*. *Euthemius* Governor of *Sicily* revolteth to the *Moors*, but he is killed at *Syracuſe*. To *Michael* ſucceeded his ſon *Theophilus* 12 years: He puts to death the murtherers of *Leo*; He makes his ſubjects to weare ſhort haire, becauſe his were thin. In the Weſt, *Lewis* warreth againſt *Hungary*; *Lotharius* is crowned Emperor at *Rome*; *Afric* waſted by the Imperial forces; A new plot detected againſt the Emperor. About this time it rained Corn in *Gaſcoign*. In *Spain*, the *Moors* are beaten; The country is waſted by the *Normans*. The *Danes* commit pyracies, at far as *Conſtantinople*. *Harold* King of *Denmark*, being expelled, is baptiſed with his brother *Ericus*, at *Mentz*. St. *Marks* Body is brought from *Alexandria* to *Venice*, which is laid in the Caſtle-chappel, and a Church erected to it. The *Saracens* invade *Paleſtine*, and waſte *Sicily*. The Monaſtery of *Gaunt* rebuilt by the Abbot. —820

In the Church, *Eugenius* 2. ſate 3 years. A 12. Schiſme is made by *Ziſinius* the Antipope. *Valentine* ſucceeded 40 dayes. Then *Gregory* 4. 17 yeares. 8 Councels held in this Decad. The Greek Emperor gives way to erect Images without the City, but not within. *Ebbo* Biſhop of *Rhemes* ſent by the Pope to convert the Danes. At *Acon* Organs are uſed, the firſt in the Weſtern Church. *Denmark* and *Swedeland* converted.

In the Eaſt, *Theophilus* defeats the Saracens; His ſon-in-law *Alexius* fights ſucceſſefully againſt the Lombards. The Emperor was almoſt ſurpriſed by the Saracens, who take many Cities from the Empire; they are beaten out of *Aſia* by *Manuel* the Emperors Generall. In the Weſt, *Lewis* pardoneth the Conſpirators; his Empreſſe falſly accuſed is reſtored to his bed. *Pipin* upon his ſecond rebellion is committed to *Trevers*, whence he eſcapeth. The Emperors ſons take arms againſt him. The Pope with his Biſhops baniſh the Empreſſe, and impriſon the Emperor; who again by the German Peers is reſtored, his wife recalled, and his ſons pardoned. *Friſia* invaded by the *Normans*, and *Antwerp* burnt by them. *Lotharius* takes ſome places in *Italy* from the Pope. *Lewis* makes his ſon *Charles* King of *Normandy*. *Pipin* dieth, and the Kingdome of *Aquitain* is divided between *Lotharius* and *Charles*. *Lewis* of *Bavaria* rebells againſt his father. The *Danes* defeat *Egbert* King of *England*, and are defeated by him; At *Portſmouth* they beat, at *Southampton* are beaten. About this time ended the *Picts* Kingdom, being utterly deſtroyed by the *Scots*. The Biſhops of *Lions* and *Vienne* excommunicate *Lewis* for marrying his Kinſwoman: The Biſhop of *Utricht* ſlain by her command, for threatening to excommunicate *Lewis*. *Ordonius* the Spaniſh King takes *Cauria* and *Salmantica*, and kills the *Moors*, who in battel ſlew *Sancho* King of *Navar*. *Regner* the Dane taken by *Hella* King of *Ireland*, and ſtung to death with ſerpents. *Ericus* King of *Denmark*, of a Perſecutor becomes a Convert. *John* Duke of *Venice* forced to flie into *France*, from whence returning is put into a Monaſtery. —830

In the Church, Pope *Gregory* 4. inſtituteth the Feaſt of the *Holy-Trinity*; he calls the Feaſt of *All-Martyrs*, *All-Saints*. 4 Councels held within this Decad. The Feaſt of *All-Saints* tranſlated from the 12. of *May* to the 1. of *November*. *S. Bartholmew's* Bones drowned in the Indian ſea, are brought from *Lipara* to *Benevent*.

In

Years of Christ.

840— In the East, *Theophilus* taketh *Sosopetra* the Saracens chief City. The Persians, for want of pay, salute *Theophilus* Emperor, who is taken and imprisoned, and at last executed. To *Theophilus* succeeds his son *Michael* 25 years. The Bulgarian King is expelled by his subjects, for being a Christian: the Emperor gives him another country. In the West, *Lewis* dieth; *Lotharius* succeeds 15 years. *Pipin* obtains *Normandy*. *Lotharius* is twice defeated by his brothers: The difference is referred to 120 Noblemen, who award to *Lotharius*, *Italy*, a part of *France*, *Burgundy*, and *Austria*, which from him was called *Lotharingia*. *Lewis* King of *Germany* beats the *Vandals*. *Bononia* rased by the Emperor, for abusing his Son. The *Bohemians* rebell, and are subdued by the Emperor, whose forces are at last mastered by them. The *English* defeat the *Danes*. *Kenneth* the Scots King, removes the Marble-stone (brought from *Spain* to *Ireland*, and thence to *Scotland*) out of *Argile* into *Scone*, which he inclosed in a Woodden-Chair, wherein the Scots Kings were crowned. In *France*, *Charles* the Bald reigns. The *Normans* enter *France* as far as *Paris*. *Alphonsus* 3. of *Spain*, called the Great, makes S. *James*-Church of stone, which before was earth; He wasteth the *Moors* Country. The *Normans* loose 70 ships at *Gallecia*. *Toledo* taken by the *Moors*. *Popielus* Prince of *Poland*, with his wife and children devoured by Rats, which grew out of the Bodies they had murthered. The Venetian ships taken and sunk by the Saracens, who waste *Dalmatia*, and take *Ancona*; They fire also the Suburbs of *Rome*, and rob the Churches of St. *Peter* and St. *Paul*.

In the Church, *Sergius* 2 was Pope 3 years: He is opposed by *John* a Deacon, which made the 13. Schisme. *Sergius* (at first) was called *Os Porci*. He built the Castle of S. *Angelo*. *Leo* 4. succeeded 8 years; He built a new City begun by *Sergius*, and calls it *Leonina*; He with the Neapolitans beats the Saracens at sea. 7 Councels assembled this Decad. The Romans refuse to confirm *Leo* Pope, without the Emperor. *John* the Patriarch deposed, for opposing Images.

850— In the East, *Bardas* the Emperors Uncle made him kill his Tutor *Theoditus*, because he was not advanced. *Michael* sends his mother and sisters into a Monastery: He is beaten by the Saracens at *Samosata*, and beaten again by *Amer* the Saracen in the West. The Saracens are expelled *Benevent* by *Lewis*, who is made Emperor by *Lotharius*, and he enters a Monastery. *Lewis* reigned 18 years: He makes the *Dalmatians* pay Tribute; He warreth against the *Sclavi*, *Vandals*, and *Sorab*. He wins most of *France*. The *Danes* enter the *Thames*, plunder *Canterbury* and *London*, but are defeated in *Surry*. The *Scots* beat the *English*, and are beaten by them. The *Picts* passe into *Denmark* and *Norway*. In *France*, *Pipin* escaping out of his Monastery, is taken and imprisoned. The *Normans* take *Tours* and *Anjou*, and upon civil-wars at home, return. In *Spain*, *Toledo* and *Corduba* rebell. *Alphonsus* raiseth the *Moors* from the siege of *Conimbria*. The *Danes* invade *Holland*. *Lotharius* confirms the Venetian priviledges.

In the Church, *Leo* made many Collects. He builds *Centum-cellæ*, or *Civita-Vecchia*, spoiled by the Saracens, and calls it *Leopolis*. To him succeeded *John* 8. who, some say, was a woman, others deny it. *Bennet* 3. succeeded 2 years; opposed by *Anastasius*, in the 14. Schisme. *Nicholaus* 1. succeeds 9 years: He hid himself, that he might not be chosen. This Decad afforded 9 Councels. The *Manichees* are punished by *Theodora* in the East.

860— In the East, *Constantinople* is besieged by the *Russians*. *Bardas*, by *Michaels* negligence, made Cæsar: he favoured Learning. The Church of *Sophia* burnt. *Bardas* killed by *Basilius*, who is made Cæsar; he kills *Michael*, and reigns 19 years; he caused restitution to be made of half, which *Michael* had spent on his Flatterers; he raiseth the Saracens from *Racusa*, and takes *Samosata* from them, and helpeth *Lewis* against them. In the West, *Caroloman* rebels against his father *Lewis* the Emperor, forceth the Sclavi to peace; he expels the Saracens out of *Campania* into *Calabria*; he is reconciled to his brother *Charles*. *Lotharius* forsakes his Concubine, and takes his Wife again. *Lambert* Duke of *Spoletum* loseth his Dutchy for plundring *Rome*. The Saracens lose many places to the Western Princes. *Bari* is taken, and in it the Saracen-Sultan. *Ethelred* the English King defeated the *Danes* nine times; slew nine of their Earls, and one of their Kings. The *Danes* challenge *Pictland*, and commit great outrages in *Fife*. *Thierry* son to *Sigebert* Duke

Years of Chriſt.

Duke of *Aquitaine* is made the firſt Earle of *Holland* by the French King *Charles*. The Normans waſte *Anjou* and other places. *Charls* invadeth *Lotharius* his kingdome, and is crowned at *Mentz*, and divides the Kingdome with *Lewis* King of *Germany*: the Saracens are expelled *Grada*, by the Venetians. *Baldwin* of Flanders reconciled to *Charls* the Bald. *Thierry* of *Holland*, ſubdueth his rebellious people, and the Friſlanders; obtaineth *Zealand*, and drives the Danes out of *Holland*.

In the Church, *Nicolaus* ſits yet; he oppoſed the Synod of *Conſtantinople*, and excommunicates *Photius* the Patriarch, and is excommunicated by him; and forceth *Lotharius* to take his wife again. *Hadrian* ſucceeds 4 years: He threatneth *Charls* and *Lewis* for invading the kingdome of *Lorrain*. 16 Councels held this Decad; one whereof was the eighth General Councel of *Conſtantinople*, againſt *Photius*. The *Sclavi* in *Moravia* receive the Goſpel: the Arch-Biſhop of *Colen* and *Trevers* depoſed for cauſing *Lotharius* to repudiate his wife. *Lotharius* denies the Popes power in Temporals. The King of *Bulgaria* becomes a Monk, and puts out the eyes of his Apoſtate ſon. The *Huns* and *Ruſſians* converted: The Pope in the Synod of *Conſtantinople* obtaineth juriſdiction over the Bulgarians; but they fell afterward to the Greek Church.

In the Eaſt, *Baſilius* refuſeth to acknowledge *Lewis* Emperour: therefore the match between *Conſtantine* his ſon and *Lewis* his daughter is broken off. *Baſilius* takes *Cæſarea* in Cappadocia, with much booty. The Saracens invade the Empire, but are expelled: They of *Tharſus* and *Cilicia* are beaten at Sea. In the Weſt, *Lewis* is crowned King of *Lorrain* at *Rome*, and is taken priſoner by *Aldegiſus* D. of *Benevent*. *Lewis* warreth againſt the Bohemians, who are forced to pay Tribute. The Emperour dieth at *Millan*; and *Charls* the *Bald* crowned at *Rome*. 2 years after, *Lewis* of *Germany* dieth; his three ſons divide his lands. The Emperour is defeated for incroaching on them: he makes *Boſo* King of *Arles*, and is poyſoned by a Jew. *Lewis* the Stammerer ſucceeds 18 months; he dyeth. *Caroloman* the next heir reſigns (being paralitick) to *Charls* the Groſſe 8 years, ſo the Empire is tranſlated from the Weſtern *French* to the Eaſtern. *Edmunds-bury* in *England* built to the memory of *Edmund* the Martyr. Peace made between the Danes and Engliſh. *Denewolf* of a Cow-heard is made Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, for entertaining King *Elfred* in his flight from the Danes: the Scots beat the Danes, and are beaten by them. In *France*, *Caralomans* eyes are put out for rebelling: a great Plague of Locuſts, and Dearth enſueth. Peace in Spain between *Alphonſus* and the Moores. Moſt part of England ſubdued by the *Danes*. *Canutus* their king is baptized in England: the Normans defeated in Friſia: the Saracens are beaten by the Perſians; they force the Pope to pay tribute, they take *Syracuſa*.

—870

In the Church, *John* 8. ſate ten years; he payes to the Saracens 25000 crowns, to leave his territories: He is impriſoned by the D. of *Spoletum*, whom upon his eſcape to France, he excommunicated. 7 Councels held this Decad. Bels firſt uſed in the Greek Church; upon the ſending of twelve Bels to *Baſilius* the Emperour, by *Urſo* D. of *Venice*. *Photius* the Patriarch is reſtored by a Synod of *Conſtantinople*.

In the Eaſt, *Baſilius* impriſoneth his ſon *Leo*, for wearing a Dagger; but is freed by ſome words uttered by a Parrot: *Baſilius* being wounded by a Stag, dieth. *Leo* 6 ſuccedeth 25 years; he loſeth much by the Lombards, and his forces in *Macedonia* are defeated by the Bulgarians, who deſire peace, upon the comming of the *Hungarians* to aide the Emperour. In the Weſt, *Charls* the Emperour, with *Lewis* king of Germany, beſiege *Vienna*, and drive *Boſo* out of *France*. *Lewis* robs the Church of *Mentz*, to pay the *Normans*, who had invaded his Territories; upon his death *Charls* ſeiſeth on his lands: the *Normans* burn *Conſtance* and *Trevers*. *Guido* E. of *Tuſcany* aids the Saracens againſt the Emperour, who are afterward reconciled. *Bavaria* and *Auſtria* ſpoiled by the *Sclavi*: the Emperour is depoſed for giving away *Normandy*, and being unfit for government. *Arnulph* ſucceeds 12 years. *England* about this time was divided into Shires, Hundreds and Tythings, under King *Elfred*. The Danes are forced into *France*. The Scots beat the Iriſh, and take *Dublin*. *Boſo* makes himſelf King of *Burgundy*. *Paris* beſieged by the Normans; of them *Caraloman* buyes his peace, after he had taken *Vienna*: they waſte *France*, and beſiege *Paris* again; the Emperour to quiet them gives them *Neuſtria*, now called *Normandy*. *Odo* of Saxony, of whom came the *Capets*, defeats the Normans in *Flanders*. *Gallecia* in Spain is made a kingdome, and *Ordogno Alphonſus* ſecond ſon King thereof. *Alphonſus* is forced by his ſon *Garzia* to reſigne *Leon* to him, who died childleſſe: ſo

—880

Leon

Years of Christ.

Leon falls to his brother *Ordogno*, who beat the Moors. The Hungarians being deluded by *Leo*, invade the Western Empire, chiefly *France*, to be eased of their Tribute laid on them by *Charlemain*.

In the Church, to *John* (whose brains were beaten out with a hammer) *Martin* 2. succeeded 1 year; then *Adrian* 3. 1 year; then *Steven* 5. 6 years. 3 Councels were held in this Decad. *Godfrey* King of the Normans baptised. The Monastery of *Mount Cassin* burnt by the Saracens. *Photius* the Patriarch deposed.

890 In the East, *Simeon* the Bulgarian, upon the departure of the Hungarians, vexed *Leo* again; who to quiet them, restores their prisoners. The Saracens take *Lemnos* and *Tauromenium* in *Sicily*. The Lombards lose *Benevent* to the Marquis of *Tuscany*, after 330 years possession. *Thessalonica* taken by the Saracens. In the West, *Arnulph* makes the Duke of *Moravia* King of *Bohemia*. *Guido* is crowned Emperor by the Pope. *Arnulph* is aided by the Hungarians against *Zuindebold* the Moravian, whom he had made King of *Bohemia*; He takes divers Towns in *Italy*; *Rome* is taken by means of a Hare: his wife is convicted of adultery; he falls into a Palsie, and dieth of the Lousie-disease; His sonne *Lewis* 4. succeeds 12 years. The Danes do much hurt in *England*; the Scots help the English against them. The Normans are beaten in *Britany*. *Charles* the Simple of *France* and *Odo* have great wars. *Ordogno* of *Spain*, and *Garzias* King of *Navar*, are defeated by the Moors. Possessions are given to the Hungarians, for their service to *Arnulph* the Emperor.

In the Church, *Formosus* is Pope 4 years: He is opposed by *Sergius* the Antipope, which made the 15. Schisme. *Boniface* 6. succeeds, who was expelled within a moneth for his lewd life. His successor was *Steven* 6. 3 years: He abused and mutilated the dead body of *Formosus*, which he caused to be digged up; he is taken by *Aldebert* Marquis of *Tuscany*, and strangled in prison. *Romanus* succeeded 3 moneths. 5 Synods held within this Decad.

900 In the East, the Saracens invade *Greece*, and are defeated, and then defeat *Himerius* the Emperors Generall. *Constantine* son to *Leo* is crowned Emperor. The Saracens defeat the Emperors Fleet. In the West, *Lewis* is beaten by the Hungarians, who waste all *Germany*. The rebellious Frislanders are subdued by *Thyerry* the Hollander; who in signe of subjection enjoined them to make low-doors, that they might stoop as they entred. *Berengarius* in *Italy* is defeated by the Hungarians, and their departure is procured with mony. In *Spain*, *Alphonso* defeats the Saracens, then entred a Monastery, which shortly after he forsook, then he was imprisoned and lost his eyes. *Ramirus* of *Spain* invades *Toledo*, takes *Madrid*, and defeats the Moors. *Roan* in *France* with other places taken by *Rollo* D. of *Normandy*, who besiege *Paris* and beat the French.

In the Church, *Theodorus* 2. sits 20 dayes: *John* 9. succeeded 4 years: He confirmed the Acts of *Formosus*, which caused a sedition, so that he fled from *Ravenna*. *Benet* 4. succeeded 2 years. The 16 Schism, in which *Leo* 5. after 40 dayes, is imprisoned by *Christopher*, aided by the Marquis of *Tuscany*, and after 7 moneths, is sent unto a Covent by *Sergius* 3. *Theodora*, the Marquises Concubine, ruleth in *Rome*, *Sergius* makes her daughter *Marosia* his Concubine, of whom he begot *John* the 11 or 12. This Decad produced 5 Councels. The Bohemians and Normans converted to the Faith. *Leo* the Emperour takes a fourth wife, against the Custome of the Greek Church, therefore he is Excommunicated by the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, whom for this, *Leo* banished.

910 In the East, to *Leo* succeedeth his son *Constantine* 8. 50 years, who ruled with his mother *Zoe*. *Constantinople* besieged by *Simeon* Prince of *Bulgaria*, who is hired to return home. He breaks the peace, and takes *Adrianople*. The Italian Princes crave help against the Saracens, who had invaded *Calabria* and *Apulia*. The Greeks beat the Bulgarians, and are beat by them. *Zoe* is sent into a Monastery, and *Romanus* rules with the Emperor his son-in-law. In the West, the Emperor buyes his peace of the Hungarians: he dieth

of

Years of Chriſt.

of grief, and in him endeth the race of *Charlemain* in *Germany*. *Conradus* Duke of *Franconia* ſucceeds 7 years. *Henricus Auceps* aſpires. The Dukes of *Suevia* diſturb the peace. The Emperor is beaten by the Duke of *Merſpurg*. *Ratisbone* taken from the Emperor by *Arnulph* Duke of *Bavaria*, and loſt again. *Conradus* ſickneth, and commends *Henry* Duke of *Saxony* to the Empire: This *Henry* reigned 17 years; He was ſirnamed the Falconer. In *France*, *William* Earl of *Aquitain* founded the Monaſtery of *Clugny*. *Robert* Earl of *Paris* rebels againſt the King for his inſufficiencie, who is ſurpriſed and impriſoned by *Robert* Earl of *Vermendois*. In *Spain*, the Moors are beaten again, and the Rebels ſuppreſſed. The Navarrois are defeated by the Caſtilians. The Venetians obtain leave of the Emperor to coyn mony. The Hungarians invade *Italy*.

In the Church, *Anaſtaſius* ſate 2 years. *John* 10. ſucceeded 16 years: He falls out with *Albericus* Marquis of *Tuſcia*, and is expelled the City; whereupon he calls in the Hungarians, who commit many outrages. *Albericus* is ſlain by his people. One Councel was held this Decad at *Conſtans*, inhibiting marriage in the 7. Degree.

In the Eaſt, *Romanus* crowns his wife and ſon, and ſubſcribes before the Emperor; he is overcome by the Bulgarians, who take *Hadrianople*, but are expelled by *Romanus*. The Saracens at *Lemnos* are defeated by the Emperors fleet. *Romanus* makes two of his ſons Cæſars, & another a Church-man. In the Weſt, *Burchard* D. of *Sweve* is forced to acknowledg *Henry* Emperor, who gets *Lorrain* from *Charles* of *France*. *Arnulph* is forced to obedience. The Hungarians being defeated by the Emperor, make peace for nine years, after which time they are expelled *Germany*. The Vandals ſubdued, and *Brandeburgh* taken by the Emperor; multitudes of Vandals killed neer the Baltic ſea. In *France*, *Robert* Earl of *Paris* is choſen King, whom *Charles* aſſiſted by the Normans ſlew: then *Raoul* Duke of *Burgundy* is choſen, who leagueth with the Normans. *Charles* is releaſed, and again impriſoned, then dyeth. In *Spain*, the rebellions of *Caſtile*, *Navar* and *Gallecia* are ſuppreſſed by *Ordonius* 3. who dyeth in his expedition againſt the Moors. *Elfred*, an Engliſh Nobleman, who had conſpired to put out King *Athelſtans* eyes, abjured himſelf at *Rome*, fell down and dyed 3 days after. *Athelſtan* overcomes the Welſh, and beats the Scots. *Venice* burnt by the Hungarians. *Siffrid* the Dane having waſted *Flanders*, and raviſhed the Earls daughter, hanged himſelf. — 920

In the Church *Anaſtaſius* ſits, who conſecrated a Boy of 5 years old Biſhop of *Rhemes*. *Raoul* King of *Burgundy* is made King of *Italy*, to croſs *Berengarius*, who is expelled *Italy*, who therefore called in the Hungarians, that burn *Papia*. The Pope makes *Hugh*, Earl of *Arles*, King againſt *Raoul*, who returned to *France*. *Guy*, this *Hugh*'s brother, impriſoneth, and ſtrangleth the Pope, after he had killed his brother *Peter*. *Leo 6.* ſucceeds, whom *Guy* after 7 moneths impriſoned; he dyed, and *Stephen* 8. ſucceeded two years. *Marozia* the ſtrumpet, was the death of theſe two Popes. 3 Councels kept this Decad. *Raoul* King of *Burgundy*, beſtows on the Emperour the Spear that wounded Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, the Ruſſians waſte the country about *Conſtantinople*: divers Greeks gelded by the Beneventines. In the Weſt, the Hungarians being denyed their tribute of the Emperour, ſpoil *Germany*, but are at laſt defeated and expelled. *Miſna* made a Marquiſat, and *Guelders* an Earldom: *Henry* dieth, to him ſucceeds *Otho* the firſt his ſon 42 years. The *Palatine* for rebelling, is baniſhed, who being pardoned, conſpires with *Henry* the Emperours brother. In *England*, King *Athelſtan* drives the Britains out of Devonſhire into the remote parts of *Cornwall*; he takes *Weſtmerland* and *Cumberland* from the Scots; to him was ſent out of *France*, *Conſtantine* the Great his ſword, in the hilt of which was one of the nails of the Croſs. In *France*, *Lewis* ſon to *Charles* returns out of *England*, and reigneth 18 years. In *Spain*, *Sancho* King of *Leon* recovers his Kingdom, to whom *Ferdinand* of *Caſtile* ſelleth a horſe and a hawk, conditionally to double the payment every day, after it ſhould become due: This *Ferdinand* is taken priſoner by the *Navarrois*, and releaſed; ſo was the King of *Navar* taken and releaſed: *Ferdinand* eſcapes out of priſon by his wifes means, who exchanged apparel with him. *Sancho* makes *Caſtile* a Kingdom, in ſatisfaction for his horſe and hawke. About this time ſome Biſhopricks were founded in *Denmark*. The Istrians by ſurpriſing ſome Venetian Virgins, as they preſented themſelves after their cuſtome, in our — 930

Years of Christ.

Lady Church, (the memorial whereof is kept at *Candlemasse*) are forced to pay a yearly tribute to *Venice*. *Comaculum* refusing to pay, is taken and annexed to the Venetian Territories. The Saracens are beaten in *Castile* and *Germany*: *Genua* is taken by them, and cruelly used.

In the Church, *John* 11. sate 6 years; *Marozia* delivers *Rome* to *Hugh*, who imprisoneth the Pope; whom *Albericus* freed, and expelled *Hugh* with *Marozia*. *Leo* 7. succeeds 4 years. Two Councels held this Decad. The *Audean* Hereticks obtain now the name of *Anthropomorphites*. *Romanus* makes his son at 16 years, Patriarch of *Constantinople*, to whom he procures a Pall from the Pope.

940— In the East, *Romanus* hires the Turks to leave *Thrace*: he is sent to a Covent by his sonne *Steven*. *Romanus* having lost two of his other sons, dieth. *Constantine* reigned 12 years; he inviteth Schollars into Greece. In the West, the Emperour and French King are reconciled. *Henry* the Emperours Brother obtains pardon for his Rebellion. *Otho* being wounded in hunting, makes his son *Ludolphus* his Colleague and successor, but afterward changed his mind: He makes his Brother *Henry*, Duke of *Bavaria*; who expelled thence the Hungarians. *Otho* defeates the Danes. In *Italy*, *Hugh* made a league with the Saracens: his people upon this revolt; he flies into France, and becomes a Monk. The Saracens beaten out of *Calabria* by the Greeks. *Otho* invades Flanders, and is opposed by the Gauntois. *Aquileia* taken by *Henry* the Emperours Brother. St. *Wenceslaus* is made King in *Bohemia* by the Emperour; he refused the Title, not the Government: he is murthered by his brother in the Church; and his wicked mother the cause of this murther, was swallowed quick in the Earth. *Otho* beats the Danes, and wastes their Country. In *Spain*, *Zancho* is poysoned with an Apple by *Gonsalvus* the Rebel, whom he had pardoned. *Ferdinand* loseth many places in Castile to the Moores, and dieth for grief. *Ramire* defeats the Moors in *Leon*. In France, the D. of Normandy is reconciled to the King, who takes *Rohan*, and makes *Robert* Earl of *Paris*. *Hugh* Major of the Palace, takes the King in *England*. *Analph* of *Ireland* intrudes into *Northumberland*, who is banished by King *Edmund*, and *Cumberland* bestowed on the Scots. King *Edmund* is slain treacherously at a feast. *Analph* is recalled by the Northumbrians, and made King there.

In the Church, *Steven* being dead of a wound received in a tumult, *Martine* the 3. sate 3 years; to him succeeded *Agapetus* the 2. 9 years. In this Decad were called 5 Councels. The Russians persecute the Christians. *Otho* spreads Christianity in Denmark, Swethland and other northern parts.

950— In the East, the Emperours Fleet is defeated by the Saracens at *Candy*. *Bardus* the Emperours General, taketh much from them. *Romanus* poysoned his Father, who died not in two years after, some of the poyson being spilt. In the West, *Otho* forceth *Boleslaus* the Bohemian to submit: he adds *Belgium* and *Burgundy* to the Empire: divers rebell against *Otho*, who at last submit. The Bishop of *Saltzburg's* eyes are put out for calling the Bavarians into Bavaria, where they were all slain. *Otho* subdueth the Vandals; *Otho* by marrying *Adelheida* becoms King of Italy, which he leaves to *Berengarius* except *Verona* and *Aquileia*, which he gave to *Henry* his brother. *Berengarius* playes the tyrant, and wars with the Pope for the Dutchy of *Spoletum*. *Piedro* of *Venice* is banished, and turns Pyrat against the Venetian ships, the report of which killed the Duke his father with grief: he is notwithstanding recalled by the State. The Church of *Grada* is made Metropolis of *Venia* and *Istria*. *Harold* the Dane holdeth of the Emperour, and receiveth the Faith. Five of the Hungarian Kings hanged in Bavaria. In *Spain*, *Garzias* of *Castile*, invad th *Leon*: he pursueth his wife with her Adulterer, and kils them both in bed. The Moores mean while invade his Territories. In France, *Lewis* is killed by a fall from his horse; His son *Lotharius* succeeds 32 years: *Hugh* by his death, leaveth his Dutchy of *Paris* to *Hugh Capet*, who is declared Duke of *France* and Earl of *Poitou*. The Northumbrians and Mercians revolt from *Edwy* king of *England*, for his evil life, and set up his brother *Edgar* against him: The King hereupon dieth for grief. *Edgar* reigned 56 years; He rigs out a great Fleet to guard the Coasts. *Malcolme* King of Scotland is murthered in *Murrey*.

In the Church, *John* 12. sate 8 years, he was the first Pope (say some) that changed his name from *Octavian* to *John*. 3 Councels held this Decad. St. *Matthews* reliques translated from *Ethiopia* to *Salernum*. *Helena* Queen of *Russia* is baptized at *Constantinople*; she sends to *Otho* for Priests to convert her Subjects.

In

Years of Chriſt.

960

In the Eaſt, *Romanus* 2. reigned 3 years; he beat the Saracens in Crete, by *Nicephorus Phocas*; he was forbidden to return to *Conſtantinople*, becauſe there was a propheſie, that the Conquerour of *Crete* ſhould be Emperour: which fell out true; for he ſucceeded 6 years: he beats the Saracens out of *Cilicia*: He is ſorry that his forces took *Antioch*; becauſe he was told, that if it were taken he ſhould miſcarry; he becomes covetous and odious; he kils *Otho's* Ambaſſadours, who by his own order came to treate with him about a match, between young *Otho*, and his daughter *Theophania*: He is killed by *John Zimiſces*, and his own Empreſſe. This *John* ſucceeded 6 years; he thruſts the Empreſſe into a Monaſtery, and ſends *Theophania* to *Otho*: In the Weſt, *Otho's* aide is intreated by the Pope againſt *Berengarius*, whom *Otho* defeats, and cauſeth his ſon *Otho* to be crowned: He ſends the wife of *Berengarius* to him; he ſetleth Lombardy, and depoſeth the Pope for adhering to his enemy: He baniſheth *Bereus* with his wife and children into *Bavaria*. *Adelbert* his enemy being defeated, the Pope is by him reſtored: then to revenge the death of his Ambaſſadours, he cut off the Noſes of divers *Calabrian* and *Apulian* Greeks, and ſends them to *Conſtantinople*. The Saracens loſe *Crete*, *Cyprus*, with 100 Cities, *Cilicia*, *Tripolis* in *Phenicia*, *Antioch*, *Calabria*, and *Apulia*, all this within this Decad. *Harold* of Norway by ſacrificing his two ſons, obtained a Tempeſt which diſperſed the Daniſh Fleet, that came to demand tribute. *Meciſlaus* King of Poland is Baptized; he builds many Churches, and erects two Archbiſhopricks. *Edgar* King of *England*, impoſeth a yearly tribute of 300 Wolves upon the Welch: He is cheated of his wife by his favourite *Ethelwolde*, whom he ſlew, and then married her. The Danes land in Scotland, and are forced to flie to their ſhips.

In the Church, Pope *John* is depoſed for divers crimes. *Leo* the 8. is choſen, but upon the Emperours departure *John* is reſtored again; *Leo* flieth to *Otho*; he is ſlain in the act of Adultery by the womans husband. *Bennet* the 5. is choſen. *Otho* returneth and ſetles *Leo*; ſo *Bennet* is baniſhed to *Hamburg*. This makes the 17 Schiſme. *John* 13 ſucceeds 6 years; he is impriſoned 11 moneths, and reſtored by the Emperour; he was the firſt that conſecrated Bels, and gave them names. 6 Councels held this Decad. *Mieſco* King of Poland ordereth, that every Knight at the reading of the Goſpel ſhould draw his ſword in defence thereof, and at the naming of it, to ſay, [*Glory be to thee, O Lord.*] *Hungary* is converted.

970

In the Eaſt *Bardas* overcomes the Rebels in *Aſia*: the *Roſſi* expelled out of Bulgaria. *Zimiſces* is murthered by an Eunuch for complaining againſt the wealth of the Eunuchs. *Baſilius* and *Conſtantine* ſons of *Romanus* ſucceed 50 years. *Bardas* rebelleth, and joyneth with the Saracens. The Imperialiſts beaten by the Bulgarians. In the Weſt, *Otho* marrieth with *Theophania*: *Otho* the father dieth, and *Otho* the ſon ſucceeds 10 years. *Henry* Duke of *Bavaria* oppoſeth him a while, then deſiſteth; *Henry* afterward rebelleth, and flieth into *Bohemia*, which is waſted by the Emperour, and *Henry* with his ſon baniſhed: *Otho* makes peace with *Lotharius*. *Elcain* the Saracen Prince makes *Alcair* in Ægypt his Seat: they loſe *Fraxinetum*, and recover *Conſentia*. The Venetians drive them from *Capua*. *Piedro* Duke of *Venice*, for his tyrannies is killed with his ſon: he ſet his Palace, S. *Marks* Church, and 300 houſes on fire: His ſucceſſor *Pietro Urſulo* repaired all again, and beſtowed a Table of Gold on the High-Altar. The Iſle of *Sembia* in Ruſſia is ſubdued by *Aquinus* the King of Denmarks eldeſt ſon: his youngeſt ſon *Sueno* rebelleth againſt him; at laſt, this *Harold* the father is ſlain, and *Sueno* ſucceeds. A part of *Lorrain* is given by *Otho* to the Biſhops of *Liege*, *Trevers*, and *Colen*. S. *James* of *Compoſtella* overthrown by the Moors; they are defeated by king *Pharemund*. In *England*, king *Edgar* built 47 Monaſteries, beſides *Rumſey*-Abby for Nuns; he is murthered by his mother in law: ſhe in pennance built the Monaſtery of *Malmesbury* and *Wharwell*. *Duffus* the Scots king is bewitched and murthered: *Culenus* his ſucceſſor, for his wicked life, is alſo ſlain by a *Thane* whoſe daughter he had raviſh'd.

In the Church, *Domnus* 2. ſate 3 moneths; *Bennet* 6. ſucceeded: he is ſtrangled in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, by means of *Boniface* 7. which makes the 18 Schiſme: he ſeeing the City bent againſt him, flieth to *Conſtantinople* with all the Jewels of the Vatican. To him ſucceeds *Bennet* the 7, 9 years. This Decad produced 5 Councels. The Patriarch of *Conſtantinople* prohibits *Zimiſces* to enter the Church, for murthering *Nicephorus*; he layeth the fault on the Empreſſe, who is made a Nun, and he an Emperour. A Wheele-wrights ſon is made Archbiſhop of *Mentz*: hence a Cart-wheel was added to the Arms of that See.

Years of Christ.

980 — In the East, *Basilius* by the Saracens help recovereth *Calabria* and *Apulia* from *Otho*, whom they put to flight, and took him in Merchants Cloths; but he redeemed himself, and seiseth on *Benevent*. *Larissa* is taken from the Greeks by *Samuel* King of *Bulgaria*. The Army proclaims *Barias Phocas* Emperour, who laid siege to *Constantinople*; but he died suddenly: Upon this, the Greeks submit to the Emperour. In the West, the Greeks are expelled out of *Illyricum* and *Dalmatia* by *Otho*: in his absence, *Germany* is wasted by the *Sclavi*, and *Brandenburg* taken. *Otho* having defeated the Saracens of *Italy*, is wounded by a poysonable arrow, and dieth: he is interred at *Rome*. His son *Otho* 3. succeeds 17 years. *Henry* of Bavaria proclaims himself Emperour, seiseth on *Otho*, but is forced to restore him to the Bishoprick of *Mentz*: *Otho* subjugates *Bohemia*, and institutes the *Palatinat* of the *Rhene*. In *France*, *Lotharius* invadeth *Lorraine*, takes *Verdun* with the Earl, and then restores them: to him succeeded his son *Lewis* 5. who is poisoned by his wife. *Hugh Capel* is chosen, and *Charls* of *Lorrain* the heir rejected; he taketh *Leon* and driveth *Hugh* from it. In *England*, the Danes doe much mischief, but are beaten in the West. *Richard* Earl of *Normandy* having invaded *England*, is perswaded by the Pope to return. *Hay* a plough-man in Scotland, put the Danes to flight, after they had defeated the Kings forces. Great troubles between the Countries of *Anguse* and *Mernes*. In *Spain*, to *Pharemund* succeedeth *Alphonsus* 5. King of *Leon* 28 years. In *Denmark* King *Sueno* Apostatiseth; he is taken three times by the *Jutians*, and redeems himself, 1 for his weight in Gold, 2. and twice his weight in Silver: the last time he is redeemed by the Danish Ladies, who sold their Jewels to free him; therefore he made women capable to inherit: He is at last expelled his kingdome by *Ericus* King of Swedland *Otho* prohibiteth all *Italy*, from commercing with *Venice*: wherefore the houses of the *Caloprini* are rased, their wives and children imprisoned, for incensing *Otho* against *Venice*: the Duke becomes a Monk.

In the Church, *John* the 13 sate 8 moneths; and is starved by *Boniface* the 7. who after 9 years returneth to *Constantinople*, and after 4 moneths died suddenly: his body was dragged through the streets: succeeded *John* 14. 11 years; he was expelled by *Crescentius* the Consul, and is by him again recalled. Two Synods held this Decad. *Adelbert* B. of *Prague*, preacheth to the Hungarians, and leaves *Bohemia*.

990 — In the East, *Samuel* Prince of Bulgaria takes many Greek Commanders prisoners, whom the Emperours army redeemeth by seising on his Tents. In the West, *Otho* is crowned at *Rome*; he puts *Crescentius* to death for rebelling, and restores the Pope: he makes *Crescentius* his widow his Concubine, whom he burned, for causing him execute an Earl whom she falsly accused. In *France*, *Charls* taketh *Rhemes*: he is betrayed and dieth in prison. *Hugh* dischargeth the office of Major of the Palace, and erecteth a Constableship: he excluded Bastards from inheriting the Crown. To him succeeds *Robert* his son. In *Spain*, *Sancho* poysoned his mother with that poyson she had provided for him: Hence the custome of *Spain* is for the women to drink first. *Barcelona* spoiled by the Moores, and the Earl killed; 70000 Moores are slain, and all recovered from them. In *England* the Danes are hired by *Etheldred* to depart; they enter the land again with divers fleets, and waste many parts of the kingdome. *Kenneth* in *Scotland* poysoned the Prince of *Cumberland*, that his own son might succeed; whom he declareth heir: he is affrighted in a Vision for this murther; visits the Shrine of *Palladius*, and is murthered by a woman. *Constantine* the Bald, assumeth the crown: *Malcolme*, *Kenneth*'s son opposeth him in vain: *Kenneth*, *Malcolme*'s base brother, and *Constantine* are slain in a battel. *Grime*, Nephew to *Duffus* makes himself King. *Adelbert* B. of *Prague* labouring to convert *Borussia*, is slain there. In *Hungary* King *Stephen* establisheth Christianity. In *Denmark*, *Sueno* by the Scots help, recovereth his kingdom. *Olaus* king of Norway is defeated at Sea, and drowned by *Sueno*, who thereupon possessed that kingdome. The Venetians take *Corcyra*, and destroy *Pharos*: they obtain of *Otho*, jurisdiction over their own Churches: It is ordered that the Duke of *Venice* should be also stiled Duke of *Dalmatia*; they take 40 Pyrat ships.

In the Church, *John* 15 sate 4 moneths; *Gregory* 5. 3 years; the 19 schisme follows: for *Crescentius* expelleth him, and sets up *John* Bishop of *Placentia*; but *Gregory* is restored, *John* whipped, exoculated and slain; and *Crescentius* after the losse of his members hanged. *Silvester* 2. succeeded 4 years; this Decad produced 7 Synods.

In

Years of Chriſt.

1000

In the Eaſt, the Bulgarians are beaten by the Emperour, who recovers moſt of his Cities: he ſends forces againſt the Saracens, now before *Capua*. In the Weſt, *Otho* viſits the body of *Adelbert* in *Polonia*: He is taken at *Rome*, and releaſed; at laſt is poyſoned with a pair of gloves, which *Creſcentius* his widow gave him. *Henry* 2. ſucceeded 23 years, he defeats all his oppoſers: he being in danger at *Papia*, leapeth down from a Wall, and diſ-joynts his thigh, whence he halted, and from this was nicknamed, The lame. He had wars and peace with *Flanders*, and quarrels with the D. of *Bavaria*. *Robert* the French King makes his ſon *Robert* Duke of *Burgundy* being eſcheated to the Crown. *Alphonſo* of *Spain* correcteth the *Gothic* Laws. *Sancho* King of *Navar* ſtiles himſelf King of *Spain*: His ſon *Garzia* is diſ-inherited for accuſing his mother of Adultery, and *Ramire* made King of *Arragon*. *Alphonſo* beſieging *Viſcum* in *Portugal* is ſhot dead with an arrow. The Danes are burnt in a Church at *Oxford*: they raſe *Exceſter*, ſpoil *Norwich*, take the Iſle of *Wight*; the Canterburians redeem their peace with money. In *Scotland* it is agreed that *Grime* ſhould remain King, and *Malcolm* with his heirs ſhould ſucceed. *Grime* tyrannizeth, he is taken by *Malcolm* in *Atholl*, and his eyes put out: To him ſucceeds *Malcolm* 2. 13 years. *Boleſlaus* is made King of *Poland* by the Emperour, who giveth the ſpear of St. *Maurice*, and a nail of the Croſs for the Armes of that Kingdom. *Cracovia* is taken by the Bohemians, and *Prague* by the Polanders, with the Vice-grave and King, whoſe eyes are put out. *Boleſlaus* ſubdueth *Moravia*. *Giula* Governour of *Tranſilvania* invades *Hungary*. King *Stephen* takes *Giulas* wife and children, and treaſure enough to build a Church in *Alba*. *Giula* is baptized with his Family, and diſmiſſed. The Earl of *Flanders*, and the Emperour differ abour *Lorrain*: the Earl takes *Valenciens*, and reſtores it to the Emperour, who beſtows it upon the Earl, with the Iſles in *Zealand*, which occaſioned a long War between the Flemmins and Hollanders. *Jeruſalem* taken by the Saracens.

In the Church, *John* the 16. ſate 5 moneths: *John* the 7. ſucceeded 6 years, then *Sergius* 4. 3 years. In this Decad were held 3 Councels. The Greek Church is united to the Latine. The feaſt of *Mary's* Nativity obſerved by *Fulbert* B. of Charters. The Temple of the Sepulchre overthrown by the Prince of *Babylon*, upon the Jews importunity; but they are baniſhed, and the Temple rebuilt by *Mary* the Princes mother.

1010

In the Eaſt, the Bulgarians are defeated, and there eyes put out, except their Commanders, who loſt but one eye. The Emperour defeateth the Saracens, and ſubdueth all Bulgaria, Prince *John* being ſlain. The Normans are expelled *Apulia*. In the weſt, *Brem* and *Hamburg* ſpoiled by the Saxons and Vandals. The Emperour is worſted by the Bohemians. The King of *Burgundy* makes the Emperour his Heir; hereupon the Burgundians rebell. In *Spain*, *Pharemund* the 3. King of *Leon* repaireth the Churches ruined by the Saracens. The Earldom of *Caſtile* falls to the King of *Navar*. *Mahumet* is the laſt King of the Moors in *Corduba*: *Pharemund* is ſlain in battell by *Ferdinand* of *Caſtile*, the firſt of that name, King of *Caſtile* and *Leon* 37 years. The Danes invade *Canterbury* again, kill the Archbiſhop, Monks and multitudes of People: *Sueno* kills the Biſhop of *London*, takes it, and expels *Ethelred*. His ſon *Canutus* is expelled, and returns; and *Ethelred* being dead, the Kingdom is divided between *Edmund Ironſide* and *Canutus*: *Edmund* is ſlain, and *Canutus* Crowned. The Danes in *Scotland* are overthrown at *Aberden*, in memory thereof a Biſhoprick is erected there by *Malcolme*. The Polanders invade *Pomerania* and are defeated by the Emperour: The Normans waſte *Friſia*, and burn *Utricht*. The Saracens take *Sardinia* from the *Piſans*, and loſe it again: they are expelled *Italy* by the Popes Army.

In the Church, *Benet* the 8. ſate 12 years. *Gregory* is ſet up by another faction, and *Bennet* expelled, which makes the 20. Schiſm. *Benet* is reſtored by the Emperour. 5 Councels aſſembled this Decad. *Jews* executed at *Rome* for whipping Chriſts Picture. 13 Manichees burnt at *Orleance*. It was decreed in the Councel of *Nimigen*, that the bread ſhould ſtand on the right ſide of the Altar, and the Chalice on the left.

1020

In the Eaſt, *Baſilius* being dead, his brother *Conſtantine* reigned alone 3 years, he takes 12 Saracen ſhips which had invaded the *Cyclaves*. The Greeks recover *Capua*: To *Conſtantine* ſucceeds *Romanus Argyrus* 5 years, whoſe eyes were preſerved by his wifes entring into a Monaſtery. In the Weſt, the plague rageth through *Germany*, and out of the

Years of Chriſt.

the dead bodies grew Serpents. The Emperour recovers *Capua*, *Apulia* and *Calabria* from the Greeks. The Marquis beat out of *Brandeburg* by the Vandals, and he forced to live upon a Canons place in *Magdeburg*. To *Henry* ſucceeds *Conrade* 15 years; he Crowns his ſons King of the Romans, and goeth into *Italy*: he is crowned at *Rome*, and ordereth that the Emperours ſhould be crowned Kings of *Italy* by the Biſhops of *Milan*, and to wait on them at their Imperiall Coronation. He hath Wars with *Steven* King of *Bavaria*. *Rudolph* King of *Burgundy* revoketh the Act which he made to the Emperour. *Boleſlaus* of *Poland* forceth his Gentry to pay Tithes, he maketh *Ruſsia* pay Tribute. *Olaus* of *Norway* is ſlain by *Canutus* his faction, and Canonized: *Sueno Canutus*'s ſon is beaten in *Scotland*. *Boleſlaus* of *Bohemia* built 20 Churches: His ſucceſſor *Boleſlaus* 2. loſt *Cracovia*, he loſt his eyes, and reſigneth to *Jaromire*, whoſe eyes were alſo put out by *Udalric*. *Otho* Duke of *Venice* is ſhaved and baniſhed by *Flabenico*. *Otho*'s brother *Urſo* Biſhop of *Grada* procures *Flabenico* to be baniſhed. The Biſhop governeth the State till his brother *Otho*'s return, who died before the meſſage came. The Earl of *Holland* hath War with *Friſia*. *Edward* and *Edmund*, the ſons of *Ironſide*, are ſent to *Sweden* to be murthered, but *Olaus* King of *Sweden* pitied them, and ſent them to *Steven* King of *Hungary*, who uſed them kindly.

In the Church, *John* the 19. ſate 9. years: A Saracen King is baptized at *Rome*. 3 Councels held this Decad. The Polonians will rather ſerve the Devil, then be Chriſtians and pay Tithes, therefore they rebell, but are ſuppreſſed: The Greek Church falls off again from the Latine, becauſe the Pope would not give way that the Patriarch of *Conſtantinople* ſhould be ſtiled General Patriarch. The Goſpel preach-in *Norway* by the Engliſh.

1030 In the Eaſt, *Argirus* is beaten in *Syria*: He taketh Tribute of the Saracens. *Myſia* and *Illyria* waſted by the *Pazinazæ*. The Saracen Fleet beaten by *Nicephorus*. *Zoe* the wife of *Argirus* falls in love with one *Michael*, who ſtrangle *Argirus* in the Bath. This *Michael* ſucceeded 7 years, he married *Zoe*. The Saracens waſte *Thrace*. *Michael* ſlighteth the Empreſs: The Greeks are called into *Sicily*, where the Emperour recovers 13 Cities. *Maniaces* the Sicilian Governour called home, and one ſent thither who loſeth all. In the Weſt, *Rudolph* King of *Burgundy* ſends his Crown to *Conrade*, who expels *Odo* Prince of *Champaigne*, out of *Burgundy*. *Conrad* taketh *Milan*, and baniſheth the ſeditious Biſhops: He takes *Capua* from *Pandulphus*. He giveth *Burgundy* and *Suevia* to his ſon *Henry*, who ſuceeded 17 years. *Hardi-Canute* King of *England* and *Denmark*: In his abſence *Harold Harefoot*, baſe ſon to *Canutus*, invades the Kingdom: He baniſheth *Emme* his mother in law. Her ſon *Elfred* is betrayed in *England*, and his eyes put out in *Scotland*. King *Malcolme* is murthered. Civil Wars in *France* between the Kings children. *Robert* Duke of *Normandy* dieth at *Nice* in *Bithynia*; *William* his baſtard ſon ſucceeded. In *Spain*, *Ferdinand* takes divers places from the Moors, and expels them. The Queen of *Poland* flyeth with her young ſon, the treaſure, and two Crowns of the Kingdom, to the Emperour; who ſends the young King *Caſimire* to *Paris*, who enters the Monaſtery of *Clugney*. *Poland* being full of troubles ſends to *Caſimire*, who being a Deacon was unwilling to return, till he was abſolved by the Pope, upon the Polanders promiſe to pay yearly, by the Pole, a half-penny to St. *Peter*, and to cut round the hairs of their head; the Nobles and Clergy were exempted from the pay: ſo he returns, and the Emperour reſtores him his two Crowns, and aides him againſt the Bohemians in *Hungary*. King *Stephen* and *Conrade* make peace, upon a Divine warning to *Conrades* ſouldiers to return home. *Stephen* nameth *Vaſul* for his ſucceſſor, but the Queen puts out his eyes, and makes *Peter* King, who reigned 3 years, and commits all places of truſt to the *Germans*. *Canutus* of *Denmark*, makes war againſt the Duke of *Normandy* for repudiating his ſiſter. An Agreement is made between *Hardi-Canute* of *Denmark*, and *Magnus* of *Norway*, that the ſurvivour ſhould enjoy both Kingdoms. *Bretiſlaus* of *Bohemia*, takes *Cracovia* and other places, with a Crucifix of 300 l. *Flabenico* is called home to *Venice* and made Duke; he baniſheth the family of the *Urſeoli*.

In the Church, ſate *Benet* the 9. 12 years; he was but 12 years old. This Decad afforded 3 Councels. The Saracen King of *Carthage* is baptized at *Rome*. *Berengarius* Arch-deacon of *Anion* condemned for affirming that Chriſts body was not in the Euchariſt.

In

Years of Chriſt.

1040

In the Eaſt, the Emperours forces revolt to the Bulgarians. The Emperour repenting the murther of *Romanus*, enters into a Monaſtery and dieth. The Normans drive the Greeks out of *Apulia*. *Michael Calaphates* is forced to revoke *Zoe* whom he had baniſhed, and then having loſt his eyes, is thruſt into a Covent. After 4 moneths *Conſtantine Monumachus* ſucceeds 12 years: he marrieth *Zoe*: *Maniaces* rebelleth, and is ſlain. The Emperour like to be ſtoned for keeping a Concubine, but *Zoe* pacified them, being ſhe conſented to the keeping of a Concubine. *Caicius* in *Iberia* rebelleth, and ſubmitteth. One *Leo* is ſaluted Emperour, but his eyes are put out. The *Pacinazæ* return to *Muſcovia*. In the Weſt, great differences between the Emperour and *Bretſlaus* the Polander: The Empreſs purgeth her ſelf of Adultery by fire, and then enters a Monaſtery. The Emperour beſtows a part of *Hungaria* on *Albert* of *Bavaria*, and calls it *Auſtria*; he deſerts the Ruſſians, impriſoneth the Duke of *Lorain* for rebelling, and then releaſeth him, he ſetles alſo *Peter* in *Hungaria*: He is crowned with his Empreſs at *Rome*. His Palace at *Nimigen* is burnt by the Duke of *Lorain* and Earl of *Flanders*, but they ſubmit and are reconciled to him. *William* Duke of *Normandy* expelled by his Subjects, and reſtored by the Emperour. *Ferdinand* in *Spain*, makes the Moors his Tributaries, he recovers from them the body of *Iſidore*. *Caſimire* in *Poland* ſubdueth the rebels and Ruſſians; the Arch-rebel *Miſlaus* is by the Pruſſians flei'd and hanged; and ſo they make their peace with *Poland*, on promiſe of tribute. In *Hungary*, *Peter* for tyrannizing is depoſed; he flyeth to the Emperour. The Hungarians waſte *Germany*. *Peter* is reſtored, and tyrannizeth again. *Andrew* and *Bela*, ſons of *Ladiſlaus* the *Bald*, are invited by the Nobles, they reſtore Paganiſme: *Peter* flyeth, and is reſtored again by the Emperour; at laſt his eyes are put out, and he dyeth. *Andrew* ſucceedeth, who reſtoreth Chriſtianity: He gives the 3. part of *Hungaria* to his brother *Bela*. *Sueno* the Dane is overcome twice by *Magnus* King of *Norway*, who was killed with a fall from his horſe. A great inundation in *Flanders*. *Baldwyn* the Gentle, Earl of *Holland*, hath great troubles with the *Germans*. The Turks are defeated by the Greeks. In *England*, *Harolds* body is by *Hardi-Canute* caſt into the *Thames*; he died of an Apoplexie, and in him ended the Danes reigne. St. *Edward*, ſon to *Ethelred*, ſucceeded 20 years: he remits the Dane-gilt. *Severn* infeſted by the Iriſh and Welſh, and *Kent* by the Danes. *Emme*, the Kings mother, clears her ſelf of Adultery, by paſſing bare-foot and blindfold between 9 Plow-ſhares red hot: the Lord *Coventry*'s Lady rideth naked, to free the City of their Tax. King *Duncan* of *Scotland* much moleſted by the Iſland-rebels. *Sueno* the Dane defeated by *Macbeth*. Witches foretell *Macbeth*'s reigne, who thereupon kills the King, and uſurpeth 17 years: He tyrannizeth over the *Thanes*.

In the Church is the 21. Schiſm. *Benet* is depoſed, and *Sylveſter* 3. comes in by Symonie, and is expelled by *Benet*, and he by the People. He reſigneth to *Gregory* the 6. ſo now 3 Popes live in *Rome*; they are all depoſed at *Sutrium*, and *Clement* 2. choſen, who flyeth into *Germany*, and is poyſoned. *Benet* 9. again 8 moneths: then *Leo* 9. ſucceeds 5 years. This Decad had 8 Councels.

1050

In the Eaſt, the troubleſom *Pacinazæ* have peace granted them for 30 years: The frontier Provinces are ſo taxed by the Emperour, that they let in the Turks, *Zoe* and *Conſtantine* die: *Theodora Zoe*'s ſiſter reigned 1 year; ſhe baniſhed *Nicephorus* whom *Conſtantine* named his ſucceſſor, and makes *Michael Stranoticus* her ſucceſſor. He is thruſt into a Covent by *Iſaacius Comuenus*, who after 4 years, being affrighted with lightning, became a Monk. In the Weſt, the Pope makes peace between *Germany* and *Hungary*. The Duke of *Bavaria* is expelled and flyeth to *Hungary*. *Tourne* and *Seven* taken from the Earl of *Flanders* by the Emperour. *Henry* 4. ſucceeds 50 years; his reign was full of troubles by the Saxons rebellions, and Pope *Hildebrand*'s fury againſt him. In *England*, *Goodwyn* is choaked with a piece of bread, for ſo he wiſhed if he knew of *Elfred*'s death. *William* the Norman comes into *England*, and is promiſed to ſucceed, if the King die iſſueleſs. King *Edward* was the firſt King that healed the Kings-Evil. *Macbeth* in *Scotland* tyrannizeth over the Lords. In *France*, *Henry* crownes his ſon *Philip* at 7 years of age. Wars between *Navar* and *Arragon*. *Ferdinand* of *Spain* aſſumes the title of Emperour, which angred the *German* Emperour: He kils *Garzia* of *Navar*. *Sanzius*, ſon to *Ferdinand* of *Caſtile*, invadeth *Leon*, and forceth *Alphonſus* to flie to the Moors of *Toledo*, where he was well uſed. *Andrew* of *Hungary* killed by *Bela*, who obtains the crown 4 years; he maintaineth Chriſtianity. In *Poland*, *Boleſlaus* the Bald was King, who reigned 24 years. *Spitigenius* King of *Bohemia* expels all the Germans. *Vratiſlaus* ſucceeded 36 years; he invaded *Polonia*. The Earl of *Flanders*, *Baldwyn*, recovers the Iſlands of

Years of Christ

of *Zeland* from the Hollanders; he is reconciled to the Emperour. The Earl of *Holland* at *Dort*, in Pit-falls, drowned the forces of the Bishop of *Colen* and *Leige*, kills the Bishop of *Leige*, and takes many prisoners. The Persian-Turks invade *Media*, *Syria*, and take *Jerusalem*.

In the Church, *Leo* 9. sits, he imprisoneth *Richard* the *Norman*. *Victor* the 2. succeeded 3 years: *Steven* 9. succeeds 7 moneths. The 22 Schism, by choosing *Cassin* brother to the Duke of *Lorrain*, and *Nicholas* 2. who sate 3 years; he gives *Sicily*, *Apulia* and *Calabria* to the Normans, conditionally that they should hold them of the Church, and pay tribute yearly for them. This Decad produced 13 Councels. The Patriarch of *Grada* is translated to *Venice*. At *Mentz*, the Pope and Bishop quarrel about a Deacon that read the Gospel. The Whippers about this time, delighted so much in whipping-chear, that in one Covent 3000. brooms were worn in this exercise. The Patriarch of *Constantinople* is banished, for assuming power to throne and un-throne Emperours. *Berengarius* acknowledgeth Christs Body in the Eucharist, but denyeth his passing through the doors shut.

1060

In the East, *Constantinus Ducas* reigns 7 years: in his time St. *Sophia*'s Temple was overthrown with earthquake: the Scythians waste *Greece*, and are consumed by the Plague: his son *Michael Ducas* with his mother succeeds 7 moneths. *Romanus Diogenes* aspireth, is condemned, then married to *Eudocia* the Empress, and so becomes Emperor 3 years; he slighteth his wife, and beats the Turks in the West: *Richard* the Norman strives to be Emperor. The Emperor is hindred by the Pope from repudiating his wife. The Earl of *Flanders* is made Regent to King *Philip* 1. of *France*; he subdueth the Rebels of *Gascoin*. *Garzias* of *Gallecia*, imprisoned by *Sanctius* of *Castile*: *Sanctius* is slain at the siege of *Zamora*. His brother *Alphonsus* reigns 43 years. *Garzias* King of *Navar* succeedeth in *Arragon*. *Boleslaus* of *Poland* subdueth the Russians in *Hungary*, *Bela* is killed by the fall of some Houses; *Salomon* the son of *Andrew* succeeds 12 years: *Bela*'s sons flie into *Polonia*; but these are reconciled: St. *Peters* Church in which *Salomon* was crowned, was burnt the next night. *Edward* of *England*, enlargeth and enricheth *Westminster* Church. To *Edward* succeeded *Harold* son of *Godwyn* 9 moneths, & is slain by *William* of *Normandy*, who reigned 20 years. *Kent* keeps its priviledges. *Edgar* flyeth into *Scotland*; he should have been heir. *Coverfeu* is instituted. *William* is much opposed by *Edgar* and the Scots, who waste all, and burn *York*. In *Scotland*, Thanes are altered to Earls and Barons: *Macduff* is made Earl of *Fife*, who is honoured with divers priviledges: *Malcolm* son to *Duncan* reigns 36 years; he is opposed by *Macbeth*'s son. *Dunbar* for his service is made Earl of *March*. In *Holland*, the Earl is killed by the Earl of *Guyck*, and his forces defeated.

In the Church is the 23 Schism, between Pope *Alexander* 2. chosen by the Cardinals, and *Honorius* 2. by the Emperour; he is forced from *Rome*, he holds *Leonina* and the *Lateran* 2 years: He opposeth *Richard* the Norman, in his claim to the Empire. This Decad yeelds 11 Councels. The Christians at *Jerusalem* suffered by the Caliph to inhabit a fourth part of the City, and to have a Patriarch. The Christians persecuted by the *Sclavi*, who killed their Prince. The Bishop of *Bamberg* with others make an expedition into *Palestina*: The Patriarch absolves *Eudocia* from her oath of not marrying. The Virgins Feast of Conception, instituted in *England*.

1070

In the East, *Manuel Comnenus* is taken by the Turks, and the Empress put into a Covent. *Romanus* taken by the Turks, released, and his eyes put out. *Michael Ducas* reigns 6 years; he is defeated by the Turks. *Michael* is deposed, he with his wife and son are put in a Monastery. *Nicephorus Botoniates* succeeds 3 years. In the West, *Otho* of *Bavaria* is proscribed, and his Country wasted by the Emperor, is reconciled with the loss of his Dukedom. The Saxons and Thuringers rebell, they are defeated. The Princes and Bishops complain to the Pope against the Emperour: He and the Pope depose each other. *Rodulph* of *Suevia* chosen by the Germans, whom *Henry* being absolv'd defeateth. *Henry* is deposed again. *Rodulph* after 9 battels, loseth his right-hand and dieth. *Burgundy* is divided into four parts. *Lewis* son to *Philip* of *France* falls out at Chess with the King of *England*'s two sons, which occasioned long Wars. *William* of *England* imposeth hard Laws on the English; appoints 4 Termes: he swears the observance of King *Edward*'s Laws, upon the setting up of *Edgar*, who flies again into *Scotland*. Roy-Cross erected on the borders. He setleth *Normandy*, and useth *Edgar* honourably: He takes the Isle of *Ely*, forceth *Wales* to do homage: *Hereford* imprisoned, and *Northampton* beheaded for Rebellion. His son *Robert* rebels in *Normandy*, unhorseth his father, and is pardoned. The Tower of *London* begun. He makes a Forrest of 36 parishes. The Scots waste *Northumberland*. *Solyman* of *Hungary* hath divers Victories, and is at last defeated. *Ladislaus* is chosen K. The Venetians are beaten by the Normans. *Thyerric* of *Holland* defeats the Bishop of *Utricht*, and recovers *Holland*. *Godfrey* of *Lorrain* builded *Delf*. *Rhodes* and *Cyprus* taken by the Turks. The Bishop of *Cracovia* slain and quartered by the K. of *Poland*, for reproving his vicious life.

In

Yeers of Chriſt.

In the Church, *Gregory* the ſeventh ſitteth 12 yeers. He perſecutes the Emperour, is impriſoned, ſends a Crown to *Rodulph.* Twelve Synods held this Decad. *Canterbury* is made Primate of *England.* The Emperour robbeth the Church of her Tythes, which cauſeth much trouble between the Pope and him. *Boleſlaus* King of *Poland* excommunicated for murthering the Biſhop *Staniſlaus.*

1080

In the Eaſt, *Conſtantinople* is taken by *Comnenus.* *Nicephorus* is ſent to a Covent. *Alexius Comnenus, Iſaac's* ſon, ſucceeds, 37 yeers. The *Normans* ſtrive to reſtore *Michael.* In the Weſt, Pope *Gregory* is beſieged in *Rome* by the Emperour; who takes *Rome,* and is Crowned by *Clement.* *Gregory* hides himſelf in S. *Angelo.* *Herman* D. of *Lorrain* being Crowned by the *Saxons,* is expelled by the Emperour, who again is defeated by the *Saxons.* *Herman* at laſt yieldeth, and is pardoned; and rebelling again, is ſtoned by a woman, and brained. The *Saxons* ſubmit. *Normandy* is invaded by the *French,* and *France* by the *Engliſh.* *Alphonſus* in *Spain* getteth *Toledo,* with other places. The Arch-Biſhop of *Toledo* made Primate of *Spain.* *Alphonſus* gives to *Henry* of *Lorrain* his daughter, with *Portugal,* to hold of *Leon.* *Spain* invaded by the *African Moors.* *William* King of *England* built two Monaſteries in *England,* and one in *Normandy:* he dyeth, and is denyed burial at *Caen.* Succeeded *William Rufus* 12 yeers. *Robert* Duke of *Normandy* attempteth *England.* The King compounds with *Odo* his Uncle. *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* rebuildeth the Church of *Durham,* builds *Dumfermling* Church, and makes it the Sepulchre of the Kings of *Scotland:* he erected the Biſhopricks of *Murrey* and *Cathnes.* *Solomon* of *Hungary* built *Varadinum,* and makes it a Biſhoprick. *Boleſlaus* of *Poland* falls mad: his Brother *Uladiſlaus* reigned 20 yeers, but would not be called King. *Canutus* of *Denmark* falls out with his people, and is ſlain with his brother in a Church. His brother *Olaus* ſucceeded 7 yeers. *Uratiſlaus* made King of *Bohemia, Moravia, Luſatia,* and *Sileſia,* by the Emperour. In *Flanders* there was ſome difference between *Robert* and *Baldwin* about St. *Omars.* *Robert* goeth to *Jeruſalem,* but is miraculouſly kept out of the Temple till he had promiſed reſtitution to *Baldwin.* The diſeaſe called *Eryſipelas,* or *Ignis ſacer,* followed upon the ſight of a fiery Dragon in the Ayre. *Friezland* beſtowed upon the Biſhop of *Utricht* by the Emperour.

In the Church, Againſt Pope *Gregory* is ſet up *Clement* the third, 21 yeers; which made up the four and twentieth Schiſm. *Rome* taken by *Henry,* and burnt by *Robert* the *Norman,* who carryed *Gregory* to *Salernum,* where he dyed. His faction the next yeer choſe *Victor* the third, who ſat two yeers. He is driven by *Clement* to S. *Angelo.* *Clement* flyeth to *Ravenna.* *Victor* is poyſoned. *Vrban* the ſecond ſucceeded 11 yeers. This Decad produceth fourteen Councils. The *Bohemians* are inhibited by the Pope to Preach publikely in their own tongue. *Bruno* inſtituted the *Carthuſian* Order. A Sect of the *Meſſalian* hereticks appear under the new name of *Bogomili.* *Vrban* the ſecond makes *Piſa* an Arch-Biſhoprick.

1090

In the Eaſt, *Alexius* builds a School and Hoſpital. He ſends to the Pope for help againſt the Infidels. An expedition is undertaken into *Paleſtina.* The Chriſtian Armies meet at *Conſtantinople.* They promiſe to reſtore to the Empire all they did win, except *Jeruſalem.* *Alexius* keepeth not promiſe with them. They reſtore to him *Nice,* and tender *Antioch;* which he refuſeth. In the Weſt, *Henry* makes peace with *Strasburg* and other places. 12000 Jews killed by the *Croyſadoers* in *Germany.* *Conrade* is proſcribed by *Henry,* who beſiegeth and takes *Mantua,* with ſome other places. *Conrade* is made King of *Italy.* *Godfrey* of *Bullen* made Duke of *Lorrain.* *Henry* repudiates and impriſoneth his wife. *Philip* of *France* repudiates his wife, and is excommunicate for marrying the wife of *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou.* He forſakes her, and is abſolved from two Excommunications. Upon the death of *Vrban,* he takes her again, and is excommunicated again. In *Spain, Alphonſus* changeth the *Gothic* characters into *Latin.* *Ramire* ſlain by the *Moors,* and they by D. *Piedro* in *Navar* and *Aragon.* The *Moors* invade *Toledo,* and kill *Sancho* heir to *Alphonſus,* with many Chriſtians. *William* of *England* invades *Normandy,* is reconciled to *Robert:* they both beſiege *Henry.* They are all three reconciled. The roof of *Bow*-Church, with ſix hundred houſes in *London,* overturned with the winde. *William* and *Robert* are reconciled to *Malcolm,* who is ſlain at *Alnwick* Caſtle. The *French* King aideth *Robert* againſt *William.* Peace is made, and *Robert* morgageth *Normandy* to *William.* The King drives the *Welch* into the Woods and Hills. A Well ſprings with blood fifteen days. *Robert* goeth to *Paleſtina.* The Earls of *Cheſter* and *Shrewſbury* oppreſs the *Welch.* *Shrewſbury* ſlain in *Angleſey* by the *Norwayers.* *William* builds *Weſtminſter-hall,* and the Tower

Yeers of Christ

Tower-wall. In *Scotland*, *Donald* is restored by *Magnus* of *Norway*. The People rebel upon the *Norwayers* claim of the *West-ne Isles*. *Edgar*, *Malcolmes* son, is called in, and ayded by *William Rufus*. *Donald* is taken, imprisoned, and dieth. The *Polander* subdueth the *Prussians* and *Pomeranians*. Civil wars in *Poland*. The *Pomeranians* are again subdued by the *Polander*. The *Hungarians* resist the Princes in their expedition into *Syria*. They are beaten by the *Russians*, with *Coloman* their King. *Ericus* King of *Denmark* with his Queen, go into the Holy Land. The Duke of *Venice* repairs *Lauretta*, and makes it a City. Two hundred *Venetian* ships sent to *Syria*: they take eighteen of the *Pisan* Gallies at *Rhodes*. They sail into *Smyrna*, and take *Askalon*. *Robert* of *Flanders* hinders the Clergy from making Wills, meaning he should be their Heir; but he is forced by the Pope to revoke his Decree. The Christians in the Holy expedition under *Godfrey* of *Bouillon*, made *Boemund* Duke of *Apulia* King of *Antioch*; and *Godfrey* is King of *Jerusalem*. He kills 100000 Infidels at *Askalon*.

In the Church, *Vrban* sits. *Clement* takes the Castle of S. *Angelo*. *Vrban* flyeth, and is restored. *Clement* flyeth. *Vrban* dieth. *Paschal* the second succeedeth 18 yeers. Thirteen Councils held this Decad. About this time were instituted the Feasts of *Simon* and *Jude*, Saint *James*, *Matthias*, and *Mark*. Some *Italian* Marchants begin the Order of Hospitallers in *Syria*. Three days at Easter and Witsontide in the Council of *Constans* appointed to be kept Holy. This expedition into *Syria* produced praying by Beads. The *Cisterstan* Order founded. Six hundred thousand *Croysodoers*.

1100— In the East, *Alexius* betrayeth *Vrspergensis* and his forces going to *Syria*. He betrayeth the *Croysadoers*. Again restoreth *Nice* to the Turk, and hinders our expedition both by Sea and Land. *Boemund* in revenge takes *Dyrrachium*, and forceth him to promise his ayd. In the West, *Brandeburg* is recovered from the *Vandals*. The Emperour is taken and imprisoned by his son. The Bishops of *Mentz*, *Colen*, and *Worms*, devest him of his Robes. He dieth, and lay unburyed 5 yeers. His son *Henry* the fifth succeeded 18 yeers. He invades *Hungary* for their treachery to the *Croysadoers*. He hath wars with *Poland* and the *Flemings*. *Lewis* the Gross reigns in *France* 28 yeers. Against him divers of his Nobility joyn with the *English*. The *Russians* are beaten by the *Polanders*. *Boleslaus* the *Polander*, with *Hungary*, league against the Emperour. *Boleslaus* craveth Peace. The *Danish* King and Queen die in *Cyprus*. *Magnus* King of *Norway* slain in *Ireland*. *Venice* make a league with *Hungary*, and take *Brandescum* from the *Normans*. The *Venetians* send a hundred ships to *Syria*: for their good service at *Sidon* and *Ptolemais*, they obtain of *Baldwin*, a Street, a Church, a Market, and other priviledges. *Robert* of *Flanders* sweareth Fealty to the Emperour, and is reconciled to him. The Haven of *Staven* in *Frisia* stopt by Corn flung over-boord by a rich Widow there. The *Frieslanders* rebel, and are subdued by the Earl of *Holland*. In *Zealand*, the *Hollanders* are beaten by the *Flemings*. *Godfrey* of *Jerusalem* dieth of the Plague; his brother *Baldwin* succeeds 18 yeers. *Boemund* is taken by the Turks. *Tancred* his Deputy takes *Apamea*, and is taken and kept five yeers. *Raemund* is ransomed, and *Baldwin* wounded. *Hugh* Earl of *Tiberias* slain by a dart. *Bertrand* made Earl of *Tripoli*. *Tancred* beats the Turks. *William* of *England* slain in the New Forrest. *Henry* the first succeeds 35 yeers. He drives the Earl of *Shrewsbury* into *Normandy*. Great dissention between the King, and *Ansel* Arch Bishop of *Canterbury*. The King and *Robert* of *Normandy* differ. *Robert* is taken, and *Normandy* subdued by the King. *Robert* imprisoned at *Cardiff*, and his eys put out. *Flemings* plant in *Wales*. The Emperour is espoused to *Maud* the Kings daughter at six yeers old. The marryed Priests are persecuted. In *Scotland* *Donald* dieth in prison. *Edgar*, *Malcolms* son, reigned 8 yeers. The first anoynted King there. He built *Coldingham*-Monastery, and enricheth the Church of *Durham*. His brother *Alexander* succeeds 15 yeers. He defeateth the robbers of *Ross*, and executeth the ringleaders.

In the Church: *Paschal* was the first Pope that subscribed the yeer of his Papacy. *Clement* dieth, and *Allectus* is chosen; but he giveth over. *Theodoricus* chosen and deposed. *Sylvester* is elected and banished. So the Schism of 21 yeers endeth. *Paschal* suspends the *Liegroirs* from the Sacrament, till they had digged up the Emperours body, and laid it in a prophane place. He raiseth the *Normans* of *Apulia* against the Emperour. Fourteen Synods this Decad. *Fluentius* Bishop of *Florence* deposed, for saying Antichrist was then born. Differences between the Pope and the Princes about investitures. *Pomerania* converted. The Bishoprick of *Ely* founded. The Order of Regular Canons instituted. *Bethlem* made a Bishoprick under the Patriarch of *Jerusalem*.

In

Yeers of Chriſt.

1110

In the Eaſt. *Alexius* profers to aſſiſt the Pope againſt *Henry*, if he will beſtow on him the Latine Empire. To *Alexius* ſucceeds *Comnenus*, or *Calo-Johannes*, 24 yeers. He takes *Soſopolis* from the Turks. In the Weſt, *Henry* the fifth burieth his father at *Spire*: he forceth the Pope to crown him, and to confirm to him the Inveſtitures. Divers in *Italy* and *Germany* revolt. The Biſhop of *Mentz* excommunicates him. He beats the Saxons, and waſtes the Biſhop of *Colens* territories. He is beaten by the Saxons, and forced to deliver the Biſhop of *Mentz*. The Popes Legat excommunicates the Emperour. He waſtes the Popes territories, and ſets up *Gregory* an Anti-Pope, and invades *France*. The French invade *Normandy*. *Alphonſus* Duke of *Portugal* is ſaluted King by the Army, after he had defeated four Saracen Kings, whoſe heads are born by the *Portugal* Kings in their Arms. *Saragoſſe* is recovered from the Moors. *Boleſlaus* of *Poland* beats the *Pruſſians* and *Pomeranians*: he waſteth *Bohemia*, and puts out the Palatine of *Cracovia* his eyes. *Poland* is plundered by the *Hungarians*. *Pomerania* ſubdued again. *Dalmatia* revolteth from the *Venetians* to the *Hungarians*; but the Duke recovers it again, and ſubdueth *Croatia*. *Dalmatia* revolteth again. The Duke goeth againſt them, and is ſlain: ſo truce is made for five yeers. In *Hungary*, order is given to geld *Bela* the ſon of *Almus*: but he was preſented with Cats ſtones in ſtead of his. *Steven* the ſecond reigns in *Hungary* 17 yeers: he waſtes *Polonia*. *Canutus* of *Denmark* is killed by *Magnus*. The people rebel; and *Magnus* is baniſhed into *Gothland*. The *Suevians* chuſe a King of their own; whom the *Goths* expel. *Baldwyn* is beaten by the *Turks* in *Cœlo-Syria*. The *Saraeens* repulſed from *Joppe*. *Baldwyn* dieth. His couſen ſucceeds, called *Baldwyn* the ſecond. *Antioch* is annexed to the Kingdom of *Jeruſalem*; *Roger* being ſlain by the *Turks*. *Conſtance* taken by the Earl of *Anjou*, is recovered by the King of *England*; who ſubdueth *Wales*: he oppreſſeth both Church and State. The *Thames* almoſt dry for two days. The firſt foundation of Parliaments. *William* the ſon of *Robert* ſet up in *Normandy* by the *French* and *Flemings*: he will not admit the Popes Legat. *Henry* beats the *French* and *Flemings* in *Normandy*, where Earl *Baldwyn* of *Flanders* is ſlain. *Northumberland* and *Huntingdon* are by Marriage annexed to the Crown of *Scotland*. The King ſeeth the Earl of *Merne*'s ſon hanged for murther: he was ſet upon by thieves, and kills them: he built ſome Churches and Abbeys.

In the Church: *Paſcal* ſits; he raiſeth Forces againſt the Emperour. *Maud*, Princeſs of *Hetruria* makes the Church her heir. The Emperour ſtrives to recover her lands. Upon *Paſcal*'s death ariſeth the five and twentieth Schiſm; *Gelaſius* the ſecond, and *Gregory* the eighth, being both choſen. *Gelaſius* dieth; and *Calixtus* the ſecond ſucceeds 5 yeers. This Decad affordeth twelve Councils. Knights of S. *John* of *Jeruſalem* inſtituted. S. *Bernard* founded the Monaſtery of *Clareval*; who was Abbot there 36 yeers. The Premonſtrants inſtituted. The Templers are alſo founded, to ſecure the highways.

1120

In the Eaſt, the Emperour beats the Scythians in *Thrace*: he invades the Venetian territories. The Duke of *Venice* takes many Iſlands from the Greeks. In the Weſt, the Emperour reſigneth the Inveſtitures. The Biſhop of *Mentz* forced to diſclaim tythes in *Thuringe*. *Lotharius* of *Saxony* proſcribed. The Emperour helps the Engliſh againſt the French: He dieth iſſueleſs. *Lotharius* Duke of *Saxony* ſucceeds 12 yeers. *Conrad* Duke of *Suevia* is crowned at *Milan* King of *Lombardy*. The Pope excommunicates him, with the Biſhop of *Milan*. *Spire* and *Ulme* taken by the Emperour. The Biſhop of *Mentz* his eyes put out. *Lewis* of *France* beats the Emperour: he crowns his ſon *Philip* at two yeers old; who died by a fall from his horſe. In *Spain*, S. *James* of *Compoſtella* is made an Archbiſhoprick. *Calatrava* won from the Moor by *Alphonſus* of *Caſtile*: he makes himſelf Emperour of *Spain*. *Alphonſus* of *Arragon* is ſlain. *Boleſlaus* defeats the Rebels in *Poland*, and rebuilds *Cracovia*, being burnt. *Steven* of *Hungary* being childleſs, hath blinde *Bela* preferred for his ſucceſſor by the Pope: he is adopted by *Steven*. In *Denmark*, the People ſet up *Ericus*, and depoſe *Harold*. *Ericus* eſcapeth a danger. One *Harold* invades the Kingdom of *Norway*, and puts out the eyes of *Magnus*, and geldeth him. The *Venetians* beat the Infidels at *Joppa*: to them is alotted a third part of *Tyre*. The *Turks* invade *Syria*. The King, with divers Nobles, are taken. *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou* leaveth his Earldome, and returns to *Syria*. *Tyre* is taken, and the King ranſomed; who leaves his daughter in pledge, and redeems her with the Saracen ſpoils. The Hollanders rebel, and are ſubdued by the Emperour. *Charles* the good

Yeers of Christ.

of *Flanders*, with his Almoner, distribute in one day to the poor 78000 loaves. He is killed in the Church of *Bruges* for his charity, by the family of the *Stratenses*. *William*, *Robert*'s son of *Normandy*, made Earl by the French King. He oppressed the people, and is killed at the siege of *Alost*. Prince *William* of *England*, with 150, is drowned in the sea. *Normandy* rebels, and is subdued. King *Henry* invadeth *France*, for aiding *William* Earl of *Flanders*. *David* King of *Scotland* punisheth severely unjust Judges: he built Holy-Rood-house, and founded fifteen Abbeys.

In the Church: *Calixtus* sits yet. *Gregory* the Anti-pope is carried about the streets of *Rome* on horse-back with his face to the tail, and then imprisoned. To *Calixtus* succeeds *Honorius* the second, five yeers: he resisteth *Roger* in the Kingdom of *Apulia*. There were seven Synods held this Decad. At *Rome*, the Archbishop of *Lyons* slain, for slandering the Clergie.

1130— In the East, it is agreed that *Antioch* should hold of the Empire. *John*, son to *Isaac* the Emperours brother, revolts to the Sultan of *Iconium*. The Emperour both commends and beats his son, for setting rashly upon the Turks. In the West, the Emperour is crowned by the Pope at *Liege*. *Lotharius* crowned at *Rome*. The Civil Laws are revived. The Emperour subdueth *Lombardy*, except *Milan* and *Verona*: He expels *Roger* King of *Sicily* out of *Italy*, and giveth *Apulia* to one *Raynulf*. To him succeeded *Conrad* 3. fourteen yeers. He proscribes *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*. The *Guelphs* and *Gibelines* begin now to quarrel, under these names. King *Lewis* the sixth of *France* dieth; to whom succeeded his son *Lewis* the seventh, 44 yeers. In *Hungary*, divers Lords rebel against King *Bela*, and call in the *Polonians* and *Russians*, who are defeated. In *Denmark*, *Ericus* kills *Harold*, and two of his sons: *Olaus* the third escapeth in womans apparel, unto *Norway*. *Harold* of *Norway* is killed by *Syward*, and he by *Harold*'s sons. The Emperour takes *Frisia* from the Bishop of *Utricht*, and gives it to *Thierry* Earl of *Holland*; who wastes the Bishops country, and expels him. To *Baldwyn* in *Jerusalem*, succeeds *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou*, 11 yeers: He takes *Cæsarea-Philippi*, and buildeth two Castles neer *Ascalon*. In *England*, *Steven*, nephew to *Henry*, reigneth 18 yeers: He is opposed by his Peers, and defeats the Scots: He takes divers Castles from his Lords, and drives the Earl of *Glocester* into *France*. Peace between *England* and *Scotland*.

In the Church, *Innocent* the second sate 13 yeers: *Anastasius* his Anti-Pope makes the 26 Schism. *Innocent* fleeth into *France*, and is by the French restored. The Towns that held with *Innocent* are taken by *Roger*, who spoils the Popes territories. He takes *Innocent*, and compels him to crown him King of *Italy*. This Decad produced ten Councils. The Pope makes *Genoa* an Archbishoprick. The Feasts of S. *Thomas*, S. *Luke*, and S. *Bartholomew*, were instituted about this time.

1140— In the East, the Emperour died of a wound by a poysoned arrow, and makes his youngest son, *Emanuel Comnenus*, successor, 38 yeers. His coasts are infested by Pirates. He discovereth *Conrad*'s counsels to the Turks, and sells Meal mingled with Lyme to his Army. *Roger* King of *Sicily* takes divers places from him; who is defeated in *Sicily* by the Emperour's army. *Servia* and *Hungary* wasted by the Emperour. In the West, the Emperour takes *Winsburge*; where the women, in stead of their goods, carried out their husbands. *Henry* the Lion restored to the Dukedom of *Saxony*. The new Senate at *Rome* incense the Emperour against the Pope. The Emperour raiseth 200000 men for the Holy Land, under *Conrad*; whose projects at *Constant* are discovered by *Emanuel*: upon which, he returns, having lost the most of his men. He makes *Frederic Barbarossa*, his brother's son, successor; passing by his own son. The French King undertakes an Expedition unto *Syria*, to expiate his burning of a Church with three hundred people in it. King *Lewis*, in his return from *Syria*, is taken prisoner by the *Greeks*, and rescued by the *Sicilian* Fleet. *Alphonsus* makes *Portugal* tributary to the Pope. *Alphonsus* the Emperour takes *Cordube* and other places from the *Moors*. The *Arragonians* worsted by the *Navarrois*. The *Moors* lose *Lisbon*. *Peter*, an Earl of *Poland*, loseth his tongue and eyes, for reproving the King. He is deposed by the people, and fleeth to the Emperour; who would have restored him, but could not. *Boleslaus* his brother succeeds 27 yeers. The *Hungarians* put the Imperialists (who had invaded *Hungary*) to flight. *Olaus*, *Harold*'s son, claims *Denmark*; but is defeated by *Ericus*, and driven into *Holland*, where he was drowned. *Ericus* goeth into *Syria*; returns, and becomes a Monk, and resignes his Crown. His son *Sueno* is chosen by the *Silanders*; and *Canutus*, son to *Magnus*,

Magnus, by the *Jutians*. This bred Civil Wars. *Ericus* of *Suevia* is ſlain by *Henry*, *Sueno*'s ſon of *Denmark*. *Venice* aideth *Emanuel* againſt King *Roger* of *Sicily*. S. *Mark*'s tower built. The Pirates defeated by the Venetians. *Fulk* King of *Jeruſalem* is brained with a fall from his horſe. *Baldwyn* the third ſucceedeth, with his mother, 20 yeers. *Edeſſa* taken by the Sultan; who, for his cruelty, is ſlain. The Chriſtian Princes fall out at *Damaſcus*. *Antioch* taken by *Noradin* the Sultan; and Prince *Raymund* killed. The Earl of *Flanders* goeth into *Syria*. In *England*, *Maud* landeth, and is crowned: *Steven* taken, and impriſoned. She fleeth to *Oxford*, and is carried thence in a Coffin to *Glouceſter*. King *Steven* is releaſed: he beſiegeth *Maud* in *Oxford*; who eſcapes in a ſnowie night. Divers places yeeld to *Steven*. *Maud* goeth into *Normandy*. *Henry* lands in *England* with an Army, and goeth into *Scotland*; where he is knighted. King *David* of *Scotland* erecteth four Biſhopricks.

Yeers of Chriſt.

In the Church: *Innocent* ſits yet: he takes *Tybur*: he oppoſeteth the Romane Government by two Conſuls, and three hundred Senators: he is reconciled by S. *Bernard* with *France*. *Celeſtinus* the ſecond ſucceeded five months: then *Socius* the ſecond, eleven months: He was ſlain in a ſedition. The Senate challenge the Pope's revenues. *Eugenius* the third ſucceeds ſeven yeers. He, by *Lewis* of *France* his Forces going for *Syria*, reduceth *Rome* to her old Government. He fleeth into *France*. Ten Synods this Decad. The Carmelites Order founded on Mount *Carmel*. *Petrobruſianus* denieth Baptiſm to Infants. The Alcoran tranſlated into Latine by *Peter* Abbot of *Clugney*.

In the Eaſt, the Emperour being beaten by *Roger* twice, makes peace with him. The Greek Fleet overcome by *William* King of *Sicily*. The Emperour makes an Expedition againſt the *Armenians* in *Cilicia*. *Baldwyn* King of *Jeruſalem* defeats the *Egyptians*, and kills 5000 of them. He gives *Aſcalon* to the Earl of *Joppa*. The Biſhops complain to the Pope againſt the Templers, for refuſing to pay tythes. *Baldwyn* beats the Turks, and defeats *Noradin* neer *Jordan*. In the Weſt, the Emperour takes *Placentia*, and ſome other places: He holds the Pope's ſtirrup at *Sutrium*: He is crowned at *Rome*, and overthrows *Spoletum*. *Frederic* the Emperour quarrels with the Pope, and is reconciled. The Pope quarrels again with *Frederic*, and excommunicates him. In *Denmark*, *Canutus* obtains the Government of *Jutia*: he makes himſelf King. *Sueno* fleeth into *Germany*. The Kingdom is divided between *Sueno* and *Canutus*. *Sueno* kills *Canutus* at a feaſt; and *Sueno* is killed not long after. *Waldemur*, ſon of *Canutus* that was ſlain by *Magnus*, reigns alone. *Ingo* King of *Norway* with moſt of his Nobles, purſuing their enemies on the ice, are drowned. The *Danes* invade *Suevia*, and are driven back with cold. King *Charles* of *Suevia* is ſlain by *Canutus* ſon S. *Ericus*. The *Venetians* make *Pole* tributary. In *Holland*, the people of *Harlem* kill 900 Friſons, who had invaded the Countrey. *Henry* returns into *England*: thirty Caſtles revolt to him: he is adopted by *Steven*; who ſucceeded King 34 yeers. He reforms the Laws, and raſeth divers Caſtles. He takes *Cumberland* and *Northumberland* from *Malcolm*, and gives him *Huntington*. He doth homage in *France* for *Normandy*. He is beaten by the Welch. Peace between *France* and *England*, by the marriage of *Henry*'s eldeſt ſon *Richard* to *Margaret* the French King's daughter. *Malcolm* of *Scotland* forced to accompany *Henry* into *France*; for which he was troubled at home, when he returned. 1150

In the Church: *Anaſtaſius* the fourth ſate 4 months: then *Adrian* the fourth, an Engliſh man, 4 yeers. He is forced to crown *William* King of *Sicily*. He excommunicates *Frederick*, and is choaked with a flye in his drink. This Decad affordeth three Councils. *Gratian* collecteth the books of Decretals. The *Eremites* of S. *Auſtins* Rule ſet up by *William* Duke of *Aquitane*. Chriſtianity planted in *Livonia*. *Petrus Waldo*, a Merchant of *Lyons*, father of the Waldenſes. The Templers prevail at *Rome* againſt the Biſhops.

In the Eaſt, *Emanuel* the Emperour perſecutes the *Venetians*, upon a Prophecie that they ſhould be maſters of *Conſtant*. He deſires of the Pope to be Emperour of *Italy*; and thereupon promiſeth to reconcile the Greek and Latine Churches. He beſiegeth *Damiata*, and returns with much plunder. He is forced from *Damiata* the ſecond time by rain. The Prince of *Antioch* taken by the Governour of *Damaſcus*. *Almaricus*, *Baldwyn*'s brother, is King of *Jeruſalem* twelve yeers. He aideth the Egyptian againſt the Perſian: then, againſt promiſe, aideth the Greeks againſt the Egyptian. He implores the Turks aid. *Syraconus* the Turk, having killed the Egyptian Sultan, makes himſelf Caliph. In the Weſt, *Frederick* burns 1160

Yeers of Christ.

burns *Cromona*, raſeth *Milan*, and ſoweth it with ſalt; ſubdueth *Lombardy*, and plundereth *Mentz*, for killing their Biſhops. The *Lombards* and *Venetians* joyn againſt him, and repair *Milan*. He is crowned at *Rome*. *Boleſlaus* of *Poland*, by gifts, winketh at the *Pruſſians* Idolatry; who rebel twice. The *Polanders*, in purſuing them into the mariſhes, are drowned. The *Hungarians* win *Dalmatia*, invade the *Venetian* Lands, and ſtir the *Greeks* againſt them. *Bohemia* is invaded by the Emperour. *Waldemare* King of *Denmark* ſubmits his Kingdom to the Emperour. The Danes have Wars, then Peace with the *Rugians*. They are forced to Chriſtianity. *Abſalon* Biſhop of *Roſchild* beats the *Vandals* in their own Country. *Ladiſlans*, Vicar of the Empire, and King of *Hungary*, aids the Emperor againſt *Milan*; whereupon, his Arms are changed from an Eagle to a Lion Argent. The King entereth into a Monaſtery, and makes *Vogiſlaus* Governour; whom the King's ſon woundeth. The Venetian Merchants treacherouſly killed by the Greek Emperour: they take *Clios*. *Thierry* of *Flanders* maketh his fourth Expedition into *Syria*. *Philip* his ſon ſucceeds 25 yeers: he obtains *Doway* from the Earl of *Heinalt*. The *Hollanders* and *Frieſlanders* at variance. In *England*, the King and *Becket* differ: *Becket* fleeth into *Flanders*; his goods are confiſcated; and appeals to *Rome* forbid. The *Welch* are ſubdued. *Becket* is reſtored by the French King's means. *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* builds the Abbey of S. *Andrews*. His brother *William* ſucceeds 49 yeers: to him is reſtored a part of *Northumberland* by *Henry*, who repents of his grant, and quarrels with *Malcolm*: hereupon, the Engliſh invade *Cumberland*.

In the Church: *Alexander* the third ſits 21 yeers: his anti-Pope was *Victor* the fourth; which makes the ſeven and twentieth Schiſm. *Victor* and the Emperour are excommunicated by *Alexander*. *Victor* dieth; and the Emperours faction chuſeth *Paſchal* the third. *Alexander* fleeth to *Benevent*, and fortifieth *Tuſculum*. *Paſchal* dieth, and *Calixtus* the third choſen. Seven Synods held this Decad. The bodies of the three Wiſe-men are tranſlated from *Milan* to *Colen*. *Paſchal* canonizeth *Charles* the Great. The Order of *Humiliantes* began now in *Lombardy*: theſe were poor people who in white cloathes had reſtitution of their poſſeſſions from the Emperour: theſe habits they retained ſtill.

1170— In the Eaſt, the Emperour gives in Dowry with his daughter the kingdom of *Theſſaly*, to *Reyner* ſon to the Marqueſs of *Montferrat*: he is beaten by the Venetians, and by the Sultan of *Iconium*: he marrieth his ſon to the French King's daughter. *Emanuel* dieth. In *Jeruſalem*, to *Almaricus* ſucceedeth *Baldwyn* the fourth. The Count of *Tripolis* is his tutor. He waſtes the Country of *Damaſcus*. *Baldwyn* becometh leprous. In the Weſt, the Emperour takes divers places in *Italy*. Divers places in *Germany* taken by the Biſhop of *Mentz*, for the Emperour. At *Venice*, peace is made between the Pope and the Emperour. *Henry* the Lion being returned from *Syria*, where he was oppoſed by the Templers, is proſcribed by the Emperour, and condemned of treaſon. In *Poland*, *Miceſlaus* is depoſed, and *Caſimire* his brother choſen; to whom *Miceſlaus* ſubmits. In *Denmark* are divers rebellions. In *Bohemia*, *Frederic* ſon to *Ladiſlaus* is aided by the Emperour to recover his kingdom: he incurreth the peoples hatred, for oppreſſion, and preferring a Germane to prime places. *Vitalis Michael*, the Duke of *Venice*, is ſlain, for ſuffering the Greeks to abuſe the State. Two great Pillars erected at *Venice* by a *Lombard*, who deſired that Cheaters might play at Dice between them, unpuniſhed. The Bank is here firſt erected. The Pope beſtows a Ring on the Duke, to caſt into the Sea, in ſigne of its marriage and ſubjection to them: a Cuſtom yet obſerved yeerly. The Pope priviledgeth the Duke and his ſucceſſors to have a Canopie over them, and eight ſilver trumpets to be ſounded before them. The Earls of *Flanders* and *Heinalt* make War upon the Earl of *Avighon*, for murthering the Biſhop of *Cambrey*. The Earl beſtoweth Weſt-*Flanders* on *Philip* the French King with his Neece. In *England*, *Becket* is killed in *Canterbury*-Church. *Ireland* is maſtered. *Becket*'s murtherers condemned to ſerve all their days in *Syria*. The King is enjoyned Penance, and to maintain 200 men in *Paleſtine* for one yeer. The King overcomes thoſe that would have depoſed him. He goeth bare-foot, and is whipped. The Scots King taken priſoner: then a peace is made. Itinerant Juſtices appointed. Prince *Arthur*'s body digged out of *Glaſtenbury* Church-yard. The Scots aid Prince *Henry* of *England* againſt his father. King *William* of *Scotland* ranſomed, upon the payment of a great ſum, and rendering of divers Caſtles. The Abbeys of *Arbroth* and *Hadington* built.

In the Church: Pope *Alexander* yet ſits, but is kept out of *Rome*. Peace between the Pope and Emperour: ſo the Schiſm endeth. The Pope is recalled to *Rome*. Four Councils held this Decad. The Order of Croſſed Friars inſtituted. The Pope erecteth a Bi-

a Biſhoprick at his own City *Alexandria* in *Italy*, for their good ſervice againſt the Emperour. The *Albingenſes* driven out of *Tholoſe*, infect *Bohemia*. In a Synod of *Rome* of three hundred Biſhops, *Peter Lombard* is declared an Heretick, but 36 after he was juſtified by Pope *Innocent* the third. *Yeers of Chriſt.*

In the Eaſt, *Emanuel* being dead, his ſon *Alexius* ſucceeds, under his Mothers tuition, 2 yeers. *Andronicus*, *Emanuels* couſin, kills the Tutors, ſtrangles the Emperours mother, poyſoneth his ſiſter, murthers *Alexius*, and flings his body into the Sea; and ſo ſets up himſelf 2 yeers. *Iſaac Angelus* plotteth againſt him. *Andronicus* murthers *Iſaac*'s brethren. *Iſaac* being in danger, fleeth to the Temple, and is proclaimed Emperour. *Andronicus* is tortured to death. *Iſaac Angelus* reigns 9 yeers. The Pyrats takes ſeventy of his Ships. His General *Brana* aſpireth, beſiegeth *Conſtantinople*, and is killed. He makes a wicked League with *Saladine*; who takes all the Cities of *Meſopotamia* and *Aleppo* by treaſon. He invaded *Paleſtina*, and is driven back by the Earl of *Tripolis*. King *Baldwin* dieth. *Baldwin* the fifth ſucceeded, who after 7 moneths was poyſoned by his mother, that her husband *Guy* of *Luſignan* might ſucceed, who reigned 10 yeers. The Apoſtate Chriſtians called *Mamelucks*, are inſtituted by *Saladine*. The Earl of *Tripolis* calls in *Saladine* againſt *Guy*, whom he takes priſoner, and ſubdues all *Syria*, except *Tyre* and *Tripolis*. *Guy* abjureth the kingdom, and is releaſed. *Barbaroſſa* coming towards *Syria*, defeats the Turks three times. He is drowned in the River. In the Weſt, *Otho* of *Bavaria* doth much miſchief in *Germany*. He is expelled. *Henry* is maintained in *Normandy* by the Engliſh. Peace with *Lombardy*. At *Erford* Dyet, ſix Earls with many others, ſlain by the falling of the room. The Emperour and Pope at odds about the Biſhoprick of *Triers*. The Pope denyeth to part with the inheritance of *Matildis*, to Crown the Emperours ſon, and to admit his Biſhop to *Triers*. The Biſhop of *Mentz* depoſed for adhering to the Pope. *Frederick* haſteneth for *Syria* with an hundred and fifty thouſand men, and is ill uſed by *Iſaac*. *Henry* the Lion returns, takes *Lubec* and other places. In *France*, *Philip* the ſecond reigns 42 yeers. The Jews are expelled *France*. The French have wars with *Flanders* and *Burgundy*. The *Flemings* forced to Peace. *Richard* and *John* of *England* beſieged by the French, who make wars againſt *England*. King *Philip* and *Richard* undertake an expedition into *Syria*. Wars in *Spain* between *Ferdinand* and *Alphonſus* of *Portugal*. The *Moors* defeated, and their King ſlain. *Sanctius* regns in *Portugal* 26 yeers. He is ayded by the *Hollanders* againſt the *Moors*. The *Polander* recovers much of *Ruſſia* and *Lituania*. The *Polonians* and *Hungarians* invade each other. Peace for 2 yeers. *Miceſlaus* the Kings brother, is received as King into *Cracovia*. *Caſimire* takes the City, and pardoneth his brother. *Canutus* of *Denmark* defeats *Harold* the uſurper. He denyeth fealty to the Emperour. The *Danes* beat *Bugiſlaus* the *Vandal*. The Emperour returns the Kings ſiſter for not paying the reſt of her Dowry. The *Bohemians* are proſcribed by the Emperour: whom they ſlight. Great troubles in *Bohemia* between King *Frederick* and his rebellious ſubjects. ſubjects. *Philip* leaveth the Government of *Flanders* to his wife, and goeth into *Syria* with eighty ſeven Netherland Ships. In *England*, the King makes his ſon *John* King of *Ireland*. The Welch ſwear fealty to the King. *Richard* joyneth with the French againſt his Father. *Jeffery* the Kings ſon trodden to death at *Paris*. King *Henry* dieth curſing his children. *Richard* the firſt ſucceeded 9 yeers. He releaſeth his mother, and maketh the Biſhop of *Ely* his Deputy. The Pope ſends to the Scots King a Roſe of gold. He payeth part of his ranſom, and *Edinburgh* Caſtle is reſtored. 1180

In the Church: Pope *Alexander* perſwades a new expedition into *Syria*. To him ſucceeds *Lucius* the third 4 yeers. He is expelled the City. The Emperour ſends an Army, many of which die with poyſoned waters. He refuſeth to Crown the Emperours ſon. *Vrban* the third ſucceeded 1 yeer. He dieth upon the loſs of *Jeruſalem*. *Gregory* the eighth ſucceeds 1 moneth. Then *Clement* the third 3 yeers. This Decad produced eight Synods. The *Maronites* forſake the Hereſie of the *Monothelites*. The *Temple*-Church in *London* dedicated by *Heraclius* Patriarch of *Jeruſalem*. *Livonia* converted, and *Riga* made a Biſhoprick.

In the Eaſt: *Iſaac* is blinded and put into a Covent by his brother *Alexius Angelus*, whom he had ranſomed. This *Alexius* reigned ten yeers. He pacifieth *Henry* with ſeventy talents. *Alexius* ſon to *Iſaac* the Emperour, goeth for ayd to the *Latin* Princes. *Acon* taken by the *French* and *Engliſh*. *Joppa* taken by *Richard*. He exchangeth *Cyprus* for *Acon* with *Guy*. *Saladine* dieth, and commands his ſhirt to be carryed before him. *Guy* is killed with a fall 1190

Yeers of Christ.

fall from his window. His wife marryed with *Almerick*, who became King of *Jeruſalem* and *Cyprus*. Earl *Montfort* defeats the Infidels. In the Weſt: *Henry* the ſixth reigns Emperour 9 yeers: he is Crowned at *Rome*: his Empreſs is taken by *Tancred*, and reſtored. He ſubdueth *Salern*, *Calabria*, *Apulia*, and *Sicily*. He makes *Tancreds* ſon Earl of *Tarentum*. He forceth *Alexius* to ſatisfie the wrongs done to the Latin Princes. To him ſucceeds *Philip* his brother, and *Otho* Duke of *Saxony*, choſen by oppoſite factions. *Philip* the *French* King arriveth in *Sicily*, and quarrelleth with *Richard*. He leaves his Army with the Duke of *Burgundy*, and returns. He invades *Richards* territories, and ſolicites the Emperour to detain him. He ſurpriſeth *Eureux*, and recovers *Mayne* in *Spain*. *Portugal*, *Navar*, and *Arragon*, league with *Alphonſus* the ninth of *Leon*, againſt *Caſtile*. *Alphonſus* of *Caſtile* is wounded by the *Moors*. *Caſtile* and *Arragon* invade *Leon* and *Navarr*. In *Sicily*, *William* rebelleth; his eys are put out, and he is ſent into *Germany*. The *Sicilians* chuſe another King, whom the Emperour Crowned with an iron Crown red hot, and nailed it to his head. In *Hungary*, *Bela* dieth; his ſon *Emerie* ſucceeds 9 yeers. His brother rebelleth, and is pardoned. The *Polander* ſubdues the *Pruſſians*, and makes a perpetual Peace with *Hungary*. The King dieth, his ſon *Leſcus* ſucceeded 6 yeers. *Miceſlaus* the uſurper defeated, and his ſon ſlain. The Queen reſignes the Government to him. The Danes enter *Vandalia*. *Waldemare* Biſhop of *Sleſwic* invades the kingdom, is taken and impriſoned. *Adolph* Earl of *Holſtein* makes great troubles in *Denmark*. In *Bohemia*, *Wenceſlaus* is expelled by *Primiſlaus*. He with *Ladiſlaus*, make great troubles there. The *Piſans* are beaten by the *Venetians*. The Duke retireth into a Monaſtery. *Flanders*, upon the Earls death, is divided between *Baldwin* of *Henalt*, *Lewis* the French Kings ſon, and *Maud* the Earls widow. *Baldwin* leagueth with *England*, and helpeth *Otho* againſt *Philip* the Emperour. The *Hollanders* overcome the *Flemings*. *Thyerry* of *Holland* defeats the Earl of *Guelders*. *Frieſland* is held of *Holland*. *Richard* of *England* is caſt upon *Cyprus*. He takes *Iſa* the Tyrant, and the Iſland. He is in his return from *Syria* taken by *Leopold* Duke of *Auſtria*, who ſells him to the Emperour. He is releaſed; he recalls his Queen, is Crowned, and expels the French out of *Normandy*. *John* aſpireth and is pardoned. The Biſhop of *Beuvoye* taken, and his Arms ſent by the King to the Pope, with theſe words of *Jacob's* ſons, *See if this be thy ſons coat or not*. The French King is thrice beaten. The King is ſlain by a poyſoned Arrow. His brother *John* ſucceeded 17 yeers. The King of *Scotland* payeth the reſt of his ranſom, and ſends his brother *David* into *Syria*. The Church of *Scotland* exempted by the Pope from the juriſdiction of *York*. *David* is taken by the Egyptians, and redeemed by the Venetians. He returns, and builds the Church of *Dundee*, with ſome Monaſteries. He with the King viſit King *Richard*, and preſent him with 2000 Marks. The King puts out the eys of *Harold* Earl of *Catneſs*, then hangeth him, and geldeth all his male-children, becauſe the Earl had deprived the Biſhop of his eys and tongue.

In the Church, *Clement* the third ſitteth. He ayded *Tancred* againſt *Henry*. *Celeſtine* the third ſucceeded 6 yeers: he gets *Tuſculum* from the Emperour: he makes *Viterbium* a Biſhoprick: by his Legat into *Germany*, he ſolicites for a new expedition into *Syria*. *Innocent* the third ſucceeded 18 yeers: he reſiſteth *Philip* the Emperours Eelection. Two Synods held this Decad. The Jews in a Caſtle in *York*-ſhire kill themſelves. S. *Dominic* of *Spain* inſtituted the *Jacobit* or *Predicant* Fryers.

1200— In the Eaſt, *Thrace* is waſted by the *Perſians*. *Iſaac* is reſtored by the Latin Princes. *Alexius* fleeth. *Iſaac* and his ſon are ſlain by *Alexius Ducas*. The Latins take *Conſtantinople*, of which *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders* is choſen Emperour. *Ducas* is caſt down from a Tower. *Baldwins* hands and feet are cut off, and he ſlain. His brother *Henry* ſucceeds 11 yeers: he recovers many places from the *Valachians*. *Theodorus Laſcaris* makes *Adrianople* his ſeat; who kills the Sultan, and takes *Alexius*. *Henry* aideth *Laſcaris* againſt *David* and *Alexius Comnenus*. The *Tartars* ſit down in the Fens of *Maotis*. The Pope takes the titulary kingdom of *Jeruſalem* from *Almericus* King of *Cyprus*, and gives it to *John Bren* a French Earl, who marrieth the Marqueſs of *Monferrat's* daughter. In the Weſt, *Philip* ſeiſeth upon high *Germany*: he is excommunicated by the Pope. *Philip* is Crowned again at *Acon*, by the Biſhop of *Colen*; whom therefore the Pope excommunicateth, and placeth another Biſhop. *Philip* beſiegeth *Colen*, and takes it. *Otho* flees into *England*, and then compounds with *Philip* to ſucceed him. *Philip* is ſlain by *Otho* the *Palſgrave*, who is therfore proſcribed. To *Philip* ſucceeds *Otho*, and is Crowned at *Rome*, and expelled thence. He takes *Acona* from the Pope by force, with *Apulia* and *Calabria* from *Frederick* Duke of *Suevia*. There is long war with the King of *Arragon* and *Raymund* Earl of *Tholoſe*, for favouring the *Albingenſes*. *Philip* of *France* recovers *Normandy*, having been out of the

Yeers of Chriſt.

the French poſſeſſion 316 yeers: he helpeth *Arthur* againſt King *John*, and puts him out of his poſſeſſions in *France*. Peace made between *Arragon* and *Navarr*. In *Poland*, great conteſtation between *Leſcus* and *Miceſlaus* about the kingdom. *Leſcus* is three times depoſed and reſtored. The *Polanders* are beaten out of *Ruſſia*, and ſo are the *Hungarians*. *Lubeck* yieldeth to the Danes; it is burnt: the King forgives the people their taxes, to rebuild it. The Venetians obtain *Crete* and the *Ægaan* Iſlands, at the taking of *Conſtantinople*: they are aſſiſted by the Weſtern Princes to recover *Iſtria*. *Crete* is taken by the Genoans, and retaken by the Venetians. The Earl of *Flanders* excommunicated by the Pope, for helping *Venice* againſt *Hungary*. The Earl of *Holland*, and Earl of *Gelders*, war againſt the Duke of *Brabant*, and Biſhop of *Utricht*. *William* Earl of *Holland* and *Frieſland* goeth into *Scotland* to claim the kingdom. In his abſence, Count *Leos* invadeth *Holland*; who fleeth upon the Earls return. In *England*. King *John* ſeiſeth the Archbiſhop of *Yorks* temporalties. The Barons refuſe to aid King *John*: he makes his Peace with the *Scots* by marriages: he takes *Mount-Alban* in *France*. Peace for two yeers. The Pope interdicteth *England*, and excommunicates the King: he takes homage of *Wales*, and mony of the Jews. King *William* of *Scotland* refuſeth to aid King *John* againſt the French. The Pope ſends him a rich Sword and Helmet, with the title of *Defender of the Faith*. King *John*'s Caſtle at *Barwick* raſed by King *William*: he erecteth the Biſhoprick of *Argile*. *John* King *Williams* youngeſt ſon, with fourteen more, drowned by an inundation at *Bertha*. The King builds *Perth*.

In the Church, Pope *Innocent* ſits. He ſets out his Decretals. He excommunicates *Philip* the Emperour, and *Raymond* Earl of *Tholoſe*. Two Councils held this Decad. The Hereticks *Almaricans*, under ſhew of Chaſtity, committed all Uncleanneſs. The Greek Churches receive the Latin Ceremonies. The Order of women called Begines from *Rege* the Foundreſs. Saint *Francis*, Author of the *Franciſcans*, or Fryars minors.

1210

In the Eaſt, *Peter* of *Conſtantinople* is Crowned at *Rome*, and in his return impriſoned by *Laſcaris*; during which time *Jolanta* governeth. At laſt, *Peter* is ſlain at a Feaſt, by *Laſcaris* of *Adrianople*. The Latin Princes beſiege *Damiata*, and take it, after nineteen moneths. The *Sultan* profered *Jeruſalem*, with the Croſs, and much mony, which the Popes Legat refuſed. In the Weſt, the Emperour is denyed *Ancona*, and is expelled *Rome*; but not long after, he takes *Acona*, with *Apulia*, and *Calabria*. Againſt him, *Frederick* the ſecond is ſet up by the Biſhop of *Mentz* and others, 38 yeers. *Otho* troubleth *Germany*, and aydeth the *Engliſh* againſt the *French*, but with ill ſucceſs. At laſt, being forſaken by all his friends, he dyeth. *Frederick* takes in divers places, and is Crowned at *Rome*. *Philip* the *French* King obtains *England* of the Pope. He warreth againſt the Earl of *Flanders*, for not ayding him againſt King *John* of *England*; and is defeated at Scluſe. *Simon* Earl of *Montfort* in battail kills the Earl of *Tholoſe*, and *Peter* King of *Arragon*. The *French* beat the *Engliſh* and *Flemings* at the battail of *Bovines*. The King of *Caſtile* winneth *Calatrava*. The battail of *Maradel*, in which two hundred thouſand *Moores* are ſlain, and many places recovered in *Spain*. *Henry* King of *Caſtile*, as he was at play, was ſlain with a Tile. *Ferdinand* ſucceeded, in whom *Leon* and *Caſtile* are perpetually united. *Poland* appoints a Governour for *Pomerania*, and takes a hundred Marks yeerly thence. Marryed Prieſts forced to leave their wives, in *Poland*. In *Hungary*, the Queen is murthered by Count *Peter*. The *Danes* take *Stetin* in *Pomerania*, and overcome the *Livonians*. King *John* of *England* ſubdueth the Rebels in *Ireland*. *London* is appointed to be governed by a Major and two Sheriffs. The King reſignes his kingdom to the Pope. Hence the *French* are forbid to invade *England*. The Engliſh and Flemings take 300 ſhips from *Philip* at the Sluce. The Barons rebel, and are excommunicated. The King ſubdues them by the help of the Flemings, *Lewis* of *France* is called in by the Barons. The King poyſoned by a Monk. His ſon *Henry* the third ſucceeded 56 yeers. *Lewis* is forced to abjure the Land, and to reſtore *Normandy* and *Poiſtou*. *Alexander* of *Scotland* aideth *Lewis*, and takes *Carlile*. A Peace is made: *Alexander* reſtoreth *Carlile*; and *Henry*, *Berwick*.

In the Church, *Innocent* ſits yet, who excommunicates *Philip* the Emperour three times. To him ſucceeded *Honorius* the third 10 yeers: he made *John de Columna* General of the Syrian wars. This Decad produced two Councils; one at *Rome*, for the depoſing of *Otho*; the other was the Lateran, of 400 Biſhops, againſt the *Albigenſes*. Pope *Innocent* inſtituted the Order of the *Holy Trinity*, for the redeeming of Captives. The word *Tranſubſtantiation*, firſt uſed in this Lateran Council. The Feaſt called *Triumphus Crucis*, was inſtituted in *Spain*, in remembrance of a great victory over the *Moors*. The Order of poor women inſtituted by S. *Francis* and S. *Clare*.

Yeers of Chrſt.

1220

In the Eaſt, *Robert* of *Conſtantinople* cuts off his wifes noſe, and flings her mother into the Sea: he loſeth many Towns. To him, ſucceeded *Baldwin* the ſecond 34 yeers: whoſe tuition was undertaken by *John Bren* K. of *Jeruſalem*. In *Adrianople*, to *Laſcaris* ſucceeded *John Ducas* his ſon 33 yeers: he defeated *Iſaac* and *Alexius*, and *Robert* of *Conſtantinople*, who aided them. *Theodorus Angelus* taketh *Theſſalonica*, and makes himſelf K. there: he is taken and exoculated by the *Bulgarians*. *Ducas* takes divers Iſlands in the *Ægaan* Sea. The Chriſtians that beſieged *Cayre*, are forced by the overflowing of *Nilus*, to riſe thence, and to reſtore *Damiata*. *Paleſtina* is recovered by *Frederick* the Emp. He makes a Peace with the Sultan for 10 yeers, againſt the Popes will: he is crowned at *Jeruſalem*, and makes *Raynold* D. of *Bavaria* his Lieut. of *Syria*. In the Weſt, *Frederick* expelleth the Saracens out of *Sicily*, and puniſheth Pope *Innocents* two brethren: he renews a League with *France*. The Biſh. of *Colen* murthered by Count *Iſenberg*; for which he was broken on the wheel. *Lombardy* rebelleth by the Popes inſtigation, who excommunicates the Emp. for feigning himſelf ſick in his Syrian expedition: the Emp. goeth notwithſtanding, and the Pope is angry thereat: having recovered *Jeruſalem*, he is forced to return; to recover his own right at home. *Avergne* is forfeited to the Crown of *France*. The French K. dieth, and by his will bequeatheth 60000 Crowns to the Syrian wars. His ſon *Lewis* the 8 ſucceeded 3 yeers: he compoundeth for *Languedoc* with *Simon Montforts* heir: his ſon S. *Lewis* ſucceeded 46 yeers: his mother is Regent; which place is uſurped by his unkle *Philip*, whom the Barons aſſiſted, and the D. of *Britain*; who are beaten by the Q. Army. The *Moors* loſe much in *Adaluſia*, and *Majorca* alſo. The K. of *Sevil* is made tributary to *Caſtile*. In *Poland*, the Teutonicks being driven out of *Syria*, have poſſeſſions allotted them by *Conrade* the Kings uncle, to defend his Lands againſt the *Pruſſians*. The K. is murthered by *Suentopluc* Governour of *Pomerania*, who makes himſelf Pr. thereof. *Boleſlaus* is K. 51 yeers. *Conrade* puts the K. and his mother into a Monaſtery. The K. of *Denmark* is ranſomed, with his ſon. *Lubeck* revolteth from the Danes. The *Dithmarks*, who had revolted to *Holſt*, ſubmit to the K. *Wenceſlaus* the K. of *Bohemia*'s ſon waſteth *Auſtria*. *Candia* revolts from the Venetians, who recover it again. The rebels there kill *Rayner* their Governour. The Venetians being beaten by the Greeks, make Peace with them. Many people periſh in *Friſia* by inundations. The Biſh. of *Utricht* is taken by his vaſſals, and beheaded. *Ferdinand* of *Flanders* takes *Henry* D. of *Brabant* priſoner. In *England*, four yeers Truce is made with *France*. Some rebellions in *Wales* and *Lincoln*-ſhire, and a Sedition in *London*. *Lewis* of *France* takes *Rochel* from the Engliſh. The *Gaſcoins* rebel, and are reduced by *Rich.* E. of *Cornwal*. The kings brother ſideth with the Barons againſt the K. he makes a diſhonourable Peace with the rebellious Welch. In *Scotland*, the Biſh. of *Catneſs* is burnt in his houſe by the people for exaction. *Ennerneſs* taken by the rebels. Upon the death of *Alan* of *Galloway*, high-Conſtable, his poſſeſſions are invaded by his baſe ſon, which cauſed great troubles.

In the Church, *Honorius* ſits yet; he leagueth with *Lombardy* againſt the Emp. To him ſucceeded *Gregory* the ninth 14 yeers: he excommunicates the *Romans*, for expelling him: he inſtigates *John Bren* to invade *Sicily*. By the overflowing of *Tyber*, 7000 people are drowned. Three Synods held this Decad. The Gray Fryers about this time appear in *England*. The Pope demandeth two Prebends in every Biſhoprick, which K. *John* denyeth.

1230

In the Eaſt, *John Bren* ſends *Baldwin* of *Conſtantinople* for aid againſt the Greeks. *Theodorus Angelus* loſeth his eys by the *Bulgarians*. The Latins being beſieged in *Conſtantinople*, are relieved by the Venetians, who obtained from *Baldwin* a piece of the Croſs, with the Spunge and Lance which pierced our Saviour. *Ducas* of *Adrianople* takes *Cyprus*. The Sultan takes *Gaza* and *Askalon*, and defaceth *Jeruſalem*, with the Sepulchre. *Thebald* K. of *Navar*, with ſome French troops, return from *Syria* without acting. In the Weſt, the Emperour is abſolved for a great ſum: he receives from the Sultan of *Babylon*, a rich Tent, wherein the Sun and Moon by their motion ſhewed the hours of the day and night. *Meſſana* in *Sicily* rebelleth. The Emp. ſubdues *Milan*, and moſt of *Italy*; and refuſeth to reſtore *Sardinia* to the Pope: wherefore he is excommunicated. The Popes *Croyſodoers* defeated by him. *Baldwin* of *Conſtantinople* leaveth with the French K. the Crown of thorns. The *Moors* in *Spain* loſe the kingdom of *Certuba* after 260 yeers poſſeſſion. They flee to *Granada*, and make it their kingdom: they loſe *Valentia* to the Arragonian. The K. of *Poland* and his mother eſcape to *Henry* the kings old Tutor, and recover *Cracovia*: he is choſen Governour again. *Elizabeth* the K. of *Hungaries* daughter is Canonized. *Bela* 4th reigneth 35 yeers: he protects the Cumanians againſt the Tartars. The K. of *Denmark* receiveth by reſignation ſome Towns from the *Teutonicks* Mr. Wars in *Bohemia* between K. *Winceſlaus* and his ſon *Primiſlaus*. The *Venetians* quiet *Candy*: they take *Rhodes*; joyn with the Pope againſt the Emp. and burn his beſt ſhip. *Floris* 4 E. of *Holland* ſlain by the E. of *Clermont*, and he by the Earl of *Cleve*. *William* the

the ſecond ſucceeded Earl of *Holland* 20 yeers. In *England*, the K. makes a League with the D. of *Britain*: he ſubdues the Iriſh. The E. of *Kent* impriſoned. *Pembroke* and others rebel. The Welch invade *England*. The Pope is denied aid. The K. reconciled to the Earl of *Kent*. The B. of *Wincheſter* cauſeth great troubles. The Welch Prince ſubmits to *England*. The E. of *Kent* degraded. A traitor drawn in pieces for attempting to kill the K. The Popes Legats brother is killed by the *Oxford*-Scholars. The Scots make peace with the Engliſh. The Popes Legat is denied entrance into *Scotland*, by K. *Alexander*. *Yeers of Chriſt.*

In the Church: *Gregory* ſits yet: he raiſeth *Italy* againſt the Emp. for denying to reſtore *Sardinia*. This Decad affordeth two Synods. *Pruſſia* receiveth the Faith. The King of *England* erecteth the houſe of Converts, now the Rolls. The Greek Church falls off from the Pope.

In the Eaſt, *Will.* of *Verona* is made King of *Theſſalonica* by *Baldwin*. *Ducas* of *Adrianople* grew ſo rich with ſelling of eggs to the Turks in a famine, that he made a Crown of the profits of eggs; which he therefore called *Ovata*: he ſuffered no apparel but of the manufactures of his kingdom to be worn. The *Turks* are expelled out of *Cappadocia* by the *Tartars*. The Saracens beaten and killed by the Templers: they proſecute the Teutonicks for ſiding with the Emperour. The Sultan prevails in *Paleſtine*. The French K. and his two brothers are taken in *Egypt*. In the Weſt, the Emp. prevails in *Italy*, and there ſtampeth leather money. *Leopold* of *Auſtria* takes the title of Arch-duke. Divers Cardinals taken by the Emperour, and releaſed. Divers towns in *Italy* revolt from him: he is depoſed by the Pope. The *Gibellines* are for him, *Guelphs* for the Pope. *Henry* Land-grave of *Thuring*, ſet up againſt *Frederick*: he defeats *Conrad* the Emp. ſon. *Henry* beſiegeth *Ulm*, where he is killed. Much of *Florence* burnt by the two factions. *Will.* Earl of *Holland* ſet up againſt *Frederic*; who is defeated by *Conrad Frederick*'s ſon. *Lewis* of *France* will not invade *England*, though the Pope requeſted him. *Murzia* and *Granada* made tributary to *Caſtile*. *Poland* is waſted by the *Tartars* and Civil Wars. *Hungary* is waſted by the *Cumans*. The K. fleeth to *Frederic* Duke of *Auſtria*, to whom he pawns three Provinces: but by the aid of the Knights of *Rhodes*, he recovers his kingdom. Civil wars in *Denmark*, between K. *Ericus* and his brothers. A peace concluded. *Ottocar* K. of *Bohemia*, to enlarge his kingdom, buyeth *Carintha* and other places adjacent, towards the *Adriatick* Sea. *Apulia* is taken by the *Venetians*. *Margaret* of *Flanders* hath two ſons, by two husbands, both which claim the Earldom. The French K. and Pope order, that to her *William* her younger ſon ſhould ſucceed in *Flanders*, and *John* the elder ſhould have *Henalt*. *William* goeth into *Syria*: *John* invadeth *Henalt*, and forceth his mother to buy her peace in *England*; baniſheth the Italian uſurers, and ſends away the Popes Legat: he is forced to return from *Poicton* diſhonorably. *Griffeth* Prince of *Wales* broke his neck from the Tower. The Welch invade *England*. The King ſells his Plate and Jewels to the *Londoners* for want of money, and ſtampeth a new Coin called *ſterling*-money. In *Scotland*, *Argile* rebelleth, and is overcome and pardoned. 1240

In the Church: *Cœleſtine* the fourth ſate 17 days. To him ſucceeded *Innocent* the fourth 11 yeers: he excommunicates the Emperour, makes ten Cardinals, and gives them red hats: he depoſeth *Frederick*, and demands the fifth of Benefices through *Europe*: he aideth *Henry* with money againſt *Frederick*. Two Synods this Decad. At *Lyons*, the Pope accuſeth the Emperour of hereſie; and he the Pope of exactions. The Cham of *Tartary* converted. *Pet. de Vineis* loſeth his eyes for accuſing the Pope, being hired thereto by the Emperour; and daſheth out his own brains.

In the Eaſt, *Baldwyn* deſpairing to hold *Conſtant*, goeth into *Italy* to *Frederick*, with the treaſure which he took out of the Temple. *Ducas* Emperour of *Adrianople*, makes *Michael Angelus* and his ſon Deſpots. After him ſucceeded *Theodorus Ducas*, or *Laſcaris* the yonger, 4 yeers. He forceth *Michael* and the *Bulgarians* to ſubmit. *Michael Paleologus* ſideth with the Turks; is called home, and made high-Conſtable. To *Theodorus* ſucceeded his ſon *John Ducas*, 6 yeers old. His Tutor was *Michael Paleologus*, and then Emperour, conditionally to reſigne when *John* was 24 yeers of age. *Damiata* reſtored upon the reſtitution of the French King. *Sidon* taken by the Sultan of *Egypt*, and recovered by *Lewis*, who returns into *France*. *Bela* King of *Hungary* ſends Forces into *Syria*. The *Tartars* ſubdue *Meſopotamia* for the Chriſtians: they take alſo *Babylon* and *Aleppo*, and ſubdue *Syria*. In the Weſt, *Frederick* the Emperour dieth. The Empire ſtood long void. *Conrad* his ſon, murthereth his brother *Henry*; ſpoileth *Naples* and *Capua*: he is poiſoned by *Manfred* his baſtard-brother. *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal*, and *Alphonſus* King of *Caſtile*, in competition for the Empire. *John* Earl of *Britain* is the firſt Duke thereof. King *Lewis* gives *Gwyen* 1250

Yeers of Christ.

to King *Henry*, conditionally he renounce his intereſt to all other lands in *France*. At this time lived the great Aſtronomer *Alphonſus* the tenth, King of *Leon* and *Caſtile*. *Theobald* of *Navar* becomes vaſſal to *Caſtile*; who expels five Mooriſh Kings out of *Spain*. *Alphonſus* elected Emperour; but he neglects it. The Duke of *Lituania* becometh apoſtate. The King of *Hungary* invades *Auſtria*, and kills *Frederick* in battel. In *Denmark*, *Abel* the King's brother cauſeth the King to be beheaded and caſt into the Sea: he ſucceeds King; is defeated by his ſubjects, and ſlain by the *Friſians*. The *Bohemians* convert *Pruſſia*. The *Venetians* take *Padua*. *Venice* taken by the *Genoeſes*, and are expelled. The Dean of S. *Marks* priviledged by the Pope to wear a Mitre and Croſier-ſtaff, at ſolemn times: they quarrel with the *Genoans* about a Church in *Acon*. *William* of *Flanders* returns from *Syria*, and is killed in a Turnament. *Margaret* loſeth *Nemours*: ſhe is fain to part with *Henault* to her ſon *John*, who dieth. *Margaret*'s ſons are taken; and releaſed, conditionally that ſhe beſtow her daughter *Beatrice* on *Floris* Earl of *Holland*, and ſhould have for her Dowry the Iſlands of *Zealand*. The Earl of *Holland* is crowned at *Aken*: he builds the Palace at the *Hague*: he helps *John* againſt *Margaret* of *Flanders*: he is wounded at *Utricht*, and is ſlain by the *Friſians*. His ſon *Floris* the fifth ſucceeded young: his Protector *Floris* is ſlain. *Henry* Duke of *Brabant* made Protector, and is expelled. The Nobles chuſe *Otho*; but the people, *Alice* the Counteſs. *Henry* the third of *England* exacteth money of the Jews: he confirmeth *Magna Charta*, and reduceth *Aquitain*: his ſon *Edmund* inveſted in *Sicily* by a Ring which the Pope ſent: his eldeſt ſon made firſt Prince of *Wales*, and Governour of *Ireland* and *Aquitain*. *Richard* the King's brother choſen Emperour: he is forced to ſwear the expulſion of ſtrangers. The Pope diſpenſeth with his Oath. He reſignes *Normandy*, *Mayne*, and *Anjou*, for money. *Alexander* the third of *Scotland* marrieth King *Henry*'s daughter of *England*: he is oppreſſed by the Commons, and carried to *Sterling*. They reſtore him, and are pardoned: the chief of their faction, *Menteith*, is poiſoned by his wife. *Alexander* is by King *Henry* made Earl of *Huntingdon*.

In the Church: *Innocent* ſits yet: he proferred *Sicily* to *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal*. *Alexander* the fourth ſucceedeth 6 yeers: he takes divers places from *Ecceline* of *Padua*: againſt whom, *Lombardy* ariſeth in Arms. The Pope, upon a ſedition of the Romanes, fleeth to *Viterbium*. The Pontificians are driven out of *Apulia* by *Manfred*, who poiſoned *Conrad* of *Sicily*, and got himſelf to be crowned. In this Decad there was but one Council held, at *Uratiſlavia* in *Poland*; where the Pope demands the fifth part of all Benefices for three yeers. About this time, the Bible was diſtinguiſhed into Chapters, and the *Æra* of *Alphonſus* begins. *Robert Sorbonius* erecteth the Sorboniſts Colledge at *Paris*. The Books of *W. de S. Amore*, written againſt the *Mendicants*, burnt by the Pope. The *Carthuſians* renounce fleſh-eating. *Richard* Earl of *Cornwal* ſets the Order of *Saccatori*, or *Bon hommes*.

1260— In the Eaſt, the *Greeks* ſet up forts againſt *Conſtantine*; which are taken by *Alexius Strategopulus*. *Baldwin* dieth in *France*. *Michael* puts out the eyes of the young Emperor. *Thrace* invaded by the Turks and Bulgarians. The Tartars expelled out of *Syria* by the Sultan of *Egypt*. *Tyre* taken by the *Venetians*. *Hugh Luſignan*, Viceroy of *Naples*, arrvies at *Acon* beſieged by the Sultan, who kills 500 Citizens: he takes alſo *Joppa* and *Antioch*, to the loſs of many Chriſtians. *Luſignan* is crowned at *Acon*. Prince *Edw.* returns from *Syria* into *Sicily*, where he is wounded by an Infidel. In the Weſt, a ſedition at *Colen*; the B. is impriſoned by the E. of *Juliers*. *Charles* K. of *Sicily* made Vicar of the Empire. *Ottocar* K. of *Bohemia* refuſeth to be Emperour. *Rodulph* Earl of *Habſpurg* choſen 17 yeers: he refuſeth to go into *Italy*. *Florence* is taken by *Manfred* of *Sicily*, who expels the *Guelphs*. *Charles* the French Kings brother is made K. of *Sicily* and *Jeruſalem* at *Rome*, for a tribute of 40000 crowns: he kills *Manfred*, and beheadeth *Conradin* D. of *Auſtria*, and the Marq. *Baden*. K. *Lewis* of *France* takes *Carthage* from the *Moors*, and beſiegeth *Tunis*: his Army weakned by the Plague. The African Moors invade *Caſtile*: peace between them. *Alphonſo* is moleſted by his Nobles for releaſing the homage of *Portugal*. The *Ruſſians* are defeated by the Palatine of *Cracovia*. The E. of *Cracovia*'s wife delivered of 36 boys at a birth. The K. of *Denmark* and his mother taken in battel by the Duke of *Holſt*. *Albert* D. of *Luneburg* made tutor to the K. He is expelled by the people, and the Land interdicted by the Pope. The K. of *Bohemia* finding his wife barren, begets his maid with childe, upon his wives permiſſion, whom he at laſt divorceth. The *Genuans* take *Canea* in *Candy*, and a rich ſhip from the *Venetians*, who ſend another Fleet into *Acon*. In *England*, the Barons riſe againſt the King, who takes *London*-tower, with *Dover* and *Rocheſter*-Caſtles. *Oxford* Acts made void. Great Civil wars between the K. and his Barons: he is taken, with his brother *Richard*. *Leiceſter* is ſlain. 500

Jews

Jews killed at *London*. Divers Biſhops excommunicated by the Pope for ſiding with *Leiceſter*. *London* taken by *Glouceſter*. The Prince of *Wales* reconciled to the King. *Alan de la Zouch* killed. *Aquin* of *Norway* expelled out of the Iſles by the K. of *Scotland*. *Olaus*, *Aquin*'s ſucceſſor, quits his claim for a ſum of 4000 marks, and 100 marks yeerly. Yeers of Chriſt.

In the Church; *Urban* 4 ſate 3 yeers: he excommunicated *Manfred*, and inſtituted the feaſt of *Corpus Chriſti*, by *Tho. Aquinas* his perſwaſion. *Clement* 4 ſucceeded 3 yeers. This Decad were held five Councils. The whipping ſect now begin. The Order of redemption of Captives inſtituted. The *Lituanians* fall off from Chriſt, and perſecute his members. An hundred thouſand Albigenſes defeated by eight thouſand Catholickes, under *Simon* Earl of *Montfort*. S. *Auſtin*'s Eremites are reduced to one habit.

In the Eaſt, the Emp. *Michael* acklowledgeth the Pope's Supremacie in the Council of *Lyons*, conſiſting of 500 Biſhops, and 1000 Abbots. *Alexius* is Emp. of *Trapezund*. The Greeks beaten out of *Aſia minor* by the *Turks*. *Michael* dieth, and is diſhonourably buried. The Pyrates come to the Ports of *Conſtant*. *Acon* is again beſieged by the Sultan. *Hugh* concludes a peace with him. *Henry* Prince of *Meckleburg* is impriſoned 26 yeers at *Caire*, and then returns home. *Charles* of *Sicily* claims title to *Ieruſalem* from *Maria Dominilla* a pretender: his Viceroy is received by the Templers. The Hoſpitallers waſte the Saracens Country, and take from them *Margath* Caſtle; which they beſiege, and are beaten off. The Sultan of *Babylon* defeated by the Tartars and Armenians. In the Weſt, the Emp. taketh *Auſtria*, and beſiegeth *Vienna*. *Ottacar*, not able to relieve it, ſubmitteth, and rebelleth again. The Emp. beſtows the Exarchat and *Hetruria* on the Pope, to maintain the Syrian war. *Ottacar*, with 14000 Bohemians, cut off by the Emp. who beſtows on *Wenceſlaus* his daughter & the kingdom. In *France*, *Philip* 3. reigneth 15 yeers: his Q. dieth at *Tunis*: his ſon *Lewis* is poyſoned by *Peter la Broch*: the Q. is ſuſpected, and poyſoned with her ſon. *Peter* of *Arragon* drowneth his brother by the advice of his father. *Henry* of *Navar* being dead, the government of that Kingdom is undertaken by *Philip* of *France*, in right of his ſon, who had married the *Infanta*. *Peter* 3 of *Arragon* is K. of *Sicily*, in right of his wife. His brother *Iames* made king of *Majorca* and *Minorca*. *Steven* 5 of *Hungary* recovereth *Buda* from *Ottocar*, and ſubdueth the Bulgarians. *Ladiſlaus* his ſucceſſor kills *Ottacar* in battel, in defence of the Emperor. *Dansk*, which was morgaged to the Marqueſs of *Brandenburg* is recovered by the king of *Poland*; who defeated the rebels that conſpired his death, for naming *Leſco* his ſucceſſor without the peoples conſent. *Poland* troubled with the *Pruſſians* and *Lituanians*. In *Denmark*, there is war with the D. of *Sleſwick*. *Olaus Magnus* of *Norway* inhibits trading with ſtrangers in his Country, till his Ports were ſhut up by their ſhipping. The king of *Suevia* being overcome by *Magnus* his brother, and the Danes, reſignes up his Crown. *Ottacar* of *Bohemia* being diſgraced by the Emperour, rebelleth, and is ſlain. *Venice* is diſtreſſed by the *Genuans* and *Paduans*: a peace with them for 5 yeers: and they renew their League with the Greeks. The *Iſtrians* revolt, and are ſubdued. The *Ancomans* incenſe the Pope againſt *Venice*. Troubles between *Flanders* and *England*; between *Flanders* and *Liege*. *Margaret* Counteſs of *Henneburg* in *Holland*, died: ſhe had at one birth 365 children, baptized by the Biſhop of *Utricht*. In *England*, *Edw.* 1. reigneth 34 yeers: he finiſhed the Church of *Weſtminſter*. *Leolin* Prince of *Wales* refuſeth to be preſent at his Coronation; againſt whom the king marcheth, and forceth him to ſubmit. The King of Scots ſendeth men and money into *Syria*: he, with his Q. are preſent at K. *Edward*'s Coronation. *Ferquard* made Earl of *Roſs*, for overthrowing a ſtrong bragging Norman in the Engliſh Court. 1270

In the Church: *Gregory* 10 ſits 4 yeers. He interdicteth the Florentines for baniſhing thence the *Gibellines*. To him ſucceeded *Innocent* 5. five months: then *Adrian* 5. one month: then *John* 20. eight months. He was killed by the fall of a room at *Viterbium*. *Nicholas* 3 ſucceeded 3 yeers: he alters the Government of *Rome*, and takes from *Charles* the title of Vicar of the Empire. One Synod held this Decad. At *Saltzburg*, the Order of *Celeſtines* founded by *Peter de Murcone*. *Michael* the Greek Emperour deſpiſed at home, for acknowledging the Pope. At *Lyons*, in that Synod the Conclave is erected, and geniculation at the naming of JESUS, and the tenths of Benefices granted towards the holy war.

In the Eaſt, *Andronicus* the Emperor impriſoneth his brother *John* for his popularity. *Aſia minor* divided by the Turks into Satrapies. The Chriſtians perſecuted by the apoſtate Cham of *Tartary*. *John*, ſon to *Hugh* K. of *Jeruſalem*, ſucceedeth in *Cyprus*: then *Henry*, who is crowned at *Tyre*. *Tripolis* taken, with the loſs of 7000 Chriſtians. *Henry* and the Sultan make peace. 1280

Yeers of Chriſt.

peace. In the Weſt, the Switzers, hitherto ſubject to *Savoy*, are ſubdued by the Emperour, who enlargeth the priviledges of *Luca* and *Florence* for money: he demoliſheth 60 Caſtles in *Thuring*, which harboured thieves. *Peter* of *Arragon*, who married *Manfred*'s daughter, is called in by the *Sicilians*, who kill all the French in two hours, when the bell rung to the *Veſpers*. *Peter*'s General defeats *Charles* his Fleet. *Charles* recovereth *Naples*; where the French are beaten by *James*, *Peter*'s ſon. Wars between *France* and *Arragon*; in which *Peter* dieth of a wound. *Philip* the fourth raigns in *France* 28 yeers. *Peter* of *Arragon* dieth; whoſe two ſons ſucceeded; to wit, *James* in *Sicily*, and *Alphonſus* in *Arragon*, who took *Majorca* from *Iames*. The Moors expelled *Minorca*. Great troubles in *Caſtile*. *Leſcus* the Polonian ſpoileth *Ruſſia*, and expels the *Lituanians* out of *Poland*. *Leſcus* forced by his people into *Hungary*; who returns, and expels his competitor *Conrad*. The *Tartars* carry away out of *Poland* twenty thouſand Virgins. Great troubles there, between *Leſcus* and *Conrad*, and their brothers. *Ladiſlaus* of *Hungary* defeateth *Oldamire* King of the *Cumanians*; who return with the *Tartars*, and ſpoil *Hungary*, and kill the King, whom the Pope a little before had curſed for his Concubines. *Ericus* King of *Denmark* killed with 56 wounds: the Rebels flee to *Norway*. The *Norwegians* and baniſhed Lords invade *Denmark*. The *Venetians* make war upon the Patriarch of *Aquileia* for helping the *Iſtrians*. The Pope makes peace between them. In *Flanders*, there is a rebellion at *Bruges*. War between *Brabant* and *Guelders*, about the Earldom of *Nemours*. *Floris* of *Holland* ſubdueth the *Friſians*, and tranſports his fathers bones thence to *Middleburg*. Many people periſh in *Friſia* by Inundations. In *England*, *Leolin* of *Wales* is ſlain, and his head ſet upon the Tower: his brother *David* hanged and quartered. King *Edward* ſits as a Peer in the French Parliament: he ranſoms *Charles* king of *Sicily*'s ſon: he makes the competitors of *Scotland* ſwear to ſtand to his arbitration. The Scots king dieth without iſſue, being ſlain with a fall from his horſe. Six Governours appointed. Great troubles between *Bruce* and *Baliol* about the Crown.

In the Church, ſate *Martin* the fourth, 4 yeers: he excommunicates and depoſeth *Peter* of *Arragon*, and beſtows it on *Charles Valois* the French king's youngeſt ſon. *Honorius* the fifth ſucceeds 2 yeers: he is oppoſed by the Germans in a tax. *Nicholas* the fourth ſucceeded 4 yeers. This Decad yeeldeth four Synods. Seven rich Merchants of *Florence* inſtituted the Order of ſervants of *Mary*. The Order of Chaplains alſo and Anchorites ſet up. The Pope excommunicates the Greek Emperour, for breaking his promiſe made at *Lyons*. At *Weſel*, the Jews crucifie a young man.

1290— In the Eaſt, the *Turks* invade the Empire. *Michael Strategoplus* impriſoned by *Andronicus*. The Emperours forces defeated by the *Turk*. *Ronzerius* a Pirate made *Ceſar*: he oppreſſeth *Aſia*, and is ſlain by the Army of *Michael* the young Emperour. The *Saracens* take *Syria*, after 192 yeers poſſeſſion by the Chriſtians, ſince *Godfrey* recovered *Ieruſalem*. Thirty thouſand Saracens killed by *Caſſan* the Cham, who recovers *Damaſcus*; but loſeth all again, being called home by domeſtick troubles. *Ottoman* the firſt, ſon to *Erthogul*, takes the title of Sultan. In the Weſt, *Wenceſlaus* king of *Bohemia* is confirmed in the Electorate, and chief Imperial Butlerſhip. *Adolph* Earl of *Naſſau* named Emperour by the Biſhop of *Mentz*, who had got the other Electors to aſſent. The *Styrians* ſubmit to *Otho* Duke of *Bavaria*, who is forced to flee. The Emperour takes pay of the king of *England*, for his aid againſt the French; with the which he buyeth *Thuring* for his ſtipend; and for ſacrilege and adultery he is depoſed, and is killed by *Albert* Duke of *Auſtria*, who ſucceeds 9 yeers. At his Coronation, the Duke of *Saxony* is ſmothered in the preaſs of people. *France* makes peace with *Arragon*, and war with *England* and *Flanders*. The Parliament of *Paris* is ſet up. *Philip* of *France* obtains *Sicily* by marrying with the ſiſter of *Charles* the lame. King *Lewis* is canonized. *Flanders* united to the Crown of *France*. *Iames* of *Arragon* made king of *Sardinia* by the Pope. The *Bohemians* ſeize upon *Cracovia*. *Ladiſlaus*, who had eſcaped in a Monks habit, returneth, and beats the Bohemians in *Cracovia*. The *Tartars* waſte *Poland*. *Primiſlaus* Duke of great *Polonia* is crowned king, that title having been omitted 215 yeers: he is murthered by the Marqueſs of *Brandenburg*. *Lokticus* ſucceeded, who refuſed the title of king: he is depoſed, and *Wenceſlaus* king of *Bohemia* choſen. Whilſt *Andrew* king of *Hungary* is waſting *Auſtria*, the Peers, by the Pope's perſwaſion, chuſe *Charles*, ſon to *Charles Martel*, for their king. The king of *Denmark* falls out with his Archbiſhop; wherefore the king is cenſured at *Rome* to pay to the Archbiſhop 49000 marks; and the Land is interdicted. The Friſons having put themſelves into the king's protection, murther his Governour. *Lubec* craves protection of the *Dane*. In *Bohemia*, the Lords rebel, and make the Duke of *Vratiſlavia* king; who was ſhortly after poyſoned.

Pera

Yeers of chriſt.

Pera by *Conſtantinople* is taken by the Venetians, whoſe Fleet is taken by the Genuans at *Corfu*, who alſo take *Cydon* in *Crete*. The Genuans attempt *Venice* to no purpoſe. Great executions at *Venice*, for plots againſt the State. The Paduans build a Fort in the Venecians territories, which they demoliſhed. They make the Greek Emperour pay his debts. *John* D. of *Brabant* is killed. The Earl of *Flanders*, and his wife, the Prince of *Wales* daughter, are invited to *France*, and impriſoned at *Paris*: he ſides with the Engliſh againſt *France*. *Charles Valois* invadeth *Flanders*, takes *Guy*, and many of his Nobility priſoners. The Earl of *Holland* claims *Scotland* in right of *Ada* his grand-mother; but is diſſwaded from it by the King of *England*: he is ſlain for Adultery. His ſon *John* the firſt ſucceeded, who ſubdued the *Friſons*, and proſcribed *Dort* for rebelling: he died childleſs, the Earldom having laſted in that line 437 yeers. *Frieſland* torn with factions. King *Edward* of *England* baniſheth the Jews. The French and Engliſh take each others ſhips at Sea. *Aquitain* ſeiſed on by the French King, becauſe *Edward* came not upon his citation. *Baliol* doeth homage for *Scotland*, and aids the French againſt the Engliſh. The king takes divers ſtrong holds in *Scotland*, with the Regalities, and Marble Chair. The Engliſh expelled by *William Wallace*. The *Scots* and *Wallace* beaten in the battel of *Fawkirk*. The King of of *Norway* claimeth *Scotland* in right of his daughter deceaſed. *Baliol* is nathed king of *Scotland* by king *Edward*. *Baliol* took it ſo ill, that he was forced to plead at the bar againſt *Macduffs* brother, that he fell off from the Engliſh to the French. *Baliol* is ſent to the Tower: he is releaſed, and goeth into *France*.

In the Church, *Celeſtine* the fifth called before *Petrus de Murcome*, ſits 5 moneths: he was an ignorant Eremite. To him ſucceeded *Boniface* the eighth, 8 yeers. He deluded *Celeſtine* by the ſound of a Cane, and made him reſigne: he perſecuted the family of *Columna*, and oppoſeth *Alberts* Election: he cauſeth *James* to forſake *Sicily*, whoſe brother *Frederick* is choſen by the people in hatred of the French. Eight Synods held this Decad. The hereticks *Patareni* and *Gazareni*, about this time appeared, and held that marryed men could not be ſaved. *Fratricelli* a kinde of *Anabaptiſts*. *Boniface* ſets out the ſixth book of Decretals. The Church of *Loretta* inlarged, for reception of Pilgrims.

In the Eaſt, *Andronicus* is excommunicated by the Pope, and the K. of *Raſcia* ſet up againſt him. *Ottoman* keeps his reſidence at *Neapolis*, which he called *Deſpotopolis*, 20 miles from *Nice*: he beats the Chriſtian Armies. In the Weſt, the Emperour waſtes the Lands of the Biſhop of *Trevers*. The Helvetians begin to make head againſt the Emperours Officers. The Emperour is murthered by his brothers ſon, for keeping his Patrimony from him. To him ſucceeds *Henry* the ſeventh, Earl of *Lutzenburg* 4 yeers: he is crowned at *Millan*, and loſeth many places in *Italy*. *Philip* of *France* excommunicated; he burns the Popes Bulls. The French are beaten by the Flemings in the battel at *Cowtray*. *Philip* is reconciled to the Pope: he defeats the Flemings, and makes Peace with them: he baniſheth the Jews out of *France*. The *Moors* driven from *Gibralter* by the *Caſtilians*. *Ferdinand* of *Caſtile* wrongs his brothers, who ſummon him to Chriſts Tribunal within thirty days; he dieth within that time. In *Hungary*, three Kings are choſen by three Factions, *viz.* *Wenceſlaus* of *Bohemia* (who is carryed thence into *Bohemia*, with the Crown of *Hungary*, by his father *Ladiſlaus*) *Charles* and *Otho* Dukes of *Bavaria*, to whom *Wenceſlaus* reſigneth the Crown. *Otho* is taken by the Vayvod of *Tranſilvania*: he is curſed by Cardinal *Gentilis*, for detaining the Crown from *Charles*. *Otho* reſigneth, and is ſet free. In *Poland*, *Wenceſlaus* King of *Bohemia*, is choſen; who leaves Bohemian Governours, and returns home. To him ſucceeded *Ladiſlaus* 29 yeers. *Dansk* beſieged by *Brandeburg*. *Ladiſlaus* employeth the *Teutonicks* to defend it, who ſeiſe on it to their own uſe. The troubles of *Denmark* compoſed, by the payment of 10000 marks to the Archbiſhop by the king. The Norwayans invade *Denmark*, but are repulſed. The king of *Suevia* impriſoned by his brethren. *Wenceſlaus* of *Bohemia* ſelleth *Miſnia* to the Marqueſs of *Brandeburg*: he is killed by a Ruſſian: in him endeth the male line. *Henry* Prince of *Carinthia* claims the kingdom in right of his wife: they are both driven by the Emperour into *Bavaria*. *Frederick* the Emperours ſon ſtriving for that kingdom, is ſlain. *Henry* returns, and carrieth thence much wealth into *Carinthia*: he is expelled by *John* the Emperours ſon, who reigned 36 yeers. The Venetians excommunicated by the Pope, for taking *Ferrara*; and all their goods confiſcated in *France*. *Zara* beſieged, and ſubmitteth to the Venetians: they aid *Charles Valois* againſt the Greek Emperour. Many of the French faction killed in *Gaunt* and *Brugis*. *Guy* of *Flanders* dieth a priſoner in *France*: his ſon *Robert* ſucceeds 18 yeers: he hath wars with *Holland*, becauſe the Earl neglected to do his homage for *Zealand*. Peace between *Robert* and the French. In *Holland*, *William* the good ruleth 32 yeers. In *England*, the King confirmeth

1300

Magna

Yeers of Chriſt.

Magna Charta, releaſeth *Baliol*, and ſends the Lord *Segrave* into *Scotland*; who is beaten there: the king marcheth with his Army three hundred miles into *Scotland*, without oppoſition. The Prince is ſent thither with an Army. *Wallas* is taken and executed. The king in his journey to *Scotland* dieth. His ſon *Edward* the ſecond ſucceeded 19 yeers: he impriſoneth the Biſhop of *Cheſter* in the cauſe of *Gaveſton*. In *Scotland*, *Robert Bruce* having eſcaped out of *England*, kills *Cumyn* for betraying his plot to king *Edward*. *Robert* Reigned there 24 yeers: he is forced into the Woods and Iſles a while: he recovers divers Caſtles.

In the Church, *Boniface* yet ſits: he gives away *France* to the Emperour: he fleeth with his treaſure to *Anagnia*, and is taken by the *Columnii*, and dieth of grief. To him ſucceeded *Bennet* the ninth 8 moneths: he was poyſoned. *Clement* the fifth ſucceeded 8 yeers: he removeth his ſeat to *Avignion*, where it continued 72 yeers: at his Coronation, he loſt a ſtone out of his Mytre, worth 6000 Crowns; the French king was hurt, and the Duke of *Britain* ſlain; with twelve more. The Pope being recovered of a great ſickneſs, beſtoweth *Mentz* on his Phyſitian: he makes *Robert*, ſon of *Charles*, king of *Sicily*, by paying eight thouſand pound fealty, and the annual profits of *Benevent*. This Decad produced two Councils; one at *Rome*, againſt the French king; the other at *Paris*, againſt Pope *Boniface*. The firſt Jubile is inſtituted by *Boniface*. The Templars condemned in *France*, and *James* their chief Maſter burnt, with fifty more of that Order at *Paris*.

1310— In the Eaſt, the Turks are expelled by the Chriſtians out of *Thrace*. In the Weſt, the Emperour rageth with fire and ſword in *Italy*. He is crowned at *Piſa* and *Rome*. The Biſhop of *Liege*, and two thouſand, ſlain there: he burns many places, and is poyſoned by a Monk in the Euchariſt. *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, and *Frederick* of *Auſtria*, ſtrive for the ſucceſſion. *Lewis* is crowned at *Acon* by four Electors, and *Frederick* at *Bonna* by the reſt. Three Cantons of *Switzers* enter into an offenſive and defenſive league. The Guelphs in *Italy*, the Emperours enemies, are ſlain, about a hundred thouſand. The French king in hunting is killed with a fall from his horſe. His ſon *Lewis* the tenth ſucceeded two yeers: he hanged his Treaſurer, and died ſuddenly: his brother *Philip* the fifth ſucceedeth 12 yeers. The *Salique* Law is confirmed, and *Lewis* his daughter omitted. The League with *Scotland* is renewed. The Shepherds rebellion in *France*. In *Caſtile*, *Alphonſus* the eleventh is King 40 yeers. The Teutonicks ſubdue *Pomerania*, and take *Riga*. *Ladiſlaus* of *Poland* recovers *Cracovia* from the Duke of *Opolium*, and takes away the Cities Liberties, for betraying it. *Charles*, ſon to *Charles Martel*, is King of *Hungary* 32 yeers. *Chriſtopher* reigns in *Denmark* 14 yeers. The King of *Suevia* impriſoneth his brothers in a Caſtle, where they die. The people rebel: he fleeth: his ſon *Magnus* is taken, and he is ſlain. *John* the Emperours ſon reigns in *Bohemia* 36 yeers: he is made Lieutenant of the Empire: he aideth his father; and, after his death, *Lewis* againſt *Frederick*. *Pr. Pandulo* the *Venetian*, to pacifie the Pope, ſuffers himſelf to be tied like a dog with a chain under the Popes table. The *Genuans* war againſt the *Venetians* by Sea and Land: they beſiege *Pera*. *Crete* rebelleth; ſo doth *Gaunt*. The French and Hollanders invade *Flanders*. Upon reſtitution of *Doway* and ſome other places, and a marriage between *Philip*'s daughter and *Robert*'s grand-childe, peace is concluded. At *Middleburg* a Colledge is erected, with a Dean and four Canons. In *England*, *Gaveſton* is made Earl of *Cornwal*; is baniſhed, and made General of *Ireland*: he is recalled, baniſhed, returneth, and is made Secretary: the Lords ſtrike off his head. The King is overthrown by the Scots at *Bannocksburn*. The Earl of *Lancaſter*, chief of the Barons faction, is reconciled to the King. *Edward Bruce*, King *Robert*'s brother, is crowned King of *Ireland*, and ſlain three yeers after. The Scots take *Berwick*, and many other places. King *Robert* invadeth *England*. Divers put to death in *Scotland*, for endeavouring to betray the kingdom to the Engliſh. *Robert* King of *Sicily* proſcribed by the Emperour; which the Pope makes void. *Frederick* Prince of *Trinacry*, calls himſelf King of *Sicily*. *Robert* is reconciled to *Frederick*: they fall at oddes again.

In the Church: *Clement* yet ſitteth, who wrote the *Clementine* or ſeventh of the Decretals. The Emperour denieth fealty to the Pope. Succeeded *John* 21, who ſate 18 yeers. His tenent concerning depoſing of Kings, is oppoſed by *Occam*. He beſiegeth *Genoa*, and ſets out the extravagants. This Decad were held ſeven Synods. The Templers ſuppreſſed at *Vienna*. *Rhodes* is beſtowed upon the Knights Hoſpitallers. The Works of *Lullius* are condemned. *Begwins* and *Beguards* Hereticks, with the *Armenian* Hereticks, were buſie about this time. Three Gentlemen of *Siena* ſet up the Order of White Monks of *Olivet*.

In

Years of Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, *Andronicus*, the Emperours grand-childe, beſiegeth *Conſtantinople*; ſo that the Grand-father is forced to give him *Thrace* and *Macedonia*. *Conſtantine* ſon of *Andronicus* ſent againſt the young Emperour; he is taken and impriſoned, they are reconciled: young *Andronicus* joyns with the *Deſpot* of *Bulgaria* againſt his Grandfather, and takes *Conſtantinople*; he attempts to relieve *Nice*, and is beaten by the Turks, who take *Nice*. The old Emperour is made a Monk, and called *Antony*; the Turks take *Philadelphia*. *Pruſa* the Metropolis of *Bithynia* is taken, and made the ſeat of the *Ottoman*-Empire. To *Ottoman* ſucceedeth his ſon *Orchanes* 31 years: the Chriſtians recover *Nice* with divers Forts. In the Weſt, *Germany* is vexed between the two Emperours. *Ferdinand* is taken, and after three years impriſonment, is reſtored to *Auſtria*, but renounceth the Empire. The Pope and Emperour quarrel; the Biſhop of *Magdeburg's* brains are beaten out by the Citizens. The Emperour is crowned at *Rome*, and ſets up an Antipope. *Reynold* Earl of *Gelders* is made Duke; *Juliers* made a Marquiſate: The Emperour beſiegeth *Millan*. In France, to *Philip* ſucceeded his brother *Charls* King of *Navar* 6 years; he forced the Flemmings to ſubmit; to him ſucceeded *Philip* of *Valois*, brothers ſon to *Philip* the fair, 22 years. In *Spain*, *Arragon*, *Catalonia* and *Valentia* united: *Arragon* ſubdueth *Sardinia*. *Sileſia* fals off from the Polander to the Bohemians, with whom the Teutonicks ſide: 130 towns burnt in Maſſovia by the *Lituanians*. Upon a marriage between the Kings ſon *Caſimire* and the Dukes daughter, a peace is made with the *Lituanians*: the Maſſovians and Teutonicks defeated by the Poſacs and Lituanians. *Ladiſlaus* beateth the *Bohemians* and *Pruſſians*. In *Denmark* a great Rebellion, in which *Waldemar* Duke of *Sleſwick* is choſen King; but two years after the King is reeſtabliſhed, and *Waldemar* gives up his title of King. *Henry* of *Auſtria* is releaſed for 30000 Crowns. The *Bohemians* rebell, upon the Kings attempting to exchange *Bohemia* for *Bavaria*: he invadeth *Poland*, and loſeth one of his eyes with the moiſture of the *Lituanian* aire. At *Brugis* a great ſedition between the people and Magiſtrates: they detain their Earl, a priſoner 6 moneths; a peace is made, and they rebell again: the Earl is reſtored, and 22000 of the Rebels killed. *Holland* enjoyeth *Zeland* upon a peace with *Flanders*: Many towns drowned in *Holland* with 5000 people: A civil War in *Sicily*. The Emperour attempteth King *Robert* in vain. The *Spencers* in *England* are baniſhed: the King waſteth *Durham*, *Preſton* and *Lancaſter*. The Scots beat the Engliſh: they renew their league with France. The Lords defeated at *Burtowbridge*: *Lancaſter* and other Lords executed. The *Mortimers* ſent to the Tower. Peace with Scotland 13 years. The Queen and *Mortimer* proclaimed Traitours; the Queen landeth, the *Spencers* executed: the King reſigneth, and is murthered. *Edward* 3 his ſon ſucceeded 50 years: the King returns diſhonourably from Scotland. *Mortimer* hanged. *Baliol* reſignes Scotland; *Hamilton's* begin. —1320

In the Church, Pope *John* ſitteth yet; he ſides with *Robert* againſt *Frederick* king of *Sicily*; he quarrels with the Emperour: againſt him is ſet up *Nicholas* 5. which makes the 28 Schiſme. The Emperour excommunicated again: *Nicholas* is carried into *France*, where he giveth up his title. Three Synods held this Decad. The Poore-men of *Lyons* called Fratricelli condemned by the Pope: the French King maintaineth the Clergies temporalities againſt the Advocate, and is therefore ſtiled (Catholick).

In the Eaſt, the Bulgarians are defeated, and do defeat the Emperour, who ſets out a fleet, and enters into league with the Latine Princes againſt the Turk. *Thrace* is waſted by the Scythians and Turks; the Emperour takes 14 of their ſhips, and beats them out of *Acarnania* and *Ætolia*. *Nice* is taken by *Orchanes*, and ſo is *Abydus*: the Emperour is wounded in the foot: the Turks are driven from the ſiege of *Philadephia*: The Turks waſte divers Iſlands: They are beaten at ſea by *Andronicus*. In the Weſt, the King of Bohemia takes divers Cities for the Pope, *Parma* and *Padua* taken by the Scaligers, and other towns of *Italy* by others: the Pope dares not abſolve the Emperour, for fear of the French: He makes *Edward* of *England* Lieutenant of the Empire; and then diſplaceth him: the Emperour appealeth from the Pope to a General Synod. It was concluded in a Diet of *Frankfort*, that any Biſhop may Crown the Emperour, as well as the Pope. *Robert* of *Artois* is defeated of his Earldome by the French King, who proclaims him traitour, for ſolliciting the King of *England* to claim his right in *France*. *Philip* aideth the Scots: *Edward* for this, and for ſeiſing upon *Aquitain*, proclaims war againſt him: he quartereth the Arms of *France* and *England*. At the ſiege of *Liſle*, the Engliſh are defeated; and the French at *Sluce*. Divers diſcontented Lords in *Spain* ſide with the Moors againſt *Caſtile*; The *Caſtilians* defeat the forces of *Arragon* and *Navar*. *Peter* of *Arragon* doth homage to the Pope for *Sardinia* and *Corſica*. Wars between *Caſtile* —1330

Years of Christ.

ſtile and *Portugal*. The *Teutonicks* waſte *Polonia*, and at laſt by the King defeated; Peace made between them; the *Lituanians* burn themſelves, wives, children and goods, that they might not fall into the hands of the Teutonicks. King *Caſimire* ſettleth the ſucceſſion of *Hungary* upon *Charls*, who had married his ſiſter. *Ruſſia* taken by the *Lituanians*: *Caſimire* takes *Leopolis*, where he found two crowns, and a piece of the Croſſe, now kept at *Cracovia*. In Hungary was a great plague of Locuſts; the Nobles of *Denmark* ſend to *Valdemar Chriſtophers* ſon, being now in *Germany*, to recover the kingdome, which was now in competition. *Wenceſlaus* of Bohemia, who in the French Court was named *Charls*, defeats the Lombards, and is made Marqueſſe of Moravia. *John* of Bohemia releaſeth his title to Poland for 10000 Marks: A Jew puts out his eye, having loſt the other before. The Venetians joyn with Florence againſt *Maſtin* Tyrant of *Eſcalla*. 60 ſeveral Ambaſſadors arrives at *Venice* to reconcile them and *Maſtin*; Peace is granted to him, and he is made a Patritian of *Venice*. *Lewis* of *Flanders* buyeth *Melchyn* of the Biſhop of *Liege*, and the Duke of *Geldres*; the Duke of *Brabant* challengeth it; but they are reconciled by marriages. The Flemmings defeated by the Engliſh: the Earle is againſt the Flemmings league with England: he flieth to *Philip* of *France*: The Earl of *Holland* doth notable juſtice on the Bailiffe of South-Holland, for forcing a Cow from a poor woman. *William* 4. of Holland ruleth ten years, he ſpoileth *Pruſſia*. The king of England doth homage in France for *Aquitain*, and returns diſcontented: he aideth *Edward Baliol*, becauſe *David* King of Scotland refuſed to do homage. In the battel of *Halydown-hill*, the Engliſh are victorious and recover *Barwick*; he entreth Scotland, and returneth with *Baliol*: He enters Scotland again, and ſetleth *Baliol*, who contents himſelf with a Penſion. The firſt Duke in England, is Prince *Edward* made Duke of *Cornwall*. The King ſends to demand his Holds in *Aquitain*: he leagueth with the Emperour and Dutch; he is made Vicar of the Empire. Southampton burnt by the French: they beſiege *Burdeaux* and are all killed. King *Robert* of Scotland having vowed an expedition into *Syria*, deſired on his death-bed, *Robert Douglaſſe* to carry his heart to *Jeruſalem*: *Douglaſſe* in his journey thither was ſlain, in ſiding with *Arragon* againſt the *Saracens*; that Family ever ſince bear an Heart in their Coat: This *Robert* had won 70 battels. Earl *Murry* Regent, during King *Davids* minority, was poyſoned by a Monk: The King and Queen are driven into *France*. *Edward Baliol* crowned; *Aberden* burnt by the Engliſh. *Davids* faction groweth to ſtrong for *Baliol*. *Salisbury* and *Arundel* forced from the ſiege of *Dumbar*-Caſtle. At *Blackburn* the Scots are beaten; *Perth* and *Sterling* taken by the Regent. *Baliol* flieth into *England*.

In the Church, the Schiſme continueth, till *Nicholas* the Antipope was carried into *France*, where he reſigneth: the *Bononians* rebell againſt the Pope, who dieth and left behind him a treaſure of 1700000 Florens; to him ſucceeded *Bennet* 12. 7 years; One Synod held this Decad, at *Toledo*. Pope *John* believed that the ſouls ſlept till the Reſurrection. The Greek Church diſſenteth from the Latine. In a Diet at *Mentz* it was concluded, that the Councel was above the Pope, and that the Emperour held immediately from God.

1340 In the Eaſt, *Nicomenia* in *Bithynia* is taken by the Turks. *John* ſon to *Andronicus* is Emperour 41 years; he is as yet under the tuition of *John Cantacuzenus* father-in-law to *Orchanes*; the Patriarch excommunicates him; upon this the Patriarch is depoſed. The Turks are beaten out of *Smyrna* by the Venetians: they defeat the Venetians with thoſe of *Cyprus* & *Rhodes*. In the Weſt, the Pope takes *Ferrara*, *Mantua* & *Verona* from the Emperor, and denyeth to abſolve him, till he reſigne his Empire to him. *Lewis* is depoſed and dieth. *Charls* 4. elected, he was ſon to *John* King of *Bohemia*. Some of the Electors prefer the Empire to King *Edward* of *England*; he refuſeth it: then they chooſe *Ferdinand* Marquiſs of *Miſnia*, whom *Charls* bought out with 10000 Marks. *Gunther* alſo being elected by ſome, compoundeth with *Charls*, and is poiſoned. In *France*, *John Montfort* loſeth *Britany*; King *Edward* aſſiſted him: he is taken and impriſoned. The Gabal of Salt now impoſed. At *Creſcy* the *French* loſt 30000 with the King of *Bohemia*, and 11 Princes, 80 Barrons, and 1200 Knights. *Calice* loſt, and the *French* who would have bought it, cheated of their money, and ſlain. The Dolphinate of *Vienna* ſold to the *French*, on condition that the eldeſt ſon of *France* ſhould be called the Dolphin. In the battel of *Salcados* 450000 Moores ſlaine, and but twenty Caſtilians. The *Alcavale*, that is the Tenths of things ſold, raiſed for the maintaining of the Moors war. *Alphonſus* of *Caſtile* obtaineth of the Pope the Canaries, conditionally that he plant

Years of Chriſt

plant Chriſtianity there. *James* of *Majorca* killed in battell by the Arragonians: The *Tartars* and *Bohemians* driven out of *Poland*, by *Caſimire*: He is excommunicate for his Concubines, and adultery: he totally ſubdueth *Ruſſia*, and names *Lewis* of *Hungary* his heir. To *Charls* of *Hungary* ſucceedeth his ſon *Lewis* 1. 41 years; he ſubdueth the Saxons in Tranſilvania: *Andrew* his brother and King of Naples, ſels his poſſeſſions to the King, who aideth the Polander againſt *Lituania* and *Bohemia*. *Zara* fals off to Hungary, and is recovered again by *Venice*: they make peace for 10 years. *Lewis* to revenge his brothers death, whom his wife ſtrangled, marcheth into *Italy* and takes the Kingdome of *Naples*: She flieth to the Pope with her new Husband, who for reconciling them hath *Avignion*. In *Denmark*, *Waldemar* reignes 35 years; he leagueth with the Swedes, invadeth *Brandeburg*, and goeth to *Jeruſalem*. *Prague* in *Bohemia* is now freed from *Mentz*, and made an Archbiſhoprick. King *Iohn* being ſlain at *Creſcy*, his ſon *Charls* ſucceeded, who alſo was Emperour, who built new *Prague*. The Venetians troubled with an Earthquake, Plague and Famine: they invite ſtrangers to come and inhabite their City. A great faction at *Gaunt* againſt the French, in which *Artweld* the chief man of the faction is ſlain, and E. *Lewis* is killed at *Creſcy*; to whom ſucceeded *Lewis* of Male 38 years; he promiſed to marry the King of *Englands* daughter, but marrieth the daughter of *Brabant*. *William* of *Holland* is ſlain in the battell he fought againſt *Utricht*; his Siſter *Margaret* ſucceeded 8 years: ſhe makes her ſon *William* Governour, reſerving 10000 crowns yearly; but when the Emperour died, ſhe aſſumeth *Holland*, and beſtoweth *Henault* on *William*. Now began there the faction of Cabillaucks and Hoecks, which held 150 years; the Cabillaucks call in *William* againſt his Mother. *Tourney* beſieged by King *Edward*, and truce granted for one year: He quarrels with the Pope, for denying him the making of a Cardinal. The order of the Garter inſtituted; and the Round-Table at *Windſor* erected. Divers of King *Edwards* friends put to death in *France*. He taketh *Caen* in *Normandy*; with 10000 Engliſh he defeats 60000 French. King *David* of *Scotland* taken by *Copland*, who is rewarded with 500l. and made a Banoret. The Engliſh quite driven out of Scotland. King *David* and his Queen return. Great emulation between *Douglaſſe* and *Ramſey*: *David* upon the French ſcore invades *England* thrice, and waſteth all as far as *Durham*: he is defeated and taken; *Percy* and *Baliol* ſpoil *Lothian*. *Robert* of *Sicily* being dead, *Andrew* the King of *Hungary*'s ſon, whom he had adopted, ſucceeds in *Apulia*, for which he paid a great ſumme to the Pope: he is ſtrangled by his wife, who married with *Lewis* Prince of *Tarentium*.

In the Church, *Bennet* ſits yet, he confirmed *Verona* to *Scaliger*, *Mantua* to *Gonzaga*, and *Ferrara* to *Eſte*. *Clement* 6. ſucceeded 10 years: he reduced the Jubile to 50 years; he makes ſome of the Electors chooſe a new Emperour. *Nicholas* a Tribune of *Rome* aſpireth, and is confined to *Avignion*. This Decad had but one Synod, at *Toledo*. One *Picard* a Walloon began the Hereſie of the *Adamites*. Popiſh Proviſions put down in *England*. The Pope ſuppreſſeth the Whippers. Many Jews executed for poyſoning the waters.

In the Eaſt, *Paleologus* helpeth the Venetians, and *Cantacuz*: the Genuans. *Losbos* is given to *Catelusius* for his ſervice againſt the Greeks, after almoſt 100 years poſſeſſion by his poſterity, it was loſt to the Turks. *Cantacuz*: made a Monk, and his ſon ſuppreſſed. *Solyman* ſon to *Orchanes* breaks into *Europe*; and takes divers Caſtles with Callipolis the chief City of *Cherſoneſus*: as he was Hawking he is drowned in a Ditch; whereupon *Orchanes* dieth with grief. To him ſucceeded *Amurath* the firſt, his ſon, 30 years. The Janiſaries now begin. In the Weſt, *Cleve* for want of Heirs-male, fals to the Empire. *Wenceſlaus* fouleth the Font, when he was Chriſtened. The *Piſans* puniſhed for carrying the Empreſſe and her daughter into the Stews. The Emperour is crowned at *Millan* and *Rome*: he publiſheth the Golden Bull, and annexeth *Brandeburg* to *Bohemia*. *Juliers* made a Dutchy; he helps the Pope againſt *Millan*, and hath wars with *Philip* of *Auſtria*, who put him to flight, by corrupting ſome about *Charls*. To *Philip* of *France* ſucceeded *John* his ſon 15 years: *Charls* grandchild to the King of *Caſtile*, and Conſtable of *France*, is killed by the K. of *Navar*. *Charls* —1350

Years of Chriſt.

of *Navar* impriſoned for favouring the Engliſh; who beat the French at *Poyctiers*. *Charls* being releaſed, makes new troubles. The Provoſt of *Paris* murthered. The King and his ſon tranſported into *England*. *France* ſpoiled by King *Edward*. Upon a Peace, King *John* is releaſed to get money. The Jews are again admitted. He returns into *England*, and dies. *Peter* King of *Portugal* baniſheth Lawyers out of his Kingdom. *Peter* King of *Caſtile* puts his brother with many Nobles to death; he murthereth two more brothers, and poyſoneth his wife. *Lewis* of *Hungary* makes peace with *Padua* and *Auſtria*; he invadeth *Dalmatia*, and takes divers Towns; he reſtores *Tarviſium* and *Iſtria*. The Ruſſians rebell againſt *Poland*. *Caſimire* is abſolved, and buildeth many Churches. *Pruſſia* is ſpoiled by the Lituanians. *Hungary* diſclaimeth all tribute from *Polonia*: The King of *Denmark* impriſoneth his Queen upon ſuſpition of Adultery; he afterward begot *Margaret* of her, who became Queen of 3 Kingdoms. *Ericus* rebelleth againſt his Father the King of *Sweden*. *Iſtria* ſpoiled by the Prince of *Croatia*, who makes reſtitution. The Venetians beaten by the Germans at *Boſphorus*. The Germans are defeated, and put themſelves under the protection of *Millan*: At laſt a peace is made. The Venetians make a diſhonourable peace with *Lewis* of *Hungary*. *Lewis* of *Flanders* ſubdueth *Brabant*; he reſtores all again except *Antwerp*, which he retains for his wifes Dowry. *William*'s forces in *Holland* are defeated by his mother the Empreſs, who was at laſt defeated by him, and is contented with *Henault*, and leaveth *Holland* with him, who invaded *Utricht*, and fell mad: His wife is choſen Regent by the Cabillaucks, and his brother *Albert* by the *Hoecks*, who beſieged *Delf* and took it. The Spaniſh Fleet at *Winchelſey* defeated by the Engliſh. Sir *Walter Bently* beats the French in *Britain*. Groats firſt coyned. The King waſteth *France*, and removes the Staple of Wooll out of *Flanders* into *England*. The battel of *Poyctiers*, where the French King with many Lords, Knights and Eſquires are taken and ſlain. The French aid the Scots; they take *Barwick* and diſmantle it, they burn *Northam*. King *David* ranſomed for 100000. marks. Peace for 14 years: The King cuts off *Robert Stuarts* ſucceſſion to the crown, and appoints *Alexander* of *Sutherland* his younger ſiſters ſon for his ſucceſſor, upon whoſe death *Robert* is reconciled to the King and to his hopes. The Pope makes *Lewis* of *Tarentum* King of *Sicily*, againſt the King of *Hungary*.

In the Church, *Clement* keepeth the 2. Jubile: To him ſucceeds *Innocent* 6. 9 years. new troubles in *Rome*. *Nicholas* is ſent home and reſtored to his Tribunat, and is ſlain by the *Columni*. The Popes Legat is ſent to *Rome*, who recovers all in 5. years that was loſt from the Church. One Councel held this Decad, at *Toledo* again. The Pope ſtrives with *Cantacuz*, to unite the Greek and Latine Churches.

1360—

In the Eaſt, the Turks take many places, and make *Paleologus* tributary, who craveth help againſt them from the Pope and Queen of *Sicily*. The Turks tranſport 60000. into *Europe* by the help of the Genuans. *Amurath* makes his ſeat at *Adrianople*, he circumciſeth his ſons. In the Weſt, The Imperial Cities league againſt the Princes. In *France*, *Charles* 5. reigneth 16 years. *Montfort* kils *Charles* of *Bloys*, and recovereth *Britain*. King *Charles* makes his guard of 100. Scots Archers: He gives the Kingdom of *Arles* to *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou*. *Peter* of *Caſtile* treacherouſly killed the Mooriſh King. War between *Caſtile* and *Arragon*. *Peter* is driven out of *Caſtile* by the French; he flyeth to Prince *Edward*, and is reſtored, and abjureth his Religion. He is at laſt taken and beheaded. The Polander ſubdueth the Ruſſian. *Boſna* and *Bulgaria* reduced to the obedience of *Hungary*. About this time the Hanſe-Towns being 77. begin to ſet up. *Hamburg* ſubmits to the Duke of *Holſt*. *Magnus* of *Suevia* taken, and impriſoned. *Venice* forceth the Paduans to buy their peace for 15 years. The Earldom of *Burgundy* falls to *Margaret* mother of *Lewis* by the death of *Philip*. The Duke of *Burgundy* marrieth the Earls daughter. King *Edward* of *England* affrighted with thunder, makes peace with *France*. King *John* is releaſed for 300000 crowns. The King being 50 years old keepeth a Jubile: he turneth all the Records out of French into Latine or Engliſh. The Staple at *Calice*. King *John* came to *England* to releaſe his hoſtages, and dieth at the *Savoy*. Prince *Edward* ill rewarded for his aide, by *Peter* of *Caſtile*. The Highlanders in *Scotland* are permitted by the King to deſtroy each other.

In the Church, *Urban* 5. ſate 8 years. The Viſcount of *Millan* begs peace of the Popes Legat. The Pope comes to *Rome*, and ſends for the Emperour to ſuppreſs the *Gibellins*

lins. This Decad affordeth no Councel. *John Columbinus* begins at *Sena* the order of Jeſuites. *Paleologus* ſubmitteth to the Roman Church, on promiſe of help againſt the Turks. St. *Bridgets* Order confirmed by the Pope. *Years of Chriſt.*

In the Eaſt, *Paleologus* being expelled by *Andronicus* his ſon, is reſtored by the Venetians: he taketh *Tenedos* from the Genuans, and gives it to the Venetians. At the Marriage feaſt of *Bajazet*, a Nobleman ſent 100. Boyes, and ſo many Virgins in rich apparel, with two Cups in each hand, the one filled with jewels, the other with gold: the Deſpot of *Servia* loſeth *Niſſa* to the Turk, and becomes his Tributary. *Aladin* the Turks ſon in law rebelleth, and forced to ſue for peace. The Servians fall from *Amurath*, and joyn with the king of *Boſna*. 20000 Turks killed in *Boſna* by the Chriſtians. In the Weſt, the Emperour promiſeth more to the Electors to chooſe his ſon *Cæſar*, then he was able to pay. War between *Saxony* and *Brunſwick*, for the Dutchy of *Luneburg*. To *Charles* ſucceeded his ill-conditioned ſon *Wenceſlaus* 22 years. *Charles* of *Navar* indicted for attempting to kill the French King: he forfeiteth his eſtate, and is reconciled to the King. *Navars* eldeſt ſon impriſoned, and his Officers executed for intelligence with the Engliſh. The French invade the Iſle of *Wight*: *Montpelier* rebelleth, and is reduced. The King leaveth the Government to his 3 brothers, and dieth rich. His ſon *Charls* 6. ſucceeded 42 years. The Kings of *Aragon*, *Fez* and *Granado* league againſt *Caſtile*, which makes peace with *Portugal*. The Duke of *Lancaſter* claimeth *Caſtile* in right of his wife. *Henry* of *Caſtile* poyſoned by a Monk. *Caſimire* of *Poland* being dead, *Lewis* King of *Hungary* ſucceedeth, *Caſimir's* ſiſters ſon, 13 years: he returneth to *Hungary*, and leaves his mother Regent of *Polonia*: the Hungarians kill the Governour of *Craçovia*, for which 160 Hungarians are killed by the Polacks. King *Lewis* perſwades the *Polacks* to admit one of his daughters to the ſucceſsion, which they do aſſent to, conditionally they might be eaſed of their Taxes. He ſubducth the Valachians, and adopteth his daughters husband. *Magnus* of *Suevia* is releaſed for 12000. Marks. *Wenceſlaus* of *Bohemia* drowneth his wifes Confeſſor, for not revealing her confeſſion. The Venetians and Genuans at War for *Tenedos*; They are reconciled by the Duke of *Savoy*. In *Flanders*, 17 Towns are drowned, and 5000 houſes burnt in *Gaunt*. The French and Flemmings quarrel, for receiving *John* Duke of *Britain*. The Earls heavy Taxes cauſe a civil War in *Flanders*. Wars between *Holland* and *Utricht*. *Limoges* taken by the Engliſh. *Rochel* beſieged by the French: Peace between *England* and *France*. The Engliſh defeated in *Garnſey*. The French loſe *Aquitain*. *Richard* 2. reigns in *England* 22 years. The French burn *Rye*, and the Scots *Roxburg*. *Barwick* taken and loſt by the Scots in 9 dayes. In *Scotland*, *Robert Stuart* is king 20 years; he reneweth the League with *France*. —1370

In the Church, ſate *Gregory* 11. 7 years. The Florentines quarrell with the Popes Legats, and deny corne to *Rome*. They aſsiſt the *Bononians* and *Piſans* againſt the Pope, who curſeth, and then abſolveth them: He removes from *Avignon* to *Rome*. To him ſucceeded *Urban* 6. 11 years: againſt him *Clement* 7. is choſen by the French Cardinals, which makes the 29 Schiſme, which continued 50 years: *Urban* ſits at *Rome*, *Clement* at *Avignon*: *Urban* drowned ſeven Cardinals of *Clement*, being bound in ſacks. S. *Katherines* Nuns founded by *Katherine* of *Sena*. The Cynique-heretiques, called *Turelupini*, went naked, and were given to the fleſh. *Wickliffs* Doctrine condemned at *Oxford*. *England*, *Hungary*, and *Germany* declare for Pope *Urban*; *France*, *Scotland*, *Arragon*, and *Sicily* for *Clement*.

In the Eaſt, *Andronicus* is ſetled in the Empire by *Bajazet*, for which he ſweareth fealty to the Turk, and impriſoneth his father; who eſcapeth, and cauſeth the Turk to ſet up his ſon *Manuel*, who reigned 30 years. *Andronicus* flieth into *Aſia*, and ſhelters himſele in the Turks Court. The Turks ſubdue and deſtroy the Chriſtians in *Boſna*, *Croatia*, and the adjacent places. *Tamerlan* makes an expedition into *Babylon*, and Sultan *Ackumel* flieth to *Alcayre*. One of *Amurath's* ſonnes loſeth his eyes, for plotting againſt his father. *Lazarus* Deſpot of *Servia*, with five hundred thouſand Chriſtians, ſlaine in the Plains of *Caſſovia*. One *Cobelets* a Chriſtian, kills *Amurath*, as hee was viewing the dead. To him ſucceeds his ſonne *Bajazet*, 11 yeares: He ſtrangled his brother *Jacup*, to prevent competition; ſo this ſtrangling of the Sultans brethren grew cuſtomary. In the Weſt, Civil warres in —1380

Years of Christ.

in *Germany* among the Princes. The Duke of *Austria* killed by the *Switzers* in battel; after much bloodshed, a peace there is concluded. In *France*, *Charles* 6. reigned 42 years; he contents himself with the three *Flowers-de-luce* for his Armes. The Parisians and Rohaners are punished for mutinying. The French invade *England*. *Lewis* of *Anjou* removed from his Regency, the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Berry* put in his place. The English take 100 French and Flemish ships. The King assumeth the Government. His Brother made Duke of *Orleans*: Great faction between the Constable and Duke of *Britain*. The English help *Portugal* against *Castile*. The King of *Castile* expelled by *John* base son to *Peter*. *Navar* attempteth to poyson the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Berry*; He groweth leprous. *John*, *Peters* base son chosen King of *Portugal*. The Duke of *Lancaster* marrieth in *Spain*, one daughter to the Infant of *Castile*, the other to the King of *Portugal*. In *Poland*, the Bishop of *Cracovia* falls down dead, as he was going to deflowre a Country-maid. King *Lewis* dieth, and *Hedwigis* the Queens daughter is chosen. *Jagello* Duke of *Lituania* christened in *Poland*, and named *Ladislaus*; by marrying *Hedwigis*, he unites *Lituania* to *Poland*, and converts the *Lituanians* in *Hungary*. King *Lewis* being dead, his daughter *Mary* succeedeth 10 years. *Charles* King *Andrews* son of *Sicily* is received King by some, and is murthered by the Queens mother, who is drowned by the Governour of *Croatia*, and *Mary* imprisoned. *Sigismund*, *Charls* the fourths son marrieth *Mary*, is crowned, and persecuteth the Governour of *Croatia*; upon this the Lords rebell, and some of them are executed by *Sigismund*. He subdueth *Bosna* and *Dalmatia*. Truce between *Denmark* and *Sweden*. *Margaret* reigns alone 24 years: she hath War with *Albert* of *Suevia*, and takes him, with his son prisoners, and so she becomes Queen of all the three Kingdoms. The Venetians take *Verona* and *Padua*, and recover *Treviso*. The League with other States against *Galeas* Viscount of *Millan*. The Earl of *Flanders* forced by his people to hide himself: He expels the English for siding with *Gaunt* against him: they take *Dam* and *Greveling*. *John* the French Kings son stabs the Earl, quarrelling for *Bononia*: to him succeeded his daughter *Margaret*. The French recover *Dam*. The English beat the Flemmings at Sea, and take many of their Ships. *John* the Earl of *Hollands* son is made Bishop of *Liege* at 16 years old. The Earl of *Northumberland* is sent against the Scots, and recalled. *Jack Straw* rebelleth, and is slain. *Barwick* recovered from the Scots. The Duke of *Lancaster* having made peace in *France*, goeth against *Scotland*, but doeth nothing: he is reconciled to the King: the Duke claimeth *Castile*. *Flanders* put themselves under the Kings protection. The first Marquis in *England*, was *Robert de Vere* the Kings Minion, made Marquis of *Ireland*. Many Ships taken by *Arundel* and *Nottingham*: The Lords quarrell with the King about his favourites: the Chief-Justice and others executed. Peace with *France* and *Scotland* for three years: *Warwick* and *Gloceſter* are displaced. *Edinburgh* burned by King *Richard*: The Scots invade *England*, and do much hurt in *Ireland*, and in the Isle of *Man*. *Cockermouth* taken by the Scots and French. The battell of *Otterburn* between *Douglas* and *Piercy*: *Robert* Earl of *Fife* the Kings younger son made Regent; his brother *Alexander* burned the Church of *Murray*, for which he was imprisoned. *Jone* of *Sicily* is strangled, and her sister *Mary* beheaded by *Charles* of *Dyrrachium*. *Lewis* of *Anjou* poysoned, whose son *Lewis* is made King of *Naples* by the Pope.

In the Church, *Boniface* the 9. sits 14 years. This Decad produced one Synod. The Order of St. *Peter* of *Pisa* founded by a Pisan. The Archbishop of *Magdeburg*, dancing all night with a woman, both fell down and broke their necks. The feast of our Ladies conception instituted. The Dominicans free the Virgin *Mary* from Original sin, and are opposed by the Parisians. *Annates* or First-fruits granted against the Turks.

1390— In the East, *Constantinople* is besieged 8 years by *Bajazet*. *Manuel* goeth into *Italy* for aide against the Turk. *Philadelphia* taken by the Turk, with other places: *Caria* submitteth. *Sigismund* in *Hungary* beaten by the Turks, and so are the Latine Princes who came to raise the siege from *Constantinople*. *Bajazet* hangeth the King of *Caramania*, and subdueth his Country. He is defeated at Mount *Stella* by *Tamerlan*, fettered with gold, and incaged. His son *Solyman* is kinged at *Adrianople*, *Bajazet* beateth out his own brains, civil Wars among his sons 15 years: *Tamerlan* restores to the Christians the Countries taken by

Bajazet

Bajazet. In the Weſt, the Jews are expelled *Germany*, and peace concluded there: the Emperour is impriſoned, and eſcapeth. The Biſhop of *Magdeburg*, and Saxony quarrell. *John Galeas* of *Milan* made Duke for 100000 crowns. *Savoy* made a Dutchie. The Electors depoſe *Wenceſlaus*, and chooſe *Frederick* Duke of *Brunſwick*, who is ſlain by the Biſhop of *Mentz* procurement, and *Robert* Palſgrave ſucceeds 10 years. In *France* the Duke of *Britain* invades the Conſtables poſſeſſions: the King marching againſt him, falls mad. *Burgundy* made chief Regent, he baniſheth the Conſtable: the King recovereth, and relapſeth at a Maſque: The Regent incenſeth the Queen againſt the Duke of *Orleans*, as if he aimed at the Kings death and his children. The French reduce the *Millanois* to the obedience of the Dutcheſs, the Kings brothers wife. *John* of *Caſtile* killed by a fall from his horſe, to whom ſucceeded *Henry* 3. his ſon 17 years. The Rebels of *Ruſſia* ſubdued by the *Polander*. The King of *Poland Ladiſlaus*, claimeth *Hungary*, but is oppoſed: his brother *Vitondus* made great Duke of *Lituania*; he invadeth *Scythia* and is overthrown by *Tamerlan*. *Sigiſmund* of *Hungary* makes peace with the Polander for 16 years: he puts to death 32 Lords. *Margaret* of *Denmark* makes a League with the Prince of *Rugia*, and with the Earl of *Holſt*, and Duke of *Scleſwick*. *Stockholm* ſtands out againſt the Queens decree, it is beſieged. *Albert* promiſeth to deliver it in 3 years, in performance whereof, *Lubec*, *Dansk*, and ſome other Hance-towns are pledged. *Stockholm* ſurrendred. Copper-Mines adjudged to the Crown. *Ericus*, *Margarets* ſiſters ſon, is aſſociated; he recovereth *Gothland*, paying to the Teutonicks 9000 Nobles. *Wenceſlaus* of *Bohemia* eſcapeth 3 times out of priſon: He knighted the Fiſherman that helped him. The Earl of *Holland* reconciled to the Lords, whom he ſuſpected to have ſlain his Steward and Concubine: His ſon is diſgraced at Table in the *French* Court, becauſe *William* the ſecond's body was not recovered from the *Friſons*; whereupon the *Friſons* are beaten, and the body brought thence to *Valenciens*, and there buried. *Martin* King of *Aragon* ſetleth *Sicily* on his ſon. In *England*, the King quarrels with *London*, for not lending him 1000 l. The Iriſh rebell, and are beaten: *Warwick* baniſhed, and *Arundel* beheaded; *Gloceſter* ſmothered at *Calis* by *Moubray*; *Hereford* and *Moubray* baniſhed. *Mortimer* next heir to the Crown ſlain by the Iriſh; the King to be revenged goeth thither: At his return he is taken, and reſigneth to the Duke of *Hereford*. In *Scotland*, *Robert* 3. reigns 17 years. Great troubles raiſed by *Duncan* Earl of *Buchan*. 600 Highlanders decide their quarrel before the King. The Earl of *March* falleth off to the Engliſh, and with *Hotſpur* waſtes the borders. *Wark*-Caſtle taken by the Scots.

Years of Chriſt.

In the Church, to *Clement* the Antipope ſucceedeth *Bennet* 13. *Boniface*, upon the intreaty of the Princes, is willing to reſign, but *Bennet* denieth: He is impriſoned at *Avignon* by the French king, and eſcapes. One Synod held this Decad at *Weſtminſter*, where Appeals to *Rome* are inhibited, and Firſt-fruits oppoſed. Becauſe Chriſt began to preach at thirty years, therefore the Jubilee is reduced to thirty years. *John Hus* appeareth; divers of his Diſciples burnt at *Auſpurg*. The Order of White-coats in *Italy* now began; they profeſſed extraordinary ſanctimony. Greek being forgot in *Italy* 700 years, is brought thither again by *Chryſolorus*.

In the Eaſt, *Iſa* being expelled by his brother *Mahomet* from *Pruſa*, flieth to *Conſtantinople*. *Solyman* makes his brother *Iſa* Generall againſt *Mahomet*, who ruleth at *Amaſia*, and kills *Cardaules* whom *Tamerlan* had placed there. *Mahomet* received as King by *Pruſa*, *Nice*, and *Nicapolis*; He refuſed to marry *Tamerlans* daughter; He expels his brother *Iſa* into *Carmania*, where he died obſcurely. *Solyman* takes *Pruſa*, againſt whom *Muſa* another brother is imployed by *Mahomet*; who having married the Prince of *Valachia's* daughter, is received King at *Adrianople* in *Solyman's* abſence: But the Greek Emperor helpeth *Solyman*, and expels *Muſa*, who ſuddenly aſſaulting *Solyman* in his riot, ſtrangles him and poſſeſſeth his kingdome, and beſiegeth the Greek Emperor in *Conſtantinople* for aiding *Solyman*. In the Iſthmus of *Peloponneſus*, a Wall is built neer to *Corinth* againſt incurſions. In the Weſt, *Prague* is beſieged, becauſe *Wenceſlaus* will not releaſe the Imperial Cities from their Oath made to him. *Erfort* waſted. A ſedition in *Mentz*. In *France*, the Regent dieth, and *Orleance* is made Regent. *Nemours* is beſtowed on the King of *Navar* by the French King. The Duke of *Burgundy* oppoſeth the Regent in his Taxes. The Duke raiſeth an Army, and is in ſhew made friends with the Regent; who

1400

Years of Chriſt.

who croſſeth the Dukes intent in beſieging *Calice*: He murthers the Regent, flieth into *Flanders*, and returns with an Army, juſtifieth his fact, is abſolved, and reconciled to the ſons of *Orleans*; his daughter is married to the Dolphin. The *Teutonicks* are called into *Poland* by the Kings brother, who rebelleth, but is beaten by *Vitondus*. *Ladiſlaus* kills 50000. Teutonicks in *Lituania*, and takes the Maſter, with many priſoners. *Ladiſlaus* ſon to *Andrew* is ſent for by the Hungarian Lords. *Sigiſmund* flieth into *Moravia*, and by the Bohemian help recovers *Hungary*. *Ladiſlaus* returne.h into *Italy*. *Steven* the Vaivod executed for rebellion, and intelligence with the *Turks*, who defeat *Sigiſmund*. He quarrels with the Venetians. *Gothland* is redeemed from the Teutonicks; the *Danes* defeated in *Friſia*. The *Holſatians* pawned *Flensburg* and *Newes* to the King of *Denmark*. The Genuans beaten at ſea by the Venetians, who protect the Vicenzans. *Eſcalla* of *Verona* poyſoned by *Novello*, who kills his ſons, and takes the City. *Novello* cuts off the eares and noſes of the Venetian Ambaſſadors; but he being taken and his three children, with *Verona* and *Padua*, are all ſtrangled at *Venice*. They buy *Zara* from *Ladiſlaus* for 100000 Crowns. *John* Biſhop of *Liege* is expelled for refuſing to take Orders; he is aided by the Duke of *Burgundy*, who burned the City and ſlew 36000. *Parvis* helps the *Liegeois*, who makes his ſon Biſhop; both are killed by *Johns* friends, with 40000 people; the Biſhop is reſtored, and the City fined at 200000 Crowns. In *England*, *Henry* 4. reigneth 13 years. *Exeter*, *Surry*, and *Aumarle* executed for ſtriving to reſtore *Richard*, who is ſtarved at *Pomfret*. The Queen returns into *France*. At *Hallydown-hill* the Scots are beaten; the Engliſh defeated in *Wales*. A Battel at *Shrewsbury* between the King and ſome Lords. A rebellion raiſed by *Mowbray* and the Archbiſhop of *York*. *Barwick* and other Caſtles taken by the King. The Earl of Northumberland fleeth into *Wales*. *Glendower* ſpoileth the Marches; he is aided by the French with 140 ſail. The Prince invadeth *Scotland*. *Northumberland* and the Lord *Bardolf* overcome and ſlain. A falſe *Richard* entertained in Scotland. *Wark*-Caſtle taken by the Scots. Prince *David* ſtarved by the Duke of *Albany* the Kings brother. *Douglaſſe* kills many at *Shrewsbury*. Prince *James* going into *France*, is taken by the Engliſh; his father at the news thereof dieth with grief. *Robert* Duke of Albany Regent. The Scots enter *England*. The Earl of *March* is reconciled to the Regent.

In the Church, *Boniface* 9. yet ſitteth. *Bononia* with ſome other places recovered from *Galeas* by the Pope. To him ſucceeded *Innocent* 4. 2 years: He removeth into *Viterbium*, upon a ſedition raiſed by *Ladiſlaus* of *Sicily* againſt him. *Gregory* 12. ſucceedeth: He ſwears to reſign for the peace of the Church: He forbids all union between his Cardinals and thoſe of *France*. A Paſquil ſet up in *Rome* againſt him: The Devil diſcharging him of his oath, his forces beat *Ladiſlaus* out of *Rome*. *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou*, confirmed King of *Naples*. 2 Synods in this Decad; one at *Aquileia*, the other at *Piſa*, where *Gregory* and *Bennet* are depoſed, and *Alexander* 5. choſen. The Order of the White-coats is condemned. A Church at *Luca* built to the Crucifix.

1410— In the Eaſt, *Muſa* is taken and ſtrangled by *Mahomet*, who reigns 8 years. *Orchanes*, *Solymans* ſon, is taken, and his eyes are put out. *Carmania* ſubdued, and the Varachian Princes made Tributaries. In the Weſt, *Sigiſmund* King of *Hungary*, ſon to *Charles* 4. reigneth Emperor 26 years: He meets the Pope in *Italy* about appointing the Councel of *Conſtance*; He laboureth with *France* and *England* for a peace. *Cleve* made a Dukedome. *Sigiſmund*, after his Brothers death, obtaineth *Bohemia*. *Ziſca* rebelleth, and becomes Captain of the *Huſſites*. In *France*, the Duke of *Berry* with the ſons of *Orleans* make a faction againſt the Duke of *Burgundy*, whom the Dolphin alſo oppoſeth. *Burgundy* plots the death of *Berry*, *Burbon*, and *Orleans*. The Dolphin is Regent, and *Burgundy* proclaimed Traitor; he makes his peace. *Agincourt*-Battel. *Burgundy* leagueth with *England*. The Dolphin dieth, and the Queen is Regent. *Normandy* invaded by the Engliſh; The Queen confined to *Tours*; *Burgundy* doth all; The Conſtable, Chancellor, and 1600 murthered. The Engliſh get the Iſle of *France* and *Normandy*. The Dolphin murthereth the Burgundian. In *Spain*, 15000 Moors are ſlain: *Arragon* united to *Sicily*: *Ferdinand Perez* King of *Sevil*, buyes the *Canaries* from the King thereof. *Ladiſlaus* of *Poland* ſubdueth much of *Pruſia*, and defeateth the Teutonicks, and brings 51 of their Colours into *Cracovia*. *Sigiſmund* pawneth *Sepuſium* to *Ladiſlaus*; He grants peace to the Teutonicks for 2 years. Upon the Popes requeſt, *Pipus* the Florentine takes many places from the Venetians for *Sigiſmund* of *Hungary*; but being corrupted by Venetian gold, is by *Sigiſmund* choked with molten gold. 5 years peace between *Hungary* and *Venice*. The *Danes* are defeated in *Friſia*. *Margaret* of *Denmark* dieth, and *Ericus* reigneth alone

Years of Chriſt

alone 25 years: wars between him and the Dukes of *Holſt* about the Dutchy of *Scleſwick*. *Wickliffs* books are burnt in *Prague*, which made a ſedition. *Moravia* is united to *Bohemia*: 7 Senators at *Prague* caſt out at the windows. *Sigiſmund* the Emperour, upon his brothers death, reigneth in *Bohemia* 20 years. 40000 rebel with *Ziſca*. The Venetians recover divers places taken by *Pius*: A part of St. *Marks* Church the Palace burnt; a Decree made againſt the building of a new Palace. The Duke reverſeth the Decree of paying 1000 Ducats: the Turks claim *Ionia* from them; They take *Lampſacum*. In *Flanders*, *Philip* the Good rules 44 years; he ſideth with the Engliſh. The Friſons revolt from *Holland*: the Earl dyeth, being bitten by a mad dog. *Jaquelin* his daughter ſucceeds 18 years. The Biſhop of *Liege* reſigneth his Biſhoprick, and obtains of the Emperour the Earldom of *Holland*, being eſcheated for want of heirs-male. In *England*, *Henry* the 5. reigned 9 years, he baniſheth the French: ſome French executed for Treaſon. At *Agincourt* 10000 French ſlain, and as many taken by the Engliſh. The Emperour cometh into *England*; he with *Burgundy* ſide with the Engliſh: *Harfleu* beſieged, and relieved: the Engliſh take *Caen*, and other places. The Genuans, French and Scots defeated: Queen *Joan* ſuſpected of Sorcery, and committed. Peace with *France* and *Burgundy*. *Donald* of the Iſles, recovers his Earldom of *Roſſe*: Wars between him and the Earl of *Mar*. *Barwick* and *Roxburg* beſieged by *Albany* and *Douglas*.

In the Church, ſits *Alexander* 5. 11 moneths, then *John* 22. He removeth to *Ariminum*. *Gregory* ſtayeth at *Rome*, and *Benet* goeth out of *France* into *Aragon*. *John* goeth to the Councel at *Conſtance*, he with *Benet* are depoſed. *Gregory* reſigneth, and is made chief Cardinal. *John* in a diſguiſe is taken and impriſoned. *Martin* 5. is choſen 7 years, and ſo this Schiſm endeth. The Pope goeth from *Conſtance* againſt the will of the Emperor, and ſo the Councel endeth. The Pope loſeth ſome Towns. In this Decad was held the Councel of *Conſtance*, where were 4 Patriarchs, 29 Cardinals, 346 Biſhops, 564 Abbots and Doctors, beſides multitudes of ſecular Princes. In this Councel were found of the Benedictines 15107 houſes in *Europe*. *Huſs* is firſt Excommunicated; his books, and then himſelf, burnt. *Wickliffs* Doctrine is condemned, and his books burnt. *Jerome* of *Prague* is alſo burnt: their aſhes caſt into the river. Sir *John Oldcaſtle* hanged and burnt for Religion. *Gerſon* perſecuted by the Pope, for ſpeaking againſt the Roman Church. *Ziſca's* followers are called Thaborites.

In the Eaſt, *John* 7. ſon to *Andronicus*, reigned 5 years; then *John* 8. 20 years. To *Mahomet* the Turk ſucceeded *Amurath* 2. his ſon 38 years. The falſe *Muſtapha* ſet up by the Greeks, is ſtrangled. *Conſtantinople* is beſieged: *Muſtapha* the Sultans brother taketh *Nice*, and is ſtrangled. *Servia*, and much of *Natolia* ſubdued by the Turk: *Smyrna* annexed to the Turks Empire, the Prince and his ſon being taken. The Turks take Theſſalonica from the Venetians, and ſubdue *Ætolia*, whileſt three Princes ſtrive for it. In the Weſt, *Ziſca* is beaten by the Imperialiſts, and loſeth his onely eye: He overthroweth the Imperialiſts. *Frederick* Marquis of *Miſna*, made Duke of *Saxony* and Elector, for money. *Ziſca* dieth of the Plague, and orders a Drum to be made of his skin. The Elector is defeated by the Huſſites, and flyeth: they burn *Aldenburg*. In *France*, the Dolphin is cited for murthering *Burgundy*, and for non-appearance is diſ-inherited. The King dyeth, and his ſon *Charles* 7. reigneth 38 years. The Engliſh are beaten by the Baſtard of *Orleans*: they take *Pontarſon*, and the French *Tournay*. The battel of *Harrings*. *Alphonſus* of *Arragon* firſt adopted by *Joan* of *Naples*, and then *Lewis* of *Anjou*. *Arragon* and *Navar* joyn againſt *Caſtile*. *Vitondus* accepteth *Bohemia*, which the King of *Poland* refuſed. The Teutons ſet againſt the Polander by the Emperour: the King breaks his leg in hunting. King *Erick* of *Denmark* being returned from *Syria*, freeth all that ſhould build timber-houſes in *Elſenore* from Taxes for 10 years, and for 20 thoſe that built of ſtone. The League renewed between *Scotland* and *Denmark*. *Vandalia* forbid Traffique in the Daniſh Seas. *Henry* Duke of *Scleſwick* ſlain in ſcaling the walls of *Flensburg*. The Pope raiſeth forces againſt the Huſſites. 3 Armies of Franks, Bavarians, and Saxons fall upon *Bohemia*: they all flee away without fight. The Venetians denounce War againſt *Philip* of *Milan*, for oppreſſing the Florentines. *Philip* takes *Breſcia*, which again revolted. *Philip* of *Flanders* aideth the Duke of *Brabant* againſt the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and makes War againſt *Jaquelin* of *Holland*, whoſe heir he got himſelf to be after her death. He inſtituted the Order of the Golden-fleece. The Lords of *Holland* diſlike *John* of *Brabant*, and call in his brother the Earl of St. *Pol*, but the Duke is received, and the faction of the Counteſs baniſhed. *Jaquelin* divorced from the Duke, and married to the Duke of *Gloceſter*, who alſo forſakes her. King *Henry* of *England* is declared heir of *France*, and —1420

Years of Christ.

Regent during the life of *Charls*. The Duke of *Clarence* ſlain; the King pawneth his Crown to Cardinal *Beaufort*, for 20000 l. The Duke of *Bedford* Regent of *France*. *Henry* 6. reigneth in *England* 38 years; he is crowned King of *France*. The *French* beaten at *Vernol*; Great-Ordnance now firſt uſed in *England*. *Warwick* left Lieutenant in *France*. *Talbot* doth good ſervice in *France*; *Salisbury* ſlain at the ſiege of *Orleans*, which is relieved by *Ioan* of *Ark*. *Suffolk* and *Talbot* taken; S. *Dennis* and other places loſt by the Engliſh: the Scots aide the French; the Earl of *Buchan* Conſtable of *France*: King *James* carried by King *Henry* into *France*, he is ranſomed; *Buchan* and *Douglaſſe* ſlain at *Vernol*; *Mordo* with his two ſons, and *Lenox*, executed in *Scotland* for oppreſſion; *Alexander* Lord of the Iſles, rebelleth and is taken; his brother kils the Earl of *Cathneſſe*, and defeats the Earl of *Mar*. *Alexanders* brother is driven into *Ireland*, his head is ſent thence to the King.

In the Church, *Clement* 8. is choſen Antipope, by means of *Alphonſus* of *Aragon*, he ſate 8 years; he is forced to reſigne, and become Biſhop of *Majorca*. Pope *Martin* who refuſed to give the title of *Sicily* to *Alphonſus*, is reconciled to him. *Julian* the Cardinal ſent by the Pope againſt *Bohemia*, and to treat with the Emperour about a Synod at *Baſil*: *Rene* King of *Sicily*, ſtriving for *Lorrain*, is taken. *Alphonſus* ſeiſeth on *Naples*. At *Papia* was a Synod held, which becauſe of the Plague, was removed to *Sena*, and diſſolved by the Pope, for fear of *Aragon*. The Adamites revive in *Bohemia*; and the Eremites at *Rome*: one Sect of the Thaborites, call themſelves Orphans, for the loſſe of *Ziſca*. *Wickliff*'s body after 41 years, is digged up and burnt.

1430 In the Eaſt, the Prince of *Epirus* is forced to ſend his three ſons to the Turk, *Scanderbeg* was one of them: The Turks taketh many places from the Chriſtians; he exoculateth and geldeth *Gregory* ſon to the Deſpot of Sinderovia: the Greek Emperor with *Demetrius* Prince of *Peloponeſus* repair to Italy for help, and are preſent at the Councel of *Florence*. In the Weſt, *Sigiſmund* is crowned at *Millan* and at *Rome*; he makes *Fran. Gonzaga* Prince of *Millan*, and his ſon *Lewis* Marqueſſe of *Mantua*: the Empreſſe impriſoned upon ſuſpition, and releaſed: the Emperour died of a ſurfeit of Melons: his ſon in law *Albert* Duke of *Auſtria*, is made King of *Bohemia*. The Engliſh loſe *Chartres*, are defeated at *Vivaine*, and ſubdue the Normans. *Paris* fals off to the French, the Duke of *Burbon* fets up the Dolphin, who are reconciled to the King. The Marſhal of *France* burnt for Witchcraft. Peace made between *Caſtile* and *Portugall*. The Moores are beaten. The *Genuans* take *Arragon*, *Navar*, with 100 Princes, and 200 Knights at *Cajetta*; they are ſent to the Duke of *Millan*, and by him releaſed. The Caſtilians and Portugals beaten by the Moors. *Alphonſus* 5. obtains many victories againſt the Moors; great troubles in *Caſtile* about the Conſtable. A ſedition of Ruſticks in *Hungary*. *Ladiſlaus* of Poland, hath fealty ſworn to him by the *Vayvod* of *Valachia*. The Swedes rebell againſt the Danes; the King hardly eſcapeth with his treaſure into Gothland. *Chriſtopher* Duke of *Bavaria*, ſiſters ſon to *Ericus*, is ſent to, to be King. *Julian* the Cardinal flyeth out of *Bohemia*. The *Thaborites* take divers towns. The Cup is allowed to the Bohemians in the Councel of *Baſil*. *Bohemia* much diſtracted upon the death of *Sigiſmund*. The Venetians defeat *Philip* of *Millans* forces by ſea; they fight with him neer *Cremona*. *Millan* invaded by the Duke of Savoy and Montferrat. *Philip* loſeth many places, and his Generall is taken. Flanders ſpoiled by the Duke of *Gloceſter*, who carrieth away many captive Children. The *Hollanders* for ſcouring the Seas from the Eaſterlings, have carried a Broom ever ſince on their main-top. *Jaquelin* ſurrendreth her Countries for the ranſome of her husband. *Jone* of *Ark* is burnt for a Witch. The Treaty of *Aras*, where the Burgundian ſideth with the French againſt the Engliſh: He is raiſed by the Protector of *England* from the ſiege of *Callis*. *Warwick* the Regent ſpoileth *Picardy*. The French twice beaten in Normandy. In *Scotland* the Earle of *March* made Earle of *Buchan*. *Roxburg* beſieged by the Scots King, who is murthered by the Earle of *Athol*. His ſon *James* 2. ſucceedeth 23 years: the Chancellor and Regent at odds, and are reconciled. *Douglaſſe* troubleth the State; the Queen takes the young King from the Chancellour.

In the Church, *Eugenius* 4. ſits 15 years; the *Columnii* rebel, and he flieth in a diſguiſed habite to *Florence*; the people fortifie the Popes Caſtle againſt him; they are at laſt reconciled: he helpeth *Rene* againſt *Alphonſus*; he attempteth to adjourn the Synod of *Baſil* to *Ferrara*; but is oppoſed and ſuſpended by the Synod: It is decreed, that the Councel is above the Pope. The Greek Emperour acknowledges the Popes Supremacy; nevertheleſſe he is depoſed by the Councel of *Baſil*. Queen *Joan* of *Sicily* dieth, and nameth *Rene* her heire, who now was a Priſoner in *Burgundy*.

dy. Alphonſus is taken, as he was going to take poſſeſſion. The *Aragonians* defeated by *Rene*; the Councel of *Baſil* continued there, at *Ferrara* and *Florence*, 15 years. The *Bohemians* are declared ſons of the Church by the Emperour and Biſhop of *Conſtance*; this was engraven on Marble, in golden letters at *Prague*; their pragmatical Sanction publiſhed at *Paris*, but condemned by the Pope as heretical.

Years of Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, *Theodore* the Emperours brother, and the Turk beſiege *Conſtantinople*: The other brother *Conſtantine* recovered *Peloponneſus*, and rebuilds the wall: He ſucceeds to his brother in the Empire 8 years. *Peloponneſus* divided between the other two brothers; they pay tribute to Mahumet. The Turks are beaten out of *Hungary* by *John Huniades*. *Woldavia* won by the *Hungarians*. *Huniades* defeates the Turk twice, and kils two Baſſas. *Scanderbeg* eſcapeth into *Epirus*, and poſſeſſeth it. *Bulgaria* loſt by the Turks, whereof 30000 were ſlain: Peace for 10 years between the Turks and Hungarians; theſe break the peace and are defeated by the Turks at *Varna*. *Scanderbeg* refuſeth to make peace with the Turk. *Peloponneſus* taken by *Amurath*. *Huniades* defeateth the Turks in *Raſcia*, and is defeated by them in the Plaines of *Caſſovia*. *Scanderbeg* overcomes *Muſtopha* twice; *Amurath* dieth at the ſiege of *Croja*: To him ſucceeded *Mahomet* the great, his ſon 32 years; he begins with the murther of his Brothers. In the Weſt, *Frederick* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria* reigneth 53 years: Wars in *Bavaria* between *Lewis* the father, and the ſon. *Lucelburg* ſold by the Emperour to the Duke of *Saxony*, cauſeth war: The Emperour refuſeth the Crown of *Bohemia*. *Huniadies* makes war on the Emperour for not reſtoring the King, and Crown of *Hungary*. The Imperial Cities and Earl of *Wiritzburg* fall out. The *Norimbergers* defeated 8 times by *Albert* of *Brandeburg*. The Duke of *Burgundy* ranſometh the Duke of *Orleans*, for 300000 Crowns. The Parliament of *Tholoſe* ſet up for *Languedoc*. *Diepe* beſieged by *Talbot*, and relieved by the Dolphin. 5 years Truce with England: the Duke of *Britain* ſtarveth his brother, for intelligence with the Engliſh. *Pont L' Arch* taken from the Engliſh by the Duke of Britain, who with French help, recovereth alſo *Normandy*. War between *Caſtile* and *Navar*. *Ladiſlaus* of *Poland* is choſen King of *Hungary*. *Caſimire* the Kings brother made Duke of Lituania, the Prince thereof being ſlain. *Sileſia* waſted by the *Polanders*. The Turks exoculate the Deſpot of *Raſcia* and his ſons, who fled to *Ladiſlaus*; war between *Maſſovia* and *Lituania*. The King is killed: *Caſimire* refuſeth to be King: *Boleſlaus* Duke of *Maſſovia* was choſen; then *Caſimire* accepted it, and reigned 45 years: He neglects *Polonia*, and reſides in *Lituania*; he refuſeth his Coronation-Oath, till the *Polanders* began to reject him, then he took it. *Ladiſlaus* being choſen King of *Hungary*; the Queen carrieth her ſon and crown of Hungary to the Emperour. *Julian* the Cardinal perſwades the Hungarians to break the 10 years peace with the Turks; whereupon the King is defeated and ſlain at *Varna*. *Ladiſlaus Poſthumus* ſucceeded 14 years: he was ſon to *Albert*. *Huniades* kils the Vaivod of *Valachia*, who detained him, after the battell of *Varna*. *Huniades* and the *Polander* fight for *Valachia*. *Chriſtopher* of *Bavaria* reigns in *Suevia* 8 years; he reſtores to *Adolphus* the Dukedome of *Scleſwick*; the Rebels in *Jutia* defeated, and the chief of them executed: He is crowned firſt in *Suevia*, then in Norway and Denmark, he loſt much treaſure by ſhipwrack; to him ſucceeded *Chriſtiernus* Earl of *Oldenburg* 30 years; *Adolphus* Duke of *Scleſwick* was named, but he refuſed the Crowns. The Swedes choſe *Charls* ſon to *Canutus* for their King. In *Bohemia*, *Ladiſlaus Poſthumus Alberts* ſon reigneth 19 years: *Menard* the governour is impriſoned, and *Prague* taken by the Thaborites. A great loſſe of goods in *Venice*, by an inundation. The Venetians take all from *Sforza*, which they had given him, for aiding *Philip* of *Millan*, whom they defeat, and take *Laudum* with *Placentia*. *Laudum* recovered by *Sforza*. Saint *Marks* Church robbed by a *Cretan* of two Millions of Gold; the Venetian Embaſſador murthered by *Sforza*. *Philip* of Flanders reſtoreth the Dutcheſſe of *Luxelburg*: he pacifieth the factions of Hoecks and Cabillaucks. An inundation at *Dort* deſtroyed 100000 people. *Philip* and the Gauntois make war, becauſe they refuſe to pay his cuſtomes of Salt. The Duke of *Orleans* who had been priſoner in England 25 years, is ranſomed by *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*; who was therefore called the *Good*. The Duke of *Gloceſters* wife impriſoned for Sorcery: *Pauls* ſteeple fired by lightning; *Whittington* builds *New-gate* and a Colledge. The King hath with *Reates* daughter, whom he married, *Anjou* and *Mayne*. *Thomas Eyre* built *Leaden-hall*: The Duke of *Sommerſet* made Regent of *France*: the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and the Cardinal of *Wincheſter* die ſuddenly, within fifteen dayes of each other. The Engliſh ſurpriſe *Fougeres*, and in three years loſe Normandy and Gaſcoine. The Iriſh ſuppreſſed: the Duke of *Suffolk* beheaded at Sea. *Douglaſſe* and his brother executed at *Edenburg*: *William* ſonne to *Iames Douglaſſe*, the Kings favorite, diſplaceth the Chancellor and Regent, which cauſed much miſchief: Sir *James Stuart* who had married

1440

Years of Christ.

the Kings mother baniſhed: the Engliſh beaten back from invading *Scotland*; 3 years peace concluded. *Rene* expelled out of *Naples* by *Alphonſus*, who promiſeth to pay to the Pope yearly 8000 ounces of Gold.

In the Church, *Eugenius* ſits yet, in whoſe time the 30 Schiſme breaks out: *Amadeus* Duke of *Savoy* being choſen; he was called *Fœlix* 5. and ſate 9 years, having been Duke 40 years, he became an Heremite: *Eugenius* dieth, to whom ſucceedeth *Nicolas* 5. 8 years; he erected the Vatican Library: *Fœlix* reſigneth, and is made Cardinal and Legat. 4 Synods held this Decad; one of them at *Lateran*, to nullifie the Councel of *Baſil*. The Feaſt of our Lady's Viſitation inſtituted at *Baſil*. *Palmerius* the Chronologer burnt for hereſies.

1450 In the Eaſt, *Conſtantinople* is taken, the Emperor ſlain, and 60000 people carried away captives. *Standerbeg* beateth the Turks many times. *Mahomet* ſtriketh off the head of his fair Concubine *Irene*, at a publique meeting: He recovers *Servia*; he loſeth an eye. *Huniades* beats him off from the ſiege of *Belgrad*, 40000 Turks ſlain, he beſiegeth *Rhodes*, but is beat back by the Pope and Genuans: he loſeth Lemnos, taketh *Corinth*, diſmantleth *Athens*; he marrieth the daughter of *Demetrius* Prince of *Peloponeſus*, whom he expelled, and gives him the town *Oenum*, and the Cuſtome of Salt for his maintenance. In the Weſt, the Emperour reſtores the Crown of *Hungary*; the Duke of *Brunſwick* taken by the Biſhop of *Colen* in fight. A ſedition in *Auſtria* of ten years continuance. The Pope diſplaceth the Biſhop of *Mentz* for refuſing to pay his Firſt-fruits, which cauſed much trouble: the Emperour is taken by the Citizens in Vienna, and releaſed. *Aquitain* revolteth to the French: A Parliament ſet up at *Grenoble* in *Dauphiny*. *Talbot* is ſlain, the Dolphin rebelleth, and flies into *Burgundy*. The French burn *Sandwich*; the Duke of *Alenſon* impriſoned for intelligence with the Engliſh. The King being forewarned of poyſon, abſtained ſo long from meat, that he ſtarved himſelf and died. The Moors in *Andaluſia* defeated. By the death of *Charls*, *Navar* fell to *Blanch* the repudiated wife of *Henry*, and *Arragon* to *Ferdinand* ſon to King *Iohn*. To *Alphonſus* of *Arragon* ſucceeded his brother *Iohn* King of *Navar*, Father to *Ferdinand* the Catholick, 21 years, *Caſimire* of *Poland* refuſeth to reſtore *Pruſſia* to the *Teutonick*: at laſt he is defeated by them. *Pedolia* invaded by the Tartars. A league between *Poland* and *Bohemia*. *Huniades* made Regent of *Hungary*: his death plotted by the Earl of *Cilia*. *Ulric* ſlain by *Ladiſlaus*, ſon to *Huniades*; he is executed, and his brother *Matthias* impriſoned; the king dieth, and the ſame *Matthias* is choſen, 32 years: he was forced to promiſe to his keeper *Podiebral*, who was Regent of *Bohemia*, to marry his daughter, and to pay him 60000 Crowns. *Charls* of *Suevia* is forced for his tyranny to flie to *Dansk* with his treaſure. *Chriſtiern* is choſen King of *Suevia*; the King ſeiſeth upon *Scleſwick* and *Holſt*, being eſcheated by the death of *Adolphus*: *Hamburgh* ſubmits to *Denmark*. *Ulrick* Earl of *Cilia*, Governour of *Auſtria*, and of the king of *Bohemia*'s perſon; he is removed and reſtored; the King dieth. *Podiebard* crowned, he reigned 13 years; he is oppoſed by *Sileſia* for being a Thaborite. The Venetians expel the *Florentines* out of their territories. *Coſmo* aideth *Sforza* againſt them, who taketh *Millan*, and is honoured by the Pope with a rich Sword. A peace is made between *Venice*, *Florence*, and *Sforza*. The *French* king offended for the peace made between England and the Flemmings. *Jack Cade* rebelleth in *Kent*, and is executed. The Duke of *York* takes arms againſt the King; he ſubmits, and ſwears Fealty. He accuſeth *Sommerſet*, and is accuſed by him; *Sommerſet* ſent to the Tower, releaſed, and made Captaine of *Calice*. *York*, *Warwick* and *Salisbury* take arms; the battell of S. *Albans*; The King hurt and taken, *York* made Protector, and diſplaced. 9 years peace with *Burgundy*. *Warwick* goeth to *Calice*: the King forces beaten at *Blore-heath*, by the Earl of *Salisbury*: At *Ludlow* the Yorkſhire men take arms. *Douglaſſe* returning from *Rome* is pardoned, and made Vice-roy; He is ſlain at *Sterling*, for plotting againſt the King: His brother *James* beſiegeth it, and is forced thence by *Huntly*: His forces forſake him, he flieth into *England*: The Family of the *Douglaſſes* put to the Horne. Archbiſhop of S. *Andrews* made Chancellor. *Douglaſſe* with the Engliſh invade *Scotland*: the King at the ſiege of *Roxburg* is ſlain by the breaking of a Cannon.

In the Church, *Calixtus* 3. ſits 3 years; he procured a warr between the Perſian and Turk, he left behinde him 500000 crowns. *Pius* 2. ſucceedeth 5 years; He was *Æneas Sylvius*, and Scribe in the Councel of *Baſil*; he will have no appeals from the Pope to a Councel; he thought otherwayes at *Baſil*. *Calixtus* 3. inſtituted the Feaſt of Chriſts transfiguration, upon the defeating of the Turks in *Hungary*.

In

years of Chriſt

In the Eaſt, *Uſſum Caſſanes* the Perſian makes war againſt *Mahomet*. *Mytilene* and other places taken by the Turks. *Trapezund* taken. *David* the Emperor and his two ſons killed. *Mahomet* taketh *Chalcis* from the Venetians. The Governor of *Myſia* flei'd. *Scanderbeg* dieth. *Epirus* taken again, and *Scanderbeg's* ſons driven out. *Mahomets* Fleet ſpoiled, bound for *Trapezund*: The Turks waſte *Hungary*. In the Weſt, the Emperor tenders his Daughter to *Mahomet*, if he will alter his Religion; but *Albert* of *Bavaria* ſtole her away. The King of *Bohemia* freed the Emperor from thoſe of *Vienna*. *Brunſwick* makes war againſt the Hans-towns. The Emperor entertained at *Rome* by the Pope. The Turks enter *Germany*. In *France*, *Lewis* 11 reigneth 22 years: His covetouſneſſe cauſeth a Civil war: He redeems the Towns morgaged to the Duke of Burgundy at the Treaty of *Arras*: The Duke with the Lords beſiege *Paris*; the King diſperſeth the Lords by fair promiſes. He takes the Dutchy of *Normandy* from his brother, and flieth to the Duke of *Burgundy*. The King makes the Duke of *Britain* to renounce the League with *Burgundy*, and cauſeth *Liege* to rebell againſt the Duke. The Dutchy of *Guyen* beſtowed on the Kings brother. Divers Lords of *Caſtile* league againſt *Henry* their King; they force him to put away his ſuppoſed daughter, and to declare his brother *Alphonſus* heir. *Alphonſus* is crowned, and *Henry* depoſed; but at laſt *Henry* prevaileth, and *Alphonſus* dieth. Peace ſetled in *Caſtile*, and *Iſabel* the Kings ſiſter is declared heir, ſhe marrieth *Ferdinand* of Arragon. *Marieburg* yields to the King of Poland. *Pomerania* after 180 years united to *Polonia*. Peace with the Teutonicks. *Ladiſlaus* the Kings ſon is deſigned King of Bohemia, after the death of *George*. The Tartars defeated by the Vaivod of Moldavia. *Matthias* is crowned King of Hungary at *Alba*; *Venice* alloweth him 60000 Crowns yearly, and the Pope 50000 againſt the Turks: his Uncle is beheaded at *Conſtantinople* by the Turks. *Tranſilvania* reduced by *Matthias*; he is beaten and wounded in *Valachia*, by the Vayvods treachery. War with *Bohemia*. 10000 Captives carried away by the Turk out of *Hungary*. The Swed s rebell againſt the Danes: the King forced to flie. *Charles* is ſent for, but quickly forſaketh them again. A rebellion in *Holſt* by *Gerard* the Kings brother, who is impriſoned. The Danes take two Engliſh ſhips: Their goods and perſons attached in *England*. *Gerard* expelled out of *Holſt*. King *George* of *Bohemia* condemned by the Pope of hereſie; *Matthias* of *Hungary* ſet up againſt him. The Venetians loſe *Negropont* to the Turk. *Charles* of *Burgundy* helps the Pope againſt the Turk; he falls out with his father, and is reconciled again. *Arnold* Duke of *Guelders* impriſoned a year by his ſon. *Liege* ſubmits and is pardoned. *Philip* dieth: His ſon *Charles* ſucceedeth 10 years; he demoliſheth *Liege* for rebelling. *Gaunt* ſubmits and is pardoned. In *England*, *York* is attainted, and the King taken. *York* confirmed Heir to the Crown; he is ſlain by the Queen: his ſon *Edward* defeats the Queens forces, and ſhe his. *Edward* 4. reigns 22 years. *Henry* and the Queen are overcome, and flie into *Scotland*. The Queen enters *Northumberland* with French forces, and is beaten: the King flieth into *Wales*; he is taken diſguiſed, and ſent to the Tower. Sheep tranſported into *Spain*. The King marrieth the Lady *Elizabeth Gray*. *Warwick* plotteth againſt King *Edward*, who is defeated, and committed to the Archbiſhop of *York*; he eſcapeth to *London*; He defeats the Lincolnſhir-men. *Warwick* and *Clarence* flie into *France*; *Edward* flieth to *Burgundy*. *Henry* releaſed, and the Crown entailed upon *Clarence*; *Warwick* is made Regent. In *Scotland*, *James* 3. reigneth 28 years; *Roxburg* and *Wark*-Caſtles taken; *Donald* of the Iſles rebelleth, and is killed. King *Henry* reſigns *Barwick* to the Scots; Peace with *England* 15 years. The Lords of *Barcellone* call in *Rene* to be King of *Caſtile*; the French aſſiſt.

1460

In the Church ſits *Paul* 2. 6 years: He was a Dunce; therefore hated Scholars. He impriſoned *Platina* and *Pomponius Leans*; He ſpent upon the Emperors entertainment in 17 dayes 18000l. Cardinals are priviledged to ride on Mules. Divers bribe the Turk, to be Patriarch of *Conſtantinople*.

In the Eaſt, the Turks are twice beaten by the Perſians. *Dalmatia*, *Auſtria*, *Myſia*, *Boſna*, *Styria*, and *Carinthia* waſted by the Turks; they win *Taurica Cherſoneſus*, and are beaten in *Valachia*. *Ali-Beg* defeated in *Hungary*. The Turks do much hurt in *Hungary*, *Dacia*, and Venetian territories; 30000 Turks killed in *Tranſilvania*; divers Iſlands taken by the Turk. In the Weſt, war between the *Palatine* and *Bavare* about *Mentz*: The Griſons league with the Helvetians: The Archbiſhop of *Strigonium* flieth to the Emperor with much treaſure; he is made Archbiſhop of *Saltzburgh*. *Matthias* of *Hungary* ſubdueth much of *Auſtria*: Peace with *Hungary*. The French King takes *Amiens* and S. *Quintins* from the Duke of *Burgundy*, who recovereth S. *Quintins*; he hireth one to kill

1470

Years of Christ.

kill the King. The Conſtable ſeeketh to corrupt *Burbon*. Peace with *France* and *England*; peace alſo between *Burgundy* and *Britain*; The Conſtable is executed. *Orange* made a Principality ſubject to *France*. At *Digion* in *Burgundy*, a Parliament is erected: The King takes divers Towns from the Dutcheſſe of Burgundy. The Switzers begin to ſerve the French: The Archers are put down, which were inſtituted by *Charles* 7. The Biſhop of *Pampelone* killed by the Conſtable, upon ſuſpition of adultery with the Queen. *Ferdinand* the Catholique reigneth 41 yeares; He and *Iſabel* claim *Portugal*, and ſeiſe on it; ſhe is declared heire of *Caſtile*. The firſt Voyage of Spaniards to *Guiny*. In hatred to *Matthias*, *Caſimir* is made King of *Poland*; but he is reconciled to the people, and *Caſimir* returneth. *Poland* invaded by the Hungarians, and *Ruſſia* by the Tartars. The Teutonicks renew the war with *Poland*, and then ſubmit: the Tartars waſte *Podolia*, and the Turks *Carinthia*. It was agreed, that *Matthias* of *Hungary* ſhould enjoy *Moravia* and *Sileſia* for his life-time, and ſhould be ſtiled King of *Bohemia*; but after his death, theſe Provinces ſhould return to *Bohemia* on payment of 600000 Crowns, and the reſt of *Bohemia* ſhould fall to *Matthias*, if he ſurvived *Ladiſlaus*. Much miſchief done by the Turks in *Hungary*, during the Nuptials of the King with the Daughter of *Arragon*. *Matthias* recovers from the Turks 30000 Captives, and waſteth their Country 30 miles: He takes alſo divers Towns in *Styria*, becauſe the Emperor kept not promiſe. The King of *Denmark* enters *Suevia*, without acting any thing; He is honorably entertained at *Rome*. *George* of *Bohemia* dieth with grief, that the Prince was taken by *Matthias*. *Ladiſlaus* the ſon of *Caſimir* is elected 46 years. *Matthias* being rejected, invadeth *Bohemia*. *Sicily* and *Venice* league againſt the Turks; they ſpoil divers Turkiſh places. The King of *Cyprus* doth bequeath his Wife and Kingdom to the Venetians: they ſettle her in it. The Turks are driven from the ſiege of *Lepanto*; Peace is made with them. S. *Quintins* taken by the French, they invade *Burgundy*. The Burgundian ſideth with King *Edward* againſt King *Henry*. The *Friſons* refuſe to pay the Chimney-penny demanded by the Duke: he prevailed in *France*. The Duke of *Guelders* being angry with his Sonne, ſells his Dutchy to the Burgundian for 92000 Florens, and an annual penſion. The Emperor refuſeth to make the Duke King of *Burgundy*; and he denieth to match his Daughter with his Son *Maximilian*. The Duke of Burgundy, and *Rene* Duke of Lorain, invade each others territories. *Nancy*, which *Rene* had taken, is beſieged by Duke *Charls*, who is ſlain there: his daughter *Mary* ſucceeded: the French ſeiſe on ſome places of the Dutchy: *Maximilian* is eſpouſed to her, and the Dolphin rejected. *Henault* recovered from the French; *Guelders* revolteth; the French loſe *Tournay*; the Lord of *Montigny* is made Governor of *Holland*. In *England* King *Henry* is taken by *Edward*, and committed; *Warwick* killed in Barnet-Fight; the Queen is taken; *Gloceſter* murthers the King and Prince; *Pembrook* and *Richmond* eſcape into Britany; *Oxford* ſent priſoner into Normandy; the Lawes of *Henry* cancelled: the Burgundian animateth the King againſt the French, but faileth him; therefore he makes peace with *France*, upon a match between the Dolphin and his daughter *Elizabeth*. The King bribes the Duke of Britany to have the Earl of Richmond, but faileth: *George* Duke of Clarence condemned of treaſon; he is drowned in a But of Malmſey in the Tower: the King hated for his covetouſneſſe. The king of *Denmark* relinquiſheth his Title to the *Orcades*, upon the matching of his daughter *Margaret* to the King of *Scotland*. S. *Andrews* made an Archbiſhoprick: the King perſecutes the Archbiſhop, gives himſelf to magick and oppreſſion; he makes one *Cockram* a Maſon his favourite: *John* Earl of *Mar* the Kings brother, for treaſon, hath his veins opened, ſo that he bleedeth to death.

In the Church ſate *Sixtus* 4. 13 years: He ſets out a Fleet againſt the Turks; A Jubile at *Rome*, the Jubile now reduced to 25 years: He erecteth *Glaſcow* and *S. Andrews* into Archbiſhopricks in Scotland; in *Caſtile* he inſtituteth the Inquiſition againſt the Jewes and Moors. *Weſelius* a Preacher at *Worms*, burnt for ſpeaking againſt Indulgences.

1480— In the Eaſt, to *Mahomet* ſucceeded his ſon *Bajazet* 2. 32 years: *Zemes* another ſon aſpireth and flieth into *Egypt* and *Rhodes*. *Epirus* recovered by *John* ſon to *Scanderbeg*; the Turks loſe *Boſna*; they take *Valachia*, and invade *Moldavia*. *Bajazet* attempted to deſtroy the Janizaries, but failing, temporiſeth with them: He beſtows other lands on the King of *Caramania* for his kingdom. The two Baſſa's ſent againſt Egypt for receiving of *Zemes*, are defeated and taken. *Bajazet* ſues to the Egyptian Sultan for peace: *Zemes* is ſent to the Pope: The Deſpot of *Servia* takes 7000 Turks with their plunder, and reſcueth 10000 Captives. In the Weſt, *Matthias* takes *Vienna* with other

other places. *Maximilian* choſen King of the Romans: the Duke of *Saxony* helpeth the Emperor againſt *Matthias*, and peace is made: *Maximilian* invades *Picardy*, takes *Artois*, *Arras*, and *Burgundy*; he brings back his daughter that was betrothed to the French king; he takes *Belgrad* upon the death of *Matthias*. In *France*, *Charls* 8. reigns 14 years: The Duke of *Orleans* leagueth with divers Lords againſt the Kings ſiſter who was Regent; they ſubmit, and league again: the King prevails againſt the Britains: *Orleans* committed to the Caſtle of *Bourges*, and afterward releaſed: The Duke of *Britain* being dead, king *Charles* takes divers places from his daughter and heir *Anne*; the difference is referred to *Maximilian*, he takes her part. *Francis* of *Navar* poyſoned; his ſiſter *Katherine* ſucceedeth. The Caſtilians take the Canaries. The Duke of *Braganza* executed, for intelligence with *Caſtile*. Many Towns taken in *Granado*. *Caſtile* takes *Malaga* from the Moors: the Portugals begin to ſail to the Eaſt: the Friars of Jeruſalem receive an annual penſion of 1000 Ducats from the king of Caſtile. *Charles* of Anjou dieth; he was Titular king of *Naples* and *Sicily*, from him the French kings claim their titles to thoſe kingdoms. *Novograd* in *Lituania* is taken by the Muſcovites. *Caſimir* the King of Poland's ſon, will rather die, then lie with a Woman to recover his health. The Tartars ſpoile *Moldavia*. The Vayvod ſwears fealty to the King of Poland, who thereupon drives the Turks thence. *Caſimir's* youngeſt ſon Biſhop of *Cracovia*. The Polander beats the Tartars in *Ruſſia* and *Podolia*. *Matthias* of *Hungary* warreth ſucceſsfully againſt the Turks and Germans, and takes many Towns; he makes peace with the Emperor. To *Chriſtiern* of *Denmark* ſucceedeth his ſon *John*; he hath ſome controverſies with the Engliſh. *Steno Sture* made Governor of *Swedeland*. *Venice* and *Florence* joyn againſt the Pope. *Ferrara* ingratefull to the Venetians, who had got him his Eſtate; moſt of the Italian Princes league againſt *Venice*; at laſt a peace is made: The Venetians have war in *Auſtria* and *Rhetia*; they are beaten neer *Trent*. *Katherine* the Queen of *Cyprus* reſigneth her kingdome to *Venice*, to whom they allow 50.l. weight of gold yearly, and the Caſtle of *Azola*. In *Holland*, the Cabillaucks take *Dort*, and the Hoecks *Leyden*: War between *Holland* and *Utricht*. *Mary* of Burgundy is killed by a fall from her horſe; *Maximilian* is received Governor of *Holland*, but rejected in *Flanders*; Her daughter *Margaret* betrothed to the Dolphin; Prince *Philip* is received. Troubles between *Antwerp* and *Bruges*. *Egmont* made Governor of *Holland*; then *Euglebert* Earl of *Naſſau*. Troubles in *Friſia*. As *Maximilian* endeavoured to reconcile *Bruges* with *Antwerp*, he is impriſoned, and ſome of his ſervants killed: Upon reſignation of the government to his ſon, he is ſet free. The Emperor makes *Albert* of *Saxony* Governor of the Low-Countries; he is oppoſed by the Flemings, who take *Rotterdam*, and loſe it again to *Maximilian*. The Scots invade *England*, and the Engliſh *Scotland*; *Barwick* taken from the Scots. The French will pay no Tribute to *England*. *Edward* 5. ſucceeds his father one moneth: *Glouceſter* made Protector, then King; his name was *Richard* 3. he reigned 3 years: the Queens kindred cut off, the Princes are murthered, and Buckingham beheaded. *Morton* Biſhop of *Ely*, attempteth to advance the Earl of *Richmond*, who landeth, and killeth King *Richard*; this was *Henry* 7. who reigned 23 years; the Kingdom is entailed to his heirs; He inſtituted the Guard. The Lord *Lovel* rebelleth; and *Lambert* a Counterfeit ſet up, who was crowned at *Dublin*, and overthrown at *Stoke*, he is made a Skullion in the Privy-kitchin. Peace with *Scotland*. *England* ſides with *Britany* againſt *France*. The Northern Rebels overthrown, and the chief executed. In *Scotland*, *Cockram* the Maſon is made Earl of *Mar*: The Kings brother *Alexander* Duke of *Albany* flieth into *England*; he is reconciled, and *Cockram* hanged: *Albany* made Regent, but out of fear eſcapeth into *France*; he died by a ſplint in Tilting with *Lewis* of *Orleans*. The Lords rebell againſt the King, and make his ſon *James* their Captain: the Kings forces beaten, and he ſlain: His ſon *James* 4. ſucceeded 26 years; he alwayes wore an Iron-chain in ſtead of a girdle, as a penance for his rebellion. A double-bodied Monſter from the navel upward, born in *Scotland*.

Years of Chriſt.

In the Church, ſits *Innocent* 8. 7 years: He was the firſt Pope that advanced his Baſtards. *Zemez*, *Bajazets* brother, delivered to him by the Maſter of *Rhodes*, for which he is made a Cardinal: this Pope died of an Apoplexy.

In the Eaſt, the Turks aide the Rebels in *Hungary* againſt the King, whom they defeat, and took his General in *Croatia*. The Turks are beaten by *Ericus* Duke of *Brunſwick*. *Zemez* poyſoned by the Pope. The Turks do much miſchief in the Venetian Territories. They take *Lepanto*, *Modene*, and other places; 60000 of them ſlain in *Ruſſia*. In the Weſt, the Emperour being dead, his ſon *Maximilian* ſucceedeth 25 years: he drives the Turks out of *Croatia*. *Baſil* falls off from the Emperour to the Switzers: the Emperor

—1490

Years of Christ.

perour is defeated by them, and grants them peace. *Maximilian* marrieth *Anne* of *Britany* by Deputy; but the French King marrieth her, and casts off *Maximilians* daughter. *Charles* besiegeth *Naples*, where the French malady breaks out. He takes *Naples* and loseth it again: He dyeth, to whom succeeded *Lewis* 2. Duke of *Orleans*, 18 years: he divorceth his wife, and takes *Anne* the former Kings widow: he takes *Milan* in his mothers right, and puts the Grandchilde of *Gabeas* into a Covent. *Alphonso* of *Portugal* kill'd with a fall from his horse. *Granado* conquered by *Ferdinand* and *Isabel*. *America* discovered by *Columbus*; he brought home the Venerial Pox. Jews and Moors banished. The French King resignes to *Ferdinand Roussillon*, that he might not cross him in the Conquest of *Naples*. The Pope limiteth the discoveries of *Castile* and *Portugal*: The Moors of *Castile* compelled to embrace the Faith. The French invade *Roussillon*, because *Ferdinand* assisted *Naples*. *Columbus* makes a third voyage to *America*. *Casimire* of *Poland* dyeth, and *John Albert* his son succeeded: 10 years he makes a League with *Bohemia*, and peace with the Turk. The Polacks defeated in *Podolia* by the Tartars: the King invades *Moldavia*, and is beaten. The Valachians carry many away captives out of *Russia* and *Podolia*: The Turks defeated in *Russia*. *Ladislaus* of *Bohemia* is made King of *Hungary* 26 years: he recovers *Alba Regalis*. The Hungarians plunder *Mysia*. The Turks beaten from *Belgrad*; the King spoileth the Turks lands for 100 miles. *Hungary*, *Pole* and *Russia* league against the Turk. The Norwegians are dispensed to receive the Sacrament without wine. *John* King of *Denmark* subdueth the Swedes: he taketh the Lubec ships, and they his: He is chosen King of *Swedeland*, and *Steno* deposed. The Venetians protect *Pisa* against *Florence*, they are Neuters to *France* and *Naples*. *Sforza* strives to get *Pisa* from the Venetians: they League with France against him; he cals in the Turk. *Milan* loseth *Cremona*. *Eug.* of *Nassau* subdueth the *Brugeois*, who built him an house, yet belonging to the Prince of *Orange*. *Nassau* and *Guelders* taken by the French King: The Boors of *Holland* do great insolencies. The Dutchy of *Guelders* escheated to the Emperour, who makes the Duke of *Saxony* hereditary Governour of *Frisia*, against whom the *Frisons* league: they rebell against his son: The Duke is slain at the siege of *Groonengen*. The King of *England* helpeth *Maximilian* against the French; he besiegeth *Bolen*: the French King payeth the charges of the War, and an annual sum, and so obtains Peace. *Perkin Werbeck* set up against King *Henry* by the Dutchess of *Burgundy*: he pretends he was the younger son to the Duke of *York*: he goeth into *Scotland*, and makes the Scots invade *England*: he marryeth the Earl of *Huntly*'s daughter. The Cornish Rebels defeated at Black-heath; The Scots are resisted by the Bishop of *Durham*, and Earl of *Surrey*: *Perkin* defeated and taken, and sent to the Tower; he is hanged at Tyburn, and the Earl of *Warwick* beheaded on the Tower-hill. Truce made by the Scots with *England*.

In the Church, *Alexander* 6. sat 11 years; he makes one of his bastards Prince of *Sicily*, the 2. a Cardinal, and the 3. a Duke of *Spain*. *Cæsar* the Cardinal, leaves his Hat, and marrieth the French Kings Cousin: he is made Duke of *Valentinois*, *Valentia* is made an Archbishoprick. At *Paris* begins the Order of Penitent women, converted from the Stews. *Savanorola* hanged and burnt at *Florence* for his opinions.

1500 In the East, the Spanish, French, and Venetian Fleets against the Turk are dispersed. *Dyrrachium* taken by *Bajazet*: Peace made with *Venice*. He is wounded by a Dervisar, whose body was torn, his brains dasht out, and the Order banished. 3 Bassa's defeated in a Rebellion. *Constantinople* ruined by earthquake, and repaired by *Bajazet*, by setting at work 80000 men. In the West, the Norinbergers are worsted by *Brandeburgs* forces: the Boors in the Dioces of *Spire* rebel. At *Lyons*, the Emperour makes a League with *France* and *Spain*: the Emperor hath War with the Palatine of *Bavaria*, for some part of that Country, and with *Venice*. The Swedes, in favour of *Denmark*, proscribed by the Emperour, they slight his Act. The Bohemians having wasted *Germany*, are driven out. *Presburg* or *Possonium* in *Hungary*, taken by the Emperour: he is not suffered to pass armed through the Venetian Lands. A League at *Cambray* between the Emperour, Pope and French against *Venice*. The Imperial Chamber is translated from *Wormes* to *Ratisbone*. *Verona*, *Padua* and *Vicenza* taken by the Emperour. *Milan* is subdued again by the French. *Sforza* and his brother carried into *France*. At *Roan* and *Aix* Parliaments are set up. The French and Spaniard having expelled the Emperor from *Naples*, they agree that the French should have *Naples*, and the Spaniard *Magna Græcia* with *Apulia*. The Spanish General *Gonsalvus* expels the French out of *Naples*. The Genuans rebell, and are subdued by *Lewis*: The Portugals sail to *Calecut*. *Philip* is acknowledged heir

of

Years of Chriſt.

of *Caſtile*, and ſucceedeth with *Jone* his wife. *Philip* dyeth, the title of Catholique made Hereditary by the Pope to the Kings of *Spain*: The *Portugals* overcome at *Cambaia*. *Ormus* in the Perſian gulf taken: the King of *Cambaia* made tributary to *Portugal*: The Venetians are ſtript of *Tarentum* and *Brunduſium* by the Spaniards. The Polander makes peace with the Muſcovite and Turk. The King of *Poland* dyeth: His brother *Alexander* ſucceedeth 5 years. *Lituania* united again to *Poland*: the Tartars expelled *Ruſſia* and *Podolia*: the King dyeth, to him ſucceeded his brother *Sigiſmund* 41 years: he gains much from *Baſil* Duke of *Muſcovia*; he beats the Tartars and Valachians. *Chriſtiern* of *Denmark* ſubdueth the rebellious Norwegians: He makes peace with *Lubec*; they make War againſt him, for not performing Articles. The Queen of *Sweden* taken in the Caſtle of *Stockholm*, and freed by the Popes means. The Venetians take divers ſhips and places from the Turks. The French take divers places in *Italy*, and loſe them again to the Pope and Spaniard. *Philip* and *Jone* of *Flanders* go into *Spain*; he dyeth at *Bourges*, his heart buried at *Jeruſalem*. *Guelders* invadeth *Brabant*. The Emperour becomes Guardian to *Charles*, and his other Nephews. *Margaret* of *Saxony* named Regent of the Low-Countries. King *Philip* of *Spain*, and his Queen, caſt by ſtormes on the Engliſh coaſt, land at *Falmouth*, they are Royally entertained. The Earl of *Suffolk* practiſeth with the Dutcheſs of *Burgundy* againſt the King; he is ſent by King *Philip* into *England*, and is committed to the Tower. *Henry* 7. his Chappel finiſhed, and ſo is the Savoy; the King dyeth: to him ſucceeds his ſon *Henry* 8. 37 years. *Empſon* and *Dudley*, who were imployed in the former Kings time about the Penal-Laws, are now executed: He makes a League with the Emperour and Spaniard. The King of *Denmark* having fallen out with his Lords, cometh into *Scotland*, and is reſtored by the Scots. The Hollanders for robbing the Kings Merchants, are taken, and their heads cut off, and ſent to the King in barrels. The King is declared Protector of the Faith, by the Pope.

In the Church, Pope *Alexander* ſits yet. *Sforza* regains *Milan* from the Pope. *Borgias* taketh the Dutchy of *Urbin* and *Camerinum*. The Pope, by the Butlers miſtake, is poyſoned, with that cup which he had provided for ſome Cardinals. *Pius* 3. ſucceeded 26 dayes, then *Julius* 2. 10 years; he was a better Souldier then Scholar; he is aſſiſted by the French againſt *Bentivolo* an uſurper in *Bononia*, who reſignes it to the Pope. *Borgia* eſcapeth priſon in Spain; he is ſlain after he was made General by the King of *Navar*. The Pope, by the Emperors and French help, recovereth divers places from the Venetians. In *Germany* appeared bloody Croſſes upon peoples garments. The Boors of *Spire* riſe againſt the Monaſteries and Clergy, refuſing to pay Tythes. The Kingdom of *Congo* converted to Chriſtianity.

In the Eaſt, *Bajazet* intended to make *Achmet* his eldeſt ſon ſucceſſor; but the Baſſas ſet up *Selymus*: *Bajazet* retireth himſelf, and is poyſoned by *Selymus*; he ſlew two Pages for lamenting the death of *Bajazet* their Lord, and his father. *Selymus* reigned 8 years: he murthered five of *Achmets* children, and ſtrangleth his brother. The Plague at *Conſtantinople* ſweeps away 160000 people. *Selymus* takes divers places from the Perſian, and makes War upon *Hungary*, and *Egypt* alſo, becauſe *Campſon Gaure* the Sultan, took part with the Perſian: In the taking of *Aleppo*, the Sultan is trodden to death. *Syria* ſubmitteth. *Selymus* with reverence enters *Jeruſalem*, and gives to the Chriſtian Prieſts 6 moneths allowance. *Tonembeius* the Sultan is overthrown at *Gayre*, and hanged. *Gazelles* made Lieutenant of *Syria*. As *Selymus* was preparing againſt the Chriſtians, he is ſtruck with a Canker in his back; which rots his fleſh, and ſo he died. In the Weſt, there are troubles between the Duke of *Saxony* and Biſhop of *Mentz*. *Germany* divided into 10 Provinces in a Dyet at *Triers*. The Synods of *Piſa* and *Toures* called againſt the Pope, are nullified by the Emperor in a Dyet at *Colen*. The Emperor expels the Venetians out of *Lombardy*: the Emperour meets the Kings of *Poland* and *Bohemia* at *Vienna*, about the ſucceſſion of theſe Kingdoms, if *Ladiſlaus* ſhould die without iſſue. The Emperors Army for want of pay forſake him: he therefore makes peace with *France*. Upon *Maximilians* death, *Charles* of *Spain* carrieth the Empire from *Francis* of *France*. He reigned 38 years. The French beſiege the Pope and Cardinals in *Bologna*, but are forced to give off for want of food. The French kill the Switzers Ambaſſador going for *Rome*; therefore they denounce War againſt them: they refuſe to compound, and invade *Milan*. The French loſe all in *Italy*, by withdrawing their forces thence againſt the Engliſh. *Lewis* cannot recover *Milan*. He makes peace with the Pope, and with *England*, and then dyeth. The Switzers invade *Burgundy*. To *Lewis* ſucceedeth *Francis* the firſt 33 years. He regains *Milan*, and meets the Pope at *Bologna*. The French and Switzers

—1510

Years of Christ.

zers League againſt the Spaniards, take *Tripolis*. *Ferdinand* uniteth *Navar* to *Caſtile* by expelling *John Albert*. The *Moluccos* taken by the Portugals, and the river *Plata* diſcovered. *Ferdinand* languiſheth and dyeth of a Love-potion: *Charles* ſon to *Philip* ſucceedeth 43 years. *Joan* and her husband die, having attempted in vain to recover *Navar*. The Tartars invade *Ruſſia*, and are beaten back. *Smolenſco* taken by the Muſcovites; they are defeated by the Polander at *Boryſthenes*. The King of *Poland* makes War againſt the Marquis of *Brandeburg* Maſter of the Teutonicks, for not ſwearing homage to him. The Hungarians and Turks invade each others Lands. The King of *Hungary* dyeth, his ſon a childe ſucceeds 11 years. The Lubeckers ſpoil *Denmark* and aſſiſt the Swedes: the Hollander helps the King: a peace at laſt with him is concluded, and the Swedes excluded. The King dyeth; his ſon *Chriſtiern* ſucceeds 10 years: He with the Biſhop of *Upſale* plot to reduce the Swedes, therefore he beſiegeth *Stockholm*, but gives off, for want of neceſſaries; He takes the Town at laſt, ſpoils it, exerciſeth ſtrange cruelties, and returns to *Denmark*. *Steno Sture* the younger made Governor of *Swedeland*; he depoſeth the Biſhop of *Upſale*, who was reſtored upon the death of *Steno*, and taking of *Stockholm*. In *Bohemia*, *Lewis* an Infant-King is brought up by *George* Marquis of *Brandeburg*. The Venetians league with the Pope and *Aragon* againſt *France*. *Venice* recovereth *Brixia*. The Switzers joyn with them againſt the French: The Emperour beats them at *Vicenza*: they league with the French, and quarrel with the Pope, and relieve *Vicenza*. The French reſtore *Verona* to them. The Duke of *Guelders* takes divers places from the Burgundians, and makes War againſt *Utricht*: by the quarrelling of *Saxony* with the Earls of *Embden*, for *Groning*, *Friſia* is waſted. The Duke of *Saxony* reſigneth *Friſland* for money. *Charles* takes poſſeſſion of *Belgium*, and goeth into *Spain*. *Peter* a notable Pyrate, ſurpriſeth *Horne*. King *Henry* ſits down before *Turwyn*; the Emperour taketh pay of him. The Lord *Darey* ſent with forces to *Ferdinand* the Kings Father in Law, againſt the Moors. Marquiſs *Dorſet* invadeth *Aquitaine*, but the Flux in his Army drives him back again. *Turwyn* and *Tournay* taken; the French defeated in the battel of *Spurs*, which were then much employed in the horſes ſides when they fled. King *James* of *Scotland* defeated and ſlain at *Flowden*. The French by the Rhodians invade *Suſſex*, and Sir *John Wallop Normandy*: peace with *France*. *Mary* the Kings ſiſter, and Queen of *France*, upon the death of King *Lewis*, returneth, and marrieth *Charles Brandon*. Peace for 3 years with *Scotland*. Cardinal *Wolſey* erecteth the Star-Chamber, and Court of Requeſts: the Apprentices riſe againſt Strangers: the Sweating ſickneſs. *Tournay* reſtored to the French. The Emperour, and Cardinal *Campeius* arrive in *England*. *Barton* the Scots Pyrate taketh 13 Engliſh Ships. *James* 5. reigneth in *Scotland* 30 years: the Queen widow is Regent whileſt a widow, and the Duke of *Albany* Tutor: by marrying *Archibald Douglas*, ſhe loſeth her Regency; ſhe is delivered of a daughter in *England*, afterward married to the Earl of *Lenox*: *Douglas* and *Hume* diſturb the Kingdom: *Arran* and *Hume* committed. *Dunbar* burnt by the *Humes*; the Rebels are pardoned: The Regent leaveth ſeven Deputies, and ſaileth into *France*. *Angus* and *Arran* differ.

In the Church, Pope *Julius* ſits yet: He Excommunicates the Kings of *France* and *Navar*: In a Battell on *Eaſter* day, he loſeth 16000 men, and *Ravenna* to the French. He begins St. *Peters* Church in the Vatican. *Leo* the 10. ſucceedeth 8 years: he continues the Lateran Councel: He bought *Mutina* of the Emperour for 30000 crowns. He helpeth *Sforza* againſt *France*; He gives *Urbin* to his Nephew, who the next year loſt it. He made 31 Cardinals; he ſtrangled Cardinal *Petrucci* for conſpiring: He recovers *Parma* and *Placentia*: The Councel at *Tours* decreeth, that the Pope ſhould be forced to call a General Councel, if he will not hearken to Peace. The Lateran Councel rejecteth that of *Piſa*, called by the Emperour and French againſt the Pope. The Piſan removed to *Millan*. *Luther* diſputes againſt Indulgences, ſent abroad by the Archbiſhop of *Mentz* to pay for his Pall. The Pope and French King ſtrive to aboliſh the Pragmatical Sanction. The Complutenſian Bible ſet out by Cardinal *Ximenes*, containing the Hebrew, Chaldee, Greek and Latine. *Luther* ſets abroad *Theſes* againſt Indulgences. *Luther* confers with *Cajetan* at *Auſpurg*. *Eccius* diſputes with *Caroloſtadius* at *Lipſic* about Free-Will; and with *Luther*, about the Popes Supremacy, and Purgatory.

In

Years of Chriſt. 1520

In the Eaſt, *Solyman* the Magnificent reigns 47 years: *Gazelles* the Rebel is killed in battel: *Solyman* takes divers Towns from the Hungarians: he attempteth *Chios* in vain: after 6 moneths aſſault, he takes *Rhodes*, and diſmiſſeth with honour *Viliers* the Governour: A mutiny at *Conſtantinople* among the Janiſaries. *Als Beg* a King in *Armenia*, with his four ſons are killed by *Solyman*, who poſſeſſed his Kingdom: He beats *Lewis* of *Hungary*, and takes *Buda*: he denounceth war againſt *Ferdinando* King of *Bohemia*, and protects *John Sepuſius*: he kills the cowardly Souldiers in the Caſtle of *Buda*, but freed the Captain for his valour: He gives off the ſiege of *Vienna*, having loſt 80000 men. In the Weſt, the Emperor invadeth *Picardy*. The Pope, Emperour, Engliſh, *Italy* and *Auſtria* league againſt *France*: The Imperialiſts beat the French and Switzers neer *Milan*. The Boors of *Germany*, whereof 50000 were ſlain, roſe againſt the Nobility. *Marſeiles* beſieged by *Bourbon*, who ſided with *Charles*. *Mantua* made a Dutchy. King *Francis* taken at the ſiege of *Papia*. The French King releaſed. The Emperour abrogates the Popes power in *Spain*, and takes *Milan* from *Sforza*. *Rome* taken and plundred by *Bourbon*. *Naples* beſieged by the French. The Biſhop of *Utricht* reſignes his temporalities to *Charles*. War made on the Papiſts by *Saxony* and *Heſſe*. *Sforza* recovers *Milan* for 50000 Crowns: He makes peace with *Venice*. The French take ſome places from *Charles*: the Caſtle of *Milan* yeelds to the French, and a great part of *Lombardy*. *Bourbon* raiſed from *Marſeiles* by the French: The King is forced to promiſe that he will renounce his right in *Naples*, *Milan* and other places, to reſtore *Burgundy*, and to pay 200000 crowns. The holy League between *France*, *England*, *Venice*, *Milan* and the Pope againſt *Charles*. *Laſcaris* and *Budæus* cauſe the Library at *Fountainbleau* to be ſet up. The Kings ranſome paid at *Cambray* and the hoſtages reſtored. The Spaniards take *Mexico*. *Henry* of *Navar* who ſided with the French, beaten by the Caſtilians. *Brandeburg* ſwears fealty to the Polander, and is made Duke of *Ruſſia*. *Maſſovia* eſcheated to the Crown of *Poland*. The Polanders beat the Tartars, and take their Prince. *Dantzk* rebelleth. The King of *Hungary* drowned in a ditch, and his Nobility ſlain in the battel at *Mohats*. *Sepuſius* Vayvod of *Dacia* expelled by *Ferdinand*: *Solyman* protects him, and invadeth *Hungary* with 150000 Turks. The King of *Denmark* expelled, and flyeth into *Germany* and *England*: *Frederick* Duke of *Holſt*, *Chriſtiern*'s Uncle, is choſen King; he leagueth with the Swedes: their Governor *Guſtavus*, Nephew to *Steno* the elder, embraceth Lutheraniſm, and is crowned King. *Ferdinand* of *Auſtria* choſen King of *Bohemia*. *Venice* helps *Hungary* with money againſt the Turk: A peace concluded at *Cambray* between the Emperour, Venetians, French, and Milanois. The Gueldrois take *Newport*, and oppreſs *Friſia*: *Charles* ſendeth forces againſt them. The Gueldrois ſpoil *Holland*; they force *Boſleduc* to pay Taxes: The women of *Hague* mutiny againſt the Cuſtomers. The Duke of *Gueldres* makes a League with the Burgundian. *Utricht* expels the Biſhop, and calls in the Duke of *Gueldres*: the *Hague* taken by his forces: they are expelled by the Emperour, who re-eſtabliſhed the Biſhop: the Mutineers executed, and peace between the Duke and Biſhop. In *England*, *Buckingham* beheaded for Treaſon: the French are impriſoned in *England*, for ſome wrongs done by them to the Engliſh. The Pope ſtiles the King, Defender of the Faith. The Lord Admiral taketh *Morlays* in *Britany*. The Emperor is in *England* affianced to the Lady *Mary*. *Scotland* is invaded by the *Engliſh*, and *France* by the Duke of *Suffolk*: *Surry* burneth divers Towns in *Scotland*: the King receiveth from the Pope a Roſe of gold. *Greenwich*-Caſtle built. Truce with *France* and *Scotland*: The King quarrels with the Emperour, for not marrying his daughter. *Kildare* accuſed and acquitted. The Pope diſpenſeth with *Wolſey* to diſſolve 4 Monaſteries. The ſedition in *Suffolk* appeaſed: Cardinal *Campeius* comes into *England* about the Kings divorce; Commiſsioners choſen for the Queen, who appealeth to the Pope; the marriage made unlawfull by ſome Univerſities. In *Scotland*, the Earl of *Angus*, and his brother are baniſhed by the Regent, who goeth again into *France* for aid againſt the Engliſh: He reſigneth; the Queen, and ſome others made Regents: the Queen caſts off *Angus*, and marrieth *Henry Stuart* Earl of *Methwen*; who are both committed by the King, who now aſſumes the Government; *Angus* flyeth into *England*; *Bothwel* convicted, and *Archibald Douglas* baniſhed.

In the Church, *Leo* ſits yet: he executeth the Tyrant of *Perugia*, for aiding the Duke of *Urbin*. To him ſucceeded the Emperors Tutor *Hadrian* 6. 8 moneths: he took *Parma* and *Placentia*. *Clement* 7. ſucceeds 10 years; he had been a Knight of St. *John* of *Jeruſalem*: he is beſieged in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo* by the *Columnii*, who waſte *Rome* and the Vatican. He warreth againſt *Sena* and *Naples*, and is reconciled to *Charles*. *Luther* is Excommunicate, and his Books burnt, who in requital burns the Popes Bull, and Canon-Law, and writes the *Babylonian-Captivity*.: He juſtifies his Doctrine before the Emperour at *Wormes*. King *Henry* writes againſt him, and is

Years of Christ.

answered by him: *Zuinglius* and *Oecolampadius* preach at *Tigurum*: *Caroloſtadius* joyns with *Luther*; the Pope complained againſt in the Diet of *Norinberg*: two Monks ſuffer at *Bruxels* for changing their Religion. Lutheraniſm received in divers places. The Capuchins Order inſtituted by *Balſcay* of *Ancona*. Anabaptiſts ſpread. *Oecolampadius* and *Zuinglius* differ from *Luther* about the Sacrament: at *Berne* and there about, and at *Strasburg*, and *Baſil*, the Maſſe is aboliſhed: the Elector and Landſgrave proteſting againſt the Edict, brought in the name of *Proteſtants*: Diſputations held in divers places.

1530 In the Eaſt, *Solyman* ſetleth *Iohn* in *Hungary* as his Tributary; he aſſaults *Gunſium* 13 times, and is repulſed; at laſt upon the comming of the Imperialiſts, he raiſeth the ſiege: He invades *Hungary* again with a vaſt Army; his General is ſlain; he carrieth away 30000 Captives: he makes *Barbaruſſa* the Pyrat his Admiral: he takes *Tunis*, and loſeth it to *Charls*: He takes many places from the Perſian: upon the inſtigation of *Roxalana* his mother, he cuts the throat of *Ibrahim*. The French King draws the Turks into *Apulia*, who ſpoil it, and take divers places: *Auria* takes a part of their Fleet. *Barbaruſſa's* Fleet beaten at *Crete* by the Venetians; in a ſtorm he loſeth many Gallies and 20000 men: He recovers *Caſtro Novum*. 700 priſoners burnt at *Conſtantinople* by a caſual fire. In the Weſt, the Emperour is crowned King of *Lombardy* at *Bononia*, and takes *Florence*. *Ferdidinand* the Emperours brother is crowned King of the Romans. In the war between *Tigurum* and the Cantons, *Zuinglius* was killed. *Charls* reſtoreth *Muleaſſes* to *Tunis*. *Sforza* dying without iſſue, *Millan* is eſcheated to the Emperor; the French claim it, and ſo a war is occaſioned. Truce between the Emperour and French for 10 years. The war between *Brandeburg* and the *Norinbergers* taken up. The Dutchy of Britany united to the Crown of *France*. The French Kings Ambaſſadour put to death at *Millan*, becauſe one of his company ſlew a Citizen. The French war with Savoy: *Francis* the Dolphin poiſoned by the Earl of *Mounte-Cucullo*, who was therefore torn by wilde horſes: At *Lisbon*, an Earthquake laſted 8 dayes, which overthrew 1500 houſes and many Churches. *Peru* is now found out. The King of *Cambaia* killed by the *Portugals*. The Turks and Portugals have wars in the Indies. The Muſcovites waſte *Lituania*, and are driven out. *Grittus Solymans* favourite ſetleth *Hungary*; he kils the Biſhop of *Varadinum*, and for this is killed himſelf by the Tranſilvanians. It is agreed that in Hungary *Ferdinand* ſhould ſucceed to *Iohn*. *Solyman* ſubdueth *Moldavia*, and reſtores the Vayvod; the King dieth with too much joy that his Queen was delivered of a ſonne. *Chriſtiern* ſtriving to recover *Denmark*, is impriſoned 27 years at *Sunderberg*. *Frederick* dieth, who leaves a young ſon. Count *Oldenburg* undertakes the Regency, becauſe *Chriſtiern* Duke of *Holſt* refuſed it; but at laſt accepteth it, takes *Copenhagen*, and ſetleth the Kingdome; he is crowned, and called *Chriſtiern* 3. he changeth Biſhops into Superintendents. *Smolard* rebels againſt the Swedes; but is reduced by the Danes help. The Venetians are Neuters in the Turkiſh war againſt *Hungary*: they beat the Turks at Sea, and take *Aſſam* Beg the Pyrate. *Barbaruſſa* takes from *Corcyra* 16000 Captives, who are ſold at *Conſtantinople*. Two Turkiſh Gallies burnt by *Contarenus* in the Gulph, for not ſtriking their Top-ſaile. They made peace with *Solyman*, becauſe the Spaniard refuſed to deliver *Caſtro novum*; they are forced to give up *Nauplum*, and ſome other places to the Turk. By an inundation in the Netherlands, 404 Pariſhes are drowned: *Mary* of *Auſtria* is Regent of *Flanders*: Anabaptiſts executed at *Amſterdam*: *Lubeck* quarrels with *Holland*, for aſſiſting *Chriſtiern* King of *Denmark*: At *Delft* 3300 houſes, with two Churches, and divers Monaſteries burnt. The Regent will not ſuffer the Emperour to reſign *Flanders* and *Artois* to the French. The Duke of *Cleve* ſucceedeth in *Guelders*. The *Gantois* behead their Magiſtrates. In *England*, *Wolſey* is out of favour, and dieth. Saint *James* built. The Clergy condemned in a Premunire, and pay 100000 l. to the King. *Cromwell* great with the King. *Katherine* divorced; the King marrieth *Anne Bullen*: Peace with *France*: the holy Maid of *Kent* executed. The Popes power abrogated: The King ſeiſeth on the Firſt-fruits and Tenths, and called, Head of the Church; for denying this, Sir *Thomas Moore*, and *Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter* beheaded; Religious Houſes under 300 l. value, given to the King; Queen *Anne* beheaded; and *Jane* Seymor married to the King; Rebellions in *Lincolnſhire*, and in the North. *Kildare* and his 5 Uncles executed; the Bible read in Engliſh; *Oneale* repulſed by the Lord *Grey*: *Anne* of *Cleve* married to the King, and divorced ſhortly after; The order of S. *Iohn* of *Ieruſalem* ſuppreſſed. In *Scotland*, the Court of Seſſions is inſtituted; *Iohn Scot* faſteth 50 daies together; The Earl *Bothwel* committed for going into *England*; The King goeth into

France

France, and marrieth *Magdalen* the Kings daughter; divers executed for treaſon; The King marrieth the Duke of *Guize*'s daughter. — Years of Chriſt.

In the Church, *Clement* 7. yet ſits; he excommunicated King *Henry* of *England*: *Paul* 3 ſucceedeth 15 years; he appoints a Synod at *Mantua*, and transfers it to *Vicenza*; it came to nothing: the Proteſtant Confeſſion made by *Melanthon*, is preſented to *Charls* in the Diet of *Auſpurg*; therefore called *Confeſſio Auguſtana*. Peace granted to the Proteſtants in *Germany*, upon news of the Turks preparation: the Proteſtants are perſecuted in *Miſna* and *France*; the Anabaptiſts raiſe ſeditions in *Munſter*, who are taken and executed: *Geneva* becomes Proteſtant and expels the Biſhop. *Ignatius Layola* inſtituteth the Jeſuites order; the League of *Smalcald* for the Proteſtants: A Councel at *Colen* for Reformation. The *Auguſtan* Faith received in *Denmark*. *Luther* exhibites Articles at *Smalcald*. At *Norimberg* is made an Anti-league; Antinomians now appear.

In the Eaſt, *Solyman* takes divers towns in *Hungary*; ſubdueth *Tranſilvania*, and gives it to *Iohn*: *Barbaruſſa* is ſent to help the *French*; he takes *Rhegium* in *Italy*, and *Nice* in *Province*, with ſome places in *Tuſcany*, *Iſchia* and *Lippari*. *Solyman* at the French Kings requeſt, breaks the 5 years Peace with *Charls*; he fails in his expedition againſt the Perſian. *Charls* his expedition into *Algiers*, unfortunate; his forces ſent to relieve *Buda*, are beaten by the Turks. The French Ambaſſadors going to the Turk, are killed by the Imperialiſts, which makes a war. *Charls* leagueth with England againſt France; Saxony and the Lantgrave are proſcribed. *Henry* of *Brunſwick* taken by the Duke of Saxony. *Lipſick* beſieged, and *Breme* taken: the Lantgrave is impriſoned. *Muleaſſes* being exoculated by his ſon, comes to the Emperour. *Magdeburg* proſcribed; and *Conſtance* taken by the Imperialiſts. In *France*, the *Rochellers* rebell againſt the King; the Admiral is condemned: the Imperialiſts beaten by the French in *Piedmont*: the French invade England, they loſe *Bolen*. The King dieth; his ſon *Henry* 2. ſucceeds 13 years; *Bourdeaux* rebelleth, they are forced to burn their Priviledges, by the Conſtable, who appeaſeth the Rebellion in *Aquitain*, raiſed upon the cuſtome of Salt. The L. *Vevain* executed for ſurrendring *Bolen*. The Duke of *Lituania* tranſlates the Bible into the Polanders tongue. Wars between *Ferdinand* of *Bohemia*, and *Iohn* of *Hungary*; that Country is plagued with Locuſts. *Guſtaphus* of *Suevia* obtains that the ſucceſſion may be eſtabliſhed on his heirs. *Ferdinand* unpriviledgeth *Prague*, for not helping him againſt the Elector. *Gaunt* for rebellion loſeth her priviledges and Caſtle: The Emperour ſets a Garriſon there; he claimeth the Dukedome of *Cleve*: the Duke leagueth with the French, they invade *Brabant*; the Prince of *Orange* is beaten: *Antwerp* attempted by the *Geldrians*, in vain; they are beaten by the Schollars of *Lovain*. *Juliers* won by *Charls*. The Hollanders ſpoil and carry away the Kings ſhips out of the river of *Burdeaux*. The *Belgians* preſent *Charls* with 15000 Florens of Gold, at his return from *Afric*. The French Queen entertained by *Charls* at *Bruſſels*: *Cleve* is reconciled to him: *Mechlin* burnt by lightning, which fell among Powder. Some places recovered out of the Sea. In England, *Cromwel* is beheaded: The Court of Wards and Firſt-fruits erected: The Lady *Katherine Howard* married to the King, and beheaded: The Act paſſed for Supremacy: The ſix bloody Articles: The King marrieth *Katherine Par*, and cals himſelf King of *Ireland*. The *Scots* defeated by the Duke of *Norfolk*; the *Scots* priſoners returned without ranſome, upon the death of King *Iames*. A match propoſed between *Mary* Queen of *Scotland* and Prince *Edward*; but croſſed by the *French*. The Engliſh enter *Scotland*, burn *Edenburg* and *Lieth*. The *French* invade *Suſſex* and the Iſle of *Wight*. Peace with France. *Bolen* reſtored for 800000 crowns; The Earl of *Surry* beheaded. To King *Henry* ſucceeds his ſon *Edward* 6 years; The Duke of *Sommerſet* Protector; The Scots are defeated at *Muſſelburgh*; Chantries ſuppreſſed; The Protector and his brother the Admiral, fall out about their wives; The Admiral executed, and the Protector committed; Rebellions in *Cornwal*, *Norfolk*, and in the North; the French attempt *Jerſey* and *Garneſey*. In *Scotland*, the King dieth of grief; His daughter *Mary* was five dayes old; The Earls of *Huntly*, *Murrey*, and *Argile* made Regents by Cardinal *Beton*; but the Earl of *Arran* by the Proteſtants: The Cardinal of St. *Andrews* murthered for burning *George Wiſchart*; Civill wars about Religion; The French beſiege St. *Andrews*; Cadinal *Beton* burneth *Sophocardin* a Miniſter, and is killed ſhortly after: the Engliſh expelled *Scotland*; the Scots refuſe offers of Peace from England. — 1540

In

Years of Christ.

In the Church, *Paul* ſits yet: his ſon *Petrus Aloyſius* murthered at *Placentia*. The City is taken by *Gonzaga* Governor of *Millan*. *Eccius* and *Melanthon* confer about Original ſinne, at *Wormes* and *Ratisbone*. *Xaverius* the Jeſuite ſent to convert the *Indians*. The Palatinate becomes Proteſtant. *Herman* Archbiſhop of *Colen* ſtrives to reform Religion, but is croſſed by the Clergy and deprived. *David George* ſtiles himſelfe Chriſt: he flieth from *Delf* to *Baſil*. The Councel of *Trent* begins. The French King ſlaughtereth the Waldenſes. The Proteſtants aſſembled at *Frankfort* againſt the Councel of *Trent*. The Inquiſition cauſeth a ſedition in *Naples*. Councels held at *Auſpurg*, *Colen*, *Mentz*, and *Trevers*. A Schiſme among the Proteſtants, by publiſhing the Emperors *Interim* concerning obſervation of Indifferent matters, during the Councel of *Trent*. *Spira* died deſpairing. In *France*, the Proteſtants are perſecuted. Divers Conferences held.

1550— In the Eaſt, the Turkiſh Pyrats do much miſchief; they take *Tripolis* in *Barbary*. *Solyman* ſtrangles his ſon *Muſtapha*, by *Roxalano's* inſtigation, that her ſon *Bajazet* might ſucceed. *Haly Baſſa* attempteth *Agria* in vain. The Venetians ſack *Dyrrachium*, a Harbor of the Turks. The Duke of Florence his lands ſpoiled by the Turks; ſo is *Corſica*. *Haly Baſſa* beaten from *Zigeth*. *Bajazet* ſets up a falſe *Muſtapha* againſt his father; he is pardoned at the requeſt of *Roxalana*. *Bajazet* aſpireth again, and flieth to the Perſian, who ſtrangled him and his four ſons, *Solyman* conſenting to it. In the Weſt, *Magdeburg* is beſieged by *Saxony*, *Brunſwick*, and *Brandeburg*. *Charles* and *Ferdinand* differ about the ſucceſſion of the Empire. *Saxony* and the *Landſgrave* releaſed. The French take *Metz*. *Maurice* killed by *Brandeburg* in battel. The French ſpoil *Artois* and *Henault*. The Emperor reſigns his kingdom to *Philip* his ſon, and enters into a Monaſtery, where he died: In the Empire his brother *Ferdinand* ſucceedeth 6 years; the Pope refuſeth to confirm him, becauſe he gave peace to the Proteſtants. The French king takes 22 ſhips of *Zealand*, with ſome places: the Emperor and French king ſpoile each others territories; *Caſal* taken by the French; they are beaten at ſea by the Flemings; S. *Quintins* taken. *France* makes peace with *Spain*, and reſtores *Savoy* and *Piemont* to the Duke: the King killed at Tilt by *Montgomery*; his ſonne *Francis* 2. ſucceeded: great factions between the *Guiſes* and the Conſtable: the King dieth; to him *Charles* 9. his brother ſucceeded 13 years; his mother made Regent. *Japan* about this time diſcovered. In *Spain*, King *Philip* cauſeth 28 Gentlemen to be burned for Religion. The Polander forceth the Maſter of the Teutonicks to ſwear fealty to him. The Muſcovites invade *Livonia*. The Queen of *Hungary* reſigneth *Tranſilvania* to *Ferdinand*, who giveth her *Caſſovia* and 100000 Ducats yearly. *Dobus* for his ſervice againſt the Turks at *Agria*, is made Vayvod of *Tranſilvania*. To *Chriſtiern* 3. of *Denmark* ſucceeded his ſon *Frederick* 2. 29 years; he forced the *Diethmarſians* (who made themſelves members of the Church of *Breme*) to ſubmit to him. In an Aſſembly at *Bruſſels*, the Emperor reſigneth the Collar of the Golden-fleece to *Philip*, with the Low-Countries, who makes the Duke of *Savoy* Generall there; He is oppoſed in his Taxes. At *Bruſſels* there died of Famine and Cold, 19000. The French take *Calice*, *Dunkirk*, and *Guines*; *Dunkirk* recovered by Count *Egmont*, with the loſſe of 15000 French. In *England*, the Duke of *Somerſet* beheaded; *Chriſts-Hoſpital* in *London* founded: the King dieth; by his Will *Jane* daughter to the Duke of *Suffolk* ſhould have ſucceeded, ſhe is proclaimed by *Northumberland* and others, who ſuffered for it; but *Mary* ſucceeded 5 yeares, who put to death the Lady *Jane*, with her husband and father; *Wyat* rebelleth; Cardinal *Poole* made Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*; the Queen marrieth with King *Philip*; S. *Quintins* taken by the Engliſh. To Q. *Mary* ſucceeded *Elizabeth* 44 years; *Calice* is demanded; the French aid the Scots againſt the Engliſh; the Queen aideth the Scots Lords, *Lieth* beſieged by the Lord *Gray*; the Queen-Dowager of *Scotland* entertained in *England*, ſhe is made Regent of *Scotland*, the old Regent Duke of *Chaſtelrault*; *Huntly* is committed: the Scots invade *England*, and are repelled; *Knox* with the other Proteſtants put to the Horn; they take *Glaſcow* and *Blackneſſe*.

In the Church, *Julius* 3. ſits 5 years: He keepeth the Jubile, and continueth the Councel of *Trent*; he betrayeth *Sena* to the Emperor. To him ſucceeded *Marcellus* 2. 21 dayes: then *Paul* 4. 4 years; to him the Romans erected a Marble-ſtatue, for enlarging their priviledges; He refuſeth to confirm King *Philip* of *Naples*: He dieth, and the Romans cut off the head and right-hand of his ſtatue, and fling it into *Tyber*. The Proteſtant-Miniſters are expelled *Auſpurg*; *Oſiander* and the Profeſſors of *Wittenberg* differ about Juſtification. *Mary* the Regent oppoſeth the Inquiſition in the *Low-Countries*. The Proteſtants differ about the *Neceſſity of Good works*. *Servetus* the Arian burnt at *Geneva*.

Geneva. Proteſtants perſecuted in *England*; *Latimer*, *Ridley*, and *Cranmer* burnt. The Agreement at *Paſſau* confirmed. The body of *David George* taken out of his grave, and burnt, 3 years after his burial. The Catholiques and Proteſtants confer at *Wormes*, and ſo at *Weſtminſter*: At *Auſpurg*, peace confirmed to the Proteſtants. *Hugonots* in *France*, ſo called from S. *Hugo's* Gate, where they uſed to aſſemble in *Tours*.

Years of Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, *Solyman* yet reigneth: ſome Chriſtian Princes attempt *Tripolis*, but *Pial Baſſa* defeateth them: *Malta* beſieged by the Turks in vain; they are forced to be gone after 5 moneths, and the loſſe of 24000 men: *Solyman* makes peace with the Emperor: *Pial Baſſa* ſubdueth *Chios* for aiding *Malta*, after it had been poſſeſſed by *Genua* 200 years. *Zigeth* is taken; at the ſiege thereof *Solyman* died: His ſon *Selymus* 2. ſucceeded 8 years; he makes peace with *Perſia*, *Hungary* and *Venice*; he invadeth *Scythia* with loſſe; he demandeth *Cyprus* from the Venetians, who refuſe to part with it, ſo the peace is broken. In the Weſt, *Ferdinand* the Emperor dieth: His ſon *Maximilian* 2. ſucceedeth 12 years; he makes 8 years peace with the Turk. In *France*, *Conde* who was condemned to die, is releaſed; the King of *Navar* forſakes the Proteſtants. The battel of *Dreux* in *Normandy*, where the King of *Navar* is ſlain, with 9000 on both ſides, and *Conde* taken; the Duke of *Guiſe* ſlain at the ſiege of *Orleans*. The Holy-Leagne with *Spain* againſt the Proteſtants. Within this Decad were 3 Civil-wars for Religion in *France*: The Prince of *Conde* is aided by *Caſimir* with 3000 men; the King with as many by the Duke of *Saxony*; After a battel, Liberty of Conſcience is granted: The Prince of *Conde* is taken, and ſlain with a piſtol: The King taketh S. *John de Angelo*. King *Philip* of Spain giveth 30000 Ducats towards the Printing of the *Complutenſ. Bible* at *Antwerp*. In the Councel of *Trent*, *France* and *Spain* ſtrive for precedencie. The *Philippina's* diſcovered. The Inquiſitors queſtion the Archbiſhop of *Toledo*. The Duke of *Alva* commeth into *Flanders*. Prince *Charles* accuſed by the Inquiſitors, dieth in priſon. The Spaniards and Moors of *Granado* at war 2 years. The King of *Poland* leagueth with *Denmark* againſt the Swedes. The Teutonick-Maſter ſubmits to the Polander, and is made Duke of *Curland*. The Muſcovite is beaten by the Polacs and Livonians, and loſeth 5000 laden wagons. The King recovereth *Parnovia* in Swedeland; he overthrows the Swedes in Livonia, and abridgeth *Dansk* of divers priviledges. *Maximilian* and *Mary* are crowned King and Queen of Hungary; the Tartars waſte the Country: the Turk beſiegeth *Zigeth*, and takes divers Towns there. *Breme* adjudged by the Emperor to be under the government of *Denmark* and *Holſt*. The Hamburgers take ſome of the Kings ſhips in the *Elve*, for which they are forc'd to pay 12000 crowns. The King and Lubekers take the Caſtle, Town and Harbor of *Elſenburg* in Swedeland. The Polander intercepteth ſome Daniſh ſhips; the King hindreth the Trade at *Dansk*, till they were fain to redeem it with 100000 Crowns. *Ericus* of Swedeland fortifieth *Revalia*, and hinders the Lubekers trade, by which he made the Polander and Dane his enemies; He is beaten off from the ſiege of *Helmeſtadt* in *Denmark*; he taketh *Drentham* in *Norway*, and loſeth it again; He impriſoneth his brother *John* and his ſon, upon ſuſpition that they fomented theſe wars, by lending mony to the Dane; he kills alſo many of his beſt friends upon jealouſie; he releaſeth his brother, and is depoſed and impriſoned: His brother *John* 3. ſucceedeth 23 years. *Venice* will not admit the Popes Inquiſition. The Arſenal burnt; whereupon *Selymus* invadeth *Cyprus*. 14 Biſhopricks erected in the *Low-Countries*, at which the people repine, for ſo the Inquiſition was brought in; Count *Egmont* ſent with complaints to the King, but no ſatisfactory anſwer; the King commandeth obedience to the Councel of *Trent*, aid to the Inquiſition, and execution of former Edicts: The Nobles, upon the execution of the Kings Letters, begin to ſtand upon their guard; Images are defaced, and Proteſtants permitted at *Antwerp* to build Churches: Proteſtantiſme is again inhibited: the Regent taketh arms. *Valenciens* taken, for favouring Proteſtants. *Alva* commits the Earls of *Egmont* and *Horn*, and builds *Antwerp*-Caſtle: *Horn* and *Egmont*, with others, executed. The Prince of *Orange* his eldeſt ſon is ſent into *Spain*: The Prince of *Orange* and his brother take arms, and are driven into *France* by the Duke, who brings in the new Biſhops, and ſetleth the Inquiſition: Multitudes of people forſake the Netherlands: Traffique with *England* ceaſeth. The Scots Queen quartereth the Engliſh Arms, and aſſumeth the Titles of *England* and *Ireland*, by the advice of the *Guiſes*. The Queen of *England* ſeeketh to reconcile the factions in *France*, and ſends the Earl of *Bedford* thither; ſhe helpeth the Proteſtants, takes *New-haven*, *Rohan*, and *Deep*, which were loſt again. *Shan-Oneal* the Rebel is pardoned by the Queen; but he returns and rebelleth again. *Leiceſter* deſigned by Queen *Elizabeth*, for Queen *Maries* Husband of *Scotland*. *Oneal* defeated by *Sidney* the Lord Deputy, and ſlain by the wilde Scots. *Thornton* committed, for

1560

Years of Christ.

for making doubts about Queen *Maries* Title. Queen *Elizabeth* Godmother to the Prince of *Scotland*; *Bedford* is the Deputy. She demands *Calice*, and is refuſed. Queen *Mary* caſt upon the Coaſt of *England* in her flight. *Northumberland* and *Weſtmrrland* rebell, and are driven into *Scotland*. The Duke of *Norfolk* committed, for intending to marry Queen *Mary*. The *French* expelled *Scotland*. Queen *Elizabeth* refuſeth to declare Queen *Mary* Heire. The Queens baſe-brother made Earl of *Murray*: Earl *Huntly* ſlain, and his Son beheaded: *Bothwel* eſcapeth: Archbiſhop of S. *Andrews* committed for keeping Maſſe: The Queen falls in love with the Lord *Dernly*, and makes him Earle of *Roſſe* and Duke of *Albany*; He marrieth the Queen, and is proclaimed King: divers Lords flie into *England*, return, and are reconciled: *Rizius* the Queens favourite murthered, whereupon *Morton* and others flie into *England*. The King murthered by *Bothwel*, who marrieth the Queen; ſhe is taken, and reſigneth; he flieth into *Denmark*, and there dieth in priſon: *Murray* made Regent. *James 6.* reigneth 57 years. The Queens forces defeated; ſhe flieth towards *France*, but is ſtopped in *England*.

In the Church, *Pius* 4. ſitteth 5 years: he ſtrangled Cardinal *Caraffa* with ſome others for oppoſing him in the Conclave: He comes to the Councel of *Trent*, and diſſolveth it: He citeth the Queen of *Navar*, being a Proteſtant, to *Rome*; the French king protecteth her. *Pius* 5. ſucceeded 6 years: He ſupplies the Emperor with money towards the Turkiſh war: He ſends to the Duke of *Alva* for his ſervice againſt the Proteſtants, a Conſecrated Helmet, and a Pair of Gantlets. The King of *Mauritania* is baptiſed. At *Paſſau* in *France*, is a Conference between the Cardinal of *Loraln* and the Biſhops, and *Peter Martyr*, *Marlorat*, and *Beza*. The Proteſtants are murthered in a Church at *Paris*. The Councel of *Trent* endeth. Religion in *France* is tolerated by the Kings Proclamation. The Pope diſpenſeth with the Bavarians and Auſtrians to receive in both kinds. At *Antwerp*, Lutherans and Catholiques joyn againſt the Calviniſts. A Councel is held at *Milan*; divers Conferences in *Germany* between the Lutherans and Zuinglians.

1570 In the Eaſt, *Pial Baſſa* takes *Nicoſia* in *Cyprus*, with 250 Field-peeces, and many Captives, which as he was conveying to *Conſtantinople*, the ſhip was fired by a Lady, and they all were blown up. *Famaguſta* is taken by *Muſtapha*, who falſified his promiſe to *Bragadinus* the Governor, whom he flea'd alive. At *Lepanto* the Turks loſt 32000 men, 3200 priſoners, 161 gallies, with much wealth. *Selymus* by treaſon takes *Moldavia*, and annexeth it to *Valachia*, he kills alſo the Vayvod; He makes peace with *Venice*. To him ſucceedeth his ſon *Amurath* 3. 21 years: He looks upon the ſtrangling of his five brothers: He invadeth *Polonia*, and burnt 200 Gentlemens houſes, with ſome Towns and Villages; then he makes a league with the Polander: Hearing there were Civil wars in *Perſia*, he invades the Country with 110000 men, of which the Perſian cut off 70000. *Syrvan* taken by *Muſtapha*, who loſeth 10000 of his forragers, and ſo returns diſgracefully, and dieth. In the Weſt, the Emperor appointeth his ſon *Rodolph* to be King of *Hungary*; he makes the Marquis of Montferrat Duke. *Rodolphus* is choſen King of the Romans and of *Bohemia*, and ſucceedeth in the Empire to his father *Maximilian* 37 years. *Salentinus* Archbiſhop of *Colen* reſigneth, and marrieth Count *Arnebergs* daughter. In *France*, the Queen of Navar ſecures her ſelfe with her ſon in *Rochel*; ſhe dieth, and her ſon marrieth the Kings ſiſter, upon which followed the 4. Civil war, the Maſſacre of *Paris*, and war with *Rochel*. *Navar* and *Conde* renounce Proteſtaniſm: with *Rochel* and *Mont-Alban* a peace is concluded. *Henry* the Kings brother elected King of *Poland*: *Montgomery* executed: The King dieth; to whom ſucceeded his brother *Henry* 3. 16 years, the Queen-mother is Regent; *Conde* removeth into *Germany*; the 5. Civil war followed, *D'Auvile* takes the Proteſtants part; The Germans invade *France* by *Condes* means; *Navar* eſcapes into *Picardy*; The *Guiſes* aim at the Crown; the Duke of Alenſon the Kings brother, head of the Proteſtants, is reconciled to the King. A 6. Civil war was begining, but the King was 100 millions in debt: *Navar* takes arms; *D'Auvile* leaveth the Proteſtants; peace is made with *Conde*. The Order of the Holy-Ghoſt was now inſtituted. Don *Requieſcens* ſent Governor into *Belgium*, and after him Don *John* of *Auſtria*. *Antwerp* is taken by the Spaniard. *Sebaſtian* of Portugal in his Africk expedition is killed, to whom ſucceeded *Henry* the Cardinal. *Sigiſmund* King of Poland, and laſt of *Jagello's* line, dieth; the French kings brother *Henry* Duke of Bourbon is elected; He underſtanding his brother was dead, gets away in the dark out of *Cracovia*. *Maximilian* the Emperor is choſen by the greater part, but at the Turks intreaty *Steven* Prince of Tranſilvania is made King; he reigned 11 years: He takes *Dansk*, and uſeth it hardly. *Livonia* ſpoiled

Years of Chriſt.

ſpoiled by the Muſcovite; the Dane and Swede make peace at *Stetin*: ſix years war between the Danes and Hamburgers, upon taking of one of the Kings Ships by them; but upon the payment of a great ſum they are reconciled to the King. *Venice* makes a perpetual League with the Pope and Spaniard. A Plague at *Venice*, which killed 70000. upon the ceaſing whereof a Church is built to the Redeemer, as the Senate and Duke had vowed before: The *Flemings* refuſe to pay new Taxes; a great deſtruction among them by an inundation. *Bergen* taken by the Spaniard. *Alva* call'd home, and *Medina Celi* ſent Governour; the Zelanders take much booty from him; he taketh divers Towns, and returns to *Spain*; his ſucceſſor *Requieſcens* beſiegeth *Leyden* twice, to no purpoſe; he takes divers Towns, and dieth. The Spaniards mutiny for pay, and are expelled the Country; *John of Auſtria* is made Governour; *Antwerp* is plundred, and the Caſtle diſmantled; *John* retireth to *Luxenburg*, being proclaimed enemy to *Belgium*; a pacification is made, and *Matthias* Arch-Duke of *Auſtria* becomes Governour; upon the death of *Don John*, *Alexander Farneſes* Prince of *Parma* is made Governour; he takes *Maſtricht*, and other places; the Antwerpians drive out their Catholique Clergy; the *Holland*-Company, called the *Gueux*, take the *Brill*: the Hollanders make *William* of *Naſſaw* Prince of *Orange* their Governour; he relieveth *Leyden*, and takes divers Towns: A general pardon to all the Belgians, except *Naſſaw* and ſome others. Queen *Elizabeth* lendeth the Hollanders 20000 pounds; they take *Gaunt*, *Utricht*, and many other Towns; *Matthias* Arch-Duke is Governour a while, and reſigneth to *Anjou*; *Amſterdam* and other Towns yield to the Hollanders. In *England*, *Dacres* that renewed the Rebellion, is defeated by the Lord *Hunſdon*; *Weſtmerland* fleeth into *Flanders*, *Northumberland* beheaded at *York*; The Royal Exchange built; *Story* executed for Treaſon; the Duke of *Norfolk* beheaded; Sir *Francis Drake* ſaileth to the Indies; the Queen is Godmother to the French Kings Daughter, her Deputy was the Earl of *Worceſter*; *Alenſon* a ſuiter to the Queen; ſhe refuſeth the protection of *Holland*, but ſtrives to make peace there; a Rebellion in *Ireland*; *Frobiſhers* Voyage; Trade with *Turky* and *Muſcovy*; *Alenſon* now Duke of *Anjou* comes over hither; *Deſmond* rebelleth. In *Scotland*, the Regent is ſlain; *Matthew* Earl of *Lenox* ſucceeds; *Huntley* raiſeth Forces in the North for the Queen; the Regent takes *Dunbritton* Caſtle, and the Arch-Biſhop of Saint *Andrews* in it, whom he hangeth for conſenting to the Kings murther; The Regent is killed, and the Earl of *Mar* ſucceeds; Commiſſioners ſent by Queen *Elizabeth* to examine Queen *Mary* upon ſome Articles; Queen *Elizabeth* gets Earle *Morton* to be Regent; ſhe helpeth him; the Biſhop of *Roſſe*, Queen *Maries* diligent Agent, is baniſhed *England*; *Edenburg* taken by the Proteſtants; *John* of *Auſtria* practiſeth to marry Queen *Mary*; the French King ſtrives to get the young King into his cuſtody; *Morton* diſplaced, and 12 Peers joyned to the King, whereof *Morton* was one; difference betweene him and the reſt; the Lord *Aubigney* made a Duke by the King.

In the Church ſits *Gregory* 13. 13 years, he makes *Coſmo di Medices* Great-Duke of *Tuſcany*; he grants to the Portugals againſt the Moors a Croyſado; his Chappel in the Vatican which he built, ſtood him in 100000 Ducats. Pope *Pius* his Bull againſt Queen *Elizabeth* is faſtned to the Biſhop of *Londons* gate. A pacification in *France* publiſhed and revoked. The *Palatine* Divines and Anabaptiſts have a Conference; the Duke of *Batlen* turns Proteſtant; *Henault* and *Artois* exclude themſelves from the peace of *Gaunt*, and are called the Male-contents; a form of Concord drawn up by the Divines of *Auſpurg*. Three Councels held this Decad at *Milan*.

In the Eaſt, *Sinan Baſſa* goeth General againſt the Perſian, and loſeth his men: the like ſucceſs had *Muſtapha*: *Ferat* is made General, who returneth without ſucceſs. The League with the Emperour renewed for 8 years, but the Turks brake the League by invading *Hungary*, for which the Baſſa of *Buda* is ſtrangled: *Sinan* recalled from his baniſhment, and made Baſſa there. *Amurath* is troubled with the Falling-ſickneſs. *Oſman* taketh *Tauris*: *Cicala* his Succeſſor loſeth 80000 Turks. Peace is made with the Polander and Perſian. The Janiſaries mutiny, and 15000 houſes burnt in *Conſtantinople*. *Sinan* diſplaced, and *Ferat* ſent in his room. In the Weſt, the Emperour ſends Commiſſioners to *Colen* for ſetling peace in the *Low-Countries*, but in vain. The Germans that invaded France, are defeated by the Guiſes: The Polander defeats *Maximilian* the Archduke, and takes him: A peace is made, and he ſet free. In *France*, a league is made againſt the King, for favouring the Proteſtants: upon which followeth the 7. Civil War. Divers places taken by the Guiſes, who oppoſe the King, deſirous of peace. *Navar* and *Conde* excommunitated by the Pope; they prevail in *Poicton*: *Navar* gets the day at *Courtray*, wherein *Joyeuſe* is ſlain. *Navar* excluded from ſucceſſion, and *Conde* poyſoned. The Duke of *Guiſe* and the Cardinall his brother are ſlaine for —1580

Years of Christ.

aſpiring. *Navar* helpeth the King, whom the Duke *de Mayn* was like to ſurpriſe. *Clement* a *Jacobin* ſtabbeth the King. *Philip* of *Spain* expels *Antony* Prior of *Crato*, whom the Portugals had made their King; he beats the French who aided *Antony*. The *Terceras* taken by the Spaniard. The Engliſh and their goods arreſted in *Spain*: the Engliſh loſe ſome Ships in *Cadiz*: the Armado defeated by the Engliſh, who ſtrive in vain to reſtore *Antony*. The Spaniard aideth the *Savoyen* againſt *Geneva*. The Polander beats the Muſcovite, who at laſt ſurrenders *Riga*, and all *Livonia* to the Polander, and makes peace, and withall kils his ſon for his bad ſucceſs. *Dansk* is reconciled to the Queen. King *Steven* dyeth: *Maximilian* Duke of *Auſtria*, is choſen by ſome, and *Sigiſmund* the King of Swedes ſon by others. In *Denmark*, *Chriſtiern* the 4. reigneth. The Swedes take divers places from the Muſcovite. The Perſian ſendeth to the State of *Venice* to league with them againſt the Turk. The Malteſes trouble the Turks in the Venetian ſeas, for which Venice and the Knights fall out. *Venice* ſends to *Amurath* 400 ſlaves with 800000 Ducats, who was angry for the wrong done to the Vice-roys wife of *Algiere*, by *Gabriel Heme*, in her paſſage to *Conſtantinople*, which *Heme* ſo they executed. The States totally reject King *Philip*'s Government. *Anjou* made Duke of *Brabant*, Marquiſs of the holy Empire, and Earl of *Flanders*. The Prince of *Orange* ſhot. Divers Towns taken by the States. The Duke reſignes the places he had taken, and returns to *France*. *Orange* is murthered by one *Gerard*: *Maurice* his ſecond ſon choſen Governour; the elder was a priſoner in *Spain*. Queen *Elizabeth* becomes Protector of the *Low-Countries*; who for her money lent, receiveth ſome cautionary Towns. *Leiceſter* ſent Lieutenant-Governor; he takes ſome places, and returns: the States diſlike him. The Hollanders take divers places. *Tournay* taken by the Duke of *Parma*. The Spaniards take divers Towns, and recover *Dunkirk*, *Gaunt*, *Bruſſels*, *Antwerp*, *Grave* and *Venlo*. Divers Forts betrayed to the Duke, he is driven from the ſiege of *Bergen-up-Zoom*. The Spaniards aſſiſt *Deſmond*, and are driven out of *Ireland*. The Lord *Grey* ſuppreſſeth the Rebels. A Proclamation in *England* againſt Seminaries and Jeſuites. *Antonio* of *Portugal* cometh into *England*. *Campian* put to death. The King of *Denmark* made Knight of the Garter. *Guiſe* plotteth Queen *Maries* delivery. *Throgmorton* executed. *Deſmond* ſlain: *Northumberland* confined; *Arundel* ſent to the Tower: *Northumberland* found dead in the Tower, being ſhot: 14 executed for Treaſon. *Drake* takes ſome places from the Spaniard: *Drake*, *Norris* and *Eſſex* ſent to aide *Antonio* of *Portugal*: the Queen ſupplyeth *Navar* with men and money. In *Scotland*, *Morton* is impriſoned being accuſed of Treaſon: the Duke of *Lenox* unjuſtly accuſed by the Miniſters: *Morton* beheaded for being acceſſary to the Kings death. The *Ruthens* impriſon the King, and force him to recall *Angus*: the King is ſet free, confineth *Angus*: *Gowry* executed for Treaſon. *Arran* and *Fernihurſt* invade *Ireland*; *Bingham* ſubdueth their forces. Queen *Mary* beheaded. The King marryeth the King of *Denmarks* daughter, and goeth thither himſelf.

In the Church, *Gregory* yet ſits: He ſets free the Maſter of *Malta*, whom the King had impriſoned, and reformeth the *Calendar*; which occaſioned ſome troubles in *Poland*. To him ſucceedeth *Sixtus* 5. 5 years, his father was a Swine-herd: He removed the Obelisk into the Vatican, and there erected a new Library: he made his young Nephew a Cardinal, and gives him 10000 crowns revenue: He left behinde him 10 Millions; he had a Statue erected to him. The new Calendar rejected by the Duke of *Saxony*: it occaſioneth troubles at *Auſpurg*, and *Riga* in *Livonia*: The Proteſtant Princes meet at *Luneburg*; the Churches of *Poland*, *Ruſſia* and *Lituania* agree in the points of Religion, wherein they had heretofore diſagreed.

1590 In the Eaſt, The Turks break the league in Hungary; the Emperour complains: *Amurath* pretends ignorance: The Baſſa of *Boſna* taketh *Whitz*, the chief City of *Croatia*, and murthereth 65000 Chriſtians in the hills. He intercepteth 150 Waggons and money ſent to relieve *Croatia*; at *Siſeg* he is ſlain with 18000 Turks by the Imperialiſts: the Turks take and loſe many Towns, and villages. 30000 Tartars taken by Chriſtians, with many places: *Valachia*, and other places revolt from the Turk. To *Amurath* ſucceeded his ſon *Mahomet* 3. 9 years: He ſtrangleth 18 of his brothers, and *Ferat Baſſa*, for the loſs of *Strigon*: he wins and loſeth divers places and men: the Turks kill 20000 Chriſtians, being too eager in loading themſelves with the plunder of *Kareſta*, where 60000 Turks were ſlain. The Vayvod of *Valachia* having revolted from the Turk, burneth *Nicopolis*. *Varadin* in *Tranſilvania* relieved by *Baſta* the Emperours Lieutenant. The Turks and Valachians infeſt each others Territories. The

Cardinal

Years of Chriſt.

Cardinal of *Tranſylvania* leagueth with the Turk; the Baſſa of *Agria* beaten, and of *Buda* taken. In the Weſt, the *Germans* league with *Tranſylvania* againſt the Turk; the Prince of *Tranſylvania* reſigneth to the Emperour for *Sileſia*, but repents, and returns home, where he reſignes to his Uncle, the Cardinal, whom the Vayvod of *Valachia* killed in fight, for leaguing with the Turk, and recovers *Tranſylvania* to the Empire, and is made Governour thereof. In *France*, *Henry* 4. of *Navar* reigneth 21 years, he defeats *De Mayne*; it is held Treaſon by the Parliament of *Rohan* to ſide with the King, who takes *Chartres* and *Noyon*, defeats the Savoyen, and beſiegeth *Rohan*; the Preſident of *Paris* ſtrangled by the Tribunes; Duke *Joyeuſe* drowned, and 300 of the League ſlaine in *Languidoc*; the King becomes Catholique, upon which many Leaguers fall off to him; he is Crowned, and moſt places ſubmit; *Guiſe* is reconciled to him; the Jeſuits baniſhed, for a ſtroke given to the King by one of them; the King defeats the Spaniards in *Picardy*; *De Mayne* and *Nemours* reconciled to him; *Joyeuſe* made Admiral; *Marſelles* priſed for him; *Amiens* recovered; a League with *England* and *Holland*; *Callais* reſtored upon peace with the Spaniard; *Britain* ſubmits, and ſo the Civil War ends. At *Nante*, the Edict of Pacification for exerciſe of the Proteſtant Religion; the King is divorced from Queen *Margaret*, and marrieth *Katherine de Medices*; Duke *Joyeuſe* becomes a Capuchin: Cardinal *Albertus*, the Emperours youngeſt ſon, is made Governour of *Portugal*, and Archbiſhop of *Toledo*: Another Spaniſh Fleet miſcarrieth at the Cape of Saint *Vincent*: To King *Philip* ſucceeded his ſon *Philip* 3. 24 years. *Amiens* taken by the Cardinal *Albert*, who married *Iſabella* the Infanta. *Sigiſmund* King of *Poland* ſwears to receive the Confeſſion of *Auſpurg*, before he is admitted to the Swediſh Crown; he conquereth *Moldavia*, and is depoſed in *Swevia*. In *Hungary* many Turks ſlain; At *Alba Regalis*, the Governour of *Rab* executed for ſurrendring it to the Turk; many Towns loſt and won; *Rab* recovered, with ſome other Townes. The Swedes and Tartars beaten by the Muſcovite; peace made with him. *Charles* the King of *Swedes* Uncle is Governour of *Suevia*. *Sigiſmund* cometh with an Army againſt *Charles*, who taketh *Calmaria*, and ſubdueth *Finland*: The *Uſoques* out of *Dalmatia* and *Hungary* notable Pyrats. To *Parma* in *Flanders* ſucceeded *Peter Erneſt* Duke of *Auſtria*, brother to *Rodulph* the Emperour; the States refuſe his proffer of peace; to him ſucceedeth Arch-Duke *Albert*, he takes *Calais* and *Hulſt*, with *Amiens*; *Grave Maurice* defeats him; the King beſtowes *Belgium* and *Burgoin* on *Albert*, with the Infanta his wife; the Spaniard takes divers places in *Friſland* and *Cleve*; *Maurice* made Lieutenant-Generall of the united Provinces; he takes *Breda*, and other places; A Councel of Eſtate ſet up, wherein the Queen was to have two Councellors; Prince of *Orange* releaſed in *Spain*; the *Grave* taketh 11 Towns in 3 months; one *Panne* is executed for attempting to kill the *Grave*; the States prohibited from trading in *Spain*; they trade into the Eaſt-Indies. Queen *Elizabeth* furniſheth the French King with money, and procureth peace of the Turk to *Poland*; *Grevil* fighteth the Spaniſh Fleet: The Voyages of *Cavendiſh* to the Straits of *Magellain*, and of *Lancaſter* to the Eaſt-Indies; *Raleigh's* Expedition into *America* and *Guiana*; *Tyr-Oens* Rebellion; the *Thames* dry; *Farnanbuc* taken by *Lancaſter*; *Cadiz* taken by *Eſſex*; *Mac Hugh* the Iriſh-Rebel ſlain; the French King made Knight of the Garter; the Engliſh Expedition to the *Azores* at *Black-water*; the Engliſh defeated by *Tyr-Oen*; *Eſſex* parlieth with him; he is committed to the Lord Keeper. In *Scotland*, *Bothwel* attempteth the Kings chamber, he is proclaimed Traytor, and ſome of his Pages hanged; *Huntley* kills *Murry*, for harbouring *Bothwel*; he fleeth into *England*, returns and rebelleth again.

In the Church ſits *Urban* 7. 12 dayes, then *Gregory* 14. 10 moneths; he excommunicates the French King; ſucceeded *Innocent* 9. 2 moneths, then *Clement* 8. 13 years; he abſolves the French King: *Ferrara* being eſcheated to the Pope for want of Heirs, a war enſueth with *Cæſar Eſtenſis* about it, which ſhortly after was taken up. Proteſtaniſm in *Saxony* is forſaken; the Proteſtants are perſecuted in *Styria* and *Carinthia*, but permitted in *France*. *Hacket*, for blaſphemy, is hanged.

In the Eaſt, the Turk and Perſian quarrel; *Alba Regalis* loſt; *Haſſan Baſſa*, and his Army of 60000 overthrown; the Wines in *Conſtantinople* ſtaved upon a ſedition of the Janiſaſaries, but ſome wine was allowed to the Chriſtian Ambaſſadors: *Baſta* defeats the Valuchians, and 2 Baſſa's; *Ali Baſſa* ſurpriſed with 200 Waggons and 70000 Ducats by the Heyducks; *Alba* recovered, and *Peſt* loſt; *Mahomet* ſtrangleth his ſon, and drowneth his mother for treaſon; his ſon *Achmat* ſucceedeth 13 years; the Turks defeated twice in *Aſia* by their Rebels; *Peſt* and *Hatwan* loſt to the Turk; *Tauris* recovered by —1600

Years of Christ.

the *Persian*; some Towns taken in *Hungary*: the *Persian* defeats two Bassa's: the Bassa of *Aleppo* rebelleth, he defeats two Bassa's, takes *Tripolis* and *Damascus*, and leagueth with the Persian: The Turk makes peace with the Emperor for 20 years: The Bassa's of *Agria* and *Buda* are put to death, for striving to break the peace; the Turks are spoiled at Sea by the Duke of *Florence*. In the West, *Basta* beats the Transylvanian, and kills the Vayvod of *Valachia*, for intending to call in the Turk. *Basta* is thrust out by the Prince, who at last submits to *Basta*, and swears fealty to the Emperour; *Basta* subdueth the rebellious Transylvanians: The Emperour and Persian league against the Turk. *Botscay* winneth some part of Transylvania; he makes his peace with the Emperour, and obtaineth Transylvania to him and his Heirs: The Catholike Clergy wronged by *Donaward* a free City, therefore it is proscribed and taken by the Duke of *Bavaria*. The Jesuites Colledge and Library burnt at *Vienna*. *Transylvania* rebelleth again, and makes *Gabriel Battori* their Governour; upon the Duke of *Juliers* death without Heirs, *Brandeburg* and *Newburg* lay claim to it: The Bishop of *Strasburg* is sent thither by the Emperour, and expels their Governours: The French subdue *Savoy*, because the Marquisat of *Salusses* is not, according to promise, restored: The Dukes peace is made by Cardinal *Aldobrandin*. The French Embassadours doors broken open in *Spain*, and his Nephew imprisoned, but he is released again. *Byron* executed for Treason: League renewed with the Switzers: Traffique forbidden into *Spain* and *Flanders*, upon a new Impost there. Father *Cotton* gets the Jesuites to be restored. Count *Avergne* once pardoned, falls to new practises, and is imprisoned. *Marselles* like to be betrayed to the Spaniard, whereupon the Governour of *Provence* is executed. The revenues of *Navar* united to the Crown of *France*. At *Bolloigh* the Treaty of peace between *France* and *Spain* is broken off, for precedency: *Spain* makes peace with *England*. *Nottingham* arriveth in *Spain*, to take the Kings Oath to the peace: A peace also is made with the Hollander for 12 years. In *Poland*, about some troubles raised by the Jesuites, the Lords meet at *Lublyn* about Toleration of Religion, who are suddenly surprised by the King, and many of them slain. *Hungary* is wasted by the *Tartars*; divers Towns lost. The Turk sendeth *Botscay* the Crown of *Hungary*, taken from *Ladislaus*. *Botscay* repents his league with the Turk, and dieth. The Turk takes divers Townes in *Hungary*; the Emperour resigneth *Hungary* to his brother *Matthias*. Exercise of Protestantism granted to *Austria*. In *Swethland*, *Charles* is declared King, he attempteth *Livonia* in vain; His Bastard-son is taken by the Polander; He besiegeth *Riga* in vain, and loseth 9000 men; he loseth the Castle of *Wessenstein*, and recovers it again. The King of *Denmark* commeth to *Hamburg*, and taketh the Oath of Allegiance of them. *Matthias* is chosen King of *Bohemia* by the Lords: Liberty of Conscience granted to the Bohemians and Silesians. The Venetians league with the Grisons, and forbid building of more Monasteries and giving Lands to the Clergy, which Act had been made *An.* 1337. and now revived; they are hated by the Pope for this Act, and by the Spaniard for their League with the Grisons: They make an Edict against the Jesuites, and are excommunicated, which they slight, and raise an Army for their defence. Cardinal *Joyeuse* is sent from *France* to compose the difference, at last the prisoners are set free, and they absolved; they protect and enrich such as had written in their defence: The Arch-Duke is defeated neer to *Newport*: The Admiral of *Arragon* being taken, is exchanged for the Hollanders imprisoned in *Spain*: *Ostend* besieged by *Albert*. 6 Gallies of *Spinola* sunk by the Hollanders and English; he is slain, and his 8 Gallies defeated: *Ambrose Spinola*, to revenge his brothers death, aideth *Albert* at *Ostend*; after almost 4 years siege, and the loss of 72900 men in the Town, and great numbers in the field, *Ostend* yieldeth on composition: *Spinola* takes divers Towns, but faileth of *Bergen* and *Grave*: The Netherlanders acknowledged free States by *Albert*: Many Towns taken by the Hollander and Spaniard; The States aide *Embden* against their Earle: *Hertogenbush* besieged by *Maurice* in vain; *Sluce* taken from the Arch-Duke; some Spaniards fall off to the States; *Maurice* faileth of his design against *Antwerp*; *Embden* and the Earle reconciled; The Hollander beats the Spaniard in the Straits, and the Portugals in the Indies. The Lord *Montjoy* doth good service in *Ireland*; *Essex* beheaded; difference between *English* and *Danes* about Trade; Commissioners sent into *Denmark*; the Spaniards land in *Ireland*; *Tyr-Oen* submitteth: Queen *Elizabeth* dieth; King *James* succeedeth 22 years: *Tyr-Oen* is restored by him; *Raleigh*, *Grey*, and *Cobham* attainted for Treason; some Priests put to death; the Gunpowder-Treason; the King of *Denmark* cometh into *England*; an Insurrection upon Inclosures; *Virginia* planted; the New-Exchange built.

In the Church, *Leo* 11. ſits 26 dayes: then *Paul* 5. 16 years; He quarrels with the Venetians. *Du-Pleſſis* diſputeth with the Biſhop of *Evreux*. At *Ratisbone* the Jeſuites diſpute with the Lutherans. The Duke of *Savoy* expels the Proteſtants: the Poland-Jeſuites burn a Proteſtant-Church. *Marpurg* reformed. Liberty of Conſcience in *Hungary*. An Archbiſhoprick erected in the *Philippina's*.

Years of Chriſt.

In the Eaſt, the Perſian invadeth *Babylon*, defeateth *Naſſus Baſſa*, and kills 20000 Turks. *Achmats* Fleet ſent againſt *Florence* and *Malta*. 200000 die at *Conſtantinople* in one year of the plague. 42 Turkiſh Gallies defeated by the Florentine, who took one Gally with 300 ſlaves. A Derviſar flingeth a ſtone at the Turk, and is executed. The Tartar invadeth *Moldavia*. Peace between the Turk and Perſian. The Jewes expelled *Perq.* *Holland* trades with the Turk. The Florentine and Sicilian takes ſome places and Gallies from the Turks. The Baſſa of *Sidon* flieth to *Florence* with 14000.l. weight of gold. A Rebellion in *Aſia* and *Arabia*. *Naſſuffe* the Baſſa executed for intelligence with *Perſia*. Two rich Turkiſh Gallies taken by the Florentine. *Jacaia*, *Mahomet* 3. his ſuppoſed ſon, joyns with the Aſian Rebels. *Muſtapha*, *Achmets* brother, ruleth two moneths; he ſets free the Perſian Ambaſſador, and impriſoneth the French, upon the eſcape of *Coresky* the Moldavian; he is thruſt into a Cel, and *Achmet* his ſon ruleth; he ſets free the French Ambaſſador, and makes peace with *Perſia*. *Manfredonia* in *Sicily* loſt to the Turk, with the Iſle of *Iviſa*. In the Weſt, *Juliers* is given by the Emperor to the Duke of *Saxony*; *Juliers* taken by *Grave-Maurice*. To *Rodulph* ſucceeded in the Empire his brother *Matthias* 8 years. *Spinola* takes *Aken* and *Weſel*, and beats down the Fort of *Mulheim*. The Hollanders invade *Munſter* and *Paderborn*. The Jewes expelled *Wormes*, and their Synagogue burnt. *Francfort* rebelleth againſt their Magiſtrates. A Lutheran-Jubile kept. The Emperor dieth, to whom ſucceeds *Ferdinand* his brother K. *Henry* of *France* ſlain by *Ravilliac*; his ſon *Lewis* 13. ſucceedeth, his mother Regent; the Kings heart is interred by the Jeſuites: *Rohan* ſeiſeth on S. *John de Angeli*; *Conde* leaveth the Court; *Vendoſme* impriſoned, and eſcapeth; The Jewes baniſhed *France*; *Rohan* and the Proteſtants take arms; *Anchore* made Maſter of the Horſe, and Governor of *Normandy*; *Conde* impriſoned; *Anchore's* houſe ſpoiled, and his treaſure ſeiſed on by the people; he is ſlain, and his wife executed. *France* helpeth *Savoy* againſt *Spain*; *Eſpernon* joyneth forces with the Queen, they are reconciled to the King, and *Conde* releaſed. Peace between *Spain* and *Savoy*. 900000 Moors expelled *Spain*, after 900 years poſſeſſion. The Spaniard helps the Duke of *Mantua* againſt *Savoy*, for the Marquiſat of *Montferrat*. The Polander beats the Muſcovite, and takes *Smolenſco*. The Dukedome of *Boruſſia* confirmed by the Polander on *Brandeburg* and his heirs-male. The Polander beaten in *Valachia* and *Muſcovy*; *Smolenſco* recovered by the Muſcovite. A Rebellion in *Poland*. *Podolia* waſted by the Tartars; who upon the outrages of the Coſſakes, burn 4 Cities, 400 Villages in *Podolia*, and carry away much plunder. In *Hungary*, the Traitors that conſpired againſt *Battori*, are executed. *Sigiſmund Battori* dieth, and the Empreſſe crowned Queen; *Gabr. Battori* ſlain, and *Bethlem Gabor* made Prince by the Turk. *Steven* Vayvod of *Moldavia* tyranniſeth, is taken and ſent with Prince *Alexander*, his mother and brother, to *Conſtantinople*, who for feare renounced Chriſt. The Heyducks beat the Turks. *Ferdinand* is crowned King of *Hungary*, and then *Bethlem Gabor*. The Dane takes *Calmaria* from the Swedes; they waſte *Norway*. The Lubekers beat the Danes at ſea. *Calmaria* is reſtored, and peace with the Swedes is made. New Impoſitions raiſed in the *Sound*. The Hollanders help *Lubec*. The Swede leagueth with the Dane againſt *Poland*. To *Charles* of Swedeland ſucceeded his ſon *Guſtavus Adolphus*: He gaineth upon the Dane and Muſcovite. King *James* makes peace between the Swede and Muſcovite. Great troubles in *Bohemia*. A Proteſtant Church built in *Prague*. The Emperor and Archduke of *Auſtria* crowned at *Prague*. The Proteſtants caſt three of the Emperors Councellors out of a window, and league with *Moravia*, *Sileſia*, and *Luſatia*. *Bucquoy* invadeth *Bohemia*. *Frederick* the Palſgrave choſen King. *Venice* aideth *Mantua* againſt *Savoy*; they have war with *Ferdinand* of *Auſtria*, they are aided by the Hollanders; they make peace with *Ferdinand*; Treaſon againſt them diſcovered, and the Traitors executed. The Archduke ſtayes the Turkiſh Ambaſſador going to the States; and they arreſt his mony, ſent to pay his garriſons. The Spaniard and Hollander fight at the Cape of S. *Vincent*; the Hollander loſt their Admiral, and the Spaniard 3 ſhips and 1500 men. *Grave-Maurice* made Knight of the Garter. 27 Spaniſh ſhips going to the *Indies*, defeated by the Hollanders; they take the Caſtle of *Mina* in the South-ſea; they ſecure the paſſage on the River *Ems*, by building two Forts. *Spilberg* beats the Spaniard and Portugal. The Cautionary Towns redeemed. *Maurice* ſucceedeth to *Philip* in the principality of *Orange*. A Synod

1610

at

Years of Christ.

at *Dort*, *Bernevelt* executed. King *James* is visited by the Lantgrave of *Hesse*. The Lord *Zanchie* hanged. Queen *Mary's* body removed from *Peterburgh* to *Westminster*. The *Palsgrave* married to the Lady *Elizabeth*. The *Londoners* make a Plantation in *Ireland*. The English plant in *Bermudas*. The King of *Denmark's* second coming hither. *Middleton's*-Water brought into *London*. *Sutton's*-Hospital founded. *Overbury* poysoned. *Spalato* cometh hither. King *James* goeth into *Scotland*. *Raleigh* executed. Queen *Anne* dieth.

In the Church, *Paul* sitteth yet: He sends the Emperor a golden Rose beset with rich Gems. *Bellarmine's* and *Marian's* Books of the Popes power condemned at *Paris*. *Mulheim* built by the Protestants, who were expelled *Colen*. *Newburg* becomes a Papist. The Protestant Princes meet at *Norimberg*. *Silesia* petitioneth the Emperor for continuance of Protestantism; the Bishop of *Uratislavia* persecutes them; the Emperor intercedes for them. *Arminius* and *Vorstius* make troubles in *Holland*. A Synod called at *Dort*.

1620— In the East, the Turks take *Vatz* in *Hungary*, against the peace; *Osman* is strangled by the Janisaries, whom he meant to extirpate; Prince *Coresky* strangled in prison; *Mustapha* advanced again; peace with *Poland*; At *Babylon* a rebellion, and at *Arzirum*, and in *Mesopotamia*: The Bassa of *Arzirum* threateneth *Constantinople*; the Janisaries refuse to oppose him: *Mustapha* is removed; and *Amurath* 4. *Osmans* son advanced: *Babylon* taken by the Persian: the Cossacks trouble the Black-sea and Bosphorus: *Abassa* is pacified, having threatned *Constantinople*, and defeats the *Persians*: 20000 Turks defeated at Babylon; the King of *Tartaria* expelled by his brother: the Janisaries quarrel with the Grand-Signior. In the West, the Duke of Bavaria defeateth the Bohemians; the Emperor nullifieth the election of the *Palatine* to *Bohemia*; the *Palatine* with *Brandeburg* and others proscribed; *Spire* wasted by *Mansfield*, and the Palatinate by *Bavaria* and the Spaniards; *Bucquoi* killed; *Mansfield* proscribed; *Westphalia*, *Pederborn*, and *Strasburg* wasted by the Duke of *Brunswick*, who loseth an arm in battel; *Manheim* and *Heidelberg* taken; *Bavaria* made Elector; *Gabor* invadeth *Austria*; *Brunswick* beaten by *Tilly*; *Frankendale* submitteth; *Saxon-Wymar* and *Anhalt* made friends with the Emperor; *Tilly* spoileth *Brunswick*; *Mansfield* defeated; the Boors of *Austria* rebell; the Imperialists take many places; A Church and Monastery neer *Prague* begun by the Emperor; the Palsgraves eldest son drowned. In *France*, the King takes many Towns from the Protestants, and makes war for the *Valtoline*; 250 houses burnt in *Paris*; *Soubize* defeated at sea by *Montmorency*; *Vendosme* and the Great Prior of *France*, (*Henry* 4. his bastards) are imprisoned; Forts built by the King against *Rochel*; the Isle of *Ree* lost, and regained; *Nevers* claimeth the Dutchy of *Mantua*, he is assisted by the French against the Spaniard; the King takes *Rochel*, and sends his Army for *Mantua*. In *Spain*, *Philip* 4. reigneth: Troubles in *Mexico* setled; *Brasil* recovered by the Spaniard from the Hollander: the Tartars do much hurt in *Podolia*: the Swedes beat the Polanders in *Livonia*, but the Polanders defeat the Tartars in *Borussia*; peace between *Poland* and *Swethland*: much of *Hungary* subdued by *Gabor*; he disclaimeth it, and makes peace: The Cossacks take *Newstadt*: *Buda* almost burnt to the ground: *Ferdinand* 3. the Emperors son, crowned King of *Hungary*: *Bergen* in *Norway* almost consumed with fire. The King of *Denmark* is Generall of the united Princes against the Emperor; he is endangered by a fall from his horse; he defeateth, and is defeated. *Jutland* and most of *Holst* subdued by the Duke of *Fridland*; *Stralsund* besieged by the Cæsarians; *Newstadt* attempted in vain by the Danes; *Livonia* and *Curland* submit to the Swede; the King of Swedes takes divers Towns; Swedeland setled on the Kings Daughter; he takes *Strasburg*, and besiegeth *Thorn*, and makes peace with *Poland*. In *Bohemia*, the Jesuites are restored; many of the Lords executed. *Silesia* submits to the Emperor; *Ferdinand* 3. is crowned King of *Bohemia*; The Nobility commanded to forsake Religion, by a certain day. The Venetians make a League offensive and defensive with the Turks. The Spaniards besiege *Sluce* and *Bergen*. *Breda* taken, and divers other Towns; the Dunkirkers take many Holland and English ships; the Hollanders take *Hertogenbush*; *Bernevets* sons in Holland degraded; *Grotius* escapeth in a Trunk; *Bergen* relieved; *Antwerp* attempted by *Orange* in vaine; *Mansfield* taketh *Embden*. Prince *Maurice* dieth; his brother *Henric* succeedeth. *Baiæ* in Brasil lost and taken. In *Leyden* and *Amsterdam*, a sedition by the Arminians and Calvinists. The Hollanders rob the Spaniards in *America*, and take divers of their ships. Peace between *England* and *France*: The Bishop of *Spalato* returns: Prince *Charles* goeth into *Spaine*: *Mansfield* commeth into *England*. King *James* dieth; His

sonne

ſonne *Charles* ſucceedeth: An Expedition to *Cadiz*: Engliſh ſhips arreſted in *France*: The Duke of *Buckingham* murthered: peace with *France*: *New-England* planted.

In the Church, *Gregory* 15. ſits 2 years. To him ſucceeded *Urban* 8. The Archbiſhop of *Spalato's* Body burnt at *Rome*. At *Tiran* in the Valtolin, the Proteſtants are maſſacred in the Church; they are baniſhed *Bohemia*. The Jeſuites reſtored to *Prague*; The Proteſtant-Church there given to the Carmelites. The Proteſtants driven out of *Auſtria*, and the Country of *Henault* puniſhed for receiving them. *Amſterdam* and *Leyden* perſecute the *Arminians*. At *Vienna* is inſtituted the Order of She-Jeſuits. The Proteſtants baniſhed out of *Juliers*. *Heidelburg* and *Glogovia* become Popiſh.

In the Eaſt, the Turks defeat the Chriſtian Fleet at *Neapolis*, and carry away 800 captives: At *Babylon* they are beaten by the Perſians, but ſhortly after recover their loſſes: peace made between the Turk and Perſian. At *Conſtantinople*, the Turk draweth a great ſumme of mony from the Chriſtians: the French Ambaſſador troubled about his Chappel: A Venetian Merchant, for looking on the *Seraglio* through his Perſpective, is hanged. The Baſſa of *Aleppo* beheaded; and war denounced againſt *Poland*. The Turks take *Babylon*, with the loſſe of 40000 Perſian horſe. The Sultan removes to *Aleppo*, becauſe of the plague. A Fleet is ſent againſt the Coſſacks. *Sias Abas* the Parthian King, husband to 800 wives, dieth. A third part of *Conſtantinople* burnt. The Turks waſte *Illyria*: The Beglerbeg of *Greece* rebelleth. In the Weſt, *Hanovia* beſieged by the Cæſarians, and relieved: The *Swede* invadeth the Iſle *Rugia*: *Magdeburg* beſieged: The Empreſſe crowned at *Ratisbone*: *Tilly* waſtes *Thuringia*, and fights the Swediſh King at *Lipſic*, where 9000 Cæſarians were ſlain; *Tilly* being wounded, flieth to *Hall*. *Frederick* loſeth *Bohemia*. *Wolſtein* Duke of *Fridland* taketh *Prague*. The Swedes march into *Bavaria*. *Ratisbone* beſieged, and after 465 ſallies is taken by *Ferdinand* 3. At the Pacification of *Prague*, the *Saxon*, *Brandeburg*, *Luneburg*, and *Vinarien* joyn with the Emperor. *Ferdinand* 3. choſen King of the Romans, and the yeare following Emperor. *Ramſey* is taken by Count *Naſſau*. At *Hanovia* divers encounters between the Imperialiſts and Swedes, and divers Towns taken by both parties. The French King and his brother the Duke of *Orleans* reconciled. A League between *France* and *Swethland*. The French invade the Griſons; the French aid the States: *France* is invaded; the Queen-mother flieth to *Amſterdam*. *Iſabella* the Infanta dieth at *Bruſſels*: The Spaniards have a great loſſe in *America*: *Ferdinand* the Cardinal, Infant of Spaine, prevailes at *Norlingen*; He is made Governor of *Brabant*. The Spaniards beaten by the Hollanders. The French cut off at *Fontaralie*. The Spaniſh Fleet on the Engliſh ſhore, overthrown by the Hollanders. *Poland* makes peace with the Turk: in the kingdome, *Ladiſlaus* 4. ſucceedeth to his father *Sigiſmund*. The Polanders and Muſcovites defeated: peace between *Poland* and *Swethland*. The King of *Poland* comes to *Vienna*; The Queen of *Swethland* comes to *Frankfort*. Wars in *Hungary*. The Swediſh King killed, having left one Daughter *Chriſtina* to ſucceed him. *Spinola* the Spaniſh Generall dieth. The Prince of *Orange* makes an Expedition into *Flanders*. *Horn* takes *Colberg*; and the Swediſh King, not long before his death, *Francfort* upon the *Oder*. *Tilly*, after many Victories, dieth at *Ingolſtadt*. *Fridland* is murthered. *Germany* waſted with the ſword, plague and famine. The Hollanders take ſome places in *Braſil*. *Skenk*-Sconce retaken by the States. *Breda* taken by *Orange*. The Hollanders beaten neer *Antwerp*. 60000 deſtroyed by an Earthquake in *Calabria*. At *Meſſina*, 300 periſhed in a Church overthrown by an Earthquake. In *England*, a peace is made with *Spain*: King *Charles* ſends to the Emperor for reſtitution of the Palatinate: Three Nuncio's ſent by the Pope, are received into the Queens Court honorably. The *Engliſh Lyturgie* ſent into *Scotland*, occaſioned much miſchiefe: The Scots Presbyterians enter into a Covenant, and raiſe Arms: Preparation in *England* and *Ireland* againſt them, both by Sea and Land.

—1630

In the Church, Pope *Urban* ſitteth yet: He exhorteth the Chriſtian Princes to peace, and falls out with the Venetians about their dominion in the Adriatick ſea. The Jeſuites at *Vienna* keep a Jubile. In *Scotland*, a Synod is held at *Glaſcow*. At *Rome*, ſuch a Storm brake out with Darkneſſe, that at mid day they were forced to light candles. Divers meetings and Synods held this Decad in *Germany* among the Proteſtants: But whilſt the Princes were conſulting at *Lipſic*, *Magdeburg* is taken and deſtroyed by *Tilly*.

And

AND *thus* (*Good Reader*) *in this* Hiſtory *and* Chronologie, *as in two ſmall Maps, thou mayeſt behold the Microcoſme of Mankinde, in ſo many Hundred years, acting over & over again the ſame Tragi-Comedies: Thou ſeeſt new Perſons and Viſards, but the ſame Scene, and the ſame Things acted: Thou mayeſt behold from hence, as* Charon *did from the top of* Parnaſſus *in* Lucian, *a Clod of Earth full of Bee-hives, an Ant-hill full of Emmets, or a Pool full of Bubbles, ſome bigger, ſome leſſer, puff'd with aire, and toſſed up and down with winds, till they all break, and turn into their original Vapours. And what is it thou ſeeſt acted here? Nothing almoſt but Treacheries, Murthers, Inceſts, Adulteries, Thefts, Perjuries, Oppreſſions, Impriſonments, Cares, Watchings, Travellings, Underminings of one another; Princes tyrannizing over their People, Subjects rebelling againſt their Princes; one Prince thruſting out another, and People quarrelling one with another: Thou ſeeſt here Perigrinations, Navigations, Toylings, Battels, Law-ſuits, and a thouſand ſuch Vexations, all for an Handfull of Earth: In a word; we ſee here innumerable Neſts of Waſps and Hornets, deſtroying one another with their ſtings. And what is the cauſe of all this miſchief? Truly, Pride, Ambition, Covetouſneſſe, Sacrilege, Tyrannie, Drunkenneſſe, Whoredoms, Whimſical opinions in Religion, Self-love, every one thinking his own dreams to be oracles, and his conceited fancies to be Inſpirations; And above all things, Injuſtice, for which the World hath ſuffered ſo many changes: Juſtice is the Pillar on which States and Kingdoms ſtand; Remove that, and down falls the Temple of all Government: Juſtice is the Sun that illuminates all Societies; Extinguiſh that, and what will follow but ſtorms, clouds, and darkneſſe? Juſtice is the Band that ties People to their Governours, and every man to another; when this Band is broken, nothing follows but Confuſion: Juſtice is the Life of all States and Dominions, which live no longer then they are juſt; Nothing diſcriminates Kingdomes and States from Conventicles of Thieves and Robbers, but Juſtice;* Remota Juſticia, quid aliud ſunt Regna quàm magna Latrocinia? *Laſtly, In this* Chronologie, *as in an Epitomie, you ſhall ſee all the Heretical Opinions which have been ſpued out in ſo many Ages, now greedily lick'd up by the Fanatical ſpirits of this Age.* GOD *open our eyes, that we may at length ſee the Truth, and may with one heart and one mind embrace it; and that the Spirit of Truth, which our bleſſed Saviour promiſed to his Church, may lead us into all Truth.* Amen.

A Catalogue of the *Universities* of Christendom,

and of the Time of their Foundations.

Ann. Christ.

636 OF *Cambridge*, enlarged by *Sigibert* King of the East-Angles but erected long before.

640 Of *Lindaffern* in *Northumberland*, founded by *Oswald*.

792 Of *Paris*, founded by *Charles* the Great, at the desire of *Alcuin* and *Bede*; and shortly after, he founded the University of *Papia*.

809 Of *Tholouse*, having the same priviledges with the University of *Paris*.

830 Of *Lyons*, founded by the Greeks.

895 Of *Oxford*, founded by *Elfred*.

926 Of *Lovain* in *Brabant*, founded by *John* Duke of *Brabant*.

1145 Of *Rhemes*, founded in the Councel there; it was enlarged afterward by *Charls Guise* Cardinal of *Lorain*, in the year 1560.

1196 Of *Montpeler* in *France*; It was first erected for the Law, now for Physick.

1209 Of *Palenza*, founded by *Alphonsus* of *Castile*, and removed to *Salamanca* by *Ferdinand* of *Castile*, 1240.

1216 Of *Naples*, founded by *Frederick* 2.

1221 Of *Padua*, by *Frederick* the Emperor, who removed that of *Bononia* thither.

1227 Of *Bourges*, by S. *Lewis*.

1236 Of *Vienna*, founded by *Frederick* the Emperor.

1290 Of *Perusia*, a City in *Hetruria*.

1306 Of *Conimbria*, by *Dionysius* King of *Portugal*.

1312 Of *Orleans*, founded by *Philip* the Fair, King of *France*.

1316 Of *Ferara*, by *Albert* Duke of that place.

1320 Of *Cadurzis*, or *Quercy* in *France*, by *John* 22.

1339 Of *Pisa*; it was afterward enlarged *an.* 1487. by *Laurence de Medices*, and then by *Cosmo*, 1543.

1346 Of *Heidelberg*, by *Robert* the Red, Palsgrave.

1349 Of *Anjou*, by *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou* and King of *Sicily*; it was afterward enlarged by *Charles* 5. of *France*, *an.* 1364.

1360 Of *Prague* in *Bohemia*, by *Charles* 4. Emperor and King of *Bohemia*.

1364 Of *Cracovia* by *Casimir*; *Jagello* enlarged it, *an.* 1400.

1387 Of *Sena* in *Etruria*; Pope *Pius* 2. enlarged it.

1388 Of *Colen*, by the Senate; *Urban* 6. confirmed it.

1389 Of *Avignon*, by the Popes that resided there.

1390 Of *Erford* in *Thuringia*; it was founded before by *Dagobert* the French King, *Boniface* 9. enlarged it.

1403 Of *Wiritzburg*, by *John* the Bishop; his successor *Julius* enlarged it.

1404 Of *Salamanca*, where Pope *Clement* 5. appointed the Hebrew, Chaldee, and Arabick to be read.

1409 Of *Leipsic* in *Misnia*, by *Frederick* 1. Elector of *Saxony*.

1411 Of S. *Andrews* in *Scotland*, by King *Alexander* and his sister *Isabel*.

1412 Of *Turin* in *Savoy*, by Duke *Lewis*.

1415 Of *Rostock*, by *John* and *Albert* Dukes of *Meckelburg*, and the Senate.

1418 Of *Caen* in *Normandy*, by king *Henry* 5. of *England*.

1426 Of *Dola* in *Burgundy*, by *Philip* the Good, Duke of *Burgundy*.

1431 Of *Poyctiers*, by *Charles* 7.

1438 Of *Florence*, by *Cosmo di Medices*, who sent for learned men thither out of *Greece* and other places, and erected a famous Library.

1454 Of *Glascow* in *Scotland*.

1456 Of *Grypswald* in *Pomeran.* begun by *D. Uratislaus*, and finished by *D. Philip*, 1547.

1459 Of *Basil*, by Pope *Pius* 2.

Ann. Christ.

1460 Of *Friburg* in *Brisgovia*, by *Albert* Archduke of *Austria*.
1472 Of *Ingolstadt* in *Bavaria*, by *Lewis*, and his son *George* Dukes of *Bavare*.
1475 Of *Valenciens*, by *Lewis*.
1477 Of *Tubing* in the Dukedome of *Wittenberg*, by D. *Eberard*.
1480 Of *Aberden* in *Scotland*, by *W. Elphinston* B. of *Aberden*, enlarged since by the E. *Marshal* of *Scotland*, and Senat of *Aberden*.
1482 Of *Mentz*, by the Archbishop *Dietherus*.
1491 Of *Munster* in *Westphalia*, by the Bishop there.
1498 Of *Copenhagen* in *Denmark*, by King *John* there.
1500 Of *Toledo*, by the Archbishop.
1502 Of *Wittenberg* in *Saxony*, by *Frederick* the Elector.
1506 Of *Francfort* upon Oder, by *Joachim* Elector of *Brandeburg*.
1517 Of *Complutum*, by *Ximenes* Archbishop of *Toledo*.
1517 Of *Sevil*, by *Roderick* of *Sancta Ælia*.
1518 Of *Granado*, by *Ferdinand* of *Calabria*.
1526 Of *Marpurg* in *Hassia*, by *Philip* the Lantgrave.
1538 Of *Strasburg*, by *John Sturmius*.
1540 Of *Bezancon* in *Burgundy*, by *Charls* 5.
1541 Of *Evera* in *Portugal*, by *Henry* the Archbishop.
1544 Of *Reimont* in *Borussia*, by *Albert* Marquesse of *Brandeburg*.
1548 Of *Jene* in *Thuring*, by *John* Elector of *Saxony*.
1562 Of *Doway* in *Artois*, founded, by King *Philip* 2.
1564 Of *Dillengen* in *Swedeland*, by Cardinal *Otho* Bishop of *Auspurg*.
1575 Of *Leyden*, by *William* Prince of *Orange*, and the States of *Holland*.
1576 Of *Helmestadt* or *Julia*, by *Julius* D. of *Brunswick*.
1581 Of *Franequer*, by the Estates of *Frisia*.
1581 Of *Altorf* in *Bavaria*, by the *Norimbergers*.
1591 Of *Dublin* in *Ireland*, by Queen *Elizabeth*.
1592 Of *Venice*, enriched with a Greek Library by Cardinal *Bessarion*, which cost 30000. crowns; yet I finde that before this time, there were famous Professors in *Venice*, as *Emanuel Chrysolorus*, *Hermolaus Barbarus*, *Egnatius*, *Cælius Secundus*, and divers others.
1607 Of *Giessen*, by *Lewis* Lantgrave of *Hesse*; it was united to *Marpurg*, Ann. 1626.
1614 Of *Groning* in *Frisland*.
1616 Of *Paderburn*, by *Theodore* the Bishop.
1620 Of *Remthen* in the Principality of *Schaumberg*, by Prince *Ernest*.
1629 Of *Alba Julia* or *Fayrwar* in *Transilvania*, by *Bethlem Gabor*.

A List of the different ſorts of Knights in Chriſtendome, and the Times of their Inſtitution.

Ann. Chriſt.

738 OF Gennetæ *or* Jennettæ *in* France, *inſtituted by* Charls Martel, *upon the driving out of the* Moors, *or in honour of his Wife* Jean: *The* Moors *they called* Gennets *or* Weſels.

930 *Of* S. Andrew *or the Thiſtle in* Scotland.

1070 *Of the Knights of the Dog in* France, *by* Philip *the Firſt.*

1090 *Of* S. John *of* Jeruſalem, *or Hoſpitallers for entertaining of Pilgrims.*

1117 *Of Knights Templars in* Syria, *to ſuppreſſe the robbing of Pilgrims.*

1119 *Of the Knights of our* Saviour, *by* Alphonſus *the Firſt.*

1134 *Of Knights of the* Lily *in* Navar, *by* Garciaz.

1161 *Of the Knights of* Calatrava, *by* Sancho *the Brave of* Caſtile.

1165 *Of* Montjoy, *founded in* Syria.

1170 *Of* S. James *in* Caſtile, *by* Ferdinand *ſon to* Peter Albert.

1192 *Of Knights* Teutonicks, *as an addition to the Templars and Hoſpitallers, by* Henry Walpot.

1203 *Of Warfare of Chriſt, in* Livonia, *by* Albert *Biſhop of* Riga.

1213 *Of Portglaive in* Livonia, *by* Innocent 3.

1213 *Of the Knights of* Avis *in Portugal, by* Alphonſus *King there.*

1218 *Of the Knights of* Alcantara, *by* Ferdinand 3. *King of* Leon.

1233 *Of the Knights of the Virgin* Mary, *by* Bartholomew *of* Vicenry.

1279 *Of the Knights of* S. George *in* Carinthia, *by* Rodulph *the Emperour.*

1301 *Of the Knights of the Annunciado in* Savoy, *by* Amadeus 6.

1317 *Of Warfare of Chriſt, in* Portugal, *by* Dionyſius *King there; upon the deſtruction of the Templars.*

1318 *Of* Monteca *and* S. George *in* Arragon, *by* James *King there.*

1321 *Of* Chriſt Jeſus, *in* Portugal, *by King* Dionyſius.

1322 *Of Knights of* La Calza *in* Venice.

1330 *Of* S. Mark *in* Venice, *which ſeems to be the ſame with* La Calza.

1332 *Of Knights of the Band in* Spain, *by* Alphonſus *King of* Caſtile.

1343 *Of the Garter and Round-Table at* Windſor, *by King* Edward.

1350 *Of the* Star, *by King* John *of* France.

1381 *Of Knights of the Dove in* Caſtile, *by* John 1.

1429 *Of Knights* De la Scama *in* Spain, *by* John 2. *King of* Caſtile.

1430 *Of the Golden-fleece, by* Philip *D. of* Burgundy.

1450 *Of Knights of the Ear of* Corne *in* Britain, *by* Francis 1.

1451 *Of Knights of* S. Maurice *in* Savoy, *by Pope* Fælix 5. *and D. of* Savoy.

1469 *Of* S. Michael *in* France, *by* Lewis 11.

1531 *Of Knights of the Rhodes, tranſplanted to* Malta *by the Pope and Emperour.*

1534 *Of Knights of the* Burgundian-*Croſſe, by* Charls 5.

1561 *Of Knights of* S. Steven *in* Tuſcany, *by* Coſmo di Medices.

1579 *Of Knights of the Holy-Ghoſt in* France, *by King* Henry 3.

1608 *Of Knights of the Holy-Blood of Chriſt, by* Vincent Gonzaga *D. of* Mantua. *Beſides theſe, I finde the Knights of* Monteſio *in the Province of* Valentia: *Of Redemption in* Arragon: *Of* S. Mary *in* Italy, *called alſo there* Fratri Gaudenti, *becauſe they lived at eaſe and pleaſure: Of* S. Lazaro, *who pleadd great Antiquity,* Pope Pius 4. *of late revived them, and the Dukes of* Savoy *do much reſpect them: The Knights of* S. Steven, *erected by* Coſmo *Duke of* Florence, *who is great maſter of this Order, have their chief reſidence in* Piſa: *to theſe may be added, Knights of the Sepulchre; but I think they be the ſame with* S. John *of* Jeruſalem, *now of* Malta: *We have alſo in* England *Knights* Banerets, Baronets, Batchilours, *and of the* Bath: *The Knights of the Eare of Corne were aboliſhed, upon the union of* Britany *with* France, *by the marriage of* Charls 8. *with* Anne *of* Britany.

A List of the Religious Orders since Christ.

Years of Christ.

329 ANtony and *Paul* the Eremite begin the first Monks.
402 The Order of Regulars instituted by S. *Austin.*
524 Of Benedictine Monks by S. *Bennet.*
910 Of *Clugny* by *Bernon* an Abbot; To this Order belong the Carthusians.
1009 Of Camaldulenses by S. *Romualdus.*
1081 Of the *shady Valley* by S. *John Gualbert.*
1106 Of the Cisterciens by S. *Robert.*
1118 Of the Canons Regular.
1143 Of the *Præmonstratenses.*
1180 Of the *Carmelites*, confirmed by Pope *Alexander* 3.
1197 Of the *Crosse-bearers*, confirmed by *Cœlestine* the 3.
1209 Of the *Minorites*, confirmed by *Innocent* the 3.
1216 Of the *Redemption of Captives*, confirmed by *Innocent* the 3.
1227 Of the *Prædicants*, confirmed by *Honorius* the 3.
1227 Of the *Nuns* of S. *Clara*, which observe the rule of the *Minorites.*
1241 Of the *Eremites* of S. *Austin.*
1248 Of the *Sylvestrines*, confirmed by *Innocent* the 4.
1294 Of the *Cœlestines.*
1299 Of the *Servants of S. Mary.* (Sene.
1362 Of the *Jesuati* by S. *John Columbine* of
1373 Of *Mount Olivet.*
1410 Of S. *Jerome*: Of the *Scopetini*: Of S. *George de Alga.*
1480 Of the *Minimes* by S. *Francis de Paula.*
1530 Of the *Capuchins*, confirmed by *Clement* the 7.
1533 Of the *Clerks* of S. *Paul*, by the same Pope.
1540 Of the Society of *Jesus*, by *Ignatius Loyola*, and confirmed by *Paul* the 3.
1591 Of those that serve the sick, confirmed by *Gregory* the 14.

A List of Heretiques, and such as have been so reputed since Christ.

39 SImon *Magus.*
71 *Menander*, *Saturnius*, *Basilides*, *Simons* Disciples.
81 *Nicholaus* the Deacon, who allowed fornication.
103 *Corinthus*, and his scholar *Ebion*, denied Christs Divinity.
132 *Papias* Author of the *Millinaries.*
154 *Carpocrates*, and his Scholars the *Gnosticks*, denied Works.
195 *Cajanites*, deniers of the Resurrection.
203 *Valentinians*, Authors of many Fables.
213 *Marcionites* Authors of two Gods.
219 *Germogines*, who held the Eternity of the Matter.
220 *Montanus* the Paraclete, and his Cataphrygians.
224 *Originists*, who saved the Devils.
237 *Helcheseits*, dissemblers of their faith.
240 *Donatists*, who held Rebaptisation.
254 *Novatians*, who denied pardon to the lapsed.
261 *Sabellians*, disciples of *Noetus*, who denied the Trinity.
269 *Samosatenus*, who denied *Christs* divinity
278 *Manes*, father of the *Manichees*, who held two principles.
336 *Arians*, who denied Christs Divinity.
352 *Photinus*, who also denied *Christs* divinity
358 *Macedonius*, who denied the Divinity of the Holy Ghost.
361 *Aetius* and *Eunomius* his Scholar, who held the Father God only; denied Episcopacy, prayers, fasting, and good works.
375 *Apollinarius*, who denied Christs Soule.
395 *Vadius*, father of the *Anthropomorphites.*
398 *Helvidius*, who held that *Mary* had other children.
408 *Priscilianus*, who held the soules and God all one substance.
417 *Jovinianus* held all sins equal, and despised Virginity.
425 *Vigilantius*, an enemy to Saints and Reliques.
432 *Pelagius* denied original sin, and slighted Gods grace.
451 *Nestorius* held two persons in Christ.
467 *Eutyches* held but one nature in Christ.
475 *Pacificants*, who would reconcile the *Catholiques* and *Eutychians.*
542 *Julius Halicarnassæus* made Christs Body impassible.
566 *Agnoits*, schollars to *Temistius*, held Christ ignorant of the last day.
607 *Armenians* inlarged the *Eutychian* heresy.
630 *Monothelites* held but one wil and operation in Christ.
821 *Michael Balbus* Emperour, denied the Resurrection, &c.
1049 The *Greeks* denied the Procession of the Holy Ghost.
1058 *Berengarius* was condemned of Heresie, for denying Christs Body in the *Euchar.*
1087 *Bogomiles* held the world was made by Devils.
1119 *Petrus de Bruis* and *Henry* denied Baptism to Infants.
1144 *Petrus Abailardus* made the Divine persons unequal.
1153 *Cathari* or *patareni* denied the Sacram.
1170 *Waldenses* were condemned for their doctrines.
1241 *Albigenses* also were condemned.
1276 *Fratricelli* held themselves the onely true Church.
1299 *Begardi* and *Beghinæ* denied prayers, Fasting, &c.
1309 *Lollardus* taught that *Lucifer* was unjustly condemned.
1352 The *Whippers* who denied Sacraments and good works, holding the Baptism of blood the onely Baptism.

After these times sprung up some other Hereticks, as *Servetus*, *David George*, the *Libertines*, and some others, who were quickly suppressed.

An Alphabeticall Table, containing the Persons, Places, and Principall Matters in the Second Part of the History of the World.

A

A Bassa *Bassai the Revolted* Turk. 483.
Abbatiscella *its History.* 367.
Abbot of S. Gall *defeated.* 362. *raiseth a Civil War.* 365.
Abbots of S. Gall, *who* 369.
Abdise, *Patriarch of the East.* 432.
Aberdene, *built.* 142.
Aberdene *Divines, their Queries to the Covenanting Ministers.* 642, &c.
Abismarus *Emperor.* 114. 117.
Acephali, *who* 95.
Achæans *subdued by the* Romans, 5. *their insolencie.* 4.
Achmet *the* Turk, *and his Actions,* 480. *makes Peace with* Cæsar. ib.
Acho, *King of* Norway 243.
Adalgisus, *Prince of* Salernum, 135.
Adolphus, *Emperor.* 254.
Ænobarb *sends the* Turks *two Barks, which are taken by* Garcias. 395.
Ætius *the Generall.* 93, &c.
Afric *lost.* 117.
Agrippa, *his Actions and death.* 41.
Agrippina. 42, &c.
Aistalphus, *King of* Lombardie. 121.
Aix *turns out their Jesuits.* 415.
Aladolus, *King of* Armenia *beheaded.* 473.
Alani, *who* 40. 90. 246.
Alanson, *the* French *Kings brother.* 436.
Alaricus. 88, 90, 91. *Sacks* Rome. 92.
Duke of Albany, *Regent of* Scotland; *and his Actions.* 57?, &c.
Alberts *Posteritie, Marquisses of* Austria. 141.
Albert *of* Austria, *Emperor.* 254, &c. *his Lady.* 255.
Albert *Emperor, his Title to* Bohemia, *and short life,* 406.
Albert *Arch Duke of* Austria. 438.
Albinus *defeated by* Severus. 62.
Alboinus, *King of* Lombardy 104.
Alexander, *the supposed son of* Antiochus. 3
Alexander, Ptolomies *son in Law,* 16.
Alexander Zebina, *King of* Syria. 7. *his sacriledge.* ib. *is slain.* ib.
Alexander Janneus *succeeds* Aristobulus *in* Judæa, 10. *he murthers his brother: his cruelties, and death.* 10, &c.
Alexander Cleopatras *son; and his Actions.* 11.
Alexandra *Reignes in* Palestin. 17.
Alexander Aristobulus *his son escapes out of prison,* 21. *is defeated by* Gabinius, 23. *is beheaded,* 29.
Alexander Severus, *a good Emperor,* 65, &c. *his end.* 66.
Alexander, *brother of* Leo *the Emperor.* 140.
Alexander, *King of* Scotland, 233, &c. *his death.* 44.
Alexander *King of* Scotland *his Actions.* 174.
Pope Alexander's *Actions against* Barbarossa, *and his gift to* Venice, 178. *his Synod.* ibid.
Alexander, *Lord of the Isles his Rebellion and submission.* 537.
Alexander, *King* James *the third's brother, escapes out of prison,* 565. *made Regent.* 566.
Alexius, Greek *Emperor, and his losses.* 164.
Strangled. 184.
Alexius Angelus, *Greek Emperor.* 186. 188.
Alphonsus *King of* Asturia. 125.
Alphonsus *King of* Arragon. 235.
Alphonsus *the* 11 *of* Spain. 276.
Alphonsus *leaves* Naples *to his bastard son.* 491.
Amadeus *Earl of* Savoy, *and his Actions.* 283.
Amadeus *the* 5 *and* 6. 284. &c. *his Exploits.* 285.
Amedius *the* 7th 286.
Amadeus *his Commendation of the*

privat Life, 347. *becomes a Monk.* 348.

Amadeus *made Pope, and the Ceremonies of his Inauguration*, 350. *he reſignes it*, 352. *hath divers Honors and Priviledges given him by the Synod of* Lauſanna. 352.

Amadeus 3d *Duke of* Savoy *his Charity.* 354.

Amadeus *the* 8 *of* Savoy, *and his Actions*, 345,&c. *made Duke.* 346.

Amalaſunta, *the* Gothiſh *Queen.* 101.

Ambaſſadors from France *and* Spain *to the Electors*, 420. *and their Meſſage.* ibid.

Ambaſſadors queſtioned, and Merchants impriſoned at Conſtantinople 485

Ambroſe *Biſhop.* 86.89

America *ſubdued by the* Spaniard. 431

Americus Veſpuſius *his Diſcovery.* 503

Amurath *the* Turk, *Invades* Hungary, *and is defeated by* Huniades. 406,&c.

Amurath *the ſecond and his Actions.* 463,&c.

Amurath *the third and his Actions.* 479

Amurath, Oſmans *brother* Sultan. 482

Amurath *his life and death.* 263

Anaſtaſius *Emperor, his good and bad Qualities.* 98,&c. *his end.* 100.

Araſtaſius *ſecond*, Emperor. 117

Anaſtatius *the Patriarch.* 120

Ancre *the* French *Favorit, and his end.* 511

Andrew, *King of* Hungary. 224

Cardinall of Saint Andrews *Viceroy, complies with the Queen Mother*, 577. *his Pride.* 579. *murthered.* ib. *his Caſtle taken and demoliſhed.* 580

Andronicus Greek *Emperor, his Actions and miſerable end* 188

Andronicus *the elder, Emperor.* 247 &c. *unhappie in his children.* 249

Andronicus *the younger.* 249. *vexeth his Grandfather.* ib. *his life and death.* 250

Andronicus *the blinde Emperor.* 261

Angeli, *their Dominion ceaſe* .248

Anjou, *Protector of* France, 296. *conteſts with* Burgundy, ib. *tries all means to raiſe money.* 297. *his Coronation and death.* ib.

Queen Ann *beheaded, and Queen* Jane *dieth*, 458. Ann *of* Cleve, *and* Catherin Howard. 559

Antiochus Epiphanes *his wickedneſs and Tyranny* p. 1. *his death*, 2

Antiochus Soter, *his kindneſs to* Hyrcanus. 6. *he beats the Parthians.* ib. *at laſt is ſlain by them.* ibid.

Antiochus Lyzicenus. 11.

Antiochus Gryphus. ibid.

Antiochus Euſebes. 11,&c.

Antiochia *overthrown by an Earthquake.* 101. *ſhaken again.* 108.

Antipater *his Actions.* 20. *made Governor.* 29

Antipopes. 258. 277. *cauſe great troubles.* 334. 352

Antonius *hates* Octavius, *and is hated of the people; he flies into* France. 29. *is invited into* Italy. 30. *loſeth two Legions, and is indangered by the* Parthians. 31. *he crucifies and beheads* Antigonus. 32. *is defeated by* Octavius, *and kills himſelf.* 33. Antonie's *widow of* Athens. 262

Antonius, *why called* Pius. 55. *his Excellency and Government, and Philoſophy.* 56. *his excellent Government and Victories.* 57

Antony *of* Portugall. 435

Don Antono *of* Portugall *aſſiſted by the French.* 606. *by the* Engliſh. ibid.

Apicius *hanged himſelf.* 37

Appius Claudius *his Victory and Triumph.* 8

Aquila Ponticus. 55. Aquileia. 67

Arbogaſtus. 89

Arcadius *Emperor.* 90,&c.

Archelaus *accuſed and baniſhed.* 35

Ariſtobulus *wears a Diadem: his murthers and bloudie end.* 10. Ariſtobulus, Alexanders *ſon.* 17. *ſtrives with his brother, is defeated and carried to* Rome. 20. *eſcapes.* 22. *is poyſoned.* 29

Ariſtonicus *ſeiſeth on the* Roman *Towns.* 9. *is ſent to* Rome *with the wealth of* Attalus. ib. *and there is ſtrangled.* ibid.

Arius, *and* Arians. 80,&c.

Armes of England *uſed by Queen* Mary *of* Scotland. 597

Armignac

Armignac *taken priſoner.* 301
Arminius *in* Holland *occaſioneth much Debate.* 443. *ſuppreſſed at* Utricht. 447
Arnulphus *Emperor.* 139
Arnulphus *Duke of* Bavaria. 142
Arragonians *obtain* Sicily *and* Naples. 235
Kingdom of Arragon *in debate.* 303
Arragonian *Fleet defeated by the* Genuois. 489
Arras *Rebelleth.* 499
Arteman *the* Gantois *Captain.* 300
Artenel, *Captain of the* Gantois. 298,&c.
Articles between King Charls *of* France, *and King* Henry 5 *of* England. 522
Articles between the Engliſh *and* Scots. 551
Articles between Edw. 4. *and the Fr. K. at which* Burgundy *ſtorms.* 558
King Edward 4. *kiſſeth an old widow for* 20*l*. 558. *is entertained in* France. ibid.
Aſſembly of the 3 *Eſtates of* France *at* Blois, *for ſetling of Peace.* 607
Athanaſius. 81.83.85.
Athens *deſtroyed by the* Turk. 262
Walter *Earl of* Athol *his Puniſhment.* 539
Attalus. 92.
Attila, *K. of the* Hunns. 94, 95. 398
Atulphus. 92
Aubigney *advanced by King* James, *and is accuſed falſly.* 628
Avenion, *the Popes Seat.* 255
bought by the Pope. 260
Auguſtin. 93
Aurelian *Emperor.* 72. *his end.* 73
Aurelius Probus *Emperor.* ib. *his end.* 74
Auria, *Admirall of* Genua. 261. 271
Auriflamme *the holy Standard.* 299
Auſtrians *quarrel with the* Switzers. 357,&c.
Auſtrians *make peace with the* Tigurins. 361. *make Warr upon the Cantons.* 362. *make Peace again.* ib. *which is ſhortly after broken.* ibid.

Babylon

B

BAbylon, *the Seat of the* Sarazens. 112
Bacchides *his Actions.* 2
Bada *its Hiſtory.* 372
Bajazet *the* Turk. 261. *his Actions and death.* 264. *his ſons.* 265
Bajazet *the* Turk *his Actions.* 469, &c.
Bajazets *Rebellion againſt* Solyman. 477. *ſtrangled with his four ſons.* ibid.
Baldwin *King of* Jeruſalem. 165
Baldwin de Burgo. 166
Baldwin *Earl of* Flanders, *Emperor of* Byzantium. 186
Baldwin *Earl of* Flanders. 227, &c.
Baldwin *the ſecond.* 228
Baliol *King of* Scots. 242. *doeth homage to King* Edward. 244. *flyes out againſt him.* ib. *he ſubmits, and is impriſoned.* 245
Edward Baliol *King of* Scots. 309
Baliol *reſignes his Right to the* Scotch *Crown.* 322
Baliol *Invades* Scotland. 324
Bannockbarn *Battell.* 320
Baras *the* Perſian. 106. Bardas Cæſar. 134. Barnabos *afflicts* Genua. 272, &c.
Barnabos *quarrels with the* Savoyen 286
Baſil *the Emperor*, *and* Baſil *the Eunuch.* 149. Baſils *Actions* 150. *his crueltie upon the Bulgarians*, ibid. *his Victories and death.* 150,&c.
Baſil *its Hiſtory.* 365
Baſilius, *of an horſe-courſer, made Emperor.* 135. *his Actions.* 136. *his death.* ibid.
George Baſta *forceth Religion.* 404
Baſta *and* Batorius *ſtrive for* Tranſilvania. 439
Stephen Bathors *Valour.* (399)
Steven Bator, *King of* Poland. 436
Bator *the* Tranſilvanian. 438. Andrew Bator. 439
Battel of Agencourt. 519. *of* Vernoyle. 524
Gabriel Bator *Halts between* Cæſar *and the* Turk. 404
Thomas Becket *his life and death.* 188,&c.

Belgæ, *their Army againſt* Cæſar. 22.
Beliſarius. 101,&c. *his exploits.* 102,&c.
Bencozba. 54
Berengarius *King of* Italy. 139. *ſaluted Emperor.* 140.
Berengarius *murthered.* 143.
Berengarius *the younger.* 144
Berengarius *taken, and ſet free by the* Emperor. 145. *taken again and impriſoned.* ibid.
Berenice, *Queen of* Ægypt. 21
Bern *ſides with the* Switzers. 361.
Bernevild *and his Complices in* Holland. 449
Bienna *makes a League with* Bern, *and other Cantons.* 371
Blanca, *mother of Saint* Lewis. 229
Blanca Maria *Dutcheſs of* Savoy. 355, &c.
Bocchus *King of* Mauritania. 12
Bohemia *troubled with their Kings,* 255. *Enriched and divided by* Charls the fourth 269
Bohemia *troubled with Wars by the* Huſſits. 334
Bohemians *have Liberty of Religion.* 442
Bohemia *Rebels againſt* Ceſar, 447, &c.
Boiebracius *King of* Bohemia, *a* Huſſit. 409, &c.
Borgias *poyſoned, and recovers,* 504
Boruſſians *fall off from the* Marian *knights,* 414. *Joyn with* Poland, ibid.
Bothwels *ill offices between* Murry *and the* Hamiltons. 617
Bothwell *reſtored to the diſcontent of* Murry. 618
Bothwell *accuſed of murthering the King; and is made D. of* Orkney. 620
Marryed, ibid
Bothwell *proclaimed Traytor,* 631
Surpriſeth Leith ibid.
Botoniates *Greek Emperor.* 164
Bourdeaux *fals off, and once to the Engliſh.* 490
Boyds, *their greatneſſe and fall in* Scotland. 563,&c.
Brigerus *the Tyrant of* Swethland. 266
Britan *invaded by* Ceſar, 22. *Baſe* Britany *in controverſie.* 290
Duke of Britany *reconciled to the King,* 302. *Duke of* Orleans *killed by* Burgundy. 304
Duke of Britany *angry for the peace between* Lewis *and his Subjects.* 493
Britany *in* France *troubled by the Dukes favorite,* 501. *Sues for peace,* 502
Bruce *King of* Scotland, 244. *He conſults with* Cumin, *who betrays him.* 246. *Eſcapes ſtrangely into* Scotland, *and kils* Cumin. ibid.
King Bruce *his conteſtation with K.* Edward. 305
Bruce *his good ſucceſſe.* 306
Robert Bruce *King of* Scotland *his ſucceſſe.* 320
Bruce *and his Nobility differ.* 322
Bruce *king of* Scots *his advice, will and death.* 323
Bruciaus *and* Baliolaus *have divers encounters* 324, &c.
Bruges *rebelleth.* 342
Bruges *begs pardon of the Duke,* 488
Brunchilde *her puniſhment.* 111
Brunſwig *like to be betrayed.* 440
Brunſwicks *out-rages,* 452. *He is defeated by* Tilly, ibid. *Loſt his arme.* 453
Brunſwick *beat again by Tilly,* ibid. *With other paſſages that year.* ib.&c.
Brutus *his death.* 30
Duke of Buckingham *animated by D^r.* Morton, *againſt King* Richard. 554 *his bad ſucceſs; is betrayed and beheaded.* ib.
Bucquoi, Brunſwick, Spinola, Tilly, *and other Commanders oppreſs* Germany. 451
Bulgarius. 114. 116. 118. 120. 127. *Converted twice.* 132. *Their Battell with* Leo. 143. *Pillage* Hadrianople. 141
Burdilex, *Governor of* Piemont *his Petition to the French King, and his Counſell about the delivery of the* Savoyen *Towns.* 397. *Anſwer thereto.* 397.&c.
Burgundie *of old a Kingdom, now a Dutchie, and Countie.* 156.
Burgundians *Converted to Chriſt.* 92. Burgundy *annexed to* France. 276
Burgundians 3 *times defeated by the* Switzers. 363
Duke of Burgundy *abſolved by the French King, and then takes* Paris. 486

Is murthered by the Dolphin. 487. *his ſon makes a League with* England. ib.
Burgundy *and* Orleans *reconciled.* 489
Burning Glaſſes. 99
Byzantium *the Walls overthrown.* 61. *Rebuilt, and new named.* 81. *Fired.* 96. *Its Library burnt.* 97. *a great Slaughter there.* 101. *Beſieged by Fleets.* 112. 118. *Taken by the* Latins. 186. *Loſt by* Baldwin *the* 2d. 228. *taken by* Palæologus. 246. *Beſieged and taken by* Mahumet 2d. 466. *its miſerable Condition.* ibid.

C

CAbades *the* Perſian *King.* 100
Jack Cade's *Rebellion.* 530
Cæſars *League with* Pompey. 21. *he promotes the* Agrarian *Laws.* 21. *his Succeſs againſt* Auletes, *the* Helvetians, *and* Arioviſtus. 21, &c. *the* Belgæ, Gauls, *and* Britans. 22, &c. *he envies* Pompey. 24. *ſubdues the* Auverni, Hedui, *and others.* ib. *refuſeth to part with his Army, or lay down his Commiſſion.* 25. *he paſſeth* Rubicon. ibid. *enters* Rome, *and ſeiſeth on the Treaſurie.* 26. *attempts to Surpriſe* Pompey, *and takes in divers Towns.* ibid. *his ſayings of* Pompey. ibid. *his* Pharaſian *Army and Fight.* ib. &c. *his courage in the Storm.* ibid. *his skil in Swimming.* 27. *he overcomes* Ptolomie's *Army.* ibid. *and the* African *under* Juba, Scipio, *and* Cato, ibid. *his 4 Triumphs, Feaſt, Magnificence and Clemency.* 28. *his fifth Triumph, Titles, Pride, Death, and Commendations.* ibid. 416, &c
Cæſar *Borgias cruelty.*
Caganus *King of the* Avares. 105, &c. *Enters* Lombardy. 109
Calender *Reformed.* 437
Caligula, *his good and bad qualities, his Tyranies and death.* 40, &c.
Callis *Beſieged by* Burgundy. 527
Callis *left by the* Engliſh. 596. *Demanded by* Queen Elizabeth. 597. 599
Calojohannes *Emperor, his Reigne* 172
Calypha. 119
Campobaſſus *perfidious.* 410
Campſon Gaurius, *King of* Ægypt 473. *troad to death.* 474
Caire *beſieged and taken.* 530
Cantacuzenus *his life.* 261
Canton *Towns deſcribed.* 373. Cantons *beyond the* Alpes. 374
Car, *Earl of* Sommerſet *his Story.* 636, &c.
Caracalla, *his wicked Reigne and end.* 63
Carola, *Queen of* Cyprus. 354
Carolus Martellus. 117, &c.
Carolomannus. 137
Carrarius *his wickedneſs and end.* 332
Carthaginian *War the* 3d. *how occaſioned.* 3. *Debated in the Senat, whether* Carthage *ſhould be overthrown.* 4. *The* Carthaginian *ſhips burnt by the* Romans, *and their City taken and burned.* 4. *Their wrongs to* Maſaniſſa. ibid.
Carthage *taken by* Genſericus, *then by* Beliſarius. 1 2
Carus *and* Carinus *his ſon emperors.* 74
Caſſius *his death,* 30. *His Rebellion.* 57
Catalani, *who?* 247
Cathibaius *Sultan of* Egypt. 469
Catalins *conſpiracy.* 20
Cato *laid in Chains,* 22. *Hee kils himſelf.* 27
Cazanus *the Tartar beats the Sultan of* Ægypt, 248. *His error.* 249
Prince Charls *ſent into* Spain *with* Buckingham, 639. *Returns,* ibid. *The match broken.* 640
Charls *K. of great Britain, his actions and end.* 641, &c.
K. Charls *grants the Scots Presbyterians their demands.* 644, &c.
Charls *the* Bellicous. 343
Charls *of* Burgundy *his loſſes.* 355
Charolois *of* Burgundy *quarrels with* Lewis *the eleventh,* 492. &c. *His hatred to him.* 495
Charls *of* Burgundies *ambition,* 496 *Full of troubles,* ibid. *His greatneſſe.* 498
Charls *of* Burgundy *beateth, and is beaten by the* Switzers. 498. *Beaten again, and is killed,* ibid. *His daughter* Mary *ſends to K.* Lewis. 499
Charls *the Great,* 122, 125, &c. *His death and commendations,* 128. *And famous works.* ibid, &c.
Charls *of Anjou.* 234

Charles

Charls *the balde.* 136,&c.
Charls de Blois. 290,&c.
Charls *of* Dyrrachium, 260. *Murthered.* ib.
Charls *the fair of* France. 288
Charls *the Great's iſſue fails.* 141
Charls *the Groſs.* 137,&c.
Charls *of* Moravia *Crowned Emperor at* Bonna. 259
Charls *King of* Navarr. 292
Charls *the ſimple.* 143
Charls *the fourth* Emperor, 267. *his Actions and death.* 268,&c.
Charls *the fifth of* France. 293, &c.
Charls *the fifth ends the* Venetian *Warr.* 419. *The manner of his* Election. 420,&c. *Reaſons for the ſame.* 421, &c. *Is Elected.* 423. *And Crowned,* 424
Charls *the ſixth of* France. 296. 486
Charls *the eighth of* France, *and his Actions.* 415
Charls *the fifth Emperor his Pedegree.* 344
Charls *the fifth his Actions.* 425, &c. *his end.* 431
Charls 7 *of* France, *his Meſſage to Duke* Lewis *of* Savoy. 353. *He makes War againſt* Savoy. 355
Charls 7 *his Actions.* 487,&c.
Charls 7 *his death.* 491
Charls 8 *of* France, *his Reigne and Actions.* 500,&c. *His death.* 503
Charls 9 *of* France. 507
Charls *King of* Naples *murthered.* 397
Charls 3d *of* Savoy *loſeth moſt of his Countrey.* 393. *is accuſed by King* Francis. 394
Duke Charls *of* Savoy *excuſed.* 394
Dieth. 396
Charls *the fifth Duke of* Savoy. 356
Charls Canutus *King of* Sweden. 336
Charls, Sigiſmunds *Uncle, a Proteſtant made King of* Sweden. 378. *His Actions.* 379
Charls *taken by a Stratagem.* 488
Childebertus. 104
Childericus. 97. 114
Chilpericus *King of* France. 121
Chriſt is born. 34. *Diſputes being* 12 *years old.* 36. *his Actions, Preaching and Miracles.* 38,&c. *His Death, Reſurrection, Aſcenſion, and ſending of the Holy Ghoſt.* 39
Chriſtians perſecuted. 45. 50. 53. *Obtain Victory by Prayer.* 57. *Live quietly under* Commodus. 59. *Falſly accuſed.* 63. *Quiet under* Caracalla. 64. *Under* Alexander Severus. 65,&c. *Perſecuted under* Maximinus. 68. *Under* Decius. 69. *Under* Valerian. ib. *quiet under* Gallienus. 70. *Perſecuted under* Claudius. 72. *Under* Aurelian. 73. *Under* Diocleſian. 75. & Maximianus. 76. & Galerius Maximinus. ibid. Licinius. 79
Chriſtians, their good ſucceſs againſt the Sarazens. 165. *Win and loſe* Damiata. 224. *Defeated at* Ptolemais 225. *They loſe it.* 236. *Their ſucceſs againſt the* Mores *and* Tunis. 237. *Perfidious to the* Turks. 248. *Slain by the Ægyptians.* ib. *Murthered by the* Turks *in* Hungary. 400. *Defeated by* Amurath. 408. *Their loſs in* Africa *under* Sebaſtian. 435. *They loſe* Byzantium, *and are invited thither again.* 466,&c.
Chriſtianus *the third, King of* Denmark. 340
Chriſtian *fourth of* Denmark. 440
Chriſtianus *King of* Sweden. 338,&c.
Chriſtiern *a cruel Tyrant.* 337. Chriſtiern *the* 2d. 339
Chryſoſtom. 90,&c.
Cicero, *ſee* Tully.
Cimbrians, *their Victories over the* Romans. 12. *Their Actions about the* Alpes *in* Spain, *and in* France. 13. *Their Women.* ib.
Cinna *his Actions.* 15
Clauda, Montfort's *Wife.* 290,&c
Claudius Cæſar, *his Reigne, good and bad qualities.* 41. *His Publick Works.* 42. *He baniſheth the Jews, and is poyſoned.* 43. Flavius Claudius *Emperor.* 71. Claudius Tacitus *Emperor.* 73
Clans, Turbulent Families in Scotland. 537,&c.
Cleander, Commodus *his Favorit.* 58
Cleopatra, Phyſcons *Queen, and her Actions.* 11. Cleopatra *made Queen by* Cæſar. 27. *Defeated by* Octavius. 33. *Poyſoneth her ſelf.* 33
Clergy Revenues aimed at. 518

Clodius

Clodius *the* Tribun. 21. *killed by* Milo. 24
Clodoveus *baptized by* Remigius. 98. *his actions.* 99
Clodovejus *his ſacriledge.* 113
Chriſtopher Columbus *his Diſcovery.* 502
Columni *and* Urſini. 256
Columnii, *their raging againſt the Clergy in* Rome. 425
Iſaacus Comnenus, Greek *Emperor, is affrighted.* 163
Comodus *Emperor, his bad qualities.* 58. *Eſcapes divers dangers.* ib. *his vanities.* 59. *his end.* ib.
Computation from the years of Chriſt, when begun. 138
Conclave ordained. 246. *revoked and renewed.* ib.
Conference at Hampton-*Court.* 634. ib.
Conradin *Sultan of* Damaſcus. 224.
Conradinus, *ſon of* Conradus. 234
Conradus, *Emperor.* 142
Conradus Salicus *Emperor, his Actions.* 155, &c.
Conradus *his expedition into* Syria. 183
Conradus, *Fredericks ſon.* 226. 234.
Conſtable of France, *his pride.* 496, *would have the King ſwear.* 497
Conſtable of France *impriſoned by the Duke of* Britany. ib.
Conſtable of France *his death plotted by the King and Duke.* 497. *delivered and beheaded.* 498
Conſtantin. 77. *he defeats* Maxentius. 78. *and* Licinius. 79. *is confirmed by the ſight of the Croſs, and his victories thereby.* ibid. *his excellent Government and Piety.* 80. *no friend to* Rome. 81. *his wavering.* ib. *his goodneſs and death* 82. *his ſons,* Conſtantin, Conſtans, *and* Conſtantius. ib.
Conſtantin *fifth. Emperor.* 120. *his actions.* ib. *his death.* 121
Conſtantin, Irenes *ſon.* 123
Conſtantin, Zoe's *ſon.* 141
Conſtantin, Baſils *brother, his reigne.* 151
Conſtantin Monomachus *Emperor.* 158
Conſtantin *the laſt.* 466
Conſtantinople *much diſtempered.* 482. 484.
Conſtantinus Pogonatus. 113
Conſtantius *his actions and end.* 83
Conſtantius *a great Commander.* 92
Conſtans *Emperor.* 112. *his actions and end.* ib.
Corinth *deſtroyed and burned by the* Romans. 5. *Corinthian braſs.* 5.
Corniſh men defeated. 548
Coſroes. 100. 102, &c. *his death.* 105. *a Chriſtian.* 106. Coſroes *the ſecond.* 106. *his cruelty.* ib. *will make no peace with* Heraclius. 109. *urgeth Neſtorianiſme.* 110
Coſſacks *and* Croats *cruelty.* 453
Coſſacks *moleſt the* Muſcovit *and* Turk. 480. *beat the* Tartars. 482.
Covenanters, their Forces and demands from the King. 641. *their inſolencies.* 645
Councel of Nice. 80. *of* Tyre. 81. *of* Sardica. 83. *of* Millan. 84. *of* Arimi*num, of* Seleucia. ib. *of* Alexandria. 86 *of* Antioch. ib. *of* Conſtantinople. 88. *of* Epheſus. 91. *of* Chalcedon. 95. *of* Conſtantinople. 103. *of* Toledo. 108. *of* Conſtantinople. 114. *of* Trullus. 116. *of* Conſtantinople. 120. *of* Nice. 123. *of* Frankford. 124. *of* Aix. 130. *of* Conſtantinople. 136. *of* Ravenna. 141. *of* Lateran. 223. *of* Lions. 226. 275. *of* Conſtance. 334. *of* Baſil. ibid. 350. *of* Papia. 335. *of* Florens. 336. 350. *of* Piſæ. 419. *of* Trent. 429. 432 &c. *of* Lateran. 172. 192.
Conuela *of* Sutrinum, *depoſeth* 3 *Popes.* 158
Craford *fals off from* Douglaſs. 544.
Craſſus *ſent againſt* Ariſtonicus, *is defeated and killed.* 9. Craſſus *robs the Temple, is defeated, and he is killed by the* Parthians. 23
Cremona *burnt.* 48
Creſcentius *rebels, and is hanged at* Rome. 152
Cromwel, *the Clergies great enemie.* 5<9. *beheaded.* ib.
Crannus *kils* Niciphorus *the Emperor.* 427. *and makes a Cup of his Skull* 129. *ſubdued.* ib.
Cumin, *Viceroy of* Scotland. 325.
Cyprus *ſubject to divers changes.* 166. &c.
Cyprus *after divers changes becomes the* Venetians *Iſland.* 414
Cyril *of* Alexandria. 94

Dalmatia

D

DAlmatia *ſubdued by the* Romans. 3
Damiata *taken.* 224. *and retaken* ib. 229
Danes, *and their Wars.* 128. *converted to the Faith.* 130
Danes *Maſſacred; they ſubdue* England, *and are defeated in* Scotland. 153. *poyſoned.* 156. *troubled by their Kings.* 230. 251
Danes *and* Hamburgers *quarrel.* 463
Daniel *D. of* Ruſſia *cheats the Pope.* 246
Daniſh Ambaſſador to Queen Elizabeth 609
Darby *the Queens husband murthered* 620
Darkneſs. 120. 124
David *King of Scots conveyed into France.* 324
King David *returns from France and invades England.* 326. *is beaten.* ib. *taken priſoner, Ranſomed & died.* ib.
David *Prince of Scotland famiſhed.* 535
Decius *his Reigne and end.* 69
Demetrius *the Son of* Seleucus, *his actions.* 2. *why called* Soter. 3. *he is ſlain.* ib. *his ſon* Demetrius *overcome by Jonathas.* 3. Demetrius *Nicanor.* 5. *he is overthrown.* ib. *overcomes the Perſians, and is taken.* 6. *he eſcapes and is retaken by* Phraates. 6. *regains* Syria, *and loſeth it.* 7. *is overcome and ſlain.* ib. Demetrius Euſerus, *K. of* Damaſcus, *his Actions.* 11. &c.
Denholme *ſtoutly reſiſteth the Enemy.* 460
Denmark. 265
Denmark *full of troubles.* 171
Denmark's *Hiſtory.* 338, &c.
Denmark's *Army defeated by* Tilly. 457. *his Proceedings in* Germany. 458, &c. *flyeth.* 460
K. of Denmark *entertained by K.* James
Deſiderius *laſt King of the Lombards.* 122
Didius Julianus *Emperor.* 60. *his end.* 61
Diocleſian *Emperor.* 74. 78.
Diodatus *called* Tryphon, *murthers* Jonathas. 5
Dioſcorus *of* Alexandria. 94. 97
Dithmars *ſubdued by the Duke of* Holſt. 432
Dolphinat *ſold.* 276. *The Dolphus quarrels with the Savoyen.* 282
Dolphinat *annexed to* France. 292. *The Dolphins care in his fathers abſence.* 293
The Dolphin raiſeth the Counſel of Baſil. 336
Dolphin flyes from France to Burgundy. 491. *his Zeal againſt the Turk.* ib.
Dolphin's and King Henrie's *Meſſages.* 518
Dolphin murthers Burgundy, *and is complained againſt.* 522
Domitian, *his good and bad qualities.* 50. *his ridiculous actions and end.* ib, &c. *his murtherers murthered* 52
Donald *and* Duncan, *Kings of Scotland.* 174
Donald *of the Iſles ſubmits to the King* 545. *his inſolencie and ſacriledge* 562, &c.
Dort *maintains her Priviledges.* 253
Dort *Synod againſt the Arminians* 449
Douglaſs *his expedition into Ireland* 328
Douglaſs *and* Percie *fight a Duel.* 329. *the effects thereof.* ib
Douglaſs *his greatneſs and ambition.* 540. *betrayed and beheaded.* 541
Douglaſs *perſecutes the Chancellor and Regent.* 542. *is perſecuted and ſlain.* 543
Douglaſſes *inſolencies againſt the K.* 544. *they are perſecuted.* ib. *and proſcribed.* 545
Douglaſſes, Hamiltons *and* Humes *d ſturb* Scotland. 571, &c.
Douglaſſes *proſcribed, and* Tantallon *Caſtle ſurrendred.* 574
Douglaſs *Earl of* Morton, *Regent.* 627 *is removed.* ibid.
Drakes *Navigation.* 602
Conſtantin Ducas, Greek *Emperor overcomes his enemie by prayers.* 163
Dunbar *occaſions a new War between the two Kingdoms.* 330
Duncan *Earl of* Mar, *Protector of* Scotland. 324

E

E*Arls of* Holland. 251. &c, 278. &c. *Earl of* Reneſſius 277. *Earls of* Savoy. 279, &c.

Earl

Earl of Orkney *beheaded, and his Caſtles taken.* 637
Earthquakes. 94,&c. 101, 103, 114, 120,254,462,508.
Edenburgh *taken by the Engliſh*, 578
Edenburgh *Caſtle battered and ſurrendred.* 646
Edward the Confeſſor *Crowned:* 159
Prince Edwards *Actions.* 212,&c.
Edward *Prince of* England, *marries with* Elenor *the Spaniards ſiſter.* 240
His ſervice in the Holy Land. 241
His Return, and Actions at home, being King. 242
Quarrels with his Clergie, and doeth homage in France. 242. *His Expedition into* Scotland. ibid. *Into* Flanders. 243. *His dealings with* Bruce *and* Baliol. 244. *He runs through* Scotland, *and brings away their Monuments.* 245
Edward *Earl of* Savoy. 284
Edward *of* England *denyed the Regency of* France. 288. *Challengeth the* French *to fight.* 289. *Makes a truce with* France. 290
Prince Edwards *Victory at* Poictiers. 292
Edward *the firſt*'s *Actions.* 304
Edward *the* 2d *of* England, *his Life & death.* 305,&c. *He and his Queen at variance.* 307
Edward *the* 2d *reſignes his Crown, and is murthered.* 308
Edward *the* 3d *doth homage in* France: *His cruelty to* Seaton. 309. *Helps* Baliol. ibid.
Edward *the* 3d *his actions*, ib. &c. *His Death and Iſſue.* 314
Edward *King of* England *ſends a Monk to poiſon* Randulph. 323
K. Edwards *preparation againſt* Scotland. 326
Edward *the fourth King of* England, *and his Actions.* 546,&c.
Edward *the fourth furniſhed with ſhipping by the Duke of* Burgundy: *He is received into* York. 549. *Is received into* London. ibid. *Defeats* Warwick, *and takes king* Henry *priſoner.* ibid. *The* Queen *alſo and Prince.* 558. *Enters* France, *and makes peace with the* French *K.* ib.
King Edward *the fourth deluded by the* French *and Scots.* 551. *Dieth.* ib.
Edward *the fifth* ibid.
Edward *the ſixth his Reign,* 586, &c. *His charity and Zeal.* 590
Egypt *falls off from the Empire.* 117
Egyptians *take* Tripoli. 248. *Prevail.* 249
Egyptians *defeated by the Turks* 474
Electors *of* Germanie *meet about chooſing the* Emperor. 420
Elinor Qu. *of* England, 242
Lady Elizabeth *ſent to the Tower, to* Richmond, *to* Woodſtock. 592&c.
Lady Elizabeth *ſet at liberty by King* Philip. 595
Queen Elizabeth *her Raign.* 597, *&c. Helps the Proteſtants*, ibid. *Declared an Heretique.* 00. *Many Treaſons againſt her.* ibid. *Sends aide into* Scotland. ibid. *Navigations in her time.* 601,&c. *Shee protects the Netherlanders.* 603. *And why.* ibid.
Qu. Elizabeths *preparations againſt the* Spaniſh *Invaſion*, 604. *Shee thanks God for Victory.* 606
Qu. Elizabeth *intercedes for* Q. Mary, *but is denyed by the* Scots. 623. *Sends* Suſſex. 624
Qu. Elizabeth *ſollicited by the* Scots *to name them a Regent.* ibid.
Queen Elizabeth's *Treaty with* Queen Mary. 629. *Her ſorrow for her death.* 631
Qu. Elizabeth's *death.* 613
Biſhop of Ely *Protectour of* England *in the abſence of King* Richard: 189,&c.
Emanuel Philbert *Duke of* Savoy, *recovers what his Father had loſt.* 396
Charls Emanuel *D. of* Savoy *takes the towns of* Carmaniola *and* Saluſium. 398
Emanuel *of* Theſſalonica *with his ſeven ſons.* 262
Empire *torn by the Barbarians.* 86,93. *Tranſlated* 125
Made Tributaries. 127
Empire *at* Trapezuntium. 233
Emperors *Colleagues.* 257
Emperors *of* Byzantium. 261
Empire *proffered to K.* Edward *of* England. 267

The Emperour *ſides with England, againſt* France. 289. *and is taken off again.* ibid.
Emperor *complains to* Wolſey *againſt* France. 553
Empſon *and* Dudley *beheaded for oppreſſion.* 550
England *by whom called ſo.* 129. *hath Wars with* France. 230. *Troubled under King* John. 231. *Wars again with* France. 232. *Troubled with the Barons Wars.* 241. *The* Engliſh *trouble* Savoy. 285. *Have Warres with* France. 289. *They beat the* French *by Sea.* 290. *And by Land at* Creſcy. 291. *Their Warres in* Britany *and* Normandy. 290. *they take* Callice. 291. *Beat the* French *at* Poictiers. 292. *Spoil and plunder* France. 293. *Are beat by the* French *at Sea and at Land.* 294. *They complain againſt the* French, *and the* French *againſt them.* ib. & 295.
Englands *troubles under* Henry *the fourth.* 515. &c. Engliſh *beat the* French. 524
Englands *troubles under* Henry *the ſixth.* 529, &c. *Under* Edward *the fourth.* 547, &c.
Englands *troubles under* Henry *the* 7. 546, &c.
Engliſh *invade* Scotland *by Sea and Land.* 324, &c.
Engliſh *loſe all their Holds in* Scotland. 325, &c.
England *and* Scotland *waſt each other.* 327, &c.
Engliſh *plot diſcovered.* 328
Engliſh *ſucceſſe in* France *under* Edw. *the* 3d. 310, &c.
Engliſh *maſſacred in* Paris. 483
Engliſh *loſe* Guyen *and* Normandy. 490
Engliſh *and* French *quarrell under* Henry *the* 5th 518, &c.
The Engliſh *good ſucceſs in* France. 519, &c.
Their bad ſucceſſe. 523, 526, &c.
Engliſh *Regents of* France. 524, &c.
Their various ſucceſſe in France. 527, &c.
Engliſh *Lords ſollicite king* James *for aid.* 545.
Engliſh *aide the Britans againſt the French.* 546
Engliſh *invade* France *under* Henry *the* 8. 557
Engliſh *beaten by the* Scots. 679
Beat the Scots. 580
Beaten by the Scots. 581
Engliſh *Fleet ſpoiled upon the* Orchades. 583
The Engliſh *loſe all they had gotten in* Scotland. 589
Engliſh *Ambaſſadors their Conference with the French Councell about* Callice. 599
Engliſh *ſend a Fleet for* Cadiz, *which they take,* 608, *&c. For the Azores.* 609
Engliſh *Army againſt* Q. Maries *faction in* Scotland. 624
Epiphanius *Biſhop.* 91
Ericus K. *of* Denmark. 251
Ericus *King of* Swedeland. 336, &c.
Eſſex *ſent into* Ireland *to ſuppreſſe the Rebels.* 610
Returns diſcontented. 611
Eſſex *counſelled by the Lord Keeper to ſubmit to the* Queen, *and his Anſwer thereto.* 612
Eſſex *his Diſcontents and Rebellion.* ibid.
His apprehenſion and Death. 613
Eudoxia *brings* Peters *chains.* 93.
Eudoxa *mother to* Childericus. 102
Eutiches *the Heretique.* 94. Eutiche-ans *divided.* 97. *Their mouths wittily ſtopped.* 100
Euxin *Sea froſen.* 121
Exeeter *beſieged and relieved,* 586, &c.

F

FAramund. 93
Fauſta. 81
The Feaſt *of* All Saints *Inſtituted :* 132
Ferdinand *drives the* Mores *out of* Spain 234
Ferdinand *King of* Hungary *and* Bohemia. 400
Ferdinand *hath Wars with* Solyman. 401
Ferdinand *the Catholick King.* 413
Ferdinand *buyes his place from* Solyman. 431. *Dyeth.* 433
Ferdinand 2d *Emperor.* 448. *Rejected by the* Bohemians. ib.

Ferdinand *declares againſt* Frederick *King of* Bohemia. 449
Fetherſtone *whipped and hanged.* 595
Flavianus *Biſhop.* 94. *baniſhed.* 99
Flavius Conſtantius Chlorus, 75, &c.
Flemins *rebell againſt the French,* 238 *and beat them,* ibid. *And are beaten by them,* 239. *are beaten again,* 288 *their outrage.* 291
Florentii *Earles of Holland,* 251, &c. Florentius *the fifth claims the crown of* Scotland. 253. Florentines *make war againſt the* Piſans. 259
Florianus *Emperor.* 73
France *raiſeth a mighty Army againſt* England. 317
Francis *the French King complaines againſt D.* Charles *of Savoy,* 393 *His reaſons.* ib.
Francis *the French King blamed,* 395 *Complained againſt by the Emperour.* ibid.
Francis *King of* France *aimes at the Empire, but miſſeth it,* 420, 423. *Quarrels with* Charls *the fifth.* 428 *His Reign and Actions.* 505, &c.
Franks *and* Almains *overthrown.* 103
French *ſubdued in* Spain, 108. French *kings diſſoluteneſſe.* 113. France *its twelve Peers* 129. *The* French *Peers reject the Grecian affinity.* 228. *Have Wars with* England, 230, &c. *Take* Scicily, *and are deſtroyed in it,* 234, &c. *Maſſacred at* Bruges. 238. *Defeated in the battell at* Courtray. ib. *They beat the* Flemins, 239. *They fall upon* Flanders. 243. *Driven out of* Byzantium. 247. French *kings when Crowned.* 277. French *reconciled to* Flanders, 287. *They make warre upon* England. 289. *Beaten by the Engliſh.* 290, &c. *They beat the Engliſh.* 294. *Make a League with* Guſtavus *the King of Sweden.* 382 *The* French *ſucceſſe in* Savoy. 394 *The* French *Ambaſſadors ſhew reaſons, why the* French *king layeth claim to ſome parts of* Savoy. 397 French *quarrell with the* Pope, *and* Venetians. 418. *Driven out of Lombardy.* ibid. *In* France *Civill War between the Papiſts and Proteſtants.* 455. France *much troubled by the D. of* Burgundy. 486
French *over-run baſe* Britany. 501 *and* Naples, *but loſe it again; yet found a new Diſeaſe.* 502, &c. *beat by the* Switzers. 505. *Their divers actions.* 506
France *fights for Religion.* 507 *Peſtered with Civill War.* 508, &c. *Conſult about chooſing a new King.* ib. *More Civill Wars.* 513, &c. *Beaten by the Engliſh at* Agenconrt. 519
French *and* Engliſh *have divers conflicts.* 523. *Beaten by the* Engliſh. 524
French *hinder the Union between* England *and* Scotland. 560, 562
French *ſend a Fleet againſt the Iſle of* Wight. 561
French *labour with the* Scotiſh *Regent to reſigne his place to the* Q. Mother. 582
French *Kings Race.* 150
Frafers *cut off.* 579
Frederick Barbaroſſa *his Actions and end.* 176, &c. *his ſubmiſsion to the* Pope. 178
Frederick Barbaroſſa's *end.* 181
Frederick *of* Bohemia *quite defeated.* 450. *interceded for.* 453
Frederick *the firſt king of* Denmark. 340
Frederick *the ſecond Emperor.* 222, &c
His conteſtation with the Pope, 223 *His expedition into* Aſia. ibid. *Returnes, and is reconciled to the Pope.* 224, &c. *He conteſts again with the* Pope. 225 *Is curſed by him.* 226 *Builds* Victoria; *and is beat at* Parma. 226, &c. *Is poyſoned.* 227 *His parts, wives and children.* ibid.
Frederick, Alberts *ſon of* Thuringia. 255
Frederick *of Auſtria Emperor.* 257 *Taken priſoner.* ib.
Frederick *the third Emperour, and his Actions.* 409, &c.
Frederick *the Palſgrave dyeth.* 391
Frederick *Palatin ſent Ambaſſador into* Spain. 424
French *aſsiſt the Earle of* Flanders *againſt the* Flemins. 299. *prepare a Fleet againſt* England. 300

Plunder divers Engliſh Towns. 315
French King Phrantic. 302. *like to be burned in a maſk.* 303
French make divers Leagues with the Switzers. 376
French K. in a low condition. 488. *and* France *much diſtracted.* ib.
French make peace with England, *and pay a Penſion to* Henry *the ſeventh.* 547
French ſend aid to Scotland. 580. *with the Scots beſiege* Haddington. 581
French Ambaſſadors deſire croſſed by the Scots Parliament. 615
Friburg *plundred by their Lord.* 364. *they confederat with the* Cantons. 364
Duke of Fridland *Generaliſſimo.* 388

G

John Gabeas *of* Millan, *his Actions and Death.* 332
Gabinius *accuſed, defended, and condemned.* 23
Bethleem Gabor *ſwears Fealty to* Cæſar *and the* Turk. 404. *his other Actions.* ib.&c.
Bethleem Gabor *defeats* Batorius. 445. *reconciled to* Cæſar. 451
Gainas. 90
Galba *his Reigne and end.* 47
Galeacius. 258. Galeacius *a lover of Learning.* 268
Galerius Maximinus *Emperor.* 74. 76.
Galileans *ſold and murthered.* 46
Gallia *divided.* 96
Gallienus *Emperor.* 69, &c. *his neglect and folly.* 71. *his end.* ib.
Gallus *Emperor.* 69. Gallus Cæſar. 82,&c.
Gambalot Satrapa *of* Alepo, *ſolicits the Pope and* Cæſar. 443
Gaſcony *fals out with* Montfort. 240
Gaveſton *King* Edwards *Favorit.* 305
Gauls *overthrown by* Q. Fab. Max. 10. *by* Cæſar. 22,&c. *they rebel.* 24.
Gaunt *full of troubles.* 295. *rebels and ſubmits.* 295,&c.
Gant *rebels againſt their Earl.* 298,&c *makes a league with* France. 300
Gantois *rebel and are beaten.* 290
Gantois *careful of their Dutcheſs* .499
Gazelles *Governor of* Syria, *overthrown.* 475
Geberd *Biſhop of* Colen, *a Proteſtant* 436
Gemes, Bajazets *brother.* 469
Geneva *its Hiſtory.* 371
Geneva's *Earls conteſt with the Savoyens.* 280,&c. 284.
Biſhop of Geneva *a covetous man.* 355, &c. *impriſoned by* Galeacius. 356.
Geneva *in danger.* 440
Genſericus *ſacks* Rome. 96
Genua *and* Venice *contend for the maſtery of the Sea.* 167
Genua *implores the French help againſt the Pyrats.* 301
Genuois *defeat and are defeated.* 261. *Their long War with* Venice. 271. *They reform their City, make league with the Emperor, and beat the Venetian Fleet.* 271, &c. *take Saint* Nicholas *Church, and the Town* Clodia. 272. *they beat the Robbers.* 273. *and the Venetians.* 274. *their error and loſs.* ib. *make peace with* Venice. 275. *beſieged by the* Millanois. 287
Genuois *take two Kings priſoners, and are angry they were diſmiſſed without ranſom.* 489. *they make* Rene *King of* Naples. ibid.
Germany *in a bad condition.* 381. 388
Germanie's *miſeries preſaged.* 392
Germany *troubled with Religions and rebellions.* 426. 430.
Germany *in a woefull condition.* 449, &c. 458.
Germanicus *his victories and death.* 36,&c.
Germans defeated. 22, &c. Germany *made a Province.* 35. *they ſubmit to* Probus. 73. *ſlain by* Conſtantius. 75 *their Nobility killed.* 141. *their civil wars.* 121,&c. *their diviſions about the Emperor.* 235. Germany *divided under two Emperors.* 257
Geta *murthered by his brother* Caracalla. 63
Gilimer, *King of the* Vandals. 102
Glarona *and other Towns joyn with the Switzers.* 360
Archbiſhop of Glaſco's *ſtrange death.* 542
Duke of Gloceſter *abuſeth the credulous* Queen *and Earl* Rivers, 551. *murthers*

murthers the Lord Grey *with others.* ib. *is made Protector.* 552. *gets cunningly the young Duke of* York *from the Queen his mother.* ibid. *puts the King and his brother in the Tower.* ibid. *his complying with* Buckingham. ibid. *he accuseth the Queen of Witchcraft.* ibid. *beheadeth* Hastings *and others.* 553. *imploys Doctor* Shaa *to Preach, and set forth his Title to the Crown,* ibid. *cunningly got himself to be Crowned.* ibid. *causeth the young King and his brother to be murthered.* ib. *hinders the* Earl *of* Richmonds *marriage.* 550. *raiseth an Army* 556. *is slain, and his carcass dishonorably buried.* ib.

Godaliscus *the Monk.* 134

Godfride *of* Bullion. 164,&c.

Gordianus *Emperor.* 67. *his end.* ibid.

Gordian *the third his reigne and end* 68

Gordon *and* Forbese's *fight in the North.* 626

Goths. 87. 89. *murthered.* 90, &c. *Invade* Italy. ib. *and* Rome. 92. *are driven thence.* 102. *grow stately.* 106. *driven into* Biscay. 117

Gowrie *seiseth on the King, and is beheaded.* 628.&c.

Grame, *Archbishop of Saint* Andrews *persecuted.* 564

Gratianus *Emperor.* 86.88.

Greece *made a Province.* 5. *its miserable condition.* 228. Greeks *reconciled to the* Latins, 233,&c. 247. Greek *Church divided.* 248. Greece *torne in pieces.* 262. Greek *Emperor ends.* ib. Greek *tongue brought back to* Italy. 277

Greeks *their treacheries.* 183

Gregory *the great, King of* Scotland. 142

Pope Gregory *seaventh* 160. *deposeth the Emperor.* ib. *is imprisoned.* ib.

Grisons *their History.* 370

Grisons *in great trouble.* 451

Gryphus *made King by his mother.* 7. *whom he poysoneth, quarrels with his brother about the Kingdom of* Syria, *is slain.* ib.

Guelfs *and* Gibellins. 225. 254. 256. 287

Guido, *Marquis of* Tuscia. 143

Guises *murthered by the French King.* 608

Gunpowder treason. 634

Gustavus Adulphus *King of Sweden, and his Actions.* 379,&c. *enters* Pomerania. 380. *declares the wrongs he sustained by the Emperor* ib. *he sends abroad his edicts.* 381. *his Victories.* 380.381,&c. *he defeats* Tilly. 386. *takes in many Towns.* 387. *indangered at* Ingolstad. 389. *he hasteneth to relieve* Saxony. 391. *is wounded and dieth.* ib. *his corps sent home.* 392. Gustavus *makes peace with* Poland 462. *he finds* Germany *in great distempers.* 463

Guy, *Earl of* Flanders. 238. *assisted by King* Edward. 242. *taken prisoner.* 278

H

HAbesburg *released.* 361

Hadrian *his Government and Victories.* 54. *his good and bad qualities.* ib.&c. *his sickness death and Tomb.* ib. *he vexed the* Jews. ib. Hadrianopolis, *the* Turks *chief Seat.* 263

Hagarius *Sultan led in triumph.* 136

Hali *Bassa the* Eunuch *slain.* 472

Hamiltons *original.* 322

James Hamilton, *Earl of* Arran, *Vice-roy of* Scotland. 576,&c.

Hamiltons *and other Lords storm at* Q. Maries *Match.* 619. *are driven from* Edenburgh ib. *are banished, and return.* ib.

Hamilton *is denied the Regency.* 622. *sent to* Edenburgh *Castle.* 623

Hans-*Towns in* Germany. 269

Hans-*Towns perswaded to side with* Cæsar. 459

Hatto *Bishop of* Mints. 142

Hatto *Bishop of* Mints, *eat up by rats.* 146

Hay *defeats the* Danes *in* Scotl. 147

Helena. 81.85

Henry Beauclerk *King of* England *his Reigne.* 173,&c.

Henry *second, King of* England. 188. *his troubles and Penance.* 188, &c.

Henry *Duke of* Lancaster *made King.* 219.

Henry *King of* England, *Regent of France.* 487

Henry *third.* 507, &c. Henry *fourth.* 508.&c.

Henry

Henry *fourth of* England, *and his Reigne.*515. *Articled againſt.* 516, &c. *eſcapes and overcomes divers Treaſons.*515.&c. *dieth.* 517
Henry *fifth, King of* England, *his Reigne and Actions.* 518
Henry *ſixth, Crowned at* Paris. 487
Henry *ſixth of* England, *and his reigne* 524,&c. *Crowned in* France. 526.
Henry *ſixth his Marriage.*529. *his loſſes,* ib.&c. *is taken priſoner.*531.533 546
King Henry *reſtored to his Crown by* Warwick. 548
Henry *ſixth murthered.* 558
Henry *ſeventh King of* England, *and his Actions.*545,&c. *his death.* 550
Henry *eight, his Actions.* ib. &c. *growes weary of his Queen.* 554
Henry *eight, his eagerneſs to be divorced.* 555, &c. *quarrels with the Church.* 556
Henry *the eight deſires to meet* James *the fifth, which is denied.* 575
Henry *the eight deſires to match his ſon with the Scots Queen, which is denied.* 576
King Henry *the eight his Death, Will, Character Wives and iſſue.*561,&c.
Henry *made Prince of* Wales. 636
Henry *the Fowler, Emperor.* 142,&c.
Henry, Otho's *brother.* 144.
Henry, *ſon to Frederick the ſecond.* 223
Henry, *Lantgrave of* Thuringia. 226
Henry, Baldwin's *brother* 228
Henry, *King* John's *ſon of* England, 232.*his Wars with* France. ib.
Henry *the third, his exploits.*240. *he quarrels with his Peers.* ib.
Henry *of* Lucelburg, *Emperor.* 255. *poyſoned,* 256
Henry *ſecond, Emperor, and his actions.* 154. *lamed by a leap; his death.* ib.
Henry *third, Emperor, his actions.*158, &c.*his death.* 159
Henry *fourth, Emperor, and his actions.* ib.&c. *his Penance to the Pope.* 160.*his end.* 161
Henry *fifth, Emperor, his actions.* 169, &c.*is vexed by the Popes.* 170
Henry *ſixth, called* Aſper, *Emperor, his actions and end.* 192
Henry *of* Juliers *offended, and reconciled with* Brunſwick. 446
Henry *ſecond, King of France and his actions.* 506,&c.
Henry *third of France, entertained at Turin.* 398
Henry *the fourth of France, becomes Catholick.*509, *is ſtabbed.* 511
Henry *of* Navarr *excommunicated.*607 *Proclaimed King, and aſſiſted by* Q. Elizabeth. 608
Heraclius, *Emper.*109. *he ſubdues his enemies, and recovers the Croſs.*110. *dieth.*111.*his race endeth.* 116
Hereſies. 51,&c.55,&c.58.62,&c.66. 68, &c. 71. 80. 84. 88. 92. 94 &c.97.103.246.433.
Herman *the Palatin forced to carrie a dog on his ſhoulders.* 176
Hermaphrodites ominous to Rome. 8
Herod, *his actions.*29.*he is made King.* 31. *flatters* Hircanus, *and drowns* Ariſtobulus32.*bribes* Antony. 33. *he doats upon* Cleopatra, *his inſolencies, he is defeated at* Actium.ib. *he puts* Hircanus *to death, and makes his peace with* Octavius.ib. *he defeats the Arabians.* ib. *he murthers* Mariamne, Alexandra, *and the Sanhedrin.*34.*his buildings, murthers, and wives, his death.* ib.
Hexamilium *the wall in* Peloponeſus 464.467
Hierom. 93
Hircanus *ſucceeds his Father* Symon, *in* Judea. 6. *his actions.*ib.*he overthrows the Temple of* Samaria.7.*and the City alſo.*10.*he dieth.* ib. Hircanus, Alexander's *ſon.* 17. *quarrels with his brother* 20. *is eſtabliſhed in the Pontificat.*29.*loſt his ears.*31,*delivered by* Herod.32,*and put to death* 33
Hollands *Hiſtory.* 251. *in great troubles.* 278
Hollands *Hiſtory, and their Earls.*341, &c. *troubled with civil war.* 342
Hollanders infeſt the Spaniards. 442
Holland *troubled about their Exciſe,* 446
Hollanders good ſucceſs at ſea and land. 461,&c.
Homar. 113. Homar *and* Hali. 263.
Honorius *Emperor.* 90
Hormiſdas *the Perſian King.* 106
Horne, *the Swediſh General.* 392
Hoſpitalers ſucceed the Templers. 239 *and*

and take Rhodes. ib.
Hugo, *Earl of* Arles. 143
Humbert, *first, ſecond, third, Earls of* Savoy. 279,&c.
Hungarian *Hiſtory.* 398,&c.
Hungarians. 140. *beat the* Germans. 141. *defeated.* 143. *troubled by their Kings.* 250. Hungary *in great troubles.* 333. *their Victories in* Germany *and* Italy. 398, &c. *defeated by the* Germans. 399,&c. Hungary *afflicted by the* Turks. 398. 479. *and by inteſtin* Factions. 399
Hungarys *miſerable condition.* 401,&c
Hungarians *defeated by* Solyman, *and* Buda *taken.* 476
Hunns. 87. *ſlain.* 100. *obtain* Panonia. 104. 398
Huniades, John, *and* Matthew. 398, &c. 407,&c.
Huntly's *hatred to* Murry. 617. *is deluded by Queen* Mary. ib. *defeated by* Murry. 618.
Huntly *taken, and his ſon* John *beheaded.* ibid.
Huntly *and* Argile *favour the Queens ſide.* 623
Huntly's *Zeal for Queen* Mary. 625. 627. *aſſiſted by the* Spaniard. ib.
Huntly *defeats* Argile *in the battell of* Avinian. 631,&c.
John Huſſe broacheth *his doctrin.* 331
John Huſſe *and Hierom of* Prague *burnt.* 335

I

JAcoba, *Counteſs of* Holland. 341, &c.
Jagello, *Prince of* Lituania. 277
Iames *the Apoſtle.* 46
Iames, *Prince of* Scotland, *a priſoner in* England. 535, &c. *carried into* France. 536
Iames, *King of* Scotland, *and his Reigne.* 537, &c. *his daughter conveyed into* France. 538
Iames *the firſt, his murther.* 539. Iames *the ſecond, his Reigne.* 539,&c.
Iames *the ſecond, much troubled by Factions.* 540. *his death.* 545
Iames *the third of* Scotland, *and his Reigne.* 562,&c. *his Governors.* ib. *married.* 563. *his ſuperſtition and tyranny.* 565. *his Courtiers hanged up.* ibid.
Iames *the third complained againſt for his miſgovernment.* ib. *perſecuted by his Subjects, and ſlain.* 566, &c. *his death grumbled at.* 567
Iames *the fourth, his Reigne.* 567, &c. *defends* Warbeck. 568. *his match.* ib.
Iames *the fourth, his prodigality and reſolution for* Syria. ibid. *ſollicited to quarrel with* England. ib. *his fleet.* ib. *his meſſage to King* Henry 569. *he was diſſwaded from making war, in vain.* 569. *he loſt the battel and his life.* 570
Iames *the fifth, his Reigne.* ib.&c.
Iames *the fifth, his Navigations, marriages, ſtrange dreams, and death.* 575,&c.
Iames, *Queen* Maries *brother, haſtneth into* France. 614
Iames *the ſixth Crowned.* 620
Iames *the ſixth ſtrictly guarded.* 627. *Governeth with* 12 *Peers.* ib. *impriſoned.* 628
King Iames *diſpleaſed for his mothers death; but appeaſed by Queen* Elizabeth. 631
King Iames *proclaimed King of* England, *and his journey thither.* 632, &c. *makes peace with* Spain, *pardoneth and executes ſome Traitors, ſends preſents to* Spain. 633. *and receiveth from thence preſents.* 634. *he detects the gunpowder-plot.* ib. *he is moderator at the Conference of* Hampton *Court.* ib.&c. *King of Great* Britan. 635. *entertained at* London. ib. *divers Occurrences.* ib &c. *Inſtitutes Knights Baronets.* 638. *Ambaſſadors to him from* Ruſſia *and* Perſia, *and goeth into* Scotland. 639. *his death and happie Government.* 640. *ſome ſtrange accidents, and works of charity in his time..* ib.
Jane *the Duke of* Suffolks *Daughter proclaimed* Queen *of* England. 590 *Is beheaded.* 591
Janiſaries *their Originall* 263
Janiſaries *their Inſtitution.* 465
Janiſaries, *their inſolencies at* Conſtantinople. 482,484
Jeruſalem *beſieged and ſtormed.* 20,32
Ieruſalem *its laſt Miſeries,* 47,&c. *Rebuilt and new-named.* 54. *Taken by* Coſroes. 109. *By the* Saracens. 111. *by*

111. *By the* Parthians. 229
Ieruſalem *loſt by the Chriſtians.* 166
Ieſuites *baniſhed out of* Turky, 483, *&c*
Ieſuites *baniſhed out of* France, *and why.* 510. *Reſtored again.* 511
Jews *infeſted with three Sects.* 10. *what theſe were.* ib. *they aſſiſt* Cleopatra *againſt* Lathurus. 11. *their great Councel deſtroyed.* 29. *they complain againſt* Herod. 30. *will not admit his Government.* 32. *are murthered by* Archilaus, *againſt whom they complain.* 35. *they rebel, and are ſuppreſſed by* Varus. 36. *rebel under* Theudas. 42, &c. *they quarrel with the* Samaritans. 43. *they rebel, and are murthered.* 46. *their miſeries under* Veſpaſian. 47. *and* Titus. 49. *are murthered every where.* ib. *their barbarous cruelties.* 54. *forbid to enter* Jeruſalem. ib. *converted.* 84. *deluded.* 95. Jews *found out their pricks.* 98. *their cruelty.* 108, &c. *forced to embrace Chriſtianity.* 110. *follow* Mahomet ib. *made ſlaves in* Spain. 116 *deſperat.* 118. *baniſhed out of* England. 242. *poyſon the waters, and are hanged by each other.* 287. *wear yellow caps.* 431
Images aboliſhed. 118. 120. *reſtored.* 123 *condemned.* 124. 129. *reſtored.* 134.
Imperialiſts *loſe* Pomerania. 385. *are defeated.* 391, &c.
Indians, *with* Hunns *and others, become Chriſtians.* 103
Joan, *wife of* Andrew *of* Hungary. 259. *her murthers, inceſt, and inſatiable luſt.* 26. 413
Iohannes Maria, *a bloudy Tyrant.* 332
Iohn Baptiſt *Preacheth, Baptizeth, is beheaded.* 38. Iohn *the Apoſtle baniſhed.* 50. *reſtored.* 52. *dieth.* 53.
Iohn de Bregna, *King of* Ieruſalem. 223. Iohn, *King of* England. 230. *his conteſtation with, and ſubmiſſion to the Pope.* 231. *his death. wives, and children.* 232. Iohn Cantacuzenus. 249. Iohn, *Duke of* Brabant. 251. Iohn, *King of* Bohemia. 258. Iohn, *Emperor of* Byzantium. 261. Iohn, *Earl* Nivern, *defeated by the* Turks, *ordains the order of a Golden Fleece.* 264. Iohn Wickliff. 276. Iohn Galeacius. 277. Iohn, *the* Havonian, *Earl of* Holland. ibid. Iohn de Montfort. 290. Iohn, *King of* France. 291. Iohn Huniades. 398. Iohn Baſſilides, *Duke of* Muſcovia. 432. *knocks his ſon in the head.* 437. Iohn *of* Anjou, *beats* Ferdinand. 491. Iohn Scot, *the great Faſter.* 574. Iohn *a* Stampis. 173
Iohn, *otherwiſe called* Robert, *King of* Scotland. 329
Iohn, *Duke of* Burgundy, *with* Amadeus, *vex* Orleans *and* Burbon. 346
Iohn, *Governor of* Croatia, *his cruelty.* 397
Iohn *of* Leyden, *his madneſs.* 427
Iohn, *Prince of* Swethland. 378
Iolanda *of* Savoy *impriſoned with her ſon.* 355. *diſmiſſed by the French K.* ib.
Ionathas, *Governor of* Iudæa, *his actions.* 2, 3. 5. *his death.* ib.
Iovinian *his life and actions.* 85. *his end.* 86
Irene, *Empereſs.* 123
Ireland *rebels.* 598. 602. *aſſiſted by the* Pope *and* Spaniard. ib.
Iriſh rebels with the Spaniards, defeated by the Lord Montjoy. 611
Iriſh converted. 82
Iſaacius, Angellus; Greek *Emperor.* 185
Iſſabel, *Dutcheſs of* Anjou; *prepares a Fleet for* Naples.
Iſmael, *the Sophi of* Perſia. 470. *his actions and victories.* 471. *wounded.* 472
Italian *troubles.* 15. *ſubdued by the* Romans. ib. *being Invaded by* Goths, Vandals, Longobards, Hunns, *and others is reduced again to the Empire of* Iuſtinian. 103. *miſeries of* Italy *under the* Guelphs *and* Gibellins. 225. Italian *Cities charge their Governors.* 256. *are puniſhed by the Emperor.* ib. *fall off from the Pope.* 269. Italy *diſturbed with civil wars.* 333. Italies *divotion.* 345. *troubled about* Mantua. 462
Italy *in troubles.* 503, &c.
Iudas Macchabæus, *his actions and death.* 2
Judgements remarkable. 97, &c. 100. 102, 104. 108. 117, &c. 123, &c. 131. 270. 563. 146. 154.
Iuditha, Ludovic's *wife.* 130 &c.
Iugurtha,

Jugurtha *his cruelty, cunning, and end.* 12
Juliers *full of troubles.* 443
Julianus. 83. *His Apostacy and wickedness,* 84,85. *his end.* ib.
Julius Agricola's *victories.* 51
Julius Cæsar. *see* Cæsar.
Pope Julius *raiseth great troubles.* 504
Overcom by the French. 305
Nicholas Jurith *a stout* Hungarian: 401
Justinus *Emperor.* 100
Justinian *Emperor.* 101,103. *His Death.* 104
Justinus *the second, his Reign.* ib. *His end.* 105
Justinian 2d *Emperor.* 115. *Imprisoned and escapes,* ib. *His cruelty and end.* 116

K

KEnnedies *blow the coals of sedition in* Scotland. 563
Kenneth *k. of* Scotlands *stratagem,* 134
Kent *divided about* Qu. Maries *match with* Spain. 591
Kets *Rebellion and end.* 587,&c.
Kings *of* Asturia *and* Leon, *of* Navarr *and* Arragon. 119. *of* Galicia, ib. *of* Bulgaria, 120. Lombardie; 116 Saxons, ib. Ratchesius *and* Aistulphus *k. of* Lombardy, 121. *Kings of* Spain. 122. *kings of* Navar, 123 *of* Denmark, 128. *of* England *and* Scotl. 134. *of* Italy, 139. *of* Spain. 142. *of* Denmark, 230. *of* Hungary 250. *of* Poland ib. *of* Denm. 251 *of* Scicily, 254. *of* Sweden, Denmark & Norway, 265. *K. of* Morocco *defeated,* 276. *Four kings in the French army.* 289. *The French and Scots K. taken prisoners,* 292,&c *K. of* Navarr *troubles* France. 293 *of* Denmark, Sweden *and* Norway. 336,&c. *of* Hungarie, 397,&c. *of* Arragon, Naples, Castile *and* Scicily, 413. *Kings of* Arragon *faile,* 418. *K. of* Denmark *endangered,* 455. *K. of* Sweden *invades* Livonia, Borussia, *and* Dantisk, 456. *Of* Ierusalem, 166. *of* France. 172
Kings, *their conditions dangerous and uncertain.* 646,&c.
Knox *his preaching, and the effects thereof.* 584
Keyrie Eleison *when begun.* 94

L

LAdislaus *first of* Hungary. 398
Ladislaus *the second.* 399
Ladislaus *king of* Hungary. 406,&c.
Ladislaus *king of* Poland. 407
Ladislaus, *son of* Huniades *beheaded:* 408
Duke of Lancaster *inriched in* Spain. 317
Lathurus *called* Philometor, *why,* 11 *his actions.* ib.
Peter Laudais *the Du. of* Britanie's *favourite, hanged.* 501
Laws *called* Agrariæ: *what?* 8
League *between* Hungary, Bohemia, & Poland 419
holy-League *in* France. 509, &c.
Leicester *and* Hollander *disagree.* 603,&c.
The English *and* Scots *besiege* Leith: 614
Mathew *Earl of* Lenox *made Regent,* ib. *Killed.* 626
Leo *Emperor.* 96
Leontius *Emperor.* 115
Leo Isauricus. 118, *&c.*
Leo *the fourth Emperor.* 122, *&c.*
Leo *the fifth Emperor.* 129. *Killed in his Chappell.* ib.
Leo *Bishop of* Thessalonica. 134
Leo, Basil's *son, delivered by a Parrot.* 138
Leo *the Philosopher Emperor.* 140. *Is cudgelled.* ib.
Leolin *Pr. of* Wales *beheaded.* 242 *And his brother* David *quartered:* ibid.
Lepidus *his insolency and ruin.* 31
Lewis *the 7th of France.* 187
Lewis *the Ninth of* France, *his holy life and actions.* 229. *Is canonized,* ibid. *His Ship.* ibid. *His Justice at home, and actions abroad.* 237 *Dieth before* Tunis ibid.
Lewis *of* Anjou *poisoned.* 260. *Had Wars with* Alphonsus *of* Arragon. ib.
Lewis Hutin *King of France.* 287
Lewis *of* France *entertains his sister of* Savoy. 355

Lewis *the eleventh of* France, *his reign* 492,&c. *he quarrels with* Burgundy *and* Brittany. ib. *and with his Peers.* 493. *impriſoned by Duke* Charls. 494

Lewis *ſoweth diſcord among the Princes* 493. *his double dealing with* Burgundy. 495.

Lewis *deſires* Mary *of* Burgundy *to put her ſelf under the* French. 499

Lewis *the twelfth of* France, *his reigne and actions.* 503

Lewis *the* 13th *of* France. 512,&c.

Lewis *of* Anjou *takes* Rome. 333

Lewis, *Duke of* Orleans *rejected from being Governor.* 501

Lewis *Duke of* Savoy, *his actions.* 353,&c. *complaines of his ſon* Philip. 354

Lewis, *Marquiſs of* Saluſſes. 356

Licinius *Emperor.* 77. *his wickedneſs.* 79. *is defeated, his end.* ibid.

Liege *makes Warre againſt the Biſhop.* 345

Ligeois *beaten by Duke* Charls. 494. *rebel again.* ibid. *cut in pieces.* 495

The Ligeois *defeated by the Duke of* Burgundy. 486

Lipſick *ſurrendred.* 386

Lisbon *aſſaulted by the* Engliſh. 607

Livonia *waſted by the* Muſcovit. 432. *Implores help from the* Dane *and* Polacks. 432

Loadſtone *found out.* 275

Locuſts *infeſt* Affrica *with* Famin *and Plague.* 9. *and* France. 137. *Waſte* Thracia. 157

Longobards. 101. 104. *change their Government.* 107. *their Kings.* 116.

Lorrain *in ſtrife between* Otho *and the* French. 148,&c.

Duke of Lorrain *leaves* Naples, *and fals on* Arragon. 494

Lotharius Cæſar. 130,&c.

Lotharius *Emperor.* 132. *quarrels and fights with his brothers.* ib. &c. *divides his Kingdoms, and enters into a Monaſtery.* 133

Lotharius, *Duke of* Saxony, *Emperor* 171. *oppoſed by* Conradus. ib. *his life and end.* ib.

Lowden *is impriſoned and releaſed.* 643,&c.

Lucerna *like to be ſurpriſed.* 358

Lucius Verus, *his Government and death.* 56,&c.

Lucullus *his actions.* 18,&c.

Ludovic *Emperor.* 130. *his rebellious ſons.* 131. *he dieth.* ib.

Ludovic *the ſecond, Emperor.* 135

Ludovic *the younger.* 137

Ludovic *the Stammerer.* ib.

Ludovic *the fourth, Emperor.* 140

Ludovic Tranſmarin. 144. Ludovic *of* Bavaria, *Emperor.* 257. *condemned by the Pope.* ib. *complains of the Pope.* 258. *Joynes with* England *againſt* France. ib. *is depoſed by the Pope.* 259. Ludovic, *King of* Hungary. 260

Ludovic *the ſecond, King of* Hungary. 400

Martin Luther *begins to ſtirre.* 426, &c.

Lyſius *his Army.* 1. *he Invades* Judæa. 2. *is murthered.* ib.

M

MAcedonius. 83

Magdeburg *beſieged and taken.* 381. *its ruine preſaged.* 381. 384. *its miſery.* ib.

Magdeburg *again beſieged.* 461

Magnentius. 82

Mahomet *his originall.* 109. *his death.* 110.

Mahometans 127. Mahumetaniſme *prevails.* 249. Mahumet *the firſt.* 463

Mahomet *the ſecond, his cruelty.* 465. *actions and victories.* 466, &c. *his aim at an Univerſal Monarchy, and his end and character.* 468

Mahomet *the third, his victories and actions.* 480. *his cruelties,* ib.

Maide *of* Norway. 244

Maide *of* Orleans. 487

Malcolme, *King of* Scotland, *his life.* 190

Malcolme, *King of* Scotland, *murthered, and the murtherers drowned.* 154

Malta *Aſſaulted by the* Turk. 477

Mamalucks *of* Ægypt. 175, &c. *their Kings or* Sultans.. 176

Mamalucks, *who.* 469. 473. *deſtroyed by* Selymus. 474

Manfrid *the baſtard ſtifles his Father.* 227. *his other wicked acts.* 234
George Maniaces, *a great Commander.* 157,&c.
Manlius Torquatus *puts his ſon to death.* 9
Mansfield *violats his Faith.* 451. *refuſeth to fight.* 453. *is defeated.* 456. *dieth.* 457
Mantua *poſſeſſed by* Nivern, *which cauſeth great troubles.* 462
Manuel Comnenus, Greek *Emperor, his life and end.* 183,&c.
Earl of Mar, *made Regent.* 626. *dieth.* 627
Marcianus *Emperor.* 95.96.
Marcus Antonius de Dominis, *burned* 455
Mardacus, *his miſgovernment of* Scotland. 536. *his end.* 537
Margaret *of* Holland. 253
Margaret, *Queen of* Denmark. 266, &c. Margaret, *the Emperor* Lodovics *wife.* 279
Marius *overthrowes* Jugurtha *and* Bocchus. 12. *his triumph.* ib. *his victory over the* Teutons. 13. *and* Cimbrians. ib. *raiſeth a civil war.* 14. *his victory over the* Marſians. 15. *his quarrel with* Sylla. ib. *his troubles and death.* ib.&c.
Marquiſats erected in Germany. 143
Marquiſs of Brandeburg. 222. *of* Saluſſes. 285
Martina, *her tongue cut out.* 111
Martyrs. 55,&c. 58. 63. 66. 68,&c. 71. 73,&c. 87. 98.
Mary, *laſt of the houſe of* Burgundy. 343
Marie, *King* Henries *daughter wooed by divers Princes.* 557,&c.
Mary *of* Scotland *conveyed into* Erance. 581. *there married.* 582
Mary, *King* Henries *daughter, is proclaimed Queen.* 590, &c. *her Reigne.* 591,&c.
Queen Maries *perſecutions.* 595. *with child* ib. *her death.* 597
Q. Marie *returneth into* Scotland. 615 *ſhe with her Lords, ſends an Ambaſſador to Queen* Elizabeth, *to declare her ſucceſſor, which ſhe refuſeth to do.* 615,&c.
Queen Mary *and the Miniſters of* Edinburgh *differ.* 616. *ſhe makes her brother* James, *Earl of* Murry, *which diſcontents* Huntley. ib.
Queen Maries *progreſs into the North.* 617,&c.
She falls in love with young Lenox, *and marrieth him.* 618
Her diſcontent with her husband. 619. *eſcapes by* Setons *means.* ib. *perſecutes the murtherers of* David. ib. *is delivered of* Iames 6th. ib.
Is abuſed by her Subjects diſgraceſully. 620. *and forced to reſigne her Crown.* ib.
With Bothwel *ſhe eſcapes to* Dunbar, *they raiſe an Army.* 621. *ſhe is brought diſgracefully to* Edinburgh, *and he eſcapes to* Orkney. ib. *his end.* ib. *ſhe eſcapes to* Hamilton, *raiſeth an Army, and is defeated by* Murry *Regent.* 622
Her plot with Norfolks *detected.* 623
She complains to Queen Elizabeth; *and her anſwer.* 628, &c. *is removed to* Paulet. 629
Suſpected and accuſed of Treaſon, is condemned, her laſt deſires. 630. *is interceded for by King* Iames, *and the* French *King: her death.* 630
Maſſaniſſa's *age, ſtrenght, and death.* 4
Matthias *the* Machabee. 1
Matthias Corvinus, *his actions and death.* 398,&c.
Matthias *Emperor.* 444
Matthias, *the Emperor's Brother.* 493
Maude *the Empereſs.* 187
Prior of S. Maurice, *his excellent ſpeech to Duke* Amadeus. 349
Maurice, *Governor of* Holland. 437, &c.
Mauritius *Emperor.* 106. *his covetouſneſs.* 107. *his troubles and end.* ib. *all his children ſlain.* ib.
Maximilian *Emperor.* 402
Maximilian *and the* French *quarrel.* 411.
Maximilian's *actions.* 415,&c. *his end and Iſſue.* 419
Maximilian *the ſecond, Emperor.* 433 *he dieth.* 434
Maximilian *defeated by* Mahomet. 480

Maximinus *his wicked Reign.* 67
Is murthered with his Son. ib.
Maximianus Cæsar. 74,76
Maxentius *a wicked Tyrant.* 78
Maximinus *his cruelty.* ib.
Maxentius *overthrown and drowned.* ib
Maximinus *his end.* 79
Maximus *the General.* 88
A great Man. 95. *Stoned to death.* 96
Metellus *banished and brought back.* 14
His Actions. 18
Michael Curopabates *Emperor.* 127
Michael Balbus *Emperor.* 131
Michael *son of* Theodora. 134 *His Fooleries, Cruelties and death.* 135
Michael Paleologus. 229. *His actions and end.* 247
Michael *Emperor of* Constantinople. 157
Michael Calaphates *Emperor.* 158
Michael Parapinacius *Greek Emperor, suffers the Empire to be ruined.* 164
Milcolumbus Canmor *k. of* Scotland, *His life and end.* 169
Millan *taken by the* Goths. 102. *Spared by* Frederick, *then overthrown.* 177. *Set at liberty by* Henry *the Emperor.* 256. *Entertains* Ludovic. 258. *Governed by 24 men.* ib. *sold to* John Galeacius. 270. *quarrels with* Savoy. 285
Its greatnesse torn in pieces. 332. *quarrels again with* Savoy. 346
Struggles for liberty. 353
Laid claim to by divers. 411. *Taken by the* French. 412. *By* Cæsar. ibid. 414. *Taken by* Francis Sforsa. 360 *in great troubles.* 499
Archbishop of Mintz *his speeches.* 420, &c.
Mithridates *king of* Pontus, *his parts, actions and languages.* 14. *Subdued by* Scylla. 16. *and* Fimbria. ib. *By* Lucullus. 18. *By* Pompey. 19. *His end.* 20
Monks *drowned and killed.* 99. *a Monk invented Guns.* 270. *Monks called Jesuites,* 277. *Wicked Monks of* Ambrunaya. 283. *Franciscans and Dominicans quarrell.* 419
Monks *of Saint* Maurice *in* Savoy. 348
Monsters. 43, *&c.* 44, 48, 51, 56, 108, 112, 381, 439, 511, 534, 567.
Monteths *plot discovered.* 321
Montmorancie *taken and Beheaded:* 515
Moravia *and* Silesia *in question.* 411 *Its troubles.* 457
Mores *make peace with the* Christians. 237. *Driven out of* Spain. 444
Mortimers. 307. *Mortimer hanged.* 308
Morton's *men, and the* Queens *party fight.* 626
Is beheaded notwithstanding Q. Elizabeths *intercession.* 628
Moscovites. 134. *Miraculously converted.* 138. *Waste* Livonia. 433 *Beaten by the* Polander. 436
Mouns *lost and taken again by the English.* 525
Muhavias *the* Saracen. 113, &c.
Mulhouse *unite with the* Cantons: 371
Andrew Murrey *Viceroy of* Scotland. 324
Murry *the Regent goeth to* Qu. Elizabeth *to cleer himself,* 622. *He returns and is opposed by* Hamilton. ib. *Is killed.* 624
Mustapha, Solyman's *son strangled.* 477. *His cruelty.* ib.
Mustapha *of a three months Emperor, became a prisoner.* 481. *Made Emperor again.* ibid. *And Deposed.* 482

N

NAples *in great troubles,* 259, &c. *In great troubles by* Arragon *and* Anjou, 413, 416. *Divided.* 417 *Taken by* Arragon, *and* Anjou *sent away.* 489
Taken by the French *and lost again.* 502 *Changeth Kings quickly.* 503
Narses 103. *deposed.* 104. *cals the* Longobards *into* Italy. ib. *defeats* Baras 106
King of Navarr *burned with aqua vitæ* 301
Neochomum, *or* Neufchastel *annexed to* Bern. 372
Nero, *his good and bad conditions, his Tyrannies.* 44, &c. *his end.* 46
Nerva, *his good Government and conditions.* 52. *and death.* ib.
Nestorius *the heretick.* 94. Nestorianisme *far spread.* 111

Netherlands *divided among divers Princes.* 268
Newburg *and* Brandeburg *differ in Religion.* 445
Newport *Battel.* 439
Nicephorus *Emperor.* 126, &c. *ſlain.* 127
Nicephorus Phocas, *Emperor of the East, his life and death.* 147. &c.
Nicholaus *the Scriv'ner ſeiſeth on the Capitol.* 260. *is defeated and impriſoned.* ib.
Nigar, *Emperor.* 61
Normans, *their Victories.* 133. *ſettle in* Neuſtria. 137. *rage in* Germany ib. *defeat, and are defeated.* 139. *take* Calabria *from the* Greeks. 161.
Normandy *recovered by the* French. 222. *invaded by the* Engliſh. 230
Norvegians. 265
Norwitch *peſtred by the Rebels.* 587
Novatus. 69
Numantia's *Delinquency and ruin.* 9
Numerianus. 74

O

OCtavius, Cæſars *adopted ſon, is made Emperor againſt* Antony 29. *his age and beginning of his Government* ib. *is ſlighted by the Senat, and is made Conſul.* ib. &c. *his battel at* Phillippi *with* Brutus *and* Caſſius. 30. *he loſt many of his ſhips.* 31. *honored with* Ovatio. ib. *his victory at* Actium. 33. *obtains* 3 *triumphs.* ib. *his honors, happineſs, and peace with all Nations.* ib. &c. *he reforms all diſorders, and is grieved for the loſs of* Varus. 34. *his death, and excellent parts deſcribed.* 35
Odenatus, *General.* 70
Odoacer, *King of* Italy. 97
Offida, *his ſtrange puniſhment.* 352
Oneals *rebellion and tyranny in* Ulſter. 598
Opilius Macrinus *his wicked Government.* 64. *by* Martialis *he murthered* Caracalla. ib. *his end.* ib.
Prince of Orange *defeated.* 347. *Murthered.* 436
Orcanes *the* Turk. 250. 263
Order of the Anunciada. 285. *of* Calaturava, *and of Saint* James. 182. *of* Carmalits. 182. 192. *of* Carthuſians. 279. *the Garter.* 276. 310. *of the Golden fleece.* 264. 342. *of* Heremits. 182. *of the holy Ghoſt,* 508 *of the* Humiliati. 177. *of Saint* John *of* Jeruſalem, *of the Templars, of the* Tutonicks 166. *of the Knights of Jeſus Chriſt.* 276. *of* Marinus. 414. *of Saint* Michael. 285. *of Mount* Olivet. 277. *of the* Premonſtrate ſis 172. *of* Predicants *and* Minorits. 192. *of the Star.* 276. *of* Stephanits. 433. *Of* Jeſuits. 277
Origen. 63. 69
Duke of Orleans *and* Richlieu *quarrel.* 514. Orleans *defeated.* ib.
Oſman *made Sultan.* 481. *his actions.* ib. *ſtrangled by* Muſtapha. ib.
Oſtend *Battel.* 439
Otho, *his reigne and death.* 47
Otho *firſt bore the* 3 Lillies. 139
Otho *the firſt,* German *Emperor.* 144
Otho *the Emperor, his divers exploits.* 145. *he makes divers journeys to* Rome, *and takes it.* 145, &c. *in a Synod he depoſeth Pope* John *the twelfth.* 146. *puniſheth divers of the Citizens.* ib. *he waſts* Calabria *and* Apulia, *and marrieth* Theophania *to his ſon.* ib. *erects divers Biſhopricks, and dieth.* ib.
Otho *the ſecond,* Emperor *of the Weſt, and his actions.* 148, &c.
Otho *the third, Emperor, his reigne.* 151. &c. *his agreement with the Pope* 152. *his pilgrimage, juſtice on his wife: and death.* 153
Ottacar, *King of* Bohemia. 235
Otterburn *battel, and the* Scots *Stratagem.* 329
Otto, *the ſonne of* Henricus Leo. 221. *Emperor, and his conteſtation with the Pope.* 222. *reſignes his Empire.* ib.
Ottoman *Family appeareth.* 247. Ottoman *the firſt.* 248. *his actions and death.* 249. 263
Overberry *impriſoned & poyſoned.* 637

P

PAlatinat. *all loſt.* 453
Pappenhem *ſlain.* 391
Paris *troubled with mutinies.* 297. *Fined.* 300. *rebels againſt the Dolphin.* 312
Parliaments at Edinburgh, *two at once* 626

Parma *defeats* Fredericks *Army.* 227
Parthians defeated. 31. *their civil war.* 42. *ſubject* Trajan. 53. *defeated under* Antoninus. 56. *ſeiſe upon* Meſopotania. 62. *wronged by* Caracalla. 63. *ſubdued by the* Perſian *King,* Artaxerxes. 66. *by* Gordian. 68. *beat the* Turks. 479
Paul *Preacheth the Goſpel.* 41, &c. 45. *his Journeys and Miracles.* ib. *his death.* ib.
Paul *the* Heremit. 69
Paulician *Hereticks.* 132
Peace between Amarats *and* Ladiſlaus, *made, and broke.* 407
Peace between Frederick *the Emperor, and* Charls *of* Burgundy. 410
Between Cæſar *and the* Turk. 442.
Between Spain *and* Holland, ib.
Between Spain *and* Holland *expired.* 452.
Between the Danes *and* Swedes. 445
Between Cæſar *and the* Dane. 460.
Swedland *and* Poland. 462
Between the Turk *and* Perſian. 481.
the Turk *and* Polander. ib.
Between Cæſar *and the* Turk *and* Gabor. 483
Between England *and* France. 293
Between France, England, *and* Burgundy. 497
Concluded in France. 510. *and with* Spain. ib. *with* England. 514
Deſhonorably concluded with Scotland. 308
Between France *and* England. 552. 558. *Between* England *and* Scotland. 562
With the French broken, and why. 557
Concluded between the Engliſh, Scots, *and* French. 614
Pelagius, *the Popes Legat.* 224
Perennius, Commodus *his Favorit.* 58
Perkin Warbek *his Story.* 547, &c. 567, &c.
Perſians *ſubdued.* 70. *beat by* Maximinus. 75. *ſubmit to* Conſtantin. 81. *Article with the* Romans. 85. *defeated by* Ardaburius. 92. *converted.* 100. *defeated by* Martianus. 105 *and by* Mauritius. 106. *they ſubdue* Phenicia, *&c.* 108. *defeated by* Mauritius. 109. *ſubdued by the* Saracins 111. *Baptized.* 114. *their Story under* Uſumcaſſanes, Harduelles, Iſhmael, *&c.* 471. *defeated by* Selymus *the* Turk. 472. *Prevail in* Aſia. 480. *their bloodie battel with the* Turks. 481. *they take* Babylon *and other places from the* Turk. 482
Perth *begins the Proteſtant reformation.* 584
Pertinax *ſaluted Emperor.* 60. *his excellent Government and end.* ib. *his murtherers baniſhed.* 61
Peſtilence at Babylon *and* Rome. 56. 58. 70. *at* Picenum *and* Conſtantinople. 102. *at* Rome. 108. 118. *at* Byzantium *and elſe where.* 120. *in the Camp at* Tunis. 237. 260. *at* Rome. 438. *at* Conſtantinople. 481 *at* Rome 508
Peter *the Apoſtle.* 43. *his Miracles and death.* 45
Petrus de Vineis. 227
Petrus Antiſiodorenſis. 228
Peter *of* Arragon *obtains* Sicily. 235
Peter de la Broch. 237
Peter *of* Arragon *killed.* 238
Peter *of* Savoy, *his actions.* 281. Peter *of* Caſtile. 293, &c.
Peter, *King of* Hungary *killed.* 158
Pharnaſes *defeated and murthered.* 27
Phaſelus *beats out his own brains.* 30
Philbert, *Duke of* Savoy. 355 *poyſonſoned.* 356
Philbert *the ſecond.* ib.
Philip, *King of* Syria. 11, *&c.*
Philip *the Apoſtle.* 43
Philip *the Emperor his Reigne.* 68
Philippicus Bardanes. *Emperor.* 117.
Philip *the* German *Emperor.* 221. *ſlain.* 222. *his conteſtation with the Pope* 221
Philip, *the Bold King of* France. 237, &c.
Philip *the* Fair. 238. *conteſts with the Pope.* 234. *like to be killed.* ib. *defeated of the Empire.* 255. Philip, E. *of* Savoy. 9282. Philip le Long. 287. Philip Valois *declared K. of* France. 288. *his actions.* 298, &c.
Philip *of* Burgundy. 342. Philip, *Prince of* Belgium *invited into* Spain. 417. *King* Philip *beats the Pope out of* Latium. 431
Philip Auguſtus, *King of* France. 187

Philip Valois, *King of* France. 308.
Philip *of* Savoy *impriſoned.* 354
Philip *Duke of* Savoy. 356
Philip *of* Auſtria *entertained in* England. 550
Philip *of* Spain, *his marriage with Q.* Mary, *and Articles thereupon.* 594
King Philip *deſerts Queen* Mary, *poſſeſſes his fathers Dominions, wars againſt* France. 596
King Philip *ſolicited by Queen* Elizabeth, *in behalf of the Netherlanders.* 602,&c.
Phocas *Emperor.* 107. *his wicked life and end.* 108
Phraates *his actions and death.* 6,7.
Pyemont *joyn'd to* Savoy. 280
Pipinus. 117. *made King.* 121. *his gift to the Pope.* ib. Pipin, *King of* Aquitania. 130
Phyſcon, *King of* Egypt, *his actions.* 5
Plantaginet. 230
Plantaginet *the true and falſe.* 545, &c.
Plato's *Coffin.* 125.
Plautianus, *his ambition and end.* 62
Pliny *excuſeth the Chriſtians.* 53
Poliman *Knights, their habit.* 159
Poland *in great troubles.* 230. *diſtracted by their Kings.* 250. *their Crown tranſlated.* 277
Polanders *maſſacred in* Ruſſia. 441. *diſagree at home.* ib. *beat the* Muſcovit. 443
Poland *proclaims war againſt the* Turk. 451
Polands *Ambaſſador to Queen* Elizabeth, *and her Anſwer.* 609
Pomerania *in bad condition.* 380,&c.
Pompey *deſtroys the Pyrats.* 19. *his greatneſs and Command.* ib. *his actions.* 20. *takes* Jeruſalem *and other places.* ib. *ſuſpects* Cæſar. 24. *is ſupported by the Senat againſt* Cæſar. 25. *he and they alſo flie to* Brunduſium. ib. *is Maſter of the Sea.* 26. *defeats* Cæſars *Army.* ib. *he chuſeth* Epirus *for the ſeat of the war.* ib. *his* Pharſalian *Forces, his defeat, flight and death.* ib. &c. *his head preſented to* Cæſar. 27. *his ſon defeated and ſlain.* 28
Cardinal Pool, *his Story.* 594, &c.

Pope Damaſus. 86. Innocentius 91. Leo. 94, &c. John *the firſt.* 100, &c. Gregory *the firſt.* 108. Boniface 3d. *and fourth.* 109. Martin. 112. Vitalianus. 112, &c. Eugenius *the firſt.* 113. Agatho. 114. Leo *ſecond.* ibid. Sergius. 116. Conſtantin *the ſeaventh.* 117. Gregory *the ſecond* 118 &c. Gregory *third.* 118. Stephen. 121. Zachary. ib. Adrian *the firſt.* 125. Leo *the third.* ib. &c. Sergius *the ſecond.* 133. Leo *fourth.* 134. Formoſus. 139, &c. Gregory *the ninth.* 223. *Popes wanting* 21 *months* 226. Innocent *fourth.* ib. *the Popes conteſtations with* England. 231, &c Gregory *the ninth.* 234. Clemens *the fifth tranſlates his ſeat to* Avinion. 238. Boniface *the eight.* 239. Clemens *the fourth.* 246. *Popes choſen without the Conclave.* ib. Martin *the fourth.* ib. Celeſtin *the fifth.* ib. Boniface *the eight.* ib. John *the twenty two.* 258. Clemens *the fifth, his Coronation and Actions.* 275. John *the* 22, *his error and actions.* 276. Benedict *the eleventh.* ib. Clemens *ſixt.* ib. Innocent *the ſixt.* ib. Urban *ſixt.* 277. Boniface *ninth.* ib. Martin *the fifth.* 334. Eugenius *the fourth.* Felix 5th. 336. 350. Pope *honors the* Switzers. 366. Pius *the ſecond.* 410. Julius *ſecond.* 412. Leo *the tenth.* 418. Clemens *the ſeaventh.* 425. Julius *the third.* 429. Paul *fourth, a great* Antilutherian. 431. Pius *fourth.* 432. Gregory 13th 437. Sixtus *the fifth.* ib. Paul *the* 5th 441. Gregory *the* 15th. 452, &c. Urban *the eighth.* 454. Julius *the ſecond.* Leo *the tenth.* 504, &c. Clement *ſeaventh.* 506
Popes, divers in few years. 162
Pope Paſchalis. 169. *Pope* Adrian. 177. Vittor *and* Alexander Anti-popes. ibid.
Pierre de la Lune, *a* Caſtilian *Pope, removes from* Avenion. 303
Pope Paul *the fourth* 506, &c.
Popes power curbed by King Henry *the eight.* 558
Portugall *Crown in queſtion.* 277
Portugals *take many places in the Eaſt-Indies.* 431
Portugal *ſeiſed on by the* Spaniard. 435

Presbyterie.

Fresbyterie curbed in Scotland. 629. *their power.* 631. *force King* James. 631, &c.
Prodigies. 223. 276. 384. 386, &c. 392. 437. 447. 454. 460. 462. 504. 534. 593. 153.
Proteſtants differ among themſelves. 426. *are gently uſed by* Cæſar. 428. *Reject the Counſel of* Trent, 432. *are perſecuted* ib. *maſſacred.* 434. *Their troubles and Doctrins.* 429. *they are diſperſed, and allowed.* 430 435
Baniſhed out of Styria, &c. 439. *their troubles in* Germany. 442. *Complain at the Diet of* Ratisbon. 444
Their Jubilee cauſeth much trouble. 447. *their proceedings in* Bohemia. ib.
Are maſſacred in France. 507. *perſecuted there.* 513
Perſecuted alſo in Scotland. 575, &c. 579. *make ſtirrs in* Edinburgh. 583
In Scotland *quarrel with the Queen Regent.* ib. *their Violencies.* 584.
Angry at Queen Maries *match.* 594 *and abuſes offered.* ibid.
In Scotland *prevail, and ſhake off the* French *yoke.* 613. *Petition the Queen Regent to diſmiſs the* French. 614
Province *falls to the* French *King.* 500
Pruſius, *King of* Bithynia, *ſlain by his ſon.* 3
Pruſia, *the* Turks *Capital City.* 248
Ptolomie Philometor, *is reſtored and reconciled to his brother.* 2. *his actions and death.* 3.
Ptolomi Euergetes 5
Ptolomi Philometor, *his kindneſs to the* Iews. 5.
Ptolomie Lamyras, *his cruelties.* 10. Ptolomie *is driven out of* Ægypt. 21
Ptolomie Auletes *dieth.* 25
Ptolomie Dionyſius. 25. Ptolomies *Library burnt.* 27. *he is ſtifled in the mud.* ib.
Ptolomais *taken by* Sultan Melech. 236
Publicius Malleolus, *his murther and puniſhment.* 13
Pulcheria. 59

Q

Queen Mother of Fra^n^ce. 511, &c.
Quintillus *Emperor.* 72

R

RAdbodus *his wicked ſpeech.* 118
Sir Walter Rawleigh *beheaded.* 639
Randulph, *Earl of* Murry, *Protector of* Scotland. 323
Ravenna, *the Regal Seat of* Italy, 97, &c. *the* Exarchat. 104. *the Biſhoprick.* 114. *endeth.* 121.
Rebellion of Yorkſhire. 547. *in the North.* 545, &c. *in* Cornwall. 548, &c.
In Lincolnſhire, *and other Northern Parts.* 559
In Cornwall *and* Devonſhire *about Religion.* 586. *about incloſures in* Norfolk. 587. *the Rebels ſtoutneſs and ſtrength.* ib. &c. *North Rebellions.* 588
In the North againſt Queen Elizabeth. 599, &c.
Regent, his abſence from Scotland, *occaſioneth much miſchief.* 572, &c. *His actions with the Queen Mother* 581. *reſignes his place to her.* 582
Queen Regent of Scotland, *and her actions.* ib.
She dieth. 614
Rhodes *and* Belgrad *taken by* Solyman. 475, &c.
Ricaredus, *King of* Spain, *is called Catholick.* 108
Richard cure de Lion, *King of* England, *his actions abroad and at home.* 189, &c.
Richard *Earl of* Cornwall. 235. 240, &c.
Richard *the ſecond, King of* England. 315, &c. *his miſgovernment.* 318, &c. *is depoſed.* 319
Earl of Richmond *encouraged by Dr.* Morton, *againſt King* Richard. 554. *puts to Sea, and returns into* Britany. 550. *where he was like to be betrayed.* ib. *he arrives at* Milford *Haven.* ib *Fights King* Richard, *gets the day, and is Crowned in the field.* 556
Earl of Richmond *preſerved in a Sanctuary.* 558

David

David Riz, *great with Queen* Mary. 618.
His bad counſell and end. 619
Robert, *the Conquerors ſonne, rebels.* 167
Agrees with his brother Henry. 173. *dieth.* ibid.
Robert, *King of* Apulia. 256
Robert de Vere, *Duke of* Ireland. 317
Robert *King of* Scotland *dieth with grief.* 536
Rodulphus, *Duke of* Suevia *made Emperor, and loſt his Army.* 160
Rodulphus *the ſecond, Emperor.* 435
Rodulphus *Emperor, dieth.* 444
Rogation, *when inſtituted.* 97
Roger, *King of* Sicily. 171
Rogerius Laurea, *the* Spaniſh *Admiral.* 247
Rohan *beſieged and taken by the* Engliſh. 521
Rollan, *called* Rupert. 138
Roman *victories.* 4, 5. *they degenerate.* ibid.
troubled by the ſedition of Gracchus. 8 *by the ſlavs of* Sicily *and* Cilicia. ib.
Rome *infeſted with the plague.* ib.
the Romans *ſeverity againſt* Matienus *and* Mancinus. 9. *their ſucceſs, bad and good in* Spain. ib. *againſt* Jugurtha. 12. *againſt the* Cimbrians *and* Teutons. 12, 13. *againſt the* Thracians. ib. *againſt the ſlaves.* ib. &c. *againſt the* Piſentes, Samnites, Marſians, *and other* Italians. 14, 15. *their bloodie civil wars.* ib. &c. *their* Sertorian, Spartic, Sardanian, *and* Mithridatick *wars.* 18. *their Pyratical war.* ib. *and* German. 22. *their ſucceſs in* Gallia *and* Britan. 22, &c. *their battel at* Pharſalia. 26, &c. *the number of the Citizens.* 28 *they defeat the* Parthians, *by* Ventidius. 31. *their civil war at* Actium. 33. *their miſerie under* Tiberius. 37, &c. *under* Caligula. 40, &c. *their number under* Claudius. 42. *their miſerie under* Nero. 44. *are murthered by the* Britans. ib. *their diſaſters under* Commodus. 59. *and* Caracalla. 64. *their Victory over the* Perſians. 66. *their miſeries under* Gordianus. 67. *the* Roman *Empire torne* 69, &c. Romes *miſerie under* Nepotianus. 82. *are defeated by the* Hunns, Goths, *and* Vandals. 87. Rome *taken by* Alaricus. 92. *Sack'd by* Genſericus. 96. *taken by the* Heruli *and others.* 97. *ends in* Auguſtulus. ib. *taken by* Belisarius, *then by* Totilas. 102, &c. Rome *ſurprized by a hare.* 139. *overthrowes* Fredericks *Gariſons.* 226. *runs with blood under the* Columni *and* Urſini. 256 *taken twice by* Ladiſlaus. 260. Romans *abuſe Pope* Pauls *Statue.* 432. *in* Rome, *ſtrife about the Popes Election.* 440. *taken by the Duke of* Burbon. 506
Romans *ſtorm at the Inquiſition.* 507
Romanus *the Admiral.* 141
Romanus *the younger, Emperor of* Conſtantinople. 147
Romanus Argytropolus, *Emperor, his life and death.* 157
Romanus Diogines, *how uſed by the* Turks. 163. *and how by* Ducas. 164
Rome *taken, and the Walls overthrown* 333
Romilda *and her daughters.* 109
Roſimunda, *her revenge.* 104
Biſhop *of* Roſs, *Agent for Queen* Mary. 627
Rotchell *Beſieged.* 513. *and taken.* 514
Rotvil, *the place of Judicature.* 371
Rudolphus *of* Burgundy. 143
Rudolphus *of* Haſpurg, *Emperour.* 235
his Victories and actions. 236. *his death.* ib.
Ruffinus. 90
Rupert *of* Bavaria, *Emperor.* 331. *his actions.* 332
Rupert *the* Palatin *occaſioneth a Warre.* 417
Ruſſians *defeated.* 144. *of the* Greek-*Communion.* 246
Ruſſia *deluded by* Demetrius, *the Counterfeit Prince.* 440
Ruſſia *Moleſted by the* Polander. 446

S

SAlador, *its Hiſtory.* 364
Salique *Law.* 287. *in* Savoy. 394
Sapores, *the* Perſian *King.* 68, &c. 81.85
Saracens *ſubdue the Eaſt.* 111. *attempt* Byzantium, *and take* Rhodes. 112, &c. *fall out about their profit.* 113. *Waſte* Afric, *and are defeated by* Conſtantin. ibid. &c. *Subdue the* Perſians. 115. *defeat* Juſtinian. ibid. *Are killed in* France. 119. *And in* Spain. 125. *Overrun* Cyprus. 127. *Defeated in* Spain, 130. *They Defie* Chriſt *and* Baſil *the Emperor.* 136. *Their Rites and Prayers changed.* 138. *Beat by the* Tartars. 248
Sarmatians. 87
Saturninus *torne in pieces.* 14
Savoy, *and its Earls.* 279, &c.
Savoyen *Hiſtory proſecuted.* 345. 392, &c.
Savoy *made a Prey to ſtrangers.* 393
Savoy *denies paſſage to the* French. 491
Duke of Saxonies *complaint, and reſolution.* 386
Saxony *much troubled, and their Duke taken.* 429
Saxons *called into* Brittan. 93. *Drive out the* Brittans. 95. *Erect their Kingdom.* 98. *Kept off from landing.* 102. *Take the Iſle of* VVight. ibid. *quarrel with the* Suevi. 107. *Their Plantations.* 129
Saxons *quarrel with* Henry *the ſeaventh Emperor.* 160, &c.
Saxons *and* Cæſarians *at variance.* 429, &c.
Saxony *the ſeat of war.* 455
Scaliger, Cajus *and* Maſtinus. 259
Scanderbeg *revolts from* Amurath, 464. *with* Huniades, *ſpoyles* Amurath. 465
Scanderbeg *is beat, and dieth.* 468. *His ſtrength and courage.* ib.
Scaphuſa, *it's Hiſtory.* 366
Schiſmes. 86.277.295.251
Scipio Æmilianus. 4. *Oppoſeth* Gracchus, *and is poyſoned.* 8. Scipio *is ſent againſt* Numantia. 9. Scipio, Pompeys *Father in law kills himſelf.* 27
Bardas Sclerus *his actions.* 149, &c.
Scotland *troubled with inteſtin wars.* 325
Scotland *ſhelters the* Engliſh *King and his adherents.* 534
Scotlands *friendſhip ſought for by the* Engliſh *and* French. 538
Scotland *diſturbed by the Chancellor and Regent.* 539. *By* Douglaſſe. 544
Troubled by Courtiers, and Factions, 563, &c.
In great troubles in James *the fifth's Minority.* 570. &c.
Troubled with civil wars between Queen Marie's *Party and the Regents.* 624, &c.
Raiſeth tumults about the new Service-Book. 642
Biſhops of Scotland *proteſt againſt the Covenanters.* 643
Scots *Presbyterians expell the Biſhops, and raiſe great Armies againſt the King.* ibid.
Invade England. 646.
Take Newcaſtle. ib.
Scots *receive the Chriſtian Faith, when* 79
Converted by Palladius. 93
Deſtroy the Picts. 134
Have Wars with England, *and troubles at home.* 233
They beat the Danes *and* Norvegians. 243
Take the Iſle of Man, *and aid King* Henry *againſt the* Barons. 243
Scots *Clergy conteſt with the Nobility;* 243. *they ſlight the Popes Legat.* ib. *divided by the factions of* Baliol *and* Bruce. 244. *they overthrow the* Engliſh *Fleet.* ibid.
They loſe Barwick, Edenburgh, *and* Sterling. 245.
They invade England. ib.
Are beat by King Edward. ib.
They defeat three Engliſh *Armies in one day.* ib.
Scots *overthrow the* Engliſh *at* Bannock- 306

Invade

Invade England *and* Wales. 317.
are angry with the French. ibid.
Their ſucceſs at home and in Ireland 321
Slight the Popes Legats. 322
Invade England *again with.* 20000 *horſe.* ib.
Beaten by Baliol. 324. *invade* Engl. *without their Kings conſent.* 328
Scotch *and* Engliſh *bickerings in* France. 536. Scots *defeated at* Floden. 551. *Their civil Wars.* 536
Scots *waſte the* Engliſh *borders.* 579.
Their miſeries in Queen Maries *Minority.* 577, &c.
Will not hearken to a match with England. 580. *are defeated by the* Engliſh. ib.
Send Commiſſioners into France *about the match.* 582. *are poyſoned there.* 583
Scots *Crown demanded by the* French. *but refuſed.* ib.
Scots *Proteſtants make a League with* England *againſt* France. 585
Scots *beaten by* Sommerſet, *Protector of* England. 586
Scots *beat the* French *into* Leith. 614
Will not be induced to admit Queen Mary. 625
Scylla, *his victories and quarrels with* Marius. 15, &c. *his cruel acts and ſucceſs.* 16, &c. *his Dictatorſhip and death.* 17
Sejanus, *his wickedneſs and cruelties.* 37 &c. *his Tragical end.* 39
Seleucus, *ſon of* Antiochns Gryphus. 11
Selymus *the* Turk. 472. *his actions and victories.* ib. &c. *his end.* 474
Selymus *the ſecond, his victories.* 478
Seneca. 44. &c.
Seriphas *the* Ægyptian. 248
Sertorius *his actions and death.* 18
Severus *Emperor.* 61. *he defeats* Niger. ib. *his other actions.* 62. *his rigid Government and end.* ib. Severus *the* Eutychean. 99, &c.
Sextus Pompeius *ſeiſeth upon Sicily,* 30 *is reconciled to* Octavius *&* Antony, 31. *is beat at ſea, and ſlain.* ibid
Maximilian Sforſa's *gift to the* Switzers. 374
Francis Sfortia *invades* Millan. 411 *his actions and end.* 412. *his ſon recovers it.* ib. 416
Sfortia *defeated by the* Switzers. 504
Engliſh Ships, *two in number, fight with* 30 *Turkiſh Gallies.* 485
Engliſh Ships *taken by the* Scots 567
Sicily *quickly won and loſt.* 157
Sicilian *cruelty againſt the* French. 235
Sigiſmund *of* Auſtria. 375
Sigiſmund *of* Swethland *depoſed.* 377, &c.
Sigiſmund *Emperor.* 333. *his actions.* ibid. &c.
Sigiſmund, *King of* Hungarie. 270. 397, &c.
Sigiſmund *King of* Hungarie *impriſoned, and ſet free.* 303
Sileſia *ſubdued.* 257
Simon *ſucceeds* Jonathas. 6. *his actions; is murthered.* ib. Symon Magus. 43. 45
Sinan *the* Turk *dieth with grief.* 403
Siroes *the* Perſian *King.* 110
Slaves trouble the Romans. 8. *are overthrown in* Sicily *by* Lucullus *and* Aquilius. 13. &c.
Slavi, *or* Slavonians. 101. 108. 115.
Solyman *invades* Hungary. 400. *forced to leave* Vienna. ib.
Solyman *his actions and victories.* 475, &c. *his end and Character.* 478
Spain *poſſeſſed by the* Saracens. 117. *under* Mozarabes *and* Almod, Arabians. 119
Overrun by the Mores. 192
Spain *defeats the* Affrican *Kings.* 290 *troubled with civil Wars.* 344. *Obtains all* Naples. 417. *beats out the* Moors. 413. Spaniſh *Fleet beat by* Solyman. 433. Spaniſh *harſhneſs in* Belgium. ib. Spaniards *beaten out of* Africa. 434. *rejected by the* Netherlanders. 435
Spain *hath divers diſaſters.* 503
Spain *prepares a Feet againſt* England. 604. *The greatneſſe thereof.* ib.
Spaniſh *Fleet encountred with, and defeated by the* Engliſh. 605, &c.
Spain *invaded by the* Engliſh. 606
Spaniards *beaten by the* French. 607

Spaniards *beat and are beaten.* 452.
Spaniards *beat the* French *out of* Italy 504
Spaniards *in* Ireland *article with the Deputy and are ſent home.* 611
Spaniſh *Fleet defeated by the* Hollanders. 644
Archbiſhop of Spalato *entertained and ſent away.* 640
Spartacus *his actions and death.* 18
Spencer. 306,&c.
Spinola *and* Maurice, *their actions.* 454
Spier *Dioceſs mutinies.* 419
Stauratius *the* Patrician. 123, &c. *his ſon.* 127. *wounded.* ib.
Stephen *the Patriarch.* 144
Stephen, *King of* England. 187
Stilico. 90
Michael Stratioticus Greek *Emperor.* 162
Robert Stuart, *King of* Scotland. 327
Stuarts *and* Douglaſſes *ſtrive for the young King.* 573
Matthew Stuart, *Earl of* Lenox, *deluded.* 577. *beaten, and flies into* England. 578,&c.
Charls Suderman. 440
Suffolk *accuſed of high Treaſon.* 530. *his end.* ib.
Sultan, *his expedition into* Perſia. 485. *he ſends home the* French *Ambaſſador, and bribes the* Janiſaries. ib. &c.
Duke of Sommerſet *accuſed, and ſlain.* 531
Duke of Sommerſet, *protector of* England, *executes his brother, and is accuſed of* Treaſon. 588. *is executed.* 589
Swediſh *Hiſtory.* 377,&c.
Swedes *make Laws for eſtabliſhing their Kingdom.* 379. *have wars with the* Danes. ib.
Swethland *and its Kings.* 265,&c.
Swethlands *Hiſtory.* 336,&c.
Switzers *ſubdued by* Rodulphus. 246. *Cantonize themſelves.* 253. *their valour in the* Romans *time, and their Service againſt the* Sarazens. 357. *they rebel againſt their Nobles.* ib. *divided into two Religions.* ib. *their League.* 358. *they had much bickering with the* Auſtrians. 357, &c. *their Hiſtory.* ib.&c. *they have divers enemies.* 361. *they war amongſt themſelves, and with the* French 362. *they defeat and kill* Charls *of* Burgundy. 363. *they increas their Canton Towns.* ib. *they quarrel with* Millan. ib. *their laſt war for their Liberty.* 365. *are worſted at* Naples. 366. *they aid the* French *and the* Pope. ib. *and* Maximilian. 367. *their amity ſought for.* 366. *make peace with the* French. 368. *then fall out with them.* ibid. *then make a perpetual League with* France. ib.&c. *their ſtipendiary Towns.* 372. *other of their Towns.* 373. *their 9 Bailiuges.* 374. *their free Provinces.* ib. *their divers Confederacies.* 375, &c. *they defeat and kill* Charls *of Burgundy.* 410. diſſwade *the election of King* Francis. 421
Synod, ſee Councel.

T

TAmerlan *and his Conqueſts.* 264.
Tartarians, *what kinde of people.* 182
Tartars *overrun many Countries.* 230. *are converted* ib. *ſend to the Pope.* 239. *become* Mahumetans. 247, &c.
Precopit Tartars *made ſlaves to the* Turks. 479
Taurinum *ſtrangely releaſed.* 281
Techelles *the* Perſian *Commander.* 471 &c.
Telerichus *the* Bulgarian. 120.122
Temple at Delphos. 85. *at* Jeruſalem. 49.84. *of* Apollo *at* Rome. 85. *of S.* Sophia. 103. *of S.* Mark. 104. *of the Holy Sepulchre taken.* 229
Templars deſtroyed. 238,&c.
Tenedos *occaſion of much war.* 271. *ſlighted and forſaken.* 275.
Terza *beats the* Turk, 247
Thalmud. 100
Theodiſcus *corrupts* Iſiodor. 113
Theodoſius *the Emperor.* 88. *his excellencies.* ib.&c. *his death.* 89
Theodoſius *the younger.* 91,&c. Theodoſius *of* Adramyttum. 117. &c.
Theophilus *Emperor.* 132
Theodora *Empereſs.* 134
Theodoricus *the* Goth. 94. *his actions and death.* 98.
Theodorus Laſcalis. 228. Theodorici *Earls of* Holland. 251

Thomas, *ſirnamed* Conſtantin, *his life and death.* 132.
Thomas *Earl of* Savoy. 280.
Thracians *Rebellion.* 13
Tiberius *his victories.* 35. *his government and qualities deſcribed.* 36. *his reformation and cruel nature.* 37. *is perſwaded by* Sejanus *to remove from the City.* ib. *he lives eleven years at* Capreæ, *and why.* 38. *his inhumanitie to his mother.* ib. *he deſtroys* Sejanus, *and why* 39. *his death and burial.* 40.
Tiberius, *Emperor of* Byzantium, *his actions.* 105. *dyeth.* 106
Tiberius Apiſmarus, *Emperor.* 115
Tigranes *and his actions.* 17. 19, &c.
Tigurum *changeth its Government.* 358. *like to be ſurprized, and quarrels with* Habeſpurg. 359. *and with* Raperſvil. ib. *they waſte* Marchia. ib. *deſire peace with* Auſtria, *which is denied them.* 360. *they ſubmit to the Queen of Hungaries verdict.* ib. *make war with the* Auſtrian. 360, &c.
Tigurins *will make no League with* France, *and their reaſons.* 368.
Tilly, *the* Cæſarian *Generaliſſimo.* 382 *takes* Magdeburg. 383. *his other actions.* 384, &c.
Tilly *Defeated and wounded* 386. *wounded again.* 388. *dieth at* Ingolſtad. 389
Tillies *and* Fridlands *procee dings.* 456 &c. 460
Tir-Oen *rebels in* Ulſter. 609, &c. *his underhand-dealing.* 610. *he beats the* Engliſh. ib. *he parlies with* Eſſex. ib. *ſpoiles* Ireland, *and is beat by* Montjoy. 611. *ſubmits and is pardoned.* ibid.
Titus *the Emperor.* 46. *ſubdues* Jeruſalem. 49. *and Triumpheth with his Father.* ib. *his ſweet nature and conditions.* 50
Tomumbeius, *King of* Ægypt, *hanged by* Selymus. 474.
Totilas. 102. *killed.* 103
Tournay *taken by a* French *Barbar.* 499
Trajan. 52. *his good Government and victories.* 53. *indangered at* Antioch ib. *his loſſes and death.* ib. *his burial and Pillar.* 54
Traitors and Treaſons againſt Queen Elizabeth *detected.* 600, &c.
Tranſylvania *peſtred with civil war.* 439
Treaties between England, Naples *and* Perſia, *with the* Turk. 483
Elector of Trevers *Speech.* 422, &c.
Troubles between the Queen Regent of Scotland *and the Proteſtants.* 584, &c.
Tryphon *obtains* Syria. 5. *which he loſeth again, and is ſlain.* 6. Tryphon *the Patriarch.* 144
Tully *is queſtor.* 19. *Conſul.* 20. *is baniſhed and plundered.* 21. *returns, and is called* Transfuga. 23. *and Imperator.* ib. *pleads for* Milo. 24. *inveighs againſt* Antony. 29. *is baniſhed, murthered, and after death, abuſed.* 30
Tunis *beſieged, which makes peace with the Chriſtians.* 302
Turks. 105. *revolt from* Heraclius. 110 *break out of the* Caſpian *Straits.* 121
Turks *employed by* Mahomet. 150. *whom they ſubdue with his* Saracens. 151. *they deſire peace with* Conſtantin. 158. *beaten by* Theod. Laſcaris. 228. *Invade the* Greek *Empire.* 246 *defeat the* Alani. 247. *waſte the Eaſtern Empire.* 248. *take divers Towns.* 250. *their original and increaſe.* 262 &c. *their Tetrarches.* 263 *called in by* Francis *the* French *king, they beſiege* Nicæa. 395. *waſte* Hungary. 400. *they defeat* Ferdinand, *and are defeated by him.* 401. *their cruelties in* Hungary 403. *aſſault* Malta, *and take* Chios. 433. 477. *take* Cyprus *and* Golet, 434. 478. *take* Conſtantinople. 466. *take divers places from the* Venetian. 467, &c. *they take* Rhodes. 476. *defeated at* Lepanto. 478. *their bad ſucceſs againſt the* Perſians. 479. *their perfidiouſneſs to* Hungary. ib. *their bad ſucceſs in the* Mediterranean *ſea.* 481
Wat Tylers *Rebellion.* 315

V

VAlentinian *and* Valens, *their Government.* 86. *and end.* 87.
Valentinian *the ſecond.* 88. &c
Valentinian *the third.* 93. 95
Valerianus *his reigne and end.* 69

Valesians *their History.* 370
Vandals *invade* Africa. 93
Varius Antoninus Heliogabalus, *why so called.* 64. *his wicked, tyrannicall, and ridiculous Government.* 64, &c. *his end.* 65
Varus *is defeated in* Germany. 35. *he defeats the Jews.* 36
Iohn Vayvod *of* Transylvania. 400 *Confirmed k. of* Hungary *by the Turk,* ib. Vayvods *treachery.* 402
Venice *founded.* 95. *her first Duke.* 117
Venetians *expell the Duke,* 127. *Besiege* Byzantium. 186. *Make a League with the* Comnins *against the* Lascarins. 228. *take* Candie. 233. *quarrel with the* Genuois *about a Church,* 236. *they fight the* Genuois. 261. *quarrel again.* 269. *their long warr with* Genua *for the Isle of* Tenedos. 271. *are beaten, and sue for peace.* 272, &c. *beat off from the walls of* Clodia. 273. *defeated at Sea by the* Genuois *again.* 274. *obtain a victory.* ib. *recover all their losses.* ib. &c. *are reconciled with the* Genuois. 275 *are deluded by* Fr. Sfortia. 412. *enter into a League against him.* 416. *their greatnesse envied.* 417. *their losses.* 418. *fall out with the Jesuites and Pope.* 441. *and reconciled.* ibid. *their ships infested by the Croats.* 446 *are reconciled to* Ferdinand *the arch-Duke.* ib. *lose divers places.* 467, &c. *make peace with* Mahomet. 468. *they quarrel with* Bajazet. 470. *make peace with him.* ib. *lose* Cyprus. 478
Vespasian's *actions in Judea.* 46, &c. *his reign.* 48. *his good parts and end* 49, &c. Vesuvius *breaks out.* 50, 97
Victor *Bishop of Rome.* 59
Villiers *D. of* Buckingham. 638
Viriatus *a Robber beats the* Romans. 8 *is betrayed and slain.* ib.
Virius *the Captain.* 345
Visigoths. 93. *subdue* Cantabria. 105
Vitalianus *Mustermaster.* 99, &c.
Vitellius *his reign and death.* 47, &c.
Vitiges *the* Goth. 102.
Uladomirus *Pr. of* Russia *defeated.* 158
Ulphilas *Bishop.* 86
Ulricus *Earl of* Cilia. 408
Union *of* England *and* Scotland *hindered.* 572
Universities *of* Cambridge. 111. *Of* Paris. 125. *of* Papia, Ticinum Osnaburg, *and* Bononia. 125. *Of* Oxford. 136. *Of* Bononia *translated to* Padua. 226. *Of* Naples. 227 *Of* Salmatica. 234. *Of* Prague. 268 *Of* Lovain. ib. *Of* Orleans. 276. *Of* Cracovia. 277. *Of* Lipsia. 334 *Of* Tubinga. 414. *Of* Witteberg, *of* Franckfort. 415. *Of* Sena. 431 *Of* Leyden. 434. *Of* Helmestad. ib. *Of Saint* Andrews *in Scotland.* 536 *Of* Lovan *in Brabant.* 146
John *Archbishop of* Upsalia, 339
Usumcassanes *his message to* Mahomet 467. 470
Bishops of Utricht. 344

W

VValdemar *king of* Denmark. 177
Waldemar 2^d *K. of* Denmark. 224
Waldemar 3^d 266
Waldenses *what?* 222. *Beaten by* Philip, Lewis *the* 8. *and* Lewis 9. 229
Wales *subdued.* 242. *Prince of* Wales *in* France *complained against.* 294
Wall *of* Peloponesus *built and demolished.* 262
holy-War *undertaken.* 164. *&c.* 181
War *begun between* Denmark *&* Tilly 454. *In the* Valtelin. 455
Wars *between* England *and* France, 291, *&c. In* Flanders, 295.
Wars *denounced at the Diet of* Spire. *against K.* Francis. 396
VVars *of the Netherlands begun,* 433, *&c.* 436
Wars *between* Engl. *and* France. 551 *Between* England *&* Scotland. 327 *Between* England *and* Scotland *again,* 542, 560, 578, *&c. In* Flanders *by the* Gauntois. 298. *Between* Lewis 11. *and his people.* 492, &c. *Between* Mantua *and* Savoy, 446 *In* Germany *and* Bohemia. 448. *Between* Poland *and the* Turk. 481, 482, 485
Warwicks *proceedings against K.* Edward. 547, &c.
Wenceslaus *Emperor, his flagitious life and death.* 269, &c.
John Wickliffe *occasions tumults in* London. 314
A Wild-man *in* Sardinia. 182
William *the* Conqueror. 167, &c. *his actions and end.* 168. Wil-

William 2d *his life and end.* 168, &c.
William, *King of* Scotland, *his actions and death.* 191, &c.
William, *Ea. of* Holland, *againſt* Frederick. 226. *is driven back into* Holland. 227
William Wallas, *a valiant* Scot. 243.
he recovers the loſt towns, and beats out the Engliſh. 245. *invades* England ib. *is betrayed and ſlain.* ib.
William, *Biſhop of* Utricht. 252
William, *Earl of* Holland, *ſails into* Scotland. ib.
William, *K. of the* Romans, *his life & death.* 253.
William, *third and fourth, Earls of* Holland. 278, &c.
Wolfardus *the Favorit hanged.* 253
Wolſey, *his greatneſs and pride.* 552, &c. *his oppreſſions and ſacriledge.* 553 &c. *his entertainment abroad.* 552, 554. *accuſed and articled againſt.* 555 *his downfall.* 556
Wyats *Rebellion.* 591, &c. *he is taken. and beheaded.* 592

Y

A Rchbiſhop of York *defeated by the* Scots. 321
Battels between the Yorkſhire *and* Lancaſhire *Factions.* 531, &c.
D. of York *raiſeth an Army, & is made Protector.* 531. *is removed, and raiſeth an Army.* 532. *flyeth into* Ireland, *returns and claims the Crown.* 533. *is ſlain.* 534. *young Duke of* York *fights, and is victorious.* ib.

Z

ZEbina, *King of* Syria. 7
George Zeck, *the factious* Hungarian *tortured.* 399
Zeland *united to* Holland. 253. *troubled.* 278
Zelots *of* Judæa. 36
Zeno, *an* Eutychian. 97. *ſtarved in his Tombe.* 98
Zenobia. 71, &c.
Zimiſces, *Emperor of the Eaſt.* 148
Zirizæa *Beſieged.* 278
Zoe, Conſtantine *his mother.* 141.
Zoe, *the wife of* Romanus. 157, &c.

FINIS.

Good Reader, Though care was uſed to prevent literall or verball Errors, yet by reaſon the Book was under Three ſeverall Preſſes, ſome *Errata*'s have eſcaped the Eyes of the *Correctors*, which are here ſet down, and may be mended with thy Pen.

In the *PREFACE*; p. 5, *l.* 12; *r.* Hiſtorians.

PAge 7. *line* 22. *read* one; p. 8. *l.* 49. *dele* the; p. 12. *l.* 53. *r.* I *gurins*; p. 13. *l* 27. *r Publicius*; p. 17 *l* 10. *r* Legions; *Ib. Cap.* 5 *Contents, r. Catalins* conſpiracy; p 19. *l* 17. *r* Eunuch; p. 20. *l.* 39. *r.* Arrears; p 21. *inſert* and; p 23. *l* 43 *r.* Illings; *Ib l.* 31 *r. Caſteauneuf*; p. 26. *l.* 48. *dele* were knights; p. 29. *l* 57. *r. Antonius, Marocks* brother; p. 41 *l.* 41. *r.* Manumiſſed; p. 43. *l* 44. *r de Marſo*; p. 51. *l.* 13. *r.* Viſards; p. 53. *l.* 29. *r. Walachia*; p. 55. *l.* 15. & 17, *r. Antoninus*; p. 59. *l.* 39. *r. Pantenus*; p 63. *l.* 4. *r. Leonides*; p. 68. *l* 2. *r. Buſiris*; *l.* 30. *r.* Conqueror; p. 72. *l.* 17. *r.* boughs; *p* 87. *l.* 3. add *the*; *p.* 96. *l* 37. *r.* People; p. 106. *l.* 7. *dele*, in; *p* 111. *l.* 3. *r. Heraclius*; *l.* 37 *r. Aquitania*; *l.* 48. *r. Artois*; p. 115. *l* 1. *r.* ſate a while; *p.* 121. *l.* 37. *r. Æmilia*; p. 131. *l.* 21. *r.* by his followers; p. 138 *l.* 20. *r. Gallic* Ocean; *p.* 149 *l.* 48. *dele*, the; p. 156. *l.* 36 *r. Legio*; *p.* 172 *l.* 35. *r. Apenins*; p. 181. *l.* 21. *r. Henry*; p. 229. *l.* 26 *r. Calyphs* forces; *p.* 210. *l* 48. *for* place, *r.* peace; *p.* 233. *l.* 55. *r. Trapezuntinum*; *p.* 235. *l.* 30. *r Sancius*; p. 247. *l.* 55. *r. Bætia*; *p.* 255. *l.* 53. *r.* ſets himſelf forward; *p* 256. *l* 21. *r. Placenza*; *p.* 257. *l.* 12 *r. Benna*; *p.* 262. *l.* 55. *dele*, by; *p.* 269. *l.* 28, *r. Famaguſta*; *p.* 271. *l.* 38, *r. Friouli*; *l* 46, *r.* againſt them; *p.* 272. *l.* 51, *r. Colodia Foſſa*; *p.* 273. *l.* 6, *for*, it, *r.* in; *l.* 19, *r Hamiſcur*; *p.* 277. *l.* 26, *dele*, he; *l.* 48, *r. Annates*; *p.* 279. *l.* 29, *r. Sabaudia*; *l.* 45, *r. Caudatus*; *p.* 288 *l.* 33, *r.* the Flemings; *p.* 315. *l.* 11, *r.* the Drawbridg; *p.* 321. *l.* 17, *r.* he had hidden; *p* 332. *l.* 34, *r. Forum-Julii*; *p.* 335. *l.* 7, *r.* deſired; *l.* 28, *r.* the Papacy; *p.* 347 *l* 13, *r. Vandemontium*; *p.* 361. *l.* 22, *r. Bern*, *ib.* &c. *p.* 383. *l.* 13, *r. Monticuculus*; *l.* 27, *r.* neither; *p.* 385. *l.* 33, *dele*, an; *l.* 50, *r.* but to no purpoſe; *p.* 386. *l.* 12, *r.* of *Wittenberg*, *p.* 397. *l.* 20, *dele*, he; *p.* 399 *l.* 51, *r.* defeats them, one; *p.* (397) *l.* 28, *r. Vayvodia*; *p.* (398) *l.* 51, *r. Scuati*; *p.* (399) *l* 13, *r. Walachia*; *ib. l.* 49.

P 404, for *Bohemia*, *r. Hungaria*; *p* 407. *l.* 32, *r. Amurath*; *ib.* 35, *&c.* *p* 409, *l.* 24. *r. Leonora & Senæ*; *ib.* 47, *Exarch*; *p.* 413 *l.* 46, *r. Conſalvus*; *ib.* 53. *p* 417. *l.* 50, *r. Bononia*; *p.* 418 *l.* 37, *r. Bentivoli*; *p* 419. *l.* 38, *r. Boruſcan*; *p.* 431. *l.* 4 *r. Leptis*; *l.* 13, *r. Genuois*; *p.* 433 *l.* 35, *r Chios*; *p.* 437. *l.* 8, *for* 17, *r.* 18. *p.* 439. *l.* 8, *r Waſinburg*; *p.* 440 *l.* 5, *r. Grave Maurice* took the Sluce; *p.* 451. *l.* 15, *Valtellionis*; *p.* 455. *l* 12, *r. Sebrize*; *p.* 462 *l.* 23, *r. Caſall*; *p.* 463. *l.* 47, *r. Adrianopolis*; *p.* 464. *l.* 7, *r.* Towns; *l.* 10, *r. Acarnavia*; *l.* 18, *r. Boſna*; *p.* 467. *l.* 38, *r. Conneri*; *l.* 47, *Boſna*; 49, *Aſiatick*; *p.* 468. *l.* 17, *r. Taurica Cherſoneſus*; *p.* 469 *l.* 49 *r Saladins*; *p.* 471. *l.* 9, *r.* Innovation; *p.* 472. *l* 18, *r.* the incitation; *p.* 483. *l.* 35, *r.* defeate by the Cæſarians; *l.* 50, for, *Tarta Han*, *r. Tartarian*; *p.* 485. *l.* 29, *r.* convented; *p.* 488. *l.* 32, *r.* in at all; *l.* 48, *dele*, is wiſhed; *p.* 491. *l.* 44, *r.* zeal; *p.* 493 *l.* 12, *r.* Towers; *p.* 496. *l.* 46, *r. Rhene*; *p.* 499. *l.* 52, *r. Galeas*; *p.* 500 *Contents Cap. r.* Proſecution of the French Hiſtory; *l.* 38, *r. Capitt*; *p.* 502, *l.* 42, *r. Angelo*; *p.* 504, *l* 31. *for* 3, *r.* 2. *p.* 511, *l.* 8 *for* accuſed, *r.* informed; *p.* 513. *l.* 44, *r. Soubize*; *ib &c. p.* 519. *l.* 23, *r. Marle*; *p.* 537. *l.* 7, *r. Mordacus*; *p.* 542. *l.* 10, *r. Argile*; *p* (548) *l.* 19, *r* of *France*; *p.* 558. *l.* 24, *r.* curbs; *p.* 573. *l.* 11, *&* 12, *r.* returning; *p* 583. *l.* 49, *r. Rauen*; *p.* 597. *l.* 42, *r Parker*; *p.* 625. *l.* 13, *dele*, him; *p.* 633. *l.* 8, *r. Ambaſſadors*; *p.* 640, *l.* 22, *for* Abbot, *r. Whitguift*; *p.* 641 *l.* 38, *r.* upon. *p.* 642. *l.* 25, *after* Parliament a *period.*

Faults eſcaped in the *CHRONOLOGY.*

178 *year* before Chriſt; *l.* 2, *r. Auleres*; *l.* 4, *Cizicenus*; 70 *A.* after Chr. in the *C: l.* 4, *r. Adbia*; 80 *C: l.* 2, *&* 5, *r. Cerinthus*; 100 *S: l.* 1 *r.* refuſeth the Conſulſhips; 160 *C: l.* 5, *r. Encratites*; 170 *S: l.* 3, *r. Marcomans*; 180 *C: l.* 8. *r. Artatyritæ*; 200 *C: l.* 4, *r Zephirinus*; 210 *C. l.* 3, *r. Eccleſaitæ*; 260 *S: r. Galien*; 380 *C: l.* 10, *r. Armorica*; 400 *C: l.* 6, *r. Metangiſmonitæ*; *l* 7, *r. Pelagius*; 420 *C: l.* 3, *r. Conſtantinople*; 440 *S: l.* 5, *r. Anthemius*; 470 *C: l.* 1, *Acatius*; 530 *S: l.* 3, *r. Conſtantinople*; 540 *C. l.* 1, *r. Virgilius*; 550 *l.* 7 *delent*; 740 *S: l.* 10. *r. Palatins*; 750 *S: l.* 3, *r.* out of *Macedonia*; 950 *S: l.* 6, *r. Hungarians*; *l.* 12, *r. Venice*; 1020 *S: l.* 2, *r. Cyclades*; *ib. C: l.* 5, *r.* preached; 1040 *S: l.* 5, *r. Monomachus*; 1050 *S: l.* 4, *r. Swatoticus*; *l.* 7, *r. Loveyn*; 1100 *S: l.* 13, *r. Anſelm*; *C: l* 4, *r. Ligeois*; 1110 *S: l.* 16, *add*, by K. *Coloman*; 1150 *S: l.* 14, *add*, to; 1170 *C: l.* 6. *add*, years; 1240 *S: l.* 22, *after* peace, a *period*; *l.* 23, *add*, the K. 1270 *S: l.* 6. *r. Domicella*; *l:* 28, *r. Anconians*; 1320 *S: l.* 20, *r. Polacs*; 1340 *S: l.* 1. *r. Nicomedia*; 1350 *l.* 1, *r. Lesbos*; 1380. *l.* 6, *r. Achmet*; 1410 *S: l.* 2, *r. Valachian*; 1430 *C: l.* 10, *r.* and the Biſhop; 1440 *S: l.* 5, *r. Moldavia*; 1460 *C: l.* 2, *r. Lætus*; 1520 *C: l.* 5, *r. Sena.*

The *Reader* is to take notice that (*C*) ſtands for to direct to matters of the Church; and (S) for the State.

THE

The Printers to the Reader.

SInce it is rather Ingenuity, then otherwise, to confess. The *Errata's* which have escaped us, will be our charge; though we could say, and it oft fals out, *That the best Authors write not always the best Hands*; which (as * one Observes) *hath rendred the Writings of a late Reverend and Learned Author, useless to the world*; but we cannot apply that to our Author; Besides, he is not only living, but active, and did oft visit us, or we him. That there are some Errors in a Book of this Bulk, is no wonder; That there were not more, we attribute to the *Authors* Care and Pains, and to the more then ordinary sedulity of the *Book-seller* to prevent them. The most are but litteral, scarce any that do alter the Sense in any place, but what with a *Comma* (,) *Point* (.) or *Parenthesis* (.) thy Pen may rectifie: Possibly thou mai'st finde some of them mended to thy hand, as they were, happily discovered at the Press.

So wishing thee to Correct and Read, then our opinions and hopes are, that you will like.

R. Cotes
T. Newcomb
T. Mab & *A Coles.*

* Mr. *Fuller* in his Preface to a *Posthume* Book of Dr. *Holdsworth.*

The Book-seller to the Buyer.

THis Book could not have been published (though intended for a general good) in a more censorious Age; the *Test* whereof I dare adventure. That which gave encouragement to Print it, is, That our *Author* in the cours of his *History*, hath comprehended much in a few lines. I shall confidently affirm, it was neither his Design or Work, to Confront his **Leader* (as some pretend) but that the world should have the benefit of *His History, compleated so far, as he might deliver himself freely and impartially without prejudice. Should he have oft digressed, or fraught it with the impertinencies which these later Years would have afforded, it would have swoln into too many Volums, either to burthen the Stationer, or overcharge the Reader, besides the vast (and peradventure unprofitable) expence of precious Time. If Marrow be better to digest then the Bone, or the Kernel then the Shel; then (instead of a *Prolix* History) this *Epitome* may gain thy acceptation; in confidence whereof I shall presume to subscribe my self (at least intentionally)

Thy Friend,
JOHN SAYWELL.

* *The ever Renowned Sir* WALTER RALEIGH **who wrote the first Part of the* History of the World.

Courteous READER (having the advantage of a blank Page before me) I thought good to minde thee, That (besides this *History*, &c.) there are extant a few *usefull Books*, as they may suit the Genius of thy reading.

For PRINCIPLES.

I. THat excellent Book (of *John Wollebius*, D. D. and ordinary Professor of Divinity in the University of *Basil*) compendiously containing the whole Body of *Christian Divinity*, both in the Speculative and Practique Parts thereof, whereof so many thousands have bin sold in *Latin*, lately (for *Britains* good) Englished, and in some obscure places cleared and enlarged by *Alexander Ross*; revised and amended in those misquoted Texts wherewith the *Latin* Copies do abound.

For PRACTICE.

II. That experienced Piece of *Richard Sibbs*, D.D. Entituled The *Returning Backslider* (& the *Saints Priviledge, &c.*) or a Commentary on the whole 14. Chapter of *Hosea*: the third time Reprinted, being one of the Legitimate Pieces of that truely pious Author, there being added in this an useful *Table*, wanting in former Editions, together with an account of all the works of the said Learned Author, as yet extant, By one piously affected with his Writings.

For NOTION.

III. Those *Seraphical Sermons* of Dr. *Donne* late Dean of S. *Pauls*, *London*, being fourscore in number and usually called his *First Volume*, containing the Quintessence of Piety and Parts, and dedicated to his late *Majesty*.

Which are all in the Vendition *of* John Saywell, *at the Greyhound in* Little Britain. 1652.

A REGISTER for the help of the BOOK-BINDER, whereby he may be ascertained of the Perfection of this Book.

The Order of the HISTORY.

¶ THe Title. (a) (a 2) (b) (b 2) (b 3) A. A 2. (a) B. B 2. B 3. *&c.* R 3. *ends.* Aa. Aa 2. *&c.* Zz 2. *ends.* Aaa. Aaa 2. *&c.* Ppp. Ppp 2. Ppp 3. *&c.* Rrr 3. *ends.* Sff. Sff 2. *&c.* Zzz 2 *ends.* Aaaa. Aaaa 2. *&c.* Hhhh 2. *ends.*

The Order of the CHRONOLOGIE.

Iiii. Kkkk. Kkkk 2. *&c.* Xxxx *ends.*

The Order of the ALPHABETICAL-TABLE.

aaaaa. aaaaa 2. *&c.* ddddd. ddddd 2. eeeee. *ends.*

Take notice, that in some Copies the Signiture *is* (b2) *for* (b3) C 2. *for* D 2. E 5. *for* E 3. Kkkk *to be added.*

FINIS.

The

THE END OF THE SECOND VOLVME OF THE HISTORY OF THE WORLD;

TOGETHER
WITH A CHRONOLOGIE, &c.

By ALEXANDER ROSS.

PRINTED FOR IOHN SAYWELL.

M. D. C. LII.